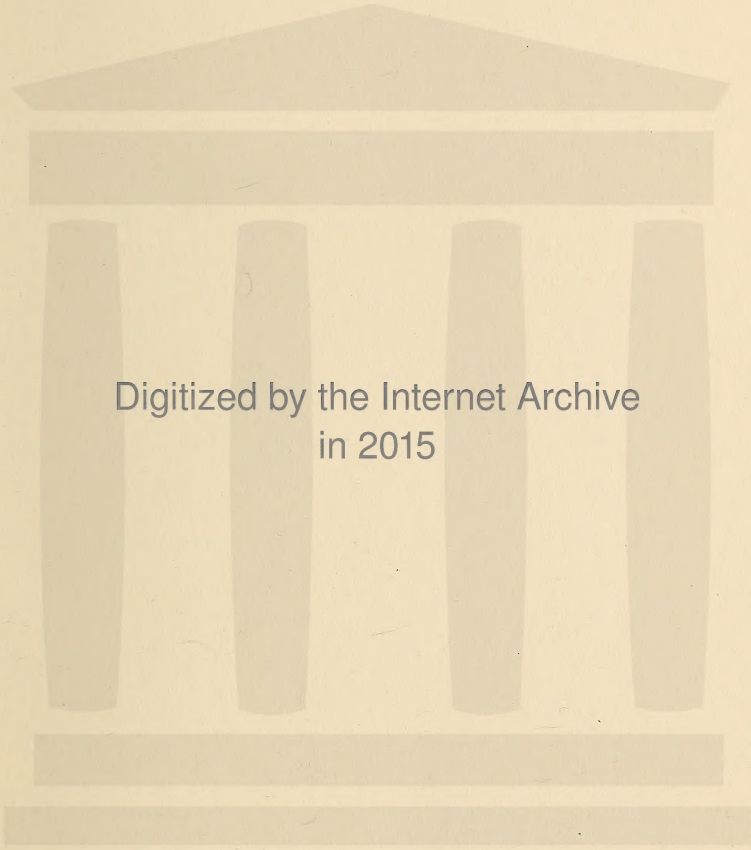
HANDBOUND
AT THE

UNIVERSITY OF

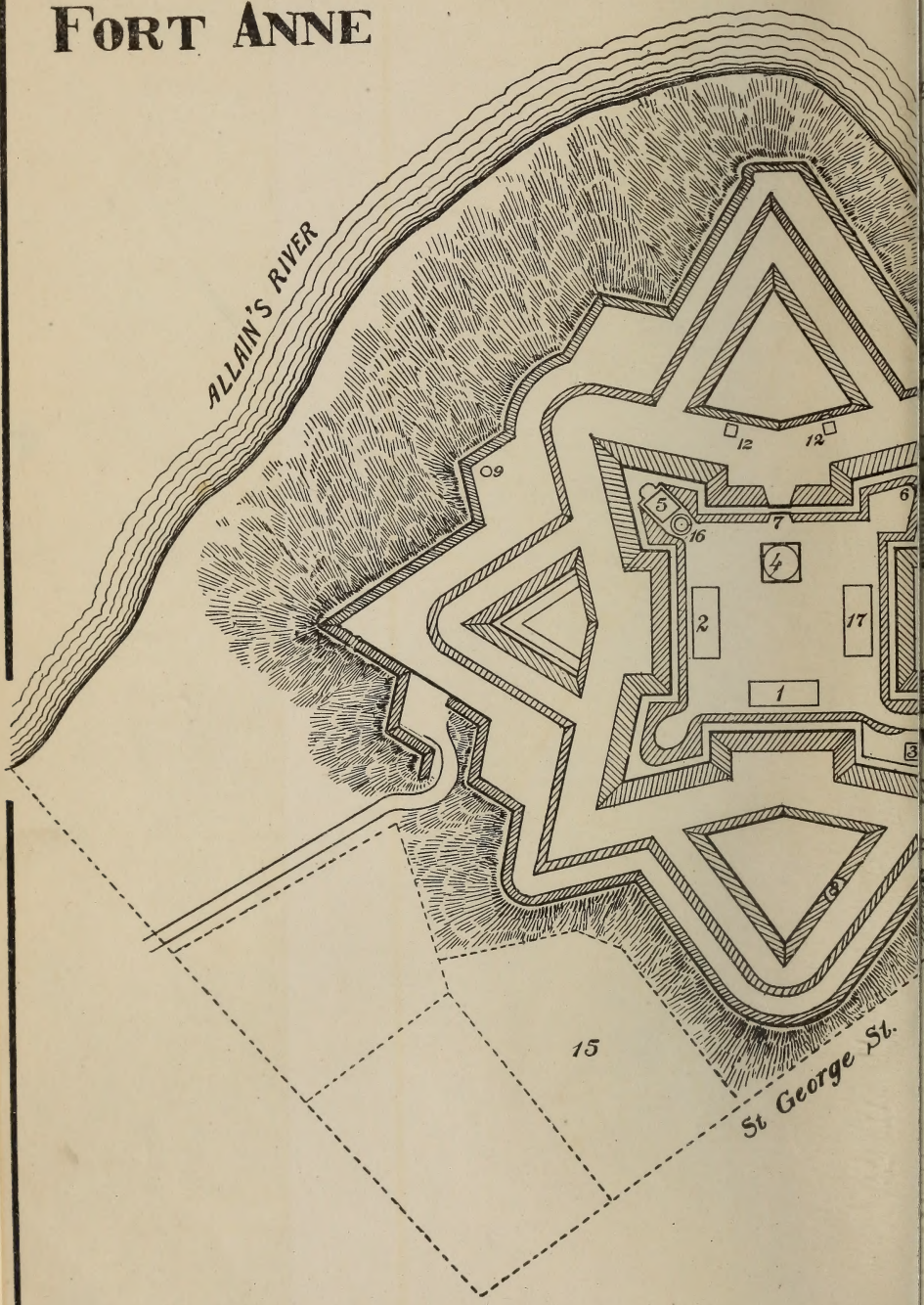

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

https://archive.org/details/historyofcountyo00caln

23

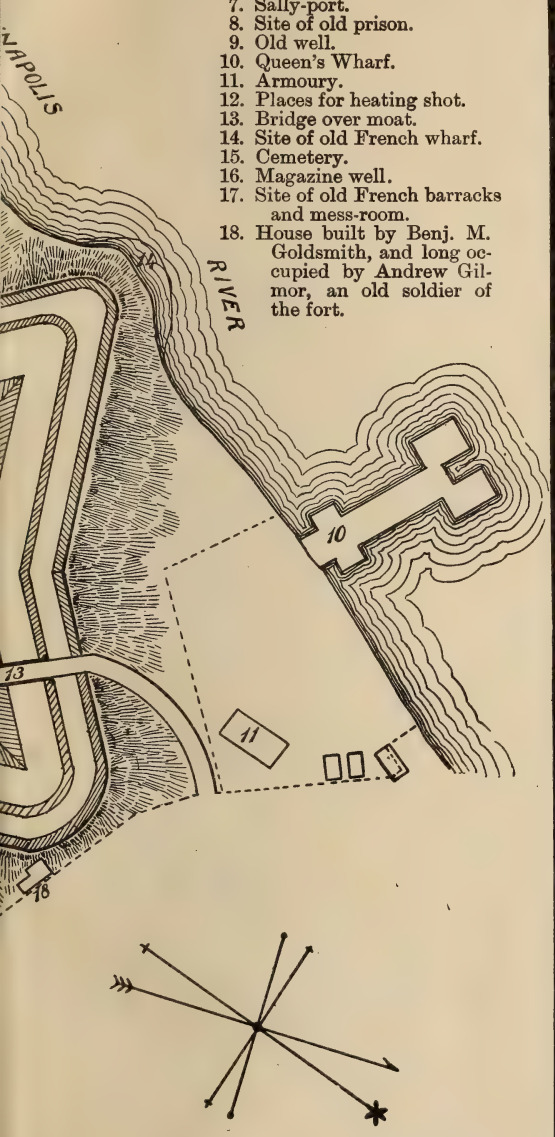
HISTORY OF THE COUNTY OF ANNAPOLIS.

Fort Anne



Scale 200 ft = 1 in

1. Officers' quarters (standing).
2. Barracks, burnt 1830.
3. Site of block-house.
4. Site of bomb-proof and brick barracks.
5. Powder magazine.
6. Entrance of Black Hole.
7. Sally-port.
8. Site of old prison.
9. Old well.
10. Queen's Wharf.
11. Armoury.
12. Places for heating shot.
13. Bridge over moat.
14. Site of old French wharf.
15. Cemetery.
16. Magazine well.
17. Site of old French barracks and mess-room.
18. House built by Benj. M. Goldsmith, and long occupied by Andrew Gilmor, an old soldier of the fort.



Louis Whitman (Ind)

Fort Al



Scale 200 ft = 1

HISTORY

OF THE

COUNTY OF ANNAPOLIS

INCLUDING OLD PORT ROYAL AND ACADIA,

WITH

MEMOIRS OF ITS REPRESENTATIVES IN THE PROVINCIAL PARLIAMENT, AND BIOGRAPHICAL AND GENEALOGICAL SKETCHES OF ITS EARLY ENGLISH SETTLERS AND THEIR FAMILIES.

BY THE LATE

W. A. CALNEK

Member of the Nova Scotia Historical Society.

EDITED AND COMPLETED BY

A. W. SAVARY, M.A.

AUTHOR OF THE "SAVERY GENEALOGY,"

Judge of the County Courts of Nova Scotia, Member of the Nova Scotia Historical Society, the Wiltshire (England) Archæological Society, and the American Historical Association.

With Portraits and Illustrations.

Salve, magna parens frugum, Saturnia tellus,
Magna virûm.

—VIRGIL, *Georg. Lib.* ii. 173.

TORONTO:

WILLIAM BRIGGS,

MONTREAL: C. W. COATES. HALIFAX: S. F. HUESTIS.

LONDON:

PHILLIMORE & CO., 36 ESSEX ST., STRAND.

1897

4 11 80
1H 3 98.

Entered according to Act of the Parliament of Canada, in the year one thousand eight hundred and ninety-seven, by A. W. SAVARY, at the Department of Agriculture.

EDITOR'S PREFACE.

From a draft prospectus of a "History of the County of Annapolis, its Townships and other Settlements from 1604 to 1867" among the papers of the late Mr. Calnek, I gather that he was led to attempt this work as an "historical essay" by the persuasion of the late T. B. Akins, Esq., D.C.L., Record Commissioner of Nova Scotia, who gave him free access to the "valuable collection of historical material in manuscript known as the Nova Scotia archives." He also consulted Champlain and L'Escarbot, and other early French writers, for the translation of which he expressed obligations to the late P. S. Hamilton, Esq. He soon became convinced that justice could not be done to the subject in a mere essay, and the work "gradually grew into the dimensions of a good-sized volume."

As far as the work had then advanced toward completion, he submitted it in 1875 to the governors of King's College, Windsor, and received for it the "Akins prize" for county histories. It then consisted of Chapters I. to VIII., as here arranged, and what was intended for the first chapters of the histories of the townships of Annapolis, Granville, Wilmot and Clements, now forming Chapters X., XII., XIII. and XIV., with the histories of the other settlements, here embraced in Chapter XV., and about a third of the biographical memoirs. His plan embraced every township and settlement in what is now the County of Digby, down to the division of the county in 1837, and the memoirs of the members from that county down to 1867. After 1875 he proceeded quite far in the completion of the remaining memoirs, leaving only about seven of those prior to 1837 untouched. The memoirs he afterwards determined to publish in a separate volume. He, later still, postponed indefinitely the completion of the history and memoirs, and proceeded to collect and put in order materials for a volume to be entitled "Biographical and Genealogical Sketches of Early English Settlers in the County of Annapolis and their Descendants," which was nevertheless to be in form a "sequel to the history." For this book he took up a large subscription list. Previous to his death it was generally understood that this last work was near completion; but it had evidently expanded on his hands to

very unexpected dimensions, and I found that a very large amount of research and labour was yet to be devoted to it. To bring the male descendants of each ancestor and their children down to the present generation, including every family that came before 1784, and remained and multiplied here, would have produced a volume of great bulk. I am quite sure that it was his intention to include sketches of the following families, besides those given: Amberman, Dunn, Felch, Merry, Pierce, and probably others. The biographical notes of each pioneer settler were, as a rule, quite extended, and in almost every case very interesting, especially to his descendants; but in no one instance was the genealogy of a family complete.

When he died, I not only felt the loss of a gentleman with whom I was on the most agreeable terms, and with whom it was to me always a great delight to discuss the interesting story of old Annapolis; but I was also keenly sensible of the misfortune the county and the reading public everywhere had sustained by the untoward interruption of the important work to which he had devoted so much time and labour.

Not long after his death, the late Mr. R. S. McCormick, whose sudden and untimely death also the community has had lately to deplore, and who, in the press under his control, had done much to encourage and assist the lamented author, called on me to inquire if I would undertake to complete the work, or assist him and the deceased author's son, Mr. F. H. S. Calnek, of Westville, Pictou County, in trying to discover some one who would. Conscious of my inability to do it justice, and doubtful if I could spare the time from the imperative claims of official duty, I declined; and it was not until two years or more had elapsed, and neither of us could think of any one who was willing or might be persuaded to assume the task, and I felt that the early publication of the work had become a necessity, that I communicated to the gentleman named my tardy and reluctant consent. On receiving the manuscripts and carefully examining them, I came near laying by the genealogies in utter despair; but soon found that to do so would grievously disappoint very many, for it was in them rather than in the history and memoirs that the local interest had mainly centred.

I therefore resolved to include all the material intended for the three books in one, completing the history and memoirs, but compressing the biographical sketches, and curtailing the genealogies by confining them to the first two or three generations. To procure the material to fill up the blanks in the genealogies, and to correct the numerous errors unavoidable in the original draft of such a work, and to rearrange and rewrite this matter so as to make it convenient for publication as a supplement to the history, involved enormous correspondence and the closest possible application for many months. This portion I was obliged to entirely

recast and remodel. I should say here that the etymology of the surnames is almost always my own; and so in the great majority of cases is the line of descent given from the immigrant ancestor, derived from genealogical publications recently issued. In the memoirs I have endeavoured to strike out anything already given in the earlier portions, intended for a separate book, but I regret to find that, in one instance, through an oversight, I have partially failed to do so. In other respects, except in the slight changes necessary to avoid an apparent anachronism, all Mr. Calnek's work is just as he left it. The result of my later discoveries in connection with early events is found in footnotes or appendix, and in "Additions and Corrections" in the concluding pages. The memoir of Judge Johnstone is an abbreviation of the one published by Mr. Calnek in pamphlet form in 1884.

Voluminous notes of the author, from which he intended to complete the history, came into my hands, a *rudis indigestaque moles*, much of it only capable of intelligent use by its compiler; and I have been obliged to make continual application to old records of various kinds at Halifax in order to bring down to date the history from the point where Mr. Calnek had left it. In this I have received the most cheerful and industrious assistance from Mr. Harry Piers, of the Legislative Library. In the genealogies I am equally indebted to Mr. William E. Chute, whose knowledge of Annapolis County family history is prodigious. To those two gentlemen I am under a very great obligation. To the following gentlemen also I am indebted: Rev. Dr. Willetts, President, and Rev. Professor Vroom, Librarian, of King's College, for placing the essay in the library at my disposal; Dr. Charles Gray, of Mahone Bay, for some notes of his own, and a good deal of the matter recorded on page 180; Mr. Isaiah Wilson, author of a history of the County of Digby; that most valuable institution, the N. E. Historic-Genealogical Society of Boston, and Mr. F. W. Parks, its assistant Librarian; Mr. W. H. Roach of this town, for accurate information always cheerfully afforded; Mr. G. S. Brown, of Boston, author of a history of Yarmouth; Rev. Anson Titus, of Tufts College, Massachusetts; the military authorities in Halifax, for permission to search the military records there, and to Sergeant-Major Thomas, for making the searches; Rev. Dr. Patterson, of New Glasgow, for important matter recently communicated; Messrs. G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York, for permission to use the illustration of Champlain's fort, from Bourinot's "Story of Canada"; and Mr. Louis Whitman, C.E., for the plan of Fort Anne in the frontispiece. Nor must I omit the press of Annapolis and Digby counties, especially the Bridgetown *Monitor*. I further acknowledge substantial pecuniary assistance toward the cost of publication from Dr. Maurice Calnek, of Costa Rica, and the offer of similar aid, if necessary, from Hon. J. W. Longley and C. D. Cory, Esq., of Halifax.

The books to which I am indebted are for the most part mentioned in the footnotes; but I should especially add the "Chute Genealogies," "The Transactions of the N. S. Historical Society," "The N. E. Historical and Genealogical Register," Parkman's works, Archbishop O'Brien's "Life of Bishop Burke," Bill's "Fifty Years with the Baptists," Smith's "History of Methodism in Eastern British America," and Eaton's "History of the Church of England in Nova Scotia."

I feel I have but imperfectly accomplished a task that should have fallen into abler and more practised hands; but I venture to hope that the result of my labour may not be without interest and utility to the people of this county, and to the readers and students of history generally.

W. A. CALNEK.

The birth and ancestry of Mr. Calnek appears in the Calnek genealogy, page 485. He was educated at the Collegiate School, Windsor, N.S., but did not matriculate for the university. His preparatory education was excellent, but he had no knowledge of French. In early life he taught school, but later adopted land-surveying as a profession, and afterwards was for a number of years editor of county newspapers. Later, he resumed the work of land-surveying, and was, in 1872 and 1873, employed by the "Anticosti Colonization Company," in a responsible position on an exploratory survey of the Island of Anticosti. History, biography and genealogy had for him irresistible charms, and he was early a valued member of the Nova Scotia Historical Society. Intelligent application to authorities, the faculty of critical analysis, and a retentive memory were qualifications in which he was conspicuous, and which well fitted him for the task he had undertaken.

I have no doubt completion of the work was in later years delayed by his failing health, as well as by the necessity of attending to his regular avocations. He was a man of genial and kindly disposition, and while of strong political convictions, moderate and considerate in his expression of them, a loyalist and patriot to his heart's core, and a gentleman at all times and everywhere. The circumstances attending his death are stated in the following obituary notice from the Bridgetown *Monitor*, of Wednesday, June 15, 1892:

"This community was greatly shocked on Monday evening by the announcement that Mr. Wm. A. Calnek, well and favourably known throughout the entire county and province at large, had suddenly fallen from a chair in the store of John Lockett, Esq., and almost instantly expired. During the afternoon Mr. Calnek had been driven to town by a friend from Clarence, at whose residence he had passed the preceding night, and intended taking the afternoon express for Paradise, at which

point he had been engaged to do some land-surveying. Not arriving in time to make the connection he decided to remain until the following day, and spent the remainder of the afternoon in calling on his intimate friends about town, repairing to the Revere House at six o'clock, where he partook of tea. To all appearances he was in his usual health, though he had informed one or two parties with whom he had conversation, that he rather over-exerted himself on Saturday, and as he expressed it, thought he was threatened on Sunday night with an attack of pneumonia, as he had laid on his bed in a state of great restlessness which was attended by considerable pain about the chest.

"After tea he proceeded to Medical Hall for the purpose of purchasing a bottle of medicine, but finding it closed, stepped across the street into the store of John Lockett, Esq., with whom he was enjoying a social chat, when his eyes suddenly became fixed, and an instant afterwards he fell to the floor. Mr. Lockett at once called J. G. H. Parker, Esq., who happened to be passing, into the store, and he was followed by his brother-in-law, James Primrose, D.D.S., when the unfortunate man was laid on the counter, and everything done for his comfort and relief. Dr. DeBlois was soon on the spot, and every possible effort made to restore life, all of which proved fruitless. Throngs of people had in the meantime gathered about the head of the street, and many were the expressions of deep regret and sympathy when it was found that life was extinct.

"Mr. Calnek, as stated, was widely known, greatly respected, and was looked upon by all who had the pleasure of his acquaintance as one of the most brilliant and intellectual Nova Scotians of the day. A large portion of his early life was spent in the publication of newspapers, and we believe he was the first to establish a newspaper—the *Western News*—in this, his native county. As a poet he has gained for himself many flattering encomiums, and as a writer, historian and scholar, he was recognized as one of the clever men of the period. His facile pen has contributed many articles to some of the leading magazines and other prominent publications now being issued, all of which have displayed rare literary ability."

Mr. Murdoch, the accomplished author of the well-known "History of Nova Scotia," deemed the "*In memoriam* stanzas" written by Mr. Calnek, "to the memory of Henry Godfrey, commander of the privateer *Rover*, who died in Jamaica in 1803," worthy of being perpetuated in his book, where they will be found in the Appendix to Chapter XVI. of Vol. III., page 200.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.—1604-1613.

PAGE

Voyage and explorations of Demonts—His resolve to settle at Port Royal—Joined by Pontgravé with more colonists—His return to France—Comes back with the lawyer and poet L'Escarbot and more emigrants—Life at the fort—First ship and mill built—The Indian Chief Membertou—Poutrincourt goes to Paris and returns to Port Royal—Conversion and baptism of Indians—Destruction of the fort and settlement by Argall 1

CHAPTER II.—1613-1686.

Biencourt and some colonists remain—Sir W. Alexander and the Scotch fort—The De la Tours—Razilli—D'Aulnay de Charnisay—Quarrels and war between him and Latour—Takes Latour's fort—His death—Le Borgne—Capture of Port Royal and its restoration—La Vallière—Perrot—Census—Names of French colonists 16

CHAPTER III.—1686-1705.

Menneval appointed Governor—Capture of Port Royal by Phipps—Piratical raid—Villebon returns and takes possession—His death—Brouillan Governor—Discords, jealousies and scandals—Seigniory of Port Royal granted to Latour's heirs—Colonel Church's invasion—Death of Brouillan 37

CHAPTER IV.—1705-1710.

Subercase Governor—Attack from Massachusetts under Colonel March—Events and vicissitudes of the siege—The English withdraw with heavy loss—Ordered to return—The struggle renewed—English again discomfited—They retire—Diary of the expedition by a Chaplain—Bomb-proof powder magazine built and barracks finished—Final capture of Port Royal by Nicholson 47

CHAPTER V.—1710-1732.

Vetch the first English Governor—Acadians complain of his treatment of them—Seek aid from the Governor of Canada to leave—Bloody Creek—Nicholson Governor—Queen Anne's letter—Census of 1714—Phillipps Governor—Council appointed—Mascarene's description of the town—

PAGE

Attacks by Indians — Civil court established — A clerical scandal—Treaty with the Indians — Armstrong Lieut.-Governor—Doucet's death —French take qualified oath—Commission of the Peace—Cosby Lieut.-Governor—Phillipps returns to the seat of Government—Again leaves —Armstrong Lieut.-Governor—Land grants 63

CHAPTER VI.—1732-1742.

Acadians troublesome—Petty crimes in the town—Police established—Armstrong's hostility to Winniett — He discusses the claim of Latour's family — Mrs. Buckler's strange story — Grant of township of Norwich — Suicide of Armstrong—Mascarene returns—Cold and scarcity—Death of Winniett and Cosby 82

CHAPTER VII.—1742-1746.

Mascarene's description of town and fort—He becomes Governor of both—War with France—Le Loutre leads the Indians in an attack—Invests the town—Du Vivier's formidable attack—He fails to terrify the neutrals into joining him—Skirmishes and proposals for capitulation—He raises the siege—Marin's weaker attempt—Position and conduct of Acadians—Naval defensive measures 97

CHAPTER VIII.—1746-1756.

Ramezay invests Annapolis—Mascarene reinforced—Noble's force at Grand Pré surprised and cut to pieces—Arrest of twelve French traitors wanted—Morris' proposal to settle English families between the Acadian settlements—Peace—Halifax founded by Cornwallis—Becomes the capital—Acadians refuse to take unqualified oath—Ask leave to depart—Leave refused—How's treacherous murder—Lawrence Governor—French at Annapolis again ask leave to retire—Their sudden seizure and dispersion 109

CHAPTER IX.

The seizure and dispersion of the Acadians reviewed and considered . . 123

CHAPTER X.—THE TOWNSHIP OF ANNAPOLIS.—1755-1775.

Description of the township—Evans' journal—Passengers by the *Charming Molly*—Census of 1768 and 1770—State of township in 1763—Social aspects, 1770-80—Appendix—Names of grantees in grant of 1759 . . 145

CHAPTER XI.—TOWNSHIP OF ANNAPOLIS, CONCLUDED.

Loyalist refugees arrive—Invasion of the town in 1781—The Loyalists—A plot to rob and murder in 1785—Capitation tax list of 1792—Court-house and jail—Town officers, 1797—Description of the town in 1804—The same in 1826—Its antiquity—The fort—Churches—Old buildings—The fire record—Revived prosperity—Appendix—A remarkable prayer—Verses—Relics—The Goldsmiths—The "Rising Village" . . . 161

Chapter XII.—THE TOWNSHIP OF GRANVILLE.

PAGE

Description—Grants issued—Settlers arrive—Names of grantees—Census of 1767 and 1770—Names of early settlers and their families—The Patten-Farnsworth feud—Representation of the county—River fisheries—The Shaw embroglio—Names of militiamen—Arrival of Loyalists—Roads to Bay of Fundy—Shaw and Millidge election—Disputes about the fisheries—Bridgetown 192

Chapter XIII.—THE TOWNSHIP OF WILMOT.

Description—Grant to Philip Richardson—General Ruggles—Grant of 1777—Loyalists and settlers from Granville—Capitation taxpayers, 1792-94—New Grants—Letters of Surveyor-General Morris—Colonel Bayard—Melancholy event at Reagh's Cove—Fires—New Roads—Bridges—Returns of cultivated land under Bounty Act, 1806-7—Petition for union with Aylesford in a new county—Middleton—Torbrook and Torbrook mines—Margaretsville 225

Chapter XIV.—THE TOWNSHIP OF CLEMENTS.

Grant of the township—Villages—Names and notices of grantees and settlers—Capitation tax list of 1791—New families—The herring fishery—Allain's River bridge—Bear River, past and present—Notes by the Editor on the place names 243

Chapter XV.—LATER SETTLEMENTS.

Dalhousie—Lots granted—Return of settlers in 1820—Fatal quarrel—Families of early settlers—A foul murder—Maitland—The Kemptons—Early grantees—Northfield—Delong settlement—Perrott settlement—Roxbury—Bloomington—New Albany—First grantees of—Statement of settlement, 1817—Springfield—Falkland—Lake Pleasant . . . 260

Chapter XVI.—HISTORY OF THE COUNTY AT LARGE, CONTINUED.

Roads and bridges—Mail communications and facilities for travel improving—War of 1812—Sundry events—Election of 1836—Division of the county—Politics of the county—Responsible government—J. W. Johnstone—The college question—Recent politics—Appendix—W. H. Ray—Remarkable storms and weather—Executions in the county—A sad event 282

Chapter XVII.—RELIGION AND THE CHURCHES IN THE COUNTY.

Roman Catholic—Church of England—Congregationalist—Baptist—Methodist—Presbyterian—Adventists 295

Chapter XVIII.

Lists of public officers—Justices of the Peace—Members of the Legislature, etc.—Census statistics—The apple trade 309

BIOGRAPHICAL MEMOIRS

PAGE

Of members of the Provincial Parliament for the county of Annapolis and its several townships, from the year 1759 to the year 1867 323

BIOGRAPHICAL AND GENEALOGICAL SKETCHES

Of the families of the early English settlers and grantees of the county of Annapolis, arranged alphabetically, Armstrong to Young . . . 465

ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

Full names of Demonts and others—More about the Masonic stone—Biencourt's alleged death in Acadie discussed—Further account of Mascarene—Proscription of Loyalist women—List of loyal companies at Annapolis—Grand jury, 1797—Demolition of block-house—First responsible Executive—Further particulars of the political strife, 1843 to 1847, in Annapolis county—Further list of magistrates—Phineas and James R. Lovett, M.P.Ps.—Moody's sword—Further notes on Barclay, the Ritchies, and Bass, Berteaux, Chipman and Clark families . . . 641

ILLUSTRATIONS.

OPPOSITE PAGE

FORT ANNE, ANNAPOLIS ROYAL *Frontispiece*

CHAMPLAIN'S PLAN OF PORT ROYAL, 1605 *(from Bourinot's "Story of Canada," by permission of G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York)* 6

PAUL MASCARENE 93

SIR WILLIAM FENWICK WILLIAMS 159

SIR WILLIAM J. RITCHIE 177

FORT AND PART OF THE TOWN IN 1829 183

THE OLD COURT-HOUSE 286

JUDGE JAMES W. JOHNSTONE 289

REV. JAMES ROBERTSON 299

REV. ROBERT A. CHESLEY 306

COL. JAMES DE LANCEY 342

JUDGE THOMAS RITCHIE 394

JUDGE T. C. HALIBURTON 418

REV. JAMES J. RITCHIE 576

REV. ABRAHAM SPURR HUNT 606

THE OLD "WILLIAMS HOUSE" 629

ERRATA.

Page 82, 4th line of the title, for "Mascarene" read "Cosby."

" 164, line 25, for "officers" read "officer."

" 180, line 12, for "this" read "their."

" 183, line 33, for "1878" read "1881." (See page 646.)

" 307, line 11, for "Wm. M." read "Charles M."

" 311, between lines 4th and 5th from the bottom, read "1816. County, Cereno U. Jones, in place of Peleg Wiswall."

" 315, line 29, opposite "Perkins, Rev. Cyrus," for "Immigrant" read "Loyalist."

" 396, line 30 (15th from bottom), for "10th" read "13th."

" 480, line 17, for "Elizabeth" read "Martha."

" 490, line 34, strike out here the words "by second wife," and read them between 8th and 9th lines from the bottom, before "xii. Thomas Holmes."

" 580, line 8, after "Mayberry" read "*née* Bruce."

HISTORY OF ANNAPOLIS.

CHAPTER I.

1604–1613.

Voyage and explorations of Demonts—His resolve to settle at Port Royal—Joined by Pontgravé with more colonists—His return to France—Comes back with the lawyer and poet L'Escarbot and more emigrants—Life at the fort—First ship and mill built—The Indian Chief Membertou—Poutrincourt goes to Paris and returns to Port Royal—Conversion and baptism of Indians—Destruction of the fort and settlement by Argall.

WHAT memories cluster around the basin of old Port Royal! What visions of brave hearts and strong hands, of adventurous enterprise and religious zeal, of toil and hardship, and of alternate success and failure rise before the mind at the mention of its name! It was beside its waters that the first permanent settlement was made by European immigrants in this great Canadian dominion. Three years before a white man's hut had been built on the site of Quebec, a fort and village were to be found upon its shores, and the problem of the cultivation of Acadian soil had been successfully solved by the production of both cereal and root crops. Its waters also received on their smiling bosom the first vessel built on the Continent, and the first mill constructed in North America was built on a stream whose limpid waters found their way into its hill-surrounded and protected reservoir. Its shores, too, witnessed the first conquest made by Christianity, in the conversion of the brave and friendly old Indian sachem, Membertou, and there also echoed the first notes of poetic song heard in British America—sung in honour of the founder of the French dominion in the New World. Its shores formed, for more than one hundred years, the centre of civilization and progress in Acadie—a civilization that was to extend to the valleys of the Mississippi and the St. Lawrence; and its waters were reddened by the first blood shed in the long and fiercely contested struggle between France and England for the possession of the Continent. These and many other facts and incidents connected with its early days and history, make this locality of especial interest to every

Canadian, no matter to what province he may belong, or from what lineage he may have descended.

According to the most reliable accounts it was probably about the middle of June, 1604, that Demonts and his associates with their vessels entered the Annapolis Basin, and it is more than likely they were the first Europeans whose eyes had rested on the glorious picture presented by the natural features of that delightful locality.

The ships which conveyed the adventurers to the scene of their future settlement, sailed from Havre-de-Grace, on the 7th of March, 1604, and reached Lahave after a voyage of one month's duration. From this place they proceeded to the harbour of Liverpool, from which, after having confiscated the vessel of a trader—whose name, Rosignol, is still perpetuated in the name of one of the lakes in Queens County—they sailed onward to Port Mouton, where they landed and remained nearly a month, awaiting the arrival of another ship of the expedition laden with supplies. During this interval Demonts* and his secretary, Rallieu, accompanied by Champlain and a few others, among whom was D'Aubrey, a priest, proceeded in a boat, or *patache*, along the coast westwardly to Cape Sable, thence northwardly through St. Mary's Bay and Petite Passage, into the Bay of Fundy, and thence eastwardly to the strait leading into Port Royal Basin, through which they passed into it, though it does not appear that they then explored its extent. It was during this little exploratory voyage that the priest managed to lose himself in the forest of Meteghan.† Having seen enough of the beauties of the basin to induce them to pay it another visit, they hastened their return to the ship at Port Mouton, from which—the storeship having arrived—they set sail again and made for St. Mary's Bay, and on their arrival in its waters, they were rejoiced at discovering the priest who had strayed from his friends seventeen days before. The joy felt by the Huguenots of the party was most animated, as they had been charged, tacitly at least, with having murdered him. They then proceeded through the strait before named into the bay, and thence to Port Royal Basin, which it had been determined to explore more fully.

*"On the 19th of May, 1604, Demonts, with Rallieu, his secretary, and ten others left Port Mouton while he awaited the arrival of Morel's ship, sailed along the coasts into the Bay of Fundy and into Annapolis Basin, and returned to Port Mouton about the middle of June, and on the next day the expedition sailed towards the bay."—*Maine Hist. Society Coll.*, Vol. VIII., 1876.

†I do not know our author's authority for the statement that this happened at Meteghan. According to Murdoch and Haliburton it was while they were searching for ores that the missing priest was found, and therefore it must have been on Digby Neck or Long Island that he was lost, for it was there that they had seen traces of the iron known to exist, especially on the Neck. According to Haliburton, they only sailed from the east to the west side of the peninsula during the seventeen days between the time of his loss and his discovery, filling up most of the time in searches for their missing companion.—[Ed.]

Taking the above dates and delays into consideration, it will appear that Demonts reached the site of Port Royal, on the second visit, about the middle of June, when the forest buds were about bursting into full leaf, and the white blossoms of the *Amelanchier*, or Indian plum, exhibited their showy petals with pride, as the earliest gift of Flora to the newly born summer. It was, indeed, a beautiful view which presented itself to the eyes of these adventurous Europeans. As they passed up the basin, on the left hand they beheld a range of hills, rising somewhat abruptly to an average height of from four to six hundred feet above the level of the river, and separating its valley from the Bay of Fundy. These hills were then densely clad with primeval forest trees. The beech and the birch—two varieties of the former and three of the latter—six species of maples, two of elm, two of ash, with a great variety of evergreens, embracing pines, spruces, firs and larches, in one unbroken wilderness exhibited their various forms over a vast extent of landscape. On their right they saw another range of hills extending in a generally parallel direction, but less abrupt in appearance, sloping gradually upward as far as their sight could reach, with here and there a depression, through which streams of greater or lesser magnitude flowed northwardly into the waters over which they were sailing. These heights and slopes were also crowned and clothed with a similar forest, and as entirely unbroken. Looking to the westward, the strait or channel through which they had entered this charming basin being entirely hidden from their view, they saw another range of hills separating it from the head waters of St. Mary's Bay, also covered with a continuous forest, and on the eastern face of which, just one hundred and eighty years afterwards, the ill-starred American Loyalists founded the beautiful town of Digby. In the direction in which they were moving, a forest, situated on level and less elevated land, bounded their view and seemed to bar their further progress.

On landing they soon learned that they had cast anchor before a cape or headland, formed by a spur of the south mountain, which, at this point, protrudes itself into the head of the basin and compresses the river—to which they gave the name of L'Equille—into very narrow limits—limits so contracted, indeed, that this part of the stream is to this day emphatically termed "The Narrows." They seemed to have remained in the basin for a very few days only, long enough, however, to gain a very favourable impression of the place as possessing many of the desirable requisites for a permanent settlement. Having made these observations they sailed into the bay again, along the shores of which they coasted eastwardly as far as Minas Basin, where they tarried a few days to examine its extent, coasts and surroundings. From this place they directed their course to the northern shores of the bay, and thence

westwardly to the mouth of the great river which discharged its waters at a point nearly due north from the strait leading into the basin of Port Royal, where they arrived on the twenty-fourth day of June, on the festival of St. John, on which account the river received its name.

After a little delay they pursued their course westward to Passamaquoddy Bay, where, on a small island, which they named St. Croix, they fixed their winter-quarters. This island seems to have been near the mouth of the river now bearing the same name, and to have been separated from the mainland by a narrow channel only; and it must have been a very small one, for L'Escarbot says, that among the "three special discommodities" suffered by Demonts and his friends during the ensuing winter, was a "want of wood, for that which was in the said isle was spent in building," which could not have been said if the island had been of considerable size.

It is not necessary to detain the reader by reciting the doings or sufferings of Demonts and his party during the long and inclement winter of 1604-5. In the spring, Champlain* tells us:

"Sieur Demonts decided upon a change of place, and upon making another habitation in order to escape the rigours of climate which *we* had experienced at Isle St. Croix. Having found no other fulfilling these requirements, and there being little time remaining for us to build suitable residences, two vessels were equipped and fitted out with the woodwork of the houses at St. Croix, to take the same to Port Royal, at twenty-five leagues distance, which was considered a milder and much more pleasant place of residence. Le Pontgravé and I set out to go there, where, having arrived, we sought a spot suitable as a place to build and sheltered from the north-west wind, with which we considered that we had been already too much tormented."

Before proceeding to relate the events which followed the resolution to remove to Port Royal, I will let Champlain describe that basin as he saw it in 1604. He says:

"We entered one of the most beautiful ports which I had seen on these coasts, where two thousand vessels could be anchored in safety. The entrance is eight hundred paces in width. Then we entered a harbour which is two leagues in length and one in breadth, which I have named Port Royal, into which descend three rivers, one of which is large, flowing from the east, called the River L'Equille, that being the name of a fish of the size of a smelt, which is fished there in quantity, as they also do herring and many other kinds of fish which abound in their season. That river is near a quarter of a league wide at its entrance, where there is an island, which may compass near a league in circuit, covered with wood as is all the rest of the land—as pines, firs, spruces, birches, aspens and some oaks, which mix in small numbers with the other timber. There are two entrances to the river, one north and one south of the island. That to the north is the best, and vessels

* Champlain accompanied Demonts in this expedition as "Royal Geographer," and was an eye-witness of what he relates. This and a few succeeding extracts are taken from Lavidiere's "Champlain," Chapter X.

can there anchor under shelter of the island at five, six, seven, eight and nine fathoms of water, but one must take care of the flats which extend from the island."

Nearly every writer who has described the events of the initial period of our history, has fallen into the error of representing them as having transpired on the site of the present town of Annapolis ; but a reference to the writings of Champlain and L'Escarbot, and to the maps they made of the basin and its surroundings, makes it very evident that the spot selected for the first settlement was on the Granville shore, and a little to the eastward of Goat Island, which is still known as the *locus* of the old Scotch fort of 1621-31. In Champlain's map of the fort or stockade, and basin of Port Royal, the River Imbert—now absurdly called Bear River—is named St. Antoine ; what is intended for Rivière d'Orignal—now Moose River—is called *Ruisseau de la Roche* or Rock Brook ; and the now miscalled Lequille is simply called Mill Brook. In L'Escarbot's map what is now known as Goat Island—not named in Champlain's map—is called Biencourtville, in honour of Poutrincourt's son Biencourt. Both maps represent the fort on the spot above named, and both writers affirm the same thing. Champlain says :

" After having searched from side to side we could find no spot more suitable and better situated than a slightly isolated place around which are some marshes and good springs. This place is opposite the island, which is at the entrance of the River L'Equille. To the north, at the distance of a league, there is a range of mountains which extend nearly ten leagues north-east and south-west. The whole country is filled with very dense forests, except a point which is a league and a half up the river where there are scattered oaks, and a quantity of a species of wild vine, which place could be easily cleared and put under tillage, although the soil is poor and sandy.* We had almost resolved to build at this place, but we considered that we should have been too far within the port,† and up the river, which caused us to change our opinion.

" Having recognized the site of our habitation as a good one, we commenced to clear the land, which was covered with trees, and to put up the houses as rapidly as possible—every one was thus employed. After everything was put in order, and the greater part of the buildings done, Sieur Demonts thought of returning to France in order to represent to His Majesty what was needful to be done for the enterprise. To command in his place in his absence he would have left Pierre d'Orville ; but home-sickness, with which he was troubled, would not allow him to satisfy Sieur Demonts' desire, which was how it happened that Pontgravé was spoken to, and he was given in charge, which was agreeable to him, and he undertook the work of completing the buildings. I, at the same time, resolved to remain there too, in the hope that I should be able to make some discoveries in the direction of Florida, Sieur Demonts agreeing thereto."

* This was undoubtedly the " cape," or present site of Annapolis.

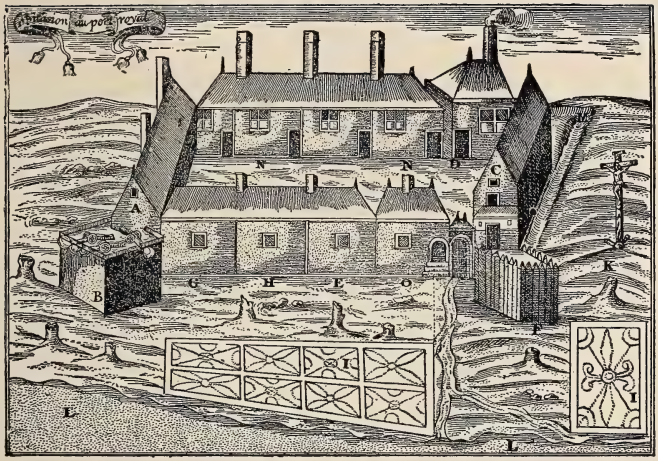
† I should prefer the word " harbour " for " port " where it occurs in the translation of this document.—[Ed.]

L'Escarbot (Div. IV., Chap. VIII.) says :

"They chose their dwelling place opposite an island, which is at the entrance of the River L'Equille, now called the River Dauphin. It was called L'Equille because the first fish they caught there was an equille."

Pontgravé, who had spent the winter in France, returned to St. Croix about the time Demonts had resolved to make Port Royal the scene of his contemplated settlement, with an addition of forty men to join the new colony, and a considerable quantity of supplies. Soon after his arrival he was ordered to superintend the removal of the colonists and their effects, a work in which he was assisted by Champlain, who accompanied him to the basin, in advance of the ships bearing the woodwork of the dwellings they had used the past winter, to aid him in the selection of a site for their re-erection. They finally determined upon a spot near what they called the mouth of the river, opposite Goat Island, in Granville ; and when the vessels reached the port they were ordered to that point to discharge their cargoes, and the work of founding a permanent settlement was immediately begun and rapidly carried forward. When the work of building was fairly advanced, Demonts announced his intention to return to France to make further arrangements for the safety and welfare of his enterprise. He appointed Pontgravé to be his deputy during his absence, and, accompanied by his friends Poutrincourt and D'Orville, Rallieu, his secretary, and a few others, he sailed for France, promising to return in the spring with additional men and supplies. Champlain and Champdore, the former of whom was three years later to become the founder of Quebec, remained to aid and assist Pontgravé in finishing the preparations necessary for the coming winter, which was now near at hand. Friendly relations were soon established with the Indians, who readily parted with their furs, game, and other articles of trade for such commodities as they were offered in exchange. The winter, no doubt, seemed long and dreary enough to the adventurers, who remembered with a shudder the miseries which some of them endured at St. Croix a year before, but by comparison there was less suffering now than then, a fact that was not without its consolations. Only six of their number died before the spring had fully opened. The labour of grinding their corn in hand-mills, insufficient surface drainage, and the drinking of snow water may be assigned as the predisposing causes of this mortality. To these may perhaps be added the fact that their huts had been hastily erected, and proved inadequate as a defence against the severity and changefulness of the winter.

In the spring of 1606, Pontgravé fitted out a vessel which had been kept at Port Royal during the preceding winter, with the intention of exploring the coasts southward in order to find a better site for settlement—a situation where the winters would be less long and severe ; but



CHAMPLAIN'S PLAN OF PORT ROYAL IN ACADIA IN 1605.

'Key to illustration: A, Workmen's dwelling; B, Platform for cannon; C, Storehouse; D, Residence for Champlain and Pontgravé; E, Blacksmith's forge; F, Palisade; G, Bakehouse; H, Kitchen; I, Gardens; K, Burying ground; L, The river; M, Moat; N, Dwelling of Demonts; and O, Ships' storehouse.

(From "The Story of Canada." New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons.)

having been frustrated in his attempts by a long continuance of adverse winds, he relinquished his designs, and the supplies which Demonts had promised to send out early this summer not having come to hand, nor any tidings concerning them having been received, he turned his attention to shipbuilding. He constructed two small vessels, "a barque and a shallop," which were intended to be used in conveying the colonists to Canseau or Isle Royale, where it was possible he would fall in with French ships, in which to transport the settlers back to France if, in consequence of the non-arrival of the required supplies, he should find it necessary to abandon the settlement. His was the first shipyard established in North America, and the vessels which he launched from it were the first built on this continent.

Poutrincourt, who had gone home with Demonts in the autumn of the preceding year, induced Marc L'Escarbot, an advocate of Paris, to join the adventurers at Port Royal, and from his writings we glean very much of our knowledge of the events which occurred there at this period. These, in conjunction with some merchants of Rochelle, procured a ship named the *Jonas*, in which they sailed for Acadie, on the 13th of May, 1606. After a long and tedious voyage, on the 27th of July they reached their destination, where they found only two men, who had been placed in charge of the buildings and property left by Pontgravé on his departure homeward, with the remainder of the inhabitants some weeks before, in the new vessels he had built. He returned, however, a short time after the arrival of the *Jonas*, having been accidentally informed by some fishermen whom he met, that that ship had passed Canseau on her way out. Soon after the arrival of Poutrincourt, he made active preparations for clearing away the forests, with a view to agricultural operations, and at the same time commenced repairing the buildings on the site of the new town. The *Jonas* brought out a number of new immigrants and considerable fresh supplies, which was a matter of much rejoicing. L'Escarbot was delighted with Port Royal, "its fair distances and the largeness of it, and the mountains and hills that environ it," and his admiration afterwards found vent in verses written in their honour.

The priests who had come out with the expedition of 1604 having returned to France, and Poutrincourt having, in the haste of departure, neglected or failed to secure the services of others, the settlers were without religious guides. In their absence L'Escarbot assumed the duties of catechist and teacher, and as such strove successfully to impart to the Indians in the neighbourhood a knowledge of the Christian religion; and his efforts paved the way for their ultimate conversion. During this summer Poutrincourt made an exploratory voyage down the American coast, as far as Cape Cod. He was accompanied by his son Biencourt, Dupont Gravé, Daniel Hay, an apothecary, and several others.

Five young men, having landed, were attacked by the Indians, when three of them were killed and the others wounded. One of the latter died from the effects of his wounds, but not until after his return to Port Royal, on the 14th of November. The survivors were greeted on their arrival with much enthusiasm and great rejoicing. L'Escarbot, who, as we have already seen, was a poet as well as an advocate, wrote verses in honour of the occasion. These verses were the first uttered in this Dominion in any European language. The rejoicings over, the chiefs paid a visit to the corn-fields which they had previously sown on lands situated on the peninsular cape on which the town of Annapolis now stands. This visit was productive of great pleasure to them, as the growth of the grain since the period of being sown pointed to a future, not far distant, when they would be relieved from the necessity of seeking their food supplies from the Mother-land. This was the initial step made in farming in North America. This year (1606) also witnessed the construction of the first limekiln, and the erection of the first smith's forge, and charcoal for the use of it was first manufactured at this time also. The first efforts at road-making were also put forth in this year.

The winter of 1606-7 seems to have been passed very pleasantly and agreeably by the denizens of the fort on the Granville shore. The chiefs formed themselves into a sort of club to which they gave the title, "Order of Good Times." This Order consisted of fifteen members who were furnished with regalia and other insignia of office, and forms of observance were instituted for the guidance of its proceedings. Each member in turn became the caterer to his brethren, a plan which excited so much emulation among them that each endeavoured to excel his predecessor in office, in the variety, profusion and quality of the viands procured for the table during his term of office. Game was captured in the surrounding country by their own efforts or bought from the friendly Indians who had killed it. Parkman* says :

"Thus did Poutrincourt's table groan beneath the luxuries of the winter forests, flesh of moose, caribou and deer, beaver, otter and hare, bears and wild-cats, with ducks, geese, grouse and plover ; sturgeon, too, and trout and fish innumerable, speared through the ice of the Equille, or drawn from the depths of the neighbouring sea."

Quoting L'Escarbot, he adds :

"And whatever our gourmands at home may think we found as good cheer at Port Royal as they in Paris, and that, too, at a cheaper rate."

Parkman continues :

"The brotherhood followed the Grand Master, each carrying a dish. The invited guests were Indian chiefs, of whom old Membertou was daily present at

* See Volume I., pp. 243, 244.

table with the French, who took pleasure in the red-skin companionship ; those of humbler degree, warriors, squaws and children, sat on the floor or crouched together in the corners of the hall eagerly awaiting their portion of biscuit or of bread, a novel and much coveted luxury."

This little Round Table band included several distinguished names in its membership. Poutrincourt, now the lord of the Manor of Port Royal, its real founder, occupied the first place. Champlain, the founder of Quebec two years later, and the historian of many of the events we have before recorded; Biencourt, the unfortunate son and successor of Poutrincourt ; L'Escarbot, advocate, poet and historian of this early period in the history of Acadie ; Louis Hébert, one of the first settlers of Quebec a few years later ; Robert Gravé, Champdore, and Daniel Hay, the surgeon-apothecary—the first of his profession who had a medical practice in the Dominion of Canada—are all known to have spent this winter on the shores of Port Royal, and to have been members of this, the first social club organized in North America.

Though the winter had been a mild one four of the settlers died toward the spring, and were buried near the graves of those who had succumbed to the severity of the preceding winter. When the spring opened the settlers resumed their agricultural labours on the cape ; and Poutrincourt built a grist-mill, the first erected in the Dominion or on the Continent. The site of this mill is traditionally fixed near the head of the tide, on what they named, in consequence, Mill Brook, and which was afterwards known as the Allain,* now miscalled the Lequille River, in the immediate neighbourhood of Lockwood's mills.† That tradition tells a true story is evident from the remains still visible of the fort built near it, a few years later, for its protection in case of assault by an enemy.

It was early in the summer of 1607 that Membertou, the Micmac sachem, then nearly one hundred years old, undertook a war against the Armouchiquois Indians, a tribe of aborigines inhabiting the coasts of what was afterwards called the Province of Maine. He was joined in the expedition by the Indians of the St. John River, and scored a victory over his warlike enemies. He was much esteemed by the French, to whom he, in return, gave proofs of a sincere friendship. He is said to have encouraged the raising of tobacco by his tribe, a statement which, if true, assures us that these aborigines were not without a rude notion, at least, of the art of agriculture. He has been described as tall in stature, possessed of a noble presence, and as wearing a *beard.*

Early in the year a vessel arrived in Port Royal from France, bearing

* Louis Allain at one time owned land at the head of the tide, recently part of the Easson estate.—[Ed.]

† Now Dargie's factory.—[Ed.]

ill news to Poutrincourt. Her commander, Chevalier, delivered letters to him, in which he was informed that the promoters of the new Acadian colony could no longer defray the expenses necessary to its further continuance, and nothing seemed left but to abandon it and return to France. This news came at a most inopportune time, for the settlers had begun to form an attachment to their new home, and were then busily engaged in exploring some of its remote surroundings. L'Escarbot, Champlain and others were employed in examining the river to the head of the tide, and perhaps farther, while others were employed in enlarging the clearing at the cape, or in gardening at their fort near Goat Island, and all were animated by a spirit of hope for the success of their adventure. It was with sad hearts therefore that the colonists received the news now communicated by their leader, Poutrincourt, who, however, informed them of his determination to return as soon as he could succeed in making the arrangements necessary for the continuance of his enterprise.

On July 30th, L'Escarbot, with all the inhabitants, except eight souls, left Port Royal in the "shallop and *patache*," which had been built at their fort the year before, to proceed to Canseau, where the *Jonas* was awaiting their arrival (having reached that place in May), in order to convey them to France. On their way they put into Lahave for a short time, and probably at other points along the coast. Poutrincourt, however, delayed his departure until the grain at the cape had ripened, that he might be able to carry samples of it to Paris; and as we are informed that he left the basin on the 11th of August, it might reasonably be inferred that *rye* was the grain to which reference has been made, though it is possible that winter wheat had been sown there during the previous autumn, in which case the crop might have reached maturity at the time named.

The voyage to Canso was successfully made by both the parties, and they set sail on the 3rd of September, 1607, reaching their destination after a quick voyage, about the beginning of October. The desertion of the colony was complete; not a European was left in the hamlet or the fort, or in their vicinity. Great was the grief of Membertou and his people. He had been an honoured guest of the Knights of the Port Royal Order of Good Times. His people had been the recipients of many favours at their hands. He had been filled with admiration at their mode of living, and won over by the wise kindness shown to himself and those over whom he ruled; and although Poutrincourt had made him a present of the supplies remaining after his departure, the gift gave but slight consolation for the grief caused by the absence of those whom he had learned to regard as the true friends of himself and his tribe.

On his arrival at Paris, Poutrincourt applied to the king, Henry IV.,

for a confirmation of the grant of the seigniory of Port Royal, which Demonts had given him in 1605. The request was complied with; but it does not appear that he visited Acadie again before 1610, though it seems certain that somebody *did* visit the abandoned fort in 1609; for in 1827 a stone was discovered on or very near the site of the old fort, on which were engraved the Freemasons' arms and the date 1609. This stone, which I saw many years ago in the office of the late Samuel Cowling, was in the possession of the late Judge Thomas C. Haliburton, and is now the property of his son, Robert Grant Haliburton.* It is a silent but sure witness that some person or persons visited the fort in that year, and it is also the oldest masonic memorial in the Dominion, and probably in North America.

It does not appear to have been an easy matter for Poûtrincourt to perfect his arrangements for a speedy return to Acadie; but whatever were the difficulties with which he had to contend, he finally overcame them all, and opened the way for his return to Port Royal with a considerable number of emigrants. In February, 1610, he set sail from France, and reached the site of the settlement about the 1st of June, the passage having been prolonged by unexpected delays in various harbours along the coasts. The arrival of the new settlers was, however, early enough to enable them to sow the seeds they had brought out with them, a work which was immediately commenced by the farm labourers, whom he had brought with him; and the mechanics were employed in repairing the houses which had been left vacant more than two years before. The king had coupled with his confirmation of Poutrincourt's grant the condition that he should take out with him on this occasion a Jesuit priest or priests, with a view to the conversion of the aborigines of the country. In consequence of this condition he was accompanied by Father Flesché, who, on the 24th of June, baptized a number of Micmacs, among whom was their honoured sachem, our old friend Membertou. I believe that this was the first instance of the administration of this rite in the Dominion of Canada, and that Membertou was the first convert to the Christian faith among the Indians of North America. Soon after the interesting ceremony took place, Biencourt was despatched to France to convey the welcome tidings to the French king, and was directed by his father to bring out with him, on his return, fresh supplies for the sustenance and comfort of the new colony during the coming winter. He did not complete his arrangements, however, until January, 1611.

* It is now in the custody of the Royal Canadian Institute, Toronto. It was discovered by the late Dr. Charles Jackson, of Boston, the celebrated chemist and geologist, and his companion, Francis Alger, while on a geological survey of the Province. Dr. Jackson, in a letter now in the possession of the Historic Genealogical Society of Boston, says they found it on the shore of Goat Island.—*Proceedings of Grand Lodge of Mass.*, 1891, pp. 19, 20.—[Ed.]

On the 26th of that month he set sail, taking with him two additional priests—Fathers Biard and Massé—but did not reach Port Royal until the 22nd of June, which was Whitsunday. The vessel used on this voyage was of sixty tons burthen only, and her crew and passengers numbered in all only thirty-six souls.

Poutrincourt must have felt unmingled satisfaction as he beheld this vessel coming safely into port. Twenty-three persons had been depending on him for maintenance during the long winter, and the food had diminished to such a degree that he had been compelled to rely on his Indian neighbours to supplement his stores with such products as they were able to furnish. The vessel having, however, brought but small additional supplies, it was thought necessary to obtain an immediate augmentation of them, for he now had fifty-nine mouths to feed, instead of twenty-three. With this intention, he made a voyage to the coasts of what has since been called New England, where he fell in with four French vessels, from which he obtained what he sought; and having induced their captains to acknowledge his son as vice-admiral, he returned to Port Royal, where he announced his intention to revisit France. His object was to secure further advantages for his infant settlement. All the inhabitants, except Biard and Massé and twenty others, whom he left under the command of Biencourt, accompanied him on the homeward voyage.

In this year (1611) the recently converted Micmac chieftain, Membertou, died, and received Christian burial. From him and his family it is more than probable that Biard and Massé obtained much of their knowledge of the Indian language, and it was, no doubt, with feelings of considerable regret that they performed the rites of sepulture over the remains of the aged and esteemed sachem. His body was buried near the fort, and probably in lands now owned by the Robblee family, in Granville.*

Poutrincourt, who, we have seen, left Port Royal in July, reached France in August, but did not succeed in accomplishing the object of his visit till near the close of the year. It was not, indeed, until the last day of December that he was able to despatch a vessel from Dieppe with provisions and other necessaries to the colonists whom he had left in Acadie. The vessel arrived at Port Royal on January 23rd, 1612, not a moment too soon for the relief of its inhabitants, who had been placed on allowance some weeks before, in order to make the most of their scanty provisions. This ship was commanded by Simon Imbert, whose name was given afterwards to the stream which we now call by the

* In the author's imperfect MS. in the library of King's College it is said he was interred by his own consent in the burial-ground which had been recently consecrated for that purpose.—[Ed.]

corrupted, commonplace and falsely distinctive name of Bear River. In this vessel came Gilbert du Thet, a priest of the Order of Jesus, to take the place of Father Massé, who had gone to the St. John River with a son of Membertou, having adopted the Indian mode of life, the better to enable him to pursue the study of the aboriginal languages. During the summer Poutrincourt paid a visit to Chiegnecto and Minas, and came near being wrecked on the homeward voyage, which induced him on his return to order another barge or shallop to be built at Port Royal, which when completed was used by Biard, Jean Baptiste, *charpentier*, and a servant in continuing the exploration of the river and in fishing.

The winter of 1612-13 is reported to have been one of considerable want and hardship to the settlers. Biencourt, who began to distrust the priests, for whom he does not seem to have had much regard, had been informed of the purchase of the rights of Demonts in Acadie, by Madame de Guercherville, and he fancied he had cause to fear that plans were being secretly matured, which, if carried out, would endanger his father's rights in Port Royal, and a general feeling of uneasiness and distrust crept into the little community, which tended to increase their difficulties and depress their hopes.

The lady above named having purchased Acadie, except Port Royal, determined to send out fresh emigrants and ample supplies to that country. In March, 1613, she therefore despatched a vessel from Honfleur with forty-eight persons, including her crew, together with horses and goats and a year's allowance of food, which arrived at Port Royal late in May. On her arrival, five souls only were found in the town, Biencourt and his men being absent on exploring expeditions in various directions. Hébert, the apothecary, acted as governor in the absence of Biencourt, and to him were delivered the letters from the Queen of France authorizing the return of Fathers Biard and Massé by the vessel of Madame de Guercherville. The ship having discharged her freight and received these gentlemen on board, together with Du Thet, the new priest who had accompanied Poutrincourt on his return thither, sailed to the island of Mont Desert and made a landing on the mainland nearly opposite to it, perhaps with a view to forming a new settlement there ; but whatever may have been their object, it was suddenly and rudely interrupted and frustrated by the occurrence of an unexpected and undesirable event. The English, who had recently formed a settlement at Jamestown in Virginia, began to look with jealousy, not perhaps unmixed with fear, at the establishment of a fort and settlement in Acadie by France, and commands had been sent to the Governor of that colony to compass the destruction, by capture or otherwise, of the town and works at Port Royal. In agreement with these orders, Captain Samuel Argall was despatched with several vessels and a number of men to carry out this

object, and while on his voyage thither he accidentally fell in with the French ship and party at Mont Desert, and made a prize of the one and prisoners of the others, but not till after a sharp fight, in which Du Thet was killed while gallantly defending his countrymen. These Argall sent to Virginia by one of his ships, and with the remainder proceeded to Port Royal, where he arrived about the time of the return of Biencourt, with whom it is said that he held an interview in a meadow or marsh near the town, which was already in the hands of Argall. It is supposed that this conference was solicited by the former with a view to some compromise which might save the place from utter destruction. During its continuance, there can be no doubt that he urged his own right to the settlements, his desire to live at peace with the English, his helplessness to injure them, even if he desired to do so, and the ruin that would ensue to innocent and harmless people on the destruction of their dwellings and improvements; but the English commander was deaf alike to the eloquence and the logic of the Frenchman, and he proceeded to execute his orders to the letter. Murdoch (Vol. I., page 58) says:

"Argall destroyed the fort and all monuments and marks of French power at Port Royal. He even caused the names of Demonts and other captains, and the *fleurs de lis* to be effaced with pick and chisel from a massive stone on which they had been engraved, but he is said to have spared the mill and the barns up the river."

It was, indeed, a sad sight for Biencourt and his friends to witness so melancholy a conclusion to an enterprise that had already cost more than one hundred thousand crowns, and that had in some degree, at least, given promise of a happier and more desirable result.

When the wretched news of this disaster reached Poutrincourt, he gave up forever all connection with Acadie, and returning to the service of the king, was killed at the storming of *Méry sur Seine*, in December, 1615. It has been stated that an epitaph to his memory was cut "into the marble and trees, at Port Royal, by order of his son Biencourt," but no remains of any description have been discovered to verify the statement.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER I.

The first mill was built on the easternmost mouth of the Lequille, where it discharges its waters fresh from Grand Lake into the tideway at the head of the marsh. The remains of the old dam are plainly visible to-day, having been composed of stones and earth, and may be viewed by walking a few rods down the stream from Dargie's mills. The structure, it will be seen, stood at the foot of a steep hill of considerable elevation, and the visitor, if he choose to climb to the summit of that portion of it which is in the north-western direction from the dam, will be rewarded by seeing the remains of the works once erected by the French settlers for the defence of the mill in case of attack. The remains of the breast-works, which formed a shelter to their musketeers, may be traced many rods, in an irregular curve, from where the chief battery was fixed, in a north and westerly direction, following the summits of the heights; and the ditch which was made in excavating the material to form this work is still visible in many places. The main battery commanded the head of the marsh so as to render an attack by way of the river by boats both dangerous and difficult. It also covered the mill, and commanded the high lands on the opposite side of the stream. These remains are well worthy the notice of tourists, and should be better known to our own people.

CHAPTER II.

1613–1686.

Biencourt and some colonists remain—Sir W. Alexander and the Scotch fort—The De la Tours—Razilli—D'Aulnay de Charnisay—Quarrels and war between him and Latour—Takes Latour's fort—His death—Le Borgne—Capture of Port Royal and its restoration—La Valliére—Perrot—Census—Names of French colonists.

ALTHOUGH the dwellings at Port Royal had been destroyed, it is certain that some of the inhabitants, who were absent during Argall's visit, probably at their barns and cornfields, or mill, or who had otherwise escaped him, either returned and rebuilt their houses, or built others amidst their cornfields, on the present site of the town, and continued to inhabit the country until the advent of Sir William Alexander's colony in 1621. Biencourt is known to have resided there in 1617, and it is also known that a company of French adventurers, connected with the peltry trade of Acadie, sent out some Recollet missionaries in 1619, who, among other duties, were charged "to undertake the care of some old inhabitants of the district who had remained there with Monsieur Biencourt." The little community supported themselves as best they could by means of the produce of their flocks and gardens, and of the fishery and the chase, until the arrival of the British colony in Granville, when they thought it unsafe to remain longer, and sought a temporary asylum at Cape Sable, where, under the leadership of Charles Amador de la Tour, they built a fort which they called St. Louis, and obtained protection and a home for several years. Biencourt attached himself to the fortunes of Latour soon after the Argall conquest, and became his friend and lieutenant. The anxieties, perplexities and hardships which attended his life during the interval of 1613-22, had a fatal effect upon his constitution, and death closed the scene of his misfortunes in 1623. He left all his possessions and command at Port Royal, by will, to Latour, whose name and that of his father, Claude de la Tour, were destined to become from this time so intimately and interestingly connected with the history of Acadie.

In 1621 Sir William Alexander became the possessor of the country under a patent from James I., and sent over a number of Scotch colonists

under the command of his son, who, on their arrival, made a settlement and rebuilt the French fort in Granville on a site nearly opposite the eastern extremity of Goat Island. This fort—commonly called the Scotch Fort—was situated about four miles in a direct line from the site of the second French fort, and commanded the northern or main channel of the river. Some of these new settlers probably took possession of the vacated houses and gardens of the French on the cape, for it is certain that Sir David Kirk left an addition to their number on the occasion of his visit there in 1628. On his return voyage to Quebec, Kirk captured a French ship bound to that port, on board of which was Claude de la Tour, whom he made prisoner and conveyed to England. This Claude de la Tour, or Latour, had been connected with Acadie and New France for a period of nineteen years before this event. His first visit appears to have been to Port Royal in 1609, as will be shown further on, and seems to be associated with the oldest remaining memorial of the French dominion on this continent. It was at this eventful period of his life that Latour made the acquaintance of the new proprietor of Acadie, from whom he obtained large grant of lands in that country for himself and son, on condition of a change of allegiance on their part. Before leaving England he married a maid of honour to Henrietta, the English queen, and was created a knight-baronet of Nova Scotia. The lands, of which he had accepted a grant as the price of his treason toward his sovereign, included within their limits the settlement and fort of his son Charles at Cape Sable, embracing all that part of the Province lying between Cape Forchu and Lunenburg, and extending forty miles in a northwardly direction. The condition of this grant was that the fiefs thus conveyed should be held under the Crown of England. Its acceptance, therefore, involved a total change of allegiance, which was made on the spot by Claude, who also pledged himself to obtain the like change on the part of his son Charles, when he should arrive at Cape Sable, a pledge he was unable to redeem owing to the inflexible determination of his son to remain faithful to the French king, his sovereign.

These events took place in 1629, during the summer of which Latour, accompanied by his bride, sailed for Cape Sable, and on his arrival communicated his plans to his son, who, on hearing that the advantages gained had been purchased at the price of treason, refused to listen to his father's proposals. Finding that persuasions and threats were alike useless, he repaired to Port Royal, where he remained with the English till near the close of the following year; when, having received a letter from his son informing him that he—the son—had been appointed lieutenant-general for the French king, and that men, arms, ammunition and other supplies had been sent out to him, Claude determined to commit a second treason. He was strongly urged to this course by his son; and on the

promise of being protected and provided for, he and his wife left Annapolis and went to live at Cape Sable, where his son built a house for them. The accounts that have come down to us concerning affairs at this time are scanty and fragmentary, and it is almost impossible to weave them into a readable and trustworthy narrative. That Latour on finding his negotiations with his son a failure, sought refuge in Port Royal (then in English possession), there is no doubt. It would be interesting to know how his wife regarded the change from an honourable position and life in the Court of Charles I. to life in an Acadian wilderness; to be informed how they amused themselves during the days of the dreary winter months of 1629-30, and to learn what plans for the future were discussed. But of these things we can now glean no positive information. It is much to be regretted that his wife drops entirely out of sight after her removal to Cape Sable.

Before passing from this period of the history of Port Royal, it may be well to suggest to the reader that during the twenty-eight years since the first landing of Demonts, very considerable changes had taken place there. Besides those that existed on the site of the first settlement, opposite Goat Island, clearings had also been made at the cape and in its neighbourhood, especially toward the mill, which, as I have already said, stood near the head of the tide on Mill Brook, now miscalled Lequille. Gardens had been cultivated and farms commenced in all these districts, and meadows had been reclaimed, and domestic animals introduced, which now, no doubt, began to be quite numerous. In the letter of King Charles I. to Sir William Alexander, dated in July, 1631, he charges him "to demolish the fort that was builded there by your son and to remove all the people, goods, ordnance, ammunition, *cattle* and other things belonging to that colony." This statement makes it certain that the Scotch settlers were possessed of live stock, and in order to its sustenance the soil must have been cultivated. Now, as this settlement contained seventy families, and they were about ten years settled there, the improvements made must have been very considerable. It is a matter of regret that we know so little of the sayings and doings, and the wants, wishes and hopes of these first British settlers; of their relations to the Indians, of their mode of living and pursuits, and more especially of the particulars which attended their ultimate extinction. From a statement made by the elder Latour to his son after his removal to Cape Sable, we learn that seventy settlers wintered on the shores of the basin of Port Royal in 1629-30, and that out of that number not less than thirty died of scurvy and other diseases. The remainder of them, unprotected by the presence of Latour and receiving no aid from home, were attacked by the Indians and fell victims to the scalping-knife and the ravages of want and sickness, with the exception

of one family only, two members of which were living in 1635, having become Roman Catholics and married French wives. Thus ended the first attempt at colonization on the part of Great Britain in Nova Scotia.

By the Treaty of St. Germain-en-Laye, Port Royal, with the whole of Acadie, passed again into the hands of France (March, 1632), and Isaac de Razilli was sent out to take formal possession of the country from the English. With him came again the Recollet missionaries, who had been banished from the Province by the English during their occupancy, and resumed their cures. With him also came Charles de Menou, Seigneur D'Aulnay de Charnisay, as one of his lieutenants, Charles Amador de la Tour, of Cape Sable, being the other, each for a separate section of Acadie, D'Aulnay's the western and Latour's the eastern. De Razilli, who acted as governor, or lieutenant-general for the French king, made his headquarters at Lahave, where he settled forty families, but after his death, which occurred in 1633 or 1634, D'Aulnay removed these settlers to Port Royal, located them with twenty more whom he brought from France on the site of the present town, and built a new fort for their protection. In 1634, Claude de Razilli, the brother of Isaac, received a grant of Port Royal from the company of New France. In 1635 the same company granted the "fort and habitation of Latour," on the St. John River, to Charles Latour. This fort was situated where the town of Carleton now stands, and became the theatre of stirring events subsequently. Isaac de Razilli had left all his rights and property in Acadie to his brother Claude, who, in 1642, conveyed them to D'Aulnay.

Difficulties and differences soon occurred between D'Aulnay and Charles Latour (1635-50). D'Aulnay's headquarters were first at Pentagoët, and Latour's were at Fort Latour, on the St. John River; but Port Royal was occupied by the former some years before its transfer to him by Claude de Razilli, and as early as 1638 King Louis XIII. urged them to preserve a good understanding, and avoid quarrels about their respective jurisdictions, confirming D'Aulnay at Lahave and Port Royal, and Latour in his more advantageous trading post at St. John. But in February, 1641 or 1642, D'Aulnay, by his influence with Richelieu, secured an order to Latour to proceed to France to answer certain grave but groundless charges against him, and authority to arrest him in case of refusal, which edicts were soon followed by an entire revocation of his authority. In the next year a new order for his arrest was issued, and in 1643 open war resulted. D'Aulnay attacked Fort Latour with a fleet of four vessels and five hundred men, and brought Latour and his small garrison into great straits. He succeeded, however, in escaping from his fort, with his wife, on the night of June 12th, 1643, to a storeship that had arrived at the mouth of the harbour a day or two previous, but dared not come further, having received information of D'Aulnay's presence

inside. In this ship he proceeded to Boston, where he sought aid against his adversary from the civil authorities. He succeeded in securing the official permission of Governor Winthrop to charter vessels, engage men and purchase cannon, and he lost no time in chartering four vessels, enlisting fifty men and purchasing thirty-eight pieces of cannon, together with ninety-two soldiers, the whole being armed and victualled by himself. The cost of this expedition was secured by mortgage on his real and personal property in Acadie. With this little fleet he sailed for Fort Latour on the 14th of July, and immediately on his arrival attacked D'Aulnay—who had not succeeded in capturing the place during his absence—who, taken by surprise, took to flight with a view to shelter himself under the guns of his fort of Port Royal. Latour, determined not to let him escape so easily, pursued across the bay and up the basin to the very walls of the fort, and finally forced him to an engagement near a mill on the banks of the Lequille River. The spot where this fight is said to have occurred is about a third of a mile north of Dargie's mills,* and near the place where tradition affirms a mill has not been absent since Poutrincourt erected the first one built in the Dominion in 1607. Several persons were killed on both sides in this affair, but victory declared itself on the side of Latour.

D'Aulnay, soon after his defeat, took his departure for France to invoke aid to enable him to recover his lost ground in Acadie.

Murdoch (Vol. I., page 103) thus justly summarizes the conduct of Latour on this occasion :

"One cannot help admiring the activity and capacity displayed by Charles de la Tour in this instance. Hemmed in by superior forces, he sees and seizes on a mode of extrication which calls into play his eloquence, reasoning and persuasion. Preserving a calm and dignified attitude in a foreign town, amid conflicting sentiments and interests, he overrides the scruples, distrust and caution of the English of Boston, and obtains powerful reinforcements there ; and having so far succeeded, his rapid movements as the soldier and the man of business enable him to turn his forces to account without dangerous delays. But a month had elapsed from his arrival in Boston with but one vessel, until he leaves it with an armament of five and a valuable land force besides. His removing his lady from the beleaguered fort, where her presence would probably have been of no avail to the defenders, and where she would have been exposed to many dangers, and transferring her to Boston, where she could exercise an influence most favourable to his projects, is also deserving of great commendation."

D'Aulnay returned from France in 1644, and immediately repaired to Boston with the object of changing the good feeling which the people and the authorities there had manifested toward his rival, and for this purpose he exhibited an order from the French king for the arrest of

* D'Aulnay's vessel had stranded near the mouth of the stream, which he probably ascended in order to cross it to reach his fort.—[Ed.]

Latour and his wife on charges of treason. In this attempt he, for the time at least, succeeded.

The nature of the contest between these rivals, the causes which operated to produce it, and the particulars of their negotiations with the Massachusetts authorities have been matters of mere conjecture until recent years; indeed, until the text of their correspondence, including an account of their negotiations during that period, was discovered in the archives at Boston about the year 1838, and which has since been printed in the collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society for that year. We shall devote a few pages to the contents of these valuable papers.

On October 21st, 1644, D'Aulnay addressed a long letter to Endicott, then Governor of Massachusetts, in which he set forth that a subject of his master, the king of France, Latour, had been countenanced and aided in his rebellion against his king, and reminds that gentleman that he had conveyed to him and his brother magistrates in Boston the desire of his master that they would not be guilty of the impropriety of aiding his rebel subject at a time when the two nations were at peace. He now sends his personal friend, Monsieur Marie, to Boston to "demand justice and due reason in all kind, for certain grievances, wrongs and injuries which mine and myself have received from yours." He is very desirous to secure and maintain peaceful relations with his English neighbours, and Marie has been instructed and authorized to do all in his power to secure this end. As to the charges* that had been preferred by them against him, they were easily refuted. "To the first," he says, "I reply that Captain John Rose only hath lost the goods of Monsieur Richard Salstonstal, making shipwreck upon the Isle of Sables, whereunto neither the deceased monsieur, the commander of Razilli, then lieutenant-general for the king in all the extent of New France, nor myself did in any measure contribute, seeing that we were so far asunder, and that the said Captain Rose, being through storm of wind by hazard put into the harbour of Lahave, where then he was unacquainted, was kindly received and entertained by the said sieur in the said place: the ship being then returned to France, the year ensuing all his company were delivered unto him, and a thousand crowns which he had in his coffer; and for certain cables and sails which he had saved of the wreck of his ship, the said sieur, the commander of Razilli, gave him in payment *seven or eight hundred buttons of massive gold, which he caused to be taken off from one of his suits, drawing bills upon me, which I accepted, and two days after paid him his money.*" "To the second," he says, "I answer that when the said deceased commander of Razilli came into this country, he had order by his commission to withdraw Port Royal out of the hand of the Scots, and that by an article contained in the treaty of peace made between the French and English after the taking of Rochelle. You have but little knowledge of the letter drawn upon De Boulemeky for satisfaction of certain Indian corn, cattle and ordnance which the said Scots left with us. The like command also he had to clear the coast unto Pemaquid and Kennebek of all persons whatever, and to cause them to withdraw, if there were any habitation seated on this side. It was myself who received orders to execute the total, and met with Thomas Willett, placed at Pemptagoitt. I prayed him to be gone, giving him to understand with as much civility as I could, that it was not a place for him to

* These charges can only be inferred from his answers.

inhabit. He carried away what he could, and of what remained there was an inventory made, which he and I signed unto, and in the upshot I gave him a bill to make him payment upon demand. A month after he came to the said place with a ship and pinnace to fire ordnance upon them who were there without asking what was due unto him. . . . I did him no wrong to force him to depart, seeing he possessed another's right."

As to the third and fourth charges he continues thus :

"I think I have answered your third article by the end of this second. For the fourth I might go for a senseless brute, if, after all those acts of hostility received from yours, without giving them the least occasion myself or those whom I have left this winter to command in my absence in those places, we should not have given the like commission. You are so well versed in warlike design, and understand as well points of State and that which concerneth justice, as to judge therein, behold the truth in his brightness as I have known it."

Having thus far defended his government against the complaints of the English colonists, he now comes to the real object of his letter, that is to say, to endeavour to detach Endicott and his people from the interests of Latour. He says in conclusion :

"Moreover, with your favour I should crave answer to the articles which Marie shall propound unto you about those things which do concern me ; but, *above all*, how you desire to act for the future toward the said *Sieur Latour*. . . . If I can but obtain from you this request as to desist from fomenting the rebellion of the said Sieur de la Tour, I engage my word from this hour by these that whatever troubles may fall out, yea, between the two crowns of France and England, to keep inviolably with you and those which are under your authority, that peace and intelligence which are requisite in these beginnings."

The letter from which these extracts have been made was signed D'Aulnay, "Governor and Lieutenant-General for the king in all the coasts of Acadie, country of New France," and was written at Port Royal.

Six days after its date, namely, on the 27th of October, and without any knowledge of its contents, Latour addressed a letter to the same parties in Boston, from which we cull the following *excerpta :*

"I could not know how to divest myself of the deep feelings with which your kindness has filled me, nor to deprive myself of the confidence with which your generosity has furnished me, nor do I believe that, however my enemy may have gone to Boston to deceive you and make me pass for a traitor, you will condemn me without a hearing or abandon me because he would invade my interest. He is a man of artifice, who, knowing that you esteem good men, will assume all the grimaces and similarities of piety, and strive to give you the impression that you ought to abandon me; but he will not tell you that it is to fortify himself by my disaster and afterwards make you difficulty, as he has already shown by the injustice and perfidy committed in the affair at Penobscot. He supposes, so very vain is he, that your opinion will be swayed by his, and, provided that he shows you some decrees, that you will give me up. . . . For that which concerns his decrees, I could not better enable you to perceive the injustice of them than to place in

your hands that which contains the crimes that they impute to me. You will see them in this, as if I prevented by my bad deportment the progress of the service of God and of the king, and of the advancement of the colony. And when it is asked of them, whether they are not his evil deeds, they say, instead of alleging the course of my vicious life, that I have done nothing in the country. But mark the false testimony, which consists in its not being able to prove that I impede by my vicious conduct the progress of the service of God among the savages; and instead of proving it, he goes to allege that I have done nothing in the country, which is an irrelevant point and still false, for I have built two forts, and he himself has burnt one of mine, and he has not built another for it, nor cleared up only seven or eight acres of land. He has also burnt the Monastery Church contrary to the tenor of the decree which ordered him to put in those places men who were able to answer for them, and by consequence to preserve them. And this wretch, to justify his atheism, alleges that the Indian females have been corrupted in the church, which is as false as it is true that he burnt the wigwam of a savage at Cape Sables to carry off his wife from him; and that the Commander de Razilli, his late master, held him a long time in prison for this cause; and that this last winter Father Vincent de Paris, a Capuchin, did all in his power to be heard against him in Council to prove his atheistical hypocrisy, showing that for six months he had criminal connection in Port Royal with a woman being a communicant. But, gentlemen, to prove his perfidy, consider only the capture of Penobscot, and the payment of Thomas Ouillet (Willett), and you will see, at the same time, his destitution of faith and his rage against the English nation. Whatever relates to myself, do not account me so unprincipled a man nor such an enemy as he until I have as much deceived and offended you as he has; but especially consider my inclinations by my obligations."

Some time after the receipt of the foregoing letter from Latour, Endicott and his Council sent a reply to D'Aulnay's former communication, from which we cull the following extracts, which show the feelings which animated the English at Boston in this affair:

"Sir,—Upon the request lately presented to us by the Sieur de la Tour, to yield him assistance of men and ammunition against your forces, which he was in fear of, we have had occasion to consider how matters have passed between you and us, and among other things many injuries which sundry of our people have, at several times, suffered from you and yours since your coming into these parts, and particularly certain commissions lately given forth to Captain Le Bœuf to take our vessels and goods, which might have given us occasion to have yielded unto the request of the said sieur, and to have sought for satisfaction in another way. . . . But to the end that you and all the world may know the delight which we take to live in peace with all and to avoid all occasions of difference and contention, we have taken this present opportunity to write unto you, that we may truly understand one another, . . . and for time to come that rules of love and peace may be carefully attended to. As for that which was done the last year by our people in the design wherein they were employed by the said Sieur de la Tour, that it may not be misconstrued, we do hereby in words of truth assure you that they did not act either by command, counsel or permission of the Government here established. They went volunteers without any commission from it, and as we are in part ignorant of what they did so it was done without our advice; and for any unlawful action which any amongst them might possibly commit we do not approve of and

shall be facile and ready to our power so to demean ourselves, as due satisfaction shall be rendered unto you; for as we are not willing to bear injuries whilst we have in our hands to right ourselves, so we conscientiously desire not to offer any ourselves, nor to approve of it in any of ours.

"For the present, the particulars wherein we conceive ourselves, friends and confederates, to be by you injured, and for the which we never yet received satisfaction, are: First, your taking the goods of Sir Richard Salstonstal, knight, and the imprisoning his men, who suffered shipwreck upon the Isle of Sables, eight years past. Second, your taking of Penobscot from those of our nation and League of Plymouth. Third, your refusal to traffic with us at Port Royal, and threatening to take our vessels, which should go beyond Pemptagoitt, and accordingly your staying of one of our vessels, though afterwards you released her. Lastly, your granting of commissions to take our vessels and goods this last autumn, as is above mentioned.

"To the above said particulars we desire and expect your clear and speedy answer, that so we may understand how you are at present disposed, whether to war or peace, and accordingly steer our course as God shall direct, and as for the present we have not granted the said request of the said Sieur de la Tour, but on the contrary, upon this occasion we have expressly prohibited all our people to exercise any act of hostility, either by land or by sea, against you, unless it be in their own defence, until such time as they shall have further commission. A copy of the present we have sent unto you here enclosed. Also, upon the reception of these presents we desire and expect that all such commissions shall be without delay called in which have been given forth by you or any of yours against us and our people; and forasmuch as our merchants are entered into a way and form of commerce with said De la Tour, which firstly they tendered to yourself, but, according as we have been informed, you refused; nevertheless, we see not just reason to hinder them in their just and lawful callings, nor to hinder their own defence, in case they shall be assaulted either by you or yours, during their trade with the said sieur. We leave them to Divine Providence and to the dictates of their own conscience to regulate them according to right reason in such a case."

This determination of the authorities of Massachusetts Bay was very annoying to D'Aulnay, as it assured him that his diplomacy was a complete failure and that his rival had been more than a match in that delicate science. In his next communication he therefore throws off its mask, and tells the colonists what he thinks of them in very plain language. Under date of Port Royal, August 31st, 1645, he says:

"Upon this occasion I will candidly tell that Monsieur Marie had assured me that none of yours should undertake the affairs of Sieur de la Tour until you had returned me an answer by the last resolution, to know whether you would be at peace or war with me; and in the meantime, I understood by Mr. Allen, the last autumn, that you were to convoy the wife of the said De la Tour, with three ships, into the river of St. John. I know not how you will name such kind of dealing. As for me, I should rather perish than to promise that which I would not perform. To say, as Mr. Hawthorne, that they were merchants of London whom you cannot hinder from trading with whom they please, this were good, if we did not well know that Latour, being worth nothing and altogether unknown to your said merchants, they would never trust such persons if you or other gentlemen were not his security; moreover, that persons who desire peace with their neighbours, as you say you do, would have hindered such proceedings if they had pleased, it being easily done in

such places as we are in. For the second, that you are not accustomed to meet until the month of September ; that doth not concern me. I shall constantly wait until the said time according to your desire, although Mr. Marie did believe that you would have answered me in the spring, as he did apprehend you. Once more, I engage you my word that I will not stir nor give answer to my king in France until I have yours, or that you make it appear that you despise the amity of France. For the third,* that you did believe that you had given satisfaction to the demand which Marie made unto you on my behalf by the answers given in writing by yourselves, which are the very same with those which newly you sent me. If you call that satisfaction unto a governor for a king, after sending with strength of arms even unto his port without declaration of war, or giving any other reason than by lively force to kill his men, burn one mill, slay cattle, and to carry away a barque laden with peltry and other goods ; to say that your English, who have done such acts of hostility, were not sent by you—pardon me, sir, if you please, if I tell you this is the mocking of a gentleman to render such answers. . . . If you love better not to say than so to act in like case, it is to make use of tricks of sleight ; for it is evident that if you would meddle with that that doth not concern you, at least in justice you were bound to give as much credit to the amicable, voluntary and true answers which I returned unto you as unto the falsehoods of the said Sieur de la Tour and his folks. But I will tell you, that is not the winding-up of the business. The truth is, you thought by surprising me to have swallowed me up without justice or any reason on your part, but pretended and coloured over. Believe it, sir, that if you had come to the end of your designs, you have to do with a king who would not let you so easily digest the morsel as you might be given to understand. The example of Qubeck and of the same Port Royal where I am, taken by the English from the French in the time of lawful war, and afterward surrendered to the same French, joining thereunto what is passed between the French and English in St. Christopher's Island, is sufficient to assure you of this truth, if you will. It is true that I shall die, but the kings of France die not, and their hands are always long enough to maintain their subjects in their right, in which part soever they be. . . . Furthermore, sir, I know not whether this honest [fellow] who delivered me yours did well understand the apprehensions of your assembly whereunto he hath told me he did assist ; but his reasons are very weak—to make believe that Sieur de la Tour had any appearance of justice by saying that one might have such arrests† for twenty crowns in France. So to speak is to testify slender understanding of affairs. . . . I should have been very glad that those to whom you had sent them had caused them to be presented to Monsieur Sabran, embassador-extraordinary for our king in England. You should have been fully satisfied, and then you would have known that I am a man of truth and without fraud in my proceedings."

These extracts will enable the reader to understand, in some degree, the motives which animated the several parties in this contest, which for several years embroiled all Acadie in a sort of civil war, alike destructive to her interests and her progress. D'Aulnay having thus far succeeded in his diplomacy at Boston, Latour had henceforth to contend at fearful

* His replies here seem to refer to statements made to him by or through Hawthorne, the bearer of Endicott's letter.

† The reference here is to the documents under which he claimed the right to send Latour to France as a prisoner to answer to the charge of treason.

odds and alone against his relentless enemy. He had been made Lieutenant-General of Acadie in 1631, and was recalled after ten years' service in that capacity, in 1641, to answer certain charges or complaints that had been made against him by the inhabitants of Port Royal, through Matthew Capon, a civil officer in the French service at that place. He refused to obey the order, and in 1642 D'Aulnay is styled, "Lieutenant for the King in all Acadie." In the latter year he became possessed of the rights of the brothers Razilli, and having a powerful friend at the French Court in the person of his father, he seems to have exercised almost supreme authority in all Acadian matters, saving those only which were connected with Fort Latour, at the mouth of the River St. John, where Charles Latour and his wife resided. Latour was not, however, entirely without friends of considerable influence in France, for we have seen that during the attack on his fort, a ship with emigrants and stores for his use arrived there from that country.

D'Aulnay now resolved to resume operations against his foe. In 1645, during the absence of Latour from his fort, which was left in charge of his wife with fifty men only for its defence, he seized the opportunity to make another attempt to capture it. Arriving at St. John he anchored his ship near the fort and commenced to cannonade it. It was defended with great valour by Madame Latour and her little garrison, who compelled their assailant to desist from his efforts, after having killed twenty and wounded thirteen of his men and disabled his ship. The defeated D'Aulnay, chagrined and disappointed at the result of his attack, determined to visit France and provide himself with additional means to carry on the strife. He left Port Royal early in the summer and returned again in the autumn, and exerted the remainder of this year and the whole of 1646 in making preparations for a signal and final blow against his valiant and able adversary; and in April, 1647, with a very considerable armament of ships, guns and men, he renewed his attack. Fort Latour, as on a former occasion, owing to the temporary absence of her husband, was defended by Madame Latour. Murdoch (Vol. I., pp. 110, 111) says:

"Though surprised and having but a small number of soldiers, she resolved to defend herself and the fort to the last extremity; which she did with so much courage during three days, that she compelled the besiegers to draw off their forces; but on the fourth day, which was Easter Sunday, she was betrayed by a Swiss soldier of the garrison who stood sentry, and whom D'Aulnay had found means to corrupt. She did not give up; but when she learned that the enemy was scaling the wall, she came forward to defend it at the head of her little garrison. D'Aulnay imagining that the number of men within the fort was greater than he at first supposed, and fearing the disgrace of a repulse, proposed to the lady that she should capitulate, and she agreed on it to save the lives of the handful of brave men who had supported her so courageously."

D'Aulnay, however, as soon as he entered the fort was ashamed of having made terms with a woman who had nothing but her own courage and so few men to oppose him, and in a very cowardly manner ignored the terms of the capitulation and put the whole of the brave garrison to death except one man, to whom he gave his life on condition that he would act as executioner of his brethren in arms, and with a shameless disregard of all decency and feelings of humanity compelled the noble and brave Madame Latour to be present at the horrible butchery with a halter around her neck. The value of the plunder taken in the fort is said to have exceeded ten thousand pounds. The loss to Latour was irreparable; but he suffered a still greater misfortune a few days afterwards in the death of his heroic wife who had so courageously defended his interests and shared with him the hardships and vicissitudes of his colonial life. Once more I quote from Murdoch, who says of her:

"The mental and physical energies displayed by this lady on repeated occasions, while they so often carried her beyond the usual boundaries which nature and custom seem to have prescribed for the fair sex, do not seem in her character to indicate anything unfeminine. She was not like the fabled Amazons, fascinated by the savage joys of combat, or like Joan of Arc, or the Maid of Saragossa, infatuated by fanaticism or vengeance. The love of her husband and a desire to protect him and her family, and even the humbler soldiers and settlers who followed their fortunes, inspired her with resolution and heroic fortitude; and the same feelings must have rendered the destruction of her home and downfall of her hopes doubly bitter."

The subjoined paragraphs are culled from the Commission of the King of France to D'Aulnay, dated in February, 1647, and consequently after his capture of Fort Latour and the death of *Frances Marie Jacquelins*,* the brave and noble Madame Latour. They definitely state some of the charges which had been made against Latour, and which had excited the king to authorize his arrest and deprive him of the powers formerly conferred upon him.

"Being well informed and assured of the laudable and commendable affection, trouble and diligence that our dear and well-beloved Charles de Menou, Knight, Lord D'Aulnay Charnizay, appointed by the late king of blessed memory, our most honoured Lord and father (whom God absolve) Governour and our Lieutenant-General in the country and coasts of L'Acadie in New France, hath used both to the conversion of the savages in the said country to the Christian religion and faith; and the establishment of our authority in all the extent of the said country, having built a seminary under the direction of a good number of Capuchin Friars, for the instruction of the said savages' children, and by his care and courage driven the foreign Protestants out of the Pentagoitt Fort, which they had seized to the

* After many researches in the hope of finding this admirable woman's name before marriage, I have at length been rewarded by seeing it stated in these documents.

prejudice of the rights and authority of our Crown, and by our express commandment taken again by force of arms and put again under our power the fort of the River St. John, which Charles of St. Etienne, Lord de la Tour, was possessed of, and by open rebellion endeavoured to keep against our will, and to the great contempt of the declarations of our Council by the help and countenance of foreign Protestants, with whom he had made a confederacy for that purpose ; and that, moreover, the said Lord D'Aulnay Charnizay hath happily begun to form and settle a French colony in the said country, cleared and improved great parcels of land, and for the defence and conservation of the said country under our authority and power, built and strenuously kept against the endeavour and assaults of the said foreign Protestants, four forts in the most necessary places, and furnished them with a sufficient number of soldiers, sixty great guns and other things requisite."

The boundaries of Acadia are stated in this commission to be "from the brink of the great River St. Lawrence, both along the sea-coasts and adjacent islands and inner part of the mainland, and in that extent, as much and as far as can be as far as the Virginias," by which is meant to the northern bounds of the English colonies in Maine. The powers granted to D'Aulnay in this document were very extensive. He could make peace or war with the natives at will, and confer upon the Acadian settlers, or other French subjects, "lands, honours, privileges, places and dignities." He was to possess the sole right to trade or traffic with the savages, and all merchants, masters and captains of ships and others were forbidden "to trade in the said furs with the said Indians without his special permission on pain of entire confiscation of their vessels, victuals, arms, munitions and goods, and thirty thousand livres fine."

Latour being now unable to resist his rival, went first to Boston and afterwards to Newfoundland, where Sir David Kirk was Governor, who received him with much kindness and courtesy, but declined to grant him any assistance in his present misfortunes. He therefore went soon after to Boston, where he obtained and fitted out a vessel for a trading voyage on the south shores of the Province, and in the following year (1648), not having been successful in his trading schemes, or having formed other plans for the advancement of his interests, he went to Quebec, where he seems to have lived until 1650 or 1651. Some writers affirm that he visited Hudson's Bay during this interval, and it is more than probable that he did so.

Port Royal, in the meantime, remained in the possession of his active and unscrupulous enemy, and no event of importance took place there until the death of D'Aulnay, by being accidentally drowned in the Annapolis River. This event is said to have occurred at a point just below the "upper narrows" by the upsetting of a boat. It has been said and believed that the *accident* was the result of design. It will be readily credited that D'Aulnay was of a cruel and harsh disposition, and the story told is that he had employed an Indian, whom he had some months

before brutally ill-treated and abused, to carry him up the river in a canoe; that the Indian had not forgotten the incident though his employer had; that the redskin had determined on revenge; that he purposely capsized the canoe below the narrows and swam ashore, leaving his master, who could not swim, to drown.

The decease of D'Aulnay was destined to effect a great and beneficial change in the affairs of Latour, as the sequel will show. Early in 1651, namely, on the 25th of February, the King of France, Louis XIV., having become convinced of the untruthfulness of many of the charges made against him, by letters patent appointed him to be his lieutenant-general in Acadie, and in September in the same year Madame D'Aulnay restored to him his old fortress at Carleton. In the beginning of the next year all rivalries and disputes were forever settled by her giving him her hand in marriage. The patent by which he again became chief ruler in this country recites the fact that he had been for "forty-two years there (in Acadie) devoted and usefully employing all his cares in establishing the authority" of the kings of France; a fact which is particularly noticed here, because it fixes the date of his arrival in America in 1609, and, as we are elsewhere incidentally told that he was fourteen years old, we ascertain his age to have been fifty-eight on his second marriage, the contract for which was signed and duly witnessed at Port Royal, on the 24th of February, 1653. Soon after this marriage he removed with his bride to his old, favourite fort at the mouth of the St. John River.

In 1654, Emanuel le Borgne, a merchant of Rochelle, who was a creditor of D'Aulnay to a very large amount, having first armed himself with legal authority, came to Acadie to seize the estate of his late debtor. On his arrival at Canseau he immediately commenced to wrest the country from the possession of Denys and Latour. He succeeded in making a prisoner of the former, whom he carried to Port Royal and confined in a dungeon "with his feet in irons." Here he intended to live while he matured his plans for the seizure of Latour and the capture of his fort, but he was not destined to succeed in these efforts, for Colonel Sedgwick appeared before Port Royal in August, after having first made himself master of the stronghold of Latour, and demanded its surrender. To this demand Le Borgne at once gave a stout denial, and the English having landed three hundred men in order to make an attack, he sent out a detachment from the garrison under the command of a subaltern officer to oppose them, when an engagement took place, in which the officer was killed and his men fled in haste and disorder to the fort, whereupon Le Borgne determined to give up the town and fort. The terms of this capitulation are given below. The surrender took place on the 16th of August, and conditions were negotiated by La Verdure, the military commandant of the place, and also the tutor and guardian of

the children of D'Aulnay, who were minors and who since their father's death had resided at Port Royal.

Articles of Capitulation. (Abridged.)

1. That La Verdure, with the soldiers and domestics, should leave the fort with their arms, drums beating, flags displayed, fusil on shoulder, ball in mouth, etc., to take their baggage, and to have passage provided to France.

2. The property of D'Aulnay's minor children to be left in charge of La Verdure for their use.*

3. Liberty to the inhabitants to remain or not as they pleased. Liberty of conscience to the clergy and to retain their houses if they remain.

4. Le Borgne's vessel and goods to be left to the generosity of the English General.

It was concluded on board the Admiral's ship, the *Augustin*, anchored in the river and before the fort of Port Royal, "and for the greater security of the contents of the above articles the said Sieur de la Verdure has left for hostage Jacques Bourgeois, his brother-in-law and lieutenant of the place, bearer of his procuration for the present treaty, and the Sieur Emanuel le Borgne, the son, until the completion of the present agreement, which was begun at the first sitting held yesterday and concluded to-day, August 16th, 1654.

(Signed), Bourgeois.
Robert Sedgwick.
Robert Salem.
Mark Harrison.
Richard Mors.

Since the present treaty the same has been read over to the Rev. Father Léonard de Chartres, vice-prefect and custos of the mission for the interests of the mission; Mre. Guillaume Troun, sindic of the inhabitants and for their interests, and the Sieur le Borgne for his own interests, all of whom have agreed to and approved the said treaty done and passed the year above.

(Signed), Emanuel le Borgne.
Guillaume Troun.
fr. Leonard de Chartres.

Cromwell, under whose orders Sedgwick had undertaken and effected the conquest of Acadie, granted it to Latour, Sir Thomas Temple and Crowne in 1656. The limits of this grant extended from Merliguesche, Lunenburg, to New England, and Temple was duly commissioned as Governor, the commission being confirmed unto him again by Charles II. after the Restoration. France continued to exhibit her claims to the Province by the appointment of Le Borgne, lieutenant-general in Acadie in 1658, who, on his arrival at Lahave to exercise his functions as such, was made prisoner by the English, who then occupied that place as well as the whole coast from Canseau to the Penobscot.

The trade in furs seems to have been the object chiefly contended for

* This property was probably of a personal kind only, which had been removed from the fort at St. John, on the occasion of the restoration of the fort there to Latour by their mother a year before.

by all those who were now or had formerly been connected with this country. La Verdure states, in a letter addressed to a daughter of D'Aulnay, in 1660, that the value of that article shipped from Acadie on account of Emanuel le Borgne was not less than 387,000 livres. In 1667 the Treaty of Breda once more transferred the whole of the country to France, and from this period the name of Charles Amador de St. Etienne, Sieur de la Tour, vanishes from our history, he having died about this time at the age of seventy-two years. He came to Acadie with his father Claude in 1609, as we have seen, and it is more than probable that the memorial we have before referred to as consisting of a slab of stone with the Masonic arms and the date 1609 engraved upon it, was intended to commemorate their first visit to Port Royal. He was then fourteen years old, which makes his birth to have occurred in 1595, or ten years after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, which is certainly the true date, if the statement made in his patent of 1651 be correct, namely, that he had then been forty-two years in the country.

It is said that he sold all his rights and interests to Temple shortly after the issue of Cromwell's patent, which was very likely to have been the case, as he was then well advanced in age and needed rest and quiet after a life of so great and varied activity and vicissitude. His children and grandchildren we shall henceforth occasionally see as sub-actors in the drama of Acadian events down to the date of the final conquest in 1710.

Le Borgne (Sieur de Bellisle, son of Emanuel [?]) was left in command at Port Royal by Du Bourg, who had been sent from France by Louis XIV. to receive formal possession of Acadie, under the late treaty, from Sir Thomas Temple. The act of surrender was not completed, however, until the 2nd of September, 1670—three years after the signing of the treaty. Le Borgne, having been meanwhile duly commissioned by the King of France as his lieutenant, assumed the direction of affairs from this time. The Chevalier de Grandfontaine succeeded him as governor, however, after a short time, as it appears that Le Borgne had the ill-fortune to have forfeited the good opinion of those over whom his immediate rule extended. Many complaints had been urged against him. Among other things, he was accused of having killed an Indian; of having hung a negro without trial, and of having banished three of the inhabitants. Grandfontaine forbade the people to acknowledge the person called Le Borgne on account of these charges. In 1671 he caused a census of the country to be taken for the information of the French king, from which it appears that Port Royal had a population of 361 souls, who were possessed of 580 horned cattle, 406 sheep and 364 acres of land under cultivation, or about an acre for each inhabitant. The trade or calling of each male individual is given in this census, and from

it we learn there were "a surgeon, a weaver, four coopers, two armourers, a farrier, a mason, and a maker of edge tools." There were only sixty-six families in the settlements. The surnames of these were: Aucoin, Babin, Belon, *Belliveau*,* Baiols, Blanchard, Bouré, *Boudrot*, Bertrand, Bourgeois, Brot, Brun, *Comeaux*, Cormié, *Corperon*, D'Aigre, *Doucet*, Dupeux, De Forêt, *Gaudet*, Gauterot,† Grangé, Guillebaut, Gougeon, Hébert, Knessy, Labathe, Landry, Lebland, Lanoue, Martin, *Melanson*, Morin, Pelerin, Petipas, Poirié, Pitre, Richard, Rimbault, *Robichau*, Siré, Scavoye, *Terriau*, *Thibideau*, Trahan, Vincent. Among these, Jean Gaudet was the eldest, being ninety-six years of age, and the largest family was that of Francis Gauterot, which numbered thirteen. Martin was thirty-five years old, a weaver by trade and the owner of four horned cattle and three sheep. The descendants of this man are said to reside in Rimouski, in the Province of Quebec.‡

Murdoch (Vol. I., page 152), speaking of a work then recently published by M. Rameau, says:

"Rameau proves that this small population was of an old date in the country by the intermarriages which had taken place among them before 1671, specifying that Michael Boudroit and Francis Girouard had each married a daughter of the Aucoins twenty-five or thirty years previously."

And he justly adds:

"There appears no mention in this census of Le Borgne or any of his family, or of any of the Latours, or of any governor, nobleman or priest, except the cordelier friar, as resident at Port Royal at this time."

M. de Chambly succeeded Grandfontaine in 1673, and he was replaced as chief in command in 1678 by Monsieur de la Valliére. To this date seventy-four years had elapsed since the Sieur de Monts first came to Prot Royal, and the reader may feel disposed to express surprise at the slow growth of the settlements on the Annapolis River. Only sixty-six families were permanently located there, and only 364 acres of land had been cleared and placed under cultivation! When we consider, however, that this place, being the capital, had been made the shuttlecock of contending nations; that it had been the prey of savage factions; that the inhabitants had been robbed by its friends as well as rifled by its enemies, and that there was but scant security for the enjoyment of life or property, our surprise will be rather at the fact that any settlement survived to have a history to relate.

* The italics indicate the families whose descendants still survive.

† There are a very few now in Clare of this name, now spelt Gautreaux. Breau (Brot) is said to be the real name of a family now called Comeau, distinguished as the Breau Comeaus. There are very many Le Blancs (Le Blands) and quite a number of Trahans.—[Ed.]

‡ There are many Martins at Salmon River, Clare.—[Ed.]

We are enabled at this period (1679) to prove that some of the inhabitants had erected dwellings and cultivated the lands at Bellisle, in Granville. The French had heretofore called this marsh "the great meadow." It was a part of the seigniory of Port Royal belonging to D'Aulnay, and had been seized by Le Borgne, his creditor, whose son Alexander assumed the title of Sieur de Bellisle, and from this title it takes the name by which it is commonly known to this day. Peter (Pierre) and Matthew (Matthieu) Martin owned a piece of land which was conveyed to them by the Sieur de Bellisle in that year. The description of this property is as follows :

"To wit,—It is a piece of land and meadow, *by them in part improved and on which they reside*, bounding on the great meadow, on the west side by the brook Domanchin, on the south side by the River Dauphin (Annapolis), and on the north side by the mountain, for the said Matthew, father and son, their heirs and assigns, to enjoy and dispose of the said land as belonging to their own property."

This conveyance concludes thus :

"Done at Port Royal at the domicile of the said lord, the ninth day of August, one thousand six hundred and seventy-nine.

"Present, Jacques Latour and Pierre Melanson.

"(Signed), Bellisle.
Matthieu Martin.
Jacques de la Tour.
Pierre Melanson.
et Courand.

"Courand, *procurateur fiscal et notaire.*"

The brook "Domanchin" is undoubtedly the stream now known as the "Parker Brook," and the block of land then sold to the Martins by the Sieur de Bellisle is evidently that comprising the real estate of the late John Wade, Esq., and Messieurs Abraham Young, Levose Bent, Jesse Dodge and William H. Young. Many of the meadows or marshes bore the names of the original French proprietors or cultivators, as the Dugas, below Annapolis ; the Bellisle, in Granville, and the Beaupré and Rosette, above Annapolis, and some others.

In 1680 there was quite a little village on "The Cape," the inhabitants having extended their holdings north-eastwardly from the fort along St. Anthony Street toward the "land's end," and particularly near to where the railway station now stands. To the southward, on the rising ground over which the present highway runs toward the village of Lequille, other of the *habitans* had begun to form a hamlet which was called the "upper town," but the major part of the village was built around and in the immediate neighbourhood of the fort. Settlements had also been established at various points in Granville, as at Bellisle and Goat Island, and probably, too, at Rosette, on the south side of the river.

In this year (1680) Port Royal had again to succumb to British arms. We have no particulars of this transaction, as no fighting attended it. Monsieur de la Valliére, who was there at the time, but without full powers to act in such an emergency, could not prevent the inhabitants from yielding submission to the first demand for surrender; but it is certain that the continuance of the English occupation did not last long, for La Valliére is styled by Frontenac, in 1682, as "commandant of Port Royal." It is more than probable that no force was lodged in the place to secure the benefits of the peaceful capitulation, and that the French, in consequence, resumed their possession as soon as their conquerors had taken their departure.

In 1683 the whole of Acadie contained only six hundred souls. In 1684 La Valliére was Governor of the country by royal command, at a salary of 1,800 livres per annum. In 1680 the King of France had granted certain fishing and trading privileges to one Bergier and associates on the coasts, and La Valliére having licensed an English fisherman from Salem, in Massachusetts, to fish on the same coasts, he (the Englishman) is said to have ungenerously instigated several of his countrymen to capture the little fishing fleet of Port Royal, which consisted of six vessels, and which the owners had been encouraged to fit out by Bergier. This outrage was made the subject of formal complaint to the authorities at Boston, but whether redress was obtained or not does not appear.

Bergier had no good opinion of La Valliére, whom he represented to his Government as a "poor man who had a settlement of eight or ten persons, and who gave up the country to the English for wherewithal to subsist on," affirming also that "he took five piastres per yacht from the English for license to fish." The effect of these charges and others of a similar nature was the issue of a royal order by the King of France to Bergier (who had gone to France in 1683) forbidding La Valliére "to act as commandant of Acadie" any longer, or "to grant fishing licenses to foreigners," and Bergier was at the same time commissioned as lieutenant under Perrot, who was made governor-in-chief. At this period Michael Boudroit was civil judge, Claude Petipas was secretary, and the Sieur D'Entremont (Jacques Mius) was attorney-general at Port Royal. Des Goutins succeeded Boudroit as judge in November, 1684.

Perrot, who had been Governor of Montreal for fourteen years, now (1685) came to Port Royal as chief in command, with Bergier as his lieutenant. The fort seemed to have been in a very dilapidated state at this time, and its garrison to have been very small.* Perrot, therefore, asked his Government for soldiers, seamen, cannon, ammunition and

* Thirty soldiers, ill clad and provided, constituted the force under his command.

other commodities of war, and also for tools with which to rebuild the rapidly decaying fortifications.

In the following year (1686) a very full census of the country was taken, from which we glean the following particulars concerning the population of Port Royal, which consisted of ninety-five families, comprising 197 adult persons, 218 boys and 177 girls—in all 592 souls; and if to these we add the thirty soldiers of the garrison we have a grand total of 622. Among these families was that of the lord of the manor, or seigniory, the Sieur Alexander le Borgne de Bellisle, the son of Emanuel le Borgne who surrendered the town to Sedgwick, in 1654. He was then forty-three years old, having been born in 1643. His wife, who was the eldest daughter of Charles Latour by Madame D'Aulnay, his second wife, was thirty-two years old, having been born in the fort at Carleton in 1654. Their children were, (1) Emanuel, aged eleven years, born in 1675; (2) Marie, aged nine, born in 1677; (3) Alexander, aged seven, born in 1679; and (4) Jeanne, aged five, born in 1681. A domestic servant, Etienne Aucher, was seventy-three years of age, having been born in France in 1613.

Claude Petipas, Sieur de la Fleur, the secretary, was sixty years of age —born in France in 1626. His wife, Catharine Bugaret, was forty-six years old (born in 1640), and was probably of Acadian birth. Their children were, (1) Claude, aged twenty-three, having been born in 1663; (2) Jacques, aged nineteen, born in 1667; (3) Marie, aged eighteen, born in 1668; (4) Henriette, aged twelve, born in 1674; (5) Paul, aged eleven, born in 1675; (6) Charles, aged ten, born in 1676: (7) Martin, aged nine, born in 1677; (8) Pierre, aged five, born in 1681; and (9) Anne, aged two, born in 1684.

Michael Boudroit, the judge, was eighty-five years old, having been born in France in 1601. His wife Michelle Aucoin, who was an Acadian, was sixty-five years old—born in 1621. Their children were, (1) Michael, twenty-six years of age, born in 1660; (2) François, aged twenty, born in 1666.

Philip Mius, Sieur D'Entremont, attorney-general, a Norman by birth, was seventy-seven years old—born in 1609. His children were, (1) Philippe, aged twenty-four, born in 1662; and (2) Madeleine, aged sixteen, born in 1670.

The following are the surnames of the inhabitants of Port Royal as furnished by this census: Arsenault, Babin, Barilost, Basterache, Bertran, Benoit, Broissard, Brun, Bouré, Blanchard, Le Blanc, Le Borgne, Bourgeois, Boudroit, Brien, Bellivault, Comeaux, Colson, Como,*

* The same name as Comeaux.—[Ed.]

Corberon, Dupeaux, Douaron, Dugas, Doucet, De Forêt, Fardel, Gaudet, Garault, Guilbault, Gillaume, Goho, Girouard, Godet, Godin, Grainger, Hébert, Henry, Lavoye, Landry, Lort, Leuron, Martin, Margery, Melanson, Mius, Pitre, Peltiet, Prijean, Pelerin, Le Prince, La Perriere, Petipas, Rembault, Richard, Robichau, Marie Sale (eighty-six years old), Scavoye, Terio, Toan, Torangeau, Thibedeau and Vincent.

These people possessed 75 guns, 643 head of horned cattle, 627 sheep and 351 swine. They also had 377 acres of land under cultivation, being at the rate of a little more than half an acre to each inhabitant, or about four acres to a family. By comparing this census with that of 1671, we find the population to have increased 72 per cent. in fifteen years, equal to nearly 15 per cent. per annum—a very respectable growth. The increase in horned cattle for the same period was not quite 10 per cent., while the increase in sheep was equal to $54\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.; but the increase in cultivated land was but a trifle over 3 per cent.

Summing up the state of Acadian affairs at the close of Perrot's administration in 1686, Murdoch says:

"It had been urged on the French Government to build a tower and redoubt at the entrance of Port Royal basin, the cost being estimated at two thousand crowns; to put up a redoubt with palisades at Port Royal itself, and to enclose the Governor's lodgings, part of the barracks, storehouses, etc. Port Royal seems to have been now the only place in Acadie having the shadow of defence, the Governor and thirty soldiers being resident there."

CHAPTER III.

1686–1705.

Menneval appointed Governor—Capture of Port Royal by Phipps—Piratical raid—Villebon returns and takes possession—His death—Brouillan Governor—Discords, jealousies and scandals—Seigniory of Port Royal granted to Latour's heirs—Colonel Church's invasion—Death of Brouillan.

MONSIEUR DE MENNEVAL became Governor of Acadie in 1687, *vice* Perrot. With the instructions sent to him was a blank commission, which he was to fill in with the name of some person to act as judge or lieutenant-general in the place of M. Boudroit, whose age had rendered a change desirable; and power was also given him to appoint an attorney-general and a secretary for similar reasons. Under these instructions, he was to reside at Port Royal and to rebuild the dilapidated fort. In 1688, the old manor of Port Royal, including the town, was made a *gift* to the brothers and sisters of Marie de Menou, the daughter of D'Aulnay, which she confirmed in her last will made in the following year. The brothers and sisters here mentioned were the children of her mother by her second husband, Latour.

On the 5th of October, 1689, two ships laden with goods and provisions arrived at Port Royal, having on their way captured a number of English fishing and trading vessels on the coast, which they brought in as prizes. During the next year, De Menneval applied to the King of France for more soldiers for the garrison, it having only seventy men to defend the town. In his application he says, with considerable humour, that he "has the *gout*, but neither officers nor cannon; that his provisions had been captured by privateers and pirates." Villebon still lived at Port Royal, and seems to have enjoyed the confidence of the Governor, which had been withheld from nearly all the other leading inhabitants, among whom were Boudroit, the late judge, and D'Entremont, the late attorney-general.

The year 1690 witnessed the capture of Port Royal once more by the English. This event was effected by Sir William Phipps in May of that year. The expedition intended for this service had been fitted out in Boston by the English colonists there, and consisted of a vessel of forty

guns, two sloops (one of sixteen and the other of eight guns), and four ketches, manned in all by seven hundred men. The events which ensued are so graphically described by Murdoch that I reproduce his account of them :

"At the time that the squadron commanded by Sir William Phipps was sent to Port Royal—that is, in April and May, 1690—De Menneval, the Governor of Acadie, was resident there, having with him a garrison of eighty-six men. There were also eighteen cannon, but they were not placed in battery. The fortifications were insignificant and unfinished, and the place was wanting in almost everything requisite to its defence. Perrot, the late Governor, was yet in the country attending to his private affairs. A soldier and two inhabitants, who were on guard at the entrance of the basin of Port Royal, saw the English vessels under full sail making in. They immediately fired off a small mortar, which was the appointed signal to apprise the Governor, and they then embarked in a canoe. They arrived at the fort about eleven o'clock at night, and upon hearing their report De Menneval at once ordered a cannon to be discharged to notify the inhabitants that they were to come in to his aid. On the 20th of May the English squadron anchored within half a league of Port Royal, and Phipps sent one of his sloops to the fort with a trumpeter to summon the Governor to surrender the place to him, with all that was in it, without any capitulation. Menneval detained the trumpeter, and, from want of an officer, sent Petit, a priest of the Seminary of Quebec, who acted as his almoner, to the English commander, to endeavour to obtain at least tolerable conditions, for he at once understood how useless it would be to attempt a defence with so small a garrison without a single officer, and not being able to depend upon the inhabitants, three of whom only had come in at his signal. Besides, he had absolutely no one to mount his guns or to work them. He had himself been for two months past severely afflicted with gout, and he was assured that the enemy had eight hundred men they could land.

"Sir William Phipps at first insisted that the Governor, garrison and inhabitants should yield at his discretion, and Petit replied that De Menneval would rather die than so act the coward."

The terms ultimately agreed upon were : (1) That the Governor and soldiers should go out with their arms and baggage, and be sent to Quebec by water ; (2) that the inhabitants should remain in the peaceable possession of their property, and that the honour of the females should be protected ; and (3) that the inhabitants should have the free exercise of the Roman Catholic religion and that the church should not be injured. On the ground that he had been deceived by Petit, the priest, and after he had entered the fort and saw for himself that the place could not have been defended against his forces for a single hour, he did not hesitate to set aside the terms which he had before granted. Murdoch adds :

"He began by disarming the French soldiers, whom he shut up in the church. He even demanded their swords from De Menneval and Des Goutins, which, however, he returned to them, giving them notice that they were prisoners of war. Next he allowed the pillage of the settlement. . . . Even the priest's dwelling and the church were not spared."

He remained long enough to appoint Sergeant Chevalier commandant of the place and to nominate six of the principal inhabitants as a council to aid in the administration of affairs. The Governor, one sergeant, Petit and Trouvé, the priests, and thirty-eight soldiers he carried away with him as prisoners of war to Boston. Perrot, the predecessor of De Menneval in the governorship, had a narrow escape from capture at this time. After his supercession as a ruler he had remained in the country as a trader, and was probably on the southern coast thus engaged when Phipps appeared before Port Royal. He returned while the English vessels were still in the basin.

"Missing the sentinel," says Murdoch, "usually posted there (at the strait) he felt doubts if all were right, and got into a canoe with D'Amours, a Canadian, having an Indian with them, in order to learn what had occurred. After going three leagues up he got sight of an English ship anchored in the river on which the town is built, and heard the firing of a cannon and musketry. Perrot thought there must be fighting going on, so he concealed the canoe in the woods and went by land to the nearest house, and found it abandoned. Withdrawing promptly, he got into the canoe again to reach his ketch, which he met in the basin. Two Englishmen had been sent to watch this vessel, as her return had been expected, and they caught sight of her and went in chase of her in a shallop; but as it was ebb-tide the shallop, being too close in shore, grounded, and Perrot, though pursued again by another canoe, succeeded in reaching his ketch in safety, and setting her sails got out of the basin, and reached Minas in safety."

Villebon arrived from France with stores, and brought out with him one Saccardie, an engineer, on the 14th of June; but being afraid that Phipps, who was known to have been then at Lahave, might return, he held a council with Perrot and Des Goutins, at which it was resolved to be the most prudent course to remove the stores and goods to Jemseg, on the St. John River, which was accordingly done.

A little later on in the year 1690, the unfortunate town was attacked by two piratical vessels and pillaged. All the houses near the fort were destroyed by them, and many of the cattle of the *habitans* were killed. They were also said to have hung two of the people, and to have burned a woman and her children in her house.

Villebon returned to Port Royal in November and found the English flag flying over the fort, but not an Englishman was to be found in the town. He brought with him fifty soldiers and two guns, and immediately summoned the inhabitants from the out-settlements, in whose presence he soon afterwards took formal possession of the place and fort, and, indeed, of all Acadie, in the name of the French king. Des Goutins resumed the exercise of his duties as judge and commissary, and exhumed the 1,300 livres which he had buried on the approach of Phipps in the spring. Thus was the capital of Acadie once more in the possession of France.

In a paper sent from Acadie to the French Government in 1691, it is

stated that the English had burned twenty-eight houses at Port Royal in 1690. This, no doubt, included those destroyed by the pirates. It also informs us that the church was burnt but that the mill and many houses escaped. It also contains a recommendation that the fort be rebuilt at, or removed to, *la pré Ronde*, two leagues farther up the river *at the head of all the settlements.* This statement seems to prove that, up to this period, no settlements had been made above this point, though at a later date we shall be able to point out places many miles farther eastward where hamlets flourished years before the expulsion in 1755. By *la pré Ronde* the writer probably had reference to Bellisle marsh, and the site for the fort would have been Round Hill, which, from its position and surroundings, was admirably situated for defence.

Lahoutan thus, and not very favourably, describes the Acadian capital at this period, of which he says: "Port Royal, the capital, or the only city in Acadie, is, in effect, no more than a little paltry town, that is somewhat enlarged since the war broke out in 1689."

From Villebon's rehabitation of it, the little town appears to have been left to recruit its dilapidated condition as best it might. In 1696 Monsieur Dugué arrived with a detachment of thirty men for the garrison. Father Baudoin came with him to have the opportunity of renewing his acquaintance with De Mandoux who had taken the place of Petit, the old curé. Among other things he tells us that he pitied the inhabitants of the place, for "they were forbidden to deal with the English, while the French did not supply one-quarter of the articles they stood in need of."*

Villebon, in a communication to the French minister, in 1696, says: "I had last fall commissioned le sieur Dubreuil, a settler at Port Royal, to have six thousand feet of thick plank made at a sawmill, and this as if on his own account."

These planks were intended to be used at the old fort at Carleton, but had been burned by order of the English. It is believed the site of the sawmill in which Dubreuil had this work done, was that on which Poutrincourt's old mill stood, namely, on the Lequille River near Dargie's mills. In 1697 Villebon resided at Fort Nashwaak, on the St. John River, which he had strongly fortified. Monsieur de Falaise commanded at Port Royal. In the following year (1698) a famine occurred in Acadie, and many of the inhabitants, including those at Port Royal, were compelled to subsist on shell fish. Indian corn and meal were supplied to Villebon from Boston. Some years before one Basset (who is called a dangerous man) with his family had settled in Port Royal.

*John Alden, of Boston, visited the town during this year on a trading voyage. For many years he was engaged in such voyages up the Bay of Fundy. He was the eldest son of the famous John Alden, of the *Mayflower*, the Plymouth magistrate, by his wife Priscilla, the Puritan maiden immortalized by Longfellow.—[Ed.]

He was said to have been with Phipps in 1690, and assisted in the capture of the town, but he alleged that he had been forced to take an unwilling part in that adventure. He seems to have been a sort of outlaw, ravishing the coasts of the Province with relentless cruelty, and treating the subjects of both countries in turn with impartial severity. About this time he asked and obtained leave to go to Boston, an event which gave much pleasure to his countrymen.

Le Borgne was still seigneur of Port Royal, and his brother-in-law, Abraham Mius, resided there also. They were both married to daughters of Charles Latour by Madame D'Aulnay, his second wife. Falaise was commandant and by no means friendly to the Governor, Villebon, who, in his journal of this period, thus speaks of the people of the settlements in and around the old town :

"They feed themselves and have surplus to sell. Hemp and flax prosper. Some use no other cloth but homespun. Fruits, pulse and garden stuff are excellent, and provisions are cheap. The wool is good, and most of the inhabitants are dressed in their own woollen cloth. The founders of Port Royal knew the country well before they selected it as their fortress. It is the general store of the country, and fortifying it also protects Minas, where corn is now raised and cattle."

The writer of the above description died suddenly on July 5th, 1700. A Canadian by birth, his father was Charles Lemoine, seigneur of Longueuil, near Montreal. Monsieur de Brouillan was his successor in the governorship, and a vigorous effort was made early in this year to put the fort in a better condition. Villieu, who undertook the direction of affairs until the coming of Brouillan, assembled the people and ordered them to furnish a quantity of palisades, and to have them ready on the Governor's arrival from Placentia, his former command, and from which he might now be daily expected. This, however, they neglected to do. On his way hither Brouillan was driven by adverse winds into Chebucto, now Halifax harbour, and the winds still continuing unfavourable, he determined to make his way to Port Royal overland, " visiting Lahave and Minas by the way," a feat which he successfully accomplished, being most probably the first white man to make the journey. He arrived at headquarters on the twentieth day of June, and two days afterwards he summoned the inhabitants to witness his installation as their future ruler, and to receive his commands to provide the palisades which they had promised Villieu to furnish—a promise which they had neglected to perform.

It is evident from some of the statements made to Brouillan that the *habitans* of the Annapolis River regarded the English with very considerable favour. They affirmed as a cause of their reluctance to aid him with materials for revesting and restoring the fort that they feared they would be put under the control of a "trading company"; a fact

which certainly proves they had learned to fear such control as disadvantageous to their interests, and it is certain the companies or the individuals who from time to time administered the affairs of Acadie sought to enrich themselves at the expense of the colonists, who, while they were prevented from dealing with the English, from whom they could obtain their supplies at cheaper rates and with greater regularity and certainty, were compelled to buy from their own countrymen at dearer rates and forced to take a minimum value for the commodities they gave in exchange; and this, too, while the English charged less for the same description of supplies and gave a greater price for the articles taken in exchange. It was no wonder, therefore, they should prove lukewarm in their conduct toward their rulers.

The Governor says of the fort, which he wished to make a stronghold worthy of French power:

"It is scarcely possible that the enemy could make a descent, except at the foot of the glacis, under the fire of cannon, or in places where one could dispute with them foot by foot, even with the small force kept here, all the environs of the fort being marshy and cut by good trenches of earth and ditches quite impracticable. I might have made a more regular fortification had I not thought it more advantageous to avail myself of the ground as it is, which, without adding much to nature, forms a fine glacis around two-thirds of the place, elevated thirty-five feet from the level of the rivers which wash its foot to the palisades of the covered way, so that in raising, as I have done, the ground of the covered way four feet and a half, I find, by means of the declivity, a terrace of more than a fathom at the foot of the ramparts, which will thus be raised more than eighteen feet by casting there the earth taken out of the covered way."

A limekiln and brickyard were constructed by his order this year. For the latter, he says, "the clay at hand is excellent"; for the former, he would supply the limestone from the St. John River, and he recommended that ships bound to Port Royal should ballast with that material. The garrison, consisting of two companies of thirty men each, he desired should be augmented by two or more additional companies of fifty men each, and he asked to have a redoubt built at the entrance to the basin, believing that fortifying Goat Island would be of little use. The militia, which consisted of about 150 men, were badly armed and almost without ammunition. In another of his reports he says, "The Port Royal people are more afraid of a company than of the English;" and he hopes to secure the Indian interest by liberality in presents. The Merchants' Company had an agent at this time in Port Royal, which explains the reference made above.

Madame de Frenouse (Louise Guyon), whose husband, Matthieu D'Armours, had died shortly after the fall of Fort Nashwaak, leaving her with the care of a large family, seems to have resided at Port Royal at this date (1700-1), and to have applied to Governor Brouillan to use his influence with the French king to obtain for her a small pension,

alleging that such a charity would not be likely to extend further as *she was the only widow* then in the country. Two of her sons were cadets in the companies then forming the garrison.

In 1702 the earthworks of the fort were completed, and a house for a hospital constructed, which was to be under the management of the two surgeons of the garrison. In this year the little community of Port Royal began to suffer sadly from a spirit of mutual distrust and jealousy among its members. This spirit extended from Brouillan down to the lowest employé under the Government. I cannot do better than quote from Murdoch's work, in which he crowds into a small space many facts which illustrate the prevailing feelings, besides affording some matter of interest not immediately connected with it. He says:

"There is an incessant reiteration of complaints against the governors beginning with Villebon, but culminating in the administration of Brouillan. Some of the charges are seriously proffered, but very many of them degenerate into petty slanders and garrison gossip. Villebon kept a journal of all occurrences, from which facts of importance can be easily selected and arranged in narrative form. Brouillan, though full of details and remarks, does not seem to attend to dates or the order of events. Brouillan is charged by De la Touche with ruling harshly. He says: 'Everybody trembles and no one dares to speak—even those who write dare not sign their names, because they would be ruined inevitably if known—thus they say one to another in a low voice.' He charges him with coveting a piece of land for a poultry-yard, and using intrigues, menaces, and coercion to obtain deeds from the owners, who considered its sale a great injury to them. This acquisition of Brouillan is called *L'Isle aux cochons*—(Hog Island). In a deed of forty years ago, or upwards, from the late M. D'Aulnay to Jacob Bourgeois it is bounded by the road and the River Dauphin; the number of feet in width being left in blank. The road did not suit Brouillan, who wished to erect a building which he could see from the fort in perspective. To effect this he proposed to continue the Rue St. Antoine and lay out a town in that direction. Three or four owners whose land would be severed by continuing this street, opposed the notion; but he got Bonaventure and Goutins to take a title of the opposite lands from the lady of the manor.

"Charges of immoral conduct were made against Brouillan and Bonaventure. The former is accused of affronts to officers, and of meddling for private gain with the trade in provisions. Bonaventure is charged with sending one hundred and ten quarts of brandy for sale to Boston in 1700; of trading with Indians and misconduct with *sauvagesses*. The Indians are said to have made songs on the subject, which they sing in the woods. There are many other petty charges in La Touche's letter.

"In another memoir of this year, supposed to have been written by Mandoux, the curé, it is said that 'he took possession, at his coming, of the land of an individual to build on, which land the owner did not wish to part with, as it served to support a large family.' The other charges made by La Touche are reiterated as well against Brouillan as Bonaventure. Villieu mentions his having undergone two years' imprisonment and suffered much from fatigue in command of war parties both in Canada and Acadie, where he slept six months in the woods, without any other nourishment but some corn and fish, which failed him often when needed. Owing to all this he had now a very severe asthma, that had confined him to an arm chair for more than three months in the summer of 1701, and as long as that in

1702. . . . Des Goutins says he 'has to work on Sundays and holidays at the king's stores, five or six hours in a place, without fire, in the coldest severity of winter.'"

This man was Judge, and as such presided in the settlement of all civil suits and disputes. His wife was a Miss Thibedeau, an Acadian by birth. The Jacob Bourgeois before mentioned as the purchaser of Hog Island from D'Aulnay (about 1660) was many years afterward a pioneer in the settlement of Petitcodiac, though it is uncertain whether he ever removed his family to that place.

In 1703, the King of France granted the seigniory of Port Royal to begin at two thousand paces from the fort, and to extend five leagues (twelve and one-half miles) up the river, and two leagues (five miles) in width on both sides, enclosing a district of about sixty square miles of the cream of the county. This grant included mines and minerals, and was to be divided into seven equal shares, each share to become the property of one of the following persons: Charles Latour; Mary Latour, the widow of Le Borgne de Bellisle; Madame D'Entremont; Anne Latour; Madame Melanson, the widow of Jacques Latour; Marguerite Latour, the widow Pleinmaris, and the remaining two shares to the children of Madame Bellisle. These persons were the children and grandchildren of Charles Amador de la Tour by Jeanne Motier (Madame D'Aulnay), his second wife.

More repairs were made on the fort during this year, in reference to which Brouillan says that the inhabitants work cheerfully, and he pays a small allowance to the soldiers for their work. The people of Port Royal at this time subscribed 800 livres toward building a new church, to replace that which was destroyed in 1690, and a portion of the garrison was sent to Minas to awe the inhabitants of that place into submission, as some of them had been heard to say publicly that "if the English should appear they would join them." This detachment was commanded by Boularderie, and its presence had the desired effect, as we are informed that the Minas people sent a party to assist in renewing the fort at headquarters. Early in the autumn one Jouin, a Bordeaux speculator, took several vessels from the English on the coast, and sent them as prizes into Port Royal. Two of these arrived safely, but the third, in which Jouin himself was a passenger, was recaptured by her crew, who put the Frenchman to death.

Among other accusations, the Governor was this year charged with having *tortured* two soldiers, with having interfered with the engineer, with having exacted fees from the prisoners in the guard-house, with a *liaison* with Madame Barrat, who it was said had followed him from France to Acadie, with disturbing the wedding festivities of Pontif, the surgeon, and many more equally mean and annoying actions. It is more than probable that most of them were without foundation in fact, and

were circulated from motives of jealousy and pique. Bonaventure, formerly of the French navy, but at this period an officer of the garrison, was charged with an illicit intercourse with Madame Frenouse, whom we have already seen was "the only widow in Acadie." The fruit of this amour was a child born in September, as appears by the parish register. This scandal made a great noise throughout Acadie, and formed an additional element of discord to the distracted social relations of the community then domiciled in and near the Acadian capital.

Charles Latour now claimed the ownership of the two thousand paces lying between the fort and the recently created seigniory, and demanded rent from the Government for the lands occupied by them, but it does not clearly appear whether his demand was complied with or refused.

The Massachusetts colonists determined to make an attack on Port Royal early in 1704. An expedition was fitted out at Boston, and placed under the command of Colonel Benjamin Church, and sent into the Bay of Fundy. It consisted of several armed vessels and boats, the latter of which proceeded with the smaller vessels to Minas, where the dykes were cut by the soldiers, with a view to the destruction of the marsh lands there; they also did what other damage they could to the cultivated corn grounds. During the time these events were transpiring there, the larger vessels remained in the lower basin of the Annapolis River awaiting the return of the others, by whom they were soon rejoined, when a council of officers was held, at which it was decided not to be prudent to attack the fort up the river at this juncture. Previous to coming to this conclusion they had seized the guards at the strait, and landed some of their troops, who approached within two or three miles of the town, carrying off one family and committing more or less pillage upon others, while at the same time the fleet, consisting of ten ships, anchored near Goat Island, where they remained for some days. The French were much alarmed at this threatened attack, and were much rejoiced when they saw the enemy re-embark his troops and take his departure. These events took place between the second and twentieth of July. The shipyard of Port Royal during its centenary year witnessed the launching of a vessel of twelve or fourteen guns, intended for the public service, and the year was further marked by the imprisonment of Charles Latour. We learn from this episode in his history that he resided in the town and owned a dwelling there, for special mention is made of his having been put under arrest by the Governor and kept "a prisoner in his own house." The cause leading to this event is probably to be sought in his conduct regarding his claims to the disputed two thousand paces of land between the fort and the new seigniory.

In December, Brouillan sailed for France, leaving Bonaventure to command in his place. At the time of his departure there were not less than two hundred men in the garrison, of whom one-fourth were too

weak and infirm to be of use. These Bonaventure directed to be released from duty and billeted among the inhabitants, that they might be fed, warmed and otherwise cared for. Under this treatment they were restored to health and fitted for the efficient discharge of their duties in the spring.

In the early days of 1705, a marriage took place in Port Royal which excited considerable interest amongst the gossips at the time. François du Pont du Vivier, a captain in the garrison, had for some months previously been guilty of improper intimacy with a dashing young belle of the place, a descendant of Charles Latour, the hero of Acadie, which rendered marriage necessary. This denouement was forbidden by Bonaventure, the acting commandant, and by Du Vivier's relatives. It is only reasonable to believe that their opposition would have been withdrawn if they had been aware of the critical circumstances which environed the parties. The priest, Father Justinien Durand, to whom the facts had become known, insisted on the necessary rites, and performed them secretly, notwithstanding the opposition of the authorities. The ceremony took place on the 12th January, and on the 25th April following, this entry was made in the registry book of the mission: "Born to François du Pont du Vivier and Marie Mius de Poubomcoup, a daughter, baptized the same day." Such an event, the reader will easily conceive, did not tend to lessen the discords in the community in which it occurred. The witnesses to this marriage were M. Bellisle, the old seigneur of Port Royal, Charles Latour, uncle to the bride, and Des Goutins, the Judge. Bonaventure after this refused to acknowledge the claims of her uncle to the rents of the lands within the two thousand paces, and ordered them to be paid to Des Goutins, as King's Receiver, declaring that the money ought to be given to the hospital. This action of Bonaventure may be attributed to the annoyance he had experienced from the conduct of Latour in the marriage of his niece to Du Vivier. A period now approached when the heart-burnings and jealousies which had so long consumed the peace of Port Royal, were to have an end. Brouillan died on his outward voyage from France, in the mouth of Halifax (then Chebucto) harbour, in September, 1705. His body was consigned to the waves of the Atlantic, but his heart was taken out and conveyed by the *Profond*, Captain Cauvet, to Port Royal, where it was buried by Bonaventure with proper ceremonies, "near a cross where it was intended to build a chapel." It is believed that his death was not regarded as a public calamity; indeed, Des Goutins says, "The public were unable to conceal their joy at his loss." Shipbuilding continued to be prosecuted. A frigate named *La Biche* was launched toward the close of 1705, making at least two vessels set afloat within three years. It is impossible at this day to determine the exact locality in which these vessels were built.

CHAPTER IV.

1705–1710.

Subercase Governor—Attack from Massachusetts under Colonel March—Events and vicissitudes of the siege—The English withdraw with heavy loss—Ordered to return—The struggle renewed—English again discomfited—They retire—Diary of the expedition by a Chaplain—Bomb-proof powder magazine built and barracks finished—Final capture of Port Royal by Nicholson.

SUBERCASE succeeded Brouillan as governor in 1706. In this year fifty-one prisoners* arrived at Port Royal from Boston, many of whom were in very indigent circumstances and required aid from the settlers. Toward the end of the year Des Goutins wrote the minister:

"There has not yet been so much wheat collected in this country as during this year. The inhabitants see more than ever the necessity there is of attending to the uplands, and that if they had done so at first and worked as much on them as they have done on the marshes they would have been incomparably more advanced, and would not have been subject to the inconveniences that happen to the marshes. The tide was so great on the 5th of November last (1705) that it overflowed all the marshes of this country without exception, an occurrence that had not taken place within the memory of man. This determined them to think of the high lands. They know now that the marshes, when abandoned, will yet produce hay, whereby they may increase the number of their cattle and obtain manure for their uplands."

Subercase, the new governor, by his urbane and pleasing demeanour, soon won the confidence of those over whom he ruled. Bonaventure, who administered the affairs of the colony till his arrival, still continued to reside at Port Royal. In a report to the French home authorities, dated Christmas Day, 1706, Subercase says, in answer to charges of dishonesty against Des Goutins:

"That which concerns the Sieur des Goutins, on the subject of the pillage of treasure in 1690; Port Royal having been taken in that year by a species of capitulation, they surrendered with the fort and agreed to give account to the English, and deliver to them everything as it stood. M. des Goutins, as he was treasurer and foresaw that he would be called to account—as he was, in fact—entrusted the king's money that was in his possession into the hands of a *habitant*, who concealed it in a pot in a corner of his garden, without the English having any

* Probably French prisoners exchanged.—[Ed.]

knowledge of it. The English called on M. des Goutins to show the expenditure of the money which the king had sent out that year. He gave them an account, with which they were contented. In the year following, Des Goutins, having returned to Acadie with the Sieur de Villebon, they proceeded in company to the *habitant's* house, who dug up the pot in their presence and the money was counted. Out of this sum enough was taken to pay the salary of the Sieur de Portneuf, lieutenant, and the balance was placed in the hands of the Sieur de Bonaventure, who carried it to France, and, by order of the Council, paid it over to M. de Lubert."

He also defended Bonaventure from some charges which had been made against him, and said that the zeal of the clergy "had engendered disrespect to men in office," and that "the Church for a long time past has held here the right of commanding, or at least of sharing, the temporal authority."

A vigorous but unsuccessful attack was made upon Port Royal in 1707. The English colonists of Massachusetts—enterprising, restless and daring—determined upon its capture, and early in the year (May 24th) embarked about twelve hundred men on board twenty-three transports, which had been previously provided and sent to Nantasket, in Boston Bay. These transports were convoyed to the scene of operations by H. M. S. *Deptford*, a vessel of fifty guns, commanded by Captain Stukeley, and the provincial galley, Captain Southack, and arrived in the basin on the 6th of June. At the strait which forms the entrance to this beautiful sheet of water the French kept a guard constantly posted, with a view of obtaining news of the arrival of an enemy at the earliest possible moment. The guard at this time consisted of fifteen men, who reached the fort but a short time in advance of the invader's flotilla. Colonel March, who commanded the military wing of the expedition, immediately landed with seven hundred men on the south side of the river at a distance about two miles below the fort, and ordered Colonel Appleton to land with three hundred men on the opposite, or Granville shore. The French, who appear to have had no information that they were likely to be attacked, were taken by surprise and much alarmed at the sudden appearance of so formidable a foe ; but Subercase proved himself equal to the occasion. He immediately summoned the militia from the surrounding settlements to come in to his assistance. The first of these arrived on the same day on which the English landed their forces, and he at once sent them forward to skirmish with, and as far as possible retard, the advance of the attacking battalions until further detachments arrived, who, as fast as they came in, were sent to the front to reinforce their comrades already there. This conduct was exceedingly wise on the part of the French commander, as the regulars comprising the garrison were by these means kept fresh to defend the fort if it should become necessary to do so. On the 8th of June his

forces had been augmented by all the available militia within fifteen miles of the town, who rendered most valuable services in the defence made by their countrymen. General orders were given them not to advance so far as to suffer themselves to be cut off from the fort. They were soon attacked and driven back by their adversaries, but not before they had inflicted considerable injury upon them. On the north side of the river, the division under Appleton soon drove their foes in to a point nearly opposite to the town. Here Subercase had sent boats and canoes to carry them across the river, with a view to sending them to the support of their comrades, who were engaged in disputing the advance of Colonel March, on the south side. These were placed under the command of Denys de la Ronde, a brother of Bonaventure, who was unable to take an active part in these operations owing to sickness. Later on, on this day (June 8th), Subercase joined De la Ronde, and in an engagement which immediately followed had his horse shot under him. In this encounter one Frenchman was killed and another wounded; the English loss was considerably greater. The superiority of the numbers of the invading force compelled Subercase to retreat, which he did in good order, the enemy not making any pursuit of a pressing character. In fact, they made no further hostile movement until the third day after the conflict, when they drew near to the fort and prepared to assault it. At this crisis Subercase ordered a number of buildings which stood near the fort to be torn down, lest they should afford shelter to the besiegers during the attack, and which from the smallness of the garrison he could neither occupy nor defend with advantage, nor hope to preserve with any certainty of success. He then detached eighty men, mostly militia, with orders to harass the English parties who had been ordered to kill the cattle of the *habitans* in the neighbouring settlements. A part of these ambushed in the forests on each side of the river, where they knew the English must pass in order to effect their purpose. St. Castine is said to have commanded one of these parties, and to have killed six of the English in a skirmish, and afterwards to have attacked their full force with such impetuosity as to compel them, in disorder, to fall back to their camp.

On the evening of the 16th of June, the besiegers being ready to assault the fort began their attack by a heavy and repeated discharge of musketry, under cover of which March sent four or five hundred men to force the breaches, which he supposed to be easily assailable. The cannon of the fort, however, played so furiously upon the assailants that they were soon compelled to abandon their attempt; in fact they were forced to retire before the vigorous cannonade and musketry fire under which they found themselves. Colonel March, though thus repulsed, did not become disheartened; and near midnight Subercase found his

citadel closely invested on every side, every valley and ravine in its vicinity swarming with armed foes, and it was his turn to become apprehensive for the result of the apparent determination of the besieging soldiery. An attempt was now made by them to destroy a French frigate, and some other vessels, which were lying at anchor under the guns of the fort; but in this they were foiled by the vigorous resistance offered by the besieged. Something like a panic appears to have seized the English when their failure became apparent. A report gained credence that the works of the French were mined, and that an assault, even if made successfully, would only terminate in the destruction of the captors; they therefore retired, first to their trenches, and at daylight in the morning to the camp at first occupied by them. Having sustained a loss of about one hundred men in their various skirmishes and abortive attempts to capture the fort, on the 17th of June they re-embarked on board their transports, and abandoned further proceedings. They had, however, succeeded in doing much damage, having burned all the dwellings in the lower town and many of those in the upper, besides driving away and destroying the cattle of the surrounding farms.

The English, thus defeated in the main object of their expedition, sailed to Casco Bay, from which place Colonel March reported to Governor Dudley, and asked for further orders. He declared that his officers and the troops refused to assault Port Royal, and laid all the blame of failure on them. The Bostonians and the Governor gave but little credit to the statement, and blamed March himself and Appleton and Wainwright for the want of success. Captain Stukeley, of the *Deptford*, defended the conduct of the soldiery.

When the news of the defeat of the expedition reached Massachusetts, Dudley, the Governor, determined to have the effort to capture the place renewed, and with this object in view, he sent one hundred recruits to Casco Bay, to make good the losses recently sustained, and, thus reinforced, the armament was ordered to return and renew its attempt upon Port Royal. Of the 750 men who had returned with their commander, many had become, from various causes, unfit for service, and all were dispirited by their recent failure, so that the prospect of a second attack did not promise very favourable results. However, as their orders to return were peremptory, nothing remained but to obey, and they found themselves before the old town again on the morning of the 24th of August, when March, either being ill, or feigning illness, refused to act as commander-in-chief, and gave that position to Wainwright, the next senior officer, who ordered the troops to land on the shores of Granville, not far from where Appleton had, two months before, landed his division of the forces.

A renewal of the struggle had not been anticipated by Subercase, and it excited considerable alarm. His little garrison had been reinforced in the *interim* by the crew of a French frigate, but this did not add very materially to his means of defence, and it is very likely the English would have met with entire success had they pushed forward their attack without delay, as the militia could not have been brought into the fort, owing to the distance at which the greater number of them resided, and without their co-operation and assistance, Subercase knew that defence could not be prolonged for any protracted period. The invaders, however, acted very deliberately, and by their delay enabled the French to assemble their militia and place the fort in a posture of defence. As the English troops had been landed on the side of the river opposite to and below the fort, and Subercase was uncertain what their plan and object might be, instead of sending out men to oppose their advance, he kept his forces in the fort, ready to be used as emergency might require. The enemy after landing, pushed forward up the river, past the fort and "narrows," and formed an encampment on what has long since been known as "Troop's Point," which is situated to the eastward of the village of Granville Ferry,* and not far from it. The French commander, ever vigilant and active, supposing their intention to be to destroy the dwellings and other property of the hamlets above the town, immediately sent out a party of eighty Indians and thirty of the militia, with orders to ascend the river on the fort or south side sufficiently far before crossing it to enable them to ambuscade themselves at a point where their foes would be sure to pass in order to accomplish their purpose, and where they could be suddenly attacked and easily defeated.

While the invaders were yet engaged in fortifying their camp, their commander sent a detachment of his men, probably amounting to about one hundred and twenty, pioneered by a guard of ten others, under the command of a lieutenant, to distress the settlements to the eastward and cut off the supplies of the garrison in that direction. The guard, being in advance, were surprised, and its officers and eight of its men were killed, and the two remaining ones taken prisoners. From these captives the French were made acquainted with the plan of Wainwright, which was to take his cannon and vessels through the "narrows" on the flood-tide the next evening, and then by crossing his men to the fort side of the river, to make his advance toward the fort from the east side of the cape. In order to frustrate this scheme, the French were ordered to build fires along the stream at this point during the night. The detachment above referred to, immediately after the disaster to the guard,

* The author wrote "New Caledonia," a name once given to the village, but now happily fallen into disuse.—[Ed.]

returned to camp, where for some time they were kept in continual alarm by the movements of the garrison. So fearful did they become about sending out scouts in any direction, that March says, "he judged it unsafe to proceed on any service without a company of at least one hundred men." In proof of this statement he adds :

"About four in the afternoon I suffered a number of men, about fifty or sixty, to go down to the bank of the river to cut thatch to cover the tents. All returned well, except nine of Captain Dimmick's men, who were led away by one Mansfield, a mad fellow, to the next plantation to get cabbages in a garden, without the leave and against the will of his officer. They were no sooner at their plunder than they were surrounded by at least a hundred French and Indians, who in a few minutes killed every one of them, their bodies being mangled in a fearful manner."

It is quite certain that the British encampment was on the point forming the north-east side of the "narrows," for it is known that its occupants were driven from it by the artillery of the fort, which could not have been the case if their camp had been higher up the river. On the 25th, being unable to remain there any longer, they removed to a position nearly opposite the fort, probably at some distance to the westward of the present village of Granville Ferry, but here they soon found themselves as much, if not more, exposed to the guns of the fortress, and Subercase soon compelled them to retire from the position to one nearly a mile farther west, which they did on the 26th; but even here they were not allowed to rest, for detachments of the French militia were sent across the river to harass them and endeavour to force them to still farther retreat. These tactics proved entirely successful, for after suffering several casualties, they were compelled to retire to a point still nearer to their ships.

This state of things continued until the 30th of August, when the English took to their vessels, leaving Granville in the undisputed possession of their adversary. The French governor saw in this movement a change in the design of the invading forces, and took immediate steps to prevent its successful issue. The Baron de St. Castine was ordered to ambush 150 men in the forest, near the spot where they believed their foe would land on the fort side, to renew their attack. St. Castine and his party awaited the approach of the English in silence, and allowed them to come very near before they discovered themselves at a given signal, when they poured three several and successive volleys of musketry into the surprised enemy's ranks, doing so much damage as to cause them to retreat, after making a brave but short resistance. Subercase, being informed of this success, sent Boularderie with 150 additional men to reinforce St. Castine ; and soon after, leaving the fort under the command of Bonaventure, he followed in person, with another reinforcement of 120 men, thus having in hand 420 combatants with which to meet the

invaders. On his arrival at the front he saw the enemy retiring toward their boats, as if to regain their ships, and ordered Boularderie to advance and attack them. Murdoch thus graphically describes what follows :

"This officer, burning with impatience to engage his opponents, marched too fast, and began the attack with only sixty or eighty of his men. He jumped into one of their entrenchments, carried it and killed some of the English. Excited by his first success, he cast himself into a second entrenchment, when he received a sabre cut in the body and another in the hand. St. Castine and Saillant took his place ; a severe hand-to-hand conflict with hatchets and the butt-ends of muskets ensued, and the enemy to the number of 1,400 or 1,500 men (as stated by Charlevoix) retreated at least 1,500 paces toward their shallops. Meanwhile some of the English officers, ashamed of the retreat of their men before inferior numbers, rallied them and brought them back on the French, who were then retiring toward the woods,* because St. Castine and Saillant had both been wounded. The French seeing the enemy coming back, faced round and showed so much resolution that the English did not venture to come to close quarters, but fired several volleys at them and withdrew again. Subercase availed himself of this opportunity to withdraw his wounded, and rest his troops."

Grainger, a native militiaman, was placed at the head of Boularderie's band to renew the attack, but the English had made their final effort ; they returned to their ships, and lost no time in leaving the basin. This siege lasted fifteen days, and cost the English (by their own account) only sixteen men killed and as many wounded ; while the assailed French reported a loss of but three men killed, and a number wounded. Among the latter was the brave De Saillant, who but six weeks before had been married to Anne Mius de Poubomcoup, a descendant of the Latours ; he died of his wounds eight days after the departure of the English.

In reviewing the incidents and events connected with the double attack of the English colonists in 1707 upon the old Acadian capital, the reader cannot but wonder at its want of success. In point of numbers they were more than equal to the French, and the men, when engaged, behaved bravely and fought well ; yet, on both occasions, when victory was on the point of being achieved, they were suddenly withdrawn to their ships, with all the odium of disaster and defeat. This conduct can only be accounted for by assuming that there were distractions in the councils of their commanders, and a want of true leadership for the soldiery. In the last expedition the landing of all their forces in Granville was a great mistake on the part of Wainwright, and contributed much toward the demoralization that is known to have existed among his men.

We cannot, however, but admire the generalship of the French commander, Subercase ; the management of his small force was admirable,

*From this statement, I think the scene of these conflicts may be fixed at the western extremity of the Dugas marsh.

and he was ably and bravely seconded by De Saillant, St. Castine, and Boularderie, whose activity and vigilance were deserving of all praise. The personal courage and calm demeanour of Subercase contributed largely toward the creation of an *esprit de corps* among his men and officers, which tended much to assure to him the success he so well merited, and which has made his defence so memorable.

There is a relation of the events which attended this expedition done by an eye-witness, which is of so interesting a character that copious extracts from it should find a place in this history, especially as I believe that neither Haliburton nor Murdoch had seen it. It will therefore be entirely new to our readers. It is to be found in the autobiography of the Rev. John Barnard, who was born at Boston in 1681, and who was therefore twenty-six years of age in 1707.*

"In the spring of 1707 I was appointed by Governor Dudley one of the chaplains to the army which was sent to Port Royal (now Annapolis) to reduce that fort, and with it Acadie, or Nova Scotia, to obedience to the Crown of England, under the command of Col. John March, of Newbury, as General; having under him two regiments, the first red: Colonel, Francis Wainwright; lieut.-colonel, Samuel Appleton, both of Ipswich; major, Shadrach Walton, of Piscataqua, with nine companies; Capt. Holmes, of the Grenadiers, of Boston; 1st, Capt. Gridley, of Boston; 2nd, Capt. Boyenton, of Topsfield; 3rd, Capt. Burrill, of Lynn; 4th, Capt. Putnam, of Salem; 5th, Capt. March, of Newbury; 6th, Capt. Freeman, of Harwich; 7th, Capt. Kent, of Newbury; 8th, Capt. Williamson. The other regiment, the blue: Colonel, Winthrop Hilton, of Exmouth; lieut.-colonel, William Wanton, of Rhode Island; major, ——— Spurr, of Dorchester; captain, —— Otis, of Scituate. The Grenadiers: 1st, Capt. Nichols, of Reading; 2nd, Capt. Frothingham, of Charlestown; 3rd, Capt. Tileston, of Dorchester; 4th, Capt. Hunt, of Weymouth; 5th, Capt. Talbot, of Taunton; 6th, Capt. Cook; 7th, Capt. Church, of Freetown: with 1,076 soldiers under them. There were five chaplains to the army, viz., Mr. Daniel Epps, of Salem; Mr. Samuel Moody, of York; Mr. Samuel Hunt, itinerant, of Dunstable; Mr. John Barnard, itinerant at Boston; Mr. William Allen, itinerant at Greenwich. The fleet consisted of the *Deptford*, man-of-war, Capt. Charles Stukeley, of 50 guns, 280 men; the province galley, Capt. Cyprian Southack, 24 guns, 104 men; transports, *Success*, galley, the storeship, Capt. Ebenezer Wentworth, 14 guns, 28 men; *Friendship*, Capt. Jarvis, 4 guns, 10 men; the *Hannah and Mary*, Capt. Gallop; the *Randolph*, Capt. Zach. Fowls, 9 men; the *Abigail*, Capt. Deering, 10 men; the *Friendship*, Capt. Isa. Fowls, 9 men; a brig, Capt. Waters; sloops, the *Richard and Sarah*, Capt. Carr, 7 men; the *Bathsheba*, Capt. Cranson, of Rhode Island, 8 guns, 26 men; the *Mary and Abigail*, Capt. Newman, 5 men; the *Henrietta*, Capt. Phillips, 6 men; the *Mary*, Capt. Saunders, 5 men; the *Sarah and Hannah*, Capt. Winsley, 7 men; the *Bonnetta*, Capt. Sacomb, 5 men; the man-of-war's tender, Capt. Cunningham, decked sloop; open sloops, tenders, the *Success*, Capt. Hilton, 2 men; the *Charity*, Capt. Hill, 2 men; the *Adventure*, Capt. Atkins, 2 men; the *Speedwell*, Capt. Carney, 3 men; the *Success*, Capt. Gardner, 3 men; the *Endeavour*, Capt. Lowell, 4 men: about 450 sailors. Besides

* Not discovered by the author until after the preceding was written, it strongly confirms the conclusions just expressed. Parkman in his "Half Century of Conflict," Vol. I., page 124, refers to it.—[Ed.]

these there were Colonel Redknap, engineer; bombardiers and cannoneers, 14; William Dudley, Secretary of War; Capt. Lawrence and two tenders; doctors and mates, 7; commissaries, Arthur Jeffries and two under him; field-marshals, 2; armourers, 2; the general's trumpeter and boy, 2; so that the whole number of forces consisted of about 1,150 men.

"The thirteenth day of May the fleet came to sail, by sunrise, from Nantasket with an easy south-west wind. In our passage we met with contrary winds and calms. May 17th, a council of war held on board the *Deptford* ordered that Col. Appleton should land on the north side Port Royal Basin, with his own company and Major Spurr's, and Capt. Talbot's and Burrill's, and Putnam's and Hunt's, and Capt. Freeman's company of Indians chiefly, about three hundred men; while the General and the rest of the forces, about 750, should land on the south side. The 26th of May we came to anchor in the basin, landed our men that afternoon between four and five o'clock, under Col. Appleton, with whom I was, on the north side. It being so late ere we landed, we could not reach the place of our designed encampment, but after several hours' travel, partly through hideous woods and fallen trees across our way, which sometimes we climbed over, at other times crept under, at length we arrived where were two or three houses and barns, and at nine at night took up our quarters there. There also Capt. Freeman and his company of Indians who flanked our left as we marched along, who also had a sharp skirmish with forty or fifty French, came to us without the loss of a man. The 27th, early in the morning began our march; came to a deep gully where we were ambushed by about sixty French; lost two of our men; marching a little farther we took two prisoners, and by noon came to a spot where we fixed our camp, almost north of the fort, little more than a musket-shot over the north river.* About half an hour after Col. Appleton landed on the north, General March with about 750 men landed on the south shore, but so far distant from the fort, by reason of the wind blowing in their teeth, that they were forced to encamp that night by the way. Early the 27th, in the morning, they set forward, were ambushed (at a place called Allen's Creek) by the French Governor, Subercas, with nearly three hundred men, who lay hid in the thick brush on the other side of the creek. Our army marched with trumpets sounding, drums beating and colours flying, on upon the marsh between them and the creek; gave three huzzas. Then the enemy discharged, from their covert, their whole volley upon our naked men. Our men pressed forward, and after a warm dispute the enemy retreated up a hill which lay behind them. Our men passed the creek and ascended the hill after them, the enemy all the while firing briskly upon them till we had gained pretty near them, and then they turned their backs and fled down the other side of the hill to the foot. By all the fire from the ambush, and while we were gaining the hill, which lasted above an hour, through divine favor we lost not so much as one man, and had but five men wounded. Our army was too much fatigued to pursue them to the fort, but encamped in some houses at the foot of the hill; set a strong guard near the fort to prevent any surprise.

"By some deserters who came from the fort to us, we learned that there were about five hundred men in the fort, and 220 women and children, which rendered it likely, that upon a few bombs thrown into the fort, the cries of their wives and children would oblige them to surrender. The artillery therefore were ordered up to us. Redknap promised to see them sent next day, but none came. Upon inquiry it was found that the engineer and captain of the man-of-war and province galley

* The river northward *from* the fort.

had agreed in their sentiments that it was morally impossible to send the artillery up to us, which must pass within command of the fort.

"May 31st. A council of war was held, in which it was unhappily agreed not to stay to break ground; but was dissented to by Col. Appleton, Capt. Otis and Boyenton. The reasons given were—the fort mounted forty-two guns, some of 36-pounders, five hundred men in it, our men unacquainted with attacking a fort, and no prospect of getting up the artillery; and therefore the army should decamp, and go to Menis and Seconnecto and try what they could do there. But before they decamped they concluded by the movement of Col. Hilton and brave *Col. Wanton to burn the church, the storehouse, and all the houses close by the north bastion of the fort.

"When Col. Appleton went over to Col. March's camp, he took me along with him. After the council of war was over, General March meeting me, took me aside and said to me, 'Don't you smell a rat?' I, who knew not what he intended, answered, 'No, sir.' 'Why,' said he, 'Col. Appleton is for staying to break ground only to have his wages increased.' I said, 'Sir, I am a stranger to Col. Appleton's intentions and designs.' He then said to me (somewhat roughly), 'I have heard you should say the artillery might be brought'—and indeed I had said so to Col. Appleton, and projected a safe method for it—and I said to him, 'Sir, I think it may.' 'Well, then,' said he, 'if it should be attempted, you shall be one that shall bring it up.' I replied, 'Sir, that is not my business, as you well know; however, if it will be of public service, and you please to command me to it, I will readily venture myself in it, and find a way to do it.' 'Very well,' said he. I then took the opportunity of being alone with him, and said, 'Sir, will you please to give me leave to observe some things to you, in which it seems to me you are greatly concerned?' He replied, 'Yes, sir.' I then said, 'Sir, you are perfectly well acquainted with the design you came hither upon; you know how much the welfare of your country and your own honour lays at stake. I am afraid some you are connected with are not so much concerned for either of them as I could wish. I beseech you, sir, to consider, if you return with the forces (somewhat of whose vigour and bravery you have seen) without doing anything further, whether all the fault will not be thrown upon you as the head of all? As for those gentlemen, who seem to me to oppose your measures, they will feel little or nothing, while I fear your name and honour will be exposed in such a manner as I shall be exceedingly sorry to hear of.' He listened to me, hugged me in his arms, and thanked me; and said he would immediately call another council. He did so; and employed my hand in writing letters to the gentlemen that were on board the vessels.

"June 3rd. The Council sat, and then concluded to stay, get up the artillery, and attack the fort. The next day I went on board our ship to get me such accommodations as I wanted, concluding we should remain here at least a month longer. But lo! I was sadly disappointed and surprised by the commissary's knocking at the cabin door, before sunrise, and informing me the army was come down in order to embark. For it seems they held another council in the evening, and concluded to burn the houses and march to the fleet, and they did so; and upon June 5th the whole army embarked.

"While we lay at Port Royal, I experienced signal deliverances; one, as I was crossing over the river to the General's camp, the fort fired a cannon at me, the ball of which struck pretty near to the canoe. The other was, in order to take a plan of the fort, and avenues to it, I marched alone, well dressed, with a large pistol stuck in my girdle, and pen, ink and paper in my hands. I marched till I came

*William Wanton, born 1670, was Governor of Rhode Island in 1732, died 1733. —[Ed.]

to the entrance of a straight, narrow lane leading to the fort, it may be more than a musket-shot off. The French, supposing me to be the engineer, fired a cannon at me, the ball of which struck the ground so near me, a little to the right, as threw some dirt upon me. I thought with myself, that I had no business here, and retreated slowly backward out of danger; and, thank God, I escaped what was designed against me.

"The fleet sailed away, having sent away a packet to the Governor, and June 5th, came to anchor in the spacious harbour of Casco Bay. While we lay there, letters came from the Governor to General March, ordering him at his peril to return to Port Royal, and telling him the Government were raising forces to send to us.

"July 7th. Arrived to us at Casco Bay the *Ruth*, frigate of twenty-four guns, Capt. Alden, commander, and two companies, Capt. Ephraim Savage with his fifty men, and Capt. Buckminster, with his fifty men, which did not near make up the number of our deserters since we lay at Casco. With them also came three gentlemen, Col. Elisha Hutchinson, Col. Penn Townshend and Mr. John Leverett, and the Reverend Mr. Bridge, their chaplain. The said three gentlemen were deputies from the Government and superintending counsellors to General March, without whose advice he was to do nothing.

"July 11th. A number of boats went out this morning to catch lobsters and plaice among the islands, which are many. I went among the rest. One of the boats went near to the shore of one island, and we, who were next to them, were suddenly alarmed with the firing of about twenty small arms, and looking to the island whence the noise came, we saw about forty of the Indians scalping three of the men; the other two men that were in the boat they took prisoners. We were so near to the enemy that their shot would have reached us; but they all immediately betook themselves to their canoes (being about 150 that lay hid in the bushes), and paddled away for life. The army took the alarm, and in a few minutes the ships' boats, with several hundred men, and General March at the head of them, were upon the full chase after the Indians, but could not come up with them.

"July 24th. An express from His Excellency to the three commissioners, ordering the forces to sail for Port Royal; but the mutinous disposition of the men, too much encouraged by officers, with the jealousies and bickerings of the field-officers (excepting Col. Hilton and Col. Wanton) among themselves, foreboded no good by going.

"July 25th. The fleet came to sail. Upon our passage, General March told me (upon a signal made by the man-of-war to bear away for Passamaquoddy Bay, and my asking him where we were bound), he 'knew nothing of the matter, nor of our coming to sail, nor where we were bound; the three commissioners, instead of being a council to him, did what they pleased, gave him their positive orders, which he should always obey.

"30th July. Came to anchor in Passamaquoddy with a fine north-west wind, which we lost.

"So far my journal goes, which I have made some short extracts from. I shall only add what I well remember. We went to Port Royal, landed in an orchard,* were ambushed, and lost about fourteen men, drove the enemy before us, returned to the orchard, spent a few days there, and then embarked our men; but about 110 men of the French, mostly privateers, with their captain at their head (who arrived in our absence), came and lay hid in the thicket of the woods and underbrush, just without a log fence, where Capt. Talbot with forty men were placed as a guard,

* Where was this orchard?

and observed till our men were mostly embarked and the boats ashore for the last freight, and Capt. Talbot called off from the guard, and then they broke in upon the orchard, where were only some of the officers, beside Talbot's guard and a few others, with myself, and poured in their shot upon us and killed us seven men. I had a shot brushed my wig, and was mercifully preserved. A few boat-loads of men going off immediately returned, and we soon drove them out of the orchard, killed a few of them, desperately wounded the privateer captain, and after that we all embarked and returned for Boston as fast as we could. When we came home, the General found it to be sadly true, what I suggested to him at Port Royal. Not only was he reprimanded and slighted by the Government, but despised and insulted as he walked the streets by the populace ; the very children, at the sight of him, crying out, ' Wooden swords !' Though in himself a valiant man, yet I think his capacity was below the post he sustained."

Early in 1708 the *Loire*, a French man-of-war, arrived at Port Royal, but she brought no goods for the use of the inhabitants, who appear to have been in want of iron and earthenwares. During the summer, Subercase built a bomb-proof powder magazine, capable of holding a large quantity of powder, and a large building, part of which was to be used as a chapel, and part as lodgings for the almoner, the surgeon and Des Goutins. The barracks were finished at this time also. In one of his despatches to the French minister, he tells him :

"The land is good and fertile, and produces everything that France does except *olives*. There is abundance of grain and an inexhaustible supply of wood of all sizes for building. All along the coast are fine harbours, easy of entrance. The people here are excellent workmen with the axe and the adze."

Very considerable damage was done to the English colonists of Boston and elsewhere by French privateers during the early summer of 1709. One Morpain, who was present and assisted in the defence of Port Royal in 1707, commanded one of these, and succeeded in capturing a coast-guard ship, which had been sent from Massachusetts Bay for the purpose of making a prize of him. Morpain brought his prize to Port Royal. The fight which preceded this event, and which resulted so badly for the English, seems to have been a very severe one. It is said that while the Frenchman had only five killed and less than a dozen wounded, the loss of the former amounted to one hundred men, the captain being among the killed. Many captures of colonial vessels had been made by Morpain a few weeks previous to this affair. The commander of another privateer was about the same time shot dead in the streets of the town by a soldier whom he had insulted some time before. The soldier was tried by court-martial for the crime, convicted and executed. In relation to the success of the French *corsairs*, Subercase informs his Government that "they (the corsairs) have desolated Boston, having captured and destroyed thirty-five vessels." No less than 470 prisoners had been made from the English by the French during 1709, and were sent to

New England before the winter set in. Toward the end of this year Subercase ordered the inhabitants to "cut down the woods which were too near us on both sides of the river." Of these people he observes :

"They have more facilities than any people in the world—flax and hemp growing there almost to a marvel. I look upon them, and they are really the most happy people upon the earth. They are wholly relieved of the mischiefs which the English inflicted on them two years ago."

The precaution, named in the first quotation, seems to have been taken on account of the rumour which had reached the fort that urgent efforts were being made in Massachusetts for the reduction of French power in Acadie by the capture and conquest of Port Royal in the coming year; nor was the rumour ill-founded.

Colonel Francis Nicholson,* who had, even at this date, an extensive experience as a colonial governor, and who was therefore well acquainted with colonial affairs, was the leading spirit of the enterprise which was henceforth to make the year 1710 remarkable in the annals of this province. Colonel Vetch, who had assisted Nicholson while in England to impress upon the British Government the necessity of renewing the endeavour to wrest from the French Crown its colonies in North America, came over to Boston in May, 1710. Nicholson, who had obtained assistance in England, arrived a little later in the season in H.M.S. *Dragon*, which was accompanied by the *Falmouth* and two smaller vessels. These were to be added to a squadron to be provided by New England. Besides these H.M.S. *Chester*, *Leostaffe* and *Feversham*, already on this station, were ordered to join the expedition. The transports were furnished by Massachusetts, Connecticut, New Hampshire and Rhode Island, and they were twenty-four in number, which, with those before named and some others, made a grand total of thirty-six vessels connected with the expedition, which was placed under the command of Nicholson, with Vetch as adjutant-general. The military portion of the armament consisted of one regiment of marines, two regiments from Massachusetts, one from Connecticut, and one from New Hampshire and Rhode Island. The grenadiers of the New Hampshire regiment were commanded by Paul Mascarene, a gentleman whose name, from this time for nearly half a century afterwards, is to be continuously and honourably connected with the history of this province. The expedition sailed from Nantasket, in Massachusetts Bay, on the 18th September, and six days afterwards it safely

* Born in England; Lieutenant-Governor of New York under Andros, 1687-89; Governor of Virginia 1690-92, and 1699-1705; and of Maryland 1694-99. After serving as Governor of Nova Scotia he was knighted in 1720, and was Governor of South Carolina in 1721-25, and died in 1728.—[Ed.]

entered the lower basin of Port Royal, where it remained until after the first day of October. Two days later Nicholson sent the following summons to Subercase:

"You are hereby required and commanded to deliver up to me for the Queen of Great Britain the fort at present under your control, which by right belongs to Her said Majesty, together with all the territories which are under your command by virtue of the undoubted right of her royal predecessors, and also with all the guns, mortars, magazines of war, and troops likewise under your command, otherwise I shall exert myself with diligence to reduce them by force of Her Majesty's arms.

"Given under my hand and seal-at-arms, the third day of October, in the ninth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lady Queen Anne, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, annoque Domini, 1710.

"(Signed), F. J. Nicholson.

"October 3rd, 1710."

This summons was sent while the fleet was still in the lower basin, and it was not till the 5th that it came to anchor a little below the fort. On the next day the troops were landed—the major part of them on the south side the river, and the remainder on the Granville or north side, as had been done by March in the first siege in 1707. The condition of the fort and the feelings of its defenders, especially of the militia, made the defence a subject of uneasiness to Subercase. The conduct of France toward its subjects in this place had always been unwise and impolitic, and since the siege so recently raised no supplies had arrived at Port Royal, though the colony then stood in sore need of them. During the three years since that event everything which reached them had been taken from the enemy by the activity and daring of the privateers who appear to have made this part of Acadie their headquarters. The almost studied neglect with which the colonial inhabitants were continually treated by their countrymen at home, had, in some measure, alienated their affections from the French monarch, while the comparative cheapness of English goods acted as a bribe to their cupidity, and led them to view a conquest as not the greatest calamity that could befall them. Even the supply of clothing to the garrison was dealt out with a niggardly parsimony, or entirely withheld, and no one knew better than Subercase the feelings which animated the people around him, in consequence of these things; indeed, it may be fairly said that his only object on this trying occasion was to obtain as favourable terms as possible from his formidable enemy.

Nicholson having summoned the garrison to surrender did not long remain idle, but as we have seen immediately landed his forces and prepared for an attack. He had determined if possible to assail the fort on the two sides at the same time. The portion of his forces which had been landed in Granville, were to proceed to a point above the town to be transported thence to the opposite shore, where they would be enabled

to approach the fort toward its eastern glacis, while those who had landed on the Clements shore should proceed to invest it on the western and southern sides, and it is quite certain this plan was carried into operation. Murdoch (Vol. I., p. 313) says:

"There is a tradition that Nicholson passed his troops by night in small vessels by the fort, and round Hog Island, up the narrow part of the river, landing somewhere in the rear of the spot where the late Judge Thomas Ritchie's mansion is built, and gradually made his approaches in front of the site of the court-house of Annapolis."

I think there is every reason to believe that the artillery and part of the men were so conveyed, and that the boats used for that purpose were afterwards employed to bring over the Granville detachment. An attack made from the south-west, on the 6th, having been repelled with loss to the besiegers, they, on the next day, followed the western bank of Allain's (now Lequille) river upwards to what was long afterwards—in fact, even to this day—called the "General's Bridge," where they crossed the stream without opposition, and were thus able to reach the fort from the south, and unite their operations with those of their brethren, who had already landed on the south-eastern side. This manœuvre was covered by a cannonade from the north and west—the river side of the fort—from the vessels which were anchored there. While the cannonade from this quarter continued, the remaining artillery and ammunition of the English were successfully sent through the narrows to the camp already formed in that direction, or to speak more correctly, which was then being formed.

On the 8th Subercase ordered a violent cannonade upon this camp, with the immediate object of preventing them from erecting batteries, and he was so successful that they were obliged to abandon their intention for the time, and to select another spot for that purpose. The French artillery continued to throw bombs and other missiles into the English camp during the earlier part of the 9th, but ceased in the afternoon owing to heavy rain. On this day some of the English ships approached the town and bombarded the fort, discharging forty-two bombs of two hundred pounds' weight, but without serious effect upon the besieged, who endeavoured in return to bombard the ships, but failed through the bursting of their mortars.

On the 10th of October, having enlarged their batteries and more thoroughly entrenched themselves, the English renewed the bombardment, and continued it during the night of that day and the morning of the next. During the night several soldiers and about fifty of the inhabitants deserted from the French, and Charles Latour was wounded by a fragment of one of the bomb-shells which exploded in the fort, into which it had been thrown from one of the invaders' batteries. On the 11th the inhabitants petitioned Subercase to ask for terms, alleging if

the place was held any longer against the enemy no quarter would be given them. The English batteries, on the 12th, had been pushed forward to a point within a very short distance of the works of the besieged, and a furious cannonade was commenced, which, for a time, was as hotly returned by the French, but the Governor finding that the spirit of the garrison was completely broken, and that further effort could not long prevent the fort being taken by assault, sent an officer to Nicholson to propose a capitulation. The terms of surrender were soon agreed upon etween the parties, and the fort was delivered up to the English on the 16th, when the garrison, to the number of over two hundred men, were found to have been reduced to a miserable condition, being left without either food or clothing. So great was the scarcity of provisions that the British commander found it necessary to distribute food from his own stores to the starving sufferers. Four hundred and eighty persons, including the garrison, were afterwards shipped to Rochelle, in France, in accordance with the terms of capitulation. By another clause in the terms it was agreed, "that the inhabitants within cannon-shot of the fort should remain upon their estates, with their corn, cattle, and furniture, during two years, in case they are not desirous to go before—they taking the oath of allegiance and fidelity to Her sacred Majesty of Great Britain;" and, by a memorandum appended, it was stated and agreed that a "cannon-shot" should be held to be equal to a distance of three English miles in all directions from the fort. This district was known as the *banlieue*,* and was quite populous. Thus, for the sixth time, Port Royal, 105 years after its foundation, became by conquest a possession of the English Crown, but not, as ever before, to pass from its rule again either by treaty or conquest.

* French word for the "outskirts" of a place.—[Ed.]

CHAPTER V.

1710–1732.

Vetch the first English Governor—Acadians complain of his treatment of them—Seek aid from the Governor of Canada to leave—Bloody Creek—Nicholson Governor—Queen Anne's letter—Census of 1714—Phillipps Governor—Council appointed—Mascarene's description of the town—Attacks by Indians—Civil court established—A clerical scandal—Treaty with the Indians—Armstrong Lieut.-Governor—Doucet's death—French take qualified oath—Commission of the Peace—Cosby Lieut.-Governor—Phillipps' return to the seat of Government—Again leaves—Armstrong Lieut.-Governor—Land grants.

IN 1711, the French inhabitants of the Annapolis valley sent a letter to the Governor of Canada (Vaudreuil), praying him to commiserate their condition and furnish them with the means of leaving the country. In this document they complain of Governor Vetch, saying that he "treats them like negroes," and that he asserts that they should be grateful that he did not treat them worse. Provisions being scarce, Mr. Capon, the commissary of the fort, with five or six friendly French, went up the river about nine miles to arrange for a supply, and while in the house of one Le Blanc he was made prisoner by an armed party and carried some distance, but Le Blanc followed and redeemed him with his own money. One Sunday morning Vetch sent up the river a force of fifty men under Captain Abercrombie, who arrested the curé, Father Justinien, and four of the principal inhabitants and brought them to the fort, where the Governor told them they should remain in custody until the people delivered up the abductors; and shortly after went to Boston, taking the curé and an Indian with him as hostages. The town does not appear to have been deficient in the means of punishment by way of imprisonment, as the Governor confined Louis Allain and his son in a *dungeon*, where he put them in irons. They were charged with encouraging desertion among the troops of the garrison, which then consisted of five hundred men, some of whom were regulars, and others New England volunteers. Murdoch (Vol. I., p. 323), says:

"It is stated that of this number more than three hundred and forty had died of sickness and in sorties up to the first day of June, 1711, that is, within seven months of the surrender of the place."

Christopher Cahouet describes the condition of the fort at this period as being anything but good; it was in a "tumble-down" state and the English had repaired the breaches in the walls by means of *chevaux-de-frise* and stockades only. He also informed his French master that the inhabitants and Indians, to the number of five or six hundred, meditated an attack upon it at an early day.

It was during this year that a massacre occurred, which has given a name to one of the tributaries of the Annapolis River, which it still bears. I refer to the "Bloody Creek" brook, near Bridgetown. Such of the French in this locality as were willing to supply wood and timber for the fort were harassed and prevented by the Indians, incited to ever-recurring acts of hostility to the English by Gaulin, a missionary priest. Men cutting wood were sometimes shot by enemies in ambush, and rafts were often cut adrift. To guard the inhabitants thus employed from such molestations, and show the Indians that the French were performing such services under compulsion, as well as to overawe the unruly among the latter, the Governor, at the request of Major Forbes, the engineer, sent an expedition of eighty men, the *elite* of the garrison, up the river in two flat-boats and one whale-boat, under command of Captain Pidgeon. Having lost a tide on the way, the Indians got news of their approach, and not anticipating danger, the whale-boat was nearly a mile ahead of the others, when its occupants were surprised by a party of Indians concealed in the woods, which everywhere then lined the banks of the stream. They had reached the mouth of the creek in safety, and were proceeding up the winding channel when the attack was made. It is probable that the Indians allowed them to pass quietly up to the head of the tide and to effect a partial landing, before they discovered themselves by making their murderous onslaught. This seems the more certain, because tradition points to a spot on the left bank of the stream, and a little to the southward of the present highway, as the scene of this disaster. The men in the other boats, hastening at the sound of firing to the help of their comrades, were speedily caught in the same ambush. Thirty of the English were killed and the remainder made prisoners, although the attacking party consisted of only forty-two men. The fort major and the engineer, and all the boats' crews were killed, and two captains, two lieutenants and an ensign, with the remainder of the soldiers, were compelled to surrender at discretion.

The immediate effect of this affair was to encourage the French and their Indian allies to carry out their design of attempting to recover the possession of Port Royal. Gaulin, the Jesuit missionary, instantly on the receipt of the news, assembled two hundred men, and with them marched to Annapolis. The inhabitants of the *banlieue*, as well as those of the river settlements, joined the besieging force, the former

alleging as a justification of their traitorous conduct, a violation of the articles of capitulation in the preceding year, whereby they were freed from the oaths they had then taken. The garrison was thus confined to the limits of the fort. Gaulin having caged his foes in this manner, left the investing battalions and went to Placentia to secure additional aid from Costabelle, the Governor of that place, from whom he obtained twelve hundred pounds of powder, blankets, guns and other necessary materials ; but at this juncture, and shortly after he had sailed to return, startling news reached Placentia. A large fleet of sixty sail of ships had been seen making their way toward Quebec, and Gaulin's vessel had been captured by one of these after making a very courageous defence. Vaudreuil, the Governor at Quebec, had received the inspiriting news of the battle of "Bloody Creek," and had without delay fitted out an expedition intended to be sent to Annapolis Royal to assist in its reduction ; but before its departure, the intelligence that measures had been taken both at New York and Boston to send forces for its defence, was received by him, and he abandoned his project. Vetch had indeed left Annapolis for Boston, leaving Sir Charles Hobby in command, and had obtained reinforcements to the number of four hundred men for its defence, thus for the time effectually securing it against further danger from its assailants.

The reader must not forget that France ardently desired and confidently looked forward to the repossession of Port Royal. With this end in view Vaudreuil had, at the beginning of 1711, appointed Anselm, Baron St. Castine, whose wife was a Port Royal woman, to be his lieutenant in Acadie. In 1707, he had married Charlotte D'Amours, and was present and assisted in the defence of the town during the sieges of that year, and was wounded in repelling one of the attacks then made upon it. These acts of the French colonial authorities show that they looked upon the recent conquest as one that was not to be of long continuance, and even after the distinct cession of Nova Scotia by the Treaty of Utrecht, they did not give up their hope of its recovery by reconquest.

In June, 1713, the Queen of Great Britain, in whose honour the name of Port Royal was changed to Annapolis (the City of Anne), sent the following letter to Francis Nicholson, then Governor-in-chief of this province, which, as it relates to the French settlers here, I transcribe in full :

"Anne R. Trusty and well beloved : we greet you well. Whereas our good brother the most Christian King, hath at our desire, released from imprisonment on board his galleys, such of his subjects as were detained there on account of their professing the Protestant religion ; we being willing to show by some mark of our favour toward his subjects how kind we take his compliance therein, we have therefore thought fit hereby to signify our will and pleasure to you, that you permit such

of them as have any lands or tenements in the places under your Government in Acadie and Newfoundland, that have been or are willing to continue our subjects, to retain and enjoy their said lands and tenements without any molestation, as fully and freely as other our subjects do, or may possess their lands or estates, or to sell the same if they shall rather choose to remove elsewhere. And for so doing, this shall be your warrant, and so we heartily bid you farewell.

"Given at our Court at Kensington, the twenty-third day of June, 1713, in the twelfth year of our reign.

"(Signed), DARTMOUTH.

"F. NICHOLSON, ESQ., Governor."

The history of Annapolis, and of the whole Province, from this period to 1755, will consist chiefly of a relation of the struggles made by the French to prevent the permanent settlement of the country by the English, and of the efforts of the latter to bring the inhabitants to become true and loyal subjects of the Crown of Great Britain.

In 1714, a census of Port Royal—or Annapolis Royal, as it must henceforth be called—that is, of all the hamlets on the Annapolis River, was made, in which the surnames of the families are given. The total number of inhabitants was 637.

The names are as follows: Abraham, Alain, Barnabé, Beliveau, Beaumont, Beaupré, Bernard, Blanchard, Blondin, Bonappetit, Boudrot, Bourg, Bourgeois, Breau, Brossard, Cadet, Crane, Champagne, Clemenceau, Commeau, Cosse, D'amboise, Debert, Dubois, Denis, Doucet, Dugas, Dumont, Dupuis, Emmanuel, L'Etoile, Forest, Gentil, Girouard, Godet, Gouselle, Grangé, Guillebeau, Hébert, Jean, Labaune, Langlois, La Liberté, Laurier, Landry, La Rosette, Lafont, La Montagne, Lapierre; Lanoue, Lavergne, Le Basque, L'Espérance, Le Breton, Leblanc, Lemarquis, (2) L'Etoile, Lionnais, Maillard, Martin, Melanson, Michel, Moire, Nantois, Olivier, Paris, Parisien, Piltre, Pellerin, Petitpas, Potier, Poubomcoup, Raimond, Richard, Robichau, (2) La Rosette, Samson, Savary, Savoie, Sellan, Surette, St. Louis, St. Scenne, Thibodeau, Tourangeois, La Verdure, Villate, Vincent, Yvon.

The Beauprés probably had their dwelling on the farm lately occupied by Mr. William Carty, as the marsh adjoining it still bears their name. The Beliveaus lived on the Bell Farm (Fitz-Randolph's), near Bridgetown, as may be proved by an old deed of those lands, in which it is called Beliveau's farm, the prefix "Bell," by which it is still known, being a contraction of the name Beliveau. The Dugas lived a short distance below the town of Annapolis, and gave their name to the marsh in that district. The La Rosettes gave their name to the marsh and beautiful district to the eastward of the town, which it bears to this day, and the Oliviers owned a house and lot in the town, which was on the east side of the old Cooper lot so called, a fact which may be verified by an old deed of 1717, now or recently in the possession of

Mrs. Samuel Bayard, of St. John, N.B. Mr. Olivier was buried in the old graveyard near the fort, where a stone with an inscription still marks his grave. He died in 1731. There can be no reasonable doubt of the accuracy of this statement. In the document referred to he is called Antoine Olivier, and in the inscription he is called Mr. Anthony Oliver. The Pellerins had a house near, if not precisely on, the present site of the Cowling House, now standing in the old capital.

In this year I find the first mention made of Lieutenant-Governor Armstrong, who for so many years resided in Annapolis, and conducted the affairs of the colony, and who unfortunately ended his faithful services and useful life by committing suicide. In 1711 he was sent to England by Vetch, who then commanded at Annapolis, to solicit the aid of the Board of Trade in procuring the means to strengthen and repair the defences of the town, and to urge upon them the value and resources of the country, and the wisdom of taking active and immediate measures to preserve it to the Crown. He informed the Board that the garrison was dependent on the merchants of New England for supplies, and that they demanded extravagant prices for what they furnished, and recommended settling a sufficient number of English people here to produce the food required, and suggested that the town should be made a free port. Concerning the fortifications he says:

"As to the fortifications, they are in form a regular square, with four bastions made up of earth and sod-work; the earth, a loose gravel or sand, subject to damage by every thaw, and to great breaches which happened by the fall of the walls into the ditch till a method was found to revest the works with timber from the bottom of the ditch to the friezes, eighteen feet, and above that with four feet of sod, the greatest part of which being done while General Nicholson was last here. The houses and barracks where the officers and soldiers lodge, with the storehouses and magazines, are in a ruinous condition, and not like to stand three years without thorough repair."

This description was written in 1716. Vetch, in 1715, was appointed governor a second time (this time succeeding Nicholson whom he had preceded), but in 1716 Colonel Richard Phillipps was appointed Governor-in-chief of the Province. It seems strange to us at this day that no earnest attempt had been made to colonise Nova Scotia with English settlers, as one of the first acts of the new governor was to advise such a course, giving it as his opinion that "Government should give all encouragement to the settlement of British subjects here, as a means of securing the fidelity of the conquered French *habitans*." If this wise advice had been followed, it would have entirely changed the complexion of Acadian history from the time of the conquest. The expulsion of 1755 would not have been necessary, and an event that cannot be regarded but as a sad one, nor justified by any plea but that of necessity,

would not have occurred to blot and disfigure its pages; nor would the advancement of the country and the development of its resources have been retarded for nearly half a century, as they manifestly were.

Phillipps did not arrive at Annapolis till the spring of 1720. He had previously recommended that place for the seat of government, and asked that means should be provided him to make a survey of the adjacent coasts. On his arrival he reviewed the garrison which he found in a tolerably good condition, but the fortifications were wretchedly out of repair. A few days after he was visited by the priest of the settlements, who was accompanied by about one hundred and fifty "lusty young men." This demonstration was probably intended to impress the mind of the new governor with an idea of his importance; but he seems to have failed in his object, for he was ordered by Phillipps to read to his followers and the other inhabitants assembled, a proclamation which had been previously prepared announcing His Majesty's intentions concerning them. Having produced a salutary effect by his firmness, he proceeded to form a council to aid him in the administration of the public affairs. This council, which was the first formed in this province, consisted of the following persons, most of whom took the prescribed oaths on the 6th of May, 1720: (1) John Doucet, lieutenant-governor, captain in the 40th regiment; (2) Lawrence Armstrong, major in the 40th regiment; (3) Paul Mascarene, major in the 40th regiment; (4) Rev. John Harrison, chaplain in the 40th regiment; (5) Cyprian Southack, sea-captain; (6) Arthur Savage; (7) Hibbert Newton, collector of customs; (8) William Shirreff; (9) Peter Boudré, captain of the sloop *Charlemont*; (10) John Adams, sworn in May 9th, and (11) Gillam Phillipps, who was not sworn in until the 16th of August. Of these Mr. Doucet remained lieutenant-governor until his decease. It was he who three years before sold his house and lot to Olivier (*see ante*, p. 66). Arthur Savagé was made naval officer of the port, and all sea-captains were required to report their vessels at his office on their arrival or departure, as well as at the office of the collector of customs. He was also the first provincial secretary of Nova Scotia, having been chosen to fill that office immediately after the formation of the Council. Hibbert Newton was the first collector of customs appointed in the Province. Very little is known of Mr. Adams, who was a native of Massachusetts, to which province he retired, when infirm with age and blind, to die. He was probably employed in trade from the time he settled in the country.

During this year (1720) it was ordered that the French inhabitants on the Annapolis River should elect from among themselves six deputies, whose duty it should be to promulgate the orders and proclamations of the Government, and to see that their directions were carried into

execution. The names of the first deputies thus chosen were: Alexander Robichau, Prudent Robichau, Nicholas Gautier, Bernard Goudet, Charles Landry and Pierre Goudet. Phillipps then gave notice that he would give the inhabitants *four months* in which to come in and take the oath of allegiance to the king, at the end of which, if they failed to comply, he informed them they would be required to leave the country and the property they possessed would be confiscated. This course was rendered imperative upon him by the royal instructions, though he felt that he "had not sufficient power to drive them out of the Province," or to prevent them from doing as they pleased in the premises, much less to punish them for refusal or disobedience. Before the expiration of the time named the priests had convinced their people that it would be the height of folly for them to take the oath required, the chief argument used being that the promise to grant the free exercise of their religion was only a sham and a delusion. The proclamation therefore became a dead letter; the *habitans* did not come in and take the oath, but continued to make improvements on their lands as they had hitherto done, and in many other ways began to manifest contempt for their new rulers. The Governor and Council now applied to England to establish garrisons at Minas and at Chiegnecto, with a view to compel respect for their authority, and suggested the propriety of sending over a ship of war of fifty guns and a couple of sloops to be employed as occasion might require.

The year 1721 was marked by the establishment of a Court of Judicature at Annapolis. At a meeting of Council held on the tenth day of April it was resolved, "That the Governor and Council do sit as a General Court or Court of Judicature four times a year," and they appointed the first Tuesdays in February, May, August and November for the sittings of the court.

Peter Boudré, one of the Council, who commanded the sloop *Charlemont*, was employed in conveying stores from the magazine in Annapolis to the garrison which had been established in Canso, and which had been placed under the command of Armstrong. A vessel had been built at Boston for the Nova Scotia Government which, when not otherwise employed, was to be used in a survey of the southern and eastern coasts. This vessel, sometimes known as the "provincial galley," was named the *William Augustus*, and was ordered to convey the Governor to Canso in August, which she did, arriving there in safety on the 5th of September. On the 13th of the same month the schooner *Hannah*, William Souden, master, with supplies for the garrison, was cast away at the Tuskets, and became a total wreck, to the great regret of those for whom her cargo was intended. On the 26th, the sloop of Captain Alden, who was a trader between Boston, Annapolis and Minas, was placed in quarantine

for fear the infection of small-pox might be on board, as that disease was prevalent in the former city at the time of her leaving it. She brought a cargo of woollen and cotton goods, probably for Winniett and other merchants then of Annapolis.

I transcribe the following description of the town as given by Major Mascarene in 1721, eleven years after the conquest:

"Two leagues above Goat Island is the fort, seated on a sandy, rising ground on the south side of the river, on a point formed by the British River and another small one, called the Jenny River. The lower town lies along the first, and is commanded by the fort. The upper town stretches in scattering houses a mile and a half south-east from the fort on the rising ground between the two rivers. From this rising ground to the banks of each river, and on the other side of the less one lie large flats or meadows, etc. On both sides of the British River are a great many fine farms, inhabited by about two hundred families."

From the last statement here made, allowing the families to average five members each, the population outside the town would amount to one thousand souls, which would be an increase in the country settlements of over *100 per cent.* since the last census—a very respectable increase.

At a council held at Annapolis Royal on Tuesday, October 11th, 1720: Present: General Phillipps, the Hon. President (Armstrong), Mascarene, Savage, Adams, Newton, Skene and Shirreff:

"A complaint of the Honourable Lieutenant-Governor in writing, of the 10th instant, to His Excellency, relating to his public orders for the Province, given out before the arrival here of His Excellency, was read and advised on. On which Mr. Wroth was sent for before the Board and examined in relation to some reflections that were cast upon the Lieutenant-Governor by giving out some of these orders, who said that he had heard some words by William Shirreff, Esq., tending to that purpose. . . . Mr. William Winniett, being in company at the same time when the aforesaid reflections were cast, was sent for in before the Council, and asked by the Honourable Lieutenant-Governor whether he had any objections to make against his administration while he had the honour thereof to be within the chair of the Government before His Excellency's arrival, who answered he had none."

"Mr. William Winniett, desiring leave of His Excellency to go up the Bay of Fundy with his sloop to trade, His Excellency declared he has leave, qualifying himself according to law." . . .

"It is also further resolved, and ordered *nem. con.*, That William Winniett, haveing behaved himself before His Excellency and Council in an insolent, disrespectful, audacious, contemptuous and undutiful manner, as is believed to be without president (*sic*) or example, he shall be obliged to ask pardon, and make his humble submission in writeing to His Excellency and Council acknowledging his offence in the most submissive manner, and in particular to two of the members of this His Majesty's Council, viz., Major Paul Mascarene and John Adams, Esq., having reflected in the vilest manner on the character of the latter in council, and deliver in the same, signed by himself, to His Excellency and Council to-morrow at the hour of twelve, who will then sit at the place aforesaid. And that the said William Winniett be served this day with the copy of this Order in Council.

"(Signed), RICHARD PHILLIPPS."

Whatever may have been the cause of Winniett's conduct toward the Council on this occasion, and especially to Mascarene and Adams, it had no influence to prevent the future good offices and friendship of the estimable Mascarene toward Mr. Winniett's family after his decease—nor, in fact, to himself long before that event occurred, for the records of the same Council show that within six months after the occurrence of this event it employed him in the discharge of duties involving delicate handling and only to be entrusted to a person of loyal sentiments. It is more than probable that some hasty expressions escaped him in relation to some order of the Council touching the manner in which the trade with Minas should be conducted, and which he thought interfered with his interests in that place.

Early in 1722, the collector of customs, Newton, and a son of Councillor Adams were made prisoners by a body of hostile Indians in Passamaquoddy Bay, while on their way home to Annapolis from Boston, where it is probable they had spent the previous winter. They were passengers in a vessel owned and commanded by Captain Blinn, a New England trader, and had gone on shore with a party for water, when they were ambushed and seized. They were, however, shortly afterwards ransomed and returned to Annapolis. The Indians were very active in their hostility to the English colonists during this year. They captured several vessels, among them one which had been despatched by the Government from Canso with supplies to the garrison at headquarters. Flushed with their success, and believing the fort would be without food for its defenders, they contemplated a blockade of it, and hoped to be able to reduce it by famine; but their scheme was happily frustrated by the timely arrival of succours in food and other materials necessary to sustenance and defence. Soon afterwards Lieutenant-Governor Doucet succeeded in making captives of about twenty of their number who had encamped in the neighbourhood with the hope of soon being able to carry out their wicked designs. This event tended to intimidate them and their associates, and soon all danger from that quarter disappeared, to the great relief of the garrison and inhabitants. The Governor-in-chief, Phillipps, returned to England in the autumn of this year, leaving the administration of affairs in the hands of Mr. Doucet.

Among the officers stationed in Annapolis in 1720 was a lieutenant, John Jephson, and Phillipps, in a letter to Major Armstrong, then commanding at Canso, and bearing date October 24th, speaks of him as "having a large family of small children in a starving condition," and adds that "his subsistence is engaged for the payment of debts," and that he has not sufficient officers to try him by court-martial, but gives permission for him and his family to be removed to Canso, on condition that he should be sent back to Annapolis for trial whenever such a demand should be made.

Councillor Adams was at this time the owner of a vessel which was employed in the fishery at Canso, and Mr. Winniett was about the same time sent to that place to appraise the value of the stores there.

Major Alexander Cosby succeeded Armstrong in the command at Canso in 1723. This gentleman was the son-in-law of Winniett, whose eldest daughter, Anne, he had shortly before married. Phillipps stated in a report to the Board of Trade and Plantations this year that the garrison consisted of five companies, comprising in all two hundred men, exclusive of officers; that there were about a dozen families of English who lived under cover of the fort in a suburb having no foreigners in it, and that the fort itself had gone much to decay, a considerable portion of the work having tumbled down.

In 1724 an attack was made upon the town by a party of fifty or sixty Indians, one-half of whom are said to have been Malicetes from the north shores of the Bay of Fundy. They shot and scalped a sergeant, McNeil, of the garrison, and killed a private soldier, besides wounding an officer and several men. These events took place in a sally made by the garrison against the besiegers, who successfully repulsed the attack, forcing the troops back into the fort. Having burnt a dwelling-house belonging to an Englishman and killed the sheep of the people in the vicinity, they suddenly disappeared, carrying away with them several captives, among whom were two men, a woman and two children belonging to the garrison. These were ransomed soon afterwards and returned to their home. Lieutenant-Governor Doucet, in order to avenge the death of McNeil, ordered an Indian prisoner to be put to death on the same spot where the sergeant had been killed. He was shot and *scalped*. On this affair, Murdoch very properly says :

"The execution of the hostage or prisoner I cannot but regard as a blot on the fair fame of our people ; while great allowance should be made for the feelings of the English, exasperated as they doubtless were by the barbarous cruelties exercised on their countrymen in New England and Nova Scotia, and the treachery they found at work everywhere. However this execution may be palliated, I see no grounds on which in any way it can be justified."

A clerical scandal occurred at Annapolis in September, 1724, which may be best stated in the words of a minute of Council made on the 22nd of that month :

"The Board unanimously agree, that whereas it appears that the Revd. Mr. Robert Cuthbert hath obstinately persisted in keeping company with Margaret Douglass, contrary to all reproofs and admonitions of Alexander Douglass, her husband, and contrary to his own promises and the good advice of His Honour the Lieutenant-Governor ;

"That he, the said Mr. Robert Cuthbert, should be kept in the garrison without port liberty ; and that his scandalous affair and the satisfaction demanded by the

injured husband be transmitted in order to be determined at home, and that the Honourable Lieutenant-Governor may write for another minister in his place.

"Then the Revd. Mr. Cuthbert, being sent for to give his reasons for stopping Alexander Douglass' goods, etc., as is represented in said Douglass' petition, who, having come and being asked, made answer, 'No,' that he did not; he might have them when he liked, and that he did not insist upon anything from him, his wife, or child."

Mr. Cuthbert was the successor of Mr. Harrison as chaplain to the garrison. Early in 1725 he came and took possession of a house in the lower town, belonging to Samuel Douglass,* alleging that it was church property. Douglass had bought it in 1715 from Lieutenant Jephson, who became its owner by purchase from Governor Vetch. The matter was referred to the Council, who gave Douglass leave to remove it.

Armstrong, who had been in England from the time he was relieved by Cosby in the command of the garrison at Canso, was made Lieutenant-Governor of the Province in 1725. He did not come to Annapolis, however, until 1726, though he arrived at Canso early in the following year. Soon after his arrival he summoned the Councillors, Mascarene, Newton, Skene and Shirreff to meet him at that place. This year witnessed the first expression of opinion in favour of constituting a House of Assembly to assist in making laws for the government of the colony. Mr. Armstrong thought that an assembly to consist of twenty members should be elected for this purpose, and asserted his belief that otherwise it would be impossible to govern it satisfactorily. There were at this period forty-nine English families settled in Canso—being the largest English settlement in the country. They were chiefly engaged in the fisheries, and were generally in a prosperous condition.

Shortly before his arrival at Annapolis, in 1726, he wrote to the Board of Trade, that without a speedy and thorough repair the garrison of the capital would be "without lodgments, provisions or defence." On the 15th of June an interesting occurrence took place in the town in the form of the ratification of a treaty with the Indians. At the flag bastion of the fort Mr. Doucet—in the place of Armstrong, who had not yet reached headquarters—met the Indians and French deputies, where the text of the treaty was read first in English and then by sworn interpreters to the parties concerned, Prudent Robichau and Abraham Bourg being the interpreters employed. The Indians having assented to the terms, the articles were duly signed, after which an entertainment was given and presents distributed to the chiefs and their hostages released. The Board of Trade were afterwards informed by Mr. Doucet that the treaty had cost him about *three hundred pounds*

* This gentleman was twice married, and the stone erected over his first wife's grave is the oldest grave monument existing in the Dominion.

in presents and feasting, a fact which seems to indicate that feasting was not furnished by niggardly hands, or that the presents lacked substantial value. Captain Doucet did not long survive this event, having died in the fort on the 19th of November. He was buried in the graveyard near the scene of his death, but no memorial exists to indicate the spot where his remains rest.

In the December of 1725, three Frenchmen, named respectively Paul Francis du Pont de Villieu, Saint Joly de Pardeithau, and Alexandre Poupart de Barbour, came to Annapolis from Quebec and applied to Governor Doucet for protection against the Indians, alleging that they had killed two of them whom they had employed as guides to pilot them hither, and whom they had liberally paid for the service. Having detected them in an attempt to deceive them a quarrel had ensued, and that they had been killed in the scuffle which then took place. Doucet had them separately examined touching this story, and found each to state the same particulars concerning it, upon which the Council advised that they should be kept in custody until the truth or falsity of their statements could be confirmed, a course which the Frenchmen themselves suggested, as they feared to live with the inhabitants or to make the attempt to leave the Province, lest their act being known, they should become the victims of their revenge. They were kept in custody until the 12th of May following (1726) when Winniett, in a letter from Minas, confirmed the tale of these strangers, and the Council resolved it would be cruel to detain them any longer, and therefore found them a passage in a vessel bound to Boston, from whence they could obtain the means of conveyance to their own country.

On the 17th of December, 1726, Armstrong arrived at the Government House in Annapolis. He at once summoned the Council and produced his commission as lieutenant-governor, and a copy of that of the Governor-in-chief (Phillipps), and of the royal instructions. The French deputies who had also been summoned for the occasion, were shown a copy of the oath of allegiance which the inhabitants would be required to take if they would retain their possessions in the colony, and they were given till the 25th of the month to return an answer from their constituents as to whether they would comply with the wishes of the Government or not. As this council was held on the 21st, only four days were allowed them to make the required reply. On the day appointed, however, they assembled at the "flag bastion" in the fort, and a translation of the oath into French having been read to them, the deputies requested that a clause should be inserted exempting them from bearing arms, and some words to that effect having been *written on the margin* they took the oath, and "having drank His Majesty's health, and several other loyal healths," they bade the Governor "good

night" and departed to their homes. A little after this time Captain Joseph Bennett and Ensign Erasmus James Phillips, of the garrison, were sent to Minas to administer the same oath to the people of that place. Owing to the prevalence of unfavourable weather they failed to reach the settlements there, and the matter was postponed to a future day.

Lieutenant Millidge, an officer of the Board of Ordnance, was directed to place pickets around the fort for security against an apprehended attack on it by the Indians later in the year; "it being impossible," in the opinion of Armstrong, "to repair the breaches in the walls this winter."

It was in this year also that a council was held in the house of John Adams to consider a complaint made by Governor Armstrong against Robert Nicholes, his servant, for an assault upon him made at Canso, nearly a year before. He was found guilty and sentenced as follows:

"You, Robert Nicholes, being found guilty of the crime wherewith thou art charged by the Honourable Lawrence Armstrong, Lieutenant-Governor and Commander-in-chief of this His Majesty's Province of Nova Scotia, the punishment therefor inflicted on thee is to sit upon a gallows three days, half an hour each day, with a rope about thy neck and a paper on your breast whereon shall be wrote in capital letters AUDACIOUS VILLAIN; and afterwards thou art to be whipped at a cart's tail from the prison to the uppermost house on the cape, and from thence back again to the prison house, receiving each hundred paces five stripes upon your bare back with a cat-o'-nine-tails, and then thou art to be turned over for a soldier."*

As the distance to be walked was not less than half a mile, this poor wretch must have received as many as ninety lashes before he suffered the crowning penalty of his offence—that of being *turned over as a soldier!*

Charles Latour, who had retired to Louisburg soon after the conquest, visited his old home—the scene of his childhood—in the autumn of 1726, with his vessel, which he got permission to lay up for the winter. He also obtained leave to remain till the next spring. He had been sent by St. Ovide, the Governor of Cape Breton—or Isle Royale, as it was then called—to purchase certain provisions and goods which were required for the officers there.

The first formal commission of the peace for this province seems to have been issued in March, 1727—a hundred and seventy years ago—when Adams, Skene and Shirreff were appointed justices of the peace to form a civil court, their judgments to be reported to the Lieutenant-Governor for confirmation. Francis Richard, a *habitant*, was made high constable, or sheriff, on the 5th of April (1727), and on the same day

*See Minutes of Council in MS., Archives, 1726-27.

Prudent Robichau was made a justice of the peace and René Martin, constable. In this year Lieutenant Otho Hamilton took the place of William Shirreff, as secretary to the Council, the latter having sent in his resignation of that office. A dispute arose at this time between the Lieutenant-Governor and Messieurs Winniett, Blinn and Bissel, who were the chief traders or merchants of the town, and the subject having been brought before the Council, Blinn was proved to have used disrespectful language to Armstrong, and it was ordered that "the aforesaid Blinn be committed to prison for said offence."

Edward How's vessel was chartered by the Government to visit the French settlements with a view to administer the oath of allegiance to those of the people who had not yet taken it. Ensign Wroth, adjutant of Phillipps' regiment—the 40th—was sent in her to Minas to that end. This is the first mention made of Mr. How, who afterwards acted so conspicuous a part in Nova Scotia affairs.

At the close of the previous year there were but three members of the Council residing at Annapolis, in consequence of which, and in order to secure a quorum, the following gentlemen were sworn in on the 13th of May at the house of Mr. Adams, namely, Capt. Joseph Bennett, Capt. Christopher Aldridge, Major Alexander Cosby and Capt. John Blower, all of the regiment stationed in the capital. Of these, Major Cosby, having received a commission constituting him "Lieutenant-Governor of the town and fort of Annapolis," was not sworn in until the 30th of October, 1727. He was, as we have before said, a son-in-law of Winniett, and from this time Armstrong regarded him with jealousy and distrust.

The Governor-in-chief, Phillipps, paid a visit to the Province in 1729, having arrived at Canso in June, and at the seat of his Government on the 20th of November. One of the objects of his visit was to endeavour to reconcile differences and disputes which had for some time distracted the community, including the members of Council and the Lieutenant-Governor, and he had the satisfaction to find his efforts attended with considerable success. The following extracts from a letter of Armstrong addressed to the Board of Trade in June, 1728, will explain the nature of some of these distractions. He complains against Breslay, the curé, whom he accuses of "usurping to himself the authority of a judge in civil matters," and charges Cosby with having "sympathized with and defended him in his insolence." He complains also of Cosby having acted violently towards Mr. Maugeant, "a French gentleman who had been employed to read and translate a Government proclamation to the *habitans*," and adds that "his insulting conduct had its motive in dislike to himself." He concludes by informing the Board that "it is impossible His Majesty's service can be advanced or promoted while he remains in

the station he is in, for the Province will be rent and torn by parties and factions."

Phillipps met with a joyful reception on his arrival at Annapolis, and was specially welcomed by the French. His first official act was to appoint Major Henry Cope to a seat in the Council. Two others were needed, and on the next day he selected Mr. Winniett to fill one of these vacancies. He calls Winniett "the most considerable merchant and one of the first British inhabitants of this place and eminent in his zeal for H. M. service." Before his presence much of the discords and jealousies which had previously existed faded out of sight, and general joy and satisfaction appear to have prevailed among the people.

The first Surveyor-General appointed for this province was David Dunbar, in 1730. On the 18th of May, in that year, Major Cosby was made President of the Council, and a new provincial seal was sent out to the Governor. Captain Bissel was ordered to call, with his vessel, at Pemiquid, on his return from Boston, to bring Dunbar to Annapolis where he was to make arrangements to commence a survey of the lands in the neighbourhood of that place. Erasmus James Phillips, of the 40th regiment, was sworn in as a member of the Council, at the request of the Governor, on the 7th of December, and a proclamation was issued on the 24th calling upon the Acadians to bring in their deeds, leases and grants to the Secretary's office by the end of February ensuing, in order to receive new grants under the great seal of the Province.

Mr. Armstrong, who had visited England after Phillipps had personally resumed the government, returned in 1731, arriving at Annapolis in July, and was the bearer of orders for the return of the Governor, who, in a letter to the Duke of Newcastle on that occasion, expressed his fears that things would not prosper in Nova Scotia under the administration of his lieutenant, Mr. Armstrong, whom he seems to have regarded as an enemy. On August 27th, 1731, Phillipps left the Province never to return, though he continued to hold the place and take the pay of Governor-in-chief for several years thereafter. From this time to that of his melancholy death, in 1739, Mr. Armstrong found his position as administrator of the public affairs to be anything but an enviable one. The councillors soon became divided on questions of precedency, and the French inhabitants, who appear to have always distrusted and disliked him, continued to oppose and thwart his wishes as often as circumstances gave them opportunity; while he, on his part, seems to have regarded them with much ill-will. He frequently speaks of them in his despatches as "perfidious," "headstrong," "obstinate" and "conceited," and suggests to the Board of Trade that an Assembly appeared to be the only cure for existing troubles.

In 1731, several small grants of land were made at Annapolis. One

of these, of a small piece on the water side near the fort, where a limekiln stood, was to John Dyson, "sergeant and storekeeper"; another to Ensign Handfield (whose name, long honourable and conspicuous in the affairs of Annapolis, was here for the first time mentioned) of a "plott of ground behind his house"—a piece of land that was claimed by the heirs of Sir Charles Hobby and others; and another, of eight acres on the Cape Road, to Paul Mascarene, who, having obtained leave to visit Boston, had his place in the Council filled by the appointment of Lieutenant Otho Hamilton. The name of Edward Amhurst appears as one of the witnesses to the subscription of the oath of allegiance of 1730. This gentleman's daughter afterwards became the grandmother of Sir W. F. Williams, of Kars. Mr. Amhurst was an officer in Phillipps' regiment.

The quarrels and litigations among the French people kept the Council, as a Court of Judicature, busy during a great part of 1732. During this year, Mr. Winniett, one of the Council, was frequently out of the Province on private business. Cosby, his son-in-law, the President of the Council, had withdrawn his attendance, and Phillipps was employed elsewhere; the Council, therefore, virtually consisted of Mascarene, Adams, Skene, Shirreff and Hamilton.

Armstrong, in one of his letters of this year, speaks of the death of Charles Latour, and his leaving issue in Annapolis. He also says that Alexander Le Borgne, son of Madame Bellisle, had married an Indian woman, and lived among the tribe. About this time the authorities at Annapolis published, in the New England newspapers, an advertisement offering grants of land in this province, in fee simple, to all Protestant settlers who might come from those colonies; but it does not appear that it had any effect in augmenting the settlement of the country.

In September new deputies were chosen, in the persons of Prudent Robichau, Nicholas Gautier, Alexander Hébert, Joseph Bourgeois, Peter Lanoue, Claude Girard, William Blanchard and Prudent Robichau, jun., and the 11th of October in each year was fixed for their election thereafter. George Mitchell, a surveyor—a deputy of Dunbar—who arrived at Annapolis at this time, was directed to make a survey of the lands surrounding the basin.

The dispute between Mascarene and Cosby as to precedence at the Council Board was settled by the direction of the Lords of Trade, who declared that seniority should be the principle followed—the senior councillor to act on all occasions as president, and to be administrator in the absence of the Governor and Lieutenant-Governor. The same authority forbade the appointment of the French inhabitants to be Justices of the Peace, as they, being Romanists, could not take the required oaths.

St. Poncé was accepted as officiating priest for the settlers on the

Annapolis River, and under his advice, his parishioners were induced to petition the Government for permission to remove their church from the town "to the midst of their settlements up the river." This request was refused, on the ground that the church had been removed to Annapolis on account of "a massacre contrived by the priest Charlemagne, and Felix of Minas, and some of the people, to be perpetrated by the Indians." Armstrong tells them: "There are none of you but know *how barbarously* some of His Majesty's subjects were *murdered and wounded* by these unthinking and infatuated people." In order to revenge themselves for this decided refusal of compliance with their wishes, the inhabitants raised the prices of all articles which they usually furnished for the use of the garrison.

Further grants of land were made at this time. Samuel Douglass received a grant covering a piece of land which reached from the street now called St. George eastwardly to William Street, and lying between the lands of Adams and James Horlock in the lower town. I think this lot could be now identified from the measures stated in the grant, which were 230 feet from St. George (Dauphin) Street to William; and as these streets are not parallel, and still occupy the sites they did then, that line could be determined. Its breadth was 120 feet on St. George Street. In a grant to James Horlock, we find mentioned "Frederick Street, formerly called St. Anthony Street." John Hanshole and Francis Wetherby also received grants of lots in the same neighbourhood. Captain John Jephson had two acres and upwards granted to him, which were near the hospital. Charles Vane received a grant of nearly five acres, bounded as follows: "On the north-west side, by the road leading to the cape, and running along by said road from the *churchyard* to a garden formerly belonging to M. de Falais, at present in the possession of Major Alexander Cosby, as Lieutenant-Governor of the fort; and along by said garden from the road S.S.W. to the swamp or marsh, and from thence, or the foot of Captain John Jephson's garden, along the said marsh N.W. to the glassee (glacis); and from thence along the S.E. side of the churchyard N., and by E. to the aforesaid road." This piece of land had been sold years before by Margaret and Anne Latour to John Adams, and now by him to Vane, and is easily identified by the given bounds to be the land on which the present court-house, Wesleyan chapel and manse, and the residence of the Rev. J. J. Ritchie* now stand. The Rev. Mr. Harrison obtained a grant of about five acres in the lower town, for a glebe. This piece of land is that adjoining the railway station on the north-east. Another grant was made of a lot of four acres, in the upper town, to one William Haw, a *tayleur*, who, in 1733,

* Now (1897) owned and occupied by Rev. H. How.—[Ed.]

having been charged with selling liquor, contrary to an ordinance of the Council, in a fit of chagrin returned his patent, declaring that he would not stay in the country, and his grant was cancelled.

It was also in 1732 that the case of Joseph Jennings against William Winniett was tried before the Council, Winniett absenting himself from his seat at the Board during the trial. Jennings appears to have been living in Annapolis since 1711, and the house which was the subject of dispute, was said to have been bought by him from Cahouet in that year. It was proved before the Council that the plaintiff had "bought, paid for, and improved the premises, by building a useful and expensive wharf." Winniett was, therefore, forced to give up possession, and to pay the costs. A lawyer named Ross lived in the town at this period, and was Jennings' attorney. Winniett was displeased at the decision, and incurred the censure of the Council for some language used by him in relation to it.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER V.

By the Editor.

An admirable account of Samuel Vetch, the first English Governor, from the able and erudite pen of Rev. George Patterson, D.D., appears in Vol. IV., Nova Scotia Historical Society Collection, 1884. He was not only able as a military commander and adviser, but as a civil governor, and entitled to rank with Mascarene as the wisest and most worthy of our colonial governors during the first fifty or sixty years of British occupancy. He assumed, by royal instructions, the office of Governor of the fort and country, on its surrender to Nicholson, who on the 28th of the same month left him in command of the garrison. The Indians were not only troublesome in open war, but threatened, interfered with, and harassed the French when they undertook to supply wood and necessaries to the fort. The French showed a disposition to become reconciled to the English rule under his administration. Against the Indians he, with the aid of his brother-in-law, Major Livingstone, of New York, recruited a company of one hundred of the Iroquois Indians, and sent them to Annapolis, where their services were very valuable in many ways. He reported them as "of wonderful use," and "worth three times the number of white men." With their labour he built a fort, afterwards known as the Mohawk Fort, which is described as "about a quarter of a mile from the grand fort," and "a long square, composed of a dry stone wall of a reasonable thickness about six feet high, heaped with sods, with a ditch before it about four feet deep, and between five and six feet high, having at each angle the form of a bastion, except toward the river, where it is in a direct line having a breast-work or parapet of sods, with embrasure for a cannon, capable to

be made use of for a battery and commands the river very well thereabouts." He says, "It may prove of very great service to those of Her Majesty's subjects who inhabit the town betwixt the two forts, as well as a barrier betwixt this fort and the enemy upon that side, and more particularly by more immediately commanding the passage up the river, and the preventing the carrying up of ammunition and artillery above the fort as was practised at the reduction of the place." It was probably at this fort, near the Acadia S. S. Co. pier, that the block-house stood which in 1749 was taken down and removed to Minas. Vetch involved himself in irretrievable debt in the support of his garrison and in carrying out his designs in the interests of the nation, while the British Government neglected to pay his bills, and left him and his garrison in a most distressed state. Meanwhile, Nicholson, whom he trusted as a friend, was treacherously undermining his influence with the authorities in London, and in 1714 succeeded in superseding him in the government of the Province, but himself spent but little time in it, and that to its disadvantage. To vindicate himself and his administration Vetch repaired to London, and was restored to the governorship, which he held for nearly two years, until the appointment of Phillipps in 1717, but probably did not return to Nova Scotia, the lieutenant-governors discharging the functions in the absence of their superiors. The saddest thing of all to relate about him is that, financially ruined in the service of the country, and neglected by the administration who continually promised him a position which would afford a competency, he died in a debtor's prison, April 30th, 1732. He planned an expedition for the reduction of Quebec in 1711, which would have been assuredly successful had it not been for the gross ignorance and incompetency of the English Admiral. Had he remained Governor at Annapolis, as he would have been but for the intrigues of Nicholson, and been properly supported at home, the subsequent difficulties with the Acadians would probably not have occurred and Nova Scotia would have been spared a dark page in her history. His daughter Alida, born Christmas Day, 1701, married Samuel Bayard, of New York, and was the mother of William Bayard, the father of Samuel Vetch Bayard, of Wilmot, to be hereafter mentioned. Governor Vetch was through her an ancestor of the celebrated Bayard family of St. John, N.B.

CHAPTER VI.

1732–1742.

Acadians troublesome—Petty crimes in the town—Police established—Armstrong's hostility to Winniett—He discusses the claim of Latour's family—Mrs. Buckler's strange story—Grant of township of Norwich—Suicide of Armstrong—Mascarene returns—Cold and scarcity—Death of Winniett and Mascarene.

THE years which intervene between the date of the events just related and the year 1755, are filled with incidents of considerable historical interest, and reveal many facts which, when dispassionately considered, constrain us to modify our opinions regarding the super-excellence of the character of the Acadians. The alleged entire and ready obedience to their rulers, their freedom from disputes, controversies and litigations, and the absence of crime in their communities, become extremely doubtful if not entirely mythical statements when illustrated by an appeal to facts. The Abbé Raynal's description of their habits and characteristics generally has long been received as true and adopted as a faithful picture; but it would seem that his estimate was formed from insufficient data or from incorrect information, for the records of the Council abound with memoranda of their quarrels and disagreements in relation to their lands, their rights as neutrals and their privileges as religionists. Even their domestic infelicities are sometimes referred to the English authorities for a hearing and adjustment. In fact, during the long period when their affairs were administered by their own countrymen, it was their common custom to appeal from their decisions to their superiors at Quebec, and that, too, at an expense ruinous to their own and their families' interests.

In June, 1733, Goat Island—then called Armstrong's Island—was granted to Charles Vane, who was at the time in the employ of the Board of Ordnance. In the grant it is said to be near to a place called the "Scotch Fort." It was for several years afterwards known as Vane's Island. In this year, also, Alexander Le Borgne, Sieur de Bellisle,*

* This Le Borgne's mother was Marie, a daughter of James Latour, one of the co-seigneurs of Port Royal. His uncle Charles had retired to Isle Royale at the time of the conquest; but he remained in the country.

came forward voluntarily and took the oaths of allegiance. He had been married to an Indian woman, and had hitherto been inimical to English rule. He soon after asked to be restored to his seigniorial rights, or those of his late father, and his petition was forwarded to the Board of Trade, who refused to grant its prayer.

A ship from the Tower (London) freighted with cannon, ammunition and other ordnance stores, and clothing for the soldiery, arrived at Annapolis on the 21st of September of this year, and great rejoicings attended the event. Armstrong in one of his despatches to the Lords of Trade says:

"The ship from the Board of Ordnance which is to carry home all the cannon, mortars, etc., hath much revived us; they having also sent some artificers, with directions to their storekeeper to put the garrison and outworks in repair, which at present it wants much. We have ever since the spring been employed in patching and repairing the roofs and the foundations of the houses to prevent their falling, and I hope that in a few years the whole garrison will be in a tolerably good condition; and I heartily wish our storehouses and magazines were likewise ordered to be made bomb-proof."

An exact plan of British (Annapolis) River from surveys made by Mitchell during the preceding year was forwarded to the Board of Trade in November, with a request that provision should be made for the payment of the surveyor and his assistants for their services. This demand was recommended as reasonable, as Mr. Mitchell had found it necessary to hire a boat and an interpreter, in addition to his usual staff, in the prosecution of this work. In December, Prudent Robichau was commissioned as "Receiver of Quitrents and Fines of Alienation," for the district of the *banlieue*. About this time the Council sentenced one Francis Raymond to be "whipped at the cart's tail," at the block-house, at the fort gate, at the cape and at Mr. Gautier's; and at each of those places "to receive five stripes on his bare back with a cat-o'-nine-tails;" and Francis Meuse "to receive forty stripes at the fort gate on his bare back with a cat-o'-nine-tails." The former had been convicted of theft, and the latter of having obstructed the highway by felling trees across to prevent the garrison from receiving its necessary supplies of fire-wood.*

Early in 1734, the Lieutenant-Governor, whose quarrel with Winniett had not been healed, suspended that gentleman's functions as a member of the Council, alleging as a reason his refusal to attend the meetings of that body. In March he appointed John Hamilton, gentleman, to be "naval officer" for the port of Annapolis. On the 10th of April the officers of the garrison petitioned the Council for the use of a piece of ground for a "bowling green," and their request was readily granted; the lot of land conceded was a portion of the White House Field, or

* Murdoch, Vol. II., Appendix, page 493.

Governor's garden, and was probably that on a part of which the late Andrew Henderson built the shop in which the post-office was for some time kept.*

In a communication to the Board of Trade, dated August 3rd of this year, Phillipps, the Governor-in-chief, says of the *habitans* of the Annapolis Valley that "they raise both corn and cattle on the marsh lands that want no clearing; but have not in almost a century cleared the quantity of three hundred acres of woodland." He also says they are "a pest and incumbrance to the country, being proud, lazy, obstinate and untractable, unskilful in their methods of agriculture, and disaffected to the Government." Their "being Roman Catholics," he alleges, puts their disaffection "beyond all doubt," and he proves their bad husbandry by a statement so incredible that it seems to have been the result of prejudice and false information—that when the manure near their barns becomes too troublesome, "they, instead of laying it on their lands, get rid of it *by removing their barns to another spot!*" His reports, like those of Armstrong, are very unfavourable to the Acadians.

In August, 1734, Mary Davis made complaint before the Council that Jane Picot, the wife of Louis Thibald, had falsely accused her of having murdered her two children, and after a patient and full investigation of the charge, they declared the report to be "a vile, malicious, groundless and scandalous" one, and ordered by way of punishment that the said "Jeanne Picot be ducked on Saturday next, the 10th instant, at high-water." She was also required, with her witness, Cecil Thompson, to be bound over to prevent the recurrence of such slanderous reports. The generous-hearted complainant, however, shocked at the severity of the sentence, applied to the Council to change it by requiring the defendant to ask her pardon publicly at the door of the church. To this the court consented and the apology was given and received as a sufficient atonement. Cecil Thompson, was, I think, the daughter of James Thompson, a sergeant in the 40th regiment, from whom, about this time, one Matthew Hurry had stolen five pounds, for which theft he was sentenced to receive "fifty lashes on his bare back and to return the money." So frequent had petty thefts and robberies become that in September, 1734, the Council authorized the establishment of a night police for the town's protection, the members of which received orders to fire on all those who refused to answer after being three times challenged. This was the first police force organized in Nova Scotia.

Mr. Adams, who had served as a member of the Council for fourteen years, obtained leave of absence to visit England, with a view to obtaining some remuneration for his long, loyal and faithful services. The

* Henderson's store and post-office were on or near the site of the brick building built by Aug. Harris and now owned by the Union Bank.—[Ed.]

Lords of Trade, to whom the suspension of Winniett had been referred, declared they were "unable to form any judgment on that matter, as the charges made were not sufficiently explicit to enable them to do so;" but they reminded Armstrong that "a councillor should have full freedom of debate and vote," and that "when there were so few civil inhabitants" he "should not too lightly part with one of them out of the Council." To this, Armstrong replied some months later as follows: "I am entirely of opinion that there being so few British subjects in this place that they ought to be used with tenderness and not rigour upon every slight occasion (which is contrary to my nature), but I hope your lordships will agree that a vacancy is preferable to a deceitful member, and that is my reason why (for the good of His Majesty's subjects) I suspended William Winniett, Esq., from his seat, upon information laid against him, and his other disrespectful and contemptuous behaviour, not only in Council, but likewise abroad, to the overthrow and prejudice of everything proposed for the good of His Majesty's service." The causes, whatever they may have been, or the differences, whatever they were, which resulted in the suspension of Mr. Winniett, were shortly after this removed or reconciled, for it is certain that he again took his seat at the Board, and that the Lieutenant-Governor treated him with marked consideration, and frequently spoke of him and his conduct in terms of approbation.

In November, Mr. Armstrong addressed a lengthy despatch to their lordships of the Board of Trade, in which he discussed the claims of certain of the Latour family to the seigniory of Annapolis or Port Royal. The extreme length of this document, though it is full of interest, prevents my giving it *in extenso*, but the reader will find both pleasure and profit in the perusal of the subjoined extracts from its contents:

"I heartily thank your lordships for a copy of your report of Mrs. Campbell's petition, which, being sent for my guidance in relation to the seigneurs and French titles, I must beg leave to present your lordships—though I wish her good success—that she hath set forth in her petition several things prejudicial to truth, and the interests of her aunt and cousins, who have all along remained in the Province, and pretend to an equal share with her in these demesnes, which she claims. And therefore, first, I think myself obliged to contradict her assertion (which, I suppose, was intended only to move compassion) that her first husband, Lieutenant Broadstreet, was killed by the Indians, it being so notoriously known that after a long, lingering illness he died on his bed, I think in December, 1718, and that we had no disturbances from the Indians till the year 1722, and these orders which she mentions were only given her in charity, as an officer's widow, during pleasure, and not as any right she ever claimed, which is well known in this place. And I must observe to your lordships that Cobequid and Chiegnecto were allwise distinct from any claim of the Latours, they being given by the French king to one Matthieu Martin, who is but lately dead; and as to the other I never heard that Monsieur Latour, or any of his heirs, ever laid claim.

"Her assertion that her several brothers and sisters, her co-heirs of the lands and premises in question, returned soon after the publication of Her late Majesty's letter, into the neighbouring provinces under the dominion of France, and left her* by conveyance, sole proprietor, is almost of equal force with the former, for she never had but one brother, and her elder sister married a French officer, and retired with her Uncle Charles immediately upon the reduction of the Province; and her said Uncle Charles committed, or endeavoured to commit, hostilities on board a privateer, upon His Majesty's subjects, from that time to the Treaty of Utrecht, and her youngest sister is still here and never retired from the Province; and her brother being at that time a minor, I humbly submit whether any conveyance from such a person can be of force, or agreeable to the purport of Her Majesty's aforesaid letter.

"I only beg leave to say that there can be no such thing as a forfeiture in this province, for all those that did retire as in manner aforesaid hath equal right to dispose of their estates to such of their friends and acquaintances as remained, which will be a continual bar to His Majesty's British subjects. I must therefore observe to your lordships that her claim by conveyance from her brother can be of no force, because he was then a minor; and had he been of age could only dispose of his own part; so that, according to my conception of your lordships' opinion, she can only be entitled to her own share as a parcener.

"I can noways contradict her grandfather's patent letters from the French king further than this, that I must remark to your lordships, that according to the best information I have met with here (having no other records of advice to apply to than tradition), that during the life of the Marquis D'Auney, he (Latour) was entitled by patent to that part of the Province, reaching westerly on St. John's River, on the north side of the Bay of Fundy, and after Monsieur D'Auney's death, Monsieur Latour having married his widow, he was through her interest absolved from the crimes of mal-administration alleged against him by her former husband, who had been Viceroy of the Province, and his power was then enlarged, but being unable to answer His Majesty, the French king's intentions in settling of the Province, he applied himself to one Le Borgne, Sieur de Bellisle, for assistance, who supplied him with money and other effects to a very great sum, in order to enable him to prosecute his design, whereupon the said Sieur le Borgne sent over his son to seize and take care of his interest according to the agreement made between them two, and as things went cross with Monsieur Latour, he put the son in possession of most, if not all his estate, as a security for the debt, which not being as yet paid, the son's widow, one of the daughters of the said Latour, by Madame D'Auney, holds part of it to this day (1731).

"I must again by the same report observe to your lordships that Madame D'Auney, after the death of her husband Latour, considering the low estate she and her five children were reduced to, the estate being disposed of as aforesaid, applied to the French king for relief. That it was ordered upon her petition that Bellisle, as a valuable consideration of the money advanced should be seigneur and receive the rents and profits for seven years, and that the siegneurial estate should be divided share and share alike among her five children. This is asserted by the ancient people in this place and is affirmed to be contained in a book called "Arrêts de Court," which I have not been able to get sight of.

"So my lords, supposing the conveyance from her brother and one of her sisters

*Mrs. Campbell (Agatha Latour) was a daughter of Jacques Latour, the eldest son of Charles Amador Latour by Madame D'Aulnay. Her mother was Anne Melanson. Her first husband was Edmund Broadstreet.

is good, she can only, in my humble opinion, be entitled to one-fifth part, and those of the other branches who are now, and allwise have remained in the Province (the remainder). I must also with submission to your lordships, in some measure oppose her assertion of the amounts of the rents, for as I am informed those of Menas do not amount to a greater value than those of this river, of which having sent you an account I presume to refer to your lordships' consideration.

"Upon the whole, I hope your lordships will pardon my freedom; I am of opinion that no government, at that time, could give away to any person whatever, that which was then and allwise hath been judged to be His M.'s property, without special directions from His M.'s Government, communicated to the Council for that purpose. And further I presume to signify to your lordships that unless she is limited in her demands, your honourable Board will be eternally troubled with continual claims by the other co-heirs, her heirs and cousins, who upon thoughts of retiring at the publication of Her late Majesty's letter, made the aforesaid conveyances, and not her brother and sister upon which she founds her claims, and as I am informed only conditionally." *

In another despatch, written this year, Armstrong states of the French inhabitants that they have declined or neglected to take out new grants of their lands, and that "most of them have a mile of frontage and a league in depth," being dimensions that would enclose 1,600 acres. Samuel Cottnam, ensign in the 40th regiment, was sent to Minas to enforce the ordinances of the Council regulating the customs, it having been reported to the Board that much clandestine trade was being carried on in that district. He received orders to seize the vessels and the traders engaged in it. John Hamilton (naval officer at Annapolis) and Peter Blinn were likewise empowered to make similar seizures. It is probable that Mr. Cottnam was an ancestor, in a maternal line, of the late William Cottnam Tonge, who became in later years one of the ablest debaters in the Assembly of Nova Scotia.

So great had become the desire of the French population to annoy and distress the garrison of the old capital that they refused to bring in wood to supply it with fuel except at extravagant prices, and the Council were, in consequence, compelled to fix a price which should be accepted by them. The sum thus stated was about equal to fifty cents of our money per cord. The Council, in its capacity of a Court of Judicature, held a session in Minas this year (1735). The causes tried had their origin in disputes among the Acadians in that settlement, breaches of the customs, ordinances, and other matters.

About this time, Captain Aldridge, 40th regiment, who had been civil and military commandant at Canso, was superseded by the appointment of Major Paul Mascarene, of the same regiment, who was expected to be —as, indeed, he proved to be—a more popular and successful administrator of affairs than his predecessor had been, who from his arbitrary, and

* Mrs. Campbell's second husband—Ensign James Campbell of the 40th regiment —died before her. She died at Killarney, in Ireland.

sometimes unjust, conduct, had been very unpopular. In December, Guion, Doucet and Pino were punished for offences committed by them; the first, for theft, was sentenced to receive fifty lashes from the mass-house to the cape, and to serve Stephen Jones,* from whom he had stolen, for three years "in recompense;" the second was doomed to suffer "twenty-five stripes at the cart-tail, and fined four-fold the value of the goods stolen;" and the last, who was a boy, was sentenced to restore four times the value of what he had stolen, and "to whip the two others."†

In June, 1736, a derelict vessel, the brigantine *Baltimore*, was brought into Annapolis in charge of George Mitchell, the surveyor, and Monsieur Charles D'Entremont. She had been found in Jebogue harbour about the beginning of the year, at which place eight dead bodies were discovered on the shore, and a Mrs. Buckler among the Indians of that district, who affirmed that she was the only survivor of those who had embarked on the ship, and that she was the sole owner of it and the cargo, and had been robbed of great "treasures in gold, silver and merchandise," by the Indians. The mystery by which the affair was surrounded caused considerable excitement in the communities on the Annapolis River, and was never wholly explained. No treasures were ever recovered from the Indians though every effort was made to that end. Mrs. Buckler soon afterward found her way to Boston, where she was lost sight of. Mr. Armstrong, in a letter addressed to the Duke of Newcastle, dated November 23rd, 1736, speaks of this affair as follows: "The brigantine *Baltimore*, of which I wrote to your Grace before, I have now brought into this port; and as to the person who called herself Mrs. Buckler, I have now sufficient reasons not only to suspect her relation, but likewise herself. It is reported that the vessel aforesaid sailed from Dublin last fall, with about sixty or seventy passengers, most of them convicts, who, it is supposed, rose upon the owner, Mr. Buckler, the master, and company, and committed a most barbarous massacre, and afterwards, not knowing their course, or afraid to enter into any place where they might be known, put into a most unfrequented harbour in this bay, where they all perished—God knows how—except that miserable woman, who, perhaps, was too deeply involved in the guilt to discover the true story of their misfortunes." ‡

In May, St. Poncé, the local priest, and another, named De Chevreaux, having deported themselves in a very insolent way before the Council, their functions were suspended, and they were ordered to leave the Province. A new chapel had been recently built "up the river," which is said to have been better furnished than that in the capital. It is

*An English marine trader in the Bay of Fundy.

†Records of Council for 1735.

‡Murdoch, Vol. I., p. 318, in an appendix.

probable that this church was situated in Granville, not far from Bellisle.* Mr. Shirreff, secretary to the Council, having obtained leave of absence to visit England, Mr. Otho Hamilton was made secretary *pro tem.* in his place; and Edward How,† who was henceforth to act so worthy a part in the events of the next twenty years, was appointed a member of the Board. He had for several years been employed as commissary of musters at Canso. The 40th (Phillipps') regiment at this time consisted of nine companies, stationed in Annapolis, and one in Placentia, in Newfoundland. Several changes took place in it this year. James Harrison and George Ingram were made captains in it, and John Morris was appointed Captain, *vice* Gledhill, who had been promoted and made Governor of Placentia.

A grant of fifty thousand acres of land was passed in 1736, in August, to the persons named hereunder. It was described in the patent by the name of (the township of) "Norwich, in the County of Norfolk, in Nova Scotia." This tract of land was situated in or near Chiegnecto, in what is now Cumberland County, and was escheated and revested in the Crown in 1760. The grantees were Richard Phillipps, colonel of the 40th regiment; Lawrence Armstrong, lieutenant-governor, and lieutenant-colonel in the same regiment; John Adams, merchant and member of the Council, a native of Massachusetts; William Shirreff,‡ a member of the Council and provincial secretary; Henry Cope, a member of the Council and major in the 40th regiment; Erasmus James Phillips, a member of the Council, a captain in the 40th regiment and afterwards the first representative of the county in the Assembly; Otho Hamilton, a member of the Council and a lieutenant in the 40th regiment; Edward How, a member of the Council and commissary of musters (afterwards murdered by the French or Indians at Fort Cumberland); King Gould, agent of Major-General Phillipps; Alured Popple, sometime secretary to the Board of Trade and afterwards Governor of the Bermuda Islands, where he died; Henry Popple, his son, or, perhaps, brother; Andrew Robinson, a captain in the foot-guards, one of the heirs of Armstrong under his will; Henry Daniel, a captain in the 40th regiment; John Handfield, a lieutenant in the 40th regiment, afterwards a member of Council (he lived for forty years in Annapolis and was commandant there at the period of the expulsion in 1755); Donald McQueen, 40th regiment; Edward Amhurst, a lieutenant in the 40th regiment, deputy surveyor under Colonel Dunbar, successor to George Mitchell, and great-grandfather of General Williams; Thomas Armstrong, 40th

* A tradition exists to that effect to this day; besides, if I mistake not, some remains have been found indicating the fact.

† For full particulars of this gentleman's services, the reader is referred to the article in the genealogical part of this work.

‡ Mr. Shirreff was a descendant of James, Marquis of Hamilton.

regiment; Rowland Phillips (probably a brother of E. J. Phillips, perhaps a son); James Gibson; Charles Vane, an ensign in the 40th regiment, grantee of Goat Island, and either a direct or collateral descendant of Sir Harry Vane of historical note; Samuel Cottnam, an officer in the 40th regiment; John Hamilton, of the 40th regiment, probably a son of Otho Hamilton; John Slater, a captain in the 40th regiment (a subscribing witness to Armstrong's will); John Dyson, a sergeant in the 40th regiment and storekeeper to the Board of Ordnance at Annapolis; George Mitchell, first deputy surveyor of lands under Dunbar; William Winniett, a member of the Council, then the leading merchant in the Province; Nathaniel Dounell, merchant of Boston, and long connected with the trade of the Province; Peter Blinn, a sea-captain and marine trader in the Bay of Fundy; George Craddock, Robert Babin and John Forrest.

A case of arson occurred in Annapolis in 1737, being the first crime of that name committed there. The Council had, under the royal instructions, exercised the powers of a court of judicature in all cases except capital felonies, in regard to which those instructions were silent. They were, therefore, unable to bring the offender to trial. He was an indentured servant of Lieutenant Amhurst, and had maliciously set fire to his master's dwelling house, which, with its contents, was entirely destroyed.

A commission met this year at Hampton, in New Hampshire, to define and settle the boundary line between that province and Massachusetts. The commissioners were selected from Rhode Island and Nova Scotia, of which the former furnished four and the latter three members, namely, Dr. William Skene, Erasmus James Phillips, and Otho Hamilton. Major Alex. Cosby, who had recently succeeded Mr. Mascarene in the command at Canso, arrested captains John Jephson and Patrick Heron of his regiment on some charges that do not clearly appear, though they were tried by court-martial at Annapolis several months afterwards and were acquitted. It was in this year also that Mrs. Campbell (Agatha Latour), by indenture dated December 10th, conveyed to King Gould, of London, her house in Annapolis. In this document she styles herself as "of the City of Kilkenny, in the Kingdom of Ireland, widow," and by it she conveyed all her "right, title, and interest in and to one house and garden, together with all outhouses thereunto belonging," for the sum of ten guineas. The site of this dwelling was, probably, near the homestead of the Rev. Jas. J. Ritchie,* Rector of Annapolis, as the land in that section of the town is known to have belonged to the Latours.

In April, 1738, Armstrong, in a letter to Cosby, at Canso, tells him

* Now of Rev. Henry How.—[Ed.]

that the winter had been unusally mild and the spring was very early, adding Mrs. Cosby was well, and that her father (Winniett) had sailed a few days before up the bay in one of his vessels. He concludes by counselling unity among the officers stationed there, in allusion, perhaps, to the differences which had resulted in the arrest of Jephson and Heron, who had not at the date of writing been brought to trial. In June the Council addressed a letter to the Governor-in-chief, Phillipps, who still continued to live in England, in which, among other things, they affirm that the establishment of civil government here was impossible, as the inhabitants being Roman Catholics were not eligible to election as representatives; that as they are permitted to hold the best lands, and the Government demands two pence an acre quitrent on other lands, settlement is greatly retarded, if not completely prevented, especially as immigrants into the other colonies can obtain lands free from quitrents; that the military force in the Province should be augmented in order to enable them to gain control over the French settlements at the head of the bay; and they alleged that members of Council have of necessity to be selected from the officers of the garrison as there are no other British subjects (fit) to choose from; and they conclude by stating that they had never had fee or reward for their services as councillors, and had ever discharged their duties to the best of their ability, "with a due regard to the liberty of the subject and the peace and well-being of the Province."

Grants of lots of marsh lands on Allain's River—now Lequille—were made to Erasmus James Phillips, to Captain Heron and to Otho Hamilton; and Bear (Imbert) Island was patented on the 10th of November to Captain Henry Daniel. This island contained twenty-five and one-quarter acres and one rood, as shown by a survey made by Lieutenant Amhurst.

In 1739 Mr. Armstrong sent an officer of the garrison, Captain John Slater, to Minas to enforce the payment of quitrents due by the settlers there. In his instructions to Slater he says: "As you are also one of His Majesty's Council, (you are) to proceed thither with a sergeant, corporal and eight men under your command, and there with the Secretary of the Province, to inquire into the behaviour of these people, and report to the Lieutenant-Governor for further directions." On the 25th May he ordered Shirreff to proceed to Minas to aid Slater in performing the work assigned him.

During this summer Lieutenant Amhurst, a deputy surveyor of Dunbar, received instructions from his superior to prepare a patent for a township on the Strait of Canso in favour of Edward How and Company; but this grant was opposed by Mr. Shirreff who alleged it would be contrary to the royal instructions to make such a conveyance, and,

in consequence, the project was abandoned, although the Lieutenant-Governor was known to be in favour of it. Five only of the ten companies forming the 40th regiment were stationed at Annapolis at this time, and each company consisted of forty-one men only; the garrison, therefore, comprised but little more than 150 men exclusive of officers, and many of them are said to have been raw recruits. The fort itself was in a state of great dilapidation.

Toward the close of 1739 an event occurred in the old capital of a startling and horrifying character. Mr. Armstrong's health had been for some time in a declining condition, and many circumstances had happened, during his long administration of affairs, to harass and annoy him and render his life anything but a pleasurable one. He seems to have been possessed of a very sensitive nature, and to have been of a very excitable disposition. Small matters—what to others would appear as trifles—were often magnified in his morbid imagination into objects of great concern and disquietude; and it is more than probable that his recent differences with Mascarene, Shirreff and others tended to produce the melancholy condition of mind which resulted in the rash act of suicide by which his life was terminated. He had executed a will on the 14th of November, and ended his existence on the 6th of December by stabbing himself in the breast five times with his sword, which was found near his dead body. By his will he devised his property equally between Captain Robinson, of the foot-guards, George Armstrong, of the Ordnance office, and Ensign Charles Vane, of the 40th regiment. The witnesses to this document were Archibald Rennie and John Slater, officers of the garrison, and Walter Ross, an attorney, the first attorney of whom any mention is made as being a resident in Annapolis.

Mr. Armstrong's official acts seem, generally, to have been characterized by a strict sense of justice and love of fair-play, and to have been tempered by due consideration for the wishes and feelings of those whom they were to affect; and when not excited by opposition, or other influence, his conduct toward those with whom he associated was marked by much gentleness and urbanity of manner, and, on most occasions, he was inclined to counsel moderation, often using his best efforts to modify the acerbities and conciliate the disputes which at times disturbed the peace of the communities over which he presided. An inquest was held in consequence of his sad death on the following day and a verdict of "lunacy" returned, and on the same day John Adams, as senior councillor and acting president, assumed the command of the Province. On the 8th of December he wrote an account of the tragic event to the Governor-in-chief and to Governor Belcher. His command, however, was of short duration, the position of right



J. Mascarene.

Hon. Col. Jean Paul Mascarene,

Governor of Nova Scotia, at Annapolis.

belonging to Mascarene, who was the senior of Mr. Adams at the Council Board, and was only prevented from assuming it on account of his absence from the capital when the death of Armstrong took place.

In January, 1740, Mr. Adams issued an order to attach the estate of his deceased predecessor, and to forbid the executors, John Handfield and Edward Amhurst, from disposing of it, or any part of it, until the seigneurial rents and other crown dues, which had been received by the deceased, should be accounted for to the King's Receiver for America.

Mascarene, who was absent in Massachusetts on leave at the time of Armstrong's death, on hearing of that event hastened to return, and arrived at Annapolis on the 20th of March; and on the 22nd called a meeting of the Council, over which he claimed the right to preside. This being opposed by Adams it was agreed to leave the question to the other members of the Board to determine; whereupon, after consultation, they *unanimously* decided in favour of the claims of Mascarene, who was accordingly sworn into office, and immediately issued a proclamation giving notice that he had assumed the government of the Province, and commanding all persons whom it concerned to govern themselves accordingly. Mr. Adams appealed from the decision of the Council, and asked leave to absent himself from its sittings till his remonstrance should be determined in England. His request was granted, but his appeal did not result in his restoration to office.*

Major Cosby, on the demise of Armstrong, became lieutenant-colonel of the 40th regiment; and Mascarene became major, *vice* Cosby. Mr. Winniett was despatched to Chiegnecto with Mascarene's proclamation announcing his assumption of the administration of the Government, and with instructions to report upon the condition of the settlements in that district. In a letter which he wrote to Mr. Bergereau, the President requests him to show every suitable attention to Winniett, who was a gentleman for whom and whose family he affirms he had a high esteem. In his initial despatch to the Duke of Newcastle, dated in November, 1740, he states the following facts concerning himself: "I entered this place a captain at its surrendering to the English Government, and had the honour to take possession of it in mounting the first guard, and was brevetted major by Mr. Nicholson, the commander-in-chief of that expedition. I was put down the third on the list of councillors when Governor Phillipps called a Council to manage the affairs of this province, and have served in the military, being now major to Major-General Phillipps' regiment, and in the civil capacity, ever since, having been employed in several transactions with the neighbouring governments,

* Mr. Adams was at this time sixty-seven years old, having been born in 1673. In his memorial to the Duke of Newcastle he calls himself "poor, helpless, and blind."

especially as a commissioner in behalf of this Government to settle the peace with the Indians." In his first despatch to the Lords of Trade, he tells them, as his predecessor Armstrong had often told them before, that it was impossible to form a civil government owing to the paucity of English-speaking Protestant inhabitants, "there being only two or three English families besides those of the garrison."

Early in 1741 Alexander Bourg was commissioned as Notary and Receiver of the king's dues. The rapidity with which news is now disseminated will appear the more wonderful when contrasted with the slowness of movement of a century and a half ago. Mascarene, writing on the 14th of March, 1741, to England, informs his correspondent that the latest news received in the colony from Europe arrived in the preceding July; and the latest advices from New England reached Annapolis during the previous October. Minutes *now* perform the feats which *then* required months for their accomplishment.

The winter of 1740-41 was a severely cold one; and to augment the evil a scarcity of food prevailed, rendering the condition of the inhabitants most distressing and deplorable. In consequence of this calamity, orders were sent to the king's receivers, at Chiegnecto, Minas and Piziquid, in April, to forward the value of the money collected by them in grain and peas to be distributed to the starving families in the Annapolis settlements. This scarcity was not confined to Nova Scotia, but extended to Europe and the West Indies. In England it was so great that the exportation of food was strictly prohibited. During the same month, Shirreff, the secretary, Skene and Erasmus James Phillips left Annapolis to go to New England, to meet the other commissioners appointed to make an adjustment of the boundary disputes between Massachusetts and Rhode Island.

The early months of this year witnessed the death of Mr. Winniett, who had for many years been the leading merchant and ship-owner of the Province, and for several years a member of the Council, and whose decease was felt as a calamity by the whole community. He left a will which was dated February, 1726, in which he bequeathed his whole estate, which was no inconsiderable one for that period, to his wife, Magdelaine Winniett, whom he appointed sole executrix. This document was proved before the Council in August, 1741. One clause of it had special relation to one of his daughters (Margaret), who, it appears, was afflicted with some personal deformity or infirmity which rendered a special provision necessary in her case, should she survive her parents. She did not, however, outlive them; and it is a somewhat singular fact that the tombstone of this child is the only existing memorial of the family to be found in the ancient graveyard at Annapolis. Mr. Winniett

was survived by, at least, four of his children: (1) Anne, who married Lieutenant-Colonel Cosby, of the 40th regiment, and who died without issue; (2) Elizabeth, of whom I have not been able to recover any particulars; (3) Joseph, of whom the reader will find a full notice in the "Biographical Memoirs" which form a portion of this work; and (4) Matthew, who died without leaving issue.

The officiating priest at Annapolis, in 1742, was named Nicholas Vauxlin, or Vaquelin, who came there in 1739. He seems to have urged upon the French inhabitants the duty of submission and obedience to the English authorities, and to have received the approbation of Mascarene. There had been no chaplain to the garrison since 1738, and the want of one was much felt, and his absence deplored by those of the people who needed his services.

A vessel arrived at the port near the beginning of the year, without anchors; and her captain, Trefry, applied to the administrator of the Government for the loan of those belonging to the brig *Baltimore*, of Mrs. Buckler notoriety, which, since 1738 had been laid up near the fort, waiting for the appearance of an owner, and his request was referred to Erasmus Phillips, who held the commission of King's Advocate in the Court of Vice-Admiralty, whose decision in the matter does not appear.

Des Enclaves now succeeded Vaquelin as priest. These missionaries were required to obtain leave from the Council before they were permitted to exercise their functions in any part of the Province; nor were they allowed to move from one parish or place to another without permission from the same authority. This course on the part of the Government was necessary to prevent the introduction of priests who were known, or supposed to be inimical to English interests, and was the means of keeping them, in some degree, in subjection or under control. On this subject, Mr. Mascarene, in a despatch to the Duke of Newcastle, tells that nobleman that it would prove most injurious to the well-being of the Province to permit the Bishop of Quebec to send missionaries into it at will, and that such a course would render it impossible to bring the French inhabitants into due obedience to the Government.

As the beginning of 1742 was clouded by the death of Winniett, so the close of 1742 was darkened by the decease of his son-in-law, Cosby, which took place on the 27th of December. He had served for several years as commandant at Canso, and had long held the honourable position of Lieutenant-Governor of the town of Annapolis; and besides being an active and intelligent officer, he was generally respected by the inhabitants of all parts of the country. His popularity among the French was perhaps traceable, in part, at least, to his marriage with Anne

Winniett, who was a native of the Province, and esteemed by the French people as — through her mother — a scion of their race. Her father, as the reader already knows, had been a prominent member of the community from the conquest, in 1710, to the day of his death in 1742.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER VI.

The first Masonic Lodge in Nova Scotia was organized at Annapolis Royal, in 1738. It was fourth in the order of precedence of lodges chartered by the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts. It was called the Annapolis Royal Lodge, and Erasmus James Phillips was its first worshipful master.—[Ed.]

CHAPTER VII.

1742–1746.

Mascarene's description of town and fort—He becomes Governor of both—War with France—Le Loutre leads the Indians in an attack—Invests the town—Du Vivier's formidable attack—He fails to terrify the neutrals into joining him—Skirmishes and proposals for capitulation—He raises the siege—Marin's weaker attempt—Position and conduct of Acadians—Naval defensive measures.

IN a despatch of Mascarene to the Duke of Newcastle, dated December 1st, 1743, he refers to the condition of the fort at Annapolis, which, he says, "is apt to tumble down in heavy rains or in thaws after frosty weather, as it is formed of earth of a sandy and friable nature. To prevent this a revestment of timbers had been made use of, which soon decaying remedies the evil but for a short time, so that for these many years past there has been only a continual patching. The Board of Ordnance has sent engineers and artificers in order to build the fort with brick and stone, but little more could be done for these two summers past than providing part of the materials, and making conveniences for landing them; so that when I received the above-mentioned directions there were several breaches of easy access to an enemy, which I immediately directed to be repaired, in which the season has favoured us beyond expectation." After stating that an increase was required in the numbers of the garrison, he thus writes of the town: "It consists of two streets, the one extending along the river side and the other along the neck of land the extremities whereof are of a quarter of a mile distant from the fort, has no defence against a surprise from the Indians. The materials for the new building and the artificers are lodged there, as well as several families belonging to the garrison, who, for want of conveniency in the fort, are obliged to quarter there."

A French-Canadian, named Vannier, who was accused of having obtained money under false pretences from the inhabitants of Minas, was arrested in Annapolis about this time and confined in prison for some weeks. The Council finally ordered that he should be sent out of the Province; an order, however, which was never carried into effect, as he

saved them the trouble by making his escape from gaol and leaving the country voluntarily.

In 1744 Mascarene was made Lieutenant-Governor of the fort and town, thus uniting in his own person the functions of two offices, or commands, the holding of which by different individuals had so often led to difficulties and disputes injurious to the peace and harmony of the people and the garrison, as well as of the public interests. The Lieutenant-Governor of the *Province* was supreme in the administration of purely civil affairs, and the Lieutenant-Governor of the *fort* controlled and directed the military duties. This system had been the means of making enemies of men who otherwise would have been friends; and the heart-burnings and jealousies which had separated Armstrong and Cosby and Mascarene were directly traceable to this dual system of administration, and would not have occurred if this system had not existed. The union of these offices in one individual, therefore, may be regarded as a fortunate circumstance for the colony.

War having been declared against the French by England, the comparatively peaceful complexion of colonial affairs in America became suddenly changed. The Indians were excited into acts of open hostility by the French priests of Acadie, and the French peasantry were but little inclined to render assistance to the Government to which they owed the continued possession of their lands, and the protection of their lives and property.

A knowledge of the declaration of war having reached Du Quesnal, the Governor of Cape Breton, before anything of it was known at Port Royal or Boston, the French had ample time to fit out a formidable expedition at Louisburg for the capture of Canso. This armament, which consisted of several vessels and nine hundred men of all arms, burned the village; took the companies of the 40th regiment then stationed there prisoners of war, and captured the tender of a ship of war which chanced to be in that port. These events happened on the 13th of May, and it was not known at Annapolis that war had been declared until the 18th of June, on which day a proclamation of it was published. Just a month before the date of this event the good people of the old capital suffered a great scare, from a false report which had gained circulation and credence at the same time. It was stated that Morpain, the commander of a privateer during the last war, was up the river at the head of five hundred French and Indians, and intended an immediate attack upon the town.

The wives and children of many of the officers were placed on board the vessels then in the port to be transferred to Boston as a place of safety; and the families of those officers who resided outside the fort were at once placed within it as a sanctuary; and all articles of value,

not already there, also found a place of deposit within its walls. It is said the fort contained more than seventy women and children after all these arrangements had been effected. Immediate orders were given to the chief engineer to repair and strengthen the works of the fort, and the French inhabitants were commanded to furnish the timber required for that purpose and to assist in the work.* These precautionary measures for defence were not undertaken a moment too soon, for on the first day of July a party of three hundred Indians suddenly made their appearance before the fort. They were commanded and led by that accomplished arch-enemy of English rule, the priest Le Loutre. As soon as it was known they had arrived in the up-river settlements, the French inhabitants, who had been employed on the works, or in other ways, left the town and returned to their abodes that they might not be engaged in its defence against the attacks of their friends. The position of affairs was anything but assuring. The repairs on the fortifications had only been begun, the five companies of the 40th regiment in the garrison did not number one hundred men, and the workmen who had been sent from Massachusetts to assist in restoring the fort, were more or less unwilling to act the part of a soldier, as they had not been originally employed for that purpose. Their leader had collected his forces and formed a sort of camp on the south-eastern side of the cape and might at any moment be moved to the attack. The first bloodshed occurred in this way. Two soldiers, who against orders to the contrary, had ventured a short distance from the town, perhaps to reconnoitre the invading forces, were shot by a skulking party of Indians. On the next day Mascarene sent a missive to the besieging party. It has the ring of the true metal, and reads thus:

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, July 3rd, 1744.

"GENTLEMEN,—The first shot you heard fired from the fort was according to our custom when we think we have enemies. Afterwards your people killed two of our soldiers who were in the gardens without arms. I'm resolved to defend this fort until the last drop of my blood against all the enemies of the King of Great Britain, my master; whereupon you can take your course. So I sign my name.

"(Signed), P. MASCARENE.

"*To the Indians who are at the Cape.*"

Emboldened by the success of their initial attempt, the savages determined to attack the fort in force. The physiognomy of the grounds surrounding the fortifications was considerably different in those old times from what it is now. A ravine, or hollow, then extended across the highway or street in the neighbourhood of the court-house, and ran north-westwardly to the foot of the glacis, on the south or south-west side

* See despatches and letters of Mascarene on this subject quoted in Chapter IX.—[ED.]

of the fort. This ravine then offered great facilities to all assailants of the place. Permission appears to have been given to the inhabitants, from time to time, to build huts, barns and stables in that vicinity, and quite a number of them existed there at this period, affording at once shelter to an enemy and a basis of attack. It was from this point that Le Loutre commanded his Indians to make their attempt, which they inaugurated by a sharp, but not protracted discharge of fire-arms; but the guns of the fort having been turned upon them, they were soon dislodged from their cover and compelled to desist from their operations from this quarter. They then turned their attention to the lower town, which they soon set on fire. Between the fort and the lower part of the town stood a block-house in the middle of the street—probably not far south of the Mohawk Fort already referred to. A guard, under command of a sergeant, occupied it, and finding the conflagration extending rapidly toward them, and fearing that his men and himself might perish in the flames, he sent to Mascarene asking leave to abandon it, which was granted, as it seems that his fears were well founded. At this juncture the engineer proposed to place an additional force on board the ordnance tender, with instruction to get the vessel into a position from which she would be able to sweep the street with her cannon. This scheme was adopted, and a company of artificers and other volunteers formed and placed under the orders of the captain, who was joined by Edward How as a volunteer. Directions were now given to replace the guard in the abandoned block-house so that it might be used as a *point d'appui* for the double purpose of driving back the assailants and arresting the progress of the flames. These plans succeeded admirably; the Indians were driven out; the wooden fences near the block-house were removed, and some houses in its near vicinity demolished, as they would otherwise afford shelter to the foe in another attack. At the same time Mascarene ordered the houses and other buildings south of the fort to be pulled down, together with those within half a gun-shot from the fort. In giving these commands the house of Captain Daniel—which had been recently built, and which stood somewhat farther away than the others—was made an exception, though it did not escape destruction, for the Indians rifled it, and the shot from the guns of the fort, used to dislodge them, riddled it so much as to render it useless without very considerable and expensive repair. The assailants, who now found it dangerous to approach the glacis of the fort, fell back to their camp on the cape and contented themselves with stealing some sheep, swine and cattle.

A vessel from Massachusetts arrived on the 5th, having on board seventy men, a captain and an ensign to reinforce the garrison. When this became known to Le Loutre, he and his Micmac and Malicete

warriors retreated to the settlements, near to where Bridgetown now stands; and when they had sufficiently rested themselves they proceeded to Minas, there to await the development of events at Louisburg, from which place they expected reinforcements, and the co-operation of a naval force to act in conjunction with them in case they should be ordered to make another attempt.

Scarcely two months had passed away before a fresh attack was made with largely increased forces under the command of Du Vivier.* This interval had been devoted by the English commander to a repair of arms, the drilling of the auxiliaries sent from Massachusetts, and the sending away of the women and children to a place of safety. Du Vivier had landed the reinforcements he brought with him, and which consisted of a company of regulars and two or three hundred militia, on the isthmus at the head of the Bay of Fundy, and made his way thence to Minas by land, where he halted a day or two, uniting with his troops those which had so recently and unsuccessfully attempted to drive the English from their beloved Acadie. Du Vivier now issued a proclamation to the inhabitants of Minas, Piziquid, Cobequid and River Canard, in which he ordered them "to acknowledge the obedience they owed to the King of France," and called upon them to furnish him with horses and men, threatening those who refused compliance with his demands with being punished by delivering them "into the hands of the savages as enemies of the State, as we cannot refuse the demands which the savages make for all those who will not submit themselves." This formal document was dated August 27th, 1744. He then ordered an immediate march of all his forces toward Annapolis; but having again rested his men near Round Hill, he did not reach the immediate neighbourhood of the fort until the first days of September. On the morning after their arrival, flushed with the hope and the promise of victory, they marched boldly toward the fortifications, with their colours displayed, keeping as much as possible, however, under the cover of hedges and fences in order to avoid the effects of the discharges of artillery, to which they looked forward as a necessary consequence of their approach. But it was not until they had got well up toward the foot of the glacis, that a gun sent a ball, aimed at their colours, which, it is said, passed so near to Du Vivier and his brother as to give them a very unpleasant apprehension of a too warm reception if they made a nearer approach, and, in consequence, they at once retraced their steps to the eastern slopes of the hills at the end of the cape, whence they determined to make their future onsets by night, thus hoping to avoid, at least to some extent, the effects of the English artillery. Night after night they

* Francis du Pont du Vivier, a descendant of the Latours, and a native of Port Royal.

marched up under cover of the darkness, following the course of the ravine before named, to the parapet of the walls near the covered way. These attacks were exceedingly annoying and embarrassing to the garrison, keeping them constantly on the *qui vive* during the whole night. They were continued for some time but without any gain to the besiegers or material loss to the besieged, when Du Vivier determined upon a change of tactics. It was believed that a considerable fleet had been ordered to act in concert with the assailants, and the French commander, therefore, sent his brother under a flag of truce to Mascarene, with a letter to him, in which he assured him he expected daily the arrival of three ships of war of seventy, sixty and forty guns respectively, all of them manned one-third above the usual complement, and a transport vessel having on board two hundred regular troops, with cannon, mortars and other engines of war; and declared that it would be impossible for the English to successfully withstand such a force, and that he would, without doubt, be compelled to surrender the fort with its munitions and garrison as soon as they should arrive; and concluded by suggesting that Mascarene should now enter into *conditional* articles of surrender, in which he promised very favourable terms, and affirmed, in case such a course should be entertained, that the articles should not be carried into effect nor be considered in any way binding until statements concerning the expected naval reinforcement should be verified by its arrival before the town; and also if succours should arrive in the meantime for the garrison, they should be looked upon as of no effect. He concluded his communication by stating that he now had a sufficient force to take the place by assault, having in possession and at hand a full supply of scaling ladders and combustibles sufficient to ensure success should he make the trial. He also declared that this overture and the agreement, if entered into, should be regarded as a secret between them as commanders. Du Vivier's object in this bit of diplomacy was, no doubt, to create dissensions among the officers of the garrison, a result which came very near being realized, as the sequel will show.

Mascarene sent the bearer of this letter back, telling him to say to Du Vivier that he would forward a reply on the following day at noon. He then called the officers of the garrison together and submitted the contents of the communication to them, and at the time specified he despatched an answer to the effect that he did not fear the result of an assault, being prepared to meet and repel it, and that it would be sufficiently early to determine what course he should pursue when the ships and soldiers referred to should have arrived. This reply does not seem to have pleased Du Vivier, who sent again to Mascarene, proposing a truce to active hostilities until the fleet should have put in an appearance, but on the condition that the terms he had offered should be conditionally

accepted, urging that the besieged would run no risk in complying with this request.

This proposal found considerable favour with the officers, who, in case of its acceptance, would be relieved from the hardships of night vigilance and other disagreeable duties incident to a state of siege; and all of them but three or four advised concession to the Frenchman's demands. They urged the ill-condition of the fort, the dread of being made prisoners of war *after an assault*, the uncertainty of the arrival of succours, and above all that no risk was to be run by the proposed arrangements, as reason for their advice. Mascarene was filled with apprehensions at the results of a distinct refusal, and determined, while he appeared to give a reluctant consent, not to sign any terms of capitulation unless forced to do so by other circumstances. He therefore appointed three of his officers as commissioners to wait on Du Vivier and obtain a draft of the terms of the proposed conditional surrender, that he might have them in writing. This was done, the draft was obtained, and its provisions were found to be all that had been promised — very favourable to the garrison. Mascarene was solicited to sign it at once, but he declined to do so, and suggested that the commissioners might themselves sign it, taking due care that the act should be considered as a preliminary only; and they were sent back to the enemy's camp to inquire if such a course would be agreeable to Du Vivier; but the Frenchman, losing all patience—or professing to do so—at the reluctance of his adversary, refused to accede to this half-way proposition, and demanded an *unconditional* surrender, handing them, at the same time, a draft so different in terms from the former that they at once refused even to carry it to their chief, who was much gratified at this termination of the negotiations, and decided to renew hostilities on the next day.

It is stated that a few hours before the renewal of hostilities, Mascarene was informed that the men under his command, not understanding the object of so long a truce and parley with the enemy, threatened to seize their officers and carry on the defence of the fort without them, being apprehensive that they desired to surrender the town without further struggle. This was a very reassuring fact to their commander, who now made them fully acquainted with all that had taken place and of his intention to renew the defence, upon which they gave him three hearty cheers to mark their confidence in him as a leader.

From this time to the raising of the siege the daily skirmishes and nightly attacks continued for two or three weeks, but without any issue of consequence. Toward the end of September a brig and sloop arrived from Boston, with a detachment of Goreham's (Indian) rangers, which were intended to be used as scouts. This corps afterwards proved of very considerable service to the garrison at Annapolis and elsewhere in

the Province. Shortly after their arrival, one of their number having straggled too far from his friends, fell into the hands of the besiegers, and Mascarene sent out a number of his men with a view to his rescue, when a skirmish ensued in which the garrison had a sergeant killed and one private wounded; not, however, without having inflicted as much or more injury on the enemy.

Du Vivier, finding that reinforcements had been thrown into the fort, and the fleet and succours promised him having failed to arrive, began to fear that his expedition was to prove a failure. The autumn was rapidly passing away, and the winter as rapidly advancing, when it would be impossible for him to continue the siege, owing to want of provisions and shelter for his men; he therefore determined to abandon his operations and retire homeward, which he did immediately after the occurrence of the skirmish above mentioned. In an account of these events, Mascarene informed Governor Shirley, of Massachusetts, that he had, on the day previous to this affair, said in the presence of the scout who had been captured, that he intended to pay a personal visit to the enemy's camp as soon as the rangers had returned from the basin—whither he had sent them after wood—and he naively concluded his narrative by saying: "Monsieur Du Vivier did not care to stay for it, for he decamped the next morning, in very rainy weather, toward Manis, to which place he had a very wet and fatiguing journey," and assigns his threatened visit as one of the causes of his hasty departure.* Murdoch (Vol. I., page 37) informs us that "tradition says that the French and Indians entrenched themselves for six weeks, living on venison, as they brought no supplies with them; that the French flag was shot away, and an Indian, who was making himself very conspicuous on a rock still remaining, was killed by the fire from the fort."

The conduct of Du Vivier toward the French inhabitants during this expedition was so manifestly impolitic, unwise and unjust as to excite at once feelings of anger and wonder. He certainly knew that the treatment of his countrymen by their conquerors had been marked by much kindness and generosity. None knew better than he that it was to their interests to be faithful to the English, who had permitted them to occupy their lands, notwithstanding their forfeiture under the provision of the articles of capitulation, made at the surrender of Port Royal; that they had been allowed the free exercise of their religion, and exempted from taking arms in defence of the Province against the attacks of France, and that generally they were freer and happier under British, than they had ever been under French, rule. It was therefore certain that if he desired their good wishes and assistance on this occasion, he should have conciliated them by a course of conduct marked by a desire for their good,

* Printed Archives, page 147.

and should have pledged the fullest security of their property, and immunity from the consequences of their adhesion to his cause. But if we may believe the statements so abundantly and circumstantially made in the records preserved to us, he adopted an entirely opposite course, in which he only succeeded in arousing feelings of alienation and distrust, and that, too, to so great a degree that not a dozen of them volunteered to serve under his standard in this memorable siege. Mascarene says: "As soon as the French and Indians left our river, the deputies of the inhabitants came before me in council, and represented the dread they had been kept in by the French commander producing his written orders, threatening with death those who should disobey. They assured me, however, that notwithstanding the entreaties and threats of Monsieur Du Vivier, none of the inhabitants could be persuaded to take up arms and join the enemy." The same fact was also affirmed by the deputies of the *banlieue* or Annapolis District.

Scarcely had the retreating foe reached Minas, when two ships of war, with a number of officers and men, arrived in the basin, and seized two vessels which came in during the same tide, from Boston, being laden with stores for the Massachusetts' auxiliaries, then in the Annapolis garrison. The commander of the French ships, finding that the siege had been raised, did not make any hostile demonstration against the town, though he was joined on the day after his arrival by a sloop of war having on board mortars, cannons and other warlike stores, but contented him with the captures he had made and quietly sailed away. "Thus," continues Mascarene in the despatch already quoted above, "were the French with their clans of Indians, obliged to leave us for this year, after making three several attempts, in which, though their measures had been well taken at first, yet were baffled at last, for we have heard since that the men-of-war mentioned by Monsieur Du Vivier had everything ready to come to reduce us, but at some intelligence of an English squadron bound to these northern parts, they dropped their enterprise, and sent the shipping above mentioned." The safety of the fort, he ascribes "to the breaking of the French measures, the timely succours received from the Governor of Massachusetts, and our French inhabitants refusing to take up arms against us.

"The first had prepared such a force as, in the opinion of all, considering the ill condition of this fort, we should not have been able to resist; by the second our men were eased in the constant duty in the many ruinous places in our ramparts required to attend; and if the inhabitants had taken up arms they might have brought three or four thousand men against it, who would have kept us still on harder duty, and by keeping the enemy a long time about us, made it impracticable to repair our breaches, or to get our firewood and other things of absolute necessity."

Mascarene fully expected a renewal of the attack in the coming spring and therefore devoted the short days of the intervening winter, which happened to prove very favourable, to repairing the fortifications and strengthening their defences. But the events which were about to develop themselves at Louisburg were such as to render his position more hopeful than it otherwise would have been. The neighbouring colonies had determined to attempt to capture this stronghold of France in Isle Royale, and the knowledge of this fact made it necessary for the Governor of that island to prepare to defend himself instead of making preparations to attack others. Annapolis, however, did not entirely escape invasion; for in the month of May, 1745, Marin, a young Canadian officer, commanding a mixed body of French and Indians numbering about six hundred souls, made a short and futile demonstration against it. He succeeded in taking two small vessels, and made prisoner of a woman; but having received orders to hasten with his forces to assist in the defence of Louisburg, he soon left the town free from further inconvenience. It was at the time of his approach that Mr. Bastide, the Engineer-in-chief, advised the pulling down of several houses which stood too near the block-house. One of these buildings belonged to a Sergeant Davis, and the others to Olivier, Adams, Ross and Hutchinson. These buildings were situated to the north-east of the block-house, and as the wind blew strongly from that direction, this course was deemed necessary for the safety of the town and fort. The house of Olivier, or as he was called by the English "Oliver," was located in what is still known as the "Cooper lot," in Annapolis, adjoining the grounds of the railway station. Governor Vetch was the original owner of this house. He sold it in 1717, and as I have said elsewhere the deed of conveyance is still extant.

Part of Marin's forces embarked on board a vessel with a view to reaching Louisburg as soon as possible, but they were so closely watched and pursued by provincial armed sloops that they were hindered from reaching their destination until too late. Marin seems to have adopted the harsh and threatening policy of Du Vivier toward the French inhabitants. This is apparent from the written orders issued by him and which are still in existence. Murdoch informs us (Vol. II., p. 74), "The deputies stated that the behaviour of the enemy toward the inhabitants had been very harsh. That coming in the night they sent men to every house whilst the dwellers were buried in sleep, and threatened to put to death any that should stir out or come near the fort. That they had been ordered to furnish weekly a certain quantity of cattle, and to bring their carts and teams, the orders being, most of them, on pain of death."

In the autumn of 1745, the supplies of live stock for the use of the garrison at Annapolis, while on their way from Minas were cut off by a party of Indians, who were supposed to have been encouraged by the

inhabitants of that place; and a few of Goreham's rangers were surprised on Goat Island, where they were stationed, information of their whereabouts having been probably furnished to the enemy by some of the adjacent settlers. While the siege and capture of Louisburg renders this year memorable in the annals of Acadian history, it made the two following years periods of comparative repose for Annapolis.

Mascarene's correspondence with the Duke of Newcastle about this time expressed a fear that the French inhabitants of the Province would join the enemy in case France should send a sufficiently large and well-organized expedition to attempt the recovery of Nova Scotia. He believed their religion, their patriotism and the ties of race alike urged them to such a course; and he seems to have been justified in coming to this conclusion, for it had been affirmed by the Governor of Canada in a despatch to the French minister that "the attachment of the Acadians to the Crown of France could not be doubted." This despatch was written by the Marquis de Beauharnois, then governor, in September, 1745. He writes:

"As regards the disposition of the inhabitants toward us, all with a very small exception, are desirous of returning under French dominion. Sieur Marin and the officers of his detachment as well as the missionaries have assured us of this; they will not hesitate to take up arms as soon as they see themselves at liberty to do so; that is, as soon as we shall have become masters of Port Royal, or they have powder and other munition of war, and will be backed by some sedentary troops for their protection against the resentment of the English. . . . The reduction of Louisburg has, however, disconcerted them. Monsieur Marin has reported to us that the day he left Port Royal all the inhabitants were overpowered with grief. This arose only from their apprehension of remaining at the disposition of the enemy, of losing their property, and of being deprived of their missionaries."

This despatch is so filled with interesting particulars that I cannot but transcribe a few more of them. He adds:

"The Acadians have not extended their plantations since they have come under English rule; their houses are wretched wooden boxes, without conveniences, and without ornaments, and scarcely containing the most necessary furniture; but they are extremely covetous of specie. Since the settlement of Isle Royale they have drawn from Louisburg, by means of their trade in cattle, and all the other provisions, almost all the specie the king annually sent out; *it never makes its appearance again; they are particularly careful to conceal it.* . . . The enemy will not fail to stock the place—Annapolis—abundantly with all the stores necessary for its defence, and to strengthen its garrison. This consisted of three hundred men when Sieur Marin left the place in the beginning of June. There were then six 24-pounders pointed toward the river; one twelve-inch mortar and thirty pieces of cannon on the ramparts. The fort is square with four bastions, being about 180 toises—360 yards—from one bastion to the other. The wall is of earth faced with squared timber ten to twelve inches in breadth and eighteen feet long, joined together and set up perpendicularly; the embrasures of the parapets are very open; the top of the parapets is set off with round sticks, twelve inches in diameter,

fastened with rope ends, these sticks being so disposed as to admit of being opened and slipped over the talus of the parapet with a view to break the ladders which would be employed in scaling. The ditch may be ten or twelve toises—twenty or twenty-four yards—wide and half as much deep; in its centre is a cunette with a palisade; the covert way is nothing else than the counter-scarpe. The glacis, with well-defined, salient and entering angle, may be fifteen toises—thirty yards. The outworks consist of the three block-houses; one situated between the mouth of the little river and the fort, and defends the plain; the other two E.N.E. of said fort defend the approach of the lower town. 'Tis to be observed that during Marin's sojourn all the houses in the lower town were abandoned. The most part belong to the officers of the garrison.

"You will see, my lord, by the annexed journal, that Mr. Mascarene had commenced in May to have the north side of Goat Island cleared, either with a view to discover at a greater distance the ships that enter the narrow mouth of the harbour, the view of which is intercepted by trees, or rather to erect a battery upon it, to defend the only ship channel between that island and the mainland, and by that means prevent vessels going up so far as the fort. It is to be presumed that the English have now erected that battery, and that they will, on receipt of the first news of preparation against Acadie, construct another battery at the entrance of the strait. Should they erect one on Goat Island, it will not prevent ships entering and anchoring in the basin, nor troops landing on the south shore opposite the anchorage grounds. 'Twill be very easy to render the road from that point to Port Royal passable for artillery destined for the attack; the distance is about three leagues."

In the spring of 1746 Mascarene detained His Majesty's ship *Dover* for the protection of the town against a possible attack, though he had a few months before commissioned a vessel called the *Ordnance Packet* in the public service. She was, however, chiefly employed in carrying provisions and stores from Boston to Louisburg and Annapolis. In April the river deputies were ordered to furnish men to assist in building a new wharf near the fort, probably the one in late years known as the Queen's, or "Government wharf," the ruins of which have long been conspicuous. They were required to send at least forty for that purpose. It was during this summer that Mascarene commanded that three guns should be fired from one of the bastions, whenever any of the soldiers should be found to have deserted, and the inhabitants were required, when they heard the signal, to guard the various roads and other avenues of escape, and if possible to seize the runaways. About the same time the schooner *Fame* was sent to Louisburg with despatches, and the *Ordnance Packet* ordered up the bay to procure intelligence concerning the movements of Le Loutre and his people in that quarter. The same vessel, later in the season, was ordered to cruise in the mouth of the Bay of Fundy, in order to destroy the enemy's ships which should approach the basin from that direction, or to convoy friendly vessels inward bound, into port, as circumstances or occasion required. She carried a small armament, and a sergeant and ten men from the garrison in addition to her crew.

CHAPTER VIII.

1746–1756.

Ramezay invests Annapolis—Mascarene reinforced—Noble's force at Grand Pré surprised and cut to pieces—Arrest of twelve French traitors wanted—Morris' proposal to settle English families between the Acadian settlements—Peace—Halifax founded by Cornwallis—Becomes the capital—Acadians refuse to take unqualified oath—Ask leave to depart—Leave refused—How's treacherous murder—Lawrence Governor—French at Annapolis again ask leave to retire—Their sudden seizure and dispersion.

THE loss of Louisburg had filled France with chagrin and mortification, and she determined to attempt its recovery, and restore her dominion over the whole of Acadie. To effect this purpose she fitted out an expedition, consisting of fifty ships of war, and a land force of three or four thousand men, under the command of the Duc d'Anville. This great armament threatened to restore and perpetuate the supremacy of France in that part of America, and its commander was specially instructed to reduce Annapolis as well as Louisburg; and but for what appears to have been an interposition of Providence, the old fortress of Port Royal would probably have passed once more into the hands of its ancient masters. A succession of storms assailed this ill-starred fleet, and disease and pestilence completed the disasters that were begun by the elements. A Canadian force, under the command of the Chevalier de Ramezay, with Coulon de Villiers and La Corne, as lieutenants, had been organized to aid and support D'Anville in his intended conquests. The Canadian commander received orders to invest the works at Annapolis, and act in concert with a division of the fleet, which was to be sent into the basin to attack it from that side. He, therefore, with a detachment of seven hundred men, toward the close of September, appeared at the cape, and encamped his men. He made no attempt on the town, however, but waited for the arrival of a naval force before he should commence active operations against it.

Mascarene, in the meantime, had received reinforcements from Massachusetts to the number of 250 men, which, with His Majesty's ship *Chester*, of fifty guns, the *Shirley*, of thirty guns, and the *Ordnance Packet* in the harbour, made him not entirely unprepared to make a

vigorous, if not a successful, defence against any attack that might be made, either on the land or the seaward side. De Ramezay had not been long at the cape, however, before he received information of the complete withdrawal of the broken and crippled armament of D'Anville from the shores of the Province, and he, without delay, evacuated his camp, retiring first to Minas, and afterwards to Chiegnecto, where he intended to pass the winter, and prepare for a new campaign in the spring.

The other colonies had been stirred from centre to circumference by the efforts of France to recover the possession of Nova Scotia, and in consequence they voted men, vessels and money to aid in her defence. Mascarene advised the military occupation of Grand Pré, by a garrison of New England troops—a plan which would be equivalent to removing the scene of spring operations from the seat of Government to that point, while its possession would deprive the enemy of a convenient basis of attack and depot of supplies.* He therefore directed that a detachment of 470 men of the Massachusetts contingent should be sent to that point, and quartered upon the inhabitants. This force was placed under the command of Colonel Arthur Noble and Major Erasmus James Phillips, and Edward How accompanied them as commissioner in charge of the administration of civil affairs, and as commissary. The disembarkation of these troops took place on the day before Christmas, 1746, and news of the event reached De Ramezay on the 8th of January, 1747, at Chiegnecto, who, without hesitation, decided to attempt their dislodgement, or destruction, if possible, before the spring. He had every reason for believing that his enemies would not anticipate his intentions, and he therefore quietly and secretly organized a body of about three hundred men whom he despatched overland, *via* Windsor, under the command of Coulon de Villiers, who commenced the journey on the 23rd of January, and reached Piziquid (Windsor) on the 9th of February; and at three o'clock, on the morning of the 11th, arrived at Grand Pré, on which they commenced their attack while the English were reposing in the security of a profound sleep. A blinding snow-storm prevailed, and the French were enabled to enter the village without being observed. They at once assailed the quarters in which they knew the British officers were sleeping, and a violent fight ensued, during which Colonel Noble and his brother were killed, and Edward How wounded and taken prisoner. After the death of Noble, the command was assumed by Captain Benjamin Goldthwaite, who continued the resistance several hours, though he was finally compelled to surrender on terms. These

* The Acadians refused to supply Ramezay with provisions while among them with his troops without immediate specie payment, which they knew he could not make. See "Wolfe and Montcalm," Vol. II., pp. 189, 199, 200.—[Ed.]

were, however, honourable, both to the English and the French. The former were allowed to march out of the village with the honours of war, and were furnished with rations, and permitted to retire to the fort at Annapolis, on making a declaration that they would not bear arms against the French at Beaubassin, Chiegnecto or Cobequid, for six months. How was soon afterwards exchanged for a Frenchman—one Lacroix—who had been made a prisoner by the English in July, 1745, in Cape Breton. Five other prisoners were thrown in with Lacroix, as an equivalent for the commissary, who was held in high estimation by Mascarene and the whole Council.

The battle of Grand Pré was, perhaps, the most stubbornly contested fight that ever took place in Acadie. The success of the French was entirely due to the suddenness of the assault, and the circumstance of their having been provided with snow-shoes, to the use of which they had become so accustomed during their recent marvellously rapid march, that they could use their weapons with as great facility with them on their feet as they could have done without them, while their power to move with freedom over the mounds of snow which encumbered the streets gave them a marked advantage over the English, who, not dreaming of danger, and all of them, save the solitary sentinel, being in their bed and asleep, were compelled to fly to their arms *in their shirts* and defend themselves as best they could. The gallant Nobles were killed in their night-dresses, and How was made a prisoner while in a similar costume. The howlings of the storm; the blinding, drifting snow; the darkness; the uncertainty as to who the enemy were; the want of knowledge of their numbers; the flashing of discharging fire-arms; the sharp and rapid reports of fusils and musquets, and the cries of the wounded rendered the scene as picturesque as it was awful; yet the Massachusetts men disputed foot by foot the possession of the points held by them, till daylight brought them a better knowledge of the enemy, who then began to redouble their efforts for victory. Goldthwaite, by his bold and intrepid bearing, inspired his followers with a like spirit, and a hand-to-hand conflict ensued, in which the latter, after some hours of exhausting conflict, found their movements so clogged and hindered by the accumulated snow, into which they sunk deeply at every step, while their racquetted foe moved freely on its surface, that it became necessary to offer a capitulation.*

*It is noteworthy that the later the period of Parkman's writings, the more favourable is he to the Acadians. In Vol. II. of his "Half Century of Conflict," Chap. XXII., he gives an account of the affair at Grand Pré from trustworthy sources (the journal of Beaujeu, and Goldthwaite's letters to Governor Shirley), and without any partial colouring. Coulon's arrival was a surprise to the *habitans* as well as to the English, but he made his way to a house where he saw light, and found it to be the scene of wedding festivities. He impressed some of the guests into his service to conduct him to the English officers' quarters, that he might make himself master

Ordinances regulating the price of cord-wood were revived by the Council, and owing to its scarcity its exportation was prohibited. Letters of marque and reprisal were issued to the sloop *Marigold*, of eighty tons burthen, William Knox, master; and at the same time a proclamation by Governor Shirley, of Massachusetts, was published at Annapolis offering a reward for the apprehension of certain persons of this province who were accused of treason. Fifty pounds was the amount of reward, and the names of the traitors given were those of Louis Gautier, and his sons Joseph and Pierre, Amand Bugeau, Joseph Leblanc, Charles and Francis Raymond, Charles Le Roy, Joseph Brouissard, Pierre Guidry, and Louis Hébert; the latter of whom had been a servant to Captain Handfield, of the 40th regiment. They were charged with having aided and assisted the French and Indian invaders of the Province contrary to their oaths of fealty to the King of England.

As early as February, 1748, Charles Morris, afterwards the first Surveyor-General of the Province appointed after the founding of Halifax, recommended Mascarene to form settlements in various sections of the county by importing Protestant settlers from the various New England colonies. 1. Between the basin and St. Mary's Bay, he says, eighty to one hundred settlers might be located. He speaks of the Joggin near where Digby now stands, as a place where all the people, at certain seasons of the year, could catch as many *shad* as they pleased, and says that "no French live in this district." 2. From the gut to the Scotch Fort—"a place of importance"—the French possess all the salt-marsh lands. 3. From the Scotch Fort to what is now called Granville Ferry is occupied by twenty French families. He adds that the marshes in this district should be equally divided between them and an equal number of English settlers. 4. From Annapolis Royal to Moose River only eight French households were then settled. He thinks that *eighty* English families should be settled there. He says there are two large marshes in that locality. 5 and 6. From Annapolis eastward and up the

of them first, but they led him to the wrong place, and he complains that the guides would not give him any assistance in the attack. Immediately after the attack Ramezay plied the Acadians with threats of the severest punishment if they should decline to actively aid him, declaring that France had now reconquered the country. They replied in pathetic terms assuring him of their "good heart," their sympathy as Frenchmen, but imploring him to consider their position—exposed to ruin if they failed in strict loyalty to their masters with whom they had been in close contact for so many years. At the same time they sent to Mascarene a copy of Ramezay's letter, begging him to consider that they could not avoid answering it as they did, but assuring him of their unfaltering loyalty to King George. After this Ramezay issued another proclamation invoking the death penalty upon any Acadians who might refuse to take up arms against the English, and asserting that the Bishop of Quebec had absolved them from their oaths. Thus were they threatened on one side with death, and on the other with confiscation and banishment; and Shirley boldly reproaches the English Government for not protecting them with an adequate force from this constant and cruel pressure from the French, to which he ascribes their "fluctuating state."—[Ed.]

river, he states there are two small settlements of thirty French families each, within six miles of the former place, where English should be settled.

Twelve years afterwards this advice culminated in fruition under proclamation of Governor Lawrence, but not until after the expulsion of the *habitans*—an act which might not have been *necessary* if Morris' plan had been at once adopted.

On the first day of June, 1748, His Majesty's ship *Mahon* and two armed schooners arrived at Annapolis with stores for the garrison, and were placed at the disposal of the Government. They were, shortly afterwards, employed in convoying a vessel, laden with merchandise, to Minas, the proceeds of the sale of which were to be paid to those persons who had supplied provisions to Colonel Noble's troops stationed at Grand Pré in 1746-47. The two armed schooners referred to were, probably, the *Anson*, commanded by Captain John Beare, and the *Warren*, of seventy tons, under the command of Captain Jonathan Davis. They proved of great service in assisting to keep the French inhabitants at the head of the Bay of Fundy under some sort of control.

The war which had existed between France and England during the preceding four years was terminated this year by the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, by which the Island of Cape Breton was again restored to the Crown of France. In the autumn several vessels loaded with warlike stores came to Annapolis from Louisburg, and the *Anson* and *Warren* returned to Boston, carrying with them a portion of the auxiliary troops which had been furnished by New England for the defence of the Province during the continuance of the late war.

Peace brought comparative rest to the garrison of the old capital, and the inauguration of a new condition of affairs in Nova Scotia generally. During the several recent investments of Annapolis, many private houses and other buildings had been torn down by the orders of the commander-in-chief, to secure the safety of the fort; and early in 1749 several persons put in claims for compensation for the losses which they had sustained in consequence. Among the claimants are to be found the names of Skene, E. J. Phillips, William Shirreff and John Hamilton. They were instructed to make oath to the amounts of their respective losses, and were assured by Mascarene that he would apply to the parent Government for their payment. The proclamation of the peace was formally published at Annapolis in June, and it now only remained to obtain the submission of the Indians, who, for a time, seemed inclined to continue the strife on their own account.

I have already hinted that the condition of affairs in the colony was about to undergo a considerable change, a change which was destined to affect the interests of the old capital in a very marked manner, and that allusion had reference to the foundation of Halifax, which was

thenceforward to be the seat of government. Soon after the arrival of Cornwallis at Chebucto, Colonel Mascarene, no longer the administrator of the Government, and five members of the Council were summoned to wait upon the new governor at Chebucto Bay, on the shores of which the new capital was proposed to be built. On the 14th of July, 1749, Cornwallis appointed a new Council, among whose names we find that of Mascarene. The first act of this Board was to advise the Governor to summon all the house-joiners, masons, and other mechanics from Annapolis, and to employ them in the construction of the dwellings required for the numerous settlers whom he had brought out from England with him.

The French, having undertaken to build a fort near the mouth of the St. John River, the ship *Albany*, Captain John Rous, and another armed vessel called the *Boston*, of Massachusetts, were ordered to Annapolis, where the commanding officer in charge was required to furnish the soldiers necessary to complete the expedition, which was then to proceed to the St. John, and drive out the French if they should be found there, and destroy their works. Major Erasmus James Phillips now resigned his commission as King's Advocate in the Court of Vice-Admiralty, an office which he had held for twenty years, having been appointed in 1729.

The deputies from the French settlements having been ordered to proceed to the new headquarters to take an unqualified oath of allegiance, arrived at Halifax on the 9th August. Those sent from the Annapolis inhabitants were Alexandre Hébert and Joseph Dugas. On the 24th August Edward How, who had been absent from the Province on service, was resworn as member of the new Council, and sent as a civil commissioner with Rous' expedition to the River St. John, to which he was of great use in negotiating with the Indians in that quarter, whom he succeeded in inducing to renew their old treaty of amity with the English. This renewal took place in Halifax, and Mr. How was sent back with the Indian delegates, the bearer of presents for the sachems who should formally ratify the treaty made on their behalf. Mascarene returned to Annapolis to resume the command there on the 4th of September, and immediately sent a detachment of the garrison consisting of one hundred men, a captain, and two subalterns, to Grand Pré. This act was in obedience to the order of Cornwallis, who also directed that the block-house on Dauphin Street should be taken down and removed to Horton, there to be re-erected, and, with the buildings used as barracks, to be thoroughly palisaded as a protection against possible Indian attacks.

Two vessels, owned respectively by the estate of Winniett* and a Mr. Donnell, of Annapolis, were attacked at Chiegnecto by the Indians,

*Represented by Joseph Winniett, son of the late councillor, William Winniett. His brother Matthew's name appears as a witness to the Indian treaty of 1749.

and in the conflict that ensued seven of the latter and three of the crews were killed. The savages were, therefore, defeated in their purpose and the vessels saved to their owners. It was supposed that the Indians were incited to this outrage by Le Loutre, whose hatred of the English knew no bounds, and seized every possible occasion to manifest itself.

Early in June, 1750, the French of the Annapolis River sent two of their number—Jacques Michel and Charles Préjean—with a petition to Cornwallis, asking leave to retire from the Province, but their request was refused. The memorialists alleged that they "never had considered themselves subjects of the King of New England."

Major Charles Lawrence now became Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment, and was made Lieutenant-Governor of the town of Annapolis, though it is not certain that he ever became a resident there. H.M.S. *Hound*, Captain Dove, while on her way to the northern shores of the Bay of Fundy, had a number of her crew captured while on shore by hostile Indians, and about the same time Captain Rous arrived at Annapolis in command of six sloops which, after taking on board cargoes of supplies from the storehouses, then proceeded to Minas and Chiegnecto for the use of the garrisons at those places. A little later on in the season Rous, who was master of the ship *Albany*, had a spirited fight with an armed French brigantine in the Bay of Fundy, in which he had one midshipman and two seamen killed; the enemy lost five. The action lasted some time and was bravely fought, but resulted in a victory for the gallant Rous, who captured his antagonist and took her into Halifax as a prize—probably the first brought into that place.

It was in this year also that Edward How, so long and conspicuously eminent in this period of our provincial history, met with his unmerited and melancholy death. This lamented event occurred at Chiegnecto on the 15th of October, 1750. It appears that La Corne, who commanded on the north or French side of the Missiguash River, sent an officer with a flag of truce to the river's bank, and asked for a parley with How, who, from the opposite shore, held a conference of some length. At its close, and without the slightest warning, a volley of fire-arms from a party of French and Indians, or of Indians alone, was heard, and he was seen to fall pierced through the heart. The infamy of this cowardly act rests mainly on the priest Le Loutre.* In his despatch to the Lords of Trade and Plantations, Cornwallis calls it "an act of treachery and barbarity not to be paralleled in history," while Murdoch in his work, Vol. II., pp. 193, 194, says:

*Parkman who was very hostile to Le Loutre, says this charge against him, universally believed, "has not been proved." ("A Half Century of Conflict," p. 197.) Most authorities agree that no French were directly concerned.—[Ed.]

"The esteem he won while living, the general usefulness of his conduct as an early founder of our colony, and the cruel circumstances of his death commend his memory to us, who enjoy peaceful, prosperous homes, for the security and comfort of which we are bound to be grateful to those who pioneered the way in the earlier periods under many and serious disadvantages."

In July the sloop *New Casco*, Captain Taggart, was sent to Annapolis with provisions and other stores, which were to be forwarded to Chiegnecto by another ship, while the former was to convey Colonel Mascarene to Boston, to which place he had been ordered to assist Governor Shirley in a negotiation with the hostile Indians for the renewal of a general peace. Returning in September, the *New Casco*, the *Ulysses* and *Lawrence* were employed in the transport of the needful supplies to the garrisons up the bay.

Fort Lawrence was now (1752) directed to be repaired, for which purpose palisades and all necessary materials and implements were ordered to be forwarded from Annapolis, which seems to have been used as a convenient depot from which to supply the wants of the forts and garrisons in the Bay of Fundy districts. This summer witnessed a fashionable wedding in the old capital. Owing to the absence of a clergyman, the Governor granted a license to John Handfield, the military commander of the fort and Justice of the Peace for the Province, to perform the marital rites for his daughter Mary Handfield, and John Hamilton, a lieutenant in the 40th, now Cornwallis' regiment, who had some time before been made a prisoner by the Indians and carried to Quebec, and who had recently been ransomed from his captivity. The garrison had no chaplain at this time, and there was no Protestant clergyman in the county. Des Enclaves was the priest of the French people, and continued to be their spiritual adviser until their forcible expulsion in 1755.

In November, 1753, Captain Handfield was notified that the administration of the public affairs had devolved upon the Honourable Charles Lawrence, in the absence of Governor Hopson, who had gone to England, being in ill health, and in consequence unable longer to remain at his post. Erasmus J. Phillips continued to live at Annapolis, where he acted as Commissary of Musters. The town was now often visited by the sloops, which were employed by the Government in carrying provisions and munitions of war to the various garrisons, and in conveying the officers of the garrison and their families from and to the fort as necessity or occasion required. The Indians, excited by Le Loutre, still remained hostile, and continued their depredations upon the English inhabitants, keeping them in a continual state of alarm and anxiety.

In the following year Monsieur du Chambon du Verger became commandant at Beau Séjour. He was the son of Du Chambon, who

conducted the defence of Louisburg, in 1745, and was a lineal descendant of Anne Latour, that lady having been his grandmother. His father was married at Port Royal in 1709—the year before its surrender to Nicholson. Some of the French settlers of the Annapolis valley went to aid Du Chambon in completing the fort above named, contrary to the orders of the Council, and the deputies of the district were ordered to furnish the names of those who had done so.

The grand event in the history of these unfortunate people is now at hand; its shadow has even fallen upon them; a few months more and their sad fate will have overtaken them, and the homesteads, which they had loved so well, will have passed from their proprietorship and occupancy forever. It had been resolved by Cornwallis that as soon as proper provisions were made for the safety, comfort and government of the people of the new colony at Halifax, the French should be called upon to subscribe an *unqualified* oath of allegiance to the Crown of England. He accordingly required them to send deputies to meet him and his Council, in July, 1749, when he told them His Majesty's pleasure concerning them should be made known. Alexandre Hébert and Joseph Dugas, having been chosen by the Annapolis *habitans*, met the Council on the 31st July, and stated, in conjunction with the deputies from the other settlements, that they would take the oath required if a clause exempting them from bearing arms in case of war should be introduced into it as before, and the free exercise of their faith be guaranteed. His Excellency and the Council, while willing to concede the latter request, firmly declared to them that they would be required to take an oath without a clause of exemption or limitation.

In May, 1750, Charles Préjean and Jacques Michel, of Annapolis Royal, presented a petition from the people of that district, asking leave to retire from the Province. These men were not deputies, and having refused to state why the memorial was not presented by those officers instead of themselves, the petition was not received; but Cornwallis sent a paper to them, in the French language, in which he stated to them the following facts: "We know that a forced service is worth nothing, and that a subject compelled to be so against his will, is not very far from being an enemy. . . . This Province is your country; you and your fathers have cultivated it; naturally you ought yourselves to enjoy the fruits of your labour. . . . You know that we have done everything to secure you, not only the occupation of your lands, but their ownership forever." The paper deserves to be transcribed in full, but its great length renders its transcription impossible. It assigns reasons why leave to quit the country should not be granted to the petitioners, and urges upon them the duty of becoming faithful servants and subjects of the Crown of Great Britain, and assures them

that their best interests demand such a course. But all the influences of argument and reason, as well as of ease and self-interest, were rendered nugatory by the counsels of their priests and other advisers, who assured their simple flocks that France was about to retake the Province, when they would be relieved from the evils under which they now groaned, and made forever secure from the rule of their conquerors. They therefore refused to accept the terms required by the Governor and Council until it was too late to avoid the disastrous consequences.

The first intimation of an intention to *remove* the French from their lands and homes occurs in Lawrence's letter to the Lords of Trade, under date of August 1st, 1754. In this despatch he writes :

"They have not for a long time brought anything to our markets, but, on the other hand, have carried everything to the French and Indians, whom they have always assisted with provisions, quarters and intelligence ; and, indeed, while they remain without taking the oath of allegiance (which they never will do till they are forced), and have incendiary French priests among them, there is no hope of their amendment. As they possess the best and largest tracts of land in the Province, it cannot be settled while they remain in this situation, and though I would be very far from attempting such a step without your lordships' approbation, yet I cannot help being of opinion that it would be much better, if they refused the oath, *that they were away.*"

On the 13th of July, 1755, the deputies of the French of the valley of Annapolis, with those of the people of the other settlements, assembled in obedience to the orders of Lawrence, to be informed of the final determination of the Government regarding them ; and on the 25th the Governor laid before the Council, and Admirals Mostyn and Boscawen, a memorial signed by 207 of the inhabitants of Annapolis and vicinity. In this document the petitioners say :

"We unanimously agreed to deliver up our fire-arms to Mr. Handfield, our worthy commander, although we have not had any desire to make use of them against His Majesty's Government. We have therefore nothing to reproach ourselves with, either on that subject, or on the subject of the fidelity that we owe to His Majesty's Government. For, sir, we can assure your Excellency that several of us have risked our lives to give information to the Government concerning the enemy, and have, also, when necessary, laboured with all our heart on the repairs of Fort Annapolis, and on other works considered necessary by the Government, and are ready to continue with the same fidelity. We have also selected thirty men to proceed to Halifax, whom we shall recommend to do and say nothing contrary to His Majesty's Council ; but we shall charge them strictly to contract no new oath. We are resolved to adhere to that which we have taken, and to which we have been faithful so far as circumstances required it ; for the enemies of His Majesty have urged us to take up arms against the Government, but we have taken care not to do so."

The deputies, who were the bearers of this memorial, were called before the Council and asked what more they had to say. They

unanimously replied that they "appeared on behalf of themselves, and all the other inhabitants of Annapolis River, and would not take any oath other than what they had taken;" adding that "if they were to be forced to leave their lands they hoped to be allowed a convenient time for their departure."

At this conference many questions were put and answered, and reasons urged to induce the petitioners to compliance; but they were determined to adhere to their resolution. They were told that if they now refused to accept the oath "they would never after be permitted to take it, but would infallibly lose their possessions." They were then given until the next Monday at ten of the clock to consider the matter; but on the expiration of the time they announced that they had not changed their minds, and were resolved to adhere to their determination. Then it was, after this final resolution was thus defiantly affirmed, that their expatriation was decided upon, and the following Letter of Instructions drawn up and sent to the commandants of the garrisons at Annapolis, Chiegnecto, Piziquid, Minas and Cobequid. The following is the text of that sent to Handfield at Annapolis. It is dated at Halifax, August 11th, 1755:

"Instructions for Major John Handfield, commanding His Majesty's garrison of Annapolis Royal in relation to the transportation of the inhabitants of the districts of Annapolis River and the other French inhabitants out of the Province of Nova Scotia.

"Sir,—Having in my letter of the 31st July last made you acquainted with the reasons which induced His Majesty's Council to come to the resolution of sending away the French inhabitants, and clearing the whole country of such bad subjects, it only remains for me to give you the necessary orders for the putting in practice what has been so solemnly determined.

"That the inhabitants may not have it in their power to return to this province nor to join in strengthening the French in Canada or Louisburg, it is resolved that they should be dispersed among His Majesty's subjects in the colonies upon the Continent of America. For this purpose transports are ordered to be sent from Boston to Annapolis to ship on board one thousand persons, reckoning two persons to a ton; and for Chiegnecto, transports have been taken up *here* to carry off the inhabitants of that place; and for those of the districts around Minas Basin transports are ordered from Boston.

"As Annapolis is the last place where the transports will depart from, any of the vessels that may not receive their full complement up the bay will be ordered there; and Colonel Winslow, with his detachment, will follow by land and bring up what stragglers may be met with to ship on board at your place.

"Upon the arrivals of the vessels from Boston in the Basin of Annapolis, as many of the inhabitants of Annapolis District as can be collected by any means, particularly the heads of families and young men, are to be shipped on board at the above rate of two passengers to a ton, or as near it as possible. The tonnage of the vessels to be ascertained by the charter-parties which the master will furnish you with an account of.

"And to give you all the ease possible respecting the victualling of these transports, I have appointed Mr. George Saul to act as agent victualler upon this occasion,

and have given him particular instructions for that purpose, with a copy of which he will furnish you upon his arrival at Annapolis Royal, from Chiegnecto, with the provisions for victualling the whole transports. But in case you should have shipped any of the inhabitants before his arrival, you will order five pounds of flour and one pound of pork to be delivered to each so shipped, to last for seven days, and so on till Mr. Saul's arrival, and it will be replaced by him into the stores from what he has on board the provision vessels for that purpose.

"Destination of the inhabitants of Annapolis River, and of the transports ordered to Annapolis Basin:

"To be sent to Philadelphia, such a number of vessels as will transport three hundred persons.

"To be sent to New York, such a number of vessels as will transport two hundred persons.

"To be sent to Connecticut, such a number of vessels (whereof the sloop *Dove*, Samuel Forbes, is to be one) as will transport three hundred persons; and

"To Boston, such a number of vessels as will transport two hundred persons (or rather more in proportion to the Province of Connecticut), should the number to ship off exceed a thousand persons.

"When the people are embarked you will please to give the master of each vessel one of the letters (of which you will receive a number signed by me), which you will address to the Governor of the Province, or the Commander-in-chief for the time being, where they are to be put on shore, and endorse them on the printed form of the certificate to be granted to the masters of the vessels, to entitle them to their hire as agreed upon by their charter-party; and with these you will give each of the masters their sailing orders in writing to proceed according to the above destination, and upon their arrival immediately to wait on the Governor or Commander-in-chief of the provinces to which they are bound with the said letters, and to make all possible despatch in debarking their passengers, and obtaining certificates thereof agreeable to the form aforesaid; and you will in these orders make it a particular injunction to the said masters to be as careful and watchful as possible during the whole course of the passage, to prevent the passengers making any attempt to seize upon the vessels, by allowing only a small number to be upon the decks at one time, and all other necessary precautions to prevent the bad consequences of such attempts; and that they be particularly careful that the inhabitants carry no arms, nor other offensive weapons on board with them at their embarkation, as also that they see the provisions regularly issued to the people agreeable to the allowance proportioned in Mr. George Saul's instructions.

"You will use all the means necessary for collecting the people together, so as to get them on board. If you find that fair means will not do it with them, you must proceed by the most vigorous measures possible, not only in compelling them to embark, but in depriving those who escape of all means of shelter or support, by burning their houses and destroying everything that may afford them the means of subsistence in the country; and if you have not force sufficient to perform this service, Colonel Winslow, at Minas, or the commanding officer there, will, upon your application, send you a proper reinforcement.

"You will see by the charter-parties of the vessels taken up at Boston, that they are hired by the month, wherefore I am to desire that you will use all possible despatch to save expense to the public.

"As soon as the people are shipped and the transports are ready (to sail) you will acquaint the commander of His Majesty's ship therewith, that he take them under convoy, and put to sea without loss of time."

These instructions were successfully carried out by Major Handfield, and the month of October witnessed the departure of the last ship with its freight of unsubmitting Frenchmen. The vessels employed in the transportation of these unfortunates from their homes and the land of their nativity were :

1. The sloop *Sarah and Molley*, James Purrinton, master, which carried the number assigned to her to Virginia.

2. The sloop *Three Friends*, James Carlile, master, whose living freight was landed in Philadelphia. This vessel was owned by Thomas Curtis, and was employed four months, at thirty-six pounds, sixteen shillings per month.

3. The sloop *Hannah*, Richard Adams, master and owner. She also landed her cargo at Philadelphia.

4. The sloop *Swan*, Jonathan Loviett, master and owner. She had been chartered at forty-four pounds, sixteen shillings a month, and was employed during three months and one-half. Her passengers were also landed in Philadelphia.

5. The ship *Hopson*, Edward Whitewood, master, and was the largest vessel engaged in this service. She was owned by James Griffin, and was the last to sail from Annapolis, having left that port in October. She was paid for six months' employment at seventy-seven pounds per month. Her cargo was taken to South Carolina.

Very little is known of the occurrences that marked the collecting together and embarkation of these people. There can be no reasonable doubt, however, that they did not differ materially from those which took place at Grand Pré, Chiegnecto and elsewhere. Even the traditions of this event, which were more or less familiar to the second and third generations succeeding it, have faded away and disappeared, though the descendants of some of the families whose progenitors were eye-witnesses of it, or actors in it—as the Eassons and Lecains—yet survive and continue to reside in the county. Traditional memories of it may, and probably do, exist among the French people of Digby and Yarmouth, for its occurrences were, by their nature and circumstances, calculated to make a deeper and more lasting impression upon those who endured their hardships than upon those who caused them.

Thomas Miller in his "Historical and Genealogical Record" of the County of Colchester (p. 8), in relating the story of a French girl who had escaped being shipped with the Cobequid people, and who, under the guidance of a friendly Indian, had been waiting in the forests for a month on the north shores of the basin for a favourable chance to make her escape to the settlements on the Miramichi, says: "At length they were joined by about twenty of the French inhabitants who had escaped from Annapolis. These persons informed them that the houses and crops

in Annapolis were burnt by the soldiers who were sent up the river to bring them into the ships. Some fled to the woods; some, besides this party, crossed the bay intending to go to Miramichi through the woods."

Notwithstanding all the measures adopted and means used, it is certain that a considerable number of the Annapolis *habitans* avoided capture. Lawrence informed Shirley, in a letter addressed to him in the following February, that "about five hundred of the inhabitants are still lurking about the woods;" and some of these were, undoubtedly, in hiding near the valley which had, till so recently, been the scene of their labours and of their alleged disloyalty.

In the spring of 1756, a vessel laden with provisions, which she was in the act of conveying from Boston to Annapolis, was captured by the Indians in Passamaquoddy Bay, an event which Shirley tells Lawrence is "a very unfortunate affair, as it will yield the French and their Indians a very considerable support." He trusted that the sloop of war *Vulture*, then cruising in the Bay of Fundy, might succeed in recapturing her, but it does not appear that his hopes were gratified in that respect.

General Amhurst now informed Lawrence that he had ordered two hundred and fifty provincial troops to be sent to Annapolis to enable it to resist any attack that might be attempted during the summer by those of the French who still remained in the colony. That a sufficient number of them had been left to cause apprehension of such an event seems to be a fact, and one which was fraught with no degree of pleasure to the administrator of the Government, for in a letter to the Lords of Trade, dated in March, 1757, he says: "We are extremely sorry to find that, notwithstanding the great expense which the public has been at in removing the French inhabitants, there should yet be enough of them remaining to disturb the settlements and to interrupt and obstruct our parties passing from one place to another; it is certainly very much to be wished that they could be entirely driven out of the peninsula."

A new condition of affairs was, however, soon to be brought about, by which all fears from this source were to be finally and fully allayed. A venturous and hardy band of immigrants from the older colonies will soon take possession of the lands of the old French proprietors—a band of men who would, when necessary, be ready and able to defend themselves and their new homes against all enemies—of men by whose strong arms and indomitable wills many a wilderness should be made "to blossom as the rose," and become centres of peace, security and wealth. But the events developed by this change, and those which attended it, shall be recounted in future chapters.

CHAPTER IX.

By the Editor.

The seizure and dispersion of the Acadians reviewed and considered.

WE have seen that our author closed his history of the county at large, in order to take up that of its townships and settlements separately, at the point of time marked by the event known in history, by a not very correct terminology, as "the expulsion of the Acadians." I say, not very correct, because an expulsion means a driving out, and they cannot be said to have been driven out who were always, in the contingency which arose, willing, nay, anxious to go! With the clearer light thrown on that event by the more recent discovery or, at least, publication of documents and relations long unknown to the general reader,* it does not seem expedient for me to pass by the subject without some further comment, even at the risk of advancing some opinions and asserting some conclusions at variance with those of the esteemed author. Governor Lawrence, first, by an arbitrary fiat, and without assigning to them any reason, deprived the Acadians of all their arms, which they surrendered with prompt obedience to the officers charged to receive them. Then he summoned fifteen delegates from their settlements to a conference on the subject of an unqualified oath of allegiance to the King of England, and on the refusal of these delegates, after considerable discussion, to agree to this proposal without first going back and consulting their constituents, they were immediately thrust into prison, on George's Island. After this they offered for themselves to take the oath, but were told it was too late; and were kept confined until the transportation and dispersion of their families and neighbours, planned by the Governor, had been accomplished. Then they themselves were similarly shipped away to a

* Haliburton, when writing his history, complains that documents bearing on this subject were not to be found in the archives at Halifax, "as if the parties to it were, as they well might be, ashamed of the transaction" (Vol. I., p. 196). Even friendly critics have recently questioned this statement, but its truth has been abundantly proven by Richard, in his "Acadia: Missing Links in a Lost Chapter of American History." See particularly Vol. II., pp. 104, 105, 146. Despatches are found without the replies, and *vice versa*. *Id.* Vol. II., pp. 42, 46, 47, 302; see also Vol. I., p. 169. Akins published in the archives duplicates found in London of originals that ought to have been in Halifax.

destination not dependent on those to which their families and relatives might have been sent. After the imprisonment of these first delegates a fresh summons was issued for one hundred more to attend—a very large number, the object of which the Acadians could not divine. But the call was, as usual, promptly responded to, and among the hundred were thirty from Annapolis, whose reply to Governor Lawrence's demand we have just read. In none of the interviews between these bodies of delegates and the Governor and Council does it appear that the latter ever cited any specific instances disproving the allegations made by the Acadians in their own defence. The Governor dealt vaguely in severe charges of a general nature against the Acadians as a body, their uselessness as subjects, their alleged sympathy with the enemy, their motives and their sincerity. Overawed, abashed and terrified by the invectives of their powerful accuser, everything they advanced treated as an insult to the Government, the delegates, as might be expected, stood mute before the Council, and did not even venture to plead the highly meritorious services their people had rendered to the Crown at the garrison of Annapolis during Du Vivier's siege and on other occasions; and the hundred, after stating that their constituents were willing to give up their lands and migrate rather than take an oath which would compel them to bear arms against their kindred, and requesting reasonable time to remove from the country, were, in their turn, imprisoned, as their predecessors were, to be shortly shipped away in the same manner, all the delegates from the several settlements being sent to North Carolina, and their wives and children to Pennsylvania, New York, Connecticut and Massachusetts.* Little dreamed they when they left their families to proceed on the important mission to which they had been invited, that the separation was to be eternal, except by mere chance, and after years of wandering with no clue to guide them to the missing ones, and that the call to Halifax of the chiefs of the people was only designed to render those left behind, already disarmed, more helpless to resist or escape the supreme crisis that was awaiting the doomed settlements. In this county the order to deprive any who might escape the capture of all means of shelter and subsistence by burning their habitations, was rigidly executed.† Instructions were not given that whole families should be taken as much as possible together; the order to ship off the heads of families and young men by the first transports was inconsistent with any such mingling of humane methods in a most inhuman transaction, and we have no means of knowing whether the humanity of the commandant at Annapolis prompted

* See Nova Scotia Archives, p. 280, and *ante*, Chap. VIII., p. 120.

† Haliburton's "History of Nova Scotia," Vol. I., p. 181, note. Miller's "Colchester County," quoted *ante*, p. 121.

him to make the effort to that end, that Colonel Winslow professed to make, but did not accomplish, at Grand Pré. We have no reason to imagine that he was less sensitive to the nature of the proceeding in which he was engaged than the New England colonel; but, as an officer, his duty was to obey without question the order of his superiors, as the duty of his subalterns and men was to obey his. The Honourable (afterwards Sir) Brooke Watson, who superintended the seizure and deportation of some Acadians at Baie Verte, speaks of his share in the transaction in a letter of July 1st, 1771, to Rev. Dr. Brown, with great pain. His orders were to burn the Acadian town, and he says he fears that "some families in that place were divided and sent to different parts of the globe."* It is notorious that families were separated into fragments in every settlement, mothers from babes in arms excepted; the contrary would not have comported with the policy of the measure, which was not simply to remove or drive the Acadians to new homes, but to forever and entirely deprive them of homes. Anxious themselves to remove if afforded the opportunity, the object of Governor Lawrence was to extinguish and annihilate them as a people. The intention was that they should be landed in as small groups as their aggregate numbers would permit, on the shores of the various North American colonies, where such of them as were able must be compelled to work in order to live, while their children would be apprenticed, as pauper children are, and necessarily in English and Protestant households, where they would perforce lose their nationality, their religion and their language.† This feature of the case reminds one of the shipments to New England and reduction into slavery among the colonists, of the Scotch prisoners whom Cromwell captured at the battle of Dunbar, in 1650, and a further large consignment of similar unfortunates in the following year. The details of all the subsequent treatment of the neutrals were left to the authorities of the various provinces in which they were to be landed, the governors being instructed by circulars from Governor Lawrence "to receive and dispose of them in such manner as may best answer *our design in preventing their reunion.*" The reader will remark, not their *return* merely, but their reunion as well. It required the genius of a Longfellow to portray in strains of song, but anyone can imagine, the story of "Evangeline," and of many Evangelines; and the actual

* Nova Scotia Hist. Soc. Coll., Vol. II., pp. 131, 132.

† On inquiring for entries relating to my own name in the records of a Massachusetts town, I was furnished with the death of "Mary Savory, French neutral, pauper, very aged." What a tale did it not suggest! Sudden descent from happy competency to degrading want, and fruitless searches by friends and relatives. Will the recent apologists say what crime this woman had committed to call down this terrible retribution? Can it be found in the "letters of French governors," of "bishops and priests," and "military and naval and civil servants of the French Crown," mentioned in Nova Scotia Hist. Soc. Coll., Vol. VII., p. 132 Here I may remark that I am not of Acadian or any other French descent.

sufferings and cruel lot of the venerable and loyal Réné le Blanc* appeals with resistless force to our sentiments of justice and the instincts of humanity. We cannot follow the wretched and heart-broken exiles in their dispersion, nor recount the deaths on the way, nor speculate on the deaths from diseases, contracted in crowded holds of vessels, where no sanitary or even decent arrangements could be provided or were attempted; the deaths from hardships and privations afterwards, and the lingering and in some cases life-long agony of separated members of a family inquiring and searching for each other throughout the continent, among an alien people for the most part unsympathetic or indifferent; and the almost interminable journeys of detached groups, wholly destitute, seeking to make their way to some place of rest among people congenial in language and religion, or disposed to extend sympathy and charity to a robbed and ruined people. The mortality resulting from this measure exceeded many fold that of the massacre of Glencoe, to which in so many aspects it may be likened. But, one fell and fatal stroke began and soon ended the horrors of that ghastly night in the valley of the Cona, whereas the wretched relics of a cargo of Acadian exiles, decimated by disease, were refused a landing on the coast of an Atlantic colony, where the feast of death might have been stayed, while more than one ship with her living freight foundered and went down in mid-ocean, mercifully extinguishing the sufferings of many a victim, but aggravating the misery of kins-people, who, ignorant of their fate, sought traces and tidings of the perished ones till hope with life itself was closed. A wail like that which arose from the bracken on that winter morning of woe, broke forth sixty-five years later beneath the blaze of a September sun in the scenes amidst which I now write, and as if dissevered into repeated and multiple echoes, assailed the ears and challenged the sympathy of man in every settled portion of the American continent and the islands adjacent. As occasional efforts are made in these days to justify or find a plausible excuse for a transaction condemned from the first by the universal judgment and conscience of mankind, a brief review of it will not be out of place in these pages. American writers of the last generation were in the habit of treating the episode as a characteristic piece of British tyranny. Sabine, presuming the responsibility of the British Government and the motive to vindicate "the majesty of England," says that "deeds of darker hue have seldom been done." It is a noticeable coincidence that as more searching investigations revealed gradually the fact that the

* Réné le Blanc's loyalty had been thoroughly tried and proved, and he had suffered much from the hostile French and Indians for his service to the Crown. At a very advanced age he was landed in New York with his wife and two youngest children, the remaining eighteen of the latter being scattered all over the seaboard colonies.

scheme originated with Colonel Lawrence, the Governor at Halifax, aided and supported by a Council of four, of whom three* at least were Bostonians, and that the British Government were not only innocent of all complicity in it, but ignorant even of any such purpose until after its complete execution, a change came gradually over the sentiments of this class of critics, notably exemplified in Parkman's brilliant and seductive pages. Dr. H. Y. Hind,† of Windsor, a few years ago copied from the archives of the State House at Boston, a document never previously referred to by writers on the subject, which I here publish for the first time in permanent form.‡ It is the substance of a petition from the Legislature of Massachusetts to the king, dated January 31st, 1750. First expressing "sincere and hearty thanks" for the protection afforded His Majesty's dominions on this continent, it proceeds:

"Your Majesty's subjects in this province were greatly surprised when they were informed that the French had presumed to lay claim, not only to the greater part of the Province of Nova Scotia, but also to a part of the territorys granted by the royal charter of King William and Queen Mary to the inhabitants of this province.

"We saw with concern the projections of the French to extend their settlements on the back of your Majesty's colonies from the mouth of the Mississippi as far north as the River St. Lawrence, but we had no apprehension that they would endeavour in any other way than by force of arms to separate your Majesty's possessions on the sea-coast. It is highly probable that they are very much encouraged to the groundless and unreasonable claim and attempt by the absurd neutrality challenged by the French inhabitants of your Majesty's Province of Nova Scotia, who are always ready to receive and supply the troops sent thither in the pay and service of the French Crown, and who encouraged the native Indians in their bigotry to the French religion and interest, and we have great reason to suppose that those inhabitants want not the inclination, but wait for a favourable opportunity to declare themselves the subjects of the French King; which would give them the possession of a country to which we humbly conceive he has not a shadow of right; and this might in time prove of the most fatal consequence to your Majesty's interests in America; and we doubt not that they would have revolted from your Majesty in the last war, if it had not been for the signal favour of Divine Providence in the early reduction of Cape Breton by your New England troops, and the remarkable and repeated preservation of the garrison of Annapolis Royal by the forces sent from this province. But such extraordinary events may not always be presumed on; and we humbly hope that we may be indulged in earnestly entreating your Majesty that so dangerous a neighbour, and such uncertain and precarious subjects may be compelled to leave your Majesty's dominions or be reduced to a more perfect obedience to your Majesty's crown."

* Benjamin Green, great-uncle of the accomplished President of the Massachusetts Historical Society; John Rous, previously master of a Boston privateer, and Jonathan Belcher, son of a governor of Massachusetts. Cotterell's origin I do not know. With all deference I cannot see any ground for the blame that His Grace Archbishop O'Brien imputes to the "Loyalists" for this act. ("Memoirs of Bp. Burke," p. 51.) Surely here is an anachronism quite unworthy of so distinguished an authority.

† Author of a History of King's College, etc.

‡ From a Halifax paper in which Dr. Hind published it.

This address, ignoring the fact that the neutrals had resolutely refused to supply the troops "sent in the pay and service of the French Crown," and stating what its authors have reason to suppose and "doubt not," breathes the spirit of the times among our New England ancestors in that day of religious bigotry and international animosity, but we must not from its tenor too hastily judge that the Assembly contemplated the measure actually adopted, or would have approved of it, if it had been presented for consideration in all its naked deformity; although the removal of the Acadians in a body to Canada, where they would have been unhampered by any oath of neutrality, would certainly only have transferred the apprehended dangers to the colonies farther north and west. But wherever they might choose to go, the Acadians had warning that if, after the oath they had taken, they were found voluntarily in arms against the English, they would be shot without mercy.

To compel the Acadians to leave the Province, however, was one thing, but such compulsion was never in the slightest degree necessary, and what was done under the name of the "expulsion of the Acadians" was another and quite a different thing. Men reason with cogency that people who would not take the usual oath of allegiance and become to all intents bound by the obligations of citizenship to the Government of the country they lived in, could not expect to be permitted to live in it; and the misinformed, who are still many, think that this argument applies to the case of the Acadians. It is assumed that they advanced the very unreasonable demand that they should be allowed to remain in the country as neutrals and not as subjects; and that not being willing to leave the country they were simply captured by strategy and expelled by force. It will be still quite new to many who read these pages, that it was not by their own choice, but that of the Government and its representatives in Nova Scotia, that they remained; and that they persistently sought to avail themselves of the privilege of removal guaranteed to them by the treaty, and were as persistently prevented. A few who had lived in the *banlieue* were permitted to sell out and depart, and some managed to make good their escape in the autumn of 1749, after Cornwallis' declaration. Governor Lawrence, even after his conception of the plan for their destruction, wrote thus: "I believe that a very large part of the inhabitants would submit to *any terms rather than take up arms on either side.*" It is not, therefore, with any question of the expulsion of the Acadians that we have to deal, but with their annihilation as a race or nationality attempted, and with partial success, and untold misery and ruin to the victims, by Governor Lawrence.

If the British or the Colonial Government had (in effect) said to the Acadians, "Since we have for a generation and a half striven in vain to make British subjects of you, and we now despair of success, and your

continuance in the country bound only by the oath you took at the hands of Governor Phillipps, is a bar to our policy of making this, to all intents and purposes, a Protestant and English-speaking colony, and is inconsistent with the honour and dignity of the nation, therefore you must now sell your lands and go within one (or two) years (or forfeit your lands and go if the promise of Queen Anne was to be ignored), taking with you all your personal effects, or their proceeds, and you are to do all this within the time limited on pain of forfeiture of everything," the contention of those who defend what did take place would have been appropriate and applicable, although in the light of previous events, much still could have been urged on the other side. As for the argument drawn from the asserted national peril, it is a dangerous one, for it might with the same plausibility have been adduced in favour of a general massacre of their able-bodied men in cold blood. There was probably no period in the history of the Acadians from the surrender of Port Royal to the time of their dispersion, when they could not have been sent to Cape Breton. A few who, in spite of the devices contrived to detain them, escaped to that island, about the time of the arrival of Cornwallis, not satisfied with the country and their prospects, came back as far as Halifax in 1754, and presented themselves before Governor Lawrence. After requiring an excuse for their conduct in "quitting their lands," he accepted from them the oath of allegiance, which they took cheerfully and without qualification, and sent them to their old homes, hoping their return would have a good effect in inducing the others to remain.* These were seized and dispersed with the rest, and so were the family of Prudent Robichau, the Justice of the Peace at Annapolis, whose loyalty was never questioned.

In order to correctly understand the matter we must go back to the terms of the Treaty of Utrecht, in 1713, and the events that followed it during the intervening period of forty-two years. By that treaty the Acadians were allowed the option either to take the oath of allegiance and become British subjects within a year, or to leave the country and go where they pleased, forfeiting, of course, their lands, but taking with them their movable effects. Later in the same year, in return for concessions made to the Queen of England on behalf of certain of his Protestant subjects by Louis XIV. King of France, it was agreed between the two sovereigns that the Acadians might retain their lands, or sell them if they saw fit to remove rather than take the oath of allegiance and remain. The Acadians with great unanimity preferred to go with or without the concession specially made by Queen Anne, but a policy of keeping them in the country, against their wills, prevailed, and being in violation of the pledged faith of the Crown, was the first criminal error, bringing all the

* Nova Scotia Archives, p. 228.

subsequent ones in its train. On this point Governor Shirley, of Massachusetts, who in 1755 was commander-in-chief of the armies against France in British North America, wrote on November 21st, 1746, to the Duke of Newcastle, British Secretary of State:

"It is indeed now to be wished that General Nicholson had upon the first reduction of the colony removed the French inhabitants, when they were but a few, and that during the interval of peace the colony had been planted by Protestant subjects; but after their having remained so long in the country upon the footing of British subjects under the sanction of the Treaty of Utrecht, and making improvements on their lands for one or two generations, and being grown up into such a number of families, to drive them off their settlements without further inquiry seems to be liable to many objections. Among others it may be doubted whether under the circumstances of the inhabitants it would clearly appear to be a just usage."

The objection of the Acadians to taking the required oath was that it would render them liable to take up arms when required against their kinsfolk and coreligionists. Whenever renewed expression was given to their resolution to depart rather than take this oath, then, with great tact and policy, the pressure on them to take it would be withdrawn for a time, and meanwhile every possible device was resorted to that would prevent their getting away. In 1714 the oath was tendered them, but without any show of compulsion or threat of evil consequences if they refused it. Major Caulfield, Lieutenant-Governor at Annapolis, reported this refusal to the English Government, but urged the great desirability of keeping them in the country, saying, "In case ye Acadians quit us we shall never be able to maintain or protect our English familys from ye insults of ye Indians," and spoke of the cattle and other provisions by which they could supply the fort. France, relying on the honour of the nation and the efficacy of the Queen's promise, sent Captains De la Ronde Denys and De Pensens to Annapolis, to arrange for their removal, but they had to put up with the excuse from Colonel Nicholson, that it would be necessary for him to confer with the authorities at London before anything could be done, thus consuming the time allowed for their departure; Nicholson at the same time treacherously assuring the French commissioners that they might implicitly and in perfect security rely on Queen Anne's promise, while he was treating both it and the treaty with contempt,* and preparing to tell them by and by that the time limited by the treaty for their departure had expired.

In the month after Captain De Pensens' report to his Government we find Governor Vetch, in a letter to the Lords of Trade and Plantations, protesting in strong terms against allowing the Acadians to leave

* Parkman's "Half Century of Conflict," Vol. I., pp. 187, 188.

the country. Difficulties of an insuperable nature had from the first been placed by the authorities in the way of their transporting themselves by water. French ships were not allowed to enter, and they built small vessels for the purpose, but the outfits for them were not allowed to be landed.* Governor Phillipps when he assumed charge, threatened them that if they refused to take the oath they must go in four months, and carry away with them only a miserably trifling portion of their effects; and their election to leave even under these terms being repeated, again he cautiously withdrew the pressure, but when they attempted to open a road, in order to go away overland, he promptly stopped them, and arrested any individuals or families who attempted to straggle away unobserved. In 1720 the Acadians appealed for help to get away to the Governor of Cape Breton, as they had before the treaty to the Governor of Canada. At length a device was hit upon by Governor Phillipps, or Armstrong, his lieutenant, which seemed to meet the emergency of the case, preserving to the English the advantage of the continued residence of the Acadians in the country, and at the same time relieving their consciences from the burden of an obligation which they feared might involve them in fratricidal strife, or bring down on them the summary and dreadful vengeance of the Indians, from whom the English were unable to protect them. A condition was added to the ordinary oath of allegiance exempting them from being called on to take up arms. Hence they were afterwards styled "neutrals." The reasons for retaining them in the country in violation of the terms of the treaty were these: First, if they settled in any French colony, they might reinforce the enemy in case of war with France; and, second, their abode in the Province was exceedingly useful to the Government. They formed, while they remained, what is familiarly called in the modern phraseology of statecraft, a sort of "buffer state" between Annapolis, the seat of English authority, and the territory still under French control, beyond Beaubassin and the Misseguash, and between the English and the Indians. From them the necessary supplies had to be drawn for the Annapolis garrison, and materials for the repairs and maintenance of the fort, and their labours at these repairs were equally indispensable. They were also relied on to give warning to the English of any signs of an attack by French or Indians. They warned Noble of a probable attack on him at Grand Pré, but he, deeming it impossible for an enemy to reach him during the deep snow of the season, treated their apprehensions with levity.† Undoubted records show that the most severe threats by agents

* Parkman's "Half Century of Conflict," Vol. I., p. 188.

† The approaching enemy interrupted the usual communications, which aroused the suspicion of the neutrals, who communicated them to Noble. (Murdoch, Vol. II., p. 106.)

of the French Government to hand them over to the merciless revenge of the Indians failed to shake their resolution to withhold from Du Vivier the use of their arms and ammunition when, relying on their active aid, he laid siege to the fort. "We live under a mild and tranquil government," replied the Acadians to the threats of the French commander, "and we have all good reason to be faithful to it." Mascarene, on the other hand, in a despatch to Governor Shirley, testified to the alacrity and cheerfulness with which they not only supplied the materials, but worked at the repairs of the fort, "to the very day preceding the attack," and in four other letters and despatches he acknowledged his obligation to the Acadians for the salvation of the fort in this critical emergency.* As to the general discharge of the novel and delicate duties of the neutrality which had been imposed on them, we may take as many different views of it as there were successive governors ruling them, for no two of these tell the same story. As it was impossible for the people themselves to assume such chameleon-like changes of character and deportment, we must look for a solution of the difficulty to the character and temper of the respective governors themselves. They had a friend in the gracious and graceful, but brave-hearted soldier, Mascarene, and in Hopson, the predecessor of Lawrence; stern but not oppressive rulers in Vetch, Phillipps and Cornwallis; suspicious and unrelenting enemies in Nicholson, the treacherous and mean enemy of Vetch and a coarse tyrant to his own people, and in Armstrong† and Lawrence. For nearly half a century were they teased and harassed by such a succession of rulers, alternately using, according to their several tempers, blandishments, severity and menace, but all animated by one purpose,—to make them take an oath of unqualified allegiance if possible, but to retain them in the country whether or no. Their disposition to submit to extreme terms rather than subscribe to the required oath proves the transcendant importance they attached to such an oath, and would of itself indicate that fidelity to a sworn obligation was a ruling feature of their character. And their conduct as a whole in fulfilling the requirements of the oath which they had taken amply justifies the conclusion which their remarkable scrupulousness suggests. The statement of Parkman, that they would neither leave the country nor take the oath, is contradicted by every record bearing on the question, and is the more to be reprobated as its author is one of

* Quoted by Richard, Vol. I., pp. 207–209, and also partially in Nova Scotia Archives, pp. 140–151.

† Mascarene, a Frenchman, although an expatriated Huguenot, loyally attached to the service of his adopted country, knew and understood them better than any of their other rulers. Campbell in his history of Nova Scotia, struggling to find some excuse for an act at which he says, "the moral instincts of mankind shudder," quotes the hostile account of Armstrong, and omits the contrary testimony of others.

the most gifted and fascinating historical writers of recent days. Meanwhile the Acadians were increasing apace, and as it was deemed impolitic in the existing state of affairs to make grants of land in the colony to any but Protestant settlers, the neutrals were under the continual necessity of subdividing their farms; and as there was a difficulty about legal recognition of their titles, disputes about boundaries, as they naturally became frequent, were incapable of satisfactory adjustment, the provincial courts being closed to them.

Between their suspicious and masterful rulers on the one hand, and the enemies of the English, the implacable Indians, who could brook no toleration by them of English rule, on the other, and ever by force or stratagem restrained from removing even without their effects, their position was painful and delicate beyond all precedent. But there can be no doubt that in this peculiar isolation, under the beneficent influence of many saintly spiritual guides (for their priests were not all Le Loutres or Gaulins) the domestic and social virtues flourished among them in a most marked and eminent manner; and it cannot be successfully questioned that they enjoyed a state of freedom from the vices which disfigure society and mar human happiness, unequalled in the history of any other portion of the human race. Contemporary observers* corroborate the Abbé Raynal, whose glowing account of the Acadians, culled from contemporary reports, is condemned as poetic fiction, but Haliburton rightly says that his description is nearer the truth than many imagine. The discreet and generous historian of Nova Scotia judged from traces of their former condition which survived among the descendants of the exiles to his day, and I will here add not only to his day, but to mine, after their subjection to alien influences for several generations—as the grandeur of an ancient temple may be inferred by the magnificent proportions and character of its remains. I took up in the third decade of the century the thread of experience from a hand that had carried it from its beginning, and can add my unfaltering testimony to the earlier one of paternal tradition, that the successors of the people of the exile—

> "Dwelt together in love, these simple Acadian farmers,
> Dwelt in the love of God and man."

Within my personal recollection—

> "Neither locks had they to their doors, nor bars to their windows,
> But their dwellings were open as day and the hearts of their owners."

As soon as Cornwallis assumed the reins of Government in 1747, he demanded with military emphasis that the Acadians should now abandon

* Bishop St. Vallier. See Archbishop O'Brien's "Life of Bishop Burke," pp. 49, 152. Sir Brook Watson, Rev. Hugh Graham, Nova Scotia Hist. Soc. Coll., Vol. II., p. 129 *et seq.*, especially pp. 132, 133.

their position and status as neutrals under the modified oath with which, for the sake of retaining them, Phillipps had been content, and take a full and unqualified oath or leave the country. They pleaded in reply the treaty, Queen Anne's letter, and the mutual obligations of the convention with Phillipps, accepted and ratified by succeeding governors. He warned them that if they insisted on leaving they should forfeit all their personal as well as real property, and when they discovered a disposition to go even under these cruel conditions,* he took prompt steps to render the immediate departure of any considerable number of them impossible. Winter was then approaching, during which season they could not go. In the following March he announced his intention not to press them on the subject of the oath for a time, but deputies from the settlements early reached Halifax and renewed their request for leave to depart, to which he replied that no such leave could be granted until their crops should have been sown. Sadly but resignedly they set themselves to sowing crops for the stranger and the alien, as they supposed, to reap, which task accomplished, they again presented themselves before the Governor with a repetition of the request, the delegates from Annapolis being Charles Préjean and Jacques Michel. Governor Cornwallis, amazed at their resolution, spoke in softer tones than before, and declared their immediate removal impracticable, inasmuch as he "would have to notify all the commanders of His Majesty's ships and troops to allow everyone to pass and repass, which would cause the greatest confusion." He gave them to understand that they could not go in a body, but individuals only might depart one by one, each provided with a passport, but this essential formula he declared himself not then prepared to issue, and professed astonishment that they should expect to be allowed to leave in the then state of the Province. This was their last despairing effort to get away from the country previous to their sudden surprise, seizure and forcible deportation and dispersion in 1755. It has been said that from this date they were prisoners in the country, but practically they had been so from the date of the conquest by Nicholson. When Lawrence, the better and easier to accomplish his ever-memorable *coup-d'état*, called on them to deliver up their arms, they, as we have seen, quietly did so, although arms were so essential to a community living on the edge of the primeval wilderness where the wild beast prowled in waiting for their flocks and herds and children; and in their petition to Lawrence on the occasion of these closing interviews, they pathetically said, "Besides, the arms we carry are a feeble surety of fidelity. It is not the gun that the inhabitant possesses which will lead him to revolt, nor the depriving him of that gun that will make

* Alexandre Hébert and Joseph Dugas represented the French at Annapolis in the negotiations of this year, July and October, 1747.

him more faithful, but *his conscience* alone ought to engage him to maintain it." The obvious design of this passage, as it always seemed to my humble apprehension, was to convey to the Governor a sense of the overpowering weight on their consciences of the obligation of the oath which they had taken, and which they were willing to renew, or depart to new homes, and to be redolent of a most sensitive spirit of guilelessness and honour. The Governor, however, denounced it as "presumptuous," and charged them with treating the Government "with indignity and contempt," by "assuming to expound to the Council the nature of fidelity, and to prescribe what would be the proper security to be relied on for their fidelity."

The intellectual and moral capacity of the Governor did not seem able to rise to the level of the ideal shadowed forth in this touching paragraph. Guilelessness and honour, keenly sensitive to suspicion and reproach, were counted negative quantities in the calculations of policy and power. But among the modern apologists of the proceedings of Lawrence, it is painful to find this document styled "an insolent memorial."* The Acadians had, as Mascarene testified, and as abundant evidence in the provincial archives proves, faithfully kept the terms of the qualified oath forced on them in lieu of the option to depart secured by the treaty so long before, even giving the earliest possible intelligence to the English of the approach of an enemy,† and if, in the process of time, it came to be held that those terms were no longer consistent with the national honour and dignity, the argument urged by the Acadians that the provisions of the treaty should be revived from their desuetude, and that they should be put into the position they held when it was signed, was of patent and irresistible cogency. Banishment and confiscation of estates are appropriate and customary punishment for treason when the offender is spared the extreme penalty; but what act of treason was committed by the Acadians of the various ranks, ages, sexes and conditions who were about to be involved in one common and indiscriminate proscription?

The French on the mainland, beyond the isthmus which connects it with the peninsula, perpetually harassed their neutral neighbours by incitements to join them in attacks against the English. These efforts culminated in the burning of their buildings, including even their church, so that they were compelled to take unwelcome refuge beyond the border, where afterwards they were forced by their former compatriots, under threats of death, to accept arms and throw themselves, about three hundred in number, into Fort Beauséjour—not a *beau séjour* to them. So repugnant was this to their inclinations and desires, that while the fort was invested by the English, many of them escaped to the English

* Nova Scotia Hist. Soc. Coll., Vol. V., p. 83.

† Murdoch, Vol. I., p. 411; II., pp. 18, 42, 73, 106. Hannay, p. 349.

lines; seventeen of them were arrested in attempts to escape and brought back, and the great body of them when the crisis came refused to fight, so that the besiegers gained an easy and comparatively bloodless victory.

In consequence of this unswerving attachment to their oath in a time of crucial trial and extreme difficulty, one of the terms of the capitulation granted to the garrison by Moncton reads as follows: "As to the Acadians, as they were forced to bear arms under pain of death they shall be pardoned." Lawrence professed to regard this as meaning that they should be exempted from the death penalty only, from which it is not a very strained inference that he would have felt himself justified in ordering them to military execution but for this stipulation, whereas Col. Moncton evidently regarded them as guilty of no offence whatever. And yet this crime, if crime it can be called, with which the French in the other settlements were in nowise connected, was the sole, actual pretext for a sentence of irretrievable disaster and ruin against every Acadian of every age and sex in the whole peninsula, not only in the vicinity of Forts Beauséjour and Beaubassin, but from Piziquid (Windsor) to Port Royal; aye, further, away at its western extremity at Pubnico, a little community founded by the D'Entremonts and Latours of noble lineage and historic fame, perfectly isolated and absolutely harmless, innocent and ignorant of what was going on in the world outside the bounds of their circumscribed horizon, were, by a decree unspeakably atrocious, eternally disgracing our provincial annals, condemned to share the same awful fate.* With humiliation and shame we must acknowledge that Sabine was right: "Darker deeds have seldom been done."

After the surrender of Beauséjour, Lawrence wrote to the Lords of Trade and Plantations, under date June 28th, 1755, that the "deserted Acadians"—referring ostensibly to those who were found at Beauséjour—were delivering up their arms, and that he had given Colonel Moncton orders to "drive them out of the country at all events, first making use of their labour to do all the service in their power;" to which the Secretary of State, under date August 13th, replied, criticising the Governor's letter for its ambiguity as to the particular Acadians he proposed to expel—whether the three hundred or all those who lived near Beauséjour, or all who lived in the peninsula, and expressing disapproval of such a step as to either body, because a partial measure of harshness might exasperate those who remained into acts of rebellion, and to make it universal would increase the forces of the French king. The British Government, with nearly fifty years of experience as their guide, thought it the wiser course that they should remain even as neutrals. The king's ministers, who were themselves the very guardians of England's honour, and champions of England's sovereignty, and

* Nova Scotia Archives, p. 300.

certainly the best, as well as the authoritative, judges, did not see as Murdoch, writing a hundred years later,* saw, that "such a neutrality as had been suffered, but never sanctioned, by the British Government, was wholly incompatible with its just rights of sovereignty, and that all measures requisite to end it, to bring the land and all its dwellers under unconditional submission to the laws of the Empire, were now essential to the dignity of the nation, and to the preservation of its territory." That Governor Lawrence's step had become necessary to the honour, dignity and interests of the nation, is indeed a favourite argument; but the alleged necessity the British Government utterly failed to perceive. Except in the imagination of modern apologists, no such a necessity ever existed, or the Lords of Trade and Plantations would have been the first to perceive it, as well as the only ones authorized to take cognizance of it. Referring to a proposition then recently made by the French minister at London, that in view of the complications created by the lapse of so long a period, three years should be given the Acadians in which to arrange for and accomplish their departure and migration to the new abodes they might decide upon, the Secretary of State further said: "In regard to the three years' transmigration proposed for the Acadians of the peninsula, it would be depriving Great Britain of a very considerable number of useful subjects if such transmigration should extend to those who were inhabitants there at the time of the treaty, and their descendants." This indicates the opinion of the king's advisers touching the "just rights of sovereignty," and the "dignity of the nation," which it is now contended were involved.

From these utterances it is abundantly clear that the Lords of Trade understood Lawrence as proposing only to put into effect the migration contemplated by the Treaty of Utrecht; it never entered into the hearts or brains of any of that body to conceive or imagine the unique scene of woe and horror, upon which, in the king's name, he was about to lift the curtain. William of Orange, before he placed his sign-manual to the atrocious order which doomed McIan and his clansmen to the sword, was by the victim's ruthless enemy kept uninformed of the fact that they had, although tardily, made the required submission. Less guilty than he, King George and his councillors knew nothing whatever of the diabolical scheme of their representative in Nova Scotia; and before Secretary Robinson's despatch had time to reach Halifax, the appalling purpose had been successfully accomplished, and a stain left on the escutcheon of Nova Scotia that can never be effaced.

It is a subject of speculation what could have prompted the provincial authorities to design and carry out a measure of such supreme importance on their own responsibility. The victims were admittedly "useful

* Murdoch's "Nova Scotia," Vol. II., p. 287.

subjects"; for forty years they had, as a body, kept inviolate the qualified oath submitted to and accepted by them in lieu of the privilege of removing with their effects to foreign territory. Lieutenant-Governor Caulfield had testified, "I have always observed since my coming here, the forwardness of the Acadians to serve us when occasion offered." If they had refrained from working at or supplying the fort at Annapolis, and, on the other hand, had aided Du Vivier in his attempt on it, his capture of the fort would have put their destiny into their own hands, and the long-sought-for opportunity of transplanting their homes to new shores would have arrived. They could have removed with their effects to Cape Breton or St. John Island, to Canada, perhaps even to Louisiana, or the land of their fathers, old France, in comfort and at their leisure. But as we have seen, they withstood all his attempts upon their good faith and integrity. Only five years before their dispersion, Governor Hopson had written to the Lords of Trade, "Mr. Cornwallis can inform your Lordships how useful and necessary these people are to us; how impossible it is to do without them, or to replace them, even if we had other settlers to put in their places." Lawrence had none to put in their places, and no prospect of any.* Two years still later Hopson had written, "I hope I may not be directed to send out those (foreign Protestant settlers) we have, to settle anywhere among the French inhabitants, for I have sufficient reason to be assured, was that to be done, the latter would immediately quit the Province." Finally, we have the conviction of Governor Lawrence himself, asserted in a letter† to the Board of Trade, of August 1st, 1854: "I believe a very large part of the inhabitants would submit to any terms rather than take up arms on either side," and he had seen this conviction verified by the conduct of the three hundred who were forced into Fort Beauséjour. Therefore, the motive of fear that they might, on a favourable opportunity, join the English, could have had no rational existence, although in defence of the act, as well in justification of the deportation later of others and of some who had returned, what they might do, rather than what they had done, was always urged as the ground and reason for their punishment. What, therefore, could have been the real motive of Governor Lawrence long baffled my judgment and imagination; and I was startled when the potent one suggested by the author of "Acadia" met my eyes. Without adopting or rejecting that painful theory, I will state it. He holds that the Governor and his Council were inspired by purely mercenary motives, and mentions in support of this view that no account was ever rendered by Lawrence of the proceeds of the live stock of the Acadians, which was of enormous value, and that grants of twenty thousand acres

* Nova Scotia Archives, p. 197. † *Id.* p. 214.

of land each * were soon after made to members of his Council, and other favourites and abettors, including the very valuable lands left tenantless by the Acadians. The former of these two circumstances was mentioned in a memorial against Lawrence by a number of the citizens of Halifax, whose agent, Ferdinand John Paris, in a letter to the Lords of Trade, in 1758, placed the amount realized by him from this source at about £20,000.

At Grand Pré adequate means of preserving the live stock from destruction were not available, for although an attempt was made with only partial success to drive some of the horses and cattle through to Lunenburg, when the English settlers in Kings County arrived they found at the skirts of the forest huge heaps of bones of the sheep and cattle that huddled together to die of cold and starvation after the hands that used to minister to their wants had been withdrawn.† As for the lands rendered vacant, "they were immediately occupied by the English,"‡ who appropriated at once the enormous harvests with which they teemed, although no English-speaking colonists came to permanently settle them for several years. The memorial just cited charges Lawrence with many acts of tyranny and oppression against the citizens.§ Certain it is that on the day after the imprisonment of the first batch of Acadian delegates he issued a proclamation denouncing severe penalties upon "any person or persons," who "should presume to utter, publish and declare any insinuations or reports reflecting on the administration of the Government."

As to the character of Governor Lawrence it may be best judged of by his policy and methods. It would be absurd to question his ardent zeal for the substantial interests of the Government whose servant he was, but any conscientious scruple as to the means to be used, or any tenderness of regard for the honour and credit of that Government confided to his keeping, was a stranger to his breast. The steps which he took to fill up the depeopled country were wise and energetic. But he had the disposition of a tyrant toward those who had the misfortune to be subject to his authority; and his opposition to the scheme of establishing a legislature in the Province was characteristic. In fact, he was desirous of reducing the colony to military rule. Deep in his plans, and resolute in pursuing the most direct course that would lead to their accomplishment, he was capable of carrying out the most cruel measures without the least twinge of human compunctions, or sensation of generous emotions. His proclamation offering rewards for Indian scalps,

* Murdoch, Vol. II., p. 528; Haliburton, Vol. II., p. 101.

† *Id.* Vol. II., p. 121.

‡ *Id.* Vol. II., p. 100.

§ See Richard, Appendix Vol. II., p. 364, from the Brown MSS. in British Museum.

graduated according to the age and sex of the victim, is another pointed index to his character, as well as a sad blot upon the pages of our provincial history. Of these measures Murdoch says: "It is impossible to read the solemn orders for destroying and annihilating the homes and surroundings of our fellow-creatures, the forcible capture and removal of families, the rewards in money for the scalps of an enemy, and many other proceedings of those in authority at this period, without strong sensations of pain and disgust."

An awful story is on record* of four fugitive Frenchmen who had escaped the deportation, being wantonly shot, and their scalps represented as scalps of Indians to secure the reward. Again, a still more horrible tale: Twenty-five scalps were offered, some of which there was reason to suppose might have been of fugitive French. Captain Huston, then paymaster, objected to such proceedings, but Colonel Montague Wilmot, afterwards governor, ordered the money to be paid, on the ground that the French were in point of law out of the country, and if the authority granted by the proclamation were "strained a little," the transgression might be winked at. Murdoch styles the year 1765 an "ugly" year. I apply that epithet to the whole period of the administrations of Lawrence, Belcher and Wilmot.

Lawrence, if not ignorant of the terms of the Treaty of Utrecht, and the subsequent early dealings with the Acadians under it, was certainly indifferent to the obligations it imposed on the Crown for their benefit. With the spirit of the most severe among the Puritans, although not a Puritan himself, he held in the most thorough abhorrence and contempt those whom he called "Popish recusants" and "the inveterate enemies to our religion;" and conceived that they had no rights by treaty or the laws of humanity, which an English and Protestant governor was bound to respect. There is every reason to be assured that his contemporaries in Halifax, except a few immediate advisers and confidants to whom it opened large immediate or prospective profit, disapproved of and revolted from his atrocious policy toward the Acadians, but in that day any expression of an adverse opinion would have been deemed treason. For many years every attempt at a discussion of the question was vigorously suppressed.

M. Richard on this point quotes largely from a manuscript history of the Province by the Rev. Andrew Brown, D.D., a Scotch divine richly endued with the historic spirit, and a man of great learning and ability, who came to the Province in 1785, and after a pastorate of eight years in Halifax,† returned in 1795 to his native land, and died while filling

* Nova Scotia Hist. Soc. Coll., Vol. II., p. 141.

† Dr. Brown was the immediate predecessor at St. Matthew's Church of Rev. Dr. Archibald Gray, whose son, Rev. Archibald Gray, M.A., was Rector of Digby, and grandson, Rev. W. S. Gray, late Curate at Annapolis.

the chair of rhetoric and *belles-lettres* in the University of Edinburgh. Doctor Brown, during his residence at Halifax, availed himself of the opportunity to gather information from living and reliable sources, and could not fail to correctly gauge contemporary opinion on the subject. His own judgment was that, excepting the massacre of St. Bartholomew, he knew of no act equally reprehensible as the Acadian removal that could be laid to the charge of the French nation. "In their colonies, nothing," he said, "was ever done that approaches it in cruelty and atrociousness." *

Governor Lawrence died at Halifax, October 19th, 1760, after a week's illness, aged fifty-five, unmarried, and just in time to escape an official inquiry into the whole conduct of his administration, granted in response to petitions and memorials from the citizens of Halifax, repeated and pressed for over three years, and supported by a delegate to London already mentioned. This inquiry, as it appears by a despatch from the Lords of Trade to his successor, embraced the charge of encouraging outrages by the disorderly part of the military on the property and lives of the citizens, and "other far greater enormities"; and we must assume that it would have resulted in a vindication of the national honour and good faith in respect to his treatment of the Acadians. He was, however, buried at the public expense, but a monument ordered by the Legislature to be erected to his memory in St. Paul's Church, recording in some particulars "not what he was, but what he should have been," is now "not to be found among those that adorn the walls" † of that historic temple.

The number of the French deported from this county was about sixteen hundred and fifty. At given signals the torch was applied to their houses and barns, and from Moschelle to Paradise, and from Goat Island eastward to the township line, the landscape was soon wrapt in smoke and flame, and next day only blackened chimney stacks and cellar walls marked the recent abodes in peace and plenty of an industrious and happy population. A considerable number in the eastern section managed to escape into the woods with a few cattle; of these, some, attempting to form a settlement on the shores of St. Mary's Bay, were dislodged in 1757; others eked out a precarious subsistence in the woods, until at length they joined the settlement which the returning exiles founded in the western end of the county. Those who managed to cross the bay, and took refuge with the French on the Miramichi, belonged mostly to the settlements on the north side of the river. Hannay's estimate that two-thirds of the exiles eventually returned to the Province is obviously extravagant. Shipwreck, disease and want would tell enormously on a people of their habits, and be fatal to the sick and aged of any people,

* Nova Scotia Hist. Soc. Coll., Vol. II., p. 149. † Akins.

and the young children who came in with the returning exiles must have been born during the exile, for parents in some few cases succeeded in effecting a reunion although they could not re-establish a home. By permission of the author I copy the following from Richard's "Acadia," Vol. II., p. 325 :

"When peace was concluded in 1763" (I am quoting, with slight additions of my own, from Rameau), "out of about 6,500 Acadians who had been deported to the United States, there remained a little more than one-half. Often had they in vain begged the authorities to allow them to leave the place of their exile ; but after the peace their homeward rush was resistless. Divers groups made for Canada, where they settled, some at l'Acadie, near St. John, P.Q., others at St. Gregoire, Nicolet, and Beçancour, in the District of Three Rivers, and others at St Jacques l'Achigan, in all of which places they formed rich and prosperous parishes.

"Those who had not been able to join this exodus, met together three years later, in the spring of 1766, at Boston, with the intention of wending their way back to their lost and lamented Acadia. There then remained in foreign lands only a small minority, riveted to the spot by infirmity or extreme want. We must, however, except those who had been deported to Maryland, where the presence of English Catholics and of a few priests had made their lot less intolerable, and where some of their descendants may still be found.

"The heroic caravan" which formed in Boston and determined to cross the forest wilderness of Maine on its return to Acadia, was made up of about eight hundred persons. "On foot, and almost without provisions, these pilgrims braved the perils and fatigues of a return by land, marching up the coast of the Bay of Fundy as far as the isthmus of Shediac, across six hundred miles of forest and uninhabited mountains ; some pregnant women of this pitiful band were confined on the way. I have known some of the sons of these children of sorrow, who told me this story as they had it from their fathers, born in the course of this painful journey.

"No one will ever know all that these unfortunate people, forsaken and forgotten by everybody, suffered as they hewed their way through the wilderness ; the many years gone by have long since stifled the echoes of their sighs in the forest, which itself has disappeared ; all the woes of these hapless beings are now lost in the shadows of the past ; others are joyously reaping harvests on their obliterated camping grounds, and there hardly remains aught but a few dim traditions of this sublime and sorrowful exodus scattered among the fireside tales of aged Acadians on the Bay of Fundy.

"In the wild paths that wound in and out through the interminable forests of Maine, this long line of emigrants walked painfully on ; there were small groups of women and children, dragging the slender baggage of misery, while the men, scattering hither and thither, sought in the chase, in fishing and even among wild roots, something wherewith to feed them. There were very small children, who were hardly able to walk and were led by the hand, the larger children carrying them from time to time ; many of these unfortunate mothers held an infant in their arms, and the cries of these poor babes were the only sound that broke the gloomy and dismal silence of the woods.

"How many died on the way, children, women and even men? How many breathed their last, overpowered by weariness, suffering from hunger, sitting down to be forgotten forever in some wild path, without priest, without consolation, without friends? The last agony of death was embittered, for these innocent victims, by all the anguish of regret and neglect.

"While this sorrowful caravan advanced, some indeed were found whose failing

strength refused to carry them any farther; however, all did not succumb, and one after another a few groups remained along the road to form the nuclei of future colonies. It was thus that, on the banks of the River St. John, several families fixed their abode amid the ruins of the settlements formerly occupied by the French in this district, where, in the ancient fief of Jemsek [of which La Tour had been the owner] and in that of Ekoupag, some few Acadian families still dwelt.

"When the column of exiles, thinned out by the fatigues of the journey, reached the banks of the Petitcodiac, they had been four months on the road. There, at length, they could taste a few moments of repose and consolation; the first to come out at the foot of the wooded mountain-range along this river met there some men, half-hunters, half-husbandmen, who spoke their language, and among whom they were not slow to recognize fellow-countrymen and relatives. This was the remnant of the former inhabitants of Memramcook, Chipody and the isthmus of Shediac. . . . Buildings and clearings were already to be seen along the river bank, when the band of captives returning from the United States joined them at the close of the summer of '1766'. [How touching must have been the meeting, after a separation of eleven years, of these beings whose hearts were wrung by a common calamity! Here, at least, the wayfarers could rest for a moment in peace after their excessive fatigues, without any risk of rebuff or ill-will from indifferent or hostile strangers.] The friends they had just found again were themselves very poor, but their welcome was cordial and sympathetic.

"Unfortunately, after this first burst of joy, they had to suffer a great heaviness of heart. They had cherished the hope that, away on the other side of the Bay of Fundy, at Beauséjour, Beaubassin, Grand Pré, Port Royal, they would find once more their lands and perhaps their houses, that they might be allowed to settle on the farms that were not yet occupied; but they soon realized that all this was a dream; everything had been allotted to their persecutors or to new colonists. The great and painful journey they had just made was now useless; they had no longer either home or country! These discouraging tidings overwhelmed most of them; they were utterly worn out, and, without seeking to advance, they remained on the very spot to which Providence had led them.

"However, a certain number of them could not believe that all was lost and that they were hopelessly despoiled of those rich lands, formerly wrested from the sea by the laborious skill of their forefathers. Fifty or sixty families, men, women and children, once more set out; they rounded the innermost shore of the old Baie Française, which had become Fundy Bay; they visited in turn Beaubassin, Piziquit and Grand Pré; but Beauséjour was now called Cumberland; Beaubassin, Amherst; Cobequid had taken the name of Truro; Piziquit that of Windsor, and Grand Pré was named Horton. Everything was changed! English names, English villages, English inhabitants, wherever they appeared they looked like ghosts come back from a past age; nobody had thought of them for a long time.

"The children were frightened at them, the women and the men were annoyed as by a threatening spectre from the grave, everybody was angry with them, and the poor wretches dragged themselves from village to village, worried and worn out by fatigue, hunger and cold, and a despair that grew at every halting-place; the last was Port Royal [Annapolis], where the same irritation on the one hand and the same disappointment on the other were repeated.

"Yet, what was to be done with this caravan of poor people in rags, weary unto death, crushed by want and grief? The officers of the garrison adopted the plan of conducting them a little farther south, on St. Mary's Bay, the unoccupied shores of which were lined with vast forests. The wretched Acadians, driven to exhaustion

and despair by so many misfortunes, not knowing whither to go, allowed themselves to be led, and so ended by stranding on this desert shore, where lands were granted to them on December 23rd, 1767. Thus, without counting the long tramps they had to undertake to meet together in Boston, they had traversed on foot a distance of about a thousand miles before reaching the end of their journey.

"The most cruel crosses do not always wholly crush human energy; the calm after the tempest, the faintest glimmer of hope reviving, allow our eased spirits to cling once more to life, to resume work and make a fresh start. Under pressure of necessity these unfortunate outcasts raised log-huts; they took to fishing and hunting; they began to clear the land, and soon out of the felled trees some roughly-built houses were put up. [Such was the origin of the colony that now covers all the western portion of the peninsula.]

"During many subsequent years there were numerous migrations. Acadians arrived from France, from the West Indies, from Louisiana, Canada, and the United States, going from one settlement to another in search of a father, a mother, a brother, a relative whose whereabouts they had not yet found. Often death had claimed the long-sought one; sometimes, on the other hand, he that was supposed to be dead, was unexpectedly discovered. Slowly the scattered members of one family succeeded, not infrequently, in all getting together once more. Those who were in better circumstances collected their poorer brethren around them; the bereavements of the past were gradually softened by new ties, and finally each group took on the aspect of a distinct and homogeneous community."

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER IX.

Among the settlements laid waste were two flourishing villages separated from each other by the Bloody Creek brook, Robicheauville on the east, and St. André Emanuel on the west side, names now no longer surviving in those localities.

CHAPTER X.

THE TOWNSHIP OF ANNAPOLIS.

1755-1775.

Description of the township—Evans' journal—Passengers by the *Charming Molly* —Census of 1768 and 1770—State of township in 1763—Social aspects, 1770-80 —Appendix—Names of grantees in grant of 1759.

THIS township is the oldest in the county, and embraces within its boundaries over one hundred thousand acres, being bounded on the north by the Annapolis River; on the east by a line commencing at a point one mile to the eastward from the Nictau River, and thence running south 10° east (magnetic) seven miles; thence south 72° west to the eastern bounds of the township of Clements, and thence northward by the course of the said bounds to the Annapolis River. It consists of two nearly parallel districts, of quite unequal dimensions, differing from each other in geological character, quality of soil and general aspects. That division which lies between the river boundary on the north, and the heights of the South Mountains on the south, and which extends throughout its whole length in a direction nearly east and west, contains much rich marsh, meadow and uplands, admirably adapted to the growth of hay, root and fruit crops, all of which are successfully and largely cultivated. The soils in this district are very various, consisting of clays, loams, grey and red sands and alluvia, each possessing its peculiar excellence, and are especially suited to the growth of particular productions. The appearance of this portion of the township in June and September is very beautiful. In the former month the extensive orchards are all ablaze with blossoms of every hue and fragrance, and in the latter the ripening fruit delights the eye with a scene which cannot be easily equalled in colour or abundance. The chief highway, through its whole length from Torbrook to Clements, passes through an almost continuous succession of apple orchards. Long before the New England immigrants took possession of these lands, their French predecessors had set them an example in orcharding, which, happily for us, they were not slow to follow; the results of which have

now culminated in a production undreamed of by our ancestors, and have become an element of wealth not to be overestimated, and which is annually becoming more developed and valuable.

The other section of this township—that lying south of the mountain range above named—is, generally speaking, a level tract of country and largely covered with forest. It embraces, however, several fine settlements within its limits, among which may be named those called Lake La Rose, Inglisville, Roxbury, Morse Road, Bloomington, etc. It is generally well watered; its chief streams being the Lequille River, in the west, and the Nictau in its eastern part, the historical Bloody Creek stream, near Bridgetown, and the Paradise River, with hundreds of smaller streams forcing their way through depressions in the range of hills referred to, to the valley which is drained by their greater brother—the Taywoapsk of the Micmac—the Annapolis River, which receives their waters and hurries them into the wide Atlantic through the Bay of Fundy. The minor streams, and the lakes which they form in their course, are abundantly stocked with trout, and white and red perch, and some of them afford excellent spawning ground for the salmon, which continue to visit them, though in largely diminished numbers.

There are valuable deposits of iron ores at Nictau,* which have at different times been worked and abandoned. These mines are again made the theatre of fresh operations under the proprietorship of a wealthy company, whose efforts, with the present railway facilities, are meeting with the success they so well deserve. This portion of the county, like all other portions of it, is peopled with a thrifty, industrious, sober, moral and religious population, who, from year to year continue to add to the material value of their farms, and to push forward the development of the natural resources which surround them. The staple productions are of an agricultural, pomological and horticultural character, though brickmaking, shipbuilding and mining have been by no means neglected. The horticultural and pomological exports are only exceeded by those of a strictly agricultural nature; and the value of the former is probably greater than that of any other township in the county. Its inhabitants are generally in easy circumstances, being free from debt and its consequent embarrassments, and able to produce almost all the requisites for comfortable living on their own lands.

The former part of this work has been devoted to the history of this as well as other parts of the county, from the foundation of Port Royal in 1604 to the forcible expulsion of the French inhabitants in 1755; and it now becomes necessary to relate the facts which fill up the interval between the latter date and 1760, the time of the arrival of the settlers from the continental colonies in the good schooner *Charming Molly.*

* Nictau, Nictahk, a Micmac name meaning "The Forks."

There is not much of interest to record during these four years. The vacated French lands continued to await the presence of new occupiers, and to remain uncultivated because unoccupied. The old town—no longer the capital—still continued to be the dwelling place of several people whose names are intimately connected with the subject of this narrative. Among these we cannot omit to notice that of Erasmus James Phillips, of the 40th regiment, who was commissary of the garrison during this period, and who was afterwards one of the first two members for the county chosen to represent the people in the Assembly; nor that of Ensign Wolseley, who was store-keeper in 1754, and whose son some twenty years later married Margaret, the fourth daughter of Joseph Winniett, the head of the firm of Winniett & Dyson, the leading merchants of the place. The Rev. Thomas Wood,* a Scotch gentleman, was the chaplain of the garrison and Church of England missionary. Thomas Handfield was commandant of the garrison; Cowley was chief of the Engineer Department (died 1753). He was succeeded by Mr. Boutein; and Thomas Williams, William Hussey and Benjamin Rumsey† were in the same department of the service. The descendants of the latter gentleman—who was "Clerk of the Cheque"—are quite numerous in the county. Dyson, the merchant and partner of Winniett, was probably his brother-in-law, as Winniett's wife was Mary Dyson. On the 3rd of March, 1755, Dyson is charged with "having treated Mrs. Edward How and her family with extraordinary cruelty and violence"; and Governor Lawrence required Handfield (as civil magistrate) to investigate the charge. In the same letter Lawrence rebukes Winniett and Dyson for "requesting permission to trade in grain."

On the 30th of the same month, in the same year, Mr. Cotterel, the Secretary of the Province, writes Messrs. Winniett & Dyson in these terms:

"Secretary's Office, 30th March, 1755.

"Gentlemen,—I acknowledge the receipt of your Letter enclosing a memorandum for the Government which Mr. Winniett desires may be laid before the Council. The Governor has the more readily determined to do so as it is an affair of importance; as soon as anything is determined thereon you may depend on hearing from,

"Gentlemen, your obedient servant,

"(Signed), William Cotterel.

"P.S.—You may have a permit for pease upon Bond to lay them into the King's Store at Annapolis."

Among the very few civilians who at this time lived at Annapolis was John Easson, or Easton—the latter is the name given in the papers

* See Census of 1770, p. 155.

† Benjamin, Charles and Joseph Rumsey, of Granville, are his grandsons.

relating to him—a young Scotchman, whose descendants yet remain with us in considerable numbers, and some of them yet own and occupy portions of the 520 acres of land granted to him in 1759. John Harris, Esquire,* afterwards a member for the county, was also a resident of Annapolis at this time, and his descendants have become very numerous in the county and are highly respected.

In consequence of the proclamation of Governor Lawrence, Mr. Henry Evans, of Massachusetts, was despatched to Halifax to ask for further information as to the terms on which grants of townships could be obtained, and to report to those who sent him as their agent in this behalf. In the performance of this trust, Mr. Evans kept a diary or journal of his proceedings, which has been preserved by his descendants, and which will now be given to the public for the first time, as I was kindly permitted by its late possessor, Mr. R. J. Harris, to take a verbatim copy. Mr. Evans† lived in or near Sudbury, Mass., and seventeen years afterwards was elected a representative of the county. The manuscript has been kept in excellent preservation, and, among other things, furnishes us with the names and number of the families which first arrived to resettle this township, and many other particulars concerning them, and is as follows :

EVANS' JOURNAL.

1760.

April 1 Prepareing to go to Halifax to waite on his Excellency governor Lawerence and the Council, as Being apointed Agent for the township of Annapolis Royal, was to take Passage in a schooner (Capt. Watts).

2 Getting my Things, Bed &c on Board.

3 Being fast Day was to Be at the vessell at one o'clock which was Before High water. Accordingly was at the Place. But the vessel gone almost to Castell—so am Left.

4 The wind came to the N. East, went to Marblehead, Thinking to have seen Watts there But not finding him yr and the wind now at S. West I take Passage in a fishing schooner of about thirty Tons, Bound to Bank Quereau, the Sciper Promising to Putt Captn. Bartlett and Myself into Merligast or Halifax if we will pay him fifteen dollars and four Galln. Rum, which amounts to 19 Dollars Besides all our Stores for ourselves of all Sorts.

5 Sailed from Marblehead at 12 o'clock—wind Fair—next morning wind headed, snowed and Blew Very hard and Cold. I haveing no Bed But the fishermen's See Cloes to Ly on and no fire in the Cabin, was Badly off indeed. Beat to windward till April 10th, the wind Came fair and Blew us almost under water—the Vessell all the time full of water on the Deck.

11 at five o'clock in the evening Got to Merligash, the wind too hard, coold not Proceed and we went on shore and came on Board again in order to Sail next morneing April 12th.

* See memoirs of Mr. Harris in another place.

† See memoirs of Mr. Evans in another place.

April 12 But the Master not willing to Cary us any Further Saying it might hinder his Voige we went on Board a Small Sloop of Mr. Crooks to take Passage for Halifax, and Gott into a small Harbour this night, the Sloop Being not fit to Be at See, Being deep loaded and a Poor Thing indeed it was, and about twelve Passengers of Dutch People.

13 Being Sabbith went on Shore—the wind high and very Cold—Gott some fish and made a Diner on Shore with some fishermen who ware Driven into Ketch harbour as we ware. About 3 P.M., sail and Rowed out of sd. harbour, and Gott to Meagur's Beach and went on Board a Small Schooner Belonging to the man that Came with me from Marblehead, and went to Halifax in her, and Gott to* this night, and lodged on Board this night.

15 a Very Bad Storm and I scarcly not able to walk. Did not go out this Day.

16 waited on the Governor and was Received kindly. Shewing the Petition and asking Some more favours—most of which I Gott granted.

17 Obtained the order for two vessells and other Things all which the Governor, Mr. Morris and myself minuted Down the heads and Mr. Morris went with me to the Secetary to Draw in form what they Could grant, I requesting it in writing for the Satisfation of my Constituents.—Orders &c.

18 Was Busily Ingaged In getting my answers & orders Coppey'd By the Secetary and Clark.

19 Rained—I wrote a letter to Annapolis and told them some of the Proprietors would be there in a month. Waited on the Secetary for my Papers and on the Governor to sign them.

20 Sunday—Prepareing for home. Coold not go to Meeting. Thought to go in Cobb. But he not Going to Boston Directly, Thought to gett a Passage Sooner in Captn. Hinckley, I went on Board, found he was Ready to Sail, all but a Pass.

21 Gott all things on Board—Gott my Pass and all my Papers Ready for Sailing, But a Storm Came on—Staid till Daylight.

22 at Light Sailed and the men of war Likewise out of the harbour—they for Louisburg and we for Boston.

Here the journal is interrupted by the insertion of the following:

"Acc't of Ports, Harbours and Capes from Halifax to the Bay of Fundy."

Jebucto Head.	Cape LeHave.	East Passage.
Sambro do	Port Medway.	Cape Sable.
Ketch Harbour.	Port Saviour.	West Passage.
Sambro do	Port Muttoon.	Popnico.
Pearints do	Port Lebair.	Shag Harbour.
Prospect do	Port Jolley.	†Sile Islands.
Margarets Bay.	Green's Harbour.	Tuskett's do
Ashmetogett Hill.	Port Roseway.	Tibouge.
Mehoun Bay.	Cape Neagro.	Cape Forchu.
Merligash or	Port Latore or	Long Islands Head.
Lunenburg Town.	Baccro Point.	Bay of Fundy.

* Name here not legible in the MS., probably Halifax. † Seal.

April 22 5 o'clock p.m. the winds coming west and Blew so hard that Captain thought Best with advice of Passengers (there being five of us and most well acquainted with the Shore) to put into LeHave and did so; this night wind west and blew hard and next Day Lay in the Harbour and a very good one—went on Shore, Gott more Ballice and Travilled on Shore most of the Day But killed nothing.

24 Sailed from LeHave By Day Light. at 4 o'clock p.m. the wind headed, and Coold not Beat to advantage Putt into Metoon Harbour which is good one.

25 at four o'clock morning weighed and Came to Sail. The wind fair till eleven o'clock forenoon. Spoke with Captn. Clustin in a Schooner for Halifax off against Cape Neagro, But no news. The wind is ahead; took many tacks, But at night stood off from the Shore.

26 12 o'clock Saw a Schooner to the Leeward and although to windward off against Sile Islands, wind south, did not Speak with them.

27 Most of this Day Calm. Shifting winds—night Thunder and Lightning and some rain.

28 Small Brease—Had a Good observation—Little past 12 Saw Cape Cod at S. west—wind ahead or Calm the afternoon and night—Gott by morning off Cape Cod.

30 in the morning off against Moniment at 7 o'clock, the entrance of Plymouth harbour. 12 off against Marshfield and Calm. 5 p.m. wind Sprung up and Came to the Lite-house, By Sun Down; and at 10 run on the Rocks of Castell, Butt Gott off.

May 1 at one o'clock in the morning Gott to Boston, the Boate Bringing me on Shore finding the family well, &c.

2 Went to Sudbury.

5 Chartered the schooner *Charming Molly*, Captain Grow.

6 went to Framingham—meeting of Proprietors.

15 the Vessel Ready to Sail, But waits for a wind.

23 in the morning the wind fair and the Vessell sailed for Annapolis Royal.

26 at night a Bad storm on Shore—Boston.

June 5 Capt. Grow returned to Boston.

19 Sailed again for Annapolis.

25 arrived at Annapolis Royall.

28 Captn. Grow sailed Back for Boston.

July 9 had a meeting of the Proprietors*—Entered on the Public Service Being Chosen one of the Committee for Laying out Lands, and town Committee & Treasurer of the Town.

Aug. 27 Finished Laying out Lotts for the first Settlers.

Oct. 6 Began to Lay out Lotts for second Settlers.

Nov. 1 at Night made an End at Present.

14 Began my house.

18 a Grate Snow came on.

28 a Ship Came in with Relief for the Geri. (Garrison—W.A.C.)

Then follows "A List of Names of Passengers for annapolis Royall on Board the *Charming Molly*, May 17th, 1760."

Jonathan Thayer.	Nathaniel Rawson.	Jonathan Church.
Gideon Albe.	Samuel Perkins.	Benjamin Mason.

* At Annapolis?

*Isaac Kent.	*Ebenezer Felch.	*Michael Spurr & wife
Stephen Rice.	Thomas Damon.	3 sons and 3 daughters.
Daniel Sumner.	John Damon.	John Winslow.
Joseph Mershall.	Edmund Damon.	*John Whitman.
*Thomas Hooper	William Curtis & wife.	Michael Law.
wife, sons & 3 daughters.	Daniel Moore.	John Bacon.
William Williams.	*Samuel Bent.	*Daniel Felch.
John Hill.	*Uriah Clark.	*Benjamin Rice.
*Abner Morse.	*Samuel Morse.	*Beriah Rice.

In all forty-five souls. To this "List" is appended the following interesting statement showing the number and description of the cattle which were brought in the *Charming Molly* with the names of those to whom they belonged:

	Oxen.	Cows.	Horses.	Sheep.	Swine.	
Jonathan Thayer	2	..	..	..	..	
Gideon Albe	..	2	..	..	..	
*†Isaac Kent	2	1	..	..	..	
*Michael Spurr	..	2	1	..	..	
John Winslow	2	..	..	..	..	
*Deacon (John) Whitman	2	..	..	10	1	saow bigg with piggs, 4 calves and 6 lambs.
Daniel Moore, jun	2	1	..	..	..	
Daniel Sumner	2	1	..	..	..	
*Beriah Rice	2	2	..	..	..	
*Abner Morse	2	2	1(3 yrs. old.)	..	..	
Total	16	11	2	10	1	6 lambs, 7 small cattle.

In addition to these we add, "one dog, stores, chests, casks, and utentials such as carts, wheals, plows, etc."

The following memorandum copied from this MS. seems to give some of the names of those settlers who arrived somewhat later in the summer of 1760:

	Oxen.	Cows.	Horses.	Sheep.	
Captain Phineas Lovett	2	2	1	20	
Obadiah Wheelock	..	..	..	..	8 cattle.
Aaron Hardy	..	..	..	..	5 cattle.
Moses Thayer	..	..	1	..	
Joseph Daniels	2	..	..	..	
Benjamin Eaton	3	..	1	..	1 colt.
Thomas Smith	..	1	..	..	
Jobe Cushing	..	1	1	..	
Ebenezer Perry	2	..	..	..	
John Baker	..	..	1	..	Sheep and 8 cwt. hay
William Jennison	2	.	1	20	
Paul Haseltine	2	1	1	..	
William Bowles	2	1	1	..	

In addition to these names are mentioned those of Capt. Gates and Mr. Graves, in an account of expenses incurred in the building of a boat at Annapolis—probably a ferry-boat‡—this summer (1760).

* Those marked thus have posterity still living in the county.

† His descendants still occupy and own the lot their ancestors settled on.

‡ Samuel Harris was the name of the first "ferryman" at Annapolis.

The foregoing gives all the material facts in the journal of Mr. Evans. In this and the following year the lands of this township were divided into lots for the new settlers by a committee, of which Mr Evans was an active and directive member. Each of them had allotted to him a wood-lot consisting of five hundred acres, in addition to an equitable portion of the cultivated marsh and upland, which had been previously the property of the French inhabitants. The settlers seem at once to have taken possession of their lots and to have commenced improving them. From the public documents which have been preserved in the archives of the Province, we are enabled to catch an occasional glimpse of them and their doings in their new homes. Before proceeding, however, to relate these particulars, I shall quote some interesting facts gleaned from the census of 1768 and 1770, which are furnished by original returns made by order of the Government. The returns for both these years give the names of the new settlers then remaining in the occupany of the township. The following is a copy of that for the former year :

NAMES.	Male.	Female.	English.	Irish.	Scotch.	Foreign.	American.	Horses.	Cows.	Oxen.	Young Cattle.	Sheep.	Swine.	REMARKS BY THE AUTHOR.
Bertaux, Philip	4	2	1	..	..	1	4	3	15	9	21	42	3	A girl born this year; one male left province.
Black, Benjamin	2	1	..	..	..	..	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Bennett, Thomas	1	1	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	
Balcom, Silas	2	3	..	1	..	..	4	4	7	7	6	18	3	Many descendants.
Barnes, Nathaniel	3	3	..	..	..	..	6	..	7	2	8	3	..	
Bancroft, Samuel	5	3	..	..	..	..	8	..	..	..	..	1	..	Many descendants.
Bartlett, Ebenezer	1	1	..	..	..	..	2	1	1	..	..	3	..	None known.
Bent, David	4	2	..	..	..	..	6	1	8	2	7	10	2	Many descendants.
*Bass, Joseph	5	5	..	..	..	..	10	..	5	2	5	14	2	Many descendants.
Baker, John	2	4	..	..	..	..	6	..	3	..	8	1	1	Many descendants.
Belliveau, Jean	3	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	Owned two fishing boats and one schooner.
Basterash, Jean	2	6	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	One fishing boat.
†Cosby, Anne	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	4	2	4	..	..	
Campbell, Robert	1	1	..	..	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Clark, Uriah	5	3	..	..	..	..	8	1	3	4	2	16	3	Grantee of lot 34 near Kent's.
Corbett, Isaiah	2	4	..	..	..	..	6	1	3	2	3	..	2	
Cleavland, Samuel	3	2	..	..	..	..	5	..	3	..	5	2	3	
Como, Francis	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	All Catholics and Acadians.
Como, Francis, jun., and four others of same name.	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Davis, John	2	2	1	..	..	..	3	1	2	..	..	..	..	
Dodge, Josiah	3	4	..	..	..	..	7	..	..	..	8	..	2	One male and one female born in 1767.
‡Dyson, Alice	1	2	1	1	..	..	1	..	6	2	3	7	..	
Daniels, Asa	3	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	Many descendants.
Dunn, John	4	6	..	..	..	..	10	1	3	..	..	10	..	Many descendants.
Dugau (2)	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	2	..	..	..	French Acadians.

*A brother of the first Episcopal bishop of Massachusetts. His lot was No. 58.
†Sister of Joseph Winniett and widow of Lieutenant-Governor Cosby.
‡The mother of Mary Dyson, wife of Joseph Winniett.

NAMES.	Male.	Female.	English.	Irish.	Scotch.	Foreign.	American.	Horses.	Cows.	Oxen.	Young Cattle.	Sheep.	Swine.	REMARKS BY THE AUTHOR.
*Easton, John	3	..	..	..	1	..	2	2	2	5	2	12	1	One saw mill. Descendants.
Evans, Henry	1	2	..	..	..	..	3	1	4	2	5	..	1	Many descendants.
Frost, John	2	1	1	..	..	..	2	..	3	2	7	3	1	
Felch, Ebenezer	2	1	..	..	..	..	3	..	3	2	7	3	1	Many descendants.
Felch, Daniel	3	1	..	..	..	..	4	..	3	..	8	4	..	Many descendants.
Fisher, Nathaniel	1	1	..	..	..	..	2	1	7	2	9	6	1	
Grant, David	2	1	..	..	1	..	2	..	..	2	1	..	1	
Grow, Edward	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	2	7	..	..	
†Gates, Oldham	6	4	..	..	..	..	10	.	2	5	13	18	3	Owned a fishing boat.
Gaudet, Joseph	1	3	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	Acadian. Owned a fishing boat.
Hardy, Aaron	1	1	..	..	..	.	2	2	2	3	5	7	..	
Hardy, Aaron, jun.	2	4	..	..	..	..	6	..	..	4	1	4	1	Descendants.
Harris, John	5	3	2	..	..	..	6	2	..	2	2	4	4	Owned a fishing boat.
Hoar, Jonathan	4	1	.	..	..	..	5	13	18	23	27	160	3	Owned two fishing boats
Hardwick, Henry	2	3	..	..	..	2	3	2	3	6	4	..	..	Descendants.
Hurd, Jacob	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	4	4	11	10	..	2	Owned grist and saw mill.
Hooper, Thomas	5	2	.	.	..	..	7	..	..	4	4	1	1	Descendants.
Kendal, Elisha	2	5	..	..	..	..	7	.	..	2	5	10	1	Owned a grist-mill.
Kent, Isaac	4	3	..	..	..	..	7	1	2	9	7	10	2	One child born, 1767. Descendants.
Lecain, Francis	6	4	1	..	..	..	9	3	4	8	10	28	2	Many descendants.
Linsley, John	2	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	3	..	3	..	2	Owned fishing boat.
Lee, Thomas	1	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	
‡Langley, John	5	2	..	..	..	..	7	1	5	4	3	13	2	Many descendants.
Lawrence, William	1	1	..	..	..		2	1	1	..	1	2	1	
Lawrence, Hannah	..	2	..	..	..	..	2	1	1	..	1	..	..	Was a Miss Messenger.
Lawrence, Jonathan	2	1	..	..	..	..	3	1	..	..	2	1	3	
Lovett, Phineas	1	.	..	..	..	..	1	2	10	4	25	12	3	Owned a grist and saw mill.
Leblanc, Charles	3	2	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	Acadian. Fishing boat.
Morse, Abner	6	3	..	..	.	..	9	1	4	2	14	8	..	Child born in 1767.
Morse, Samuel	2	2	..	..	..	..	4	1	4	2	4	10	4	Wife a Church.
Morgan, Ann	3	3	..	..	..	..	6	2	2	2	..	..	..	Wife a Church.
Mealman, Charles	3	4	..	..	..	2	5	..	1	..	..	.	..	A widow—three sons.
Messenger, Ebenezer	2	2	..	..	..	..	4	2	8	4	3	20	3	Numerous descendants.
Messenger, Ebenezer, jun.	1	2	..	..	..	..	3	1	2	..	..	1	1	Numerous descendants.
Morrison, Joseph	1	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Parker, Nathaniel	2	2	..	..	..	..	4	..	2	..	2	..	1	Many descendants.
Payson, Jonathan	3	3	..	..	..	..	6	..	4	..	1	..	2	Many descendants.
Rhodda, Stephen	1	7	..	..	..	..	8	..	2	..	2	..	1	
Rice, Joseph	1	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	1	..	2	2	..	
Rice, Judah	3	4	..	..	..	..	7	..	6	..	7	24	2	
Rice, Benjamin	1	.	..	..	..	..	1	..	.	..	1	..	1	
Rice, Margaret	..	1	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	
Rice, John	3	3	..	..	..	..	6	2	4	..	9	18	3	Descendants.
Rice, Timothy	2	..	..	..	..	..	2	2	2	..	4	19	3	Descendants.
Rice, Ebenezer	1	3	..	..	..	..	4	..	2	..	2	3	2	Descendants.

* See memoirs of Easson in another part of this book.

† Owned one thousand acres of land—lots Nos. 60 and 61, near Clark's ferry.

‡ Had lots Nos. 83 and 84.

NAMES.	Males.	Females.	English.	Irish.	Scotch.	Foreign.	American.	Horses.	Cows.	Oxen.	Young Cattle.	Sheep.	Swine.	REMARKS BY THE AUTHOR.
Smith, John	1	4	..	..	..	..	5	1	4	2	2	.	1	Saw-mill—cut 4,000 feet of lumber, 1767.*
Sanders, Pardon	6	2	1	..	..	..	7	2	17	9	15	23	2	
Saunders, Timothy	1	4	..	..	..	..	5	1	4	2	2	1	.	
Simpson, Benjamin	2	2	..	..	..	..	4	..	..	..	..	..	..	Owned a saw-mill.
Spurr, Michael	5	5	..	..	..	..	10	1	3	..	2	2	..	
Wilkie, James	3	4	1		..	..	6	2	2	2	1	..	2	
Walker, Robert	2	6	..	1	1	..	5	2	6	4	8	2	1	
†Winniett, Magdalen	..	1	.	..	..	..	1	..	8	2	15	2	..	
Williams, Thomas	3	3	1	..	..	..	5	2	5	4	2	..	2	
Winniett, Joseph	4	5	1	..	..	..	8	4	8	4	6	24	1	Many descendants.
Worthylake, Ebenezer	2	2	..	..	..	..	4	1	2	.	1	..	2	Many descendants.
‡Winniett, Matthew	1	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	3	2	2	..		
Wood, Rev. Thomas	2	2	2	..	..	..	2	2	1	..	1		..	
Wood, William	5	1	..	..	..	..	6	1	4	2	4	10	4	
Wheelock, Obadiah	1	3	..	..	..	..	4	1	4	4	9	16	2	Many descendants.
Wheelock, Elias	2	1	..	..	..	..	3	1	2	4	3	..	1	Many descendants.
Wheelock, Joseph	2	..	..	..	..	..	2	.	5	2	5	6	1	Many descendants.
Winslow, John Howard	2	3	..	..	..	..	5	3	1	..	2	4	3	None.
Winchester, Nathan	5	3	..	..	..	..	8	..	2	2	4		3	Many descendants.
Whitman Mercy	5	4	..	..	..	..	9	1	1	4	2	2	2	Widow.

The facts above given may be summarized thus: The total population was 513, of whom 445 were Protestant and 68 Roman Catholic; 370 of them were of American birth, 40 of English, 8 of Scotch, 20 of Irish, and 67 of Acadian birth, and 8 of foreign origin. Of cattle there were 832, of horses 76, of sheep 589, of swine 108. Of mills there were eight —four saw and four grist mills. Of vessels there were two schooners and nineteen fishing boats. The number of families was 99, and the average of each family slightly exceeded 5. The smallest household comprised only one member; the largest contained ten individuals. The people were chiefly, in fact almost wholly, devoted to agricultural pursuits, and in the preceding year they raised of wheat 539 bushels, or a trifle over one bushel per head of the population; of barley 446 bushels, or less than a bushel to each; of rye 317 bushels, being a small percentage over one-half bushel to each; it is therefore certain that wheat was the leading grain crop of this period. I now proceed to lay before the reader a portion of the census returns for the year 1770.

* The MS. leaves it uncertain to which of the three names, Smith, Sanders or Saunders, the ownership of the mill is intended to be imputed. It can only be shown by reference to the original return. The Saunders family were early engaged in lumbering.—[ED.]

† Widow of William Winniett, and mother of Joseph.

‡ Brother of Joseph; never married.

NAME.	Family.	American.	Acadian.	English.	Irish.	Scotch.	German.	Number of acres owned.
Bancroft, Samuel	8	8	..	..	..	..	..	40
Balcom, Samuel	6	2	4	..	..	..	..	572
Bass, Joseph	10	6	4	..	..	..	..	995
Bent, David	8	2	6	..	..	..	..	164
Baker, John	7	2	5	..	..	..	..	500
Bertaux, Philip	5	1	3	..	..	1	..	570
Balcom, Silas	6	2	4	..	..	..	..	.
Basterash, Jean	7	..	7	..	..	..	..	100
Clark, Uriah	7	4	3	..	..	..	..	1038
Corbett, Isaiah	7	3	4	..	..	..	..	272
Cleaveland, Samuel	6	5	1	..	..	..	..	500
Como, Francis, jun	5	..	5	..	..	..	..	..
Como, Francis	4	..	4	..	..	..	..	100
Como, Jean	5	..	5	..	..	..	..	100
Como, Justin	6	..	6	..	..	..	..	100
Dunn, John	10	8	2	..	..	..	..	500
Daniels, Asa	5	3	2	.	..	..	..	500
Davis, Elias	3	..	3	..	..	..	..	..
Dyson, Alice	3	..	1	2	..	..	..	500
Dodge, Josiah	7	2	4	1	..	..	..	400
Davis, John	3	..	2	1	..	..	..	..
Evans, Henry	4	..	4	..	..	..	..	1000
Easson, John	2	..	..	1	..	1	..	500
Felch, Daniel	5	5	..	..	..	..	..	642
Fisher, Nathaniel	4	2	..	2	..	..	..	1000
Felch, Ebenezer	3	3	..	..	..	..	..	748
Frost, John	1	..	..	1	..	..	..	100
Hardy, Aaron, jun.	7	2	5	..	..	..	..	430
Hardy, Aaron, sen.	2	2	..	.	..	..	..	1000
Hooper, Thomas	7	7	..	..	.	..	..	*
Hardwick, Henry	6	..	4	..	..	..	2	*
Harris, John	8	2	5	1	..	..	..	500
Kent, Isaac	9	9	..	..	..	..	..	1498
Kendall, Elisha	8	5	3	..	..	..	..	491
Langley, John	7	6	1	..	..	..	..	500
Lawrence, William	3	2	1	..	..	..	..	500
Lawrence, Jonathan	4	2	2	..	..	..	..	15
Lawrence, Hannah	2	2	..	..	..	..	..	500
Lovett, Phineas	4	3	1	..	..	..	..	2163
Linsley, John	2	..	..	1	..	1	..	..
Lecain, Francis	10	..	8	2	..	..	..	2000
Leblanc, Charles	4	..	4	..	..	..	..	..
Morse, Abner	9	2	7	..	..	..	..	1046
Morse, Samuel	5	2	3	..	..	..	..	769
Morrison, Archibald	8	..	..	..	8	..	..	320
Messenger, Ebenezer	4	4	..	..	..	..	..	900
Messenger, Ebenezer, jun	3	2	1	..	..	..	..	132
Morgan, George	8	..	7	1	..	..	..	150

* Obliterated.

NAME.	Family.	American.	Acadian.	English.	Irish.	Scotch.	German.	Number of acres owned.
Parker, Nathaniel	5	2	3	.	..	..	..	412
Payson, Jonathan	6	4	2	..	..	..	..	1000
Rice, Timothy	3	3	..	..	..	..	..	1449
Rice, Judah	8	3	5	..	..	..	..	1300
Rice, Beriah	1	1	..	..	..	..	..	1000
Rice, Ebenezer, jun	3	2	1	..	..	..	..	262
Rice, Ebenezer	4	4	..	..	..	..	..	500
Rice, John	6	2	4	..	..	..	..	..
Rhodda, Stephen	7	..	6	1	..	..	..	105
Simpson, Benjamin	4	2	2	..	..	..	..	..
Spurr, Michael	11	5	6	..	..	..	..	500
Sanders, Pardon	7	..	6	..	..	1	..	1000
Wheelock, Elias	5	4	1	..	..	..	..	1000
Wheelock, Obadiah	4	2	2	..	..	..	..	340
Winslow, John H	6	2	4	..	..	..	..	750
Wheelock, Joseph	2	2	..	..	..	..	..	1000
Winchester, Nathan	10	7	3	..	..	..	..	728
Whitman, Mercy	10	7	3	..	..	..	..	2000
Worthylake, Ebenezer	6	4	2	..	..	..	..	100
Winniett, Joseph	12	..	10	1	..	..	..	665
Winniett, Magdalen	5	2	2	..	..	..	..	1000
Williams, Thomas	8	1	6	..	..	1	..	344
Winniett, Matthew	1	..	1	..	..	.	..	364
Wilkie, Mary	4	..	4	..	..	..	..	150
Wood, William	6	..	4	..	..	..	..	..
Wheeler, James	4	2	2	..	..	..	..	..
Wood, Rev. Thomas	5	.	1	..	..	4	..	500
Walker, Thomas	8	1	6	..	..	1	..	400
Walker, Robert	7	..	5	1	..	1	..	100

Comparing these results with those of 1768, it will be seen that there was a *decrease* in the total of population equal to 17 per cent., while there was an increase in the Acadian or native portion of it of 230 per cent. in three years. The decrease in the American-born as shown by these census was about 54 per cent. This decrease may be accounted for in more than one way. An analysis of the names proves that *twenty-four* families removed from the township during the interval, some of whom no doubt, being dissatisfied with their position, returned to the colony whence they came, and others removed to other townships. The names of the families who thus left the township were as follows: Black, Bennett, Barnes, Bartlett, *Belliveau*, Cosby (Ann), Campbell, four *Comos* and two *Dugasts*, Frost, Grant, Grow, Gates (Oldham), *Gaudet*, Hoar, Hurd, Lee, Mealman, Rice, Smith, Saunders. Those printed in italics were Acadian Frenchmen and probably removed to Clare to settle among their countrymen, who had found their way thither after exile,

while some of the remaining ones, as Gates and Saunders (Timothy) removed to Wilmot, and Spencer and others to Granville. The subjoined is an abstract from a manuscript, entitled "State and Condition of Nova Scotia, 1763":

"In this county—Annapolis—are only two townships (to wit) Annapolis and Granville. Annapolis has about sixty families, and Granville eighty. Most of these inhabitants have large stocks of cattle; at least 1,600 head of horned cattle were wintered over by them last year, but they suffered much for want of bread, the inhabitants being reduced to the necessity of eating the Grain they had reserved for Seed, which will reduce them to Necessity this year also unless they can obtain some small supply. It is conjectured about 500 bushels Corn will be sufficient for that end, and if they could be supplied with 200 bushels of Wheat for Seed Early in the spring, these two townships would subsist without further assistance, and be able to pay next year for advances."

"A Court of Common Pleas has been erected consisting of four judges. Two are since dead and two wanting to fill their places.* A Commissioner of Sewers for Repairing and amending the Dykes in the township of Granville, is much wanted."

"Five Justices have been nominated for Granville but not yet appointed. The townships have none to represent them in the General Assembly. The proprietors of Annapolis and Granville have not yet got a grant† of their lands. A List for that End has been settled by a Committee of Council and approved of."

"Something is necessary to be done for the Public Roads in these townships. £50 has been voted in Council, £20 of which has been paid; the remainder laid out before winter would be very useful."

In August, 1763, Judge Hoar, in a letter‡ to Governor Lawrence, recommends William Graves and Benjamin Shaw for subaltern commissions in Captain Hall's company of militia; Samuel Wade and Paul Crocker for Captain ———'s company; Abner Morse and Joseph Bass for Captain Evans' company; informs His Excellency of the refusal of Mr. Lovett to accept a captain's commission, and recommends Mr. Oldham Gates in his place, and expresses his regret that "one Captain Jabez Snow was neglected, one that was a captain all last war, and behaved with reputation." The Snows of Queens and Shelburne counties are descended from this person. The Captain Hall referred to in this communication was John Hall who came to Granville about the year 1760 with his wife and family, the latter at that time consisting of two children. His descendants are very numerous and widely scattered over the maritime colonies. Among these the reader may note the name of S. S. Hall, Esq., a leading merchant of St. John, New Brunswick;

* The assertion that two of the four judges of this court had died since its institution in 1761, requires corroboration. Messrs. Hoar, Evans and Winniett were certainly all living in 1763, yet the writer was certainly in a position to know the facts.

† It seems certain from this statement that the grant of 1759 had been cancelled, and the title to these lands revested in the Crown. Yet there appears to be no record of an escheat extant.

‡ See this letter in full in memoirs of Mr. Hoar.

Mr. James I. Fellows, the celebrated druggist and chemist,* lately agent for the Province of New Brunswick in London; of the late James H. Thorne, Esq., of the Post-office Money Order Department in Halifax, and the Messieurs Hall, stationers of the same city, who are his great-grandsons.† The Samuel Wade spoken of was a son of Captain John Wade who, tradition affirms, was at the final capture of Louisburg and Quebec, having served with the colonial troops who were employed, and who so nobly distinguished themselves in these undertakings. His great-grandchildren are to be found in great numbers in the Province, and are generally distinguished by industrious habits and integrity of character. The descendants of Messieurs Graves and Crocker are likewise numerous and to be found in Wilmot and Aylesford, and those of Mr. Gates are also to be found in that section of the country.

In 1770 there was a general election, and Phineas Lovett, Esq.—the "Captain" Lovett mentioned in Hoar's letter to Lawrence—and Joseph Patten, Esq., were chosen as members of the new assembly for the county; and Obadiah Wheelock and John Harris, Esqs., for Annapolis and Granville respectively. Full notices of these gentlemen will be found in another place, to which the reader is referred. At this time road commissioners for the *county* were appointed, whose duty it was to spend the sums granted for the road service and to collect the taxes levied on the people for that purpose, and to report to the Government from time to time on the condition of the public highways and the financial requirements concerning them.

During the period from 1770 to 1780 the work of clearing the forests, reclaiming the wild lands, and turning them into tasteful and profitable farms went steadily and successfully, yet slowly onward, in the valley sections of this township, the regions beyond the adjoining heights being a *terra incognita*, except to a few adventurous hunters and trappers. The river afforded the chief means of transit in the summer season, the grist and saw mills being accessible in this way, and the transport of all heavy materials was carried on by means of boats and scows; yet, as we have seen, the land thoroughfares were not entirely neglected, though it was not until after the arrival of the Loyalists in 1783 that rapid strides of improvement were made in this direction. In the county town we catch here and there a glimpse of the inhabitants. In 1776 and 1777 we see Mrs. Mary Wilkie, widow of James Wilkie, in her trim little grocery store, where, among other things, she sold a "wee drap" of rum, which she had bought from Mr. John Fillis, wholesale merchant of Halifax. Andrew Ritchie, too, in 1777, was well supplied

* Inventor of the well-known "compound syrup of hypophosphites." He has recently died.—[Ed.]

† See other particulars in memoirs of Mr. Hall.



Sir William Fenwick Williams, K.C.B.,

Lieutenant-Governor of Nova Scotia.

with the same article by John Winslow of the same city, and also with an *equal* number of gallons of molasses. The Rev. Thomas Wood, most worthy of missionaries as he was, was supplied with twenty-eight gallons of wine (for sacramental and medicinal purposes) by James Brown, wine merchant of the Capital; and "Captain" Titus who preferred wine to the stronger beverage, imported fifty-four gallons of wine to be used as occasion served; and Captain Robert Young, who must have run a public-house, required 206 gallons of rum with which to supply his customers.

The leading magistrates were Joseph Winniett, who held many of the most important county offices, and Thomas Williams, both of whose families have furnished the Crown with an opportunity to reward distinguished services with knighthood, a grandson of each having received that distinguished honour at the hands of their Sovereign Lady, our present Queen. It was during this decade that Anne and Mary, Elizabeth and Margaret Winniett—the two younger sisters Alice and Martha not having passed beyond the initial "teen"—were the recognized belles of the day, and the objects of admiration by the officers of the garrison. Three of them, Mary, Elizabeth and Margaret, became the wives of Messieurs Hamilton, Nunn and Wolseley, respectively, and when military duty commanded, left their native town, no doubt with regret, to form new associations in other, and to them alien lands.

At this period the mails were carried from Halifax to Annapolis once every fortnight, and *vice versa*, partly on horseback and partly by a foot postman. A vehicle, other than the commonest of common carts, was a thing yet several years in the future. The winter was the joyous and truly enjoyable season of the year, for it was then that the "horse-sled" was put into requisition by old and young, the roads admitting its use, while, from their rude condition they refused to permit the transit of a wheeled carriage. It was therefore in this season that a round of visiting was planned and carried out, of visits to relatives in other townships, and friends in remote settlements; of the bride in the backwoods to the home of her girlhood; of the lover to the plantation where dwelt his "charming" Molly or Sally or Patty as the case may be; or of the "old people" to the new log-house in the forest, of which their eldest daughter had, during the year, been made the mistress by the stout-hearted and ready-handed young yeoman who now called her by the endearing name of wife; while in older settlements the apples of the French orchards afforded at once the materials for excellent cider and "paring parties," which the people of the old metropolitan county have not yet entirely forgotten to enjoy.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER X.

The following is a correct list of the names inserted in the first grant of the township of Annapolis, in 1759, which for convenience of reference I have arranged in alphabetical order. Quite a number of the persons named never came to the county, which was the case with many named in the first township grants in every county in the Province:

Abbott, Ephraim.
Abbott, John.
Armstrong, Timothy.

Bacon, Daniel.
Bacon, John.
Bacon, Stephen.
Baldwin, Nahum.
Barnes, Timothy.
Bent, Elijah.
Bent, Hopestill.
Bent, Micah.
Bent, P.
Bent, Thomas.
Bertaux, Philip (Annapolis).
Bird, Benjamin.
Bird, Benjamin, jun.
Boutein, Wm. (Annapolis).
Brewer, James.
Brewer, Jonathan.
Brewer, Moses.
Brown, Ebenezer.
Brown, Samuel.
Brown, Thomas.
Brown, William.

Cheney, Timothy.
Clapp, Joel.
Coolidge, Hezekiah.
Coolidge, Josiah.
Corey, Benjamin.

Daggart, Samuel.
Damon, Thomas.
Dan, William.
Darks, Benjamin.
Darks, Benjamin, jun.
Darks, David.
Davis, Caleb.
Davis, Joshua.

Eddy, Benjamin.
Emmes, John.
Evans, Henry.
Evans, John.

Farrar, George, jun.
Felch, Ebenezer.

Gardner, John.
Gates, Amos.
Gibbs, Isaac, jun.
Gibbs, William.
Gibson, Isaac.
Gibson, Nathaniel.
Gibson, Timothy.
Giggs, Samuel.
Glazin, Benjamin.
Glazin, Jason, jun.
Glazin, Jason 3rd.
Goddward, William.
Graves, Thomas.

Hagar, Isaac, jun.
Hall, John.
Hasey, Nathaniel.
Healy, Aaron.
Healy, Nathaniel.
Heard, Richard.
Hemmingway, Sylvanus.
Hoar, Josiah.

Jenkins, Joseph.

Keir, John.
Kendall, Eleazer.
Kendall, Elijah.
Knight, Samuel.
Knight, Stephen.

Lecain, Francis.
Lyon, Enoch.

May, Aaron.
McCullough, James.
McNamara, John.
Mereim, John.
Moore, Daniel, jun.
Mossman, James.
Muzzey, Benjamin.
Muzzey, Nathaniel.

Newton, Simon.

Pierce, Moses.
Pool, Samuel.
Powney, George.

Rice, Ebenezer.
Rice, Eliakim.
Rice, Ezekiel.
Rice, John.
Rice, Matthias.
Richardson, Antonie.
Rixon, John.
Rixon, Thomas.

Salter, Malachi (Halifax).
Sanders, Pardon (Annapolis).
Seaver, Comfort.
Smith, Ebenezer.
Spurr, Michael.
Stanhope, Samuel.
Stone, Jesse.
Stone, Samuel.

Troobridge, Thomas.

Underwood, Jonathan.
Underwood, Timothy.

Whitney, Jason.
Winslow, John Howard.
Wintworth, Edward.
Woodward, Isaac.
Woodward, John.
Woodward, Josiah.
Worthylake, Ebenezer.
Wyar, James.

CHAPTER XI.

TOWNSHIP OF ANNAPOLIS, CONCLUDED.

By the Editor.

Loyalist refugees arrive—Invasion of the town in 1781—The Loyalists—A plot to rob and murder in 1785—Capitation tax list of 1792—Court-house and jail—Town officers, 1797—Description of the town in 1804—The same in 1826—Its antiquity—The fort—Churches—Old buildings—The fire record—Revived prosperity—Appendix—A remarkable prayer—Verses—Relics—The Goldsmiths—The "Rising Village."

THE breaking out of the Civil War in the older colonies could not fail to deeply interest the people of this county. Some of the class known as "Loyalist Refugees" came and settled here from time to time as the disaffection in those colonies became more pronounced. Disapproving of the measures of the malcontents, from which they foresaw sanguinary consequences, they sought to escape by a timely removal with their families and fortunes to a community that was peaceful and contented. Immigrants bound to the older colonies, but discouraged by the gloomy prospect which met them there, turned their steps hitherward, where better securities for "life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness" seemed to them to present themselves. This accession to our population was of course, when hostilities at length began, augmented in consequence of the bitter persecutions instituted against any who sought even to remain neutral between the contending parties. It is unjust to consider this class of Loyalists any less meritorious than the exiles of 1783. They were equally devoted to the darling principle of a "United Empire," and cheerfully rendered the loyal service which allegiance and patriotism demanded of them in their new homes, while their influence did much to encourage and promote a loyal sentiment among their new neighbours and associates, natives of the colonies in revolt, and children of such natives; and when the Province was threatened with invasion, they rallied for its defence in "Royal Emigrant Companies."

The early settlers in Cumberland and Kings counties memorialized the Government, asking for the same exemption that Governor Phillipps had granted the Acadians as a qualification of the ordinary oath of

allegiance, saying, "It would be the greatest piece of cruelty and injustice" for them to be "subjected to march into different parts in arms against friends and relations." But as a rule the sympathies of the people of this county, happy in their new and valuable possessions, and disregarding mere sentimental grievances, were with the Government, to whose bounty they were so freshly indebted—a few notable cases excepted. One was that of William Howe, son of the worthy and celebrated Edward How, whose history is elsewhere given. We are not justified in attributing to Phineas Lovett and John Hall any adverse sentiments stronger than sympathy with the objects for which the colonists professed to contend in the earlier stages of the agitation that preceded and inaugurated a civil war that was soon to be directed to other aims and objects than the mere "redress of grievances." A certain sympathy born of solicitude for friends and kinspeople engaged in deadly conflict, with or without entire approval of the cause for which they fought, can scarcely fail to find a place in human hearts. Solicitude and sympathy affect the judgment, so that a minority is often turned into a majority when the sword of authority is invoked for the suppression of a rebellion territorial in its area.

The "Acts for the Pacification of America," passed by the British Parliament, February 17th, 1778, conceding to the colonies everything they had asked for before they had resorted to arms—more, indeed, than their authorized representatives and delegates had ever claimed—checked any murmurs of disaffection in Nova Scotia, and made any attempt at separation on her part as unjustifiable as it would be to-day, or as the secession of the Southern States was in 1860. This town, however, was not long to rest in the enjoyment of the coveted security. Colonel Phineas Lovett, happening to be a passenger in a vessel sailing from Salem to Machias, Me., was interviewed by one Stephen Smith, who had been a delegate to the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts Bay. Smith inquired of him about the state of the forts at the mouth of the St. John River and at Annapolis, and as to the probable disposition of the people in the event of an attempt by the Continentals to capture the country. Mr. Lovett promptly informed the local authorities at Annapolis of this conversation, and a petition signed by Rev. Thomas Wood, Thomas Williams, ordnance store-keeper, Colonel William Shaw and John Ritchie, with a letter from Matthew Winniett, was sent to the Government asking for a supply of arms and ammunition. Mr. Lovett, who probably was despatched with these documents, appeared before the Council and was examined. As a result, by an order of July 24th, 1775, a supply was sent consisting of six barrels of gunpowder, ball in proportion, and four 6-pounders for the forts at Annapolis and Granville. On August 26th, a light infantry company of fifty men was ordered to be formed at Annapolis. Following close upon this, the Council requested

Captain Le Cras that His Majesty's ship *Tartar* should go to Annapolis to assist in its protection. In 1776, militia were garrisoning both the forts at Annapolis and Goat Island. The Spring Circuit of the Supreme Court that year was dispensed with, to avert a possible capture of the judge and officers of the court by piratical cruisers in the Bay of Fundy. In short, the settlements in the western parts of Nova Scotia were kept in a perpetual state of terror from the beginning to the end of the war, during which none of our people were more loyal or attached to the Government than the returned Acadians. On August 28th, 1781, two rebel schooners, one of twelve and the other of ten carriage guns, with eighty men, came up the river, and landed half the men under cover of night. They first, according to Murdoch, surprised the guard, consisting of three soldiers from the forts on the St. John River, who were asleep, entered the south sally-port and took possession of the barracks within the stockade, with no loss of life except that of their own pilot, whom they killed by mistake. A well-authenticated tradition in the town corrects Murdoch as to the guard, and declares that there was none whatever at the fort on this night. The pilot is said to have been a Frenchman, who had two or three years before made himself amenable to the punishment of branding in the hand for some criminal offence, and now proposed to avenge himself by conducting the enemy into the fort and killing the sheriff whom he expected to find there. He was afterwards buried by the citizens near the block-house without any very reverential funeral ceremony. One of the citizens, the late Mr. John Roach, father of William H. Roach, afterwards M.P.P., who lived near the middle of the Lower Town, was awakened between midnight and morning by the noise of an angry discussion on the street, which he found on opening the window proceeded from two armed men apparently disputing over some property in their possession. One of them at once presented a musket to him and demanded admittance, having gained which he made him a prisoner. Another citizen* just then rushed in giving to his neighbour in excited tones the, by this time, superfluous information that the "rebels" were in town, adding to the epithet an adjective still less complimentary, whereupon one of the intruders pointed his musket at him, and he, startled, sprang quickly backwards and tripped over a cradle containing an infant, and fell with his feet upwards across the cradle in such a ludicrous position that he attributed his escape with his life to his assailant's amusement at his ridiculous plight. All the able-bodied inhabitants were in the same way disarmed, made prisoners and placed in the moat at the fort, and there guarded by armed men, while others of the crew plundered every house and store of everything movable, leaving the townspeople only the garments they were actually clothed in.

* Mr. Cossins.

No second article of wearing apparel for inner or outer use was left. The ladies were spared the shoes they had on, but without the silver buckles. It is related that there was a sick lady* in a house near the present Catholic glebe, whose coloured servant went down to the water-side and appealed to them on behalf of the invalid whom they had deprived of every necessary as well as comfort. One of them ordering her to spread out her apron, they filled it with tea, sugar, etc.

They kept possession of the town a considerable part of the day, indulging freely in strong drink, and terrorizing the inhabitants; but when they heard a rumour that the militia were mustering in the surrounding country, they left suddenly, first spiking the cannon in the fort, and carrying with them as prisoners Thomas Williams, grandfather of Sir W. F. Williams, and John Ritchie, afterwards M.P.P., grandfather of Chief Justice, Sir Wm. J. Ritchie, whom they released on parole and promise of exchange for an American prisoner at Halifax. In connection with this affair Colonel Phineas Lovett wrote to the Halifax *Gazette* as follows: "In yours of the 4th, the public is informed of the taking of the town of Annapolis Royal on the morning of the 29th August last, which is true, but that 'when the express came away the pirates were under full sail standing up for the town again,' and that 'there were no militia mustering to oppose them,' is absolutely false." Whatever may be the facts on these points, Colonel Henry Munro, who promptly came down from Wilmot to offer military assistance, afterwards spoke in strong terms of reproach of the inactivity and irresolution of the officers in command here. In the same year the armed schooner *Adventure* captured a rebel schooner of sixty tons register, and brought her into Annapolis to be disposed of. In the spring of 1782, an American privateer sloop of fifty tons, carrying about forty men and eight guns, created alarm in the town, chasing a vessel of Captain Mowat up as far as Goat Island, but in the afternoon of the same day a British man-of-war, the *Buckram*, coming in, took her, the men escaping to the woods.

During this summer a very interesting character was added to the social and religious life of the town, the Rev. Jacob Bailey, a Loyalist, who had fled from Pownalborough, Me., to Halifax in 1779. The reader is referred to a biography of this clergyman, entitled "A Frontier Missionary," by Rev. Wm. S. Bartlett (Boston, 1853), in which copious extracts from his journal are published, showing the conditions of life and society at that period in Annapolis and Kings counties. Several hundreds of Loyalist exiles came here directly from their former homes in the same year.

In 1783, the news that peace had been concluded on terms recognizing

* Said to be Mrs. John Ritchie, whose husband they took prisoner.

the independence of the revolted colonies was received at first with doubt and then with dismay in this town and county. Many who gloried in the traditions of the Empire, men who themselves had helped to add to the common renown the achievements at Louisburg or Quebec, now happy in the reward of their services, as well as proud of their part in contributing to the grand result which promised a lasting peace and unfettered progress to their nationality in North America, found it difficult to tolerate the idea that a territory so lately peopled by fellow-heirs of the same heritage of glory should be set up into an independent and rival state, especially under the influence and patronage of France, regarded by them as the hereditary enemy* of the British race

* The friends of humanity and civilization may well rejoice at the improved relations that have existed between England and France during the last three-quarters of a century, while they might imagine, from the tone of American writers and speakers in the press and in Congress, that the United States has succeeded France as the arch-enemy of the British Empire and people. English thinkers who, so far from reciprocating such a feeling, rejoice in the great prosperity of the Republic, console themselves that such utterances are but the device of politicians to "catch the Irish vote"; and when Senator Ingalls a few years ago declared in his place that England had always been "a very devil amongst the nations," the Canadian and British press jumped to the conclusion, and lost no time in announcing that he was a Fenian fresh from the dynamite plots of the Irish Invincibles, whereas he is a descendant of one of the Lincolnshire founders of Lynn, Mass., a graduate of Williams College, Mass., and probably of as pure English blood as the average native Englishman himself. In our public demonstrations at national festivals and the like, our people seek to show a fraternal feeling, as well as to pay a compliment to American visitors, by displaying the American flag beside our own. Woe betide the unfortunate man who should attempt to similarly honour the British flag in the United States. The partial instruction imparted for generations to the youth of the country in their common school books and in Fourth of July orations, replete as these are with bitter and often untruthful invectives, is largely the cause of this unnatural feeling. A large proportion (shall I say, a large majority) of the American press exploit a pinchbeck patriotism by proclaiming that Great Britain and the United States are natural enemies, carefully withhold the Canadian side of the case and misrepresent the issue in any question that arises between the two governments, and propound hostility to Great Britain and everything British, especially to Canada as part of the Empire, as a primary duty of American citizenship. In the Civil War between the United States and the Southern Confederacy, American troops were freely allowed to pass by rail over Canadian territory from Windsor to the Suspension Bridge at Niagara Falls, to save time and expense in bringing them from the Western States and territories to the seat of war; but a few years later, when our first North-West rebellion broke out, the force sent from Ontario and the stores which accompanied it had to be disembarked at Sault Ste. Marie and carried around the rapids, with great delay, in consequence of the refusal of the Government of the United States to permit them to pass through the St. Mary's Canal, although the lives of all the white settlers at Fort Garry, at the mercy of half-breeds and savage bands, depended on their prompt arrival. And yet *we* are denounced in the United States Senate and press as unneighbourly! After Canada had consented to a treaty respecting the fisheries, which President Cleveland pronounced to be perfectly just and satisfactory, in lieu of an old one of which his people complained, and it was rejected by the United States Senate, the same President announced to Congress that matters had reached a point at which it became their duty to do all they could to injure Canada! Sad would it be, and a disgrace to our common humanity, if we should ever be provoked into allowing these feelings to become mutual. Let our rulers, as heretofore, stand strictly within our rights, and let our rulers and people persevere in extending the olive branch, and leave a monopoly of unstatesmanlike hostility and unworthy jealousy to such of our neighbours as deem it not inconsistent with the dignity of a great nation to cherish and evince such sentiments.

and nation. Deprecating the end at which the extreme revolutionists aimed, they were aghast at its unexpected accomplishment. Following fast on the unwelcome news came the living witnesses of its truth in the swarms of exiled and destitute Loyalists who reached the port. To these it was no figment of the poet, but a stern and disastrous fact, that

> "Honour may be deemed dishonour,
> Loyalty be called a crime."

In modern times the clemency of Anglo-Saxon governments has generally spared discomfited rebels the penalties to which they are subjected by the laws alike of civilized and barbarous nations. During the American revolution it was the paradoxical lot of those who strove to *uphold* legally constituted authority in their respective localities, to suffer these very penalties in no mild or diluted measure. Assured in their best judgment and consciences that the circumstances did not warrant a resort to arms, and that to oppose with arms the national government were treason and rebellion, alike a crime against human and divine laws —if they shrank from doing so, or showed favour to authority, they found themselves amenable to formal indictment, trial and condemnation as traitors and rebels. To espouse one side in the unhappy struggle involved them in the guilt of treason; to favour the other exposed them to its penalties, applied and enforced by the provincial authorities, where these were controlled by the insurgents, acting in advance of established and recognized national existence and autonomy. Even when the outrage of executions, instead of the milder punishment of attainder, confiscation and banishment, followed these travesties of the application of the law of *crimen læsæ majestatis*, the Mother Country, divided in her councils, with weak officers in the field, and devoted to the policy of merciful measures to restore revolted subjects to allegiance and union, preferred proposals to reprisals, and conducted the war in a vacillating and irresolute spirit. But the regular, if illegal, action of judges and juries, and acts of attainder were not all that the unfortunate Loyalist had to dread. In the absence of these he was exposed to revolting outrages at the hands of lawless mobs, who, unrestrained, if not encouraged by those who had grasped authority, set at naught all the dictates of reason and humanity. Nor did the honest attempt to observe a strict neutrality shield his person from violence or his property from spoliation; and Quakers, whose religious tenets held war in abhorrence in any case, were whipped* for refusing to fight, or hanged for alleged favour to the Government, which had afforded them protection, while it claimed their fealty. The spirit of the insurgents may be discerned in the

* "Journal of the Life and Labours of William Savery, Minister, etc.," p 17. Savery "Genealogy," p. 147. Carlyle and Roberts executed at Philadelphia in 1777.

conduct of those who invaded Cumberland in 1776, when they seized and carried away the resident Church of England minister, and kept him a prisoner for sixteen months, although as Nova Scotia had not asserted her independence, there could be no question of this non-combatant's loyalty toward his Provincial Government as well as the Imperial. The American author of the "Frontier Missionary," referring to the Loyalist clergy, says: "Should a crisis occur when the citizens of one of the United States shall be compelled to choose between the command of his own State and that of the Federal Government, the position of those clergymen may then be appreciated." Seven years after these words were written the crisis came. Have American writers learned the lesson?

In negotiating the treaty of peace the British Government earnestly pressed the United States for reparation to the Loyalists, or their restoration to the property and estates so unjustly plundered and confiscated, only to be told by the American Commissioners that the General Congress, which alone they represented, had no authority to make this concession, but could only recommend it to the governments of the respective States, in whom the necessary power resided, each state being entirely independent of the others. As a matter of form the promised recommendation was made, and except in the case of Georgia, which tardily and partially complied, it was met in the several legislatures with contempt and expressions of contumely toward the sufferers; and redress was refused, in contravention of the usages of civilized nations to extend amnesty and restoration of civil rights to defeated combatants who make due submission to the authority of the successful party in a civil war. Meanwhile, as American publicists and diplomats have freely with an affectation of gratitude admitted, Great Britain generously "endowed"* the new republic with "gigantic boundaries" for the sake of "reconciliation," as Lord Shelburne is reported to have said, and in the conviction that perpetual amity would thenceforth exist between peoples so identified in religion and blood, and with a community of moral and material interests, and so recently estranged through the policy of their respective rulers. This territorial concession was designed to give room for the development and expansion of a great nation, united in alliance, if not in allegiance, with the parent State. "Reconciliation," exclaimed Franklin, perhaps with more ingeniousness than ingenuousness, "that is a sweet word." But he asked too much, when not satisfied with a vast and most valuable territory outside the limits of the thirteen colonies, he pleaded as a particularly gracious gift for the cession of all Canada, thus proposing to coop up the impoverished Loyalists and their families within very narrow limits indeed. And

* Hon. John Jay.

unfortunately the concessions actually made did not close the door to subsequent boundary disputes which have brought war clouds to the horizon more than once in our day, and happy would it be if these were confined to boundaries in which the two nations are really concerned. It is to be deplored that the early annals of the young member of the family of nations, destined to such material, if not moral, greatness, should have been stained by such treatment of those whose only crime was their conscientious adherence to a lost cause: a cause hallowed to their hearts by the traditions of the ages, and identified in their minds with the true interests of their country; but it was on the part of the new republic a policy as short-sighted as it was vindictive, for it was of untold advantage to the loyal provinces by driving to these shores a large body of subjects, intensely, and by force of circumstances, more intensely, devoted to British institutions and the unity and perpetuity of the Empire. I make these remarks with no desire to keep alive or encourage a feeling of national resentment in the bosoms of any of our people. Nothing could be more irrational or unchristian-like than for people to quarrel because their forefathers quarrelled on the issues that disturbed the harmony of men in the distant past, or for a person to hate another because the latter's ancestor two or three generations ago did the ancestor of the former wrong; and what is folly in the individual is only aggravated folly and wickedness in the multitude. But the facts regarding the Loyalists and the reason of their coming here are in danger of being lost sight of, through their suppression in the most popular American books on the history of those days; and I would fail in my duty if I did not correct the error so widely prevalent that our Loyalist ancestors came here of their own free-will, prompted only by a sentimental and silly fondness for royalty, instead of the necessity to escape pauperism, or even imprisonment or death in their native provinces. Halifax, Shelburne, St. John and Annapolis (there being then no houses at Digby to afford them adequate shelter) were the ports most easily accessible to the expatriated Loyalists, and to these they flocked in great numbers, hoping, with the aid of the Government in whose loyal service they had lost all, to repair, in part at least, their shattered fortunes, and to secure for their posterity, with better guarantees of permanence and of just administration, the blessings of law and constitutional freedom under the flag which, as a national symbol, was as dear to them as the flag of "the Union" was to any northern volunteer during the second but less successful American rebellion. Unlike the first English-speaking settlers in the country, they brought with them nothing but stout hearts and strong and willing hands, and in many cases mental gifts and culture which added richly to the intellectual, if not material, wealth of the young community. Their chief men were from

the very flower of old colonial society, and there were among them representatives of every national origin and every religious creed to be traced among the old colonial population. The author of a small treatise published anonymously at Edinburgh in 1787, entitled "The Present State of Nova Scotia," asserts that Annapolis received an accession of 2,500 by this migration, which increased the extent of the town to six times its former area, with a population larger than it ever before possessed.

To give a more accurate account I will quote from Mr. Bailey's journals and letters, as reproduced in the biography referred to. On his arrival in 1782, he puts the population of Annapolis Royal at 120, comprised, as he said in a letter written five years later, in eighteen families, with a considerable number of French in the neighbourhood. Late in October of that year nine transports, convoyed by two men-of-war, arrived, bringing five hundred Loyalist refugees, by whom, Mr. Bailey says, "every habitation is crowded, and many are unable to procure any lodgings. Many of these distressed people left large [confiscated] possessions in the rebellious colonies, and their sufferings on account of their loyalty and their present uncertain and destitute condition render them very affecting objects of compassion." In October, 1783, he mentions the arrival of nearly one thousand people from New York, and in November 1,500 more, "in affecting circumstances, fatigued with a long and stormy passage, sickly and destitute of shelter from the advance of winter." "Several hundreds are stowed in our church, and larger numbers are still unprovided for." The 57th regiment of troops also arrived this autumn. A small unfurnished apartment, he said, cost $3.00 per week rent. He states, on November 6th, 1783, that "the population of the country," when he arrived in Annapolis, was about 1,500, including French. Since that, between three and four thousand had been added and several new settlements formed. In 1784 the court-house and every store and private building was crowded with people, so that he was obliged to perform divine service at several miles' distance or at his own habitation. In letters of May 10th and 11th, 1787, Mr. Bailey reports that many people have removed from the several towns in this county upon their farms, so that Annapolis contains only forty-five families including negroes, few of them in affluent circumstances, and many poor, with about five times as many in the county under his care. He describes a journey to Clements in the autumn of this year for the purpose of marrying Shippey Spurr and Alicia Van Voorhies, going out to Lequille to cross the river at the head of the tide, and proceeding by a circuitous route over "horrid broken roads, so encumbered with rocks, holes and gullies, roots of trees and windfalls and sloughs, that the passage was extremely difficult and dangerous,"

crossing Moose River also at the head of the tide, making the whole journey twelve miles.

The Loyalists not only soon removed "upon their farms," or grants of land allotted to them in various sections of the county, including the western, or Digby section, but soon crossed to St. John, then Parrtown, and settled there or up the St. John River, and at Fredericton, and some after a longer or shorter stay in the county, went to Upper Canada, where the names of not a few, who had previously sojourned in this county, became afterwards famous.*

Under date 1785, Murdoch relates a circumstance of which I can find no tradition among the inhabitants, and no mention in any note of the author, nor does the name of the magistrate occur in contemporary lists of justices: "At Annapolis a plot was discovered. One Young had fifty desperate fellows under his command, and they had settled a plan to be carried out on the Queen's birthnight. While the principal inhabitants were at the anniversary ball or assembly they were to murder Justice Bunhill,† plunder the town, and convey the pillage on board a vessel to Boston. Young was arrested and confined in the jail at Annapolis." In 1787 a new road to connect the old capital with Shelburne was commenced; John Ritchie, Thomas Williams and Alexander Howe were the commissioners for the expenditure of the money, and John Harris, M.P.P., the contractor. In 1789, on motion of Mr. Potter, £40 was voted by the Grand Jury toward building a bridge over Allain's Creek, and David Seabury, Douwe Ditmars, John Rice and William Winniett were appointed commissioners to build it. The bridge, which stood on the site of the present one, was not finished until 1802, when the sum of £200 was granted by the Legislature for that purpose.

In 1791 the Province found itself in debt to the amount of some $40,000 or $50,000. It was resolved to pay off this debt, and an Act was therefore passed, commonly known as the "Capitation Tax Act," by which all the male inhabitants over twenty-one years old should be taxed, non-landholders not more than fifty cents per head, and landholders not more than $2.00. The author expresses himself as being so fortunate as to find, among the archives of the Province, the return made by the

*Christopher, father of Sir John Beverley Robinson, Bart., Chief Justice of Upper Canada, settled in Wilmot, leaving a kinsman (nephew, I think), who came with him, in Digby, among whose grandchildren is the present postmaster there. The grandfather of Hon. William McDougall, C.B., one of the first cabinet of the Dominion, lived thirteen or fourteen years in Digby. A Mr. Eakins received a grant of 1,200 acres near Digby, but removed to western Canada where his posterity are prominent men. One line of the family, in which the spelling of the name has been changed, has given to the public service the Hon. J. C. Aikins, member of the Privy Council, Governor, of Ontario, etc.

†Isaac Bonnell was a Justice of the Peace and lay Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, but lived in Digby.

assessors of this township under this law. This paper gives the names of those persons who were liable to be taxed under its provisions, and will enable us, by comparing its contents with those of the census of 1770, to ascertain what families had been added to the population of the township from that year to 1792, in which the return was made. Below are the names given arranged in alphabetical order:

Akir, James.
Aldridge, Christopher.

Bacon, Lewis.
Bacon, Stephen.
Bailey, Rev. Jacob.
Baker, Henry.
Baker, Jacob.
Baker, John.
Balcom, Isaac.
Balcom, John.
Balcom, Silas.
Baltick, William.
Bancroft, Jeremiah.
Banks, Thomas.
Barclay, Thomas.
Bass, John.
Bass, Joseph.
Bass, Joseph, jun.
Bass, William.
Beals, Abel.
Beardman, Andrew.
Beardsley, Abraham.
Bennett, David.
Bent, David.
Bent, William.
Bertaux, John.
Bertaux, Philip.
Bertaux, William.
Biehler, Andrew.
Bonnett, David.
Bonnett, Isaac.
Bradley, Mark.
Brenton, Charles.
Brothers, Samuel.
Brown, Andrew.
Brown, John.
Bruce, Daniel.
Brymer, David.
Bulkely, John.
Burkett, Alexander.
Burkett, John, sen.
Burkett, John, jun.

Carter, James.
Chandler, John.
Charleton, Humphrey.
Chipman, Thos. Hanley.
Chivoree, John.
Clark, David.
Clark, Gideon.
Clark, Uriah.
Comeau, Anthony.
Comeau, José.
Croneen, Matthew.
Cooper, Rev. John.
Copeland, William.
Corbet, Isaiah.
Corbett, Alvan.
Cornwell, Thomas.
Cousins, Joseph.
Cross, William.
Cushing, Benjamin.
Cutler, Ebenezer.

Daniels, Asa.
Daniels, Ephraim.
Daniels, Joseph.
Darnford, Thomas.
Davies, George.
Davoue, Frederic.
Delancey, James (Col.).
Delancey, Stephen.
Dickson, Robert.
Dummaree, Thomas.
Dyer, John.

Eager, James.
Easson, David.
Easson, Thomas.
Easson, Widow.
Emerson, Joseph.
Engles (Ingles) William.

Favin, Benjamin.
Featherly, —
Felch, Daniel.
Fisher, Nathaniel.
Fowler, Francis.
Frairey, Peter.
Francis, William.
Franks, Christopher.
Fraser, James.

Garratt, R.
Gates, John.
Gates, Jonas.
Gedree (Guidri) Augustin, sen.
Gedree, Augustin, jun.
Gedree, Peter.
Gedree, Phillis.
Gill, Thomas.
Godfrey, Robert.
Graves, Elias.
Graves, Phineas.
Gray, William.
Green, James.

Haight, Ambrose.
Hall, John.
Hall, Joseph.
Hardwick, Henry.
Hardwick, Henry, jun.
Hardwick, John.
Harris, Benjamin.
Harris, John.
Heaton, John.
Henderson, Andrew.
Hendry, William.
Hibbs, James.
Hicks, Benjamin.
Hicks, Thomas.
Hicks, Weston.
Hood, John.
Hoofman, John.
Hooper, Ezekiel.
Hooper, Jonathan.
Hovey, John.
Hoyt, Capt. Jesse.

Jefferson, Robert.
John, Thomas.
Johnson, Thomas, jun.
Johnston, Peter.
Johnston, Toby.

Kent, Arod.
Kent, Lara.
Kysh, Anthony George.

Langley, John.
Langley, John, jun.
Langley, Nathaniel.
Langley, William.
Lathwait, James.
Lecain, Francis, sen.
Lecain, Francis.
Lecain, Jack.
Lecain, John.
Lecain, Thomas.
Lecain, William.
Little, Peleg.
Livesey, William.
Lovett, Col.
Lovett, Phineas, jun.
Lowere, George.
Loyall, James.

Mangar, Peter.
Marshall, Solomon.
Martin, Michael.
Mason, Joseph.
McDonald, William.
McLaren, Neil.
McNamara, John.
Messinger, Ebenezer.
Messinger, Ebenezer, jun.
Messinger, Henry.
Messinger, John, jun.
Michael, Harry.
Middleton, William.
Miller, Richardson.
Milligan, Patrick.
Morse, Abner.
Morse, Abner, jun.
Morse, Daniel.
Moody, James.
Morse, Obadiah.
Morse, Samuel.
Morse, Silas.
Mott, Charles.
Munroe, George.

Nichols, Richard.

Oakes, Jesse.
O'Brine, John.
Oliver, David.

Page, William.
Parker, Nathaniel.
Payson, Jonathan.
Phinney, Zaccheus.
Pickett, Glasgow.
Pickup, George.
Plato, Robert.
Polhemus, John, jun.
Poole, John.
Prince, Benjamin.
Prince, William.
Pryor, John.

Randall, David.
Randolph, Robert Fitz.
Randolph, Samuel Fitz.
Ray, Moses.
Rhodes, William.
Rice, Ebenezer.
Rice, John.
Rice, Joseph.
Rice, Silas.
Rice, Timothy.
Ried, John.
Ritchie, Andrew.
Ritchie, Andrew, jun.
Ritchie, James.
Ritchie, John.
Ritchie, Matthew.
Ritchie, Thomas.
Roach, John.
Robertson, John.
Robertson, John, sen.
Robertson, William.
Robinson, Edward.
Robinson, John, jun.
Robinson, Jonathan.

Sanders, Daniel.
Sanders, John.
Sanders, Pardon.
Scarborough, William.
Seabury, David.
Sharry, Joseph.
Shutsor, Nickolas.
Simpson, Benjamin.
Simpson, Henry.
Sinclair, Frederic.
Smith, Jonathan.
Sneden, Lawrence.
Spencer, Luke.
Spurr, Michael.
Spurr, Thomas.
Street, Ebenezer.
Street, Samuel.

Tattersall, James.
Totten, Mrs. Susanna.
Totten, Peter.
Tufts, William E.
Tupper, Asa.
Tupper, Elisha.
Tupper, Minor.

VanBlarcom, Alfred.
VanHorn, Lawrence.
Viditoe, Jesse.

Walker, Peter.
Walker, Thomas.
Waller, Joseph.
Ward, James.
Ward, Jonas.
Warner, Noah.
Watson, Francis.
Watts, John.
Weeks, Elijah.
Weeks, Henry.
Welton, Bethel.
Welton, Erie.
Welton, Ezekiel.
Wheelock, Elias.
Wheelock, Joseph.
Wheelock, Obadiah.
Whitman, Daniel.
Whitman, Edward.
Whitman, Jacob.
Whitman, John.
Williams, Thomas.
Wilkinson, Francis.
Wilson, Leonard.
Winchester, John.
Winchester, Nathan.
Winchester, William.
Winniett, Joseph.
Winniett, Matthew.
Wiswell, Peleg.
Wolseley, Robert.
Woodruff, Jabez.
Worthylake, Ebenezer.

Many of these were men of culture and a peculiar refinement of manners, such as distinguished those remembered by the generation now passing away, as "gentlemen of the old school;" scrupulously exact in points of etiquette, even in the common transactions of everyday life, and of unbending, yet suave dignity, and keen sense of honour; and their homes were centres of a social life and hospitality of a graceful and dignified type in the old town, when its glory as a capital had departed. Some filled conspicuous positions in the politics and statesmanship of the Province, and will be duly mentioned later in the biographical memoirs of members of the Provincial Parliament. Quite a number, especially of those who were the most eminent, left no posterity bearing their names; at least, their names have in process of time disappeared from our census rolls. Others left sons and daughters whose descendants still continue among us, or are to be found in other townships in this or the neighbouring counties, where they bid fair to transmit their respective patronymics to many a generation.

The circuits of the Supreme Court were established in 1774, the law then passed requiring the Judges to sit in Cumberland, Horton and Annapolis, five days in each place. References are made in the records of the Grand Jury to a court-house in the town, the foundation of which needed repairs in 1786, but by later records it would appear that the Court of Sessions* in and previous to 1791 hired for a court-house a building belonging to Mr. Joseph Winniett. In the last-named year a dispute arose between the Court and Mr. Winniett's executrix about the amount of rent charged, and the Grand Jury recommended the acceptance of an offer from Mr. Frederic Sinclair, innholder, of his "large room below stairs," for the purpose of holding the Supreme and Inferior courts and sessions. On being urged by the Bench they paid the amount claimed, but on September 27th, 1791, they voted the sum of £400 for the erection of a building for a new jail and court-house, and appointed Messrs. Douwe Ditmars, Andrew Ritchie and George Cornwall a committee to see to its erection. In May, 1792, £300 more was voted, and in September, 1793, the building being nearly completed, the further sum of £165 was voted to complete it, and in 1796, provision was made for adding a wing for a kitchen. The subsequent fate of this building and the erection of its successor will appear in Chapter XVI., where events more properly belonging to the history of the county at large will be narrated. The jail, which had been in charge of Mr. John Roach, stood

* Formerly the municipal authority of the county, consisting of the Bench or Court of Magistrates, presided over by the Custos and the Grand Jury, selected substantially as now. The latter recommended or "presented" all money appropriations to the Court, and recommended two men for every municipal office, out of whom the Court selected one.

near the site of the present Dominion building, on land belonging to the Church or to the Rev. Mr. Bailey, to whom the county paid rent.

In 1791, "the *stock* in the town of Annapolis being out of repair, the Grand Jury have nominated Anthony George Kyshe, Esq., Isaac Bonnett and Joseph Cousins a committee to repair the same, and to fix them between the church and the town pump, or any other public place as may seem most convenient to said committee." The town pump was a little to the southward of the site of the Dominion building, and the church a little to the northward of it. The next reference to the stocks was in 1801 when the Grand Jury "presents" the necessity of an inquiry into the ferry rents, "the money arising from said ferry to be appropriated to the erection of a pair of stocks and pillory, and the residue to the occasional repair of the county house;" and the last was an order in 1803 that they should be erected near the court-house.

The war with France, under the Republic, having begun in 1793, three bodies of militia were raised in the county—one by Colonel Barclay in this portion of the county; one by Colonel Millidge, in Digby, and one by Colonel Taylor in the western section, the latter consisting wholly or mostly of Acadians of Clare. Colonel Barclay offered the services of the men under his command to repair part of the old works at Annapolis, "so as to make a small, snug, complete redoubt, on the most commanding situation;" and the next year a supply of cannon and ammunition arrived at the fort, and in 1795, the fortress being much dilapidated, and the platforms rotten and untenable, the Lieut.-Governor, Sir John Wentworth, applied to His Royal Highness Prince Edward, Duke of Kent, as Commander-in-Chief, stating that £120 would suffice to repair the west angle, so that the place would be secure from any desultory assault or piratical enterprise, privateers under French colours being engaged in harassing colonial commerce. The Governor himself visited the town in the autumn.

On July 9th, 1794, Hog Island (now called by the more euphonious name of "Bay View") was granted to Robert Dickson, David Bonnett, and John Burkett, in trust for the use and benefit of the inhabitants of Annapolis. This place was used from the earliest settlement as the scene of public executions, until the law required the death sentence to be carried out within the precincts of the prison, beyond the morbid gaze of the public.

The following, copied from the original in the possession of R. L. Hardwick, Esq., will be interesting as showing who conducted the civic affairs of our forefathers "a hundred years ago":

A List of Town Officers, Nominated by the Grand Jury and Appointed by the Court, April Term, 1797, for to serve for One Year.

Stephen De Lancy Fredk. Devoe Pardon Sanders Minor Tupper James Eager	*Overseers of the Poor.*
William Cross	*Town Clerk.*
Thos. LeCain Benj. Harris Spencer Winchester Ezekiel Messenger Ezekiel Cleveland	*Constables.*
David Bonnett Jesse Hoyet John Ried	*Assessors.*
Silas Hoyet Obediah Morse Asa Bent	*Collectors.*
Ebinzr. Cutlar	*Surveyor of Hay.*
Charles Worthylake	*Culler of Staves.*
Robert Wolesley	*Scaler of Weights and Measures.*
Elijah Weeks Isaac Balcome Thos. Bartaux Benjn. Fern John Messenger John W. Turfts	*Hogg Reeves.*
Robert Dickson	*County Treasurer.*
Minor Tupper	*Pound Keeper.*
Thos. Walker Andrew Ritchie	*Supervisors Common Marsh.*
Andw. Ritchie	*Clerk of Market.*
John Burkett	*Culler of Fish.*
John Roach	*Scaler of Leather.*
John Rice Jabez Woodroff	*Surveyors of Land,*
Ebinzr. Cutlar Benjn. Fern Daniel Whitman Michael Martin Jonas Gates	*Fence Viewers.*
Andrew Ritchie	*Gauger.*
Israel Potter John Ried John Gates	*Overseers of Fishery.*
Wm. Robertson	*Inspector of Pickled Fish.*
Wm. Winniett Henry Hardwick Jesse Hoyet Elisha Tupper Richard Ruggles Timothy Rice Edward Whitman Nath. Parker	*Overseers of Highways.*
Isaac Bonett	*Inspector of Smoked Herring.*

By order.

Wm. Winniett, *Clerk.*

On the back of this instrument is written, "Mr. William Cross,* Town Clerk, Annapolis."

1804. At the end of the second century in the history of Annapolis we will pause to give what account is possible of the condition of its chief town and its environs as it existed in this year. It spread in a straggling way from the cape to the "land's end" at Hog Island; Colonel Stephen De Lancey had a dwelling in the latter section, which occupied a site near the present Catholic glebe-house; here, too, was the place of abode and business of the Davieses, and near the head of the ferry-slip was the hardware store and warehouse of Stephen Sneden, the first ironmonger in the village; and nearly opposite stood the residence of Rev. Jacob Bailey, and near to it but a little to the southward, where the railway crosses St. George Street to reach the pier, and on the east side of the street, stood the church, dedicated to the memory of St. Luke. Adjoining the premises of Mr. Bailey was the residence of William Robertson, soon afterwards M.P.P. and Colonel of the Militia. A little to the eastward of the old railway station was the home of the Widow Cooper, which some ten years before she had inherited under the will of Joseph Cossins, her father. She was an only child, and from this date, as before, occupied a first place in the society of the town. Next to her house, but still farther to the south, were two of the oldest and best dwellings in the village, the houses of the late Thomas Williams and Joseph Winniett. A little to the north on the opposite side of the street was the Hecht or Haight house which was at the beginning of the century owned and occupied by the late David Bonnett. John and Alexander Burkett, Loyalists from Pennsylvania, owned and occupied the sites now covered by the American Hotel and Runciman's warehouse, respectively. The latter of these men was for several years postmaster, the former a merchant in the town, and each held for a short period the office of High Sheriff. From this section of the village southward to and including the cape, were the dwellings and lots of the Ritchies—Andrew, sen., and the sons of Andrew, sen., and of John, who were both natives of Scotland, and the latter of whom came here as early as 1774, and both of whom were engaged in mercantile pursuits; the Walkers, also Scotch, who came hither as naval officers

*William Cross had been a prosperous stationer and bookbinder in Boston. Espousing the loyal side in the war of the revolution, he entered as a private a volunteer company of foot, and served under General Howe. He lost everything, and was appointed stationer to the Royal Artillery Department in 1790. An affidavit setting forth his services, sworn at Shelburne, August 18th, of that year, by David Black, a lieutenant in the company, before William Bauld, J.P., is also in the possession of Mr. Hardwick. He married Ann, daughter of the first Andrew Ritchie, and died August, 1834, aged 83, leaving three daughters, two maiden ladies and one Mrs. Fletcher, who became a widow, and these ladies long lived in what is known as "the Cross House," still standing on the corner of St. Andrew and Drury Streets, repositories of much historical and traditionary lore which they were always glad to communicate, but is now lost forever.



Sir Wm. Johnstone Ritchie,

Chief Justice of Canada.

about 1757; the Wilkies, who came about the same time; the Lecains; the Berteaux; the Eassons, descendants of John Easson; the Davoues, whose house stood near where the Baptist Church now stands; the Cutlers, Loyalists, who first settled in eastern New Brunswick, and had shortly before removed here, where Ebenezer, the head of the family, was long Deputy Prothonotary of the Supreme Court, while carrying on a general store in the town; the Dicksons, Loyalists, whose father had once been sheriff of the county and collector of customs. John Howard Winslow, a pre-loyalist settler, and Frederic Sinclair each kept an inn here as early as 1782. Sinclair died in 1800, and his well-known old hostelry was destroyed by fire a few years later. It stood on the east side of St. George Street, next to the corner of Drury Street. The Barclays had removed to New York a few years before, and Doctor Henckel, assistant surgeon in the army, had just become a settler in the town, and in 1806 was appointed health officer.

In 1805 such a great scarcity of circulating medium was specially felt in the town, that a petition for measures of relief was sent to the Legislature.

In the session of 1805-6 of the Provincial Legislature, an Act was passed providing a bounty for the seeding and clearing of new land, which had the effect of adding over 1,000 acres to the cleared lands of the county in a single year. The return made to the Government under this law in 1807 shows that the number of acres thus cleared in the township of Annapolis was 296.

In 1808, on Wednesday, April 8th, the 101st regiment commenced their march from Halifax to Annapolis; the war with France was still raging, and questions arising out of it were disturbing the relations between Great Britain and the United States; and the attention of the British Government was again called by the Lieut.-Governor, Sir George Prevost, to the dilapidated condition of the provincial defences generally, of which he says, "ruin and desolation," were "the characteristic features." Events connected with the war of 1812 more properly belong to the county at large; but I may here record that a prosperous West India business, very valuable to the town, was interrupted and destroyed by the outbreak of hostilities. On February 19th, 1809, Sir Charles Darling, afterwards Governor of Victoria, was born in Annapolis. His father, Lieut.-Colonel Darling, was then residing here in the capacity of commandant of the garrison and inspecting field officer of the militia, which position he held for several years. Three other natives of the town, who received the honour of knighthood for distinguished services, or in recognition of professional eminence, Sir William Fenwick Williams, Sir William Robert Wolseley Winniett, and Sir William Johnstone Ritchie, all belonging to old Annapolis families, will be mentioned in other portions of this work.

Among the many events that made the year 1815 memorable was the great and decisive battle of Waterloo. On the arrival of the news of the great victory, the joy of the people of Nova Scotia knew no bounds, and in no part of the Province did that joy find a nobler expression than it did in the right loyal old capital. The town was illuminated, and bonfires made to blaze in every street, but its best manifestation is to be found in the subscriptions of the people to the "Waterloo fund," the object of which was to aid the parent Government in endeavouring to relieve the distress caused by the otherwise glorious event. These subscriptions in the township of Annapolis reached an amount equivalent to $376 of our money, by fifty-eight contributors, the largest of whom were Colonel D. Herbert, and Phineas Lovett, jun., each $40; Rev. Cyrus Perkins and Thomas Ritchie, M.P.P., each $22, and Samuel Vetch Bayard, George Henckel, surgeon, and Robert Fitz Randolph, each $20.

By an Act of the Legislature in 1811, Grammar schools were established in seven counties and districts, including Annapolis; the head masters were each to be paid £100 a year, and the assistant, when over thirty scholars attended, £30. Revs. John Millidge and Cyrus Perkins, and Thomas Ritchie, Esq., were the first trustees of the Grammar School. A Mr. Judge seems to have been the first master of the old academy. Probably his immediate successor was Caleb A. Shreve, a graduate of King's College, Windsor, son of the Rev. Thomas Shreve, first Church of England minister at Parrsboro', and uncle of Thomas C. Shreve, Esq., now mayor of Digby. He was succeeded by Mr. Watson, an Englishman, I believe, who held the position some years. After him came the late Charles Miller Forbes, who was born at Nairn, Scotland, June 30th, 1811, and graduated at the University of Aberdeen, and who had been teaching at Antigonish before coming here in 1839. He was at the head of the Annapolis Royal Academy over twelve years, after which he went into business, and was later Registrar of Probate, until his death in 1883.

As early as 1781 a very efficient High School had been opened by Benjamin Snow, a Loyalist, and graduate of Dartmouth College, who was succeeded, before the spring of 1783, by John McNamara, also a Loyalist, who had been one of the household of Rev. Mr. Bailey, and probably educated in the higher branches by him. He conducted this school, and received the school grant of the great Church of England "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel" until his death in 1798, by which, as Bishop Charles Inglis said, "the community sustained a considerable loss." He was also postmaster.

Ichabod Corbitt, toward the end of the last century, opened a school and continued to instruct the youth of the town in the English branches for the long period of sixty years, filling during a portion of the time

the position of second master in the Academy. He has left a considerable posterity, some of whom have been honourably conspicuous in the mercantile and social life of the town. Later came Andrew Henderson as teacher in the Academy, and of an independent or private school, and of a boarding school to be referred to hereafter. Mr. Henderson migrated from Enniskillen, Ireland, to New Brunswick, early in the century, spent a year or two there, and then removed to Wilmot, thence to Bridgetown, and finally to Annapolis, where in his declining years he filled the office of postmaster.* Mr. Augustus Fullerton, still living among us, was honourably identified with the cause of education in the town for a number of years, as a teacher, and is now a useful member of the Board of Commissioners for the western section of the county. The first Grammar School building probably stood where its successor did on the southern end of the White House field, where a more commodious one was erected in 1827, precisely where Mr. Hardwick's tenement house now stands, immediately to the north-east of the overhead railway bridge. It received for many years a vote of £200 a year, which, with tuition fees, supported two teachers. One teacher sometimes received the grant from the great Church of England Society. On the introduction of the new school law in 1866, the building was sold, and the main part of it (exclusive of the wings in which two junior departments were kept) now forms St. Luke's Sunday School house. A building adapted to the requirements of the new law was erected in its place, but as the demand for additional room grew with the revived prosperity of the town, the present building, formerly the mansion of the late Judge Ritchie, and known as "The Grange," was purchased with the adjacent grounds, and fitted up in 1883. The building of 1866 was in its turn, sold, and becoming the property of Mr. A. H. Riordan, was moved and made an annex to the "Dominion House" hotel, on Railway Street, with which it was consumed in the fire that destroyed that block in 1887.

On August 11th, 1811, one acre of the "White House field," so called, was granted for a church. This field had been granted in 1763, to Honourables Richard Bulkeley and John Newton, in trust for fortifications, if necessary, but the Government in 1765 paid for it to Lieutenant Christopher Aldridge, son of Major Christopher Aldridge, of the 40th foot, who had long before, with the permission of the Government, bought it from former French owners. In 1775 the people had, under the influence of Mr. Wood, a pastor who was much beloved, commenced a new church, 60 by 40 feet in size, which in 1783 Mr. Bailey reported as still unfinished, but provided with a steeple and bell. This church was opened

* All Mr. Henderson's posterity bearing his name reside in other provinces. Two grandsons, barristers in good standing, are in St. John, N.B.

for divine service on Easter Day, 1784; but it would appear that the bell was afterwards transferred to the court-house. Its site has been already mentioned. The present church was opened in 1821, and the spire was built in 1837. The first bell was hung in a sort of framework in the angle back of the church near the chancel. After the spire was built Judge Thomas Ritchie presented the church with a larger and more suitable bell, in exchange for the old one, which he placed in one of his outbuildings and used for the purpose of calling his farm labourers to dinner. This second one was used for many years, and finally becoming cracked, was sent to a foundry in Troy, New York, in part payment for a new one.

The French, after the destruction of this church by the New England troops in 1707, worshipped for a time in a part of one of the buildings in the fort, in which, however, they soon built a new church, but after the English occupation a Roman Catholic church stood, it would seem, at the extreme "land's end," so called, near where Mr. T. S. Whitman's large buildings now stand. There is said to have been a footpath from the cape along the side of the river in the rear of the properties on the east side of St. George Street south, used by the French from the settlements outside of the *banlieue* in going to and from divine service. The present Catholic church edifice was built about 1834 or 1835.

I will here introduce an extract from an article written in 1826, a portion of which was published in the *Acadian Magazine* in that year:

"The town of Annapolis is built on the extremity of a peninsula, which, projecting into the river, forms two beautiful basins, one above and the other below the town; there is one principal street on the bank of the river, with several leading from it; the houses generally look old and decayed; on the road by the cape is a fine wooden house belonging to Thomas Ritchie, Esq.,* and another built by Rev. Mr. Millidge,† Rector of the parish. The church is very neat and capacious, but it has neither spire nor bell. The court-house on the opposite side of the road is furnished with a bell and bell-tower. The bell rings to call together the parties when circuit court is held, when the magistrates and sheriff with his constables at the head, form a kind of procession in escorting the presiding judge to the court-house on each day of sitting. The government house is a large wooden building, where the officer in command of the garrison resides. The fort, built by the French on their first occupying the soil, covers an area of twenty-eight acres, the ramparts being raised with earth, and faced with sods; which being cut out of the sandy soil (the whole neck between the two rivers being nothing else) soon mouldered away, and some parts of the work needed repairing every spring. The English after taking possession, revested it all around with timber six or seven inches in diameter, to the proper height, covering them with ground and sods. In the early days there were numerous buildings inside the enclosure, including the Governor's residence, and soldiers' barracks; these being built of wood, have all decayed, with the exception of the powder magazine, built at the first

* Now the County Academy.

† Now the residence of John H. Runciman, Esq.

settlement. This building is of stone, the interior of a white variety of stone brought from France, the exterior stone taken probably from the country surrounding the fort. Subercase built in addition a second bomb-proof magazine, capable of holding sufficient material for sustaining a long siege. This magazine served as the foundation of a quadrangular brick edifice built afterwards by the British, and occupied as a barracks for the soldiers. The old magazine built by the early French is in excellent preservation, having been repaired by the Duke of Kent at the time of building the brick barracks. The works which have been erected at a very great expense, are now in a dilapidated condition ; the ramparts dismantled of the cannon, etc. There are now within the fort two ranges of wooden buildings containing quarters for the officers, the large brick barracks covering the bomb-proof magazine before mentioned as built by Subercase in 1707, the old magazine built in 1642, a hospital, mess house, storehouses and armoury. These wooden buildings were built by the British, supplementing the wooden buildings of the French which succumbed to the ravages of time, and are all gone, except only the venerable magazine built of stone."

Precisely when the fortifications of Annapolis Royal were first built on their present site, it is impossible to state with accuracy. Ignorant of the existence of the barns on the present site of the town, and of the mill at what is now Lequille, Argall left them untouched. The barns were amidst cornfields which we have seen were successfully planted in 1606. We must remember that the name "Port Royal" was more properly that of the port or harbour, and that all the scattered hamlets or clusters of habitations around its shores would in early days be designated by the one general name, until each attained sufficient growth and importance to require a new one to distinguish it from the others. With cultivated fields or gardens, and barns in which to store their products, for the use of dwellers four or five miles distant, before a building had been erected on the present site of Quebec, Annapolis is entitled to the palm of antiquity over her larger and still more illustrious rival for the honour, even if no regular dwelling houses were actually erected alongside of these barns and gardens ; but it is in the highest degree reasonable to suppose that where there existed barns and gardens there would also be some houses for occasional, if not constant, use, in summer if not in winter, although the fort on the site first selected was the real stronghold, and adapted by its situation to intercept an enemy coming up the river. Haliburton (Vol. I., p. 38) in describing the interview between Argall and Biencourt, falls into two errors, the one consequent on the other, locating the fort on its present site, instead of where subsequent researches have shown it to have been, and mistaking the creek and stream, in his day and ours called the Lequille, for the main river then called L'Equille ; while Parkman ("Pioneers of France," p. 287) probably follows Haliburton in saying "the marauders went in boats up the river to the fields." Boats were not necessary to ascend the main river, and it is absurd to suppose that they would ascend the creek and small stream without destroying the buildings.

Father Biard, whom Argall brought with him to the fort, and whom Biencourt and his followers accused of betraying them, does not in the passage cited by Parkman (p. 288), pretend that his appeal on his knees to Argall rendered him more lenient to the French for whom his mercy was implored, but that it elevated him (the Father) in Argall's esteem, and secured him better consideration and protection. We must therefore conclude that Argall only ascended the river far enough to destroy the crops and buildings patent to his view, and wittingly spared nothing. Archbishop O'Brien's observations on this point, and touching the continuity of the settlement ("Life of Bishop Burke," p. 46) are evidently sound and judicious. I think it must be assumed that from the year 1607 the nucleus of a settlement had been growing with the other improvements* on the present site, concurrently with that at the fortified post below, and that here Biencourt sheltered himself during the ensuing winter. That a settlement remained on the earlier site after it had been abandoned as a stronghold, we know from the stone† found about 1827 in Granville "near the eastern parapet of the old Scotch fort on the site of the French cornfields, contiguous to the creek of St. Germains," carved roughly with the name "Lebel," and the figures (evidently denoting the year) "1649." That Biencourt and his disheartened followers undertook to fortify the new settlement is somewhat doubtful. We must probably give D'Aulnay de Charnisay who, it has been seen, made his headquarters here on being appointed Razilli's lieutenant, the credit of beginning the fortifications, the romantic ruins of which now lie before us; and we may date that beginning as early as 1634, possibly 1632. With his Norman peasants, or perhaps later, on his return from one of his visits to France, made in order to undermine the influence of Latour, he brought with him from Normandy the Caen limestone, of which the old powder magazine was built, according to the generally received date, in 1642. Hannay suggests that D'Aulnay's first fort was on the site of that of Champlain or of the Scotch fort, and on the alleged authority of Governor Winthrop says that he "commenced" a new one at the present site in 1643.‡ But D'Aulnay would not be likely to build a fort and abandon it in so short a period, and the language of Winthrop, when closely examined, does not bear out any such inference. Latour's Boston

* See page 10 *ante*.

† Now, 1897, in the possession of Fred. Leavitt, Esq. Haliburton and others following him in discussing this stone give the year 1643, but the figure "9" is too plain to be mistaken. On the other hand, if his letter to the Historic-Genealogical Society of Boston is correctly quoted in the *Proceedings of the Grand Lodge of Massachussetts* for 1891, Dr. Jackson probably writing from memory, errs in respect to the letters, giving the two words "La belle" ("the beautiful one") instead of the surname "Lebel." Lebel is said to have been a clever business man of Paris, who spent several years in Acadie, where he was guardian of D'Aulnay's children.

‡ Hannay's "Acadia," p. 162.



VIEW OF THE FORT AND PART OF THE TOWN OF ANNAPOLIS, A.D. 1829.

(From Haliburton's "Nova Scotia.")

auxiliaries on their return home in 1643 reported "they found D'Aulnay gone into France, and a new fort raised at Port Royal."* "Raised," in the speech of that day, meant "erected," "built," and the language is quite consistent with the fort having been built some years earlier, although they had only then become aware of it. To them and to the Governor at Boston it was still a "new fort." The old French wharf, a structure nearly triangular, was situated farther down the main river than the one built by the English in 1746. The stone and masonry supports still to be seen in the main ditch of the fort were built under the direction of Mascarene in 1742. Among the French buildings in the fort in 1713 was a "handsome chapel," which Rev. Mr. Harrison, the English chaplain, petitioned Governor Nicholson to order applied to "pious uses." There was also a large and imposing building used as a barracks and mess room on the north side of the quadrangle, with several gables, facing south. This was allowed to yield to the natural process of decay. In the closing year of the last century the Duke of Kent caused the building still remaining to be built for officers' quarters, as well as a large wooden building for barracks on the south side of the quadrangle and the large brick building three stories high on Subercase's bomb-proof powder magazine, which formed the foundation and first story of it. The wooden barracks was burnt in the latter days of January or first days of February, 1830.† The brick building was taken down in 1853, exposing to view two enormous arches forming its support and the capacious bomb-proof powder magazine over which it had been erected, the walls of which were of much greater thickness and capacity than those of the older one. The older magazine was then still in good preservation. In 1895 further steps were taken for its protection, previous to which it was continually suffering from the depredations of relic-hunters from abroad, who broke off and carried away pieces of the peculiar stone of which it was built. The block-house, which first in the distance told to the approaching stranger its silent story of the past, was taken down by the order or with the permission of the Canadian Government in 1878, much to the disgust of all public-spirited citizens of the town.

The 40th regiment,‡ known as "the fighting fortieth," which was

* Winthrop's "Journal," p. 180, Vol. II., Ed. of 1853.

† A letter in the military records at Halifax, dated February 7, speaks of it as "the recent fire." Capt. Eustace Hill was in command with a company of the 96th regiment. He and his men were complimented on their exertions to save the building.

‡ Its first officers were: Colonel, Richard Phillipps; Major, Alexander Cosby; Captains, John Caulfield, Lawrence Armstrong, Paul Mascarene, Christopher Aldridge, and John Williams; Lieutenants, James Campbell, John Jephson, Edward Bradstreet; Ensigns, James Erskine, John Keating. It has more recently been merged in the 1st Battalion Prince of Wales Volunteers (South Lancashire Regiment). A history of it has lately been published.

organized at Annapolis in 1717 (see Murdoch, Vol. I., p. 351), or a portion of it, garrisoned the fort at Annapolis from that year until 1755, and probably till 1758, when it formed part of the expedition against Louisburg. In 1740 five companies of it were at Annapolis, four at Canso, and one at Placentia. There is no indication that any part of it returned to Annapolis after 1758. In 1789 the fort was garrisoned by a part of the 6th regiment under command of Capt. Peacock, who appears to have been very popular with the citizens; for in that year he was presented with a complimentary address, signed by the following leading residents: Joseph Winniett, Joseph Winniett, jun., Joseph Cossins, Isaac Bonnett, Andrew Ritchie, Jacob Bailey (Rector), David Seabury, David Bonnett, Ambrose Haight, O'Sullivan Sutherland, Andrew Bierdman, Robert Tucker, Matthew Winniett, Robert Dickson, William Robertson, Elijah Weeks, Fred. Sinclair, John Lecain and William Shaw.

His Royal Highness the Duke of Kent first visited Annapolis in 1794,* the year of his first arrival at Halifax, and was afterwards here frequently until his departure for England in 1798. In 1799 he returned to Halifax in his capacity as Commander-in-Chief of the forces in British North America, and on visiting Annapolis in that year was presented by the citizens with a loyal address.

About the years 1820-22, Lieutenant Christian Conrad Katzmann, of the 60th Rifles, a native of Germany, a graduate of Göttingen University, father of our distinguished poetess, Mrs. Katzman Lawson, was stationed here for two years.

In 1835 we find the fort garrisoned by a company of the 83rd regiment, Captain Colquhon, with Lieutenant Kensal. Among other distinguished officers who served in the garrison within this century, one in particular I have often heard spoken of in kind terms by the citizens. William Henry, Lord Kilmarnock, afterwards seventeenth Earl of Erroll, who married a daughter of Major-General Gore, a niece maternally of the late Doctor Benjamin De W. Fraser, of Windsor, was here for a time between 1844 and 1846. He was wounded in the hand at the battle of the Alma in 1854, and died in 1891. Thomas H. Bailey, son of the Rev. Jacob Bailey, was barrack-master and store-keeper in the early part of the century, but the last to fill that office was Joseph Norman, familiarly known as Major Norman, a Peninsular veteran and non-commissioned officer who had a very interesting record. He is said to have planted the trees in front of the old fort and cemetery. From time to time the number of troops in the garrison were reduced till a mere detachment remained, and in 1854 they were finally withdrawn, Lieutenant Wedderburn, 76th regiment, in command, and thenceforth Annapolis Royal was no longer a "garrison town."

* Journal of Rev. John Wiswall, Rector of Wilmot.

At the date of the article quoted from the *Acadian Magazine* there stood near the old government house on St. George Street a cottage of a single story with dormer-windows, the framework of squared logs, although for many years it had been covered with clap-boards. It was probably over two hundred years old, and was long said to be the only one of the old French houses remaining. It was used as a residence for the French governor in the time of peace. Records show it to have been repaired and sheathed in 1744. This cottage was demolished in the early sixties, and the well-known mercantile establishment of William McCormick & Sons now occupies the site. The old "Williams house," in which Sir W. Fenwick Williams was born, stood until 1874, when it was removed to make way for the Union Bank building. The main part of it was moved to St. Anthony Street north, nearly opposite the rink, and is owned by Mr. William McClafferty and occupied by his tenants. The other part or wing of the house was similarly moved to Dalton Street, where it was refitted as a tenement house by the same owner, and still stands. The "Winniett house," built by Joseph Winniett, stood on the adjoining lot, south of the Williams house, and was torn down in 1884 to make way for the opening of Victoria Street. Long these quaint old mansions, suggestive relics of other days and fashions, stood side by side, pathetic memorials of a generation of worthies long passed away, and as if to perpetuate, if possible, the life-long and brotherly friendship that existed between their original owners.

We have spoken of several fires, and as the town has been unfortunate in this respect, beyond any other in the Province, a glance at its fire record will not be out of place in this chapter. Two years after the burning of the wooden barracks, the dwelling house of Robert Sneden, in lower town, with its contents was destroyed; and in 1833 the old English government house, a building of three stories which stood nearly opposite the present Union Bank, was burnt up. The court-house was burnt in 1836; in 1846 a dwelling on the cape occupied by John Barnaby; in 1854 the store and contents of Charles Starratt on the corner of St. George and Albert Streets; and in 1855 three barns in the rear of the Commercial Hotel, opposite the slip, were burned. To pass over, however, the many single buildings that were consumed from time to time (including the Cooper House in 1869), the two stores of Thomas A. Gavaza & Sons were destroyed in 1877, and in 1880 a great fire swept away a large number, some eighteen buildings, situated in the region of the town opposite the fort. In 1881 the dwelling and store of A. W. Corbett followed, and in 1885 a great fire swept away all that portion of the town on the water-side which extended from McCormick & Sons' store to the railway. Finally, in 1887 a fire at the corner of St. George and Railway Streets swept away a large block of fine wooden buildings on St.

George Street, a fine large hotel known as the Dominion House, and several large buildings to the eastward of it on Railway Street, and gutting the brick building occupied by the Bank of Nova Scotia.

An admirable system of water supply was introduced in 1889, and we may note here the introduction of the electric light for house and street purposes on December 21st, 1891, through the enterprise of Mr. Carman Odell. The town was incorporated in 1893, and the first town council and officers were: Mayor, Hugh Evan Gillis, Barrister; Councillors, Charles McCormick, Robert L. Hardwick, A. H. Riordan, Arthur M. King, Eben. M. Anderson, and Charles F. Monroe. Richard J. Uniacke was appointed Town Clerk, and Frederic Leavitt, Esq., Stipendiary Magistrate.

The writer in the *Acadian Magazine* speaks of the old and decayed appearance of the houses of the town. Many years later the same remark might still have been made. For a few decades, about the middle of the century, Annapolis seemed to remain stationary, while its sister town of Granville Ferry, through the enterprise of its citizens engaged in ship-building and navigation, in the palmy days of those pursuits, bade fair to distance it in the race of progress, and development of wealth. But among other causes, the opening of the Windsor and Annapolis Railway in 1869, inaugurated for it a new era. The products of the upper part of the county, as well as the regions to the south, which began to be peopled and developed, have been brought to its wharves for export, and the producers have frequented its stores and workshops to buy, and the volume of its business has induced a prosperity and infused a life that have changed the face of the town. I well remember the late Chief Justice Sir William Young's eloquent reply to an address of congratulation by the Grand Jury, felicitating them in turn on the completion of the railway, as a result of which, he told them in his North British accent, but graceful diction, "the ancient capital of Acadia will resume some of her pristine importance." The truth of his prophecy is splendidly apparent to anyone whose memory goes back a quarter of a century. *Esto perpetua!*

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER XI.

Illustrating alike the mental traits of religious New England people of the middle of the last century, and the perplexities of some of the early settlers on the question of the Civil War, the following from a manuscript journal of Handley Chipman, of Cornwallis, the ancestor of the Chipmans of the western counties, is worthy of a place here:

"As Thou, heavenly Father, hast so overruled in the course of thy Holy and wise providence that my son John is chosen representative of this town to the General Assembly, O so order it that it may be in mercy to him and not in judgment, neither to him nor to this people, but help him I pray to look to Thee to enable him to know his duty, and to do it faithfully, not only in this public station, but in that of Justice of the Peace. Lord, Thou knowest what a critical situation at this time it is to walk in the station he is put in, so as to keep a good conscience and the good will of the most leading men here in this province."

On Lebel the author wrote the following:

I.

Two hundred years ago and more,
Upon Taywoapsk's wood-crowned shore,
Where Scotland's sons had just before,
 Erected homes wherein to dwell;
As if a future age to mock,
Some human hand upon a block,
Of compact metamorphic rock,
 Engraved the sounding name—*Lebel.*

II.

Two hundred years the secret keep,
And bid it still in silence sleep;
And none are left to mourn or weep,
 The name that some one loved so well.
Two hundred more may come and go,
With footsteps solemn, grand and slow,
And still the story none shall know,
 That lingers in the name—*Lebel.*

The late James Gray, Esq., deserves honourable notice here for, among other reasons, his interest in the antiquities of Annapolis. He was born in Halifax, and came to the town in 1824, where he resided until his death, March 15th, 1877, in the eighty-fourth year of his age. He married January 6th, 1831, Susan Spurr, of Round Hill, and left surviving a son, Charles, now Doctor Charles Gray, of Mahone Bay, and daughters, Mrs. A. B. Cunningham, of Annapolis, and Mrs. Craig, of Yarmouth. During his early residence in Annapolis he was actively engaged in mercantile pursuits, but later, a prominent and able magistrate. He collected in his leisure a very interesting lot of mineralogical specimens and curious old relics. Here I must take the opportunity of expressing my deprecation of the neglect of our people in not taking steps to keep in the place those valuable relics of antiquity which American tourists are buying up in the vicinity and carrying away with them every year. The old barracks should have been long ago fitted up as a receptacle and museum for these things, like Pilgrim Hall at Plymouth, Mass. A

chair made out of the wood of which the old block-house was built, was sold at a church fair and carried away to Connecticut. It ought to have been presented to the Historical Society of the Province, as a seat for the President. I have seen in the library of the Massachusetts Historical Society in Boston, a key of enormous size, with a label attached bearing the words, "Key of Port Royal, Nova Scotia."

In 1865 the following was written by Mr. A. M. Gidney, in the Bridgetown *Free Press*: "On a staff from the roof of an old blacksmith shop in the lower part of the town is an old vane designed to indicate 'how the wind blows,' which bears the date 1738." This relic was in possession of Mr. Addison Lecain when he removed from Annapolis to Windsor several years ago.

Robert Leslie, who was born in Dornoch, Sutherlandshire, Scotland, and educated for his profession at Edinburgh, was at first surgeon in the Royal Navy, then in the army, came here early in the century as surgeon to the Irish Rifles, settled here, and was long the leading physician, and in other respects a prominent figure in the town, until his death, May 26, 1868, aged 76. His dwelling, long known as the "Leslie House," is incorporated into the larger and more handsome residence of Judge Owen. He married, first, Ann Botsford Millidge, who with her new-born child died, 1822; second, Dec. 28, 1823, Ann E. Sneden and had children, (1) Lawrence Sneden, m. in Spain, d. Nov. 18, 1893; (2) Mary E., m. Alfred Danielsen, a Dane, d. Feb., 1885; (3) Christina, living, unm.; (4) Robert Hugh, m. twice, living in Texas; (5) Hope E., d. unm.; (6) Angus S., m., living in San Francisco; (7) Jessie, m. James A. Gibbon, living at Brookline, Mass.; (8) Leveson G., m. and lives in South America; (9) Laura, m. Charles Ditmars, Esq., of Clementsport, d.; (10) Helen M., living unm. at Annapolis; (11) James C., m. twice, living in Newfoundland; (12) William P., m., and died in U.S., August, 1892.

"Their graves are severed far and wide,
By mount, and stream, and sea."

Major Norman married at Gibraltar, Oct. 13, 1813, Gregoria Reiez, and had a son Walter, baptized June 17, 1827. He is said to have been a favorite of the Duke of Wellington, and enjoyed during the first part of his residence here a salary or pension of £300 a year, afterwards reduced to £150.

Among the prominent residents of the town in the early years of the century were three brothers, Henry, Oliver, and Benjamin Mason Goldsmith. They were sons of Henry Goldsmith, an Assistant Commissary-General in the British service, stationed in Cape Breton and afterwards in St. John, N.B., where he died June 6, 1811, aged fifty-six years. He was born at Athlone, Ireland, and was a nephew of the great literary genius, Oliver Goldsmith, son of his favourite brother, the Rev. Henry Goldsmith, who was a man of brilliant gifts, distinguished at school and college, and a favourite of Oliver. Our citizen, the grand-nephew Oliver, was also in the Commissariat Department, and was at

St. John in 1834, and afterwards at Hong Kong, and died in England. A tree was planted to his memory on Queen Square in St. John, by R. B. Humphrey, Esq., on the centennial festival of the city in 1883, at the "east gate." He was a zealous Mason and presented a set of jewels to Albion Lodge after his removal from St. John. Henry married, first, Feb. 1, 1808, Maria, eldest daughter of Col. James DeLancey, and second, Feb. 4, 1841, Harriet Burdain. He was a barrister-at-law and collector of customs, and died without issue, Sept., 1845, aged 61. Benjamin M., the youngest brother, settled at Perrott, and was long a magistrate, holding for some years an office in the house lately occupied by Andrew Gilmore, the well-known old soldier, but built by Mr. Goldsmith within the bounds of the fort. He died Feb., 1884, aged 86, leaving a large posterity, many of them living in the town and vicinity. Oliver possessed literary gifts, which, while they could not be compared with those of his great ancestor, were by no means inconsiderable. As the immortal Oliver pictured with poetic pathos the "Deserted Village," his successor in the name undertook to pourtray the lot of those who might once have peopled such a place, but who had set themselves to the task of building up a new village in the wild scenes to which they had removed, and to dedicate the work to another brother Henry. I will give his own words, under date Oct. 1, 1834:

"To Henry Goldsmith, Esq., Annapolis Royal: The celebrated author of the 'Deserted Village' has pathetically displayed the anguish of his countrymen in being forced from various causes to quit their native plains, endeared to them by so many delightful recollections, and to seek a refuge in regions at that time unknown, or but little heard of. It would, perhaps, have been a subject of astonishment to him could he have known that, in the course of events, some of his own relations were to be natives of such distant countries, and that a grandson of his brother Henry, to whom he dedicated his "Traveller," would first draw his breath at no great distance from the spot

> 'Where wild Oswego spreads her swamps around,
> And Niagara stuns with thundering sound.'

In the "Rising Village" I have endeavoured to describe the sufferings which the early settlers experienced, the difficulties which they surmounted, the rise and progress of a young country, and the prospects which promise happiness to its future possessors."

After a few lines of apostrophe to his brother, the poem proceeds:

> "If then adown your cheek a tear should flow
> For Auburn's village and its speechless woe;
> If while you weep, you think the 'lowly train,'
> Their early joys can never more regain,
> Come turn with me where happier prospects rise
> Beneath the sternness of Acadian skies.
> And thou, dear spirit! whose harmonious lay
> Didst lovely Auburn's piercing woes display,
> Do thou to thy fond relative impart
> Some portion of thy sweet poetic art;
> Like thine, oh! let my verse as gently flow,
> While truth and virtue in my numbers glow;
> And guide my pen with thy bewitching hand
> To paint the Rising Village of the land.
> How chaste and splendid are the scenes that lie
> Beneath the circle of Britannia's sky!
> What charming prospects there arrest the view,
> How bright, how varied, and how boundless too!

Cities and plains extending far and wide,
The merchant's glory and the farmer's pride.
Majestic palaces in pomp display
The wealth and splendour of the regal sway ;
While the low hamlet and the shepherd's cot,
In peace and freedom mark the peasant's lot.
.
Compared with scenes like those, how lone and drear
Did once Acadia's woods and wilds appear ;
Where wandering savages, and beasts of prey,
Displayed, by turns, the fury of their sway.
What noble courage must their hearts have fired,
How great the ardour which their souls inspired,
Who leaving far behind their native plain,
Have sought a home beyond the Western main.
.
Oh, none can tell but they who sadly share
The bosom's anguish and its wild despair,
What dire distress awaits the hardy bands
That venture first on bleak and desert lands.
How great the pain, the danger and the toil
Which mark the first rude culture of the soil,
When looking round, the lonely settler sees
His home amidst a wilderness of trees.
How sinks his heart in those deep solitudes
Where not a voice upon his ear intrudes ;
Where solemn silence all this waste pervades
Heightening the horror of its gloomy shades,
Save where the sturdy woodman's strokes resound
That strew the fallen forest on the ground.
See from their heights the lofty pines descend,
And crackling, down their pond'rous lengths extend.
Soon from their boughs the curling flames arise,
Mount into air and redden all the skies ;
And where the forest once its foliage spread,
The golden corn triumphant waves its head.
How blest did nature's ruggedness appear,
The only source of trouble or of fear!
How happy, did no hardship meet his view,
No other care his anxious steps pursue ;
But while his labour gains a short repose,
And hope presents a solace for his woes,
New ills arise, new fears his peace annoy,
And other dangers all his hopes destroy.
Behold the savage tribes in wildest strain
Approach with death and terror in their train.
No longer silence o'er the forest reigns,
No longer stillness now her power retains ;
But hideous yells announce the murderous band,
Whose bloody footsteps desolate the land.
He hears them oft in sternest mood maintain
Their right to rule the mountain and the plain ;
He hears them doom the white man's instant death,
Shrinks from the sentence, while he gasps for breath,
Then, rousing with one effort all his might,
Darts from his hut, and saves himself by flight.
Yet, what a refuge ! Here a host of foes
On every side his trembling steps oppose ;
Here savage beasts around his cottage howl,
As through the gloomy wood they nightly prowl.
Till morning comes, and then is heard no more
The shouts of man, or beast's appalling roar.
The wandering Indian turns another way,
And brutes avoid the first approach of day.
.

While time thus rolls his rapid years away,
The village rises gently into day.
How sweet it is, at first approach of morn
Before the silvery dew has left the lawn,
When warring winds are sleeping yet on high
Or breathe as softly as the bosom's sigh,
To gain some easy hill's ascending height
Where all the landscape brightens with delight,
And boundless prospects stretched on every side,
Proclaim the country's industry and pride.
Here the broad marsh extends its open plain,
Until its limits touch the distant main ;
There verdant meads along the uplands spring,
And grateful odours to the breezes fling ;
Here crops of grain in rich luxuriance rise,
And wave their golden riches to the skies ;
There smiling orchards interrupt the scene,
Or gardens bounded by some hedge of green ;
The farmer's cottage bosomed 'mong the trees,
Whose spreading branches shelter from the breeze ;
The winding stream that turns the busy mill,
Whose clacking echoes o'er the distant hill ;
The neat white church, beside whose walls are spread
The grass-clad hillocks of the sacred dead ;
Where rude-cut stone or painted tablet tell,
In laboured voice, how youth and beauty fell ;
How worth and hope were hurried to the grave
And torn from those who had no power to save.
.
Dear lovely spot ! oh, may such charms as these,
Sweet tranquil charms, that cannot fail to please,
Forever reign around thee, and impart
Joy, peace and comfort to each native heart.
Happy Acadia ! though around thy shore
Is heard the stormy wind's terrific roar ;
Though round thee Winter binds his icy chain,
And his rude tempests sweep along thy plain,
Still Summer comes and decorates thy land
With fruits and flowers from her luxuriant hand ;
Still Autumn's gifts repay the labourer's toil
With richest products from thy fertile soil ;
With bounteous store his varied wants supply,
And scarce the plants of other suns deny.
How pleasing and how glowing with delight
Are now thy budding hopes ! How sweetly bright
They rise to view ! How full of joy appear
The expectations of each future year.
Not fifty summers yet have blest thy clime,—
How short a period in the page of time !—
Since savage tribes, with terror in their train,
Rushed o'er thy fields, and ravaged all thy plain.
But some few years have rolled in haste away,
Since through thy vales the fearless beast of prey,
With dismal yell and loud appalling cry,
Proclaimed his midnight reign of terror nigh.
And now, how changed the scene ! The first afar
Have fled to wilds beneath the northern star ;
The last has learned to shun man's dreaded eye,
And in his turn to distant regions fly ;
While the poor peasant, whose laborious care
Scarce from the soil could wring his scanty fare ;
Now in the peaceful arts of culture skilled,
Sees his wide barn with ample treasures filled ;
Now finds his dwelling, as the year goes round,
Beyond his hopes with joy and plenty crowned."

CHAPTER XII.

THE TOWNSHIP OF GRANVILLE.

Description—Grants issued—Settlers arrive—Names of grantees—Census of 1767 and 1770—Names of early settlers and their families—The Patten-Farnsworth feud—Representation of the county—River fisheries—The Shaw embroglio —Names of militiamen—Arrival of Loyalists—Roads to Bay of Fundy—Shaw and Millidge election—Disputes about the fisheries—Bridgetown.

THIS fine township is bounded as follows: On the north by the Bay of Fundy; on the east by the township of Wilmot; on the south by the Annapolis River and basin, and on the west by the strait connecting the Annapolis Basin with the Bay of Fundy. The range of hills, locally known as the North Mountains, divides it into two nearly equal parts, which may be termed the mountain and valley districts. The former consists of a strip of land gradually increasing in width from its western end at the strait aforesaid to its eastern extremity at the Wilmot boundary; its northern edge is washed by the waters of the Bay of Fundy, and its southern side is formed by an irregular line, following the greatest elevation in the chain of hills before named. The soil of this district is formed by the decomposition of the trappean rocks which everywhere underlie its surface, and has usually been esteemed as admirably adapted to the growth of wheat and other grains, and when properly cultivated has always proved productive. It is well watered, its streams, though small, being very numerous, and almost without exception discharging their waters into the bay, the slope of the surface being toward the north.

The forests which originally covered this tract were very fine; in fact, it may be said they were equalled by few others in any part of the country. They were composed of a tall and thrifty growth of beech, birch, maple, elm, ash and poplar, among the deciduous trees; and of pine, spruce, hemlock and fir, among the evergreens. It is sad to think of the almost wanton waste perpetrated by our forefathers, in clearing their farms in this, as in other districts of the county. It was too common a practice with them to cut away, as far as possible, every vestige of these magnificent forests, even rejecting native trees for

purposes of shade, shelter or ornament, and to regard them as their greatest enemy rather than as a certain source of future wealth. Hundreds of thousands, nay, millions of cords of most valuable timber have been reduced to ashes in preparing the ground for the operations of the plough and the scythe; and as many more have in more recent years been shipped to the neighbouring United States as an article of commerce. It is cheering to know, however, that some portions of the original forests remain, and contribute largely to the successful ship-building of the existing inhabitants.

The Bay of Fundy coast affords no natural harbours to this township, though artificial breakwaters have been constructed, which do duty in their stead, by the aid of which a large trade is carried on from these points with New Brunswick and the adjoining Republic; and ship-yards, when wooden ships were in demand, were to be found plentifully sprinkled along its shores, from which every year numbers of new vessels of all sizes were added to the mercantile marine of the Province.

The valley district of this township possesses a very fertile and productive soil, its alluvial portions being very rich and valuable. It includes a considerable number of dyked marshes—one of which contains nearly a thousand acres, and bears the name "Belleisle," in honour of one of the old French seigneurs of Port Royal, the Sieur de Belleisle, within whose seigniory it was situated. The upland soils of this part of the township are of a mixed character, and well known to be especially adapted to the growth of fruit trees. There are few of the farms without an orchard, while many of them have more than one. The owners of these farms have ready access to the markets of the world by means of the river and basin which form the boundary of their southern frontage, and the farms have been so arranged that each one of them possesses its share of marsh, tillage, pasture and woodlands.

The streams of this division are also small but exceedingly numerous, and flow in a southern direction to the river and basin. Roads extend northwardly, at short intervals, from the main highway, over the mountain to the Bay of Fundy; and these are again intersected by others running parallel to the latter, thus furnishing easy communication with all sections of it. The shores of the basin have valuable herring fisheries connected with them, and the Bay of Fundy yields a ready and abundant supply of cod, halibut, hake, haddock, pollock and herrings. Indeed, few townships are more bountifully furnished with the leading elements of prosperity and wealth than Granville; nor are there many better provided with school and church accommodation. Several of the churches are very handsome structures and reflect much credit upon the denominations to which they belong. It contains only two villages of any size, however, namely, Bridgetown, at the head of

navigation, which was founded by the late John Crosskill,* having been laid out by him in 1822; and Granville Ferry. Each of them is pleasantly situated on the north bank of the river, and both were long favourite places for ship-building. The Windsor and Annapolis Railway Company have a substantial bridge spanning the river near the first-named village, and attempts have been made to secure the erection of another to span the river between Granville Ferry and Annapolis.

Few events worthy of note occurred in this township from the date of the French expulsion to 1760. The lands of the expatriated *habitans* during this period remained without occupants. The French had settlements near Goat Island, and at intervals along the river eastward to Bellisle, where the Martins are known to have lived. Still farther eastward hamlets and isolated clearings were to be found as far eastward as the township extended; the most eastern hamlet of which any certain knowledge has been obtained, was that in which the family of Prince, or Le Prince, resided, the site of which is revealed in the following extract from the grant of 1759. The boundaries of the township are therein described as "Beginning at the gut of Annapolis, and bounded by the said gut westerly, and from thence running according to the course of the basin of Annapolis, extending up the said river to the vacated settlement of Carl† Prince measuring thirty miles or thereabouts; and from the River Annapolis by the house of the said Carl Prince, course north-west six miles or thereabouts to the Bay of Fundy, and bounded by the said bay and running west and south-west according to the course of the said bay to the gut of Annapolis."

The first House of Assembly met in Halifax in October, 1758, and during the same month Governor Lawrence issued his proclamation touching the settlement of the lands vacated by the French, by people from the New England colonies. In consequence of this action on the part of Governor Lawrence, in the following year James Read and John Grow, of the township of Lunenburg, in the Province of Massachusetts, and Paul Crocker, of Hollies, in the Province of New Hampshire, made application in the name of themselves and their associates for a grant of one hundred thousand acres of land on the north side of the basin and river of Annapolis; and a grant passed to them on the 27th of June in that year. It was to consist of two hundred shares of five hundred acres each, and 138 were conveyed on that occasion. Nineteen other shares were conveyed by a supplementary grant dated August 16th, 1759.

* Captain Crosskill had been in the naval service of the Crown as master of the armed snow, *Earl of Moira*, 1794-98, and probably became the owner of the lot on which the town stands, by purchase. On retiring he spent some years in Halifax, but afterwards lived in the county. He died May, 1826, and some of his descendants still perpetuate his name among us.—[Ed.]

† It is remarkable that the German form "Carl" should have been here used instead of the French "Charles."—[Ed.]

Acting-Lieutenant-Governor Belcher, in a report to the Board of Trade, dated in December, 1760, informs them that the townships of Granville and Annapolis had been occupied by thirty of the proprietors, and that the remainder of them, with their families, were expected to arrive early in the spring of the ensuing year.

The first House of Assembly having been chosen by the electors of the Province at large, no member was sent from this part of the country, but from the time of convening the second it will be found that representatives have been continuously elected to the present time. In June, 1759, the County of Annapolis was created, covering the territory now included within its boundaries together with what now forms the County of Digby, and appears to have been represented in the second assembly, which was chosen in that year, by Erasmus J. Phillips, major in the 40th regiment, and Colonel Jonathan Hoar.

The subjoined alphabetical list contains the names of the persons who applied for the grant of 1759, together with the place of former residence, in New England, of each of them:

Name.	Residence.
Austin, Daniel	Lunenburg, Mass.
Avery, Jonathan	Townshend.
Austin, John	Hollies, N.H.
Austin, Thomas	"
Austin, Timothy	"
Austin, Benjamin	"
Austin, Daniel, jun.	Lunenburg.
Brown, Aaron	Lunenburg.
Baillie, Isaac	"
Butler, Simeon	Charlestown.
Bailey, Josiah	Lunenburg.
Brynton, Jonathan	"
Bradstreet, Jonathan	"
Belcher, Jeremiah	"
Bradstreet, Samuel	"
Bass, John	"
Better, Moses	"
Bigelow, Benjamin	"
Blair, John	Groton.
Bell, Jeremiah	Townshend.
Butterick, Francis	"
Ball, Thomas	Bolton.
Chandler, Joshua	Hollies, N.H.
Crocker, Paul	"
Chadwick, William	"
Carter, Elias	Leominster.
Coleman, James	Dorchester.
Cole, John	Jeohegan, N.H.
Connant, John	Townshend.
Chandler, David	Hollies, N.H.
Croker, John	Lunenburg.
Carlton, Abraham	"
Croker, James	Narragansett.
Crooker, Timothy	Goreham.
Dalton, Thomas	Lunenburg.
Dunsmore, John	"
Dascomb, James	"
Davis, Joseph	"
Davis, Samuel	"
Darling, John	"
Darling, Timothy	"
Dowing, Daniel	Wilmington.
Douglass, Samuel	Townshend.
Fletcher, Jonas	Lunenburg.
Fowler, Richard	"
Farwell, John	"
Fuller, John	"
Foster, Jeremiah	Canada.
Fielder, Aaron	Ipswich, N.H.
Fletcher, Paul	Groton.
Gibson, Isaac	Lunenburg.
Grow, John	"
Goodridge, Philip	"

Name.	Residence.
Goodridge, David	Lunenburg.
Goodridge, Joshua	"
Giberact, William	"
Gipson, John	"
Gibson, Reuben	"
Gibson, Joseph	"
Griner, Elijah	"
Growing, Thomas	Lynn.
Graves, Richard	Narragansett.
Grow, Joel	Petersham.
Grout, Jonathan	"
Gaudell, Joseph	Boston.
Holt, Jonathan	Ipswich, N.H.
Holt, William	Lunenburg.
Hunt, Samuel	Lunenburg.
Hutchins, Joshua	"
Harding, Elijah	Groton.
Harding, Andrew	Littleton.
Hart, Ebenezer	Lunenburg.
Hazelwood, Nathan	"
Hosely, Joseph	Narragansett.
Holden, Asa	Shirley.
Hewey, John	Peterboro'.
Harper, Samuel	Harvard.
Hinds, Jacob	Greenwich.
Hinds, Benjamin	"
Hinds, Joseph	"
Hinds, Nehemiah	"
James, William	Lunenburg.
Judwine, William	"
Jackman, Abner	"
Larabee, Benjamin	Lunenburg.
Lovejoy, John	"
Lovejoy, Jonathan	Hollies, N.H.
Merril, David	Lunenburg.
Moffit, John	Ipswich, N.H.
McIntosh, Archibald	Townshend.
Parker, Jonathan	Lunenburg.
Plath, Nathan	"
Page, Nathaniel	Lunenburg.
Pool, Samuel	"
Pool, James	"
Page, David	"
Poor, David	Ipswich, N.H.
Read, James	Lunenburg.
Reddington, Benjamin	"
Rogers, Nathaniel	Charlestown.
Reddington, Isaac	Lunenburg.
Stone, Isaac	Harvard.
Spofford, Moses	Lunenburg.
Sterns, Thomas	"
Stiles, Levi	"
Spofford, Bradstreet	"
Spofford, John	Charlestown.
Stackwell, Ephraim	Petersham.
Sawyers, Joseph	Soughegan, N.H.
Sawtell, Uriah	Townshend.
Sowing, Ebenezer, jun	Shirley.
Taylor, Aaron	Lunenburg.
Taylor, Richard	"
Taylor, Caleb	"
Taylor, David	"
Trumbull, George	"
White, Jonathan	Leominster.
Wilder, Thomas	"
Wilson, Jonathan	"
White, Patrick	Lunenburg.
Wyman, John	"
Wallis, Benoni	"
Wetherbe, Benjamin	"
Wyman, Ezekiel	"
Whitney, Jonathan	"
Wills, Isaiah	"
Willard, Jonathan	"
White, John	"
White, Charles	"
Whitney, Ephraim	"
Wheelock, Abel	Leominster.

The supplementary grant for the other nineteen shares contained the following names: Erasmus J. Phillips, Henry Newton, John Newton, Thomas Williams, John Taggart, Joseph Winniett, Benjamin Rumsey, Erasmus J. Phillips, William Howe, Joseph Howe, Edward Howe, John Harris, Jeremiah Rodgers, Rev. Thomas Wood and Robert Sanderson,

all of Nova Scotia, and Joseph Bennett, of the Province of New York. The condition of this grant was that five families should be settled by the grantees on or before the thirty-first day of May, 1760. It is probable that this grant was cancelled owing to its conditions not having been complied with, as most of the lands seem to have been conveyed by grants bearing dates from 1761 to 1769. The lots of the Chesleys, the Dodges, the Wades and several others were granted in 1764. Joseph Milbury—the progenitor of the families bearing that name—was the owner of two lots in 1770, and from an affidavit made by him in the Farnsworth and Patten embroglio in 1763, it may be inferred that his lands were granted not later than that year. Job Young, the ancestor of the extensive and respectable family of that name, must have been settled here as early as 1760, for the census of 1770 affirms that seven of his children had been born since his arrival in the Province. The same thing may be said of many other families, notably of the Troops, the Wheelocks, the Bolsors and the Woodburys.

It is to be regretted the census return of 1767 is absent from the provincial archives. The general results obtained by it, however, are at hand, from which we learn that Granville contained a population of 383 souls in that year; that they were all Protestants; that the families were all of American birth, with the exception of ten who were English, of eight who were Scotch, of seven who were Irish, and ten others of foreign birth, mostly German. These people were then possessed of 852 head of horned cattle, 440 sheep, 39 horses, 157 swine, 12 fishing boats and 1 schooner. These particulars will enable the reader to compare the condition of the township then with what it was three years later in 1770, when another census was taken the particulars of which, with the names of the settlers, have been preserved, and which will now be presented to the reader. That part of the return relating to cattle, etc., will be stated in results only.

Name.	No. in Family.	American.	Acadian.
Brown, Joseph	5	1	3
Barnes, Nathaniel	4	2	2
Brown, John	2	2	..
Bent, Samuel	8	2	6
Bolsor, Peter	3	1	1
Chute, Samuel	5	2	3
Chesley, Samuel	8	2	6
Clark, Thomas	2	..	..
Coleman, John	6	2	4
Dodge, Isaiah	7	2	5
Dill, Daniel	3	3	..
Dudney, Samuel	3	..	1
Dodge, Asahel	3	1	2
Fellows, Israel	7	2	5
Foster, Ezekiel	7	2	5
Foster, Isaac	9	4	5
Farnsworth, Amos	5	3	2
Fletcher, Ensign David	10	2	8
Farnsworth, Jonas	2	2	..
Farnsworth, Solomon	5	2	3
Graves, Lieut. William	8	2	6

Name.	No. in Family	American.	Acadian.
Harris, Samuel	8	4	4
Hamilton, Andrew	4	..	2
Hill, John	5	2	3
Hall, John	7	4	3
Hammon, Charles	2	..	..
Haynes, John	3	2	1
Hall, Zachariah	4	4	..
Leonard, Jonathan	6	2	4
Longley, Israel	4	..	..
Leitch, John	8	3	5
Munro, Col. Henry	9	1	7
Marshall, Isaac	3	2	1
Marshall, William	8	2	6
Miller, Francis	10	..	6
Morse, Rev. Azarelah	4	3	1
Morrison, John	..	..	..
Milbury, Joseph	6	3	3
McKensie, Edward	8	..	7
McGregor, Thomas	4	..	2
Parsons, John	4	..	2
Parker, Abijah	8	2	6
Prescott, Capt. Peter	1	1	..
Potter, James	4	2	2
Patten, Joseph	5	5	..
Phinney, Isaac	8	2	6
Raddox, George	3	..	..
Robinson, Alexander	4	2	..
Ricketson, Abednego	10	..	..
Roach, Patrick	6	..	4
Ray, Moses	4	.	..
Starratt, Peter	5	..	..
Starratt, Joseph	4	2	2
Snow, Jabez	6	3	3
Shankel, George	5	1	4
Sproule, Robert	6	2	4
Shaw, Moses	8	4	4
Starks, John	8	..	6
Shafner, Adam	7	..	..
Saunders, Timothy	6	2	4
Spinney, Samuel	6	6	..
Troop, Valentine	9	1	6
Troop, Jacob	2	..	1
Tucker, Richard	4	3	1
Trahee, Thomas	3	..	1
Wade, John	7	4	3
Woodbury, Jonathan	9	2	7
Wooster, George	10	..	8
Witherspoon, John	8	4	4
Wheelock, Abel	8	2	6
Walker, Ann	6	..	5
Wier, Capt. Elias	8	4	4
Young, Job	9	2	7
Zinclairs, Frederic	3	..	1

The township contained 747 head of horned cattle, showing a decrease on the number reported in 1767 equal to 13 per cent.; 581 sheep yielding an increase equal to 30 per cent.; 60 horses, giving a gain equal to over 50 per cent., and 104 swine, indicating a decrease of about 30 per cent. The two schooners were owned by John Hall and Joseph Starratt, respectively, and the only sloop in the township found an owner in John McGregor. The population showed a trifling increase of 8 per cent. The English element had decreased, while the Scotch, Irish and German had increased. The following families were either in part or wholly German: Bolsor,* Dudney, Miller and Troop. Charles Hammon and wife, Colonel Henry Munro, George Raddox were all born in Scotland. Patrick Roach and wife, Moses Ray and family, Thomas

* The German form is Baltzor.—[Ed.]

Trahee and wife, John Morrison and family, John Parsons and wife, and Peter Starratt and family were all of Irish birth.

It will not be out of place here to notice some facts connected with a number of the persons whose names have been recorded in this the first census of Granville now extant.

Samuel Bent's descendants are very numerous, and many of them still reside in the township.

Peter Bolsor became the progenitor of all the families bearing that name in the county. His grandchildren and great-grandchildren occupy homesteads in Wilmot and other townships.

The family of Samuel Chute proved to be a very prolific one, and his descendants may be reckoned by hundreds. There is scarcely a county in the Province that does not contain the home of one or more of them.

Samuel Chesley's descendants are both numerous and highly respectable. The present representative of the family is Thomas W. Chesley, who is a barrister of the Supreme Court, as well as one of the leading agriculturalists of the county.

Josiah Dodge, whose lots adjoined those of Chesley, was also the progenitor of a large and respectable family. One of his sons was for more than forty years a Justice of the Peace of the county.

Israel Fellows left sons from whom have sprung numerous families. A distinguished descendant, James I. Fellows, has been mentioned on page 158.

Ezekiel and Isaac Foster, who were brothers, both left families that have multiplied manifold.

Amos and Solomon Farnsworth have descendants living to this day in Granville, Wilmot and Aylesford, and the great-grandchildren of William Graves are still to be found in the two latter townships.

Isaac and William Marshall were brothers. Previous to coming here they were residents of Dedham, in Massachusetts. Their ancestor, William Marshall, who emigrated from England in 1635, was a native of Cranebrook, in Kent, and was born in 1595. He sailed for America on the 17th of June, 1635, in the ship *Abigail*, Robert Hackwell, master. The passengers by this ship were duly certified by the minister and a Justice of the Peace as being Conformists, and as having taken the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. Isaac Marshall was the progenitor of a very numerous family. The late William Marshall, of Clarence Centre, was of this branch of the Marshall tree. Asaph Marshall, Esq., of Paradise, is the representative of this family in the present generation. William Marshall, whose wife was Lydia Willett, of Dedham—the maternal great-grandfather of the author—had also a large offspring, the members of which have become very numerous. He settled in Granville in 1761, where in 1771 he possessed two lots consisting of one thousand acres of

land. About the year 1776 he sold this property and removed to Western Cornwallis, where he established a new home for himself and family. In 1787 he removed his family once more to Granville, and shortly after he visited Parr Town—now St. John, N.B.—where he had become the owner of a town lot, said to have been that long since occupied by the London House, on the north side of the market-square. From this date he was never afterwards heard from. It is known that after he had concluded the business, which was the object of his visit, and no vessel being available to enable him to recross the bay, he purchased snow-shoes (it was about the beginning of winter in 1787 or 1788) and provisions for the occasion, and announced his intention to endeavour to reach his home by way of the isthmus of Baie Verte. In the attempt he perished; at all events he never again visited his home, and it was generally believed that his body found a final resting place in an inhospitable New Brunswick wilderness.

Valentine Troop and his wife were Germans, and had been but a year or two in New England before their migration to Granville. Their eldest child only was born in Massachusetts. His lot was situated a short distance to the eastward of the village of Granville Ferry, just above the lower narrows. The extreme frontage of it is still known as "Troops Point," but made historic nearly half a century before his arrival by a tragedy related in detailing the events of the unsuccessful attempt on Port Royal by the New England troops. This worthy old German little thought that his great-grandchildren should become leading men in the administration of public affairs; that one of them should be chosen "first commoner" in the land, and that others should become leading merchants in the two greatest cities in the Maritime Provinces, yet such has been the case.*

Francis Miller, who, according to tradition, came from New York, was also a German, or of German descent, and his two eldest children were born before his arrival here. His descendants are very many, and reside on Hanley Mountain and Clarence West, and in other localities.

Abijah Parker and his wife were born in Massachusetts, but their children were all of Nova Scotia birth. This family may be fairly ranked among the prolific ones of the township.

Edward McKenzie, who settled in the western end of the district, had a large family, and his grandchildren and great-grandchildren yet inhabit the part of the county toward the settlement of which their sturdy ancestor so largely contributed.

The families of Timothy Saunders and Samuel Spinney removed to Wilmot and Aylesford, where they continued to increase and multiply, and where many of them are yet to be found.

* See the genealogy, *post*, for notes on the alleged German ancestry of the Troops. —[Ed.]

Adam Schafner was a German by birth, and one of the German immigrants of 1752. He did not remain long in Lunenburg where he first settled, but soon after the advent of the New England settlers he removed to Granville where he fixed his abode for the remainder of his life. His son Ferdinand, from whom the present family are directly descended, was born at sea on the passage of his parents from their fatherland. He succeeded his father in the possession of the homestead. At his decease he left several sons and daughters. Of the former there were at least four, Ferdinand, Caleb, James and John, every one of whom left children, so that the name has become as common as it is respectable, in Granville, Annapolis and Wilmot. A great-great-grandson of Adam Schafner has been a representative of the county in the Legislative Assembly.

Robert Sproule, the father of a family whose male members were the equals of the Bents and Youngs in muscular endowments, was a pioneer settler in this township. His descendants still occupy a place in it. One of them, it is said, has become the possessor of considerable wealth in Nevada, where he has been employed for several years in mining pursuits.

Jonathan Woodbury's* household in 1770 consisted of nine members, two of which, himself and wife, were of New England birth; the remaining seven, his children, were all born in Nova Scotia. Mr. Woodbury owned the three lots (covering 1,500 acres), which were afterwards known as the Millidge farm, long the property of Colonel Thomas Millidge. One of these lots is that owned at his death in 1896, by John Bernard Calnek. It is believed that some time after the arrival of the Loyalists Mr. Woodbury sold his lands to Millidge, and obtained a grant of others in the township of Wilmot, to which he removed his family about ten years before the commencement of the century. This grant adjoins the Ruggles grant on its western boundary, and was therefore situated nearly midway between Gates' Ferry as it was then called, now Middleton, and Dodge's Ferry, late Gibbon's. It was on this block of land that the celebrated Spa spring was discovered. Several sons and daughters survived him, though he lived to a very advanced age. Two of his grandsons married granddaughters of General Timothy Ruggles. His descendants are numerous.

George Wooster and his wife were of German birth,† but the eight children that had blessed their marriage were all of Nova Scotia birth,

* Mr. Woodbury was a physician by profession.

† The German origin of the Wooster family may be questioned. There are two New England families, one descended from Rev. Wm. Worcester, or Worster, who came over about 1639, and another from Edward Wooster, Woster, or Worster, of Milford, Mass., in 1652, who had a son Henry, born August 18, 1666, who died in the army in an expedition against Nova Scotia or Canada. Edward left twelve children, and one of his descendants, David Wooster, was a distinguished general in the Revolutionary army.—[Ed.]

if the census return of that year is to be taken as a guide. The descendants of this worthy couple are chiefly to be found in Lower Granville, where they lived and died.

Moses Shaw's descendants long maintained the ascendancy which their founder gained and so worthily held in his adopted township. In shipbuilding, in agriculture, in trade and commerce and other pursuits their abilities and energies found congenial employment, and more or less profit. This family has furnished in two generations two representatives of the people to the assembly of the Province,—men who were capable of taking a respectable part in the deliberations of that body.

Job Young's "little one has become a thousand." The offspring of his family are to be found in various parts of the county and country, and have long been distinguished for personal strength and courage, as well as, generally, for industry and application to business. It was of a branch of this family, that of the late Abraham Young, of Young's Mountain, that the late Professor James F. W. Johnston wrote in his "Notes on North America," when he said that a household existed in the county, one of whose members could go into a forest and mark every tree required for the construction of a ship; that another could lay down her lines and mould the timbers to their proper shape and dimensions, while others were competent to perform the operations of caulking, rigging and sailing her. Such have been the men furnished by our pre-loyalist fathers, to whose pioneer labours we owe so much for the present improved condition of the country. Surely no niggardly pen should be used in recording the praises of such ancestors. If their eyes could behold the scenes of their early labours and privations as they appear to-day, orchards in the place of wilderness, and handsome and substantial cottages in the place of log huts,

> "How would their hearts with purest pleasure swell,
> To see their early labours crowned so well!"

Let us now take a step backward to notice some events of 1763. Among the many curious papers which have been preserved through the agency of the Commissioner of Records, I have found one relating to an old and long-forgotten feud which possesses considerable interest besides illustrating the fact that infant settlements are not exempt from the strifes and conflicting interests that afflict and disturb older ones. This dispute was between Joseph Patten and Amos Farnsworth, and had reference to lot No. 77 in Granville. On Farnsworth's arrival in the Province with his family, he proceeded to take immediate possession of the lot which it appears had been previously assigned him. The following affidavit states the facts as succinctly as possible, and I therefore transcribe it verbatim:

"We the Subscribers being of Lawful age, Testify and say, that on the 1st day of November, 1763, we were desired by Joseph Patten, of Annapolis Royall, Esquire, to goe with him to his House in Granville on Lott 77, which we did, and when we came there we saw Amos Farnsworth and wife and some children Standing by the fire near said House, and Mr. Patten said to Mr. Farnsworth that the Honourable Committee had ordered him the possession and improvement of said Lott, But had also ordered that in case Amos Farnsworth Should come a Hearty Settler with his family and stock before the last day of October, 1763, he should have the Lott after he the said Patten had taken off what he had Raised on said Lott, and was paid for all the improvements He had made on said Lott, which Conditions Mr. Patten offered said Farnsworth to comply with, which Amos Farnsworth utterly Refused to Comply with, and said that he did not Look uppon what the Committee had done as anything; and Mr. Patten desired Liberty of said Farnsworth to take his goods and effects off said place, But said Farnsworth utterly Refused Him Liberty to take anything off the Place, and there was cattle on the said Lott near by and Farnsworth said to Mr. Patten, if any of those cattle are yours take them away, for they shall not Stay on the Lott; and Mr. Patten forbid said Farnsworth from making any improvements on sd. Lott 77, or of taking things off His untill He Had taken off all his Effects and was paid upon valuation for all He had done on said Lott; and on the third day of November, 1763, we were desired by Mr. Patten to goe with Him to his House in Lott 77 which we did, and we Saw Amos Farnsworth on the top of the said House at work, and his wife in the House; and Mr. Patten desired Amos Farnsworth to Deliver Him the Possession of said House and of all his effects which he had taken into His Possession, all which Amos Farnsworth utterly Refused to do unless it were cattle, which if any He Required Him to take them away, and Mr. Patten desired us to take notice of his Improvements and effects, etc., which we did, and further saith not.

"(Signed), JOSEPH MILBURY.
JOB YOUNG.

"Granville, Nov. 3rd, 1763."

Three days after this affidavit was made Patten addressed a letter to his attorney in Halifax, which was in the following terms:

"On the 28th October last Amos Farnsworth Came to Annapolis and brought with Him his wife, two Children, a negro, and an old horse not worth ten shillings, and on the 29th he went up the river to my House and Lott 77 in Granville with his wife and children, and by force and arms Brak open my House, then being locked up and Put therein Sundry goods, I not being present or knowing thereof; neither had He ever seen me or my family or Ever given any of us the least notice that he was come or desired the Lott, and amediately seized on my Sider appels, Potatoes and husbandry tules and everything that I had on the Lott and in the House, and Converted them to his own use; and on the first of November, 1763, I and one of my neighbours went to my House at about 6 o'clock in the morning, and I Hearing a Noyse in my House unlocked my fore door and Looked into my House, and Saw Amos Farnsworth going out at the end door of my house which He had broken down, and I amediately shut to my door and was locking thereof on the outside of the House and Amos Farnsworth came behind me, and without ever speaking one word to me Struck me with his fist and almost knocked me down, etc.

"He and his family eat my Potatoes, Appels, Cabbidges, drink my Sider, make use of my husbandry tules and lend them to others, and let out my Sider mill, etc. And all this by the Advice of a certain man (you may judge who) that hath promised

old Farnsworth saying, 'If Patten should Commence any action he would engage Patten should lose the case.' I am not at any Stand what Corce of Law to take in such Cases as I have the Law of England and of this Province by me, But as to the act of this Forcible entry or detainer I cannot have Benefit thereof Especially now Squire Harris is not in the County, for Mr. Evans told me that he did not know or understand Law, and that he never had done anything in the Justice office, nor never intended to, and would not act; and as there is nowhere else I can apply to with the Least Expectation of Having Justice done me in this county unless it be by an honest Jury on which I could safely Rely. But if the Jury should be picked and bribed to serve a Turn, which I dare not say Hath not been the Case in a certain County in this Province."

Mr. Patten closes this part of his letter by desiring his correspondent to send him a writ of attachment, "That I may *attach the negro* and everything that Farnsworth is possessed of," and instructs him to describe the defendant in the writ as "Amos Farnsworth, of Groton, in the County of Middlesex, in the Province of Massachusetts Bay, in New England, husbandman, resident in Granville, in the County of Annapolis, in the Province of Nova Scotia, husbandman." He concludes his lengthy letter with the subjoined postscript:

"Pray send me by a Very Safe Hand, and as soon as Possible and as private also, as nobody knows hereof at Annapolis; for the Mickmacs are almost ready to Jump out of their Skins, Hoping that by all their Deviltry they shall discourage me from living in the County, or at Least from Standing by the people and by our Liberties.

"Sir, it is as Evident as words Can make it that Amos Farnsworth Hath no intent to Settel in this Country, for I can Prove that when Mr. Easson asked him for the money that He owed Him, Farnsworth's answer was that he did not bring down money to Pay Him, but that He would give Him a Bond for it and Pay Him as soon as He could Settel the affairs of His Lotts at Granville and Sell them; and his wife and negro hath told many persons that they did not Come to Settel in Granville any longer than till Spring, and that they should Return this Fall in Case they Could Settel their affairs, etc.

"I am determined to follow the Committee's (of Council) orders as far as possible and to take Sanctuary in the Law from such unheard-of Abuse, and if the Sivel Law fails, I know of but one more, which, as things are Carried on I fear will soon be made use of among some of the People although I use my utmost Endeavor to Prevent it.

"I have wrote to my good Esq. Harris to Supply you with money. I had secured the Sider purposed for you before Farnsworth Come, But the barril of appels He hath Eat up.

"Pray Excuse my Troubling you after this Sorte and Let me Hear from you by the first safe opportunity, your goodness Herein shall ever be duly acknowledged by your Honest friend, most obedient and most obliged and very humble Servant.

"(Sgd.), JOSEPH PATTEN.

"Annapolis, 6th Nov., 1763."

On the 7th of the same month he obtained another affidavit from Joseph Milbury touching another assault made upon him by

Farnsworth which he enclosed with the above communication to his Halifax correspondent, and on the 14th wrote to him again in these words:

"I received your Respected favor (pr. Mr. Wade) of the 6th instant and hope that you Have my Letter of the same date and all my other papers therewith sent you. I should Have amediately drove out old Farnsworth according to your advice but that *Judge Hoar* diswaided me from it, untill I should Have a Return from you of my Letter of the 6th instant, for that neither you nor the Honourable Committee Had Been informed of the Supprising Conduct of Amos Farnsworth towards me in Sundry Respects, and there is a Hopeful Prospect of the Court of Common Pleas being altered for the good of the Country, you will Please to Consider wheather it will be Best to Commence the action at Halifax or not. There Hath nothing Remarkable happened since my Last, but Farnsworth Continues to Despise and Reproach the Honourable Committee, Comparing them to old appel women, and Rejoices that he Hath such Plentiful stores for man and beast without Labouring for it. Mr. Benjamin Rumsey Sent for me the other day and said that I should make some Blunder or Mistake and Hurt myself. He would inform me that He had taken down what the Halifax Committee had ordered Concerning it Lott 77, which was, that the Possession of said Lott was Reserved to Farnsworth, and that He should Have amediate Possession as soon as He Came down, and that He had an undoubted right to all the Crops, and to all on the Place, He paying me for my Improvements; but Could not show it under the Committee's Hand, and as I should do nothing Contrary to what you and the Honourable Committee shall order, I therefore wait your further advice and beg leave to Subscribe myself, etc.

"(Sgd.), JOSEPH PATTEN.

"Annapolis, Nov. 14th, 1763."

From the recital in an old bond in the archives bearing date January 3rd, 1764, it has been inferred that the authorities finally granted the disputed lot to Patten on the condition that he should pay to *Farnsworth* such an amount for the improvements made by him as impartial arbitrators should declare; a fact which can only be accounted for by assuming that Farnsworth had made improvements on the farm before 1763, which seems probable enough from a reference in the correspondence quoted, in which Patten speaks of the indebtedness of the former to Easson, and that the latter had occupied the lands and the improvements in the belief that Farnsworth would never return to claim them.

Connected with this affair is an account rendered by Patten for sundries expended by him on the disputed lands, from which may be gathered some information regarding the value of labour, lumber and farm produce at this time. From it we learn that boards were worth $14.00 per thousand superficial feet; hay, $6.00 per ton; cider, $2.00 per barrel; potatoes, 40 cents per bushel; barrels for cider or fish, 60 cents each; carpenter's daily wage, 80 cents; and fence posts (morticed), 10 cents.

As it is believed any statement relating to the original ownership of the Granville lots will prove of interest to the reader, the subjoined document is inserted :

"Know all men by these presents, that whereas the Lott No. 98 in the township of Granville was drawn and first Designed for Richard Mott, then not present, nor of full age, I having answered all Demands in his absence Relative to said Lott ; this is therefore to Certify that the said Richard Mott Has fully paid me for said Charges, and that as the said Lott was placed in my name During the said Mott's absence, I fully Resign my Rights to the said Lott to the damage (*sic*) of said Mott ; and further, I engage to assist all in my power to Have the same Recorded to Richard Mott, as Witness my Hand this 19th March, 1764.

"(Signed), PARDON SANDERS.

"I do hereby Certify that the above is a true Copy of the Original.

"(Signed), JOSEPH WINNIETT, *J.P.*"

This township was admitted to the privilege of representation by a resolution of the Assembly in 1764, and in the succeeding year Colonel Henry Munro became its first representative. Having resigned the trust after two years' service he was succeeded by John Hicks, who was elected in July, 1768, and who served until the general election which took place in 1770, when the seat was conferred upon John Harris, who held it till 1772, at which time it passed to Christopher Prince.

The river fisheries of the county were considered objects worthy of prosecution and preservation from its first settlement. They were for many years placed under the control of the Court of Sessions, a policy which was finally abandoned many years after at the suggestion of the late Judge Wiswall, to the great regret of the majority of the people interested in them. At the April Term of the Court in 1772 the following regulations were made :

"Annapolis SS. In consequence of the within Presentment of the Court of General Sessions of the Peace, do order and make the following Regulations for the River fishery in said County, viz.: That the Persons hereafter named be Overseers or Directors of said fisheries, and that they or a major part of them agree on a time and place for people to attend the business in any places for fishery purposes ; and that they give public notice thereof at least ten days before the time so agreed on in order that persons may know of the time and place for them to have the privilege of fishing at the proper seasons, and the said Directors or a major part of them present at each public place of fishery shall be and are hereby clothed with full power to order and direct in said fishery, that no injustice be done to any person in dividing of the fish, each person shall receive in proportion to the work and expence they have done or been at in catching said fish from time to time in the judgment of said Directors, and that the following persons be and are hereby appointed the Overseers or Directors in said affair for the ensuing year : John Hall, J.P., Moses Shaw, Abednego Ricketson, Andrew Hamilton, John Langley, Francis Lecain, Captain Webber and John Dunn, and that no person shall or may presume to set up or make weirs or draw any seines for the fish at the public places of Bear River and the Joggins, without the direction or consent of the Directors on penalty of the law."

It seems difficult to believe that the two places here especially indicated should have been the only ones yet discovered in the basin, yet such seems to have been the fact. The only means to prove that herrings were to be caught in any particular place seems to have been by building weirs there, and as this was a work of considerable expense and great labour, it is possible that the "bars" at Goat Island and elsewhere had not, up to that time, been thus tested.

Any sketch of the history of this township would be imperfect if it omitted to notice what has been called the Shaw embroglio. In the autumn of 1776, the year of the famous Declaration of American Independence, a number of the rebels of Maine, in conjunction with some disaffected inhabitants of the St. John River in New Brunswick, made a hostile demonstration against the County of Cumberland, in this province, which had hitherto remained faithful to the Mother Country, and during this period, William Shaw, colonel in the militia, called out a number of men under his command to perform garrison duty at Annapolis, and at the old Scotch Fort, in Granville. It was afterwards alleged that Shaw had drawn pay for these men but had neglected to disburse it; or, that the services for which the Government had granted pay had not been performed as stated by him in his accounts. The following correspondence and affidavits will enable the reader to understand the matter more clearly:

"Sir,—Agreeably to your Commands signified to us in a Letter from Mr. Secretary Bulkely, we have examined upon oath the principal part of the people employed by Col. Shaw in mounting Guard and doing other military duty during the course of last Winter. Copies of the several Depositions we herewith enclose by which it will appear that such duty has actually been performed; that several of them had been paid in part for their Services, and the Common people had received the strongest assurance from Mr. Shaw that he would use his endeavors to procure for them from government Pay and Provisions during the time they had served. It also appears that col. Shaw had been at considerable expense in procuring for them Fuel, Candles and other Necessaries, particularly for the Guard kept at the Scotch Fort. We must further beg leave to assure you from our personal knowledge, that the Duty was punctually performed at the period set forth in the Depositions, and we may venture to say (as far as can be judged from Circumstances) that the preservation of the place is owing in a great measure to the spirited Exertions of the few Inhabitants associated with colonel Shaw for that purpose.

"We should have had the honour of transmitting you these Depositions sooner, but that the people were disposed about their fishery and other business, so that it was not possible to collect them, and there are still more who have done duty and whose Deposition may hereafter be taken if thought necessary.

"We are with great Respect, Sir,

"Your most obedient and most humble servants,

"(Signed), Joseph Winniett.
Thomas Williams.

"Annapolis Royal, July 25th, 1777."

With this letter was sent a "Return of men raised by Colonel Shaw, of the Annapolis militia for the defence of the Province, during the invasion, by the (American) rebells; that is to say, from the 12th day of Nov., 1776, to the 18th day of Decr. following inclusive." This list is here given, the names having been placed in alphabetical order. It will be found of interest to the antiquarian reader.

Allen, Jeremiah.
Adams, James.
Agard, Judah.
Armstrong, Richard.
Allen, Ambrose.

Barnsfield, James.
Bulkey, John.
Bertaux, Philip.
Berwick, George.
Bamond, Benjamin.
Bennett, Thomas.
Butler, Eleazer.
Barnes, Seth.
Beney, Joseph.

Churchill, Lemuel.
Curtis, William.
Crocker, Samuel.
Crosby, Ebenezer.
Crosby, Jonathan.
Cofferin, William.
Coggin, Henry.
Colby, Thomas.
Clammers, John.
Cleaver, Benjamin.
Chankler, Edward.

Dudney, Samuel.
Davis, John.
Durkee, Phineas.
Davy, John.
Darling, Benjamin.
Deiry, Moses.

Ellis, Ebenezer.
Eldrey, Barnabas.
Etwell, Nathaniel.
Ellenwood, Samuel.

Frisk, John.

Godfrey, Prince.
Gorven, Patrick.
Gowan, Paul.
Gallistan, Stephen.
Gilfillan, James.

Harris, Thomas (Adjt.).
Hammon, Chas. Geo.
Harris, Henry.
Hooper, Ezekiel.
Hibbard, Eleazer.
Hammon, Asa.
Hinshall, William.
Holmes, Peleg.
Horsey, David.
Hilton, Amos.

Kelley, James.
King, George.
Kelley, William.

Lecain, Francis.
Lewis, James.
Lecain, Thomas.
Linsley, John.
Lecain, Francis, sen.

McGraw, John.
McKensie, Eleazer (Lieut.).
Morrison, Hugh.
Morrison, John.
Morrison, Alexander.
Morgan, George.
Morgan, John.
Moring, Thomas.

Pitman, Joseph.
Purcill, Edward.
Provence, John.

Pinckham, Edward.
Peal, David.

Richardson, John.
Robins, James.
Robinson, Jabez.
Roach, John.
Ritchie, John.
Ray, James.
Rust, Nathaniel.

Shaw, William (Col.).
Shortell, Henry.
Skelton, John.
Stuart, Joseph.
Slayman, Ephraim.
Sanders, John Hill.
Scott, David.
Sanders, Joseph.
Shafner, Adam.
Stark, John.

Terfrey, Joshua P.
Thompson, George.
Trehay, Thomas.

Utley, Nathan.

Vooney, James.

Williams, Thomas.
Winniett, Matthew (Major).
Worther, George.
Worther, Michael.
Worther, George, jun.
Worthylake, Ebenezer.
Wilhams, Cæsar.
Walman, Jasper.

Zeighler, Frederic.

The depositions referred to in the foregoing letter were partly made before Joseph Patten and John Wade, and partly before Winniett and

Williams. Those of James Barnsfield, Henry Shankel, Adam Schafner, Archibald Morrison, George Wooster, John Sturks, James Lewis and William Henshaw were made before the former, and those of Jacob Wooster, George Schafner, John White, Michael Wooster, Charles Hammond and John Skelton—not one of whom wrote his name—were made before the latter. These depositions bore date July 5th, 1777. On the 23rd of the same month Major Winniett and George Thompson made the following affidavits, which seem to have been intended to relieve Colonel Shaw of one of the charges made against him, namely, that he had sent in a false account to the Government in which charges were made for services never rendered :

"Annapolis SS. Matthew Winniett and George Thompson being duly sworn, testify and say that upon the first alarm of Cumberland being invested by the Rebells, and col. Prince neglecting to call the County Militia together, a Meeting of the Inhabitants of this Town was immediately called, when it was unanimously agreed that it was necessary to keep a regular and constant Guard for the defence, which was immediately carried into effect, and continued without intermission till the arrival of his Majesty's Sloop of war *Vulture* about Christmas. And as an encouragement of the common People to persevere in their undertaking, Col. Shaw made them repeated promises that he would use his influence to obtain for them Pay and Provisions during the time they were employed upon said Services. That on or about the 13th March, being alarmed with the arrival of an armed force in the Basin with an intent to attack the Town, we were again called upon to do Military Duty, which was from that time continued for about three weeks, and that during the time the Duties were performed these deponents, together with col. Shaw and Mr. Williams, having in rotation had the Care of the Guards are knowing to their having been furnished with Provisions, Fireing and Candles.

"(Signed), MATTHEW WINNIETT, *Major.*
GEORGE THOMPSON.

"Annapolis, July 23rd, 1777."

Another affidavit was made by the adjutant employed, and non-commissioned officers under him as follows :

"Thomas Harris being duly sworn, declares that upon the first alarm of Cumberland being invested by the Rebells, which to the best of his remembrance was on or about the 12th day of November, a meeting was called of the inhabitants of the town of Annapolis, when it was agreed that a constant Guard or Watch should be kept for the Defence of the place which was accordingly continued till the arrival of his majesty's ship *Vulture*. That upon the second alarm of an armed force being in the Basin on or about the middle of March, the Deponent was again called upon to do Duty, which was continued at that time a fortnight or three weeks.

"(Signed), THOMAS HARRIS, *Adjutant.*"

"Francis Lecain confirms on oath the preceding Deposition of Thomas Harris in every particular.

"(Signed), FRANCIS LECAIN."

"Philip Bertaux, being duly sworn, declares that Military Duty had been done and Guards kept as is above set forth in the Deposition of Thomas Harris.

"(Signed), PHILIP BERTAUX."

"The foregoing Depositions were taken before us.

"(Signed), JOSEPH WINNIETT.
THOMAS WILLIAMS."

These affidavits settled one of the charges made against Colonel Shaw in his favour beyond dispute. On the other he was unable to make so triumphant a reply, for a committee of the House of Assembly, to whom the matter was finally referred, reported that he had been overpaid by the Government in a small sum which he was ordered to refund. It may be fairly assumed that Joseph Patten, who appears to have been the demagogue of the time, was the instigator and promoter of these charges against Shaw, for, in a note to Colonel Lovett, dated July, 1777, he says: "'Tis to be observed that upon the examination of the above-named persons that they almost all of them declared that they did not know that Colonel Shaw had received any pay for any services that they had done for the Government." Shaw was one of the members for the county at this period and the successor of Patten, and it is probable that the former had excited the rancour of the latter by his political action. Shaw was afterwards Sheriff of the County of Halifax, the *first* sheriff of that county.

Samuel Harris kept the Annapolis Ferry in 1777-78. He was a settler in Granville, and owned the lands on which the village of Granville Ferry now stands.

The following letter to the Provincial Treasurer will explain itself:

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, March 20th, 1778.

"SIR,—Agreeable to an order from the Lieutenant-Governor of the 8th January last, we herewith enclose you an account of all the moneys received and expended by us in making and repairing the roads and bridges within this county, also a list of non-resident and delinquent proprietors.

"(Signed), JOSEPH WINNIETT.
PHINEAS LOVETT.
CHRISTOPHER PRINCE.
HENRY EVANS.
THOMAS WILLIAMS."

Of these Prince was the only one residing in Granville.

Among the names of the non-resident proprietors appears that of Marmaduke Lamont, who was "Clerk of the Cheque" at Annapolis in 1759-60. In the draft of a grant of the township of Granville extant in the archives of the Province, and which was prepared by order of Governor Wilmot, is this clause, "and unto Marmaduke Lamont two

shares," which would have been one thousand acres. Mr. Lamont was the first registrar of deeds for the county after the advent of the New England settlers in 1760. The book of registry kept by him is still preserved, and may be found in the office of the Registrar at Bridgetown. He was succeeded in that office by Joseph Winniett, on his retirement, which was caused by his removal to Jamaica or other of the West India Islands, from which he never returned.

Benjamin Rumsey, the progenitor of all the Rumseys of the Province, was a grantee of one thousand acres of land in Granville. He was also a "Clerk of the Cheque," and for many years an inhabitant of Annapolis. His descendants reside in various sections of the county, but chiefly in Granville and Wilmot, and one of them has been a prominent merchant in the city of Halifax. They have always maintained a respectable position in the county.

We have now reached the period when the township received an impulse in the expansion of its population and the development of its resources unknown to its previous history. The Revolutionary War in America, which had deluged the older colonies with blood, had been crowned with success to the revolutionary malcontents, and thousands of persons were exiled from the homes of their childhood and the land of their birth. The old flag, under whose folds they had been born, and whose glorious traditions they still honoured and loved, and for whose supremacy they had fought and bled, though unsuccessfully, still floated over the old Acadian colony, and Granville, like her sister townships, opened her arms and offered a cheering welcome to such of them as might seek new homes within her boundaries.

Among the most notable of the new-comers who located themselves in this section of the county, the names of St. Croix, Gesner,* Ruggles,* Willett, Bogart, Mills, Seabury,* Millidge,* Thorne,* James,* Quereau, Mussels, Delap and Robblee, may be given. A few of them, Millidge, James, Ruggles, Thorne and Gesner, had received more or less scholastic training, and soon made their influence beneficially felt in the neighbourhoods in which they dwelt. Society was improved by their contact with it. Churches and schools were soon called for and became the order of the day. It is true that the first decade of their settlement was marked by considerable privation; but all the obstacles in the way of the attainment of substantial plenty were finally removed or overcome, and the voice of complaint became an unusual sound, and seldom afterwards disturbed the grateful content of a happy people.

Valuable accessions to the population were made about this period in the persons of the Baths, Clarkes, Longmires, Olivers and Gilliatts from the north of England, and of the McCormicks and McDormands

* See memoirs of these gentlemen.

and others from the north of Ireland. The descendants of these people have become very numerous, and continue by their thrift and industry to add to the prosperity of the township.

A general election took place in 1785, being the first since the Loyalists' arrival, and one of them, Benjamin James, was brought forward as a candidate for the representation of Granville, and was duly elected. He continued to discharge his legislative duties until 1792. He seems to have been possessed of considerable education, and to have been endowed with a sound judgment and many amiable personal qualities. He owned and resided upon the farm in central Granville, until recently known as the Glebe. He sold this farm to the church-wardens of the parish in 1799, and removed to Annapolis.

In 1784 Alexander Howe applied to the Government for a grant of land, as appears from the Surveyor-General's letter addressed to Amos Botsford, one of his duputies for the county, and dated December 10th in that year, in which he says :

"I beg leave to recommend Captain Howe, the bearer, whose father lost his life in taking possession of the country in 1749 or 1750, by the Indians. He wants some lands. There are only two lots vacant in Wilmot—numbers thirteen and fourteen, on the west side of Brown's."*

Mr. Morris shortly after wrote to Mr. Howe himself, in the following terms :

"I had the honour to receive your favour of the 19th ultimo, ever since which I have been very ill and confined with the gout. Your sister, Mrs. Cottnam, seems very desirous of having her thousand acres by herself in this part of the Province. Captain Cottnam had formerly two lots on the Windsor road ; they were by him mortgaged to a gentleman in England, but never any improvements were made by the mortgagee, and the land has become liable to forfeiture. If she can obtain this it is the best I can do for her, and if you can like the land on the intended new road I can make separate Returns of the Warrant, or, if necessary, obtain separate warrants. As soon as you can procure a survey of Mr. Harris, or any other of my deputies, of the land you want, with the proper metes and bounds thereon delineated, and send me, I will do everything in my power to forward the grant."

On the 22nd December, 1787, Mr. Morris again wrote to Mr. Howe and stated that he

"was going on with the grant to him and Captain Katherns for two thousand acres on the rear of Major Farrington's and Mr. Johnstone's lands in the south-east of the county."

Of Katherns, he adds :

"He does not come under the description of a Loyalist or reduced officer serving in the late war, and therefore his grant was a vote of Council, and in all those cases fees are paid in all the offices, which, for one thousand acres in one grant, is thirteen pounds, ten shillings, or thereabouts."

* A block of land there is still called "Howe's grant."

The block of land granted to Howe at this time is still known as the "Howe grant," and is situated a short distance to the eastward of the Macgregor settlement.

Howe was a native of the county and for several years a resident in Granville, where he owned what was known at a later time as the Gesner property. He appears to have been a very useful and capable as well as popular man, and may be regarded as the leader of the pre-loyalist inhabitants, and the champion of their interests in the contests and rivalries which sometimes arose between them and their Loyalist brethren.

The first mail-courier of whom any mention is made was a resident in their township, James Tattersall by name, whom I take to have been a Loyalist, as his name does not appear among the earliest settlers. In a memorial to the Executive he asks for compensation for losses sustained, and aid to enable him to perform the duty in the future. This was in 1784, and the mail was then carried once in a fortnight from Annapolis to Halifax and *vice versa*. In May, 1785, Robert Young, of Granville, applied for the grant of a water lot in front of the *ferry* for the purpose of building a dock at that place. To this end he asked for a frontage of 412 feet—a quantity thought to be too great by the Surveyor-General,* who referred the matter to Messieurs Winniett and Williams, of Annapolis, for their opinion. It does not appear whether his application met with success or not, but it is certain no dock was ever constructed there.

In 1792 Alexander Howe, who was then one of the county members, was employed by the Government to superintend the removal of the negroes—or such of them as were willing to go—from this part of the Province to Sierra Leone. The following letter, addressed by him to the Provincial Secretary, the Hon. Richard Bulkeley, and dated from Granville, February 9th, 1792, is of sufficient interest to warrant its transcription in full :

"Dear Sir,—I am honoured with your favour of the 4th inst. I am utterly at a loss what to charge for my trouble and expense with respect to the removal of the blacks. I apprehend that from my appointment, which was on the third day of October to the twenty-third day of December, 1791, I drew the last bills on your Honour (or rather the fifteenth day of January, 1792, when the blacks sailed from Halifax, if your Honour can extend that favour to me). I was a servant of the Government on the occasion, and [as] it was only a short time, a temporary and not a permanent appointment, I ought to be allowed a liberal stipend per day till the

* While referring to the correspondence of the Surveyor-General, Mr. Morris, I wish to transcribe the postscript in a letter of his, addressed to Thomas Millidge, one of his deputies, and dated in 1784, as it relates to a matter of some importance to land surveyors in the county. "The eastern boundary line of Granville runs north thirty-two degrees and thirty minutes west to the bay, so that there will be an angle of land which is not granted." The western line of Wilmot runs north 10° west. so that a triangular block with its apex at the river belongs to neither township.

business was concluded. I was as much detached from my farm business and concerns as if I had gone to Halifax. I made several trips to Digby, and one at the risk of my life. Advertisements were put up on the 9th October, and the blacks were ready to meet me accordingly when Mr. Clark arrived, which was on the 26th October. The difficulties and trouble must, your Honour will readily perceive, have been greater here than anywhere else. It was quite a novel affair in this part and totally so to me. I sent to Halifax nearly, if not entirely, one third of the whole number gone to Sierra Leone; those that came from ——— had to be landed and reshipped.

"I am assured that I could not have had anything done here or provided cheaper than I did—this Mr. Clarke knows. I sincerely hope your Honour is satisfied with my conduct in this business. Should anything require a personal explanation on my part, I shall be ready to wait on your Honour at Halifax. You may be assured that however much I stand in need of cash, I had rather have your approbation than any pecuniary reward that might be allowed me. I have made out an account and charged twenty shillings a day from the date of my Commission to the twenty-third of December (and have also charged in another bill) to the thirteenth of January for this reason, that if your Honour can extend to the departure of the blacks from Halifax, it will be so much in my favour; but that and the sum to be allowed I entirely submit to your opinion, with which I shall be satisfied and content.

"I was never more put to it for money than at this time. My Jamaica Attorneys have quite forgot me since I left there. I must beg leave to join my thanks with those of a distressed family for your kind attention to Cottnam Tonge on the death of his father.

"(Signed), ALEXANDER HOWE."

The negroes referred to in this letter had settled in considerable numbers in Digby, Clements and Granville, but especially in the former place. During the Revolutionary War a coloured corps was formed by the Royalists in or near New York for service against the rebels. It was known as the "Negro, or Black Pioneers." At the peace these pioneers accompanied the Loyalists of other disbanded corps in their migration to this country, and lands were granted to them in the township of Digby, where the descendants of those of them who did not accept a free passage to Africa, are still to be found. In 1794 the Rev. Archibald P. Inglis was rector of the parish.

The autumn of this year (November 25th, 1792) witnessed a general election in which Mr. Howe proved to be the successful candidate for Granville. He was chosen in the place of Mr. James, who had represented it from 1785, and he continued to be the sitting member until the dissolution (by lapse of time) of the Assembly in 1799, at which period his legislative life came to a close. He shortly afterwards removed to Halifax, where he died in 1814, leaving a widow (Susanna Green) who lived to a very great age, surviving him for more than thirty years. None of their descendants are now in the country.

Howe was a very active and useful member of the Legislature. It was he, while a representative of the county, who moved the first resolution

in the Assembly regarding the opening of the iron mines in the Province, having on the 17th of November, 1787, called for a committee "to report upon the best means to promote the manufacture of iron," excellent ores of that metal having been discovered. While representing Granville in 1794, he was chosen one of the committee to prepare the address of the House in honour of the arrival of His Royal Highness the Duke of Kent in Halifax. He succeeded Joseph Winniett as Collector of Customs and Excise for the Eastern District in 1789, and held the office until the 30th of September, 1797, when he was succeeded by Robert Dickson. Faithful to his instincts as a pre-loyalist he sturdily defended Brenton and Deschamps againt the assaults of his Loyalist colleagues, Millidge and Barclay; and in his defence of those judges he manifested as much ability as he did warmth.

Here would be the proper place to insert the return of the assessors for Granville under the Capitation Tax Act, but I regret to say they have not been preserved. Indeed, I am inclined to believe that considerable negligence marked the discharge of the duties of the officers appointed to carry out the provisions of this Act, and it is more than probable that the assessors did not forward a copy of the assessment made by them to the Provincial Treasurer as required by the law. This is the more to be regretted as we are thus deprived of an admirable means by which to estimate the growth of the population between 1770 and 1792-95, and to fix within known limits the advent of many families to the township from other districts of the county or from abroad.

At the general election of 1799, which took place on the 25th of November, the electors of the township chose Edward Thorne,* a New York Loyalist, to represent them in the new Assembly. It was about this period that roads to the Bay of Fundy began to be felt necessary. In the original survey of the township the lots were made to extend from the river and basin to the shores of that bay, and roads had been planned at intervals, on the lines of certain lots. Grants of the public moneys were now frequently made to aid the efforts of the settlers in the construction of these roads. Those to Parker's Cove, to Young's Cove, to Chute's Cove, to Delap's Cove, to Phinney's Cove and others were rapidly opened, and settlements formed on the northern slope of the mountain. The reader will note that the names of these coves were those of the owners of the lots whose homes were by the river side. The same names were applied to those sections of the mountain over which these roads passed—hence Phinney's, Young's, Parker's, Chute's, and Delap's mountains, names which are commonly used to designate them to this day. The northern shores of the township became slowly dotted with the cottages of the farmer and the fisherman, especially in the neighbourhood

* See this gentleman's memoir.

of the coves, and roads were soon afterwards made from cove to cove along the shores, thus affording fresh facilities for new settlements.

On the 18th of July, 1806, a general election was again the order of the day. On this occasion Thomas Millidge, who had formerly represented the township of Digby, and in the late House the county, became a candidate for the township, but he was not permitted to walk the course. Isaiah Shaw, of Lower Granville, then, I believe, the leading merchant of that district, offered himself as a candidate for the suffrages of the electors in opposition. He was of a pre-loyalist family, possessed considerable popularity, and was endowed with no mean share of mental and talking ability. The contest which ensued illustrates the spirit of rivalry which animated the old and new settlers in matters political. I do not mean to say that these parties acted together as a unit, for that would have been impossible as local and personal influences would necessarily prevent such action; but the majority in each party warmly supported those of its own section who were brought forward as candidates for public office or favour, and hence the election of representatives became, in a considerable degree, a contest between the Loyalist and Pre-loyalist sections of the community. In this case the chances seem to have been clearly in favour of Millidge. He had been a member of the Assembly for twenty years, and therefore had the prestige of experience. He was *custos rotulorum* of the county, a Justice in the Court of Common Pleas; possessed of considerable wealth, and held in general esteem by all classes of the people. It was therefore no ordinary opponent with whom Mr. Shaw had chosen to contend. In one thing the latter had a decided advantage over the former—he had youth and vigour on his side, no mean allies in such a fight. Mr. Shaw made an exhaustive canvass previous to the polling, which occupied three days, and to the astonishment of his adversary at the close of the poll, Mr. Shaw was declared duly elected by a small majority. Millidge demanded a scrutiny of votes before the sheriff, who, with the aid of two assistants, John Bath and Isaac Woodbury, entered into the investigation desired, which resulted in an increased majority for Shaw, whose return was confirmed.

The new House met on the 18th of November, and Millidge petitioned against the return. In his memorial he asserted that the sheriff, Winniett, had used his influence against him, and had unduly favoured his antagonist; that Foster Woodbury, a resident of Wilmot, had acted as inspector for Shaw; that James Tattersall, "a well-known freeholder," would not swear that his deed had been on record as long as the law required; that Ferdinand Schafner, another freeholder, was not allowed time to ascertain if his deed had been recorded, while that indulgence had been granted to Gideon Witt, Sylvanus Wade, Benjamin Wheelock,

Luke Ryder and Joseph Anthony, sen., who had voted against him; that William Kerr, the school-master, was not allowed to vote for him, though he had a life estate in lands since 1786, and which rented for more than forty shillings a year; and that by similar sharp practice, Samuel Willett, Abraham Gesner, and his own son, Phineas Millidge, had lost their votes. After a full investigation by a committee of the Assembly, Mr. Shaw was declared to have been duly elected, and so the matter ended. His first legislative act was a resolution to grant £500 toward the erection of a lighthouse on Briar Island. This occurred on the 30th of December, 1806. In 1808 he was instrumental in obtaining a further sum of £200 for the completion and equipment of that very useful structure. In the same year he introduced and carried through the House a "Bill to Prevent the killing of Seals and Porpoises in the Annapolis Basin," it being commonly believed that such acts were injurious to the fisheries carried on there.

The number of acres of land cleared in Granville under the "bounty Act" was less than in any other township in the county. Below is given the return made to Government in 1807, which was accompanied by a certificate signed by Thomas Millidge, Custos, and Ebenezer Cutler, Clerk of the Peace.

Thomas Millidge	3 acres.	Benjamin Foster	$4\frac{5}{8}$ acres.
James Chute	10 "	Joseph Fellows	$8\frac{1}{4}$ "
Benjamin Chute	6 "	Benjamin Wheelock	$2\frac{1}{4}$ "
John Katherns	$3\frac{3}{4}$ "	John Graves	$2\frac{1}{2}$ "
Joseph Troop	$7\frac{1}{8}$ "	John Hall	3 "
Robert Mills	7 "	Ferd'd Schafner	4 "
Henry Ricketson	$5\frac{1}{4}$ "	Ezra Foster	$3\frac{1}{4}$ "
George Brown	$2\frac{7}{8}$ "	William Young	$2\frac{7}{8}$ "
John Brown	$3\frac{3}{4}$ "	Thomas Phinney	$3\frac{1}{8}$ "
Jacob Eaton	$2\frac{1}{4}$ "		—
Benjamin Rumsey	$4\frac{1}{4}$ "	Total	93 acres.

It may be noted that all the names in the above schedule, except those of Millidge, Katherns and Mills, belong to the old settlers. There were only five Justices of the Peace in Granville at this time, including the Custos, namely, Samuel Chesley, Moses Shaw, Benjamin Dodge and Edward Thorne, of whom the last named only was a Loyalist.

In January, 1810, John Healy, Silas Hardy and James Reid, of Granville, yeomen, and Charity Cornwell, widow, petitioned Sir George Prevost, then Lieutenant-Governor, concerning the herring fishery at Goat Island, or perhaps, more correctly speaking, concerning the "bar," which forms the eastern extremity of that island. These persons inform His Excellency that they have for some time past "occupied the said bar, and had divided the profits arising from its use as a fishery." It appears

that Mr. Healy had applied for a grant of it some years previously to Sir John Wentworth, but had failed to obtain it "from some motives governing Sir John not particularly known" to him, but which he believes arose from a claim of one Mrs. Morrison, then a part owner of Goat Island.

Mr. Healy then sets forth for himself that he

"is informed that misrepresentations have been made to your Excellency tending to injure your petitioners by rendering his present application ineffectual, if possible, by inclining your Excellency to believe him the possessor of large fisheries; that your petitioner, so far from endeavouring to engross advantages the equal rights of others, does not possess or occupy a foot of flats or fishery independent of the bar above mentioned, and that he does not enjoy it at the exclusion of others, but has permitted and would, in the event of his obtaining a Grant, allow the above-mentioned persons, your petitioners, to associate with him in the advantages derivable from it."

Mr. Hardy tells His Excellency that he

"is married and has three children—all boys; that he has resided in Granville for many years; that he was born in the County of Annapolis, where he has always remained; that he has no fishery at all except by permission of Mr. Healy; that he contributed one-fourth part towards the erection of a weir on the before-mentioned bar, and received a proportionate benefit, and that he has never received any benefaction from Government of lands or otherwise."

James Reid says of himself that he

"is lately married, and has resided in Granville some years; that he has likewise been allowed to receive a part of the profits of the weir; that he owns no fishery, and never had any grant from Government."

Mrs. Cornwell sets forth that she

"is the widow of the late George Cornwell, who during the Revolutionary War in the neighbouring colonies, suffered greatly in his person and property, and finally was compelled for his loyalty to his sovereign to become an alien to his native soil, and seek refuge in this province, where he remained until his death, which took place about three years since; that her said husband left her by his will considerable property for her natural life, but to which no fishery was attached; that she has contributed towards the erection and support of the weir mentioned above, and been allowed by Mr. Healy to take from it a share of the profits corresponding to such in building; and that her said husband never received any grant of lands from Government or any recompense for his losses sustained during the war with the revolted colonies."

"Your petitioners beg leave further to state to your Excellency that the bar or flat above alluded to remained ever unoccupied until about five years ago, when John Healy proposed and did at an enormous expense build a weir upon the same, it being deemed by every other person a speculation too hazardous to attempt. Its success, however, excited attention, and those who were averse to the risk would now grasp the profit of it; and it is with reluctance your petitioners state that the persons now applying to your Excellency for a share in the above fishery with your

petitioners, already possess the most extensive fishery beach on the shores of Granville.

"That the size of the above bar will not admit of more than one weir being built upon it; and the fish that have hitherto been taken in it are barely sufficient for your petitioners and their families, and to reimburse the expenses of building the said weir. Your petitioners therefore humbly pray your Excellency upon a due consideration of the circumstances will be pleased to grant the above-mentioned bar to your petitioners, or to the said John Healy, as your Excellency may deem best, in either of which cases your petitioners will derive equal benefits.

"(Signed), JOHN HEALY.
SILAS HARDY.
JAMES REID.
CHARITY CORNWELL.

"Granville, January 29th, 1810."

"Annapolis SS. John Healy, Silas Hardy, James Reid and Charity Cornwell, who being duly sworn upon their several oaths, declare the facts contained in the Petition hereto annexed are correct and strictly true as relates to each deponent respectively; and that each of them considers himself and herself a subject of the British Government, and are at all times ready to take the oath of allegiance to its present sovereign. And the said John Healy further deposeth that the facts contained in a former petition to His Excellency Sir G. Prevost, signed with his hand and forwarded to Samuel Hood George, esqr., were also strictly just and true.

"(Signed), JOHN HEALY.
SILAS HARDY.
JAMES REID.
CHARITY CORNWELL.

"Sworn before me at Granville, the 29th January, 1810.
"(Signed), JAMES HALL, *J.P.*"

"And the said John Healy mentioned in the body of the Petition saith at the time I was about making tryal of taking fish on said bar I proposed to the late Mary Morrison (now Mary Shafner) who has been a claimant and an applicant for a tithe of the said 'bar' to join me in erecting a weir on the said bar, but she, the said Mary Shafner, refused totally having anything to do in the enterprise.

"(Signed), JOHN HEALY.

"Sworn before me, JAMES HALL, *J.P.*"

"The petitioner, Charity Cornwell, mentioned in the foregoing petition was knowing and hereby deposeth, that in the lifetime of her said husband, George Cornwell, that he the said Cornwell did propose and state to James Thorne (now Captain Thorne) that he believed the bar alluded to in said petition would be a profitable fishery, and urged him the said Thorne to join in erecting a weir on said bar, but said Thorne refused saying he would not undertake the experiment.

"(Signed), CHARITY CORNWELL.

"Sworn before me, JAMES HALL, *J.P.*"

The following deposition of Thomas Robblee was annexed to the petition of the other persons named. It was intended that his name should have been found in the "boddy" of that document, as he had occupied a part of the bar and had "received benefits" according to the amount he had contributed toward building the weir.

"I, Thomas Robblee, depose and attest that I am knowing to the persons mentioned in the foregoing petition, were the first that made the experiment for taking fish on the said bar.

"(Signed), THOMAS ROBBLEE.

"Sworn before me, JAMES HALL, *J.P.*"

The result of the application may be read in the endorsement written upon it. It was this:

"The petition of J. Healy and the widow Shafner petitioned the late Governor for the Bar or flat within mentioned, but as the granting the sole exclusive right of fishery on the bar to one or two individuals might be attended with public injury, or inconvenience, it was deemed proper to leave it to the magistrates at Annapolis in Sessions to regulate this and the other fisheries on that bar.

"(Signed), CHARLES MORRIS, *Surveyor-General.*"

It may not be out of place here to make a note concerning these petitioners and the persons incidentally introduced by them:

Mrs. Cornwell was a native of one of the old colonies, and had been the wife of George Cornwell who came to Digby in 1783, from which some years later on he removed to Granville. The Cornwells were a highly respectable family, of whom two, Thomas and George, were exiled and had their estates confiscated at the close of the revolution. Thomas, who remained in Digby, was in the Commission of the Peace in 1807, and from time to time discharged the duties of several other public offices. James Cornwell, late of Clarence West, in Wilmot, was one of his descendants.

Thomas Robblee was the son of a Loyalist who was one of the original grantees of the township of Clements. His farm occupies and includes one of the most interesting historical spots in Nova Scotia, the old Scotch Fort, some outlines of which, it is said, are still traceable, although more than two and a quarter centuries old! His family, it is believed, were of French origin,* and came to this province from New York.

John Healy and Silas Hardy were sons of pre-loyalists of 1760-65, and men of excellent standing in the community, having been as remarkable for their enterprise as for their industry.

Mary Morrison or Schafner I take to have been the widow of one of the sons of John Morrison, who was settled in Granville in 1770; but of this there is no certainty from any information in my possession.

James Thorne, incidentally named in one of the depositions as Captain Thorne, was the son of Edward Thorne, of Lower Granville, a New York Loyalist, and the father of Stephen Sneden Thorne, so long the representative of the township in more recent times, and of the late Edward L. and Richard W. Thorne, late merchants of St. John, N.B.

* See Robblee genealogy.—[ED.]

James Hall, the magistrate before whom these affidavits were made, was the son of John Hall, a pre-loyalist settler, and the father of the wife of S. S. Thorne, of Bridgetown, above noticed. He was also the maternal grandfather of James I. Fellows, of St. John, N.B., before mentioned. The descendants of both these gentlemen are exceedingly numerous.

In 1813 the grants to Delap's, Young's and Chute's coves were issued.

Granville's contribution to the Waterloo fund in the autumn of 1815 was larger than that of any of her sister townships, reaching an amount equal in our currency to $437.62 by 166 persons, of whom the largest contributors were Thomas Millidge, $46; Edward Thorne & Son, $40; Rev. John Millidge, $23.33, and Samuel Hall, $20.

In the year 1818 the herring fishery at Goat Island again became a matter of contention. A number of the inhabitants in that vicinity petitioned Lord Dalhousie in the terms hereunder stated:

"That your petitioners are farmers living in that part of the township of Granville situated opposite to Goat Island and a short distance above it, and that no fisheries whatever are attached to any of their lands.

"That for some years past a bar or flat, lying in the Annapolis River on the eastern side of Goat Island, opposite to some and nearly so to all your petitioners' farms, has been occupied as a fishery by two or three individuals to the exclusion of all others in that neighbourhood; that some of your petitioners have been obliged to purchase of those occupiers their supply of fish for their families at an extravagant rate, and instances have occurred when the fish were suffered to perish and spoil on the [shore or in the weir, rather than let them be taken by persons who could not pay for them."

They conclude by praying that the said bar or flat be made a public fishery to be regulated by the Court of Sessions. These are the names of the petitioners: James Hall, James Delap, jun., James Rice, John Hardy, Thos. Delap, John Schafner, John Kennedy, James T. Hall, Israel Fellowes, Thomas Young, Christopher Winchester, Thos. Robblee, James Delap, sen., John McCaul, sen., Westen Hall, George Wooster, Robert Delap, George Hall, Alexander McKinsey, William McKinsey, Moses Shaw, Richard Halfyard.

In 1827 the population of the township of Granville was 2,526; land cultivated, 4,200 acres; horses in the township, 264; head of cattle, 2,789; sheep, 3,767; swine, 1,194.

By the Editor.

The first steam ferry to connect the growing village of Granville Ferry with Annapolis was established in 1870 by the late Cory Odell, of Annapolis, and the late David Ingles, of Granville, and the boat was called the *Fred. Leavitt.* Not proving a successful financial venture, as pioneer adventures of the kind so seldom do, she was sold in 1874 to a

company in Pictou. But on May 23rd, 1881, the steamer *Joe Edwards* was built and placed on the service by a company in Granville, and continued running until 1891, when the present more commodious steamer *Glencoe* took her place.

BRIDGETOWN.

By the Editor.

In the days of the French occupation, as afterwards until 1803, a ferry connected the site of the present village with the hamlets on the south side of the river. Among the latter was an estate or seigniory of one thousand acres "about twenty miles up the Annapolis River," called St. André Emanuel, and farther east a hamlet called Robicheauville, divided from the other by Bloody Creek Brook. Peter Pineo, jun., one of the early emigrants to Cornwallis, is said to have built the first house on the site of the present town of Bridgetown, after the houses of the French had been destroyed. He was a native of Lebanon, Connecticut, and descended from a Huguenot exile, whose name was spelt Pineau.* In 1782 Rev. Jacob Bailey speaks of Mr. Pineo's house as being eighteen miles from Annapolis. The road between the two places was then more circuitous, crossing the streams and creeks where they were narrow, and at the head of the tide. Mr. Pineo had been, in 1781, struck out of the Commission of the Peace at the instance of some of his brother magistrates, who accused him of harbouring persons concerned in a riot in Granville, although no proofs of his guilt were adduced. He was a man widely known, a pioneer ship-builder and exporter, of considerable influence, and distinguished for agreeable hospitalities. Embarking for the West Indies in one of his vessels, neither he nor the vessel was ever heard from again. His house stood on the lot formerly occupied by the late James Clark, and in more recent times by Mr. Charles Parker, and was known as the "mud house," from the fact that its materials of stones and wood were cemented together by clay and mud. It was long kept as an inn, and finally as a school-house. Probably Captain Crosskill built the next house on the present site of the town, where the mansion of T. D. Ruggles, Esq., now stands, but there was another house very early on the lot now occupied by the Presbyterian Church. Afterwards, Joseph Gidney, a worthy Loyalist of White Plains, New York, ancestor of the late Angus M. Gidney and of the numerous family of the name on Digby Neck, built where James DeWitt now lives—the old house being renovated and incorporated in the new one. He died there in 1816. A few other houses were probably built previous to

* Pronounced Peeno.

1803, when steps were taken toward building a bridge to supersede the ferry, the expense being partly provided by a grant from the Legislature, and partly by private subscriptions, and in November, 1805, the Grand Jury pronounced the contract for the construction of the bridge "faithfully executed," and the money voted by the Legislature and raised by private subscription toward building said bridge, "faithfully laid out" by the Commissioners, Robert Fitzrandolph and John Ruggles. This, of course, gave an immediate impulse to the growth of the place, and, as we have seen, Captain Crosskill, in 1822, evinced great foresight in laying out his land in town lots, and thenceforth its growth was rapid. In fact, a village sprang up like magic. From being at the head of the river navigation, it immediately developed an export trade, and became a shipping port for small vessels, of the products of all the valley eastward of it and the mountains north and south. In the year 1822 upwards of sixty vessels loaded at the bridge, and in 1823 one hundred cargoes were shipped from it. During the succeeding year two churches were built, Baptist and Church of England, and later the first Methodist church was erected on the lot next south of the residence of the late Dr. Dennison. The place still bore the name of Hicks' Ferry, until on January 25, 1824, the leading residents, elate with the prosperity and importance of the town growing up around them, met at a public dinner to discuss the question of a more suitable name, and adopted and applied that which heads this article.* Before the close of that year the village contained fifty or sixty houses. From the first, manufacturing, such as carriage building, tanneries, etc., flourished in the town, and in the later fifties and early sixties many important industrial establishments sprang up in it—a furniture factory, foundry, etc. In 1827 the law respecting Commissioners of Streets was extended to Bridgetown; and in the same year Thomas James and others petitioned the Legislature for aid to erect a suitable school-house. A new school was soon opened, adapted to the growing necessities of the town, in which Mr. Andrew Henderson taught the male department before he finally settled in Annapolis. He was succeeded by the late William Henry Shipley, who taught for twenty consecutive years. The building was situated on the site of the present court-house. When the new school law came into operation in 1864, the opposition to the introduction of the principle of compulsory assessment for the erection and support of schools was very strong in Bridgetown for a time. A Halifax party newspaper, on December 6th, 1864, said: "On Saturday last an attempt was made, the third or fourth, we hear—made of course under Secretary Rand's Educational Notice No. 3—to carry an assessment at Bridgetown to be legalized

* I would suggest that the name "Crosskill" would have been appropriate and in better taste.—[Ed.]

by and by. Ladies and gentlemen attended—every taxpayer of both sexes that could be induced to attend was in force to vote, but the government officers were again defeated." The same paper said later that "if Annapolis does not pitch the school bill and the inventors of it where they ought to be—where good people don't go—then they deserve to be treated as they have been henceforth and forever." The inventors of the measure were ejected from power by the constituencies; but the educational system, at first so unpopular, survives, and by wise management the youth of Bridgetown have enjoyed their full share of its benefits.

In 1856 the author, whose work I am humbly endeavouring to complete and give to the public, established at Bridgetown the *Western News*, the first newspaper ever published in the county. It was conducted in an able yet moderate and dignified tone, and its columns were, moreover, graced by many elegant poetical effusions from his pen. In 1858 the *Examiner* was founded at Bridgetown, and later the *Free Press*, under the editorial management of the late Angus M. Gidney, an able, witty and effective political controversialist, afterwards Sergeant-at-arms to the House of Assembly. He was a genial and popular citizen. The claim of Bridgetown to be made the shire town after the county was divided, and the settlement of the question in 1869, is noticed elsewhere. No doubt the anticipated difficulty in connection with that question long delayed the division of the county. An admirable water supply was introduced into the town in the summer and autumn of 1887, and the electric light in 1890.

CHAPTER XIII.

THE TOWNSHIP OF WILMOT.

Description—Grant to Philip Richardson—General Ruggles—Grant of 1777—Loyalists and settlers from Granville — Capitation taxpayers, 1792-94—New Grants — Letters of Surveyor-General Morris — Colonel Bayard — Melancholy event at Reagh's Cove—Fires—New roads—Bridges—Returns of cultivated land under Bounty Act, 1806-7—Petition for union with Aylesford in a new county—Middleton—Torbrook and Torbrook mines—Margaretsville.

THIS noble township contains more good land than any other in the county, and is bounded on the north by the Bay of Fundy; on the east by Kings County; on the south by other lands of the county and the Annapolis River; and on the west by its sister townships of Annapolis and Granville. The Annapolis River runs through its central portion, and forms many valuable intervale lands, and the several streams that discharge their waters into the main river from the North and South mountains, have formed extensive and valuable meadow lands; while rich and productive tillage soils lie adjacent to these, offering agricultural advantages not readily equalled by any portion of the Province. Its increase in population and material wealth has been very great during the last fifty years—greater indeed than in the other townships. Its thriving little villages and hamlets have chiefly had their growth within that period. Lawrencetown, with its three churches, Episcopalian, Wesleyan and Baptist; its gang-saw-mill, carding and grist mills, its bridge and railway station, added to its situation in the midst of productive orchards and well-tilled farms, is altogether a pleasant village, and a very desirable place of residence. Margaretsville (named in honour of Lady Halliburton, wife of Sir Brenton Halliburton, the late Chief Justice), cosily seated in Reagh's Cove on the Bay of Fundy, with its substantial breakwater and lighthouse, its inn, and comfortable and trim private dwelling houses, is famed for its salubrious, and delightfully cool atmosphere during the hot summer months. It carries on a considerable trade with St. John, N.B., and Boston and its outports. Port George is another pleasant village on the shore of the

bay, also possessed of a breakwater and lighthouse, a church and a ship-yard, and enjoys a trade similar to that of its near neighbour, Margaretsville. Middleton, too, a village of younger growth than either of the former, is beautifully situated on the banks of the river, very nearly occupying the geographical centre of the township. It has an Episcopal, a Wesleyan and a Baptist church, the former being finely located in a clump of primeval pines, known as the "Pine Grove," and is considerably over half a century old.

Noble intervales here line the river, while orchards of apple and other fruit trees spread their ample branches over the teeming uplands and pour their valuable and delicious fruit with unstinted generosity into the garners of the farmers year after year, and almost with unvarying profusion.

Nor must Melvern Square be passed over in silence. It is a fine hamlet resting at the foot of the North Mountain, about three miles from the river, and near the eastern county line. It, too, rejoices in the presence of fine orchards; neat farm-houses, stores and other buildings give evidence of thrift and prosperity. This place is in the extreme east, as Paradise, the delightful, is nearly in the farthest west. Paradise, nearly buried in orchards, and filled to repletion with the odours of Araby the blest, when the fruit-blooms colour the landscape in June, and crowned in the autumn days with a diadem of many-tinted gems, shaped in every form that beauty can lend or Pomona devise—Paradise, with its school and its church, its cheese factory, its pretty maidens and hardy swains, its neat and substantial dwellings, and the surroundings of field and forest picturesque and beautiful, well deserves the name it bears.*

This portion of the county was not settled quite so early as some other parts of it. It was not ordered to be laid out until 1764, or four years after the arrival of the *Charming Molly*, with the first immigrants at Annapolis. It received its name from Governor Wilmot, and comprised within its original boundaries a large part of the present township of Aylesford, the latter not having been set off as a separate district until 1786. It is made certain by a document to be found in the Miscellaneous Records Book, 1751-91, that some families had been settled there as early as 1773, for among the list of defaulting or non-resident road tax-payers I find the names of William Terry, Henry Potter, Charles Dickson, Peter Traile and Richard Pock or Peck, to which must be added Walter Wilkins in 1776. It was in June, 1777, that lots Nos. 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43 and 44, containing two thousand acres, were granted to Philip Richardson, one of the oldest, if not the oldest grantee, of Wilmot, and I

* The name is said to have been first given to his homestead by the late Samuel Morse, sen.—[Ed.]

think the first magistrate appointed in the township. His name appears among the eight justices who exercised magisterial authority in the county in 1780. These lots lie adjoining each other beginning with the highest number and going west from the Ruggles' Road, so called. The aggregate value of these lots has increased many hundredfold since they were granted—nay, within the memory of the writer. Lots Nos. 45 and 46, or those lying contiguous to the road bearing that name, were granted in 1784 to Brigadier-General Timothy Ruggles, a Massachusetts Loyalist, who for the succeeding dozen years was the model farmer of the region. He built a commodious and substantial dwelling on the southern slope of the North Mountain, at a point commanding one of the most extensive views in the county, and planted near it as soon as the forest could be cleared away and the soil prepared, an orchard of apple trees, being probably the first attempt at orcharding made in this section of the county. The trees forming it were grown from seeds planted by the General's own hand, and he thus became the first nurseryman of the succeeding century. In a gorge in the face of the hillside, a short distance to the south and eastward of his mansion, he planted some exotic trees, the history of one of which is worth relating. The ravine referred to was completely sheltered from all prevailing winds, and during the summer season, became heated to an unusual degree—so much so indeed that it seems possible that some sub-tropical or even tropical fruits might have been produced there. In this spot the venerable old man planted, among other trees not indigenous to this province, a black walnut tree; but whether this tree was grown from a young plant obtained from abroad, or from a nut, it is now impossible to determine. A knowledge of these facts was current among some of the old people of the past generation, but had almost died out at the time now alluded to. About thirty-five years ago, a farmer into whose hands a portion of the estate had fallen, in securing his winter's supply of firewood felled a tree the name of which was unknown to him, and hauled it with other and better known timber to his wood-yard. In passing this man's premises, in company with a well-known and esteemed cabinet-maker of the county—Mr. John Emslie—a short time afterwards, the colour of this wood attracted the attention of my friend, who alighted from the vehicle in which we were being conveyed, and proceeded to examine it. He at once pronounced it to be black walnut, and of excellent quality—but the wonder to both of us was, where did it come from? The owner being at home, we proceeded at once to his dwelling and made the inquiry, and were informed as above. My friend bought the wood, sent it to a saw-mill, had it sawn to the dimensions he required, and made of it several articles of furniture which are still in use in the county.

Such particulars of this old Loyalist pioneer as can be obtained will

be given in a biographical notice in another place. A fragment without date, found in the Nova Scotia Archives, contains a list of names of persons applying for rights above the township of Granville, on the river of Annapolis Royal, on the road to Halifax, and some facts embodied in it enable us to fix its date at some short period before 1777. This seems quite certain, as the name of Philip Richardson appears among the applicants, and the date of the grant was in 1777. The following are the names given in this document, and those printed in italics are known to have subsequently become grantees and settlers :

"James Nichols, Joseph Hill, jun., James McGregor, Samuel Chute, Joseph Hill, sen., Edward Snow, William McKim, *William Graves*, William Fitzgerald, 1st, William Fitzgerald, 2nd, W. Herrick & Son, *Israel Longley*, Nathaniel Horton, Joseph Rice, James Delaway, John Soward, Samuel Harris, William Pooke, Wise Wright, Nathaniel Chandler, *Jonathan Leonard*, Isaac Sturdevant, John Shiels, Robert Campbell, *Philip Richardson*, Ebenezer Rice, John Fountain, Charles Winniett, Monro [Col. Henry?], to have first choice in these lots ; Hatch to have his fifteen miles from Horton, and Wright to have his *where he is now settling*, and sixty acres at the landing place."

Of those whose names have been italicised, Jonathan Leonard left descendants who still occupy the lot assigned to him ; and it was at Leonard's hotel, at Paradise, where the Duke of Kent lunched on a fine Sunday, while on his way to New Brunswick, *via* Annapolis, in 1794, an event which has become a tradition to his grandchildren and great-grandchildren. Richardson left no male offspring that I am aware of. Graves left issue, and the name is still common in Wilmot and western Kings. At this time there were no roads worthy the name. In 1773 the amount expended on roads and bridges did not exceed £32 10s. In 1776 the sum available for these purposes was only £21, and in the following year, nothing having been given out of the funds raised in the neighbouring townships, the sum of £6 5s only was collected and paid toward that service. These facts will tend to show the very infantile condition of this now well-cultivated and thriving section of the Province. In the return for 1768, census for that year, its total population is stated to have consisted of 40 souls only, who possessed 5 horses, or about one to each family ; 62 horned cattle, 8 sheep and 15 swine. It had also one saw-mill. I regret very much that the names of the settlers are wanting in the return from which this information has been extracted. The lots next west of those obtained by Mr. Richardson, namely, Nos. 37 and 36, were not granted till 1785, when they were taken by Anthony Marshall ; and Nos. 35, 34 and 33 were about the same time granted to Timothy Saunders, Joseph Neily and Benjamin Chesley, respectively, and include the farms from Middleton westward to and including the farm of the late Mr. Avard Vroom. Saunders and

Chesley were at first settlers in Granville, where their fathers still continued to live. They left a very numerous issue which are now scattered far and wide over this and the adjoining province. Mr. Neily was a native of the north of Ireland, and a most valuable pioneer in the work of cultivation in this region; and he, too, left numerous and highly respectable descendants. Next to and adjoining the Ruggles' grant was that of two thousand acres to Abel Wheelock, of Leominster, in Massachusetts, who had previously been a grantee in Granville, and was another active pioneer in the great work of settlement in this township, and he also left a very numerous offspring whose labours in improvement have been continued through three generations to the present day. It is traditionally stated that Timothy Saunders was the superintendent employed in the original cutting out of a road from Nictau, through Torbrook, eastwardly into the County of Kings, and that "lot 35," which was granted to him, was that afterward owned by the late Mr. James Parker, one of the very few well-to-do farmers of Wilmot during the first thirty years of the century, and who became the purchaser of it before 1790.

It was not, however, till 1783 after the arrival of the Loyalists, that any very marked progress was achieved in the grand work of settlement in the magnificent forests of Wilmot. From this period the work was more vigorously prosecuted, and with more gratifying results. Many of the settlers of Granville and Annapolis sold out their partially improved lands and removed hither. This was the case with the Woodburys. Their progenitor, Dr. Jonathan Woodbury, who owned several lots near the Glebe in central Granville, sold out to Thomas Millidge, a New Jersey Loyalist, and purchased a portion of the Richardson grant before noticed, which he and his sons continued to occupy and improve from that time to the present day. There were many others of the old Massachusetts settlers and their sons who followed this example, among whom I may name Samuel Balcom, John Baker, sen., Nedebiah Bent, Benjamin Chesley, Asahel Dodge (son of Josiah of Granville), Joel Farnsworth (nephew of Amos), Oldham Gates, Ezra Hammond, Andrew and Isaac Marshall, Samuel Moore, John Starratt, Christopher Prince, and some others. These were all residents and ratepayers in this township in 1792, as may be seen by the capitation tax returns made in that year. As the Act imposing this tax required the assessors in each township to return annually a list of the names of all persons assessed, and as some of these have been preserved in our archives, I have found them very useful in aiding me in tracing families from place to place and fixing their position pecuniarily in the district in which they resided. Nearly one hundred persons who were thus ratable lived in Wilmot in 1792, and their names were as below given :

Armstrong, Richard.

Baker, Jacob.
Bass, Alden.
Bolsor, Christopher.
Beardsley, Robertson.
Bent, Nedebiah.
Burns, John.
Burns, William.
Burns, Francis.
Balcom, Samuel.
Balcom, Henry.
Banks, Joshua.
Bowlby, Richard, sen.
Bowlby, Richard, jun.
Buskirk, John.
Baker, John, sen.

Cropley, William.
Caton, Garrett.
Cropley, John.
Covert, William.
Charlton, Aaron.
Craft, George.
Charleton, Henry.
Charleton, James.
Cooper, John.
Castle, Michael.
Chesley, Benjamin.
Chesley, Joseph.
Clustin, James.

Delong, Simon.
Durland, Daniel.
Durland, Zebulon.
Downy, William.

Dunn, John.
Dunn, Edward.
Dunn, Ezra.
Dodge, Stephen.
Dodge, Asahel.

Elliott, John.

Fritz, Jacob.
Foster, John.
Farnsworth, Joel.
Fails, Benjamin.

Goucher, Stephen.
Gesner, Abraham.
Gates, Captain.
Gates, Oldham.
Gardner, George.
Gates, James.

Hammond, Ezra.
Hawkesworth, Adam.
Hawkesworth, John.
Hackelton, Elisha.

Jacques, John.

Lynch, Patrick.
Leonard, Jonathan.

McMasters, John.
Marshall, Andrew.
Marshall, Isaac.
Morton, Joseph.
Moore, Samuel.
Merry, William.

Nichols, George.
Nichols, William.
Nichols, Richard.

Prince, Christopher.

Randall, David.
Randall, Samuel.
Randall, Nathan.
Randall, Jonathan.
Ruffee, William.
Ruggles, Joseph.
Robertson, Robert.
Ruggles, John.
Ruggles, General Timothy

Slocomb, Caleb.
Slocomb, John.
Smith, James.
Sproule, John.
Starratt, John.
Starratt, George.
Snyder. Henry.
Saunders, Timothy.
Stronach, George.
Smith, Francis.

Truesdal, John.

Ward, John.
Woodbury, Dr. Jonathan.
Winner, Jacob.
Woodbury, Foster.
Woodbury, Fairfield.
Willet, Samuel.

The return of 1794 gives the following additional names as ratepayers in that year: Philip Thorne, Jonas Ward, William Rhodes, David Randall, Otis Marshall, Abel Marshall, Richard Marshall, Samuel McIntyre, Samuel McBride, John Lenahan, Richard Kemps, George Hawkesworth, Samuel Gates, Amos Farnsworth, Samuel Elliott, and Henry Dunn. The list of names has been introduced somewhat out of the true order of time required by our narrative, but it seemed desirable that the reader should be made familiar with them before what is to follow should be perused. One of the most interesting volumes in the archives is that which contains the letters of the Honourable Charles Morris, then the Surveyor-General of the Province, to his deputies in this county, of whom he tells us he had seven. These letters are full of interest as the reader will find.

I here transcribe one addressed to John Harris, jun., concerning a grant to members of the Ruggles family. It bears date December 6th, 1784, and the text is admirably legible, as is, indeed, the whole contents of the book:

"Sir,—Inclosed is a copy of the Governor's warrant for laying out Richard and John Ruggles, esquires, Eight hundred acres of land each. You are to lay out sixteen hundred acres in one contiguous tract, on the rear of lands adjoining the Land granted to General Ruggles, their Honoured Father, being part of land reserved for that family. In surveying this tract you will observe to make proper bounds and to note them. Survey you are to return to this office, and also to describe the Lots in Wilmott, which this land may bound on, for you may extend it either east or west of the Rear of their Father's Land or toward the Bay of Fundy, as may best suit them. You are also to certify to the nature and quality of the land in General, and whether any timber trees fit for the use of the Royal Navy, and make Report of your Proceedings herein to this office as soon as may be.

"I am, sir, etc.,

"(Signed), Charles Morris.

"To Mr. John Harris, jun., or other deputy of the county."

The descendants of Richard Ruggles above named are scattered widely through the extreme western counties. He afterwards settled in the township of Clements, where he died, leaving a fine homestead to his family, and some of his grandsons and great-grandsons still, I believe, occupy portions of it.

In July, 1785, the Surveyor-General thus wrote to Benjamin Jarvis, another of his deputies, who lived at that time in what is now called Aylesford:

"I have received your Plan of five hundred acres for Mr. Wiswall and two for Thomas Outhit, and shall get the pay for you as soon as I can. As for the Boulbees [Bowlbys] if it should so happen that I may have occasion to order other surveys to be made, at the public expense, you may, when on such service lay out the Land assigned for them and charge it in the same account. . . . If you will forward a short petition to the Governor for the Land you wish to have and get Mr. Huston or Mr. Burbidge, or both, to write a line of Recommendation at the Bottom, I will carry it through for you. If you are a loyal emigrant you'll have no fees to you, except at Mr. Wentworth's office."

The heirs of the Wiswalls and Outhits still occupy the lands herein referred to. In August of the same year Mr. Morris wrote to Joseph Ruggles, another of his deputies, saying:

"I have the Governor's Warrant to lay out unto Laurens Van Buskirk, Garret Van Buskirk, Abraham Van Buskirk, Henry Van Buskirk, John Van Buskirk and Garret Ackerson, each a plantation containing 200 acres—1,200 acres in the whole—which you will lay out for them on Wilmott mountains adjoining the lands granted the sons of General Ruggles, provided the land is not laid out to others. . . . They paying you for your trouble, as Government will not be at any further expense for such surveys."

On the 29th of December, in the same year, he wrote again to Mr. Ruggles as follows:

"I have the Governor's Warrant to lay out 250 acres for Stephen Gouger, 200 for Edward Gouger, 100 for James Parks, and 100 for Benjamin Artin—650 in the whole—which is to be laid out to the northward and adjoining land granted Colonel Beverly Robinson and others, on Wilmott mountain, between them and the Bay of Fundy. I have only to remark that there is a great street or road four rods wide between every grant made on the mountain to the Bay of Fundy."

In 1787, May 31st, again addressing Mr. Ruggles, he writes thus:

"I wrote you last fall to lay out for Mrs. Phillips five hundred acres of land on Wilmott Hills, adjoining the Rev. Wiswall's, and to return a plan thereto to this office. I have the Governor's Warrant for a thousand acres to be surveyed to John Chandler, esquire, which, if he chooses, you may lay out, adjoining Mrs. Phillips', or in any part of the Tract lying between Captain Phipps', Doctor Haliburton's, the Buskirks, and the Bay of Fundy."

On the 12th of June following, he writes the same:

"I have now the Governor's Warrant for four hundred acres for Mr. Robinson which you will survey and lay out for him on Wilmott Hills agreeable to my letter of 31st July. He will pay you for this business; but I must pray you to be as favourable to him as you can in making your charges, for he has met with misfortune, and I believe is unable to pay much. . . . If he does not like the land you may point any other ungranted Tract that you know of, or you can give him these orders that he may apply to Mr. John Harris, jun., Mr. Millidge, or any other of my deputies who may execute them if they can find land to please him."

In August, to the same he says:

"I never had a Warrant of survey for the Nichols [David and George]. They must petition the Governor for the land in the rear of Lot No. 28, in Wilmott, and when I have received the Governor's Warrant I will prepare for the Grant without loss of time and with as little expense as possible."

On the 22nd of December, 1787, Mr. Morris tells Alexander Howe, Esquire, of Granville, that "he is going on with the Grant" to him and Captain Katherns, for two thousand acres on the rear of Major Farringdon's and Mr. Johnstone's lands in the south-east of the county.

Of Captain Katherns, he says:

"He does not come under the description of a Loyalist, or reduced officer, serving in the late war, and therefore his was a vote of council, and in all those cases fees are paid in all the offices, which for one thousand acres and one Grantee is thirteen pounds, ten shillings, or thereabouts."*

The letter quoted from was forwarded to Annapolis by the hands of Mr. Bonnett, father of the late sheriff of the county.

* Descendants of Captain Katherns yet reside in the county. He lived to a great age, and was in the commission of the peace for many years.

Three years before the above date, namely, on the 10th of December, 1784, he had written to the same gentleman as follows:

"Dear Sir,—I had the honour to receive your favour of the 19th ultimo, ever since which I have been very ill and confined with the Gout. Your sister, Mrs. Cottnam, seems very desirous of having Her Thousand acres by herself, in this part of the Province. Captain Cottnam had formerly two lots on the Windsor Road; they were by him mortgaged to a gentleman in England; but never any improvement made by the mortgagee and the land has become liable to forfeiture. If she can obtain this it is the best I can do for her, and if you can like the land on the intended new road, I can make separate returns of the Warrant, or if necessary, obtain separate Warrants as soon as you can secure a Survey of Mr. Harris, or any other of my deputies, of the Land you are Desirous of having, with the proper metes and bounds thereon Described, and send me, I will do everything in my power to forward the grant."

In July, 1784, the Surveyor-General had written to Amos Botsford, his chief deputy at Digby, and a member of the Board of Agents, in these terms:

"I beg leave to recommend to your attention the bearer, Captain Howe, whose father lost his life in taking possession of this country in '49 or '50, by the Indians—he wants some land—there are only two vacant lots in Wilmot, 13 and 14 west side of Brown's [Bowen's ?]."

I mention this fact as illustrative of the esteem in which Howe was held by the leading men of the day. The reader is referred to the biographical and genealogical parts of this work for further particulars of his family.

I copy the following postscript to a letter written by Mr. Morris, in August, 1784, to one of his seven deputies in the county, Thomas Millidge, Esq., as it relates to a matter of some consequence to persons now living in the district to which it refers, namely, to the boundary lines between Granville and Wilmot, which have proved a puzzle to the local surveyors. It says: "The eastern boundary of Granville runs N. 22° 30′ W. to the Bay of Fundy, so that there will be an angle of land between that township and the land you are at present laying out, which is not to be granted, but to remain a public reserve."*

It was toward the close of the century that Samuel Vetch Bayard, a distinguished New York Loyalist, became a dweller in the township. In his youth and early manhood, he was reputed to have led a somewhat wild and thoughtless life, and to have been noted for his disregard to religious obligation. From the time of his settlement in Wilmot, however, his conduct became the subject of a wonderful change. His old ways were abandoned, and he became a model of piety and social worth; and thus in his after-life, he succeeded by his teachings and noble example to

*The western boundary of Wilmot was run N. 10° W., hence the triangular block between; the apex of the triangle being at the river and its base on the Bay of Fundy.

impress upon the people among whom he lived, the value of a pure and self-sacrificing life, and an inflexible regard for the truth. He was a leading magistrate for many years, and never failed in his capacity as such to rebuke all evil and wrong with a fearless tongue, and to punish all wrong-doing with a courage only equalled by his honesty of purpose and determination to administer the laws in such a manner as would make them a terror to the wicked and a bulwark of security to the well-disposed. Colonel Bayard, as he was generally called, was born in New York in 1757, and was of French origin. His family were Protestant, and came to New York after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, where, under British colonial rule, they could express their religious opinions with safety, and worship God in the manner they judged most scriptural and acceptable. The great mercantile house of William Bayard & Company was founded by them, which for many years held a position in the commercial world of America second to none, except perhaps, that of Stephen De Lancey & Company, of that city.

Mr. Bayard entered the service when very young, as he was only twenty-six years of age at the close of the war, in 1783, and at that time had reached the position of major in the Orange Rangers, in which corps he served. We cannot now be quite certain at what time he first took up his residence in the township, but it was probably about the year 1800. He was lieutenant-colonel of the Royal Nova Scotia regiment, in 1795. One of the companies of this regiment had its headquarters in the county, and was commanded by Captain Alexander Howe. It consisted of four lieutenants—De Lancey Barclay, Joseph Weeks, Benjamin James and Timothy Ruggles—four sergeants, four corporals, three drummers, and fifty-five privates. The first mention I find made of him in our archives is contained in a letter written by himself to the Honourable Charles Morris, and dated from Wilmot, 6th October, 1801. He says:

"Dear Sir,—By this day's post I have transmitted a petition to Sir John Wentworth, for a grant of five thousand acres of land for myself and family, as an American Loyalist, and as a commissioned Field officer at the close of the war. Previous to my leaving Halifax in August last, His Excellency was pleased to reply that he would accede to the prayer of my petition, but desired me to state in it the circumstance of my not having received any lands as a reduced officer and Loyalist, together with my having obtained an order from Lord Sydney, in the year 1785, for lands for myself and family, which was directed to Governor Parr, at the time that you were pleased to recommend to me the tract of lands in the township of Wilmot, on the Bay of Fundy. My friend, Major Thesiger, will procure His Excellency's consent for the grant being made out, and through him I will send the payment without delay, as soon as I receive information thereof. Your attention to this matter will add to the obligations already conferred on—

"Your obedient servant,

"(Signed), Samuel V. Bayard."

The lands mentioned in this letter were shortly afterwards granted to him, and a portion of them yet belongs to his heirs. They are situated on the south side of the river, and are so well known that they do not need a special description. Colonel Bayard died May 24th, 1832. There appears to have been but one saw-mill in Wilmot, in 1787; for the saw-mill bounty was claimed by only one owner, and that owner was Henry Charlton, whose family name has become very numerous in the county and adjacent regions. In 1797, on the 31st March, Thomas Millidge, Esq., one of the members of the Assembly for the county and chairman of a commitee appointed for that purpose, reported to the House in favour of laying out a road *from Nictaux to Halifax.*

A melancholy occurrence took place at Reagh's Cove—now Margaretsville—on the coast of the Bay of Fundy, in that year, in the week separating Christmas Day from the New Year. Adjoining this cove, and extending back into the country for some distance, lay a tract of land but recently granted to the Honourable Doctor John Halliburton,* the father of the late venerable Chief Justice Halliburton, on which a small clearing had been made, and a small hut erected, by one Peter Barnes. With this exception the whole region for many miles around was a dense and unbroken wilderness. On a bitterly cold night at the time above referred to, a small schooner belonging to Cornwallis or Horton, on her passage down the bay, was caught in one of those violent north-east snow-storms, which now and then sweep over our exposed coasts with such devastating power, and became a wreck at this place, and not very far from the dwelling of Barnes and his wife. This vessel had six souls on board at the time of the disaster, three of whom perished in trying to effect a landing from the stranded schooner, while the remaining three reached the land in safety, but only to die in the neighbouring forests before daylight should again visit the scene of their almost miraculous but temporary escape. Their bodies were next day found stark frozen, and reclining against the boughs of the trees, from which they appeared to have sought shelter and aid; and when found it became evident that some person had been there before, and had wrenched away the finger rings worn by one of them, and that all the valuables of which they had been possessed, if indeed, they had any, had disappeared, and suspicion of the foul deed fell upon Barnes. In fact, the legend connected with this melancholy event, current in that section of the county in the writer's boyhood, affirmed that in the intervals of the howlings of the tempest in that fearful night, he had heard the cries of these dying men (their remains were found not far from his hut) and had gone out at the request of his wife to offer aid and shelter, but that he had returned

* A surgeon in the British navy during the revolution.—[Ed.]

after a considerable absence, saying they had been mistaken in the sounds they had heard, or thought they had heard, as he could not hear anything when outside. The legend, however, affirmed that he had found them alive, though speechless; that he had deliberately robbed them, and left them to meet their fate. There is but little doubt that the legendary facts did not run quite parallel with the real ones; but it is certain that he was shunned as though he had been guilty, and his death, or rather the manner of it, which occurred nearly twenty years afterward, was by many looked upon as a confirmation of his assumed guilt. It was on a precisely similar night of storm that he left the tavern of William Pearce, near what is now known as Middleton, and was never seen alive again. The gale of wind howled fearfully, and the blinding snows were heaped into huge drifts in the highways during the night, and in the morning his body was found in a field near the highway, a stiffened corpse. He was the first settler at Margaretsville, was an Irishman by birth and married, but left no descendants.

On the meeting of the House of Assembly in June, 1799, a petition was presented to it, signed by Nathaniel Parker, Foster Woodbury, and others, praying for aid to the Liverpool Road, stating that "the petitioners had cut the same from Nictaux toward Liverpool one-half the distance, and that the inhabitants of Queens County had cut out the remaining half." The initial work on this lengthy highway was therefore done in 1798. A heavy fire swept over a portion of this township in 1800 which did considerable damage to buildings and crops, especially to the latter, and in consequence thereof, Alden Bass and others petitioned the Assembly in June of the following year for relief. The conflagration was accidental and took place in August. The petitioner Bass was the son of Joseph Bass, a grantee in Annapolis township, and was a nephew of the Right Rev. Dr. Bass, the first Episcopal Bishop of Massachusetts. This family was, I suspect, connected by marriage with the Aldens of Boston.

In 1801 the first "Bayard bridge" seems to have been under construction, the commissioners for building it being John Ruggles and Nathaniel Parker. Mr. Ruggles and Mr. de Saint Croix were the commissioners of highways from Aylesford to Hicks' Ferry (Bridgetown) this year for the expenditure of £50, granted in 1799. In the same year the road from Nictaux leading to Farmington had been laid out, as will appear from the petition of Colonel James Eager, who states a jury had assessed damages to the amount of £60 in his favour for the land taken from him to locate the road, but which had not been paid to him. Elias Wheelock, in 1801, had been engaged in making extensive explorations of the country between Wilmot and Lunenburg, with a view to laying out a road from the former to the latter place, and in 1802 petitioned to be

remunerated for his services, and the Assembly granted him the sum of £23 4s. 6d. William Bent, Esq., of Paradise, by petition asked the Legislature, in 1802, for aid to build a bridge over the Annapolis River at that point, and the Assembly by resolution agreed to grant £200 toward the object, on the condition that £100 should be provided by the inhabitants interested. The sum of £70 was granted during the same session to secure two alterations in the highway leading through the township toward Halifax, which were described as follows: "To commence at the top of the west bank of Dunn's brook, and from thence to run nearly straight to Hackleton's house on the north side of the road, and from the little brook east of Philip Thorne's house to the twenty-third mile-board opposite the house of the Rev. Mr. Wiswall." On July 1st, 1801, Mr. Millidge moved a resolution in the Assembly "to consider of the speediest means of securing settlers on the new road to Liverpool." This led to the appointment of a commissioner to locate settlers and superintend all matters necessary to be done to insure speedy and permanent settlement. The commissioner chosen was Nathaniel Parker, whose report on the progress made the reader will find *in extenso* in the history of the district of New Albany.

In June, 1803, William Bent and others, of Paradise, in a memorial to the Legislature, inform the House that they "have made improvements on the new lands at the foot of the North Mountain, in Wilmot, but being indigent are unable to make a road to the Post Road, and they asked for assistance on that account. There therefore appears to have been no "Leonard Road" up to that time, but it was soon afterwards laid out and constructed. The Assembly granted £40 toward it at this time.

In the same year William Robinson and others, "proprietors of lands on the road leading from "Nictaux Falls" to "Birch Cove" (?) applied for aid for this road, and for the passage of an Act to compel absent proprietors to pay for, or perform, statute labour." In 1802, Phineas Millidge, who was one of the deputy surveyors for the county, was employed in the survey of a section of the Liverpool Road, with a party of assistants, consisting of Nathaniel Parker, Joseph Morton, John McCormick, George Harvey and George Buchanan, who applied for compensation for losses sustained by fire while carrying forward their survey. Their clothing was destroyed by one of their camps taking fire in their absence, and the Assembly granted £36 10s. to be distributed among them in proportion to their losses. A resolution passed the House during the same session to the effect that a sum not exceeding thirty pounds be granted to Elias Wheelock, surveyor, to be expended in exploring a road to commence from the end of said Wheelock's marked

road, through the lots granted to Robert Dickson* and others, in 1796, to the main road leading to Halifax. †

In 1805 Benjamin Hicks, Ann Dodge and Sarah Leonard, "innkeepers of Annapolis and Wilmot," applied to the Assembly to be reimbursed in the sum of £37 for losses sustained by them in subsisting His Majesty's troops while on a march;" whereupon Mr. Millidge obtained leave to introduce a bill to provide for the payment of expenses incurred in the removal of troops. Mrs. Leonard was the widow of the late Jonathan Leonard, of Paradise, and the mother of the late Seth Leonard, of that place, a highly respected magistrate of the township. Mrs. Dodge was the widow of Asahel Dodge, the founder of the tavern, so long known in later years as Gibbon's. Both these families were of preloyalist origin.

In December of this year, Elias Wheelock prayed the Legislature to grant him the sum of £91 to reimburse him for the expenses incurred and labour performed in exploring the country between Annapolis, Halifax and Lunenburg. This gentleman was one of the most active and intelligent pioneers in road location and construction, and to his energy and almost tireless perseverance, the people of South Wilmot were indebted for the benefits derived from the road systems devised and inaugurated through his efforts in the latter years of the last and the first years of the present century. He lived to a green old age, and some of his children yet survive and reside in the township, of whom Thomas C. Wheelock, of Middleton, is one.

Below the reader will find a list of the names of the farmers in Wilmot who claimed the bounty created by the Act 46, Geo. III, for clearing and seeding lands. The proofs (as to acres cleared) were presented to a court of special sessions of the peace, held at Annapolis, June 22nd, 1807.

Name.	Acres cleared.	Name.	Acres cleared.
Abel Marshall	5⅞	John Reagh	6¼
William Merry	3⅛	David Nichols	4¼
James Banks	5⅞	Matthew Roach	10½
Henry Balcomb	7⅜	John Foster	2¾
George Bowlby	4⅛	Jacob Fritz	7¼
Reuben Balcomb	5¾	Daniel Durland	7½
Henry Banks	8¼	George Hawkesworth	3
Conrod Osinger	2⅛	John Elliott	7¼
Paul Chesley	9¾	Caleb Slocomb	5¼

*Mr. Dickson was a Loyalist gentleman, and succeeded Alexander Howe as Collector of Customs at Annapolis, in September, 1797. He was also one of the early sheriffs of the county. He died in 1808, leaving several daughters but no male heirs. One of the daughters married the late Silas Hoyt. Jesse Hoyt, Esq., of Stellarton, was a great-grandson of Mr. Dickson.

†The Bloomington, or Peter Morse Road, is indicated.

Name.	Acres cleared.
Joseph Brown	3¾
John Cropley	6¼
Henry Murray	3¾
John Wisswall	5
Samuel Brown	4¼
John Neily, jun	11¼
Samuel Dodge	5½
Samuel Gates	4
George Stronach	2¼
Amos Gates	7
Oldham Gates	7
Jacob Baker	6
Ezekiel Brown, jun	5¼
Thomas Gates	4¼
James Gates	4¼
Frederic Morton	11½
Robert Neily	17¼
John Baker, jun	4¼
John Ward	3
Henry Robinson	6½
Ebenezer Fails	4
Joseph Durling	3½
Thomas Durling	3¾
John Slocomb, sen	9½
Jacob Miller	4¾
Joseph Stirk	2¾
Robinson Beardsley	3¼
Charles Worthylake	2¼
Christopher Bolsor	9¾
John Slocomb, jun	5½
Charles Robertson	5
Charles Cook	2¼
John Chesley	12½
Joseph Neily	9¾
Asa Chesley	5½
Thomas Banks	5¼
Timothy Parker	11¼
Donald Logan	6
Henry Roberts	3
Zebulon Durling	3¾
David Shaw	15½
Lott Phinney	14½
Thomas Clark	4½
Asa Longley	2⅞

The amount subscribed by the people of Wilmot to the Patriotic Fund in 1815 was $78.90, by forty-seven contributors.

Early in 1819 a movement was set on foot in Wilmot to have that township severed from Annapolis with the view to the erection of a new county to be formed by its union with the township of Aylesford, which was to be separated from Kings County. I think this action was, to a considerable degree at least, the work of the late Colonel Samuel V. Bayard, already mentioned, as the petition appears to be in his handwriting. It was contemplated that all that part of the county lying to the south of Wilmot, and not included in any other township, should be included. This seems to have been a very popular movement, and no doubt had its origin in the difficulty and expense of transacting certain public business at Annapolis, over thirty miles distant, and it is presumed it was—for like reasons—equally agreeable to the Aylesford people, as they were separated by a similar distance from their county town—Kentville. It certainly was a severe tax upon witnesses, jurymen and magistrates to attend the courts, which were all held in the county town; besides, the condition of the roads, not then as now, thoroughly drained and made smooth, rendered their attendance a labour of considerable magnitude, while the loss of time was felt as a still greater consideration by the struggling farmers of the remote settlements. The petition is dated February 3rd, 1819, and was signed by 217 persons, constituting a great majority of the people then living there.

In 1827 the population of the township of Wilmot was 2,294; quantity of land cultivated, 5,190 acres; number of horses, 228; horned cattle, 2,435; sheep, 4,173; swine, 1,327. In 1828 or 1829 the breakwater at Port George was begun. Reagh's Cove—now Margaretsville—was applying for aid to a pier in 1830. In 1835 thirty-nine persons, of whom eleven lived in the valley, subscribed $476 toward the completion of the new pier at what is now called Port Lorne, but then known as Marshall's Cove, Handley and Alexander Starratt heading the list with $40 each, and Rev. R. W. Cunningham and several others following with $20 each.

In 1838 a petition for government aid to this wharf set forth that in this cove "there is a good herring fishery, and fair cod-fishing on the banks a few miles off;" that the petitioners have expended already $800 in the construction of a breakwater to facilitate the prosecution of the fishery, and to enable them to load and unload vessels at half-tide, etc., and say that the completion of the work will be beneficial to the people of the settlements of Clarence and on the Post Road, and also those on the south side of the river, in the exportation of cordwood, lumber, stock and farm produce. They also declare it to be the fittest place between Hall's harbor in Kings County and "Digby Gut" for a pier.

The following was written by our author in 1890:

MIDDLETON.

In 1834 there were two dwelling houses, possibly three, on the site of the handsome village now bearing the name of Middleton. Besides these there was a little store or shop of the dimensions of some 12 x 15 feet, in which the post-office was kept, and in which rum, tobacco and pipes, with a few other articles, were kept on sale. One of these houses was used as an inn, and there, on Saturday afternoons, it was the custom of many of the farmers in the vicinity to meet for the purpose of gleaning the news of the past week and having a good social time. Liquor was freely indulged in, and sometimes, as usual everywhere, to excess. Most of these people in those far-off days came to the "corner," as it was then called, on horseback, in consequence of which it was not unusual on these occasions to see some dozen or two of horses hitched to the neighbouring fences, and the merits or demerits of these animals frequently led to warm discussions, and bets were often freely made and readily accepted to run races. A straight half-mile road led from the inn eastward, and this was used as a race-course. At the beginning of the latter half of the century a manifest change became noticeable both in the people and the surroundings of the corner. More thrift and greater temperance prevailed. The little store gave place to one of much greater size. Mr. William Alexander Fowler, a young man of good business ability, a native of Bridgetown,

commenced business there in 1848, and soon built up a fine trade. A few years earlier, Thomas C. Wheelock bought property in the embryo village, and became one of its founders. Others, devoted to mechanical trades, soon numbered themselves among the inhabitants, and everybody began to look forward to the building up of a considerable town. A public meeting was called for the purpose of choosing a name for it, and it is said the late Rev. James Robertson, LL.D., then rector of the parish, suggested the name which it now bears. The reason assigned for its adoption was that the village was nearly the midway point between Annapolis Royal and Kentville. At this time a new and commodious hotel was erected and other buildings constructed, and a period of considerable growth ensued on the completion of the W. & A. Railway, which has continued down to the present hour. In fact, taken altogether, the rise of Middleton has been more rapid and more substantial than any other of our towns in the county. A new and commodious school-house, with accommodation for several departments, has been lately completed and is now occupied. Doctor S. N. Miller has under construction a large and handsome drug store and offices. Croaker, D.D.S., has a fine new dwelling nearing completion, and a new railway station and engine-house for the N. S. C. Railway have been erected.

By the Editor.

Since the death of the author, the village of Middleton has made a phenomenal advance in growth, beauty and prosperity. The number of new and handsome dwelling houses that have been put up during 1894 and 1895 has probably been unprecedented in any part of the county in the same space of time. The continued successful development of the iron mines at Torbrook and the opening of the Nova Scotia Central Railway in 1889, have much contributed to this rapid and gratifying advance. An excellent water system was introduced into the village in 1891, and a newspaper called the *Outlook* was established in the village in 1894.

Among the pleasing features that broke, to the eye of the traveller by the old stage coaches, the monotony of straggling farm-houses between Bridgetown and Kentville, was the venerable pine grove, since grown smaller by degrees, but not "beautifully less," and the three churches that seemed to nestle peacefully under its shadow—the Church of England, the Baptist and the Methodist. The springing up of Middleton, three-fourths of a mile farther east, has resulted in the abandonment of the two former churches for new ones in the midst of the new centre of population, and the Methodist church was, in the year 1896, moved bodily eastward a considerable distance. The new Episcopal church was first opened in October, 1893.

TORBROOK AND TORBROOK MINES.

Indicative of the modern growth of the eastern section of the county, we have now the post-office names Torbrook and Torbrook Mines, to distinguish two important centres in the district east of the Nictaux River, and formerly included in the general designation Nictaux. It was at the Falls of the Nictaux River that the iron mined in the region east of it was smelted, some forty or fifty years ago, by a London company, of which Charles D. Archibald, son of the Hon. S. G. W. Archibald, Master of the Rolls of this province, was a promoter, but after being operated for ten or fifteen years the mines were abandoned and the works suffered to decay. Just before the completion of the railway another company took up leases, but abandoned the design of reopening and developing the mines. In 1890, Robert G. Leckie, Esq., General Manager of the Londonderry Iron Company, undertook the work with more intelligence and skill, and with better facilities than the old company, and soon discovered valuable seams of hematite unknown to all former prospectors. Active operations were commenced in 1891, and a branch railway built to connect them with the Windsor & Annapolis, now the Dominion-Atlantic Railway. Down to 1894 four shafts had been sunk, and all the modern improved methods and machinery appplied. In 1891 the output was about twenty tons per day; in 1893, seventy tons; and in 1894 it had reached 130 tons. In two or three years from the beginning of the new operations twenty dwellings had sprung up in the vicinity of the mines, besides the many erections necessary to carry on the complex works in a modern spirit of enterprise.

MARGARETSVILLE.

Railways, while they benefit one section of a country, may sometimes do so at the expense of another. Margaretsville was once the scene of a considerable export trade, but the produce of the mountain and valley, wood, lumber, fruit, etc., which in old times was conveyed to the ports on the Bay of Fundy shore for shipment, after 1869 sought an outlet by the Windsor & Annapolis Railway at Annapolis and other ports tapped by that line. Hence these places, Margaretsville, Port George and Port Lorne, have not kept pace with the villages in the valley and the towns at the termini of the railway. A branch railroad connecting at Middleton would soon restore to Margaretsville its old-time prosperity.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE TOWNSHIP OF CLEMENTS.

Grant of the township—Villages—Names and notices of grantees and settlers—Capitation tax list of 1791—New families—The herring fishery—Allain's River bridge—Bear River, past and present—Notes by the Editor on the place names.

THIS township was created in 1784, by a grant to George Sutherland and two hundred and forty others, mostly German Loyalists, or to speak more correctly, German troops, who had been in the service of the Crown against the revolted colonies, and who came to Nova Scotia after the Peace of 1783. It is bounded on the north by the Annapolis Basin, and River; on the east by the township of Annapolis, and other lands of the county; on the south by other lands of the county; and on the west by the township of Digby—or what was the township of Digby until the county of that name was erected, after which the new township of Hillsburgh formed its western boundary. It is nearly in the form of a square, and contains much fine land, though it is generally believed to be inferior in its agricultural capabilities to some of its sister townships. Bear River, or more properly Imbert's River, now its western boundary for some distance, is a fine stream forming the outlet to the sea of a system of beautiful lakes in the interior portion of this section of the Province, and whose shores have, of late years, resounded with the lumberman's axe, and whose waters have been utilized to float the timber there procured to the many mills, nearer to its mouth, which are employed in turning them into boards, deals and scantlings for the markets of Europe, Brazil and the West India Islands.

There are two settlements in the western part of this division of the county, called respectively the "Waldeck" and "Hessian" Lines,* which were originally begun by the disbanded Waldeckers and Hessians, who sought refuge here at the close of that revolutionary struggle which their best efforts had failed to bring to a successful conclusion, an issue then so ardently desired by Great Britain. These settlements are formed on

* The Hessian Line settlement is now called Clementsvale.—[Ed.]

lines parallel to each other and two miles apart, their direction being nearly east and west, and are still, in part, cultivated by their descendants, who, at this day, are scarcely distinguishable from the other inhabitants by any peculiarity of language or custom, a fact that may be accounted for by another, namely, that the English tongue only has been taught in the schools there, while intermarriages with the settlers of British origin have been constant and common. In the list of original grantees' names which is given in this chapter, the reader will observe that a considerable portion of them are English, Irish, or Scotch, so that, from the beginning, the elements of such a fusion existed and began to operate, and the results referred to have been gradually though certainly produced.

Clements is admirably watered. Its chief stream, next to that of Bear River, which, as I have before said, forms its western boundary, is Moose River, which divides it from north to south into two not very unequal parts, and it contains two very picturesque villages—Clementsport and Bridgeport, the latter being separated by Bear River from its charming sister village of Hillsburgh, in the County of Digby. The village possesses ship-yards, several shops, and Episcopal and Wesleyan churches, and a noble school-house, and is surrounded by a fine agricultural district. It is situated about four miles from the basin, at the head of the tide flow, and vessels of considerable size can come to and depart from its wharves. Agricultural produce is shipped thence to St. John, N.B.; cordwood to the United States, and lumber to the West Indies and Brazil.

Clementsport, about eight miles distant to the north and eastward, is built at the head of the tide waters of Moose River, and is very prettily situated in a sort of ravine through which the river, after passing under the arch of a fine stone bridge, finds its way to the Annapolis River, which it enters through a large tidal mouth, of sufficient depth to admit the passage of large-sized vessels, many of which have been from time to time constructed in its ship-yards. The village nestles itself lovingly at the feet of the surrounding picturesque hills, but is sufficiently elevated above the level of the river to afford fine views to the northward and eastward. It is built on both sides of the stream and has a neat Episcopal church in its eastern division, near which stands the school-house—a fine structure, being one of the most substantial and commodious in the county.

It was in this village, over seventy years ago, that a company was formed under the auspices of two American gentlemen, for the working of the valuable iron mines in its neighbourhood. Smelting furnaces were constructed, and coalsheds and other buildings necessary to their object erected. The beds of iron ore which they worked are situated to the southward of the village, and at a distance of about three miles from it.

In a file of the *Acadian Recorder* for 1825, it was stated that the shares of the "Annapolis Mining Company" were selling at a considerable premium, and that its success was therefore well assured. Messrs. Alger and Jackson,* the gentlemen above alluded to, were possessed of much scientific knowledge, and were experienced and practical mineralogists. They made a very thorough examination of the mineral deposits of Digby Neck, and the north mountain range eastward to Blomidon.

From some unexplained cause the furnaces were allowed to cool with their metallic contents in them, and they were in consequence abandoned and doomed to remain idle and unproductive for more than a quarter of a century. Much money was at that time expended upon these works, and a heavy loss must have been sustained by the community as well as by the shareholders and mortgagees. It may as well be stated here as elsewhere, that in 1857 or 1858, these works were reopened and worked under the ownership and control of a Bangor, Me., association, with considerable success until 1862, when the increasing scarcity of gold and advanced values (owing to the breaking out of the American rebellion) put a stop to them again.

Among the industries of this township must be reckoned the herring fisheries which have been, and still are, of considerable value.

Weirs are annually put up on the sand-bars and flats that exist along its coast, and the cost of outlay and construction is very frequently rewarded by valuable catches of that most delicate of the herring family —"the Digby chicken." The fattest of these are generally cured in salt, and the inferior qualities are smoked and sent to market in boxes, containing about one hundred of them in number to each box, and are readily sold in the markets of the Dominion, and in those of other countries. This fishery is not confined to the shores of this township alone, but extends to those of Granville, Hillsburgh and Digby, and has been the subject of much contention among the inhabitants from an early period after their first settlement. An account of these disputes and of the conflicting policies of the government in regard to these fisheries, forms a curious and not uninteresting chapter in the history of the county, and the reader will find references made to them in that portion of this work relating to Granville.

I will here introduce to the reader an authentic list of the names of men to whom the first grant of this township was made, in 1784. The asterisk before the name indicates those only whose descendants are known to live within the boundaries of the two counties at the present day. The list has been carefully copied from a draft of the grant still preserved in our archives, and for convenience of reference has been arranged in alphabetical order:

* Dr. Jackson, mentioned on page 11, note.

*Aymar, James.
Adams, Phillip.
Austen, Stephen.
Adams, Charles.
Allair, Peter Alexander.
Anderson, Jonathan.

Ball, Benjamin.
Baker, Samuel.
Burns, John.
Bean, John.
Brown, James.
Brown, Charles.
Baizelay, William.
Baizelay, Abraham.
*Bonnett, Isaac.
Bonnett, David.
Balm, Christopher.
Bischopp, George.
Brandon, Conrad.
Breher, Jacob.
Bruen, Jacob.
Brown, Andrew.
*Bogart, Thunis.
Balmer, Benedict.
Botsford, Amos.
*Bailey, Rev. Jacob.
Boehme, Frederic.
Bockling, Phillip.
Bertner, Phillip.
*Benson, Christopher.
*Benson, Christopher, jun.
Brunsmaid, Samuel.
*Bogart, Cornelius.
Boehner, Henry.
Bawdon, Thomas.
Bishop, John.
*Boehler, Jacob.
Buckler, Andrew.
Butler, William.
Bawt, John Adam.
Brevoort, Elias.

Callaghan, Widow.
*Cornwell, George, Esq.
Cahern, Henry.
Caldwell, James.
Coughtory, John.
Chandler, Joshua.
Carl, Phebe.
Coffman, Michael.
Commondingo, Ludovic.
Calner, John.
Clark, Scott L.
Chase, John.
Campbell, Malcom.
Cagney, John.
Clark, Mrs.
Cox, Thomas.

Dobbs, John.
*Davoue, Frederic.
De Coudre, Louis.
Demolliter, Captain [Christian.
Duryea, Samuel.
Duryea, John
Dewry, Joseph.
Damont, Mary.
*Ditmars, Capt. Douwe.
Davenport, Thomas.
Dalhen, John.

Elbridge, James.
Eager, Widow.
Excellius, Ignatius.
*Everett, Jacob.
Ensenburg, Frederic.
Eberhard, Christian.
Engstroppe, Peter.
Euler, Conrad.
Etzner, Nicholas.

Flack, John.
*Fowler, Jonathan.
Fraser, Francis.
Florentine, Abram.
Florentine, Thomas.

Giesler, Joseph.
Gunzel, Henrick.
Goety, Christian.
Gunn, George.
Grootres, Christian.
Greiser, August.
Gallagher, Andrew.
Garnet, Peter.
Gorbe, John.

Hardenbrook, John.
Hardenbrook, Nicholas A.
Holmes, Cornelius.
Heaton, Peter.
Hutchins, James.
*Harris, Myndert.
Hardenbrook, Catherine.
Hupender, Phillip.
Hertrick, John Conrad.
Horneffer, Andreas.
Herne, Fred. Christian.
Hartman, Anton.
Hamm, Peter.
Hennay, Thomas.
*Hicks, Charles.
Hammill, Daniel.
*Hicks, John.
Hessenbrook, Andrew.
Husted, Jonathan.
Hardenbrook, Capt. Abel.
Holland, William.
Hart, Hendrick.
Harrison, Thomas.
*Holdsworth, James A.

*James, Benjamin, Esq.
Jargar, John.
Johnston, Adam.
Jacob, John.

Klapper, Jacob.
Krair, George.
Knischild.
*Kervin, Terence.
Kohn, John.
Klingsocker, Julius.
Klingsocker, Christian.
Kerm, Christian.
Kerm, Nicolaus.

Livesay, Ebenezer.
Lawson, John.
Lounds, James.
Lounds, Matthew.
Lounds, Thomas.
Lounds, James, jun.
*Lent, Abraham.
*Long, Alexander.
Lawrence John.

McNamara, John.
*Miller, Peter.
McFarrier, James.
Montgomery, Joseph.

*Morrison, John.
Messabre, Frederic.
McGregor, Alexander.
*Morehouse, John.

Nugent, Michael.

Offery, William.
Orchard, George.
Owing, Francis.
Oestman, Jacob.

*Perrot, James.
*Potter, Joseph.

Perreau, Peter D.
Peak, Samuel.
Porteus, John.
Pope, Thomas.
*Picket, Caspar.
*Polhemus, John.
Parr, John.
*Purdy, Gilbert.
*Purdy, Josiah.
*Purdy, Anthony.

*Quereau, Joshua.

Ruen, Ichs.
Ross, Alexander.
Rollo, Captain.
*Robblee, Thomas.

Rapalje, J.
Ryarson, Matthew.
Rubee, John.
*Ryarson, Francis, jun.
Ruscall, James.
*Ryarson, John F.
*Ryarson, George.
*Ryarson, Francis.

Schlaebaum, Frantz.
Schade, Johannus.
Smith, John.
Stewart, John.
Shaver, Ditmars.
Smith, Peter.
*Street, Ebenezer.
*Street, Samuel.
Seidlar, Andrew.
Schopp, George.
Schultze, Gilbert.
Smith, Joseph.
Sproach, Samuel.
Sproal, William.
Stocking, Frederic.
Smith, James.
Sutherland, George.
Sutherland, O'Sullivan.
Schlaudebeck, Michael.
Scok, Frederic.
Strickland, Frederic.
Smith, Joshua.
Sec, John.

Smith, James.

*Totten, Joseph.
*Totten, Peter.
Turner, John.
*Tromper, Hendrick.
*Totten, Joseph, jun.
Tippett, Gilbert.
Tusher, George.
Taylor, Elijah.
Taylor, Nicholas.
Tarrant, William.
Turner, Florian.

Van Bueren, Kaman.
Verilum, Anthony V.
Van Kover, Lawrence.
Van Kover, Lawrence, jun.
*Van Bueren, James.
Van Bueren, James.

Weidman, Valentine John.
Wilmot, James.
Wendell, Wilhelm.
Wright, D.
Wyman, Christopher.
Wessenborn, John.
Wagner, Nicholas.
Willing, Charles.
Watt, Thomas.

Zenava, Edmund.

Of the persons whose names have been asterisked, I am able to furnish the following particulars: The descendants of Aymar live in the County of Digby, and those of the Bonnetts (who came from New Rochelle, N.Y., and were of Huguenot origin), in Annapolis; one of them being the late High Sheriff of the county, and another a leading merchant and shipowner of Bridgetown. These gentlemen were brothers, and sons of the late David Bonnett. The former married a daughter of the late William Gilbert Bailey, barrister-at-law, and granddaughter of the late Rev. Jacob Bailey; the latter espoused a daughter of the late Joshua de Saint Croix, for many years the owner of the Mount Pleasant (now Ruffee) farm, near Bridgetown, and has issue. The Sheriff had no issue. The Bogarts, whose progenitors were from New York, have long been domiciled in western Granville and Bridgeport, and the descendants of Benson (who was a captain in the Rangers, and from the old colony of New York) are scattered, and not now very numerous. The grand-

children of the bluff old German, Jacob Boehler, are to be found in this, their native township; while those of the American Loyalist, Cornwell, are to be gathered from both counties. One of his grandsons was long settled in the district of Clarence West, in the township of Granville; others are to be found in various parts of Digby County.

The children and grandchildren of Frederic Davoue (who was a West Chester Loyalist, and lived at New Rochelle, where he had a farm of three hundred acres of land, which was confiscated by the State of New York, and given to Tom Paine, the infidel) are to be sought for both within and without the limits of the county. Mr. Davoue was a leading merchant in the town of Annapolis for many years. One of his daughters was the wife of Captain John Robertson, lately deceased at a very advanced age, and many years ago a member of the House of Assembly, and another was the mother of Doctor Forbes, first representative of Queens County in the House of Commons of Canada. The Ditmarses, of Clements, are the offspring of Captain Douwe Ditmars, before the Revolution, of Long Island, N.Y., and who was an active ensign in the militia of that island during the struggle. He came to this province in 1783; became a grantee in Clements in 1784, and was one of the pioneers in the settlement of that township. His descendants are quite numerous, and have always maintained a highly respectable position in the community in which they lived. The Everetts,* found in Digby County, are, I have been informed, the offspring of Jacob Everett. The descendants of Jonathan Fowler, of West Chester, N.Y., and who settled in the town of Digby in 1783, reside chiefly in Annapolis County, his two sons, Gilbert and Alexander, having settled there early in the century. Their father was a leading shipowner and merchant of the town of Digby. Weston Fowler, Esq., of Bridgetown, is a grandson. Kervins' descendants still live in Digby County, and those of Long in Clements and Granville. The Morehouse† family has, while the generations come and go, always maintained an honourable position in the localities in which its members have resided. Its headquarters have long been on Digby Neck, but branches of it have been for many years settled in the upper part of the township of Annapolis, at South Williamston, and in the township of Hillsburgh. The late William Morehouse, who lived at the former place, was one of the deputy Crown land surveyors for the county for many years. He was employed by the Government to survey and lay out the settlement of Maitland.

* Possibly I am mistaken in the Christian name of Mr. Everett. Sabine says that James Everett settled at Digby in 1783, and died there in 1799, leaving descendants. (The Everetts came from Long Island, New York.—Ed.)

† Mr. Morehouse was from Connecticut. He was one of the oldest magistrates in the colony at the time of his death which occurred in 1839. He had been a member of the Reading Association.

The members of the Hillsburgh branch have been engaged in ship-building and lumbering pursuits. John Morrison, who was one of the seven deputies of Surveyor-General Charles Morris, in 1783, was, I believe, of pre-loyalist origin, having been domiciled in Digby before the date named, and probably came there with the McDormands some years before. One of his descendants, I believe, resides at Westport, and no doubt there are many others in that county. James Perrott was a Loyalist of some consideration, but I have not been able to ascertain what position he occupied before coming to this Province. He was generally called "Captain" Perrott, and Perrott settlement was named in his honour. It is not probable that he left any children, certainly no male children, as the name does not occur in any documents in the archives subsequent to his decease. Joseph Potter was the progenitor of a large family, the members of which are to be found dwelling in this township; in fact, the name is one of the most common there. The Potters have been generally well esteemed, and have contributed largely to the prosperity of Clements, having been employed in ship-building, farming, milling, lumbering, and other industries, and they have ever maintained a character for thrift, honesty, and moral worthiness equal to any other family in the county.

John Polhemus left no male issue, or more correctly speaking, I should perhaps say that no person in Clements, or the county, now bears that name, but his daughter or daughters have left descendants, male and female. The Potters are, I believe, connected (by marriage) with the family of Polhemus. Joshua Quereau was a New York Loyalist, and probably of Huguenot origin. He located himself in western Granville, where his grandchildren now reside, and have continued to do so for three-quarters of a century and more. Thomas Robblee's descendants live also in Granville, and own the lands surrounding and including the old Scotch fort, near Goat Island.

The Ryersons deserve a somewhat extended notice. Francis Ryerson, the founder of the Nova Scotia family by that name, was a brother or an uncle to the father of the well-known and able Rev. Egerton Ryerson, of educational fame in Ontario; and settled in Clements soon after the revolution, against which he seems to have taken a decided, though not very distinguished part. He was married and had children before 1783, one of whom, Francis, petitioned the Legislature in aid of a plaister (gypsum) mill which he states he had erected "at an expense of £600," and was "also adapted to the grinding of hemlock and other bark," this being the first work of the kind erected in the Province.

This mill was built in 1802, at Clements, near, perhaps on the property now or recently owned by Mr. George Ryerson. The enterprise was, however, afterward abandoned from some cause of which I have not been

informed. He also erected the first carding machine, or mill, in the county, built for him by John Longmire, an immigrant from Cumberland, England. Several fine farms are owned by members of the family in this township; but a branch of the old stock some years ago removed to Yarmouth and engaged in mercantile, ship-building and kindred branches of industry, in which they gained an almost world-wide reputation. One of the members of this division of the family—John K. Ryerson, Esq.—long represented the County of Yarmouth in the Local Assembly, and was remarkable for his honesty of purpose and plain speech in the discharge of the duties devolving upon him as a member of that body. Mr. Ryerson was the head of the large shipping house of Ryerson, Moses & Company, and took a leading part in all enterprises intended to promote the welfare of his adopted town. Stephen Ryerson, is said to have been the prototype of the character of Stephen Richardson, humourist, hunter and trapper, so finely delineated in one of Haliburton's* best works. This member of the family was a farmer of Clements, and was remarkable for his general shrewdness of character and keen relish for the ludicrous; he was withal a splendid hater of shams and falsehood. A volume would be required to record all the anecdotes that have been, and are yet, current concerning him.

Ebenezer and Samuel Street† did not become settlers in the new township, though they continued to live in Digby for some years, and prosecuted ship-building at that place. They afterward removed to the parish of Burton, in Sunbury County, N.B., where their descendants, if any, are still to be found.

The Tottens were a New York family, and came to Annapolis in 1783, where they settled and engaged in mercantile occupations. A daughter of one of them—Peter, I believe—married the late William Winniett, Esq., sheriff of the county, and thus became the mother of Sir William Robert Wolseley Winniett, who died in Cape Coast Castle, in Africa, while in the discharge of gubernatorial duties there, in 1858. They

* Haliburton's "Old Judge in a Colony," I think.

† If the author is correct in saying that the Streets finally removed to Burton, Samuel Street must have been Samuel Denny Street, who was born in Surrey, England, in 1752, educated for the law, came to America, and served most actively and with great distinction during the revolution, and after its close was the first attorney who ever practised in New Brunswick, and died at a country seat at Burton, in 1830. All of his sons were distinguished as public men in that province, among them, George F., being an able Judge of the Supreme Court; John Ambrose, Attorney-General and leader of the Government; William Henry, Mayor of St. John, M.P.P., etc. Ebenezer may have been a brother of Samuel Denny, and, perhaps, grandfather of the late Thomas Clark Street, first member for the Dominion Parliament for the County of Welland, Ont., who was son of Samuel Street, of Niagara, and related to the Street family of New Brunswick, a very prominent and leading man in the section of Canada in which he lived. Samuel Denny Street had also a brother, Ambrose Sherman Street, Surgeon in the Royal Fencibles, who was drowned at Burton in 1793, and may have been the ancestor of the Upper Canada branch. (See p. 170, note.)

were a highly respected family, but since the death of the late Miss Totten* the name has become extinct.

The Van Buerens were of Dutch origin, and came to Annapolis in 1783. The late Dr. Van Bueren was a descendant of James Van Bueren. I believe that this name is now very rarely to be met with in the county. In the archives of the Province is a volume containing the letters of the Surveyor-General, Charles Morris, to his deputies in the Province, and which, so far as it relates to the affairs of the county, is full of matter of great interest. These letters refer to the surveys being made from 1784-1788, for the new Loyalist settlers. On several occasions, he makes reference to Clements surveys in his letters to Thomas Millidge, Esq., one of his deputies, then residing in Digby.

In reference to the Thorne family, he says to him, under date, March 3rd, 1787: "I am also to remind you of the letter I wrote the 1st of March, 1786, to lay out to Stephen Thorne and others, 2,200 acres of land, in lieu of the reserved lands they had pitched upon in Clements." In the same year he tells Sneden and Polhemus (grantees in Clements,) that he will do all in his power to forward their grants, but that they cannot be expected to be relieved from the payment of the fees of Wentworth, who as surveyor of woods and forests, on behalf of the Crown, was entitled to a fee, without the payment of which, a grant could not pass,—and that it was enough that he should remit his own fees; a course which he had generally followed.

The reader has now before him the names of the original grantees, and such notice of them as the author has been enabled to gather concerning them, but in order to make the history of this township more thoroughly understood, I will now present a list of the names of the tax-paying residents, under the Capitation Tax Act, as returned to the authorities, in 1791, by the assessors under that Act. These assessors were Messieurs Edward Jones, John Ditmars, and Henry Harris. The names have been carefully copied, and arranged alphabetically for convenience of reference:

Artzman, Jacob.
Artzman, Jacob, sen.

Brundize, Marcus.
Baird, Adam.
Baker, Samuel.
Baker, James.
Boyce, Peter.
Boyce, Jacob.
Biehler, Nicholas.
Browne, Danl. Isaac, Esq.

Biehler, Jacob.
Booley, John.
Black, Isaac.
Bruin, Harry.
Burroughs, Jeffrey.
Bloomer, Frederic.

Carey, Dennis.
Colla, Jacob.
Clanket, Caspar.
Chrystler, Augustus.

Criss, Henry.
Cato—a negro.

Ditmars, Douwe.
Ditmars, John.
Delancy [Colonel].
Dick—a negro.

Fleet, William.
Fisher, —.

* At her death she bequeathed a house and several lots of land to the Church England, at Digby—the property since known as the "Totten Rectory."—[Ed.]

Gorrical, John.
Gruben, John.

Hooper, William.
Harris, John.
Harris, Henry.
Hederick, Conrad.
Hartman, Gottlieb.
Henshaw, Samuel.
Henshaw, William,
Hoofman, Anthony,
Hamm, Peter.
Hunt, Benjamin.

Jones, Samuel.
Jones, Nicholas.
Jones, Benjamin.
Jones, Edward.
Jones, William.
Jacob—a negro.

Lent, James.
Long, Jacob.

Morgan, George.
Milner, Jonathan.
Morrison, John.
McDormand, Cormac.
McDormand, Thomas.
Miller, Peter.

Opp [Apt?], George.
Odell, Daniel.

Pickup, Samuel.
Purdy, Samuel.
Purdy, Anthony.
Potter, Joseph.
Potter, Israel.
Purdy, Elijah.
Polhemus, John.
Polhemus, Vandyke.
Polhemus, John, jun.
Pine, Daniel.
Purdy, Gabriel.
Picket, Jasper.

Ryarson, Francis.
Ramson, Jacob.
Ramson, John.
Ramson, John, jun.
Roddy, Joseph.
Rollo, Capt. Robert,
Rosencrantz, John.

Spurr, Shippey.
Shudah, Charles.
Sneden, Stephen.
Sulis, Daniel.
Sulis, John.
Smith, Joseph.
Sach, Joseph.

Winniett, William.
Wagner, Richard.
Windill, William.
Warren, Daniel.
Wyland, Henry.
Wright, Joseph.
Wright, Joseph, jun.
Wrightman, John.
Williams, Cæsar.
Wethers, Stephen.
Williams, Thomas.
Williams, Martin.

The return from which the foregoing list of names has been copied was made for the year 1791, being seven years after the grant of the township had passed. By these lists it is made certain that the following families had become fresh settlers in Clements in that space of time, namely: Artzman, Brundize, Boyce, Booley, Black, Burroughs, Bloomer, Carey, Colla, Clankett, Chrystler, Criss, Fleet, Fisher, Gorricol, Grueben, Jones, Hooper, Hederick, Henshaw, Hoofman, Hunt, Milner, McDormand, Opp (or Apt), Odell, Pickup, Pine, Ramson, Roddy, Rosencrantz, Spurr, Shudah, Sneden, Sulis, Sach, Warren, Wyland, Wrightman, Williams, Wethers, making in all fifty-one male persons above twenty years of age. Of these persons, the Boyces have left descendants who yet live in the county, and the Crisses are yet domiciled in the township. The Fleets are still extant, as are also the Gorricals; and the Joneses, of whom there were five who had attained their majority in 1791, have increased and multiplied, and been dispersed far and wide, always maintaining a reputation for general worth and fair ability. William Jones, whose name appears in the list, was one of the first magistrates appointed in this section of the country, and was specially recommended for appointment by the *custos rotulorum* of the county, Colonel Millidge, in the early part of the century. The issue of the Henshaws in the male line are still respectable inhabitants. The Hoofmans also left descend-

ants, but they chiefly occupy lands in Bloomington, and so far as I have been able to ascertain have no representative of the name now in this township. The Milners have farms here still, as do also the McDormands and Opps, and a worthy representative of the Pickups resides at Granville Ferry, and is much respected for his manliness and integrity of character. The Pines still find homes in Clements. The descendants of Shippey Spurr are to be found in several districts in the county, and outside its limits. The Ramsons and Rhoddys (Rhoddas ?)* are to be found in Delong settlement, Digby and elsewhere. The Snedens lived in Clements in 1791, but shortly afterwards fixed their headquarters in the county town, where they engaged in mercantile pursuits, and long held a first place in the social relations then existing there. Their descendants were and are numerous, but none of them bear the family name, nor are now to be found in the Province, though more than one of them have become inhabitants of the United States of America. This family, if I mistake not, intermarried with the Thornes and Millidges of Granville. The grandchildren of the Sulises still reside at Smith's Cove, in the township of Hillsburgh, which, at the time of which I am writing, was included in Clements. In 1790 the inhabitants of Clements joined with those of Digby and Clare in a petition to the Legislature for a division of the county. Messieurs Isaac Bonnell, Andrew Snodgrass, James Wilmot, Jonathan Fowler and Henry Rutherford certified that this memorial was signed in the handwriting of each signer. This document was dated in February, 1790, and refers to a former petition asking for the same thing, and which had been presented to the Assembly in 1786. I find the following names from Clements, which I desire to notice briefly. Christian Tobias was a grantee in Digby township, and by profession a medical doctor. His descendants settled in the town of Annapolis. Two of these, his sons—Timothy and Dwight Tobias—were for many years residents there. The former was for several years Collector of Customs for the port, and died there without issue ; the latter died several years ago, leaving a large family, most of the members of which still live there.

Samuel Calnek, an uncle of the writer, in 1798 went to Jamaica, where he married and settled, never having visited the Province since 1804. He died in 1836, leaving an only child, a son, to inherit his name and property in that island. Mr. Calnek was a native of Germany, and came to America with his father, Jacob Calnek, about the year 1776, and to this Province with the Loyalists, in 1783.

As I have elsewhere stated, the herring fisheries on the coasts of the basin have often been the cause of many disputes among the inhabitants.

*There is an old tombstone in the graveyard at Annapolis inscribed : " To the memory of Stephen Rhodda and his wife, Theodosia." These may, perhaps, be offshoots from them.

The value of this branch of industry has always been very considerable and for a long series of years the governing powers seem to have had no settled policy concerning them; at one time believing it best to place them under the control of the Courts of General Sessions of the Peace for the county, as public property, and at another deeming it wise to grant them in fee simple to individuals. I transcribe a memorial of 1796, to Governor Sir John Wentworth, relating to this fishery at Smith's Cove, which was then included in the boundaries of this township:

"*May it please your Excellency:*

"We, your memorialists, inhabiting near the mouth of Bear River, in the township of Clements, beg leave to present—That the land which we own and on which we live is situated upon a cove, very useful for the Herring Fishery, to the great benefit of ourselves and the whole neighbourhood. This fishery we and others have hitherto used freely, peacefully and unmolested, but of late have been informed that Daniel Odell has applied, or intends to apply to your Excellency, for a grant and exclusive privilege of said cove and its fishery, which grant, if obtained, will greatly incommode and almost ruin your memorialists and their families.

"Therefore, we humbly pray your Excellency to be pleased to suspend and postpone such Grant till we shall have time and opportunity to lay before your Excellency a plan of said cove and our lands contiguous, and more fully to explain the injury which we apprehend we should suffer by such grant, or suffer us to come in as partners in the grant aforesaid, or give us such other remedy as your Excellency, in your Wisdom and Goodness, shall see fit. And your memorialists as in duty bound, etc., etc.

"(Signed), DANIEL SULIS.
JEREMIAH SMITH.
JOHN SULIS.

"Clements, July 23rd, 1796.'

The flats above referred to have long since been granted in fee to the parties owning the adjoining uplands, and have ceased to be a cause of dispute, except in a healthy rivalry as to who among the proprietors shall yearly secure the greatest catch, and obtain the greatest price for their cured fish.

In the year 1800, Douwe Ditmars, Esq., was the contractor for the bridge over the Allain River, near Annapolis, and in 1801, he, with John Rice and Francis Ryerson, was a commissioner of roads for the district extending from Annapolis to Bear River. In 1809, Mr. Ditmars and Benjamin Potter were commissioners of roads for Clements, and in 1812 the former was commissioned to construct a new bridge over Moose River; in fact, he appears to have been for a quarter of a century the bridge builder *par excellence* in Clements.

I subjoin a list of the names of those persons in this township who were stimulated to compete for the bounty offered for newly-cleared land in 1805:

*Buskirk, Charles	3.5	Acres.	Henshaw, Samuel	2.5	Acres.
*Bertaux, Philip	3.25	"	Harris, Henry	7.25	"
*Balcom, Abel	2	"	*Kniffen, George	4	"
*Burrill, John	3.5	"	Long, Jacob	5.75	"
*Balcom, John	5.25	"	*Merritt, John	3.25	"
Boyce, Jacob	2	"	Morgan, Edward	3	"
Biehler, Jacob	6.5	"	Opp, George	2	"
*Berry, Thomas	5.75	"	Purdy, Elijah	2.25	"
Camplin, James	2.75	"	*Ruggles, Richard	7.5	"
*Clark, William	2.75	"	*Rice, Silas	5	"
*Chute, Samuel	..		Spurr, Michael	2	"
*Chute, Daniel	5.25	"	Spurr, William	2	"
*Chute, Thomas	7.5	"	*Tremper, Henry	2.5	"
*Caseworth, Charles	5	"	*Vroom, John	4.5	"
*Dunn, Edward	2.5	"	*Wier, Joseph	4	"
Fleet, William	3	"	Wright, James	2.5	"
Harris, John	2.75	"	Warner, Daniel	4.75	"

From this return we are able to gather several important facts. Of the thirty-five families whose heads competed for the land bounty, nineteen, or more than one-half, became settlers in the township between the years 1791 and 1805. These have been marked with an asterisk, and an analysis of them will show that a large majority of them came from the older sister townships. The Chutes, Clarks, Balcoms, and Merritts came from Granville; the Dunns, Bertauxs and Rices from Annapolis; and the Ruggleses and Buskirks from Wilmot; while Berry, Kniffen, Caseworth and Tremper† were probably from Digby. These new-comers obtained over 60 per cent. of the money given as bounty, fairly proving that this infusion of new blood into the industrial veins of Clements had not failed to invigorate it with added strength and activity.

The Buskirks, or as they should more properly be called, the Van Buskirks, are of Dutch extraction, and came to this province in 1783 from New York or New Jersey.‡ One branch of them settled in Shelburne and another at Wilmot and Aylesford. The Clements people of that name, I think, belonged to the latter. The Bertauxs came hither before 1760 from Guernsey, and were grantees in Annapolis township. Philip removed about the beginning of the century to Clements. The family are of Huguenot origin, and have been very prolific, and many descendants bearing the name are yet among the most respectable of the inhabitants of the county. The Balcoms are also of pre-loyalist date, and very numerous and highly respectable. Members of this extensive family are to be found in Annapolis, Digby, Kings, and Halifax counties. Henry Balcom, late M.P.P., is from the latter county. Thomas Berry's

†I would suggest that the name is the same that was spelt "Tromper" in the grant (p. 247). It is certainly now always written and pronounced Trimper.—[Ed.]

‡ See genealogies.—[Ed.]

descendants still live in the township, as well as those of Edward Dunn. The Chutes are of pre-loyalist date, and a branch of their family settled here at an early period. Thomas Chute, one of the early settlers of Granville, married Sybil, the eldest sister of the late Andrew Marshall (my maternal grandfather), and bore him a very large family, the members of which and their descendants are domiciled in various places in the Province, but most generally in this county. Merritts are still found in Granville, and Trempers in Clements. Richard Ruggles was a son of Brigadier-General Ruggles, of Hardwick, Massachusetts, who sought refuge here from the fury of his republican neighbours. The grandchildren and great-grandchildren of this gentleman reside in Clements, and other townships in Digby County to this day. The descendants of Silas Rice live in Hillsburgh. The Vrooms are of Dutch origin, and came here as Loyalists after the revolution. They are to be found in Clements, Hillsburgh and Wilmot, but are most numerous in the former township.

The names left unasterisked are those who were living in the township at and before 1791. Of these the descendants of the Wrights and Henshaws still exist, and occupy good positions in society, and the same may be said of the Harrises and Boyces. The Purdys are also highly esteemed and very numerous, occupying comfortable homes in Clements and Hillsburgh. In 1815 fifty-nine people of Clements contributed $88.20 to the Patriotic Fund.

BEAR RIVER—PAST AND PRESENT.

Written in 1890.

Two hundred and seventy-five years and a little more are required to bridge over the period included betwen 1613 and 1890, and our earliest knowledge of the place dates back to the former year. On the 13th day of January, 1613, a small French vessel commanded by Captain Simon Imbert arrived in the basin then named Port Royal, in the midst of an easterly snow-storm. She was laden with a cargo consisting of supplies of food and settlers for the infant colony, which had been begun on the Granville shore, opposite the eastern end of the island, now Goat, then called Biencourtville, in honour of young Biencourt, son of Poutrincourt, who had previously become proprietor of the settlement by purchase from Demonts, its original founder, six years before. It was the first trip of Imbert to American shores, and the storm preventing him from laying his course, he was compelled to seek shelter under the lee of some headland or island, on or near the south shores of the basin. In following this course he discovered a small island behind which he found safe anchorage and shelter. That island is now called Bear Island, at the mouth of the river bearing the same name. When the storm subsided they discovered

that they were near the mouth of an inlet or river. The vessel evidently found shelter in the very spot to which in these days the steamboat plying between St. John and Digby resorts, when, owing to a similar storm, she is unable to proceed to St. John. This river Imbert soon afterwards explored beyond the head of the tide and discovered its two branches. It was the river named St. Anthony on Champlain's map; but Imbert's countrymen at the fort thenceforth called it Imbert's River; the name which is given in some old French maps of the district. Its present name is simply a corruption of the name of Simon Imbert (Imbare). We must notice here a curious thing confirmatory of the fact stated. Long before recent investigations into the origin of the name of the stream, and more than half a century ago, the first saw-mill erected near the head of the tide was commonly known as Imbert's mill, and the hill which separates the east and west branches of the river was as generally known as Imbert's hill, which seems the greater mystery when it is known that the French, during their more than a century's occupation of the valley, made no settlement in the district. It is probable that the name was first given to the hill, having been preserved traditionally, by trappers and hunters, and afterwards transferred to the mill referred to.

As we have before said, no village, hamlet or settlement was made here by the French, and it was not until after the close of the American Revolutionary war that any permanent settlement by the English was attempted. But it is not to the men, or the descendants of the men, to whom the grant of the township of Clements, then including both sides of Imbert's River, was made in 1784, that we should attribute the honour of being the founders of the present town of Bear River, for it was the earlier pre-loyalist settlers of Annapolis and Granville townships who were the first effective pioneers in changing the forest-clad hills, which still line both banks of the river, into smiling farms and comfortable homesteads. There were a few of the Loyalist settlers who did the same thing in other sections of Clements, but it was the Rices, the Harrises, the Clarks, the Millers and the Chutes, all of pre-loyalist origin, who laid the foundation upon which the superstructure of the flourishing and wealthy town now existing was afterwards built. To these may be added the Bogarts, the Croscups, the Bensons, and Crouses of Loyalist stock as co-workers. The town is situated in the ravines and on the hills which abound near the head of the tide, which extends to about four or five miles from the basin into which the waters of the river are discharged. The first framed house built in the limits of the village was finished in 1785 by a Captain O'Sullivan Sutherland, and stood not far from the residence of Captain John Harris, on the road leading to the Hessian line. All the houses erected before that year, which were but few in

number, were constructed of logs, and have long, long ago given place to more comfortable and elegant dwellings. On the west side of the river, one of the earliest settlers was the late Christopher Prince Harris, whose descendants still own and occupy the homestead; and on the opposite side, though much nearer the village, Thomas Chute, the grandfather of Mr. H. H. Chute, a candidate for legislative honours at the coming election, commenced the work of erecting a new home at a very early period. The last-named gentleman informed us that he built the first store on the eastern or Annapolis side of the river, about the same time that Captain Freeman Marshall commenced business on the Digby side. To-day the greater number of stores are on the Annapolis side, where Clark Bros. have become the leaders in Bear River business matters. There are several fine stores on the west side, those of Marshall & Hardwick and Albert Harris being among the finest.

No less than nine highways, from all points of the compass, find their termini in the town, and one cannot find a spot on the surrounding hills from which the entire village can be seen, some portions of it being still hidden away in the ravines which are both numerous and deep. The Baptists, who are the leading denomination here, have a fine place of worship on the Digby side, and the Methodists and the adherents of the English Church have each a neat place of worship on the opposite side of the Bridge. The Adventists have also a house of worship in the town.

NOTES BY THE EDITOR.

BEAR RIVER AND MOOSE RIVER.

It is with much delicacy and deference that I differ from the author as to the true name of Bear River and Bear Island. I am satisfied the river was called *la riviere d'Hébert* before it was called *la riviere d'Imbert*, and I have a personal knowledge of the fact that the earlier name survived the later; for whenever I heard the name pronounced by the Acadians of Clare it was *la riviere d'Hébert*, very distinctly. And the corruption from Hébert's, pronounced Abair's, river would be more easy and natural than from Imbert's pronounced by the tongue of a Frenchman. The French sound of the first syllable of the latter cannot well be represented in letters to the eye of an Englishman, but Amber River would be an easier transition from Imbert than Bear River. Benjamin Sulte, of Ottawa, an able writer on Canadian and Acadian antiquities, goes so far as to say that the name Imbert was written by a mistake of a copyist in a map by Bellin, a Frenchman who lived a century after Champlain, and that the river was named in honour of Louis Hébert,

along its banks, and that it is distinctly so marked in Lescarbot's map. Hébert, who was a man of mark in his day, left Acadia after the disaster to Port Royal in 1613, but later he and his family became the first real settlers in Canada, where his descendants are numerous. On the contrary, the late P. S. Hamilton, also an able antiquary, thinks the name of the river was that of Poutrincourt's old and faithful servant, Simon Imbert. A locality near the present village did certainly retain Imbert's name, and as it is an honourable one as well as euphonious in either language, it ought to be adopted by some one of the rising villages, or post-office districts, within view of the river.

The name "Bridgeport" for that portion of the village of Bear River which lies on the Annapolis side, has fallen into disuse, and "Hillsburgh" is not found in the post-office directory of Nova Scotia.

Moose River was called by the French at one period, *la riviere d'Orignal* or *de L'Orignal*, L'Orignal's River, probably in memory of the same man whose name is perpetuated in a town in Prescott, Ontario, and the present perversion came from the English confounding the name with the French word "*orignol*," a *moose*.

CHAPTER XV.

LATER SETTLEMENTS.

Dalhousie—Lots granted—Return of settlers in 1820—Fatal quarrel—Families of early settlers—A foul murder—Maitland—The Kemptons—Early grantees—Northfield—Delong settlement—Perrott settlement—Roxbury—Bloomington—New Albany—First grantees of—Statement of settlement, 1817—Springfield—Falkland—Lake Pleasant.

DALHOUSIE.

THIS settlement occupies a generally rough and rugged section of the county, the surface being undulating and considerably broken by granitic boulders, mounds and dykes. The soil, however, is strong and productive, and wherever the plough can be used good crops almost invariably reward the industry of the inhabitants. It is admirably watered by springs, lakes and streams, the latter affording numberless fine water-powers, many of which have, during recent years, been brought into successful use. Its progress, in an agricultural point of view, has been slow; but it must be remembered that disbanded soldiers seldom possess the knowledge, industry and energy requisite to successful farming, and it was not till after the first generation of settlers had passed away that much improvement could be made or expected.

The main highway through it forms an angle with those in the valley of the Annapolis River whose opening widens eastwardly, the distance between these roads at Roundhill being six miles, at Bridgetown nine miles, at Lawrencetown about fourteen, and on the eastern line of the county about twenty miles. Within the points named the settlement is crossed by the Roundhill, Lovett, Spurr and Bloody Creek brooks and the Nictaux River, all running northwardly to the Annapolis River, and the Port Medway and LaHave rivers, with several of their branches running southwardly to the Atlantic. All these streams possess noble stream-driving capacity and multitudes of mill sites, while thousands of smaller streams beautify the landscape by forming lakelet and lake expansions of more or less beauty.

The materials for a history of this settlement are sufficiently abundant. During the administration of Lord Dalhousie, the survey of a

road was ordered from a point near the town of Annapolis to the head of Bedford Basin, with a view to a short route between the ancient and the new capital; and John Harris, one of the deputies of the Surveyor-General, was instructed to perform the task, which he did successfully in 1815. In doing this work, Mr. Harris made offsets and set up bounds, from which afterwards to complete the survey of lots. These bounds defined the breadths of the lots which were to extend northwardly and southwardly, from the road as a centre, so far that each lot should contain one hundred acres, the breadth of each being twelve and one-half chains, and the length eighty chains. The stakes set up to mark these offsets were numbered, as were also the lots, and on the 12th day of July, 1817, a number of disbanded soldiers of the Fencible corps, having previously (by lottery) each drawn a number, proceeded to the vast forest, guided only by the surveyor's line, for the purpose of taking possession of the farms thus allotted to them, and which they were henceforward designed to occupy and cultivate. Each one, as he found the stake bearing the number of the lot, stepped out of the Indian file procession in which they travelled to survey his embryo homestead, and select a site for a shanty.

"It was on the 12th of July, 1817," said one* of the men to me fifty years after, "that we were ordered to seek the lots we had drawn, and to take possession of them, and a very warm day it was.

"Our number had been diminished by eighty-four when I stepped aside at the post indicating my number (LXXXV.), and my comrades passed on leaving me to view my new possession in solitude and at leisure. I went at once to work to clear a space, a work which I succeeded in accomplishing, and some time afterward constructed a log shanty, not very remarkable for the beauty of its proportions or the thoroughness of its carpentry. I was not then married, and as none of the settlers had commenced to build on the neighbouring lots, I began to be very lonely as the winter drew on, which, from the isolated position I occupied, is not a matter for wonder, and the constant pressing desire for companionship, ungratified as it was, and was likely to be, made me so supremely miserable that when the spring came I sought employment in the valley, found it, and never again saw my Dalhousie farm till to-day! I assure you," he continued, "I do not recognize *this* as the spot on which half a century ago I was so very unhappy. The dead and decaying trees which I see, as far as my eye can reach, were certainly not then *here;* but in their place was a green and vigorous forest, which seemed interminable, yet I *do* remember the brook and the meadow to the east and southward there; and from their position I think you are correct in saying this is

* James Wilson. I was sent to survey the lot to him, being at the time a Deputy Crown Land Surveyor for the county.

my lot!" "Would you know the spot on which you built the shanty?" said I. "Perhaps so," he replied. "I remember the cellar, which was quite small, cost me considerable labour to wall up, but it may remain." I took him in the midst of a clump of scrub pine bushes,* and said, "Is this like the place?" "Yes," he replied, "in that hole I kept my provisions in the winter of 1817-18. The stones of these walls were then laid by my hands, as you now see, except that many of them have tumbled into the cellar."

It was not, however, before 1818 that any serious attempt was made to commence the cultivation of the soil forming the farms in the settlement; but at the close of 1820 we have an excellent means to estimate the progress made. I refer to a return made to the Government, for that year, by Major Smythe, the military superintendent, who had in charge all matters connected with the discharged soldiery who formed it, which is here given to the reader in full. It is not only a census, but it gives valuable information, not usually found in a paper of that kind. I have arranged the names alphabetically for the convenience of reference, though in all other respects it will be found a faithful copy of the original as preserved in the archives of the Province:

RETURN OF MILITARY SETTLERS LOCATED AT THE DALHOUSIE SETTLEMENT SHOWING THE IMPROVEMENT MADE BY EACH, TO OCTOBER 16TH, 1820.

No. of Lot.	N.	S.	NAMES.	Women.	Children.	Houses.	Pensioners.	REMARKS.
29	..	S	†Anderson, Thomas	1	3	1	P	Raised 100 bushels potatoes, 1820.
31	..	S	†Anderson, Thomas, jun	..	..	1	..	A mason.
37	..	S	†Aul, James	1	1	1	..	
39	N	..	†Anderson, Robert	1	..	1	..	
67	..	S	Brophy, Dennis	..	1	1	..	
98	N	..	Butler, John	1	3	1	..	Raised 200 bush. potatoes; expects pension.
156	N	..	Browne, Daniel	1	1	1	P	A shoemaker.
163	N	..	Bates, Thomas	..	..	1	..	Expects a pension.
170	..	..	Bowie, Thomas	..	..	1	..	
38	..	S	†Carter, Archibald	..	3	1	P	Shoemaker.
51	..	S	†Cummings, Robert	1	4	1	P	
87	..	S	Cocker, Abraham	..	..	1	.	
89	N	..	†Connell, Patrick	1	2	1	..	Tailor; expects a pension.
94	..	S	†Cosgrove, Francis	..	2	1	..	Shoemaker; expects a pension.
P	..	..	†Dargie, William	1	2	1	..	Raised 200 bushels of potatoes.
5	N	..	Dunn, James	..	..	1	P	Infirm and aged.
13	N	S	†Dun, John	1	2	1	..	Expects a pension.
12								

* Pinus Banksiana.

† Those thus marked have descendants living in the county.

No. of Lot.	N.	S.	NAMES.	Women.	Children.	Houses.	Pensioners.	REMARKS.
30	..	S	Davy, Patrick	1	4	..	P	Schoolmaster.
93	..	S	Duffy, Patrick	..	1	1	..	
121	N	..	Diffily, James	..	..	1	..	
157	N	..	Dyar, Matthew	..	..	1	P	
161	N	..	Daley, Robert	..	..	1	..	
3								
164		S	Donnellan, Patrick	1	1	1	..	Expects a pension.
173	..	..	Dudale, Baptist	..	..	1	..	
121	N	S	Dillon, Patrick	1	2	1	1	
48	N	..	De le Palma, Joseph	..	..	..	..	Sickly; unfit for settler.
120	N	..	De la Hunt, Dennis	..	..	1	..	
19	N		*Foster, Joseph	1	1	1	P	
26	..	S	Farquar, John	1	..	1	..	
121	..	S	Flannagan, John	..	..	1	..	
10	N	S	*Gibson, William	1	6	1	P	Crops destroyed by fire.
11	N	..	Gossin, Peter	1	2	1	..	No crops; supposed to have gone off.
18	N	S	*Gormley, James	1	4	1	P	Raised 100 bushels of potatoes.
22	N	S	*Gallagher, Charles	1	5	..	P	Lives in Annapolis; keeps a shop
129	N	..	Gaffey, William	1	..	..	..	
41	..	S	Godfried, Dudale	..	..	1	..	Crops burned.
43	..	S	*Gillis, Archibald	..	3	1	P	Crops failed.
175	..	.	Grant, Alexander	..	..	1	P	
1	..	S	Hall, Joseph	..	..	1	P	An idle fellow.
6	N	..	Hanley, John	1	4	1	..	Crops failed.
6	..	S	Holmes (Widow)	1	3	..	..	Husband killed by a tree.
97	N	S	*Horner, Alexander	1	3	1	..	
20	N	.	Hamilton, Gilbert	1	1	1	..	Raised 100 bushels potatoes.
23	..	S	*Harold, James	1	5	1	P	
39	..	S	*Holland, John	1	1	1	..	
52	..	S	*Hannem, Stephen	1	1	1	.	
88	N	.	Hackett, Thomas	..	..	1	..	An idle character.
89	..	S	*Hutchinson, Hugh	..	..	1	.	Expects a pension.
90	N	S	Hunt, George	..	..	..	..	Carpenter.
94	N	..	Hudson, James	..	..	1	..	Expects a pension,
96	N	..	Hannasy, James	..	..	1	..	
98	..	S	Hannon, Anthony	1	..	1	..	Raised 200 bushels potatoes.
175	..	..	*Hogan, Michael	1	2	1	..	Removed too late to this lot this year.
92	N	..	Heiler, John	..	..	1	..	Idle; expects a pension.
19	..	S	†Inglis, Henry	1	4	1	P	Sailor; crops failed.
156	..	S	Isles, William	..	..	1	..	
8	N	.	*Justings, Joseph	1	5	1	..	
..	..	..	*Jackson, Christopher	1	2	1	..	Blacksmith.
9	..	S	Kinghorn, John	1	1	1	..	Crops destroyed by fire.
65	..	S		..	1	1	P	
174	..	..	Kay, George	..	..	1	1	
119	N	..	Kelley, Thomas	1	2	..	P	Lately come.
3	N	S	Larrimore, Andrew	1	3	1	P	Crops destroyed by fire.

* Those thus marked have descendants living in the county.

† Widow murdered afterward in 1833.

No. of Lot.	N.	S.	NAMES.	Women.	Children.	Houses.	Pensioners.	REMARKS.
11	..	S	Lewis, John	1	2	1	..	Crops failed.
66	..	S	*Late, Joseph	..	..	..	..	
124	N	..	Larkin, John	..	..	..	..	
126	N	..	Lee, Cornelius	1	1	1	..	
128	..	..	*Lonnergan, William, sen.	1	5	1	..	Tailor; expects a pension.
155	N	..	Lonnergan, William, jun.	..	..	..	..	
158	N	..	*Long, James	1	..	1	P	Shoemaker.
158	..	S	Leslie, Edward	1	..	1	..	
161	..	S	Lannerghan, James	..	..	1	..	
165	..	S	Lannergan, Michael	..	..	1	..	Shoemaker.
2	N	..	Martinson, John	1	..	1	..	Crops failed.
7	N	..	McLaughlin, David	1	..	1	..	An idle character.
8	..	S	McGorman, Andrew	1	2	..	..	Lives in Annapolis; keeps a shop.
20	..	S	Moore, James	..	..	..	..	
27	..	S	*McLaughlin, James	1	2	1	..	
28	..	S	*Minchin, James	1	1	1	..	
164	..	S	McDaniel, Donald	..	..	1	..	
65	..	S	*Meddicraft, James	1	1	1	P	
122	N	S	Mahon, Francis	1	1	1	..	Raised 110 bushels potatoes.
123	N	..	*McConnell, Barney	..	..	1	..	Shoemaker; expects a pension.
126	..	S	Murphy, Cornelius	..	..	1	..	
169	..	S	McGowan, Thomas	..	..	1	..	Expects a pension.
122	N	..	Mahoney, Frederic	..	..	..	..	Has got this lately.
1	..	..	*McGill, Robert	1	2	1	..	Liverpool Road, 100 bush potatoes
3	..	..	*McGill, James	..	..	..	..	Liverpool Road, 100 bush potatoes
..	..	..	Oliver, Henry	1	..	1	..	Crops failed.
30	N	..	O'Brien, John, jun	1	3	1	P	
96	..	S	O'Brien, James	..	..	1	..	
172	..	..	*Ord, John, sen	1	6	1	..	
171	..	..	*Ord, John, jun	..	..	..	..	Lives with his father.
125	N	..	O'Neil, Patrick	..	..	..	..	Got this lot lately.
			O'Neil, William	1	1	..	P	Got this lot lately; carpenter.
24	..	S	Phillips, George	1	3	1	..	A boy; father lost in the woods.
49	..	S	Prast, Frederic	..	..	..	..	Tailor; unfit for settler.
95	N	..	Quilty, John	1	..	1	..	
..	..	..	*Ramsay, William	1	4	1	P	
2	..	S	Reach, James	1	2	..	..	A bad settler; gone off.
124	..	S	Rochfort, Thomas	1	..	1	P	Shoemaker.
168	N	..	Ryan, John	..	..	1	..	
M	..	..	Smith, Henry	1	3	1	..	Ensign's half-pay.
4	N	..	*Searle, Joseph	1	..	1	..	
25	N	..	*Stephenson, James	..	..	1	..	
31	N	..	*Speakman, John	1	4	1	P	
49	N	..	*Schopp, Adam	..	..	1	.	Tailor.
50	N	..	Scott, Moses	..	1	1	P	Cooper and wheelwright.
27	..	S	Sweet, John	1	1	1	..	
157	..	S	Starks, John	..	..	1	..	Carpenter.
117	N	..	*Stoddart, Robert	..	..	..	..	Carpenter.
12	N	..	*Taylor, James	1	1	1	P	Gardener; works in the valley.

* Those thus marked have descendants living in the county.

No. of Lot.	N.	S.	NAMES.	Women.	Children.	Houses.	Pensioners.	Remarks.
21	..	S	Turner	1	3	1	P	Mason.
40	..	S	*Todd, James	1	5	1	P	
23	..	S	Tobin, William	..	..	1	..	
25	..	S	Treasay, Francis	1	..	1	P	
28	N	..	Tobin, Richard	1	2	..	..	Lives with his son on lot 123.
164	N	..	*Toole, James	..	..	..	..	House burnt.
167	N	..	*Taylor, George	1	3	..	..	Armourer.
127	N	..	Trainor, Patrick	1	2	1	..	
127	..	S	*Toole, Edward	..	..	..	..	
I	..	..	Wilson, James	1	4	1	P	
K	..	..	Walker, James	1	5	1	P	
B	..	..	William, Charles	1	..	..	..	Crops and house burnt.
5	..	S	Whitty, Nicholas	1	..	1	P	Carpenter.
13	.	S	*Wagstaff, William	1	5	1	P	Painter; crops failed.
23	N	..	Wylie, David	1	1	1	..	An idle character.
24	N	..	*Woodland, Joseph	1	2	1	..	
165	N	..	*Walker, Francis	1	2	..	.	Carpenter; expects a pension.
169	N	..	Walsh, William	..	..	1	..	
118	..	..	Wylie, William	1	..	..	P	Bricklayer.

The Superintendent in the report which accompanied the foregoing return says that there had been a great failure of crops in this settlement (in that year) "particularly in grain and turnips," and he assigns several causes among which I notice, "the dryness of the season;" "the sterility of the soil in some of the farms;" "the idleness of some of the settlers," and "fires." "Many of them," he adds, "have sown winter grain for next year's crop, and much meadow land has been cleared and sown down to grass, while several acres of upland have been sown with grass and clover, and are likely to give good yields."

Rations of food and rum were furnished these people for some time after they took possession of their farms, depots having been established at several points in the district, namely, at or near Dargie's in the western end; at Albany settlement, where the Dalhousie Road crossed it, and at Stoddart's near the eastern extremity of the settlement. In the same year, Major Smythe says he had at his disposal (to be distributed among those who had been the shortest time on the ration list) 22,000 lbs. of salt fish. The depots formed the centres of convivial gatherings for the settlers for some two or three years, and were the unintentional cause of much evil to them, by offering an agreeable method of spending their time in idleness and debauchery to the detriment of their farm interests.

From this return it may be seen that the district contained 83 women, and 188 children, making together a population in these two classes of

* Those thus marked have descendants living in the county.

271 souls, besides the men, who when reckoned in, make a total of about *three hundred and fifty souls.*

The settlers had cleared 574 acres of land, and raised thereon 6,145 bushels of potatoes, together with 14 bushels of barley, 541 of rye, 108 of wheat, 12 of Indian corn, 16 of oats, 562 of turnips, 37 tons of upland hay, and they possessed eleven cows, and thirty-three pigs.

Assuming the total population at 350, the number of acres cleared would average (for two years' labour) 1.64 per head; the number of bushels of potatoes would give 17.5 bushels per head, while barley gave only one-twenty-fifth, rye one and a half, and turnips one and six-tenths bushels per head of the population. All these averages, except that of potatoes, fell far beneath the wants of the inhabitants, and, of course, the deficiency had to be provided for them at the public expense. It is worthy of note, however, that three-tenths of a bushel of wheat was produced for each man, woman and child for that year.

On the 14th July, 1820, Major Smythe wrote from Annapolis to Major Raid, the Governor's military secretary, as follows: "Lands having been laid out in the Dalhousie settlement for *two* towns, and His Excellency the Earl of Dalhousie having appeared desirous to have them settled as speedily as possible, I have the honour to submit for the consideration of His Excellency the Lieutenant-General commanding, whether it would not be a desirable way to carry it into effect by giving some public notice, signed by order of His Excellency [holding out the proposed encouragement] to such class of persons as may be deemed fittest," etc.; and in a foot-note, he recommends Thomas Anderson, first carpenter; Thomas Anderson, second mason; and Christopher Jackson,* blacksmith, of the Royal Artillery, to have lots in the town of Ramsay.† This little settlement lies to the northward of the south base of the district of Dalhousie, and nearly south from the only church in it.

The road connecting the two is called the Ramsay Road, and was named originally in honour of Lord Ramsay, eldest son of the Earl of Dalhousie, then a mere boy, who paid a visit to the new settlement in this or the following year. The Legislature granted the sum of £300 for the road leading through it in 1820.

In another letter addressed to Colonel Darling, then military secretary to Lord Dalhousie, and bearing date, March, 1819, Major Smythe makes reference to several individuals whose names are identified with the history of the county. Of Mossman he says: "He has a wife, a son twenty years of age, and two daughters—one seventeen, the other eighteen years old," and calls the father a discharged artillery-man. In speaking of Robert Daly, he declares that he works hard for a living, "and resides

*Afterward killed by Gormley.

†Still familiarly called "the township."

with his father-in-law." Of another, he affirms, "Daniel Larkin had, on certificate of good character from Captain Hoyt, been taken on [the ration list?] again," and that "Wilson has a large family, is industrious, and deserves to have the lot of land adjoining lot K."

In the spring of 1825, the Administrator of the Government, Mr. Wallace, was petitioned by a large number of settlers for an alteration in the road leading from Annapolis to their settlement. Their application was approved in Council on the 25th of May. The change asked for was designed to avoid, as much as possible, the hills over which the old road had been constructed, and to lessen the distance between their homes and the town where they exchanged the products of their labour for the commodities required for consumption in their households. The following are the names of the petitioners: Robert Stailing, William Gibson, John Buckler, John Dunn, Thomas Anderson, James Aul, G. Hamilton, Christopher Jackson, Henry Inglis, Joseph Matthews, Joseph Woodlands, Bernard McConnelly, James McLaughlin, Thomas Minchin, John Holland, James Whitman,* William Dargie, James Wilson, William Lynch, William Ramsay, Thomas Buckler, William Copeland, John Copeland, William Barry, and James McWade.

On the 16th May, Judge Ritchie informed the Government that he could not make any arrangement with the Eassons in relation to the damages done to them, or that would be done to them in carrying out the prayer of the petitioners, and stated it as his opinion that they should not be paid more than £50, and that Matthew Ritchie should also be paid for losses accruing to him from the same cause.

Among the names of the grantees of this settlement will be found those of James Gormley and Christopher Jackson—names to which considerable interest has always been attached from a tragedy connected with them. The affair to which I refer occurred in 1826 or 1827, I think, when the latter was killed by the former in a quarrel which took place from a trivial cause, while on a visit with several of their neighbours, to Annapolis, probably to draw their pensions. Gormley, excited by passion and perhaps by drink, struck Jackson with an iron instrument. He was arrested in consequence of the blow proving fatal, and tried before the Supreme Court on an indictment for murder, but was convicted of the lesser offence only (manslaughter), and sentenced to imprisonment for a term of years. An attempt having been made in 1829 to obtain a commutation or remission of the sentence, a number of persons memorialized the Lieutenant-Governor, Sir Peregrine Maitland, not to grant it for reasons set forth.

I need not apologize to the reader for introducing here some short notices of a few of the families whose names appear in the original list of

*A pre-loyalist, married a daughter of the Rev. Jacob Bailey.

grantees in this settlement, and who have continued to occupy the lands without interruption till the present time:

William Dargie, J.P., and his brothers Alexander and James—the sons of the late William Dargie, who was the manager of one of the ration stations or depots in the early days—still occupy the homestead and the adjoining lands, besides being the proprietors of a grist and saw-mill, and have acquired in consequence of their industry and integrity, considerable influence in their neighbourhood. It is much to their credit to say that they have taken a very warm interest in educational matters, and soon after the law creating free schools came into operation, the settlement was laid off into sections, one of which, "The Dargie section," was soon furnished with a school-house, and a school opened in which good service has been done, and these results have been largely attributable to the efforts of these men and a few of their neighbours. The Dargies and Bucklers at this place were the first to commence lumbering operations on the American system, and thus to give an impetus to the business that without their efforts would have continued to languish for want of knowledge and enterprise.

Another school-house exists at the mouth of the township road (Ramsay) and has been of considerable service there. This part of the settlement rejoices in the possession of the only house of worship in West Dalhousie. It is a neat little building situated on the bank of a beautiful, though small lake and surrounded with a fine grove of the *populi-folia*, or poplar-leaved birch, under the shade of which are to be seen many small hillocks indicating the last earthly resting place of many of those who were pioneers in the labour of improvement in this region. This church belongs to the Episcopalians, and is now included in the new parish of Round Hill.

Saw-mills are owned by various individuals in the settlement besides those named. Edward Devinney and sons own a fine mill situate on the stream that flows past his dwelling, and Durland and others are the proprietors of another on the Port Medway River, near the lakes called "The Spectacles"; and there are also several others* and a shingle machine in the eastern settlement, from which large quantities of pine and spruce logs have been "driven" down the sinuous channels of the streams leading into the La Have River, through which to find their way to the gang-mills at Bridgewater and its vicinity. These and other causes have much mitigated the condition of the settlers, which for a considerable period was one of chronic poverty and comparative idleness. As the old pensioners died and their pensions fell in, their descendants were obliged to look to other sources for the means to maintain their families, so that

* Since the text was written most of these mills have been superseded by portable steam saw-mills.—[Ed.]

poverty is now the exception and humble competence the rule, while many have risen to circumstances of comfortable independence.

Among the names of the petitioners above cited there is one that deserves honourable mention for his personal worth—I mean the late John Aul. He came to Halifax in 1804, in an armed brig of war which in that year brought out a detachment of artillery to which he belonged. He was then a young man, and expected from his profession that he might be called to visit many places in different parts of the world. He determined to be made a member of the order of Free and Accepted Masons, if it were possible. He was recommended in the usual way to Virgin Lodge, of that city, by a member of the lodge, accepted and received his first degree, when his detachment was placed under orders to proceed to Jamaica, on which a lodge of emergency was called and he obtained the two following degrees and his Master's certificate. The brig sailed at the appointed time and had an extremely pleasant and rapid voyage until within a short distance of St. Ann's, the port to which she was bound. "The evening," said the old gentleman to the writer a few years ago, "was a very fine one, and I was happy in the belief that I would soon be where I might be of use to my king and country. We had reason to think that we might find ourselves in circumstances of danger as we approached the island, as the French had many fine frigates afloat in West Indian waters, but on this evening, knowing from the report of the captain that if no untoward event occurred, at daylight in the morning we should by our reckoning be in sight of the headland covering our port, we were in high spirits, and congratulated ourselves in having escaped the vigilance of our enemies, and we retired to our hammocks in this happy state of mind. At early dawn in the morning we were aroused by the booming report of a gun of much heavier calibre than any we carried in our small brig, and coming on deck we beheld the land we expected to see, but we also saw what we did not expect to see, a fine large French frigate to windward of us, and so near that there was no possibility of escape. It was the discharge of one of her guns across our bows that had awakened us. A very short council of war was held, at which it was resolved that it would be an act of madness to fight a ship of her size, armament and crew; and as we could not run away from her, it was decided to surrender, which we did. The French commander immediately sent a boat with an officer to board us and dispose of us as prisoners of war. This officer spoke no English, but one of ours understood French, though not very thoroughly. At length I was told that the keys to my trunks were required, and I at once delivered them to him. He examined my baggage very closely and took possession of the papers found among them, and glanced at them in a helpless kind of manner—owing no doubt to the lack of knowledge of the language in which they were written—till he reached my Masonic

certificate, which was written in the Latin tongue, when he asked the interpreter to whom it belonged, and I was pointed out to him as the person. He bowed politely to me, and then told his interpreter to tell us that the officers of the ship would, if they desired, be put on shore on the point of land nearest to St. Ann's, and allowed to take all their personal property with them. He then expressed his regret that it was out of his power to land us nearer and thereby save us the trouble we might experience in reaching our destination, a thing he would willingly do if it were not for the danger he would run in being himself captured by some of our vessels then in the neighbourhood. Our vessel was, of course, taken as a prize, and the crew and men made prisoners, but the rest of us were safely landed at the cape. All our papers, valuables and other property we were permitted to take with us. Our foe," continued he, "was a Freemason."

Mr. Aul was one of the oldest Masons in the Province at the time of his death. He was for several years in government or city employ at Halifax. He was married and had issue. One of his daughters is the wife of John Buckler, Esq., J.P., and has a large family. Her husband and all the families in the county bearing that name are of English origin, and some of the heads of them were natives of Devonshire. They have generally been distinguished by their sobriety, industry and thrift, and possess considerable local influence in their district.

In 1833 a man named Gregory murdered an elderly woman, a Mrs. Catherine Inglis. The circumstances attending this murder excited the people of the whole county. The scene of the outrage was a spot a little to the eastward of the mouth of the Perrott Road, near its junction with the Dalhousie Road, and several days elapsed after the commission of the crime before the body was discovered. The skull of the unfortunate woman had been broken by the use of a triangular piece of ash timber, known as a "stave bolt," which was found lying near. In his confession he said the double crime was committed before dark and in great haste, and after killing her he dragged the body aside to the swamp where she was ultimately found; that on reaching his home and reflecting upon his deed, it occurred to him that he might not have killed her, and that she might survive to testify against him; and in consequence of this doubt he returned to the spot and found her alive, though speechless, and, with the weapon spoken of, he then finished his bloody work, wrenched her wedding-ring from her finger, and took a small coin—a smooth sixpence —from her pocket, returned home and went to his work. This coin was afterwards a means to his conviction, as well as the ring, and his conduct during the search—the former having been found in his possession and identified as property of the deceased. He was indicted at the September term of the court, 1833, tried and convicted, and soon after executed at Hog Island.

MAITLAND.

This settlement is situated on the road leading from Annapolis to Liverpool, and its southern extremity abuts on the south line of the county. It is nearly ten miles in length, and is intersected near its centre by the Liverpool River (why should this stream not be called Rossignol after its discoverer?), down which for many years vast quantities of spruce and pine timber have found their way, by the aid of the sturdy and adventurous stream-driver, to the saw-mills of Queens County, at the head of the harbour of the good old town of Liverpool. Its geological character is somewhat anomalous, its soil being mainly formed of decomposed granite, while the near underlying rocks are chiefly metamorphic slates. Granite boulders predominate in the settlement; and, as I have said, the soils, when cultivated, indicate such an origin, though the hard whinstones and slates which give character to the gold belt of the Province, are always found at no great depth below, and quartz veins have been found in very many places, some of them being of the rose-coloured variety and of great breadth, but whether of gold-bearing character or not has not been determined, nothing having been undertaken to test the fact, nor is it at all probable that anything will be done in that direction until after the timber supply shall have become exhausted. It is possible, however, that another generation may find employment for its energies in the pursuit of gold-mining. The farms in this locality make excellent returns for the culture and care expended on them, but they do not receive the generous treatment and undivided attention necessary to really profitable results, nor will this be the case while the lumber interest, above referred to, continues to be of paramount importance to the settler.

The same general fact may be affirmed in relation to horticultural and pomological pursuits, though, from the slight efforts made in these branches of industry, it has become apparent that ample success would crown the intelligent and scientific endeavours of all who might engage in them.

The family to which this district is most largely indebted for its gradual and healthy development, bears the name of Kempton. Two or three brothers of that name were the first to begin the work of clearing away the forests preparatory to the creation of homesteads for themselves and their families in this, then, far-off and remote wilderness. It was about the beginning of the second quarter of this century, that these hardy and adventurous pioneers commenced their labours. Until the time of the administration of Sir Peregrine Maitland, I think, the place was called "Kempton's Settlement," but at the period indicated it received its present name in honour of the Governor.

Although scarcely more than a generation has passed away since the "forest primeval" was monarch of all it surveyed, the first settlers and their children, who still own and occupy a large portion of its area, have lived to witness a change seldom brought about in so short a time. In less than half a century the wilderness—the home of the wild beast and of solitude—has blossomed, and the fruit borne has taken the form of homes—the happy homes of many hundreds of intelligent, industrious, moral and loyal subjects of the best sovereign who ever occupied the throne of our "great Mother Country"; of a people who have erected saw and grist mills, churches, school-houses and temperance halls, and who have, in their humble yet earnest way, always cast their aid and influence in defending and fostering the *right*, or what they believed to be the right, in opposition to the *wrong*, whether in the domain of morals, religion or politics. A tri-weekly mail which formerly passed through the settlement, has in later years been succeeded by a daily one. The trade of the settlement has two outlets—one towards Annapolis, from which it is separated by a distance of twenty-eight miles; the other toward Liverpool, which is at a somewhat greater distance. Among the inhabitants who became settlers here at an early period, I must not forget to mention Nimrod Router, a very intelligent, though somewhat eccentric individual, who cast in his lot with the dwellers in this region fifty or sixty years ago; and of "Mike Sypher," the acquisition of a much later period, and who also possesses some very agreeable peculiarities.* Mr. Sypher is descended from a Loyalist family which came to Digby in 1783. His cheery "such is life," when any misfortune overtook him was such as to inspire even a misanthrope with good humour and hopefulness. Said he to the writer one day, speaking of the Loyalists who had settled in the district just named, "They were very intelligent and tolerably well educated; at least they ought to have been, for they always had 'Read, Wright, and Sypher with them'"—in allusion to his own name and those of two others who had domiciled themselves in the same locality.

Maitland is situated in the heart of the lumbering section of the southern part of the county, and its welfare has been much influenced by the prosecution of that industry, and it is to be feared rather injuriously than otherwise. The forests have claimed and received more attention than the farms, and its agricultural interests have suffered in an inverse proportion to the success of the lumbering business. It is to be hoped, however, that this vital industry will soon receive more systematic and intelligent care, and that a new era of prosperity will be inaugurated,

* Since the author's death removed to Digby Neck, where he still lives, but still owning his Maitland farm.—[Ed.]

from which the most beneficial results may be anticipated to the people in the increase of their wealth and the extension of their settlement.

This district, like most of the more recent settlements, was largely granted to persons residing in the old townships. Among those who thus held grants I may name Colonel James Eager, of Wilmot; William Morehouse, Esq., of Annapolis; John H. Ditmars, Stephen Ryerson, James R. Purdy, Gabriel Purdy, Joseph A. Purdy, and Silas Potter, of Clements, and Frederic Hardwick, of Annapolis. Besides these there were several grantees who belonged to Queens County. Of these individuals, Colonel Eager was a Loyalist, who received a grant of land in Wilmot, adjoining that of Colonel Samuel V. Bayard. Mr. Eager died about 1830, leaving one son, John H. Eager, Esq., who survives, and two or three daughters. The old homestead became afterwards the property of Captain Gow, late of Her Majesty's navy, to whom the son sold it. Mr. Morehouse was the son of a Loyalist, and was born in Digby County, where his father had settled. He was a Deputy Surveyor for the county for many years, and it was he who planned and surveyed the settlement. He died at an advanced age at his farm in South Williamston, leaving two sons, both of whom are deceased. For particulars of Ditmars (who married in 1825, Floralia, daughter of the late Abraham Gesner, M.P.P.), Stephen Ryerson, the Purdys and Potters, see the history of Clements, and the genealogies in other parts of this work. Frederic Hardwick, the grantee whose name has been above mentioned, was a son of one of the pre-loyalists of 1760, and who settled shortly after that time near "Saw-mill Creek," on a farm that is yet owned and occupied by his descendants. (See genealogies.)

NORTHFIELD

Lies to the eastward of Maitland, and but two or three miles distant from it. It is but a small district, and in soil, productions, and in general characteristics resembles the latter settlement, as it also does in the character of its people. The soil is very productive, but not very intelligently cultivated, lumbering operations having resulted injuriously in that respect. The settlement lies partly in Annapolis and partly in Queens County, and is provided with a school-house and school, the section, being a "border section," receiving support from both counties.

It may be proper to mention here that quartz boulders are found in this settlement, much in the same way they are known to exist at Waverly and other gold districts; and as the underlying rocks resemble those in which auriferous quartz has been found, it is scarcely problematical that gold exists there, especially as "mundic" or *pyritical* substances are known to abound in the rocks of the neighbourhood.

DELONG SETTLEMENT.

This small settlement lies to the eastward of Maitland and Northfield, and takes its name from a Mr. Delong, a descendant of a Loyalist family of that name (probably of Huguenot ancestry), who settled in Wilmot in about the year 1800. There are a few other families located here, among whom is one named Roddy or Rawding, whose fathers were Loyalists and original settlers in Digby.

The soil in this district resembles that of Northfield, and is very productive when fairly cultivated, yielding excellent cereal crops and other vegetables. Lumbering is also prosecuted in the winter season by the inhabitants.

PERROTT SETTLEMENT.

This settlement lies nearly south-east from the town of Annapolis. It was granted in 1821 to a certain number of persons who had belonged to the military branch of the public service, most of whom I believe were of Loyalist origin. It takes the name from a Captain Perrott, a Loyalist, though his name does not appear among the grantees, and consists of a number of farms lying on both sides of the road leading through it, having a length of six or eight miles. The soil of these farms is mostly of a loamy character, well adapted to the growth of staple vegetable crops, but not very thoroughly cultivated—the attention of the farmers having too frequently been diverted to lumbering operations. Most of the inhabitants, however, obtain a good livelihood for themselves and families from these combined sources of wealth, and its educational prospects were soon much improved by the Act of 1864 relating to this vital subject. It has been provided with a place of worship according to the forms of the Church of England, attached to which is a neat burial-ground. The settlement is admirably watered, and several excellent mill sites exist, besides those which are now occupied. The district which it covers is somewhat hilly and diversified in scenery. The list below given contains the names of the original grantees :

Anderton, James.
Baker, Thomas.
Barry, William.
Collins, Garrett.
Copeland, John.
Collins, Richard.
Gray, William.
Gray, James.
Hudson, Lieut. Henry.
Ingles, William.
James, Thomas.
Keenan, Michael.
Lynch, Hugh.
Lynch, William.
Morris, Dennis.
Muir, William.
McLaughlin, John.
Norman, Joseph.
Robinson, Lieut. George.
Smith, Henry.
Sanks, George.
Winniett, Ensign J.

ROXBURY, OR DURLAND'S SETTLEMENT.

This small settlement is situated nearly south from the beautiful Paradise District and about six miles from it, and derives its original name from Thomas Durland and another of the name who were sons or grandsons of Daniel Durland, an original grantee of Mount Hanley in Wilmot. The settlement lies chiefly between the base line of the front lots of the township of Annapolis and the south line of the same township, and has a soil consisting of the detritus of granitic rocks mingled with a sort of clay loam—a strong and productive soil, yielding fair returns in all the usually grown cereals and other vegetable crops. Apples are cultivated in it with good results, and the small wild fruits, comprising the gooseberry, raspberry, blueberry and strawberry, are produced in profuse abundance. The streams and lakes in its neighbourhood abound in trout and perch and afford a fine field for the operations of the disciples of Izak Walton. One of the settlers bears the name of Hinds—a name which the reader may recall as being the same as that of a family among the oiginal applicants for lands in Annapolis township in 1759.

Farming and lumbering chiefly employ the attention of the inhabitants who gain a fair livelihood from these pursuits. The district forms a school section, and the people have built a neat school-house which is also, on occasions, used as a place of public worship.

BLOOMINGTON.

This settlement lies to the south-east of Nictaux Falls village on what was formerly called the Wheelock Road—so named from the late Elias Wheelock who owned a lot of land contained in the angle formed by the said road and the main highway leading eastwardly to Canaan mountain, now called Torbrook. This gentleman was distinguished for his activity as a pioneer in the work of cultivation and improvement in this region, and was for many years a deputy surveyor of Crown lands in the county. In the latter decade of the last century the whole county south of his clearing was an unbroken forest of pine, spruce, hemlock, birch, beech, maple, ash and other deciduous trees, giving evidence of a strong and productive soil and pointing it out as a proper location for a settlement. The road through it which was surveyed by him, was afterward extended still farther southwardly toward Lunenburg, by which name it has long been, and still is known. The lands on both sides were granted in blocks of considerable size to various individuals—one of whom was Robert Dickson, formerly sheriff of the county. These grants were mostly bounded on the west by the Nictaux River, and were left uncleared and uncultivated for a great many years, many of them having only recently been cut up and sold "in lots to suit purchasers."

The Viditos, a Loyalist family, were among the first settlers in this district, and several families of that name are still domiciled in it. In recent years, the timber, which has escaped the ravages of fire, has been extensively utilized and made a source of considerable profit to the inhabitants, but when that article shall have ceased to be available, it is feared that nothing will be found to supply its place; but as the soil is very good it may be predicted that the inhabitants will realize a fair subsistence from its cultivation, especially if they should be induced to adopt more scientific and skilful methods. The people have supplied themselves with school accommodation, and in morals and religion compare favourably with those of other sections of the county.

NEW ALBANY.

This settlement was surveyed and laid out early in the present century, by Phineas Millidge, eldest son of Thomas Millidge, Esquire, who was for many years one of the representatives of the county. He appears to have been engaged in this work in 1801 or 1802, for in 1804 he petitioned the Legislature to be reimbursed for losses sustained by fire during the survey, in which he was assisted by Nathaniel Parker (afterwards appointed a commissioner to settle the district), Joseph Morton, John McCormick (of Granville), George Harvey, and George Buchanan. The loss sustained was caused by the accidental burning of their camp, by which their clothing and provisions were consumed. Compensation was granted to them in a bulk sum, which was ordered to be divided among them in the ratio of their individual losses.*

The road through the settlement had been cut out before 1806, for in that year Charles Whitman was granted the sum of *five pounds*, to pay him for keeping the road open from the eighteen-mile tree to Cleaveland's†—that is, to cut out the windfalls that might obstruct the travel for that year. In 1809 £100 was voted for the Liverpool Road, a part of which would be expended on that portion of it which extended through Albany, and Nathaniel Parker was appointed a commissioner to expend it. The settlement is bounded on the north by the south line of the second division of the township of Annapolis; on the east by the Nictaux River; on the south by the north rear line of the Dalhousie lots, and on the west by the western lines of the lots contained in it, and by Trout Lake, a fine expansion of a brook that discharges its waters into the Nictaux

* Journals of Assembly for 1803.

† Journals of Assembly for 1806. Cleaveland's farm was situated on the road leading from Nictaux Falls to the new settlement and within two miles of it. It was in later years owned by Thomas Banks. Mr. Cleaveland was one of the grantees of Albany, his lot being No. 29, which was afterwards owned by Charles Whitman—perhaps escheated and regranted to him.

after crossing the settlement near its southern extremity. The road which traverses it is very hilly, in some places having been carried over the highest hills. The soil is productive and generally well cultivated; it is formed of clay loams mingled with the detritus of granitic rocks of the district. Wheat, rye, barley, oats, buckwheat, potatoes, turnips and mangold-wurzel are successfully grown, and are a source of considerable profit to the farmer. It is well watered and productive in grasses as it possesses some valuable meadow lands. The streams and lakes abound in trout and perch, and afford fair returns to the sportsmen who venture to try their luck in them. The writer has seen the latter fish taken in Zwicker's lake, near the south end of the settlement, of the size of a mackerel, and they are to be preferred to the former for their flavour and delicacy.

The following is a list of the names of the first grantees of the lands in the settlement, with the number of acres in each lot. The lots are numbered from north to south beginning with No. 6.

Lot.	Names.	Acres.	Lot.	Names.	Acres.
6	Garrett Clayton	243	21	Isaac Whitman	230
7	John Saunders	230	22	Solomon Marshall	230
8, 9, 10, Ungranted.			23	Beriah Bent	605
11	Solomon Marshall	280	24	Jacob Whitman	230
12	Daniel Whitman	230	25	Jno. Whitman Tuffts	312
13	Elisha Marshall	170	26	Daniel Whitman	280
14	William Chute	125	27	Henry Parker	328
15	James Anderson	230	28	Daniel Benjamin	..
16	Samuel Felch	150	29	Ezekiel Cleaveland	290
	Abraham Chute	100	30	John Sanders, jun	280
17	Samuel Bayard	230	31	Nathaniel Benjamin	400
18	Samuel Bancroft	230	32	Nathaniel Benjamin	..
19	Jeremiah Bancroft	230	33	Daniel Benjamin	..
20	Obadiah Marshall	230	34	Henry Zwicker (recent grant)	200

In 1817 many of these lots had changed owners. Clayton's (No. 6) lot had been bought by John Saunders, jun.; No. 8 had been granted to Abiel Robbins, sen.; Daniel Whitman had purchased No. 13; Nos. 14 and 15 had been sold to William Davis; 17 had been purchased from Samuel Bayard by Samuel Marshall; and 18 and 19 by Abel Beals; Isaac Whitman had become the owner of 20; and Maynard Parker of 22; Henry Parker had bought 26, and Charles Whitman 29, while the late John Merry had become the proprietor of 30, which had been granted to John Saunders, jun. These facts may be verified by reference to the subjoined report which will speak for itself:

"Statement of the Settlement and those that have settled on the road that leads from Nictaux to Liverpool, and the land that is granted and what is Liable to be escheated. Settled under the direction of the Subscriber.

"(Signed), NATHANIEL PARKER,
"*Commissioner to get Settlers.*"

Lot.	NAMES.	No. in Family.	Acres cleared.	Houses.	Barns.	REMARKS.
3	Abiel Robbins	1	5	..	..	Granted.
6, 7	John Saunders, jun.	6	50	1	1	A smithy.
8	Abiel Robbins, sen.	11	4	1	..	Granted.
11	Solomon Marshall, jun.	4	30	1	1	"
12, 13	Daniel Whitman, jun	6	52	1	1	"
14, 15	William Davis	..	23	..	..	"
16	Samuel Felch	7	20	1	..	"
17	Samuel Marshall	..	20	1	1	"
18, 19	Abel Beals	9	25	1	1	"
20, 21	Isaac Whitman	9	70	1	1	"
22	Maynard Parker	..	7	..	..	"
23	*Beriah Bent	..	2	..	..	"
24	John Whitman, jun.	1	20	1	1	"
25	John W. Tuffts	8	50	1	1	"
26, 27	Henry Parker	8	100	1	1	"
28	Daniel Benjamin	..	20	1	1	"
29	Charles Whitman	5	70	1	1	"
30	John Merry	6	50	1	1	"
31½, 32	Nathaniel Benjamin	..	..	..	..	Granted—Liable to be escheated.
33	do. do.	..	..	..	..	Granted—E. side of road.
37, 38	Church Morse	7	10	..	..	Drowned 1st May, 1817.

The district possesses two or more school-houses, a Baptist church, a grist and several saw mills, one of which was situated near its northern boundary, and is known as "Patterson's gang-mill," having been built by James Butler Patterson, an enterprising American gentleman who, having become the proprietor of extensive lands on the Nictaux River, expended large sums in the construction of this valuable mill and in clearing out the river and its tributaries and building dams, and who will long be remembered by the people of this part of the country for his enterprise and many manly qualities, as well as for his having been the pioneer in the introduction of a new and improved method of conducting lumbering operations on a large scale. This property was sold to Messieurs Pope, Vose & Co., who in their turn sold to the enterprising firm of Davison Bros., who still continue to manufacture several million feet of boards annually, which of late years find their way *via* the Nova Scotia Central Railway to Bridgewater, in Lunenburg County, whence they are shipped to various markets. This branch of industry has contributed largely to the material prosperity of this settlement.

* Lost at sea a few years after this day.

SPRINGFIELD, OR GRINTON SETTLEMENT.

From the earliest recollection of the writer until about the middle of the century, this locality was best, in fact only, known by the latter name. John Grinton, a native of Scotland, and, I believe, of Glasgow, soon after his arrival in the Province took up his abode at or near Lawrencetown, where, with his family, he lived several years. This man was the first applicant for a grant of lands in this settlement, and became one of the first settlers there. Another Scotchman, a Glasgow man, Arod McNayr by name, became a grantee and settler in the same year. The former is said to have built the first house, and the latter to have constructed the first barn in it. The descendants of these men yet find homes and farms on the lands granted to their fathers. Three-quarters of a century has passed away since the pioneer's axe was first heard in this now fine district, but which was then a dense wilderness of mixed and mighty forest trees. It had to be approached from East Dalhousie by a bridle-path a distance of several miles. It was through such a road, and on horseback, that the wives and children of Grinton and McNayr were guided on the way to their new forest homes. The almost heroic courage and devotion which animated these worthy women cannot fail to excite our admiration. The sacrifices made by them can scarcely be measured by any standard known to us of to-day. The loss of the public worship of God, of the social intercourse with old friends and neighbours and relatives without which life loses half its zest; the deprivation of the comforts and conveniences of living long enjoyed; the loneliness and sometimes the dangers of life in the woods, and the certain prospect of a life of toil and privation in the future—all these sacrifices were made with admirable fortitude because they were made by willing hearts, and it is believed that the satisfaction which accompanies such deeds sweetened the declining years of their long lives.

For several years these people had to convey such supplies as they were not otherwise able to produce, through roadless forests on their own shoulders or those of a horse. This condition of things was experienced until a considerable lapse of time had occurred, but it gradually, at first very gradually, began to give place to a better one.

FALKLAND.

It was not long after the settlement was formed in Springfield, that the first attempt was made to commence the work of improvement in Falkland, or as it was for some years called, "the Eastern Settlement," in allusion to its position in relation to the former. There is a ridge of highlands extending in a southerly direction and lying between the Mill Lake

River on the west and the main LaHave River on the east, and it is on this ridge that the settlement is situated. It is approached by a road leading from the Nictaux and Lunenburg Road, not far north of Grinton's grant, from which, after proceeding a couple of miles in a south-easterly direction, the district is gained, when the road pursues a course nearly due south till it again meets the Nictaux and Lunenburg.

The farms are regularly laid out to extend east and west, or nearly so, from the highway, and contain one hundred acres each, with the exception of a grant of twelve hundred acres in one block, to Lieut.-Col. G. F. Thompson, toward its southern extremity, which has in some degree interfered with the uniformity of more recent surveys.

The land is here unusually good and well suited to agricultural operations, and though more or less broken by granite boulders and dykes, it affords excellent pasturage and a considerable quantity of valuable tillage land. It is well watered, and produces all the staple farm crops which can be raised in other parts of the county. Even apples and plums have been grown in these remote districts with considerable success, though not, perhaps, in sufficient quantities to supply home consumption. There can be but little room for doubt that the centennial of these settlements will witness a very considerable change in their appearance, population and production, and that the inhabitants of that period will be able to produce all the fruits that may be required for their own use.

The names of the original grantees of this place are as follows: Lieutenant-Colonel G. F. Thompson; Sergeant Robert Stoddart, one of whose sons now lives on one of the lots granted to him; Edward Marshall and —— Marshall, Morris Swallow and a few others. Of these, the Marshalls are descended from the old pre-loyalist settlers of the Annapolis valley. Stoddart was an original settler in Dalhousie, and his lots in this place were intended to be a provision for his sons at some future time; and Thompson's was a reward for military services. The latter property has been improved by a Mr. Sproule, a descendant of one of the old Massachusetts colonists, and is held by him in the default of the appearance of the heirs of Thompson to claim its possession. The inhabitants of this settlement are equally industrious, sober, intelligent and moral as their neighbours in the sister settlements. They have a school-house and maintain a school, and they worship in the churches of Springfield, to the construction and maintenance of which they have in some degree contributed. The name it bears was given in honour of the late Lord Falkland, sometime Governor of the Province, and it is very frequently called "Falkland Ridge." On the south-west side of Springfield is a beautiful little lake, very appropriately named Lake Pleasant, and a fine, though small settlement has been formed there, called

LAKE PLEASANT.

The situation of this settlement is very beautiful indeed. The road running through it winds along the borders of the lake, but in places is elevated considerably above its level, thus affording slightly elevated positions for the dwellings of the settlers. The pioneer in the work of cultivation here was Mr. Charles Grandison Bent, a son of the late Nedebiah Bent, of Mount Hanley, in Wilmot, and was, therefore, the grandson of one of the stalwart immigrants from the old Massachusetts colony in 1760. This family for three generations have been famed for the strength, activity and hardiness of their physical structure, and Grandison shared in a considerable degree this idiosyncrasy of his family.

Having married a Miss Saunders, a descendant of another of the pre-loyalist colonists, even more famed for their physical prowess than his ancestors were, he obtained a letter of Occupation, or a grant of a block of land resting its eastern side on the stream at the outlet of the lake, where there was a good mill privilege and water power. He immediately commenced clearing his lot, and soon after erected a dwelling-house and saw-mill, a barn and other buildings. The land proved to be of excellent quality, and rewarded his labours with abundant crops, and his saw-mill proving a source of profit, he soon found himself the possessor of a comparative competence, and long survived to be called the father of the settlement. Alexander and Thomas Grinton, sons of John, the pioneer of Springfield, obtained grants of one hundred acres each, as did also Stephen Jefferson of the same place, and Charles Bertaux, Esq., of Nictaux Falls, received a grant of two hundred acres. All these lots, save that of Bent, have changed hands and been more or less improved with success. Among those who now occupy them I cannot refrain from noting the great improvements made on the Bertaux lot by Sidney Saunders, Esq., a brother of Mrs. Bent. His neat and artistically constructed cottage is equalled by few that have been erected in any part of the county, and his barns, stables and other outbuildings bear witness to his taste and thrift.

Agriculture is the staple industry, but lumbering operations are carried on during the winter season with considerable profit. Pleasant Lake has its school-house also; but its close contiguity to the chief settlement renders it unnecessary to build a church, as they do not find it inconvenient to attend divine service there. This place is well watered and abounds in good pasturage, and the tillage lands are generally productive and fairly well tilled.

The inhabitants are in no respect behind those of the neighbouring districts in sobriety, industry and moral uprightness.

CHAPTER XVI.

HISTORY OF THE COUNTY AT LARGE, CONTINUED.

By the Editor.

Roads and bridges—Mail communications and facilities for travel improving—War of 1812—Sundry events—Election of 1836—Division of the county—Politics of the county—Responsible government—J. W. Johnstone—The college question—Recent politics—Appendix—W. H. Ray—Remarkable storms and weather—Executions in the county—A sad event.

IN 1786 some persons in Annapolis and Halifax proposed to open a road from Annapolis to St. Margaret's Bay, and asked for a grant to each of a lot half a mile wide and two miles long, that is, 640 acres, and the enterprise was favourably considered by the Government. The record of the Grand Jury during the closing years of the last, and the early years of the present century, abound in appropriations of sums of money, large for that day, as direct contributions from the taxpayers, for the construction of road and bridges, now the familiar and indispensable thoroughfares of the county. In 1786 it was voted that each town make and repair its own bridges. In that year £25 was voted for Saw-mill Creek bridge. In April, 1787, a committee was appointed to lay out a road "from Bear River to Allain's Creek." In 1792 a sum was granted for "finishing the Bridge crossing the easterly part of Wilmot and Nictaux." In April, 1793, £20 for "finishing and repairing the bridge over Moose River" was voted, and £20 more in 1796. In April, 1799, the Grand Jury nominated "three persons for commissioners for building Windsor bridge,* viz., Capt. Douwe Ditmars, Mr. John Rice, and Capt. Frederic Williams," and also nominated Robert Fitzrandolph, Ambrose Haight and Benjamin Dodge, Esquires, as "a committee for the purpose of carrying on a subscription for promoting said work." In 1800 a sum was voted to "lay out a road from Bear River bridge to Moose River bridge." In April term of the sessions in 1802, the Grand Jury approve of the manner in which £50 was "laid out" by Joshua De St. Croix on the north side of Annapolis River;

* In the County of Hants, showing this county contributing to improving communication with Halifax by a work far beyond its own boundary.

£200 by Nathaniel Parker and John Ruggles "from Mrs. Dodge's to Lovett's brook"; and £50 in Wilmot by Thomas Woodbury and John Wiswell, jun. In 1806, the expenditure of £200 by John Ruggles in 1801 on the "new road the south side of the Annapolis River beginning at the bridge near Mr. Dodge's and ending at Longley's," was similarly approved. In September, 1808, the Grand Jury presented a sum of money for laying out a road from the bridge over the Annapolis River (at Bridgetown) to the main road, by the Sheriff, William Winniett, Esq., and a jury, and £51 to John Hicks for damages to his land crossed by this road.

In April term, 1788, the sum of £8 was "allowed" by the Grand Jury "to erect a pair of stocks in each of the townships, Annapolis, Granville, Wilmot and Digby—£2 each."

We have seen (page 159) that at an early date the mails were carried to and from Halifax, partly on foot and partly on horseback, once a fortnight. Murdoch tells us that in the summer of 1786 a courier was employed by the post-office to carry letters from Halifax to Annapolis fortnightly. This was enlarged to a weekly service on horseback, in 1796, the mails closing at 5 p.m. on Mondays. On the 9th day of May, 1813, a weekly post was established between Halifax and Digby, the Legislature granting a subsidy of £200 for the purpose. The House of Assembly during the session of that year voted £200 as a subsidy for the establishment of a weekly communication between Annapolis and St. John, N.B. This sum was placed at the disposal of Thomas Ritchie and John Warwick, Esquires, to effect the object intended.

The first steamboat between Annapolis and St. John, N.B., crossed the Bay of Fundy in 1826.* Her name was the *St. John*. On February 19th, 1828, a petition of John Ward and other proprietors of the steamer *St. John*, praying for an annual grant to assist them in running her, was presented to the Legislature of Nova Scotia by Mr. Haliburton, then the member for the county. This boat finally became the property of Mr. James Whitney, of St. John, a gentleman who had married an Annapolis lady, a sister of the afterwards renowned General Williams. Mr. Whitney's name became from that time identified with the early steam navigation of the Bay of Fundy, but the public reaped the benefit of an enterprise which failed to secure wealth to its deserving promoter. The *Henrietta*, a boat of fifty horse-power, was placed on the route in 1831; she was succeeded a few years later by the *Maid of the Mist*, which, in her turn, gave way to the *Nova Scotian*, built in Annapolis County, and owned by a joint stock company.

In 1828 a tri-weekly line of stages, carrying the mails, began running from Halifax to Annapolis, the first coach starting from Halifax

The Acadian Magazine, July, 1826. Lawrence's "Footprints of St. John," p. 89.

on June 3rd of that year. The service was daily from Halifax to Windsor, and weekly from Annapolis to Digby. It seems to have dropped to twice a week from Kentville about the year 1837, but from 1841 onward, the regular tri-weekly service continued without interruption. A subsidy of £300 a year, for five years, was voted by the Legislature; reserving authority to the Governor to remit one trip per week. The fares at first were £2 10s. from Halifax to Annapolis, £1 7s. 6d. from Kentville to Annapolis, and sixpence (ten cents) a mile for way passengers.

In April, 1802, the Grand Jury "presented" the expense of a public ferry being established across the Annapolis River opposite Job Pineo's farm; and in September, 1809, they recommended £20 toward building a bridge at the same place. In April, 1807, the Grand Jury voted £20 for "building a compleat ferry boat for the use of Bear River Ferry." The first bridge to supersede this ferry was commenced in 1864, and in the autumn of 1865 was opened for traffic in presence of a large number of people from both counties, who were addressed by Hon. Avard Longley, M.P.P., William Hallet Ray, Esq., M.P.P., and others. It was built wholly at the expense of the Provincial Government, and cost about $26,000.

In 1808 Mr. Ritchie, member for Annapolis, introduced a bill to regulate negro servitude within the Province. Although it passed its second reading it never became law. During the same session Mr. Warwick, member for the township of Digby, presented a petition from John Taylor (Loyalist, Captain, and afterwards Colonel Taylor, ancestor of the Taylors of Weymouth, Digby County), and from a number of other proprietors of negro servants brought from the old provinces, stating that owing to doubts entertained by the courts, such property was rendered useless, the negro servants daily leaving their masters and setting them at defiance, and praying a measure for "securing them their property or indemnifying them for its loss." Mention of slaves is quite frequent in the records of the Grand Jury prior to this year.

In 1811 there were fifty-one justices of the peace in the county; although so long before the practice of appointing only partisans demanded an enormous increase with every change of government. But we must remember that the territorial extent of the county was very large.

In 1812 war was declared against Great Britain by the United States. In connection with this unhappy event, it is our duty to forever cherish a grateful remembrance of the noble stand taken against it by the New England people, who uttered strong and eloquent protests against the declaration of war and any invasion of the provinces; visiting those whom they called the peaceful, and to them "unoffending" inhabitants of British America with the horrors of war. When the news of the

declaration of war reached Boston all the vessels in the harbour immediately put their colours at half-mast except three, who were compelled to do so by the populace. In consequence of this fraternal and worthy feeling the Maritime Provinces were but little disturbed directly, but their foreign trade, especially that with the West Indies, was, for the time, broken up. The price of provisions, however, rose, helping the farmers in this valley by increased remuneration for their crops. Along the Canadian frontier the war raged with great virulence, and the surviving Loyalists and their sons, closely pursued by their old enemies into the wilderness refuge to which they had betaken themselves, offered a brave and bitter resistance to determined and powerful invaders. In this they were gallantly assisted by their French-Canadian fellow-subjects, whose incorruptible loyalty in the war of the revolution had saved Canada to the Empire; and the name of De Salaberry, the hero of Chateauguay, will ever be illustrious in the history of British America. The wanton destruction of Canadian towns and villages by American troops led to severe reprisals by Great Britain in the most accessible southern States after notice and warning to the American authorities; and the city of Washington itself did not escape attack and partial destruction in retaliation for the burning of "Little York," now Toronto, the capital of Upper Canada. In the summer of 1812, an American privateer came up the Bay of Fundy, and attempted a landing for predatory purposes at Broad Cove, a few miles below Digby, and was driven off by the militia. She returned in a few days, and a sharp skirmish ensued between her crew and the militia, which resulted in the capture of her captain and a prize-master, and their conveyance to Annapolis as prisoners of war. The rest of her crew of twenty-eight men escaped. But although, except in this instance, our soil was not invaded, our people suffered in their commercial interests from the depredations of American privateers; and the forcing of their industry into new channels resulted in a reaction at the close of the war that caused very serious commercial and industrial depression. The following petition for "letters of marque and reprisal" was forwarded to Sir John Cope Sherbrooke, the Governor, in July, 1813:

"The petition of Phinehas Lovett, Junior, Esq., of Annapolis, humbly showeth: That your petitioner is the sole owner of the schooner called the *Brooke*, for which he is desirous of obtaining Letters of marque and reprisal against the ships, vessels, and goods, wares and merchandize belonging to the citizens of the United States of America. That the said schooner is of the burthen of fifty-two tons or thereabouts; that she is to carry five guns, to wit, one long gun, carrying shot of nine pounds' weight, and two carronades carrying shot of nine pounds' weight, and two carronades carrying shot of twelve pounds' weight, with several swivels and musquets. That she is to be manned with a crew of thirty-five men, and that Daniel Wade (or William Smith) is to go Master. That she is to receive on board provisions sufficient for the said crew for——months.

"(Signed), PHINEAS LOVETT, JUN.

"Dated Halifax, July 2nd, 1813."

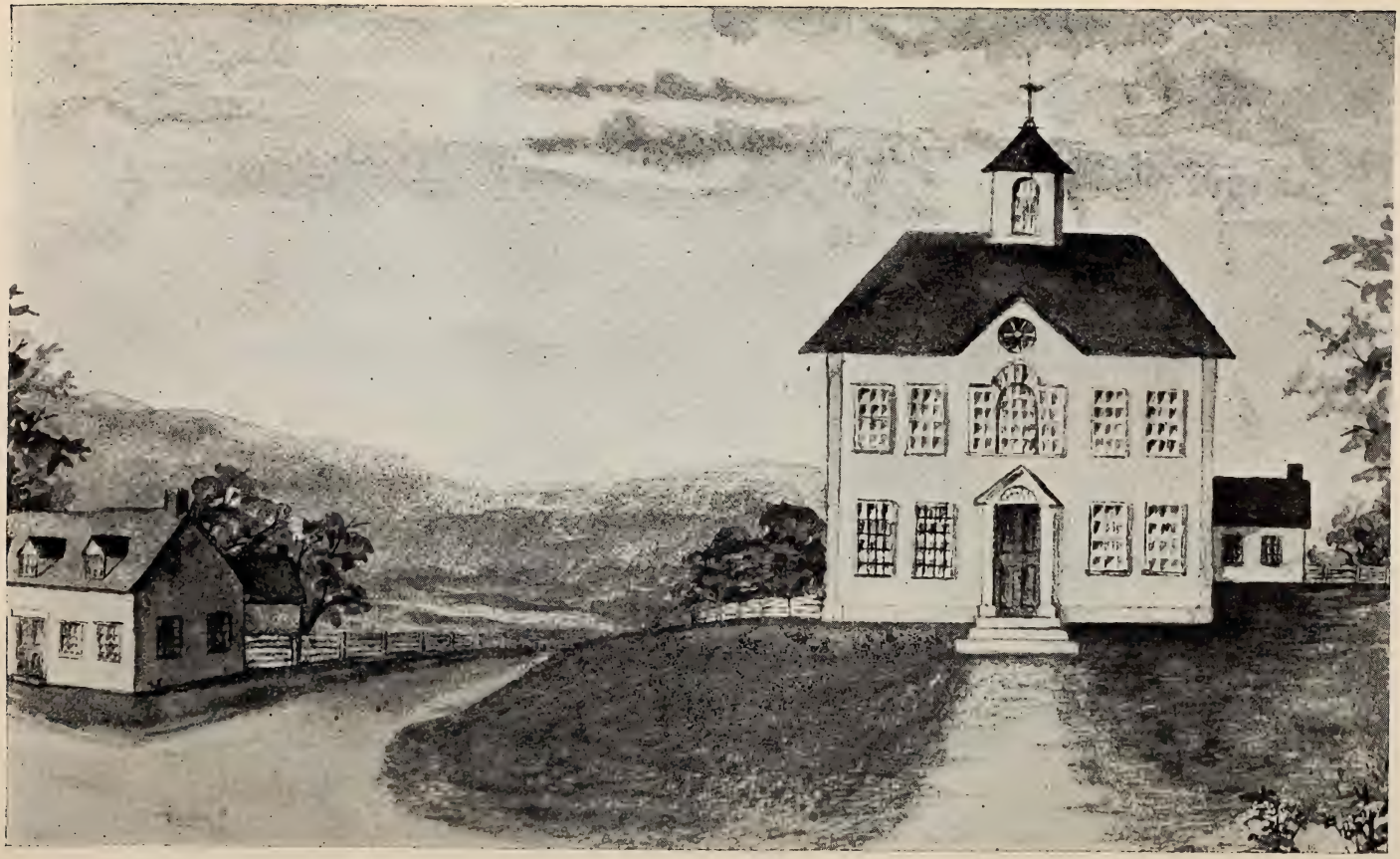
The prayer of the petition was granted by Sir John, and the commission bore date 27th September. I have not been able to trace the history of the doings of this vessel. A privateer built in Wilmot by Charles Dodge and three sons of John Gates, was captured by the enemy on her way to Halifax for her armament. Peace was concluded in December, 1815, after four years of sanguinary strife, as fruitless, except in bloodshed and bitterness, as it was uncalled for and unnecessary. Not one of the subjects which formed the grounds for the declaration of war was mentioned in the treaty of peace.

The summer and autumn of 1815 were marked by a prodigious invasion of mice.* The numbers of these vermin were truly wonderful. Nothing like it was ever seen before or since in the history of the province or county. The destruction they caused to crops was such as to threaten a famine throughout the valley. The grain and grass suffered greatly from their inroads, and they swarmed in the barns, out-houses and dwellings of the inhabitants to such a degree that traps and cats seemed alike powerless to lessen their numbers or to abate their ravages to any appreciable degree. The crops also suffered much from drought in the years 1816 and 1817. The year 1817 was remarkable for three earthquake shocks, about sunrise of May 22nd, of a severity unusual in this part of the globe. They were felt all over the county, particularly at Digby, where houses were shaken, and the people much alarmed.

At the General Sessions for November term, 1835, £50 was voted to repair the county jail, but before it could be expended the whole building was destroyed by fire, and in the ensuing session the same amount, with £450 additional, was appropriated toward building a new court-house and jail, which Mr. Francis Lecain contracted to build. Pending its erection the necessary courts were held in the new Catholic chapel, the County Academy, and vacant stores.

In November, 1836, there was a general election which, in this county, turned on the long-vexed question of the division of the county. The people of the extreme ends of the county were, of course, the most desirous of a division, while those of the town of Annapolis and vicinity were naturally reluctant to adopt a measure that might deprive them of the advantages pertaining to the residents of a shire town, and even in Digby there was no little apprehension that Weymouth might be selected as the shire town of the new county, which to the people of Digby would be less convenient than the existing arrangement. William Holland was brought forward by the people of Wilmot to run in conjunction with Frederic A. Robicheau, of Clare, who would naturally command the support of the Acadian French in the extreme west. The electors of the

*See Patterson's "History of Pictou County" for an account of this strange phenomenon in the eastern part of the Province.



THE OLD COURT HOUSE, 1791-1836.

The cottage to the left (on the site of the present Methodist parsonage), now stands, renovated, on the west side of Victoria Street, near corner of Albert.

central portions of the county supported John W. Ritchie, of Annapolis, then a rising young barrister, afterwards Solicitor-General and Judge in Equity, and William H. Roach, the favorite in Digby, who had for some years been a popular member, and a prominent and influential man in parliament, but who probably had lost some of his local influence by his removal to Halifax. James R. Lovett also ran independently. The polling lasted a fortnight and was marked by a good deal of excitement and considerable expense. The east and west combined prevailed over the strength of the central districts, and Messrs. Holland and Robicheau* were elected. In the township of Annapolis Elnathan Whitman was returned by a small majority over Joseph Fitzrandolph, who was afterwards appointed to the Legislative Council on its reconstruction in 1837 as a distinct body from the Executive. Hitherto the old Council had exercised both legislative and executive functions, and sat with closed doors, a system which the country had gradually outgrown. Through the efforts of Mr. Howe and his associates in parliament, a change was made and responsible government introduced. While we condemn the old system and the abuses to which it was subject, we must not without discrimination condemn the men who administered it. They, as a rule, if not universally, submitted gracefully to the new state of things, and most, if not all, of the members of the old council of twelve at the time of the change, were men who deserved well of the country for their wisdom and patriotism in legislation and council. It would be as reasonable to condemn popular government because occasionally a tyrannous majority wields its power unjustly to its opponents, or unwisely in respect to the public interests, or because now and then a worthy man fails to secure the influence and position to which he is entitled. Mr. Fitzrandolph resigned his seat after one session. The members of the Legislative Council then received no pay or indemnity, the position being deemed an honorary one, and hence it was sometimes difficult to get country gentlemen to hold seats in it. The new Assembly met on the last day of January, 1837, and during the session passed an Act to divide the county, much to the satisfaction of the great body of the people. Bear River for about four miles from its mouth was made the boundary line between the two counties, and this had the effect of throwing the shire town into the western part of the county so far as to leave the distance to the extreme western line but thirteen miles, or thereabouts, while to the eastern and south-eastern boundaries it exceeded forty. Hence an inevitable struggle commenced, and petitions were promptly set on foot and forwarded to the Legislature, praying that Bridgetown might be made the shire town, and counter-petitions praying

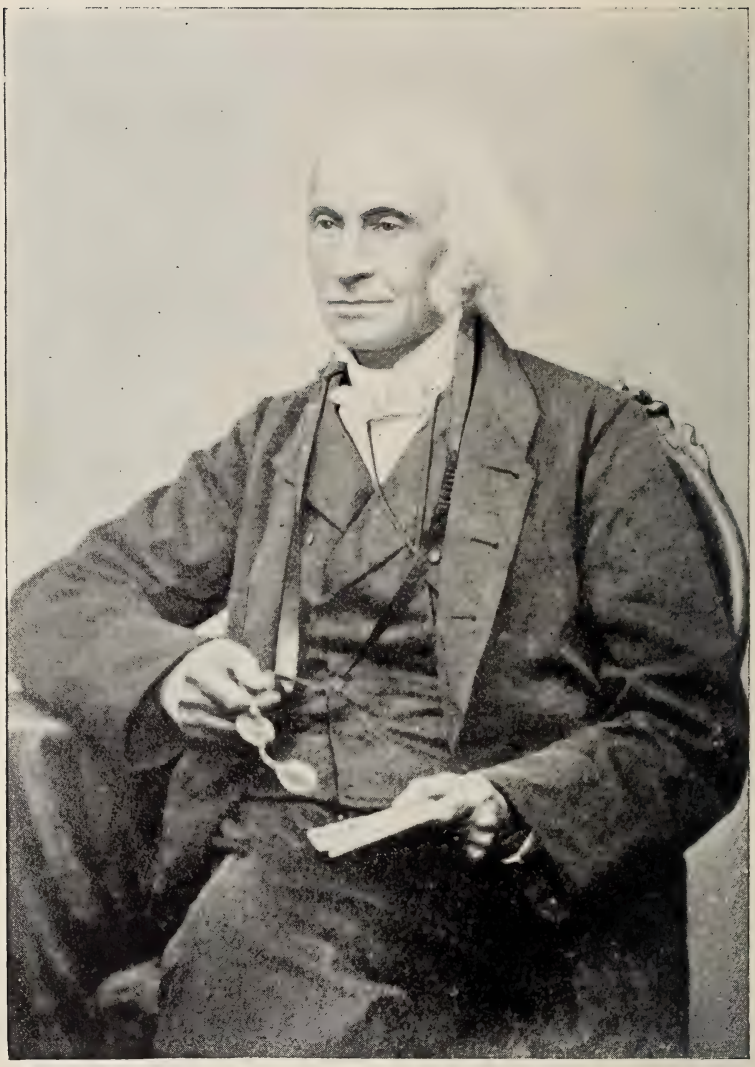
* Mr. Ritchie always complained that the French of Clare did not keep faith with him at that election.

that no change be made. Five hundred and twenty-five persons signed the petitions in favour of the change, and eight hundred and thirty-one against it. The question was temporarily decided in favour of Annapolis, but the residents in the eastern section, especially those of the thriving and enterprising village of Bridgetown, were not satisfied; until at length, in the year 1869, an Act was passed requiring the terms of the Supreme Court to alternate between the two towns. By virtue of this Act the spring term of 1870 and every spring term since has been held at Bridgetown, and the autumn term at Annapolis; and the practice has been instituted of dividing the important county offices, such as those of Sheriff, Registrar of Deeds and Prothonotary of the Courts, between the rival places. Thus, since 1870, it may be said that the County of Annapolis has had two shire towns, Annapolis Royal and Bridgetown.

The division of the county at the line adopted involved the division of the township of Clements, and that portion of the latter which was within the limits of the new County of Digby, was thenceforth known as the township of Hillsburgh. Previous to the division there were two offices for the registry of the deeds in the county—one at Digby, in which all deeds relating to real estate as far east as the eastern line of the township of Clements, were recorded; the other at Annapolis where transactions were recorded respecting lands situate eastward of the west line of Annapolis township. A knowledge of this fact is necessary to anyone searching an ancient title to land situate anywhere in the old township of Clements, east of Bear River. The area of the county, after Digby was set off, was 837,000 acres, or 1,308 square miles.

The movement for the concession of what is known as "responsible government" was at the time of the division of the county in progress throughout British America. The days when Loyalists and worthy magistrates like Elisha Budd, of Digby, and Moses Shaw, of Granville, were ordered to explain, or forfeit their commissions for presuming to sign a petition praying that the dismissal of a public officer without a hearing be reconsidered, were happily drawing to a close.* In Nova Scotia the Reform movement was under the powerful leadership of Joseph Howe. He was a Loyalist of Loyalists, by birth, training and sentiment, and thoroughly devoted to the traditions of the Empire, as well as the interests of his country. But unfortunately some of his public utterances during his differences with the Lieutenant-Governor, Lord Falkland, and even in more mature years and with riper experience, on exciting occasions when his feelings were aroused, suggested imputations to the contrary which were far from being true. It was but natural that the proposal to infuse

* See Murdoch, Vol. III., p. 264. The office of Provincial Naval Officer was certainly an Imperial one, but it is hard to conceive how such a petition could be deemed disloyal, or inconsistent with the magisterial office.



Hon. James W. Johnstone,

Lieutenant-Governor of Nova Scotia.

the principles of democracy into the institutions of the Province should meet with less favour among the Loyalists, and children of Loyalists, who had suffered from the uncontrolled fury of a populace from whom they had the misfortune to differ, and deplored the dismemberment of the Empire brought about by popular agitation in the colonies which had once afforded them free, happy and prosperous homes, than among the more numerous class who inherited the feelings of the earlier settlers from New England. And a community of Baptists, whose church polity is congregational and democratic, would be more likely to favour such a change than those accustomed to the Episcopal or Presbyterian form of church government. As a rule this distinction was fairly exemplified in the County of Annapolis, and Mr. Howe was supported by a good majority of its people, represented in the Assembly by Samuel Bishop Chipman for the county, Henry Gates for the township of Annapolis, and James Delap for the township of Granville. It must not be forgotten that Mr. Haliburton, when he represented this county as early as 1826, ten years before Mr. Howe entered the Legislature, advocated the distribution of the executive and legislative functions of the Council to two separate bodies, and Mr. W. H. Roach, another of our members, was clamorous for reform long before the days of Howe. Mr. Howe's later rival in the political arena, Honorable James W. Johnstone, meanwhile held a seat in the Legislative Council, to which, as one of the ablest lawyers and most accomplished men of his day in the Province, he had been called with the office of Solicitor-General in 1834, before the separation of the executive and legislative functions of that House. Perhaps I ought to say that in 1834 he was the ablest lawyer and most accomplished public man of that day in the Province. I have never heard or read anything to show that he ever took a stand against the concession of responsible government to Nova Scotia. His only public utterance on the subject which has to my knowledge been preserved is quoted in his memoir in another part of this book. He was in the period immediately preceding that change engaged in the active practice of his profession, and the practical duties of his office. The principle was at length accepted and recognized as part of the constitution of the Province, and Mr. Johnstone accepted the office of Attorney-General with a seat in the first Cabinet that signalized its assumption of executive authority by acknowledging through its members in the two branches of the Legislature, its responsibility to the people speaking through a majority in the popular branch. It was a coalition government in which the Hon. Joseph Howe, Hon. James B. Uniacke and Hon. James McNab, represented the Reform party, but in which sat a majority who had theretofore opposed their views; all of whom, however, were prepared to resign and give way to another Council, when they failed to command the confidence of the

House of Assembly. But a difference arose between Mr. Johnstone and Mr. Howe on the question of denominational colleges, Mr. Johnstone being warmly attached to the principle of religious education, and desirous that the Baptist institutions then lately founded at Wolfville, should receive the State aid, without which, as it then seemed, they must languish, and fail to perform the pious objects of their founders. The strength, the respectability, the social and religious influence of the Baptist body in the Province, seemed to him bound up with the school and college at Wolfville. The Church of England College at Windsor had received large grants from the public treasury for some years before its privileges were open to Dissenters. Dalhousie College had in the meantime been founded under the patronage of the nobleman of that name, who was Governor of the Province, ostensibly as an institution that was to be altogether non-sectarian; and it was the policy of Mr. Howe and his followers to make it a general university for the whole province, and to withhold public encouragement and support from any new one. The Baptist body, in their efforts to secure State aid to their institutions, seemed to receive from the Presbyterian friends of Dalhousie, very much the same obstruction which the Presbyterians themselves complained of, at the hands of the prominent members of the Church of England, in the infant days of the Presbyterian College at Pictou, after the disabilities of Dissenters at King's had been removed. In consequence of this policy the Baptists had very great difficulty even in getting their charter from the Legisture; and no doubt through the influence of Lord Dalhousie, who, when in the Province, was a warm promoter of the idea of a single central university, or of some on this side favourable to Dalhousie College, they failed to obtain the assent of Her Majesty to the name which they proposed to give it, "Queen's College." Another shock was given to the Baptists by the refusal of the governing body of Dalhousie to appoint their most gifted and able scholar, Dr. Crawley, to its classical chair, a position for which he was eminently qualified. This created the impression that although Dalhousie was to be non-sectarian in name, it was to be practically Presbyterian in its spirit and influences, or at least that no Baptist need apply for any part in its management.* Another difficulty arose between Mr. Johnstone and his colleagues about the filling up of a vacancy in the executive and legislative councils. Mr. Johnstone proposed his brother-in-law, Mr. M. B. Almon, a leading merchant of Halifax, and an able man. Mr. Howe opposed this appointment for several reasons, one being the unfair preponderance it would give to the old conservative element in the Cabinet. Lord Falkland took the

* Of course, I am not making any reflection on the *present* claims of Dalhousie to the confidence of Nova Scotians of all denominations. I am seeking to throw light on a controversy long closed, but which once profoundly agitated this county and province.

advice of Mr. Johnstone, and Messrs. Howe, Uniacke and McNab at once resigned their seats in the Cabinet and organized a resolute and determined opposition to their late colleagues, in the House of Assembly and throughout the country, which was soon the scene of great political excitement through its length and breadth. Mr. Johnstone, the better to lead his party and publicly to expound and defend the interests of his denomination so involved in the issue, resigned his seat in the Legislative Council and sought one in the lower House ; and the County of Annapolis, which had been his home in earlier days, was the constituency to which he presented himself. He was supported by the majority, but opposed by a determined minority of his brethren of the Baptist denomination in the county, was elected at a general election in 1843 by a large majority over Mr. Chipman, the former member, carried with him two supporters for the townships of Annapolis and Granville, and directed the administration of affairs with a good parliamentary majority for the next four years. During this period he had the opportunity of introducing and carrying into effect the substantial and practical reform known as the "Simultaneous Polling Act," by which the entire election is held in one day all over the Province. For this purpose the county was divided into polling districts which, as population increased, formed very convenient municipal divisions, superseding for all practical purposes the old division into townships. These districts remained substantially unchanged until the introduction of local self-government through county councils elected by the people—a measure introduced and carried by another Conservative Government, of which the Hon. Wm. B. Troop, a representative of this county, was a member, in 1879. Here I may note that the representatives of this county were always at the front in every parliamentary movement for genuine reform.

Mr. Johnstone's second term of office saw the settlement of the long-vexed "mines and minerals" question, and the equalization of the franchise by the abolition of township representation. In the sunshine of power, or in the shadow of parliamentary defeat, the county gave him an emphatic and steady support during his twenty years of active and eminently useful public life. The recent steps toward erecting a monument in honor of his younger, brilliant and more successful rival are to be commended ; but the people of the County of Annapolis owe it to themselves to see that the memory of their distinguished and venerated representative, whose practical sagacity and unselfish patriotism conferred such substantial benefits upon the Province, is not neglected in this particular. New issues were beginning to engage the minds of the people as Mr. Johnstone passed from the stage. He was succeeded by Wm. Hallet Ray, Esq., of Clementsport, who had been twice his antagonist at previous elections, and afterwards represented the county in the first three parliaments of the

Dominion. As parties have been reorganized since the Confederation of the Provinces, and the new problems incident to such a change in our condition and relations has dissolved old combinations and called new ones into existence, the county has given its support to the "Liberal" party, except in the Local Legislature from 1874 to 1882 and in the Dominion Parliament from 1878 to 1882, and again from 1886 to the present time, Mr. Mills, the present member, having been returned three times with increased majorities at each election. Meantime Hon. J. Wilberforce Longley has been continuously elected since 1882 to the Local Legislature, again associating the office of Attorney-General with the representation of the county.

APPENDIX TO CHAPTER XVI.

William Hallet Ray mentioned in the preceding pages was in his active political days one of the most energetic, as he still is one of the most popular public men of the county. Born May 25, 1825, he is a son of the late William Loutret Ray, who was born at Digby, June 10, 1781, and married May 10, 1820, Mary Magdalen Ditmars, of Clements. The father of W. L. Ray was Robert Ray, born in the parish of Dunach More, County of Donegal, Ireland, June 10, 1744, and married March 27, 1781, Rachel Ray. Having emigrated to Long Island, New York, he removed to Nova Scotia with the Loyalists, and settled near Digby. He was also father of Charles Ray, who fought under Nelson at Trafalgar, and who was his eldest son, and of James H. and Daniel, and of Robert and Gilbert T. Ray, long very prominent business men of St. John, N.B., the latter one of the large and wealthy sail-manufacturing firm of "Eaton & Ray." One daughter, Margaret, married a Mr. Hawes, and was an authoress, and another, Rachel, married a Mr. Hallet, of New York.

Mr. Ray at the age of twelve went to his uncle, James H. Ray, a physician and apothecary of New York, and remained with him nine years, but not caring to embrace that calling, he returned to Nova Scotia, settled in Clementsport and engaged in merchandise and farming: married 1848, Henrietta, daughter of Isaac Ditmars, of Clements; and very early took a strong and active part in the politics of the county. Failing by 225 votes to defeat Mr. Johnstone in 1863, on the retirement of the latter in 1864, he was elected by 232 majority over Granville B. Reed, Esq., and sworn in as a member of the Provincial Parliament, February 9, 1865. Further information as to dates and periods of his public service as member, magistrate and custos, and of his appointment to his present seat in the Legislative Council will be found in the appropriate places elsewhere. He is also Lieut.-Colonel 1st Battalion, Annapolis County militia.

In June, 1797, a terrific thunder-storm passed over the valley destroying buildings at Bridgetown and Granville Ferry. A similar storm passed over the valley on June 15, 1892, destroying many trees, and injuring and destroying buildings.

About the year 1846 or a year or so later, a sudden gale like a tornado accompanied by hail and thunder swept through the county from the westward, demolishing buildings and uprooting trees. The year 1895 was made memorable by a remarkable cyclone which, on the afternoon of Sunday, August 3rd, at 6 p.m., suddenly struck the county a mile west of Paradise and three miles east of Bridgetown, on the north side of the Annapolis River, completely wrecking the valuable farm of Daniel Messenger, and partially that of Edgar Bent; tearing up by the roots large oaks and carrying them a distance. Its track was one hundred yards wide and six miles long, moving in a north-easterly direction. About three or four years previously a similar cyclone, but much narrower in its track and shorter in its career, had struck the country near Belleisle, but did much less damage than the one just mentioned.

In the winter of 1877-78 the river was so frozen that a large steamer in the month of January discharged a cargo of coal, and was loaded with apples on the ice four miles below the town. The ice was seventeen inches thick. No account can be traced of anything of the kind happening before, except that in 1780 an ice-bridge across the river resisted the action of the tide so that persons could cross and recross to and from Granville for three days. In 1838 an ice-bridge formed enabling persons to cross to and from Granville, but the returning tide broke it up before they could get back.

In 1783 a coloured man named Ellis and his wife were, sad to relate, executed at Annapolis. They had taken refuge in a barn near the site of the skating rink, and setting it on fire, caused its destruction with its contents, and were found guilty by a jury of the crime of arson, and hanged on Hog Island. In 1784 a coloured man named Boice was executed, I do not know for what offence.

The execution of Gregory and the circumstances of his crime have been given in Chapter XV. It remains to mention two others that have occurred since. In 1863, one Norton, living near Bridgetown, murdered his wife by repeated doses of arsenic. He had some African and, it was said, some Indian blood in his veins, but would probably pass for a white man. He was of not uncomely appearance, and was an exhorter at religious meetings of coloured people. Falling in love with a white girl at service in Bridgetown, in order to put himself in a position to marry her, he conceived and persistently carried out the crime. He was tried and convicted at the October term of the Supreme Court, 1863, and executed at Hog Island the ensuing month.

Joe Nick Tebo, as he was familiarly called, the next victim of the law, was the son of one Nicholas Thibault (phonetically spelt by the English Tebo) by an English-speaking wife, probably of Lunenburg-German descent. Although he began life very poor, and with no education beyond the mere capacity to write his name, he was a very shrewd, intelligent man, and by skilful cattle trading and similar speculations he had, while yet young, accumulated some eight thousand dollars and owned a good farm at North Range, near the corner of the "French Road," so called. He had contracted with the overseers of the poor of the township of Weymouth to provide for certain paupers for a period, and had

hired a girl named Hill as a servant to assist his wife in waiting on them. This girl was one of ten illegitimate children of a wretched mother, and although only about twenty-four years old, had become far advanced in the same abandoned career, being already the mother of four. After she had been in Tebo's service for a while, it must have become evident that she was likely to, before long, give birth to a fifth. As Tebo made no public confession, it is doubtful what consideration directly moved him to commit the crime; but it was one of these three circumstances: Either he or one of his sons was responsible for the woman's condition; or he wished to put an end to what promised to be an often-recurring charge upon the taxpayers; or his contract may have required him to indemnify the overseers for all that they might be liable for during its term, and he merely wished to escape payment under it of the paltry expenses of the woman's lying-in. The first-named seemed most likely to be the real motive. This would liken the case very much to that of Munro, who was executed in St. John, in 1869, for the murder of a woman under similar circumstances. Probably pretending that he was conveying her to some new place of service, or care, he drove up to this county very early in the morning by a back road, to the Liverpool Road, and along this road to a by-road leading to a meadow near Lake View. From this by-road (leaving the vehicle by the fence) he conducted her into a little grove of spruces, and there crushed in her head with a large stone, after which he piled some brush around the body and set fire to it. As he was returning by the by-road, he was met by two ox-teams, the driver of which, seeing the smoke, went into the bushes to extinguish the fire lest it might spread and do mischief, supposing it to have been accidentally set, and to his horror discovered the crime. Tebo was soon identified as the man met coming from the locality, was arrested, tried before Judge Weatherbe at a special term of the Supreme Court held at Annapolis, on the last Tuesday of November, 1880, convicted, and executed in the precincts of the jail on the 8th day of February following.

In 1887 a sad event occurred in the county. Two boys aged 17 and 15, sons of Edward Armstrong, a well-known and esteemed citizen of Digby, in a spirit of premature independence, started from home on the night of Sunday, April 24th, leaving a note saying they were going away to earn their own living. Reaching Annapolis, they walked on the railroad track to Round Hill, and there, resuming the highway, and seeing a carriage coming, which they rightly judged was in pursuit, but unseen by its occupant, they betook themselves to the belt of woodland to the southward, apparently aiming at the Dalhousie Road, which they had perhaps seen traces of from points at a distance. The swamps, overflowed at that season, barred their progress southwardly, and they soon got lost. After wandering about until Thursday, the youngest died from cold, fatigue, and hunger; but the elder succeeded in reaching a spot where he managed to attract the notice of a dweller beyond a lake, and was rescued.

CHAPTER XVII.

RELIGION AND THE CHURCHES IN THE COUNTY.

By the Editor.

ROMAN CATHOLIC.

THE Author has remarked that Port Royal was the scene of the first introduction of Christianity into the northern part of the Continent. This occurred eleven years before the arrival of the first priest at Quebec. But in point of organization as a parish, Port Royal was the second in Canada. Here we cannot but be struck by the greater success that crowned the early efforts of the French to evangelize the Indians, as compared with their English rivals. The policy of the Puritans was to convert the Indians if they were willing to be converted, otherwise to smite them as Israel smote the heathen who barred their way to the promised land; and in the event of a war with any tribe, the converted or "praying" Indians, as they were called, became at once objects of suspicion and victims of cruelty.* Nor were the efforts of the Puritans strong or systematic, or marked by any of the spirit of self-sacrifice that not only distinguished, but made immortal the French missionaries to Acadia and Canada. Eliot, the apostle to the Indians of Massachusetts, and Thomas Tupper (a lineal ancestor of Sir Charles

* They were arrested, chained two and two, taken from their homes, and imprisoned. Anawam, who commanded in King Philip's place after the latter had fallen in the war, surrendered to Captain Church, on a promise of kind treatment; yet in spite of the prayers and entreaties of Church, he was beheaded by the Government at Plymouth. But did not Samuel hew Agag in pieces? Captain Mosely captured an Indian woman, and after getting information from her, ordered her to be torn to pieces by dogs; and he says, "She was soe dealt withal." But did not dogs eat the flesh of Jezebel? The discussions of the Puritan Divines as to the propriety of putting Philip's son to death, show how little the principle of Christian love animated them, and how unfit they were to convert the savages to Christianity. (See Thacher's "History of Plymouth," pp. 395, 396. "New England Hist. Genl. Register," Vol. XXXVII., p. 180.) Of all Protestants, the Quakers seem to have accomplished the best results among the Indians. (See "Savery Genealogy," p. 150 *et seq.*) In Nova Scotia, depredations by pirates, or other lawless English, often brought cruel retribution on innocent people. But this is the case wherever English people come into contact with savages. Witness the murder of Bishop Patteson in Melanesia in 1871. The Indians' methods in warfare were the most horrible found in the history of the human race, but reprisals did not mitigate them, while a contrary course was often known to do so. (Hannay, p. 238.)

Tupper, and in 1675 of Sandwich, in Plymouth colony), who, although not a minister, instructed a congregation of 180, stand out in honorable relief, in this connection, among the early fathers of New England. But, as a rule, Parkman's remark is as sound as it is sententious: "Spanish civilization crushed the Indian; English civilization scorned and neglected him; French civilization embraced and cherished him."* When the French had once formed an alliance with an Indian tribe, it was rarely dissolved. From the days of Membertou the Micmacs of Nova Scotia have been touchingly true and loyal to the faith delivered to their forefathers by Flesché, Biard, Massé and Duthet. Among my earliest recollections are the large groups of Indians plodding their way from their reservation at Bear River or their camps in the woods, along the St. Mary's Bay road, on the eve of the Feast of St. Anne, to receive at Church Point, Clare, the blessing of the good Abbé Sigogne. In later years there has been a church on the reservation, served by the curé at Annapolis. Massé, after the destruction of Poutrincourt's settlement, laboured in Quebec, where a monument has been erected to his memory. Among the most notable priests in this part of the Province were Louis Petit, who was missionary to the Indians and parish priest at Port Royal in 1670; Rev. M. Mandoux in 1690, and Rev. M. Gaulin, an inveterate enemy of the English, a missionary to the Indians and in charge of Port Royal in 1732. Rev. Jean Des Enclaves came to America in 1728, and was missionary at Port Royal many years, and was on terms of friendship and confidence with Mascarene. He went to France in 1753, but returned the next year, and we regret to find this truly worthy man in exile in Massachusetts, with some Acadians, in 1755. Certainly, some of the missionaries, like De la Loutre, merged their spiritual functions in a mistaken, and to the Acadians, a disastrous, zeal for the political service of the French Government; but to the great majority of them we must accord an undivided allegiance to the King of kings, and assign a shining record "in the book of life." Nor can we too harshly blame those who counselled their people not to take an unqualified oath of allegiance, when we bear in mind that they had by treaty the alternative right to remove from the country. Father Maillard and others in somewhat later years did their best to reconcile the Indians to English rule. The career of the venerated and saintly Abbé Sigogne belongs more properly to the County of Digby, where he ministered to all the returned Acadians in the western part of the Province.

Tradition says there was formerly an old church on the south shore of the river on a point or promontory running down to what is known as "Pompey's rock," a little below Goat Island. If so it was probably a

* "The Jesuits in North America," p. 44.

missionary church for the Indians at Bear and Moose rivers. The Catholic congregation in the town was annihilated by the dispersion of the Acadians, but revived with the return of some of the survivors and the general increase of inhabitants; and congregations in due time appeared at the centres of population, Annapolis and Bridgetown, and near the latter place a neat little church, sign of a healthy growth and spirit, has been erected within the last few years. Served formerly from Digby and Kentville, Annapolis County has required and had the privilege of a resident priest since 1878, when the Rev. Thomas J. Grace was stationed here. Rev. Philip Walsh, D.D., a nephew of the late Archbishop Walsh, was parish priest from 1880 to 1884, when Rev. T. J. Grace was again appointed, and in the love of his people and the respect of all, filled the position until 1891, when he was succeeded by Rev. J. Doody. Rev. John Walsh succeeded him, and was succeeded in 1895 by the Rev. Father Somers, the present incumbent.

CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

With the English domination came the chaplain of the forces for the garrison, who also ministered to the English population of the town, and after the arrival of the Massachusetts settlers, to such of them as adhered to the Church in the townships of Annapolis and Granville. The first of these was Rev. John Harrison, who was succeeded or assisted in 1724 by Rev. Robert Cuthbert, not very favourably mentioned in a preceding portion of this history. Mr. Harrison was still living here in 1732. In 1732 Rev. Richard Watts was here. He was in the employ of the S. P. G. as a school-master at Annapolis as early as 1728. He must have left Annapolis in 1738. For the next four years it is said the officers and soldiers in the garrison baptized their own children.* And we have seen that in 1752 Captain Handfield, by license from the Governor, solemnized the marriage of his own daughter. Rev. Thomas Wood, who came here from the town of New Brunswick, New Jersey, was chaplain in 1753, was appointed missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in 1764 and served with the love and respect of his flock until his death in 1778, after which Rev. Nathaniel Fisher officiated as rector until the end of 1781. The Rev. Joshua Wingate Weeks was nominal rector and garrison chaplain for two or three years, and continued unjustly to draw the salary of the latter office during several years that his brother-in-law, Mr. Bailey, did the work. Rev. Mr. Nayles, the commissioned chaplain, resided in England. The Rev. Jacob Bailey continued rector of the parish, including Granville and Clements, from his arrival in 1781 until his death in 1808. In 1782 James Forman arrived among the Loyalists

* Eaton's "Church in Nova Scotia," p. 22.

of that year. He is spoken of as a refugee "half-pay officer." He soon removed to Digby and was the first school-teacher at that place. In 1784 he became the founder at Digby of the first Sunday School ever opened on the Continent of America. He took the initial step by summoning his pupils to meet for religious instruction on Sunday. Rev. Roger Viets, a Loyalist clergyman of great ability and learning, driven out of Connecticut, who became Rector of Digby in 1786, warmly approved of Forman's work, improved upon his methods, and in a sermon published in 1789, spoke of the Sunday Schools in his parish as a settled institution, and a valuable auxiliary of the Church, and gratefully commended the encouragement given to it by the first Bishop of Nova Scotia, Rev. Charles Inglis, who assumed Episcopal functions in 1786. Forman in Annapolis County was behind Raikes, the founder of Sunday Schools, in Gloucester, England, by only two years; and it was not until 1791 that we first hear of Sunday Schools in the United States, that year witnessing their inauguration at Philadelphia by an association of Christians of various denominations, including Quakers. Rev. Cyrus Perkins succeeded Mr. Bailey as rector in 1808, and held the position until his death about 1817, when he was succeeded by Rev. John Millidge, D.C.L., until his death, about 1830.* Rev. Edwin Gilpin, a collateral descendant of Rev. Bernard Gilpin, the "Northern Apostle," and sweet spirit of the Reformation, himself the faithful and earnest champion of the principles dear to his distinguished ancestor—succeeded Mr. Millidge, and was the venerated rector of the parish until his death, September 20th, 1860. He was the father of the Very Rev. Dean Gilpin, of Halifax, who was born at Aylesford. He was succeeded by Rev. James J. Ritchie, M.A., an earnest evangelical divine, who held the position until 1891, and was succeeded by the present rector, Rev. Henry How.

Granville was separated from Annapolis in 1800, and Rev. Mr. Millidge was its rector until he removed to Annapolis in 1817. Rev. Hibbert Binney, father of the late Bishop, was rector one year, and Rev. George Best from 1815 to 1823; Rev. H. Nelson Arnold from 1823 to 1828, Rev. Jacob Whalley from 1828 to 1835, and Rev. J. Moore Campbell, a most worthy, amiable and popular minister, for the succeeding twenty-five years. Mr. Campbell well deserves a more extended notice. Rev. Henry D. De Blois was rector from 1860 to 1867, during a part of which time Rev. W. H. Snyder was vicar; Rev. Frederick P. Greatorex from 1876 to 1892, and Rev. Albert Gale from 1893 to 1896.

Rev. John Wiswall, of whom a biographical sketch will appear in the genealogies, was the first Rector of Wilmot, and was succeeded at his death by the Rev. Edwin Gilpin, who lived at Aylesford, the parish at

* See memoir of Thomas Millidge, M.P.P.



Rev. James Robertson, LL.D.,
Rector of Wilmot.

that time comprising Aylesford, Wilmot, Bridgetown, and Upper Granville, the line of division being three miles below Bridgetown. The Rev. James Robertson, to be presently mentioned more at length, became rector in 1832. His successors have been Rev. George F. Maynard, 1877 and 1878; Rev. George B. Dodwell, 1880 to 1891; Rev. J. E. Warner, 1892 to 1896. The bell in the old church at Pine Grove was the gift of William Bayard, Esq., and bears the following inscriptions: "This bell, the gift of William Bayard, Esq., 1792, to the Trinity Church at Wilmot in Nova Scotia, as by law established." "Thomas Meers, of London, fecit."

The old church at Clementsport, built by the Dutch and Hessian and other German Loyalists, was originally Lutheran, and called the "Church of St. Edward." When it was transferred to the Church of England a condition was made that a hymn in the Dutch language should be sung every Sunday morning before the beginning of the ordinary service, which was done until only two to whom that language was the vernacular survived. Doctor Fred. Boehme, who died in 1816, by his will gave the church a bell and a service of communion plate. The old bass viol which, performed on by the venerable "Squire" Ditmars, long supplied the instrumental music, is still preserved. The congregation was under the pastoral care of the rectors of Annapolis until about 1840, during the incumbency of Mr. Gilpin, when it was erected into a separate parish, of which Rev. William M. Godfrey took charge as missionary of the S. P. G. He died in 1881, since which time there have been several incumbents for short periods, Rev. J. Lockward, the present rector, succeeding the Rev. W. B. Belliss in 1895.

The parish of Bridgetown was separated from Granville in 1854, and its first rector was Rev. J. Moore Campbell, who had been rector of the old parish before its division. He died February 13, 1862, at the early age of fifty-six, and was succeeded by Rev. A. W. Millidge for about a year. Rev. Henry Pryor Almon, son of Hon. M. B. Almon, was rector several years, Rev. Augustus Sullivan for about a year, and Rev. Lewis Morris Wilkins, son of Hon. Martin I. Wilkins, and grandson of the first Judge Wilkins, was rector from 1873 to 1889; Rev. H. De Blois, 1890 and 1891, Rev. Mr. Cunningham for about eight months, succeeded at Easter, 1892, by Rev. F. P. Greatorex.

The parish of Round Hill was set off from Annapolis in 1890, and the Rev. H. D. De Blois was elected its first rector.

Rev. James Robertson was born at Strath Tay in Perthshire, Scotland, in 1802. An uncle and grand-uncle were celebrated divines, but I cannot state positively that the latter of these was the great historian. He was educated at King's College, Aberdeen, where he received the degree of M.A. in 1826, and LL.D. in 1856. On December

8, 1828, he was elected a member of "The Northern Institution for the Promotion of Science and Literature" in Inverness; was ordained priest by Dr. Skinner, Bishop of Aberdeen, at St. Andrew's Chapel in that city, June 8, 1829, having first served in deacon's orders as assistant at Meikelfield, near Inverness. He came to Newfoundland in 1829 as missionary of the S. P. G. In 1831 he married at Chiswick, Middlesex, England, Maria, youngest daughter of Major Hansard of the 69th regiment, a sister of the wife of the late Archdeacon Coster, of New Brunswick; and the next year came to Bridgetown, where he filled the office of rector of the then undivided parish, although probably not formally appointed until 1837. In 1854 he removed to Wilmot, where he died, at Middleton, January 19, 1878. He was a profound general and scientific scholar, as well as theologian, and would have been eminently useful as a professor or president of one of our provincial universities. He received a silver medal from the Mechanics' Institute, Halifax, J. Leander Starr, President, in 1835, "for the best essay on the application of science to the arts;" was author of an able treatise on "Infant Baptism," and other pamphlets and essays. A son, James C. Robertson, of the Harris-Allan Co., St. John, N.B., and a grandson, T. Reginald Robertson, a rising barrister, of Kentville, N.S., now represent the name in the Maritime Provinces.

Rev. William Minns Godfrey, who was born at Rochester, England, and baptized in the great cathedral of that city, was a son of the late Thomas Godfrey, a purser in the Royal Navy, and afterwards during the war of 1812, prize-agent at Halifax, and later, collector of customs at Lunenburg, who married a daughter of William Minns, a brother of the first wife of the Loyalist, John Howe, who by a second marriage was father of Hon. Joseph Howe. Mr. Godfrey was a faithful exponent of the doctrines of the Church of England as asserted at the Reformation, and an effective and impressive preacher of the vital truths of the Gospel; and dying suddenly October 3rd, 1881, in the sixty-seventh year of his age, left a memory that will still long be fragrant among people of all denominations in that section of the country in which he laboured with so much zeal and success.

CONGREGATIONALISTS.

The majority of the early settlers on the vacated lands of the French were of the Independent or Congregational churches of Pilgrim or Puritan New England. But not coming here, as their forefathers did to Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay, as an assertion of religious principle —each group following its spiritual leader into exile—they were not careful to bring pastors with them; and most of the few clergy who in time followed them to Nova Scotia, went back to the old provinces from sympathy with the disaffection prevailing there. The religious communities of the provinces they left had not many years before been stirred to their profoundest depths by the revivalist preaching of the Rev. George Whitefield, a Church of England minister of overpowering

eloquence, of the school of the Wesleys, and a fellow-worker with them until they deemed it necessary to denounce his extreme Calvinistic views. He, or at least those who caught his spirit and took up the work of evangelization where he left it, taught with great emphasis the eternal death of every soul who had not been sensibly and consciously converted after full conviction of sin and of deserved condemnation, followed by an absolute, divinely-given assurance of acceptance, restitution and salvation, from which, once really obtained, there could be no relapse. This system was enforced with burning zeal and the vivid invocation of the terrors of judgment, by itinerant ministers, until an enthusiasm and excitement were produced unknown before among the Christian bodies which had sprung up since the Reformation. The preachers and votaries of this movement were designated "New Lights," as distinguished from the so-called churches of the "standing order," or adherents of the "old standards" of religious faith and discipline. If I may venture to attempt a definition of the principles of those who opposed or distrusted this movement, I might approximate correctness in saying that they held that baptism was not only an admission into the outward and visible Church, but if rightly received, a means of grace; and that conversion meant simply a genuine turning from sin with contrition for the past and reform for the future; not a state to attain to once for all, but an experience to be undergone and repeated as often as the frailty of man permits him to sin. Ministers with this view loooked with disfavour on the frenzied emotions displayed under the new teachings, by those who, from the outward manifestations of inward grace in their daily walk, stood, as far as imperfect humanity could judge, just as favourable a chance for salvation as their less excited fellow-believers, and counselled a sober mean between wild enthusiasm and religious indifference. Doubtless in enforcing these views they sometimes sought to point an argument by citing the doubts entertained of each other's conversion by those whose methods were similar while they differed in doctrine.* Mr. Bailey understood these new teachers as affirming "that the most abandoned sinners are nearer to the kingdom of heaven than people of a sober, honest and religious deportment, for such, they allege, are in danger of depending on their own righteousness." From 1798 to 1801 the New Light movement swept over the country with the force and fury of a torrent; with occasional similar revivals down to a period within my own recollection, and I have sometimes in the early forties heard the terms "Baptist New Lights," and "Methodist New Lights" used to distinguish evangelists of the two denominations. The indefatigable zeal and energy of the New Lights prevailed, and many Congregational churches soon adopted the

* See an example in Dr. Smith's "History of the Methodists," pp. 157, 158.

rule of excluding from communion all who were unable to present before their brethren proof that they had actually experienced in their hearts the required change. From this it was but another step to refuse them baptism, the outward act or sign of admission into the covenant of grace, and thus Whitefield, although he never left the Church of England was* the means of immense and rapid accessions to the Baptist churches of the old provinces.

Nova Scotia was the peculiar field of a most remarkable follower of Whitefield, the Rev. Henry Alline, a Congregational minister whose powerful and impressive oratory stirred to their utmost depths the emotions of the people throughout the western counties.† Setting no value on external order, aiming only at the individual unit, and thus careless of dividing or breaking up religious communities, he and the successors whom he influenced, traversed the land, preaching with such effect that the settled pastors, failing to retain their influence over their flocks, were swept aside by the resistless wave of popular religious agitation. Old church organizations were broken up and new ones, without any guarantee of permanence or stability instituted. Here again, although Alline never professed to be other than a Congregationalist, nor thought of renouncing infant baptism, or its ordinary mode of administration among those who admit it, he sowed a seed of which the Baptist body, in respect to connexion and numbers, reaped the abounding harvest, and soon reduced chaos to order and discipline. These successors of the New Lights rejected their too pronounced antinomianism, and gradually abandoned that gloomy type of Calvinism which marked the early New England theology.

The Rev. Arzarelah Morse, born in Massachusetts in 1745, a graduate of Harvard, was the first settled Congregational minister at Granville, and was of the New Light order. He returned to the United States about the close of the century, selling the church property there and taking the proceeds with him. Nathaniel Fisher, born at Dedham, Mass., July 8th, 1742, probably the first school-master in Granville, where he lived between 1771 and 1778, was also a Congregational religious teacher and catechist, but later took orders in the Church of England, and as we have seen had charge of St. Luke's, Annapolis, after which he returned to the United States and was Rector of St. Peter's, Salem, from

* Dr. Cramp, in his "History of the Baptists," pp. 457, 463, admits this. Whitefield was the son of an innkeeper at Gloucester, graduated at Pembroke College, Oxford, and owing to the great impression his piety and ability made on the Bishop of Gloucester, he was ordained at twenty-one, two years before the canonical age. The effect of his first sermon is said to have driven some people mad with fear, but the Bishop, in reply to complaints about this, said that he hoped the madness would last till the following Sunday.

† Alline was a native of Newport, R.I., whose parents removed to Falmouth, N.S., while he was yet a boy.

February, 1782, until his death in 1812. Alline established a church or society in Granville, east of the Wade settlement, in 1780, and it became Baptist in 1790, and was probably the body out of which grew the "First Baptist Church of Annapolis." And so, as no change whatever in ecclesiastical polity or order was necessary, and Calvinistic views were common to both systems, every Congregational society or organization in the county soon, under the influences mentioned, and as if by common consent, became

BAPTIST.

The New Light Congregational churches, after they had abandoned infant baptism, continued for some time in communion with the other churches, and the adoption of "close communion" was not introduced without some friction, nor until 1809. The Church at Lower Granville was organized in 1780, at Bridgetown in 1801, at Nictaux in 1809; that of Wilmot, which included Paradise and Clements, in 1810; the Church at New Albany in 1829, at Dalhousie West, 1830; those at Wilmot Mountain, or Port Lorne, and Springfield in 1835, Upper Wilmot 1842, Parker's Cove 1854; Middleton and Milford churches in 1861; the Church at Litchfield, 1862; Lawrencetown, 1873; Annapolis Royal, 1874 (pastors in the latter, in succession, Rev. T. A. Higgins (afterwards of Wolfville), E. C. Good, F. O. Weeks, C. A. Eaton, S. H. Cain and Rev. J. G. Coulter White); at Clementsport in 1888; at Granville Ferry in 1890. In 1798 an association including both communions was held at Cornwallis, but in June, 1800, the first regular Baptist Association ever convened in the Maritime Provinces, or probably in the Dominion, was held at Lower Granville, Rev. Joseph Crandall preaching on the occasion. At the Association of 1802 the pastors of the First and Second Baptist churches in Annapolis were Rev. Thomas Handley Chipman and Rev. James Manning, respectively. At the time of the Association of 1810 Rev. James Manning was pastor of the Church at Lower Granville and Digby, and Rev. Thomas Ansley at Upper Granville. In 1812 the Nova Scotia Association was held at Upper Granville; in 1813 at Clements; in 1826 at Wilmot. In 1828 an immense impetus was given to the progress of Baptist thought and influence by the accession of a number of men of high social standing and personal and political importance, who had been trained in the Church of England, including Hon. J. W. and Dr. Lewis Johnstone, E. A. Crawley, Esq., barrister (afterwards known as Rev. Dr. Crawley), Charles Twining, J. W. Nutting and others. In 1829 Rev. I. E. Bill was pastor at Nictaux, and Rev. R. W. Cunningham, once a Roman Catholic, and later in life pastor of the Baptist Church at Digby, the father of our late townsman, Dr. A. B. Cunningham, was at Chute's Cove. In 1830 Rev. T. H. Chipman died

at Nictaux, and in 1831 Rev. Joshua Cogswell was pastor of the Lower Granville Church. In 1833 the Association met at Bridgetown. At this time Annapolis and Upper Granville were still one Church. The names of those just mentioned, and of Rev. Harris Harding,* Rev. Thomas Handley Chipman (a close follower of Alline), Edward and James Manning, Thomas Ansley and Joseph and Stephen Crandall—some of them of but little educational culture, but the majority of them of rugged intellect and all fired with a burning zeal—are closely identified with the planting and fostering of the early Baptist churches in this county. Nor should the names of Revs. George Armstrong, Nathaniel Vidito, Israel Potter, E. M. Saunders, D.D., A. S. Hunt, Superintendent of Education for Nova Scotia, Maynard, Obadiah and W. L. Parker, Ebenezer Stronach and James Austen Smith be omitted in calling the long roll of Baptist worthies who have been connected with this county by birth or by ministerial labour within its borders.

METHODIST.

In July, 1782, the Rev. William Black, the silver-tongued apostle of early Methodism in the Maritime Provinces, visited the county and preached with fervor and effect at Annapolis, Granville and Wilmot. Among his converts were Samuel Chesley, afterwards known as Samuel Chesley, sen., then a youth of about eighteen, but afterwards to become the father of the Rev. Robert Ansley Chesley, whom I will notice presently. After the arrival of the Loyalists Mr. Black made a second visit extending to Clements and Bear River, and formed small societies at each of the places named. In 1791 the Rev. John Cooper was placed in charge of these societies. He lived on, and owned the lot by which the familiar use of his name was long perpetuated in the town. His career was chequered, and finally he lost the confidence of his brethren. He was succeeded as superintendent by Rev. Wm. Grandin. The Rev. Freeborn Garretson, a native of Maryland, who, like most of the early Methodists, drew the rich draughts that nourished his spiritual life from the bosom of the Church of England, visited Wilmot, Granville, Annapolis and Digby in 1785. Before commencing his work he called on Dr. Breynton, the Rector of St. Paul's, in Halifax, who gave him much encouragement, and promised him all the assistance in his power. In the same year, Black, ever "in labours abundant," was again in the county. In 1786 one hundred members were reported at Granville, Annapolis and Digby. Black was again in Annapolis in 1792, composing difficulties that had

* For sketches of this remarkable man from different religious standpoints, see Bill's "Fifty Years with the Baptists," and Campbell's "History of Yarmouth County."

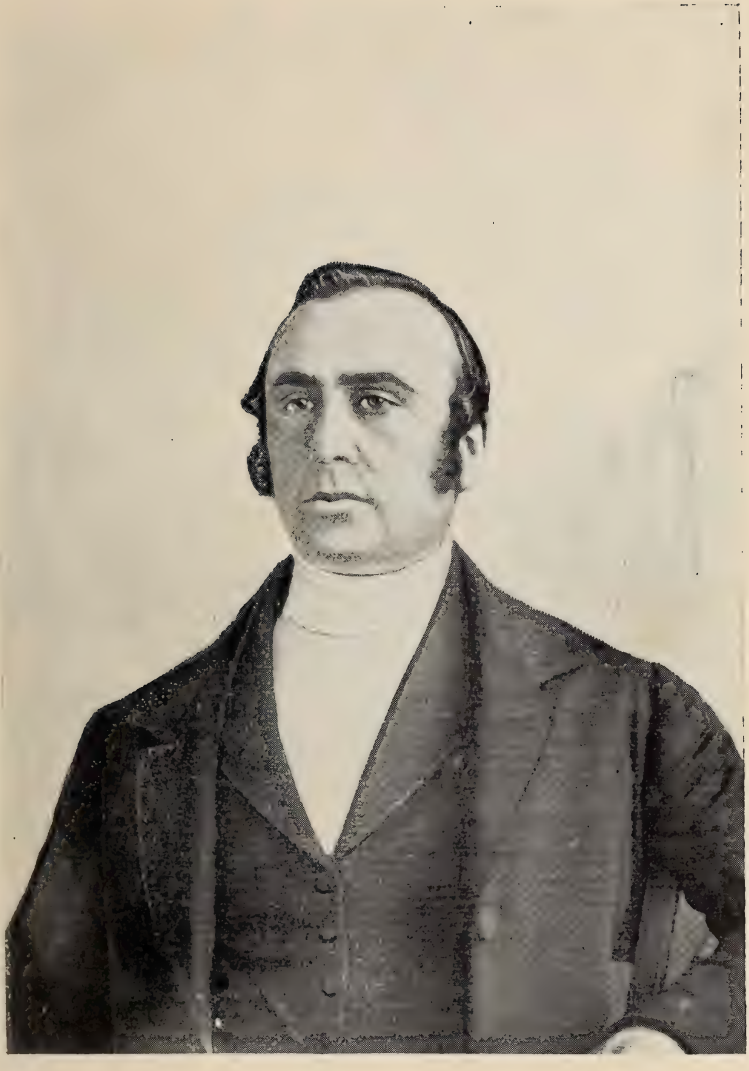
arisen out of the affairs of Cooper. Rev. Daniel Fidler, who had entered the ministry when a lad of eighteen, came to Annapolis in 1794, and was followed next year by William Grandin, a native of New Jersey. Visits to the county were also made about this time by Rev. Messrs. Black, Garretson, Whitehead, McColl and James Mann. At this period the name of Bonnett appears among those who professed to have received salvation through Methodist agency—Isaac, the father of the late Sheriff Bonnett, himself long a devoted Methodist and hospitable entertainer of the Methodist missionaries. The first Methodist church in Annapolis was built in 1798, and it is supposed there was one in Granville earlier. The conference of 1802 was held at Annapolis, when Mr. Black's intended removal to England was considered and deprecated. The most notable convert of this period was Col. Bayard, of whom we have already heard in connection with the history of Wilmot, and who thenceforth forsook a career of careless indifference about religious matters, abandoned all sinful indulgences, and became a Christian of the brightest character. One of his sons, Doctor Samuel V. Bayard, continued in communion with the Methodists all his days, but the other members of the family either remained in or returned to the Church of their fathers and of Wesley. They settled in St. John, N.B., where they were men of social and professional eminence. Of Rev. Stephen Bamford the writer retains some recollections. He was a very remarkable man, born in 1770 and a soldier of the 29th regiment. He had great talent as a preacher and strong personal magnetism, and laboured at Annapolis and Digby from 1803 until his death in 1848 with wonderful effect. From 1800 to 1820, besides Mr. Bamford, this circuit, which extended from Horton to Digby, was at various periods superintended by Revs. Joshua Marsden, William Sutcliffe, James Priestly, William Bonnett, William Croscombe, James Dunbar, Adam Clarke Avard, Sampson Busby* and John Snowball. In 1819, when Mr. Busby was superintendent, there were 250 members in this circuit. Rev. A. C. Avard was a son of Rev. Joseph Avard, who bore his French name as a native of Guernsey. The father, who was a disciple of the celebrated Doctor Adam Clarke, came to Prince Edward Island in 1806, and laboured as a Methodist missionary in that province and in New Brunswick and Nova Scotia. The son at first studied law, but abandoned it for the gospel ministry, in which he was a strong, active and popular worker. He died in 1821 at Fredericton, whither he had removed from Annapolis the previous year. A union meeting for mutual edification promoted by Col. Bayard, was held at Nictaux in September, 1817, at which five Methodist ministers, Rev. Messrs. Bennett, Croscombe, Busby, Priestly and Avard,

* Mr. Busby was the father-in-law of William Smith, Esq., long Deputy Minister of Marine and Fisheries of Canada.

with two of the leading Baptist ministers, Revs. T. Handley Chipman and Ansley, took part. The years 1838 and 1839 witnessed great accessions to the Methodist Church at Nictaux, and the Pine Grove church was about that time built. Andrew Henderson, already noticed, was from 1832 onward, a strong pillar of Methodism in Annapolis, as for many years later his son George was in Digby. He first taught school in Wilmot, where in 1821, thirty-six years later than Forman in Digby, he followed the example of Forman by establishing a Sunday School, one of the earliest in that section of the county. In Annapolis he kept for some years a boarding school at Albion Vale,* west side of Allain's creek, where many prominent Methodists, lay and clerical, received a sound preparatory training. He was an able magistrate and postmaster, and always amply adorned his profession as a Christian, a living "epistle known and read of all men."

No worthier name appears in the long roll of those able ministers of the Gospel who claim this county as their birth-place than that of the Reverend Robert Ansley Chesley. He was the second son of Samuel Chesley, Esq., by a second marriage, and his mother was Louisa, daughter of Phineas Lovett, Esq., of Round Hill. (See Chesley and Lovett genealogies.) He was born in Granville, in 1816, and after his ordination he exercised his ministerial office on various stations within this conferernce and at Bathurst, N.B., his last circuit in his native province being at Digby. He died November 27th, 1856, at St. John's, Newfoundland, where he had been appointed about six months previously to the office of superintendent of the circuit; the disease which so prematurely terminated a career which promised so much, being a malignant fever contracted while discharging his ministerial duties. Such was the esteem in which he was held in that city, that a fund of about four hundred pounds sterling was promptly subscribed for the benefit of his widow and orphans, the list being headed by the then Bishop of the Diocese, whose Archdeacon had received ministerial visits and religious consolation on his death-bed from Mr. Chesley. He married in 1848 Hannah Albee, and had four children, three sons and a daughter, of whom the eldest son, Samuel A. Chesley, Esq., is Judge of Probate at Lunenburg, and a leading Methodist layman.

* I suspect that Rev. Dr. Smith, to whose personal courtesy as well as his valuable "History of Methodism in Eastern British America," I am largely indebted for most of the facts mentioned in this sketch, was misinformed when he says opposition to Mr. Henderson as a Methodist drove him from the town to Albion Vale for a site for his boarding school. The townspeople much appreciated Mr. Henderson as a teacher, and would hardly object to a boarding school in their midst either on commercial or religious grounds. Albion Vale would be a healthy locality, and one where the boys would be kept more free from bad associations.



Robt A. Chesley

Rev. Robert Ansley Chesley.

PRESBYTERIAN.

No doubt there was quite a sprinkling of people attached to the Presbyterian order of faith and worship from Scotland and the North of Ireland among the early settlers in the county, but these were absorbed in the other religious bodies around them. With the more recent accessions of population others came in greater numbers and with more cohesiveness, not only from Scotland, but from the eastern parts of the Province, where the Presbyterian body has always been strong. At length, in 1858, the first Presbyterian congregation was organized at Annapolis, the following being among its promoters: the late George Runciman, a native of Haddington, Scotland, long a leading merchant of the town; the late Wm. M. Forbes, the late James Gray, and the late Arthur King. A church was soon commenced which was finished for worship about 1862. By the year 1870, a church edifice at Bridgetown was found necessary, and a pretty brick church and manse were erected there, conspicuous and comely features of the town. The first settled pastor was Rev. J. A. Murray, who was sent here in 1857, and afterwards removed to London, Ont., where he died. He was an able preacher, as was also his successor, Rev. D. S. Gordon, whose pastorate began in 1862. He was succeeded by the Rev. W. H. Gray in 1879, and the Rev. R. S. Whidden in 1894.

ADVENTISTS.

Revivals in the western part of the Province were much stimulated in the later thirties and early forties of this century by the startling predictions of William Miller, a soldier-farmer of Massachusetts, of little learning, but of strong natural powers of mind, who had devoted himself to the study of Scripture prophecy, and announced as a result that the stupendous cataclysm which was to inaugurate the final judgment would occur in 1843. Among the writer's earliest recollections was the singular appearance of the snow one winter night, suffused with a strange reddish tint, apparently caused by a similar red appearance of the moon. This phenomenon, which must have been widely noticed, he declared was the fulfilment of the prophecy that the moon in the last days should be "turned into blood"—an unusually dark day quite a number of years before, and the grand meteoric shower of 1833, being the other portents promised in Joel ii. 31, and Matthew xxiv. 29. Among the rural population the excitement as the year drew nigh and at length dawned became intense; and a sudden and more than commonly brilliant flash of the aurora borealis, or the blaze of a bright meteor darting across the sky, or the reflection from the flame of a burning chimney in the neighbourhood starting up through the darkness of the night, was hailed by the nervous with terror or

delight as the outburst of the fire that was to consume a guilty world, and bring man face to face with eternal weal or woe.* Time wore on, and the year rolled away like its predecessors into the shadowy past; but a new body of Christians called Second Adventists arose out of the agitation, and in the early sixties included quite a number of respectable adherents on the county line between Digby and Annapolis, who were ministered to by a settled pastor. One of the doctrines of the denomination pronounced war unlawful, and so when the militia were called out in 1866, to which year fresh calculations had postponed the grand event, they refused to obey the summons, and the Digby jail was filled with prisoners who preferred that martyrdom to drilling in the ranks; and eagerly distributed their pamphlets and charts through the bars of the jail window. Another of their beliefs is that at death the whole person dies—body, soul and spirit —to be revived at the general resurrection; so that the judgment must be experienced at the next instant of consciousness after death, and that the punishment of the wicked will be a second death, by fire, and not everlasting suffering. A branch of this organization called the Seventh Day Adventists claims some followers near Annapolis, who were visited by Rev. Mr. Farman in 1894 and 1895.

Additions to Nomenclature.—Three Christian names have been common in the county and peculiar to it, which are now handed down from father to son and uncle to nephew, while in most cases those who bear them do not know how their application as "given names" originated. Millidge perpetuates the memory of Rev. John Millidge; Ansley, the Rev. Thomas Ansley; and Avard, the Rev. Adam C. Avard. Rev. T. Handley Chipman and Rev. J. Moore Campbell have been much honoured in the same way.

* The story of "A Little Millerite," Vol. XI., *Century Magazine*, 1886, p. 307, vividly recalled and illustrated my own experience of the effect of this agitation on the minds of children.

CHAPTER XVIII.

By the Editor.

Lists of public officers—Justices of the Peace—Members of the Legislature, etc.—Census statistics—The Apple Trade.

IN early days there was a Provost Marshall for the whole province. An Act for the appointment of a High Sheriff for each county passed in 1778, and in 1780 received the assent of the Crown on condition that the Provost Marshall, Fenton, should receive a pension, and probably came into operation in 1781 or 1782. For many years the sheriffs were selected annually by the Lieutenant-Governor out of a list of three suitable men in each county prepared by the Chief Justice. In later times, and until 1883 the list was prepared by the Chief Justice and a Judge of the Supreme Court, or two judges selected by the Chief Justice, in conjunction with a committee of two of the Executive Council. The first trace we have of the office in the County of Annapolis shows that PHINEAS LOVETT, JUN., was High Sheriff from April to June, 1782. We cannot supply the name or names for the next two years. In 1784 ROBERT TUCKER was appointed. He was, no doubt, the Loyalist physician and surgeon mentioned in Sabine, Vol. II., p. 366 and appendix. After his death, about the year 1790, ROBERT DICKSON seems to have been appointed, and from this time to about 1806 he or WILLIAM WINNIETT received the appointment each year. The records are obscure and imperfect, and the contemporary almanacs are not all preserved. In 1792, WILLIAM WINNIETT; in 1794, WILLIAM WINNIETT; in 1797 and probably continuously until 1803, ROBERT DICKSON; in 1806, probably a year or two earlier, WILLIAM WINNIETT was again appointed and held the office until a few weeks before his death, December 4th, 1824, except during the year 1820, when JOHN BURKETT was Sheriff. He died in 1821, and in 1822, according to the Nova Scotia calendar, ALEXANDER BURKETT was Sheriff, but according to the Farmer's almanac, WILLIAM WINNIETT. In 1824 (October 30) EDWARD H. CUTLER was appointed, and annually thereafter until December 1, 1847, inclusive, his deputy at Digby, JACOB ROOP, succeeding him in the new county in 1837. Mr. Cutler was afterwards

Registrar of Deeds many years. In 1848 (December 12) Welcome Wheelock was appointed, and annually until December 12, 1855, when he was again appointed and died in office. In 1856 (June 27) Peter Bonnett was appointed, and on December 2, and annually thereafter until April 4, 1881, when he was appointed for the ensuing year. In 1882 (March 10) Augustus Robinson, M.D., was appointed and held office until 1883 (July 19), when Peter Bonnett was again appointed, but resigned July 5 of the same year. In 1884 (March 5) J. Avard Morse was appointed, and held the office until his death, January, 1895. In 1895 Edwin Gates, Chief Deputy, served as High Sheriff until August 13, 1896, when his commission was issued.

Judges of Probate.

In early times the Governor-in-Council granted probate of wills and letters of administration.

In 1767, Jonathan Hoar was Surrogate Judge of Probate for the County of Annapolis.

In 1776 Joseph Winniett was appointed Judge of Probate.

In 1796 William Winniett was appointed.

In 1810 Elkanah Morton was appointed for the Western District and held the office until the division of the county, and then continued judge for the new County of Digby.

In 1824 (December 13) Thomas C. Haliburton was appointed for the Eastern District and filled the office until 1829.

In 1829 Edward H. Cutler was appointed.

In 1842 George S. Millidge, who died December 7, 1865.

In 1866 Edward Cutler Cowling, who died January 21, 1895.

In 1895 (January 25) Jacob M. Owen was appointed.

Members of the Legislative Council, Residing in Annapolis County.

Hon. Joseph Fitzrandolph, appointed 1838.

Hon. Alfred Whitman, appointed 1857.

Hon. William Cagney Whitman, appointed 1861.

Hon. George Whitman, appointed 1881.

Hon. William Hallet Ray, appointed 1887.

By Royal ordinance the prefix "Honourable" is applied to members of the Legislative Council appointed before the union of the provinces in the year 1867. To others it is given by courtesy only.

Members of the Provincial Parliament.

The first Assembly met October 2nd, 1758, but although the township of Annapolis was allotted a member, it was not represented.

1759. County, Jonathan Hoar and Erasmus James Phillips.

1761. County, Joseph Woodmas, John Steele. Township—Annapolis, Joseph Winniett, Thomas Day.

1765. County, Joseph Winniett, John Harris. Townships—Annapolis, Jonathan Hoar; Granville, Henry Munroe. In 1768, John Hicks in place of H. Munroe, resigned.

1770. County, Phineas Lovett, Joseph Patten. Townships—Annapolis, Obadiah Wheelock; Granville, John Harris.

1772. Granville, Christopher Prince, in place of John Harris.

1775. County, William Shaw, John Hall. Townships—Annapolis, Phineas Lovett, jun.; Granville, Christopher Prince.

1776. County, Phineas Lovett and John Hall. They did not serve.

1777. County, William Shaw, Henry Evans. Townships—Annapolis, Phineas Lovett, jun.; Granville, Christopher Prince.

1782. County, John Ritchie, in place of Henry Evans, died.

1784. Township of Annapolis, Stephen De Lancey, in place of Phineas Lovett, jun.

1785. County, Thomas Barclay, David Seabury. Townships—Annapolis, Stephen De Lancey; Granville, Benjamin James.

There had until this year been no general election since 1770.

1787. Township of Digby, Major Thomas Millidge.

1789. County, Thomas Barclay, Alexander Howe. Townships—Annapolis, Colonel James De Lancey; Granville, Benjamin James; Digby, Thomas Millidge.

1793. County, Thomas Millidge, James Moody. Townships—Annapolis, Thomas Barclay; Granville, Alexander Howe; Digby, Henry Rutherford.

1800. County, Thomas Millidge, James Moody. Townships—Annapolis, Phineas Lovett, jun.; Granville, Edward Thorne; Digby, Henry Rutherford.

1806. County, Thomas Ritchie, Henry Rutherford. Townships—Annapolis, Thomas Walker; Granville, Isaiah Shaw; Digby, John Warwick.

1812. County, Thomas Ritchie, Peleg Wiswall. Townships—Annapolis, John Harris; Granville, Isaiah Shaw; Digby, John Warwick.

1819. County, Thomas Ritchie, John Warwick. Townships—Annapolis, Thomas Ritchie (son of Andrew); Granville, Timothy Ruggles, jun.; Digby, William Henry Roach.

1820. County, Thomas Ritchie, Samuel Campbell. Townships—

Annapolis, John Robertson; Granville, Timothy Ruggles; Digby, William Henry Roach.

1825. County, Abraham Gesner, in place of Thomas Ritchie.

1827. County, Thomas Chandler Haliburton, William Henry Roach. Townships—Annapolis, James R. Lovett; Granville, Timothy Ruggles; Digby, John Elkanah Morton.

1829. County, John Johnstone, in place of Thomas C. Haliburton.

1830. County, William H. Roach, John Johnstone. Townships—Annapolis, James R. Lovett; Granville, Timothy Ruggles; Digby, Charles Budd.

1831. Township of Granville, James Delap, in place of Timothy Ruggles.

1836-37. County, Frederic A. Robicheau, William Holland. Townships—Annapolis, Elnathan Whitman; Granville, Stephen S. Thorne; Digby, James B. Holdsworth.

1841. County, Samuel B. Chipman. Townships—Annapolis, Henry Gates; Granville, Stephen S. Thorne.

1844. County, Hon. James W. Johnstone. Townships—Annapolis, Alfred Whitman; Granville, S. S. Thorne.

1847. The same, re-elected.

1851. The same, re-elected.

1855. County, Hon. James W. Johnstone. Townships—Annapolis, Moses Shaw; Granville, S. S. Thorne.

1857. Township of Granville, Timothy D. Ruggles, in place of S. S. Thorne.

1859. County, Hon. James W. Johnstone, Moses Shaw, Avard Longley; Township representation having been abolished.

1863. County, Hon. James W. Johnstone, Avard Longley, George Whitman.

1865. County, W. H. Ray, in place of Hon. J. W. Johnstone.

The members of the House of Commons since the Confederation of the provinces in 1867 have been:

William Hallet Ray, 1867-1878.

Avard Longley, 1878-1882.

Wm. Hallet Ray, 1882-1886.

John Burpee Mills, 1886-1896.

The members of the Provincial Legislature have been:

Hon. J. C. Troop (Speaker) and David C. Landers, September 18, 1867, to December, 1874.

Hon. Avard Longley and Hon. Wm. Botsford Troop, December, 1874, to September 15, 1878.

Hon. W. B. Troop, M.E.C., and Caleb W. Shafner, September 15, 1878, to June 20, 1882.

Hon. J. Wilberforce Longley (Attorney-General) and Henry Munroe, from June 20, 1882, to June 15, 1886.

Hon. J. W. Longley and Frank Andrews, from June 15, 1886, to May 15, 1890.

Hon. J. W. Longley, from May 15, 1890, to March 15, 1894.

Harris Harding Chute, from May 15, 1890, till his death in March, 1892, and Henry Munroe from June, 1892, to March 15, 1894.

Hon. J. W. Longley and Joseph A. Bancroft, from March 15, 1894, to the present time.

The undernoted list* contains the names, so far as ascertained, of all those persons who have been in the Commission of the Peace from 1750 to the year 1837, when the county was divided; and also the names of all the Justices of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas since its institution in 1762, to its abolition in 1840. It has been arranged alphabetically for the convenience of the reader.

NAMES.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Origin.	Residence.
†Allen, Col. James	J. P.	1784	J.C.C.P.	..	‡Loyalist	
Barclay, Thomas (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1784	J.C.C.P.	..	Loyalist	
Bonnell, Isaac	J. P.	1784	J.C.C.P.	1794	"	
Benson, Christopher	J. P.	1794		..	"	
Brown, Major Isaac	J. P.	1784		..	"	
Bannister, Thomas	J. P.	1785		..	"	
Budd, Elisha	..	.	J.C.C.P.	1806	"	
Benson, Charles	J. P.	1786		..	"	
Benson, Christopher, jun	J. P.	1815		..	"	
Bonnell, Wm. F.	..	1810		..	"	
Boyce, Jacob	J. P.	1818		..	"	
Bayard, Samuel V.	J. P.	1803		..	"	
Bent, John	J. P.	1833		..	Pre-loyalist	
Bent, William	J. P.	1819		..	"	
Budd, Charles (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1832		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Chesley, Benjamin	J. P.	1784		..	Pre-loyalist	
Chipman, Samuel B.	J. P.	..		..	"	
Campbell, Samuel (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1819		..	Loyalist	
Cornwell, Thomas	J. P.	1793		..	"	
Chesley, Samuel	J. P.	..		..	Pre-loyalist	
Chipman, Major	J. P.	..		..	"	

* This list was compiled by the deceased author. It must be remembered that the Justices of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas were not Lawyers by profession. In 1824 the Province was divided into Districts, and a Barrister of the requisite standing appointed to preside as Chief Justice of the Court in each District, with enlarged jurisdiction, the lay judges being still retained for certain duties.—[Ed.]

† Founder of the Allen settlement.

‡ The word "Loyalist" here means that the Justice was a Loyalist, or a descendant of a Loyalist, of the revolution; the word "Pre-loyalist," that he was an earlier settler, or a descendant of one.—[Ed.]

NAMES.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Origin.	Residence.
Chipman, John Hueston	J. P.	1835		..	Pre-loyalist..	
*Cutler, Ebenezer	J. P.	..		..	Loyalist	
Campbell, Colin, sen	J. P.	1832		..	"	
Chesley, Samuel	J. P.	1826		..	Pre-loyalist..	Granville.
Ditmars, Douwe	J. P.	1800		..	Loyalist	
Doucet, Aimable	J. P.	1793		..	French	
Doucet, Samuel	J. P.	1810		..	"	
De Lancey, Col. James (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1784	J.C.C.P.	1784	Loyalist	
De Lancey, William	J. P.	1810		..	"	
Demolitor, Lewis	J. P.	1784		..	"	
Dodge, Benjamin	J. P.	1796		..	Pre-loyalist..	
Ditmars, John H.	J. P.	1834		..	Loyalist	
Dyson, George	J. P.	1760	J.C.C.P.	1761	Pre-loyalist..	
Dunn, John	J. P.	1771		..	" ..	
Evans, Henry (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1761	J.C.C.P.	1761	Pre-loyalist..	
FitzRandolph, Robert	J. P.	1793		..	Loyalist	
FitzRandolph, Joseph	J. P.	1834		..	"	
Fowler, Alexander	J. P.	..		..	"	
FitzRandolph, John	J. P.	1817		..	"	
Goldsbury, Samuel	J. P.	1785		..	Loyalist	
Hamilton, Andrew	J. P.	1772		..	Pre-loyalist..	Granville.
Hecht, Frederic William	J. P.	1794		..	Loyalist	Digby.
How, Edward	J. P.	1785	J.C.C.P.	1785	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Hill, Richard	J. P.	1784		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Hall, John (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1763		..	Pre-loyalist..	Granville.
Hodges, John	J. P.	1787		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Hains, Bartholomew	J. P.	1818		..	"	Digby Neck.
Hoar, Jonathan (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1754	J.C.C.P.	176–	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Hall, James	J. P.	1810		..	" ..	Granville.
Hannan, Anthony	J. P.	1828		..	Immigrant ..	Annapolis.
Hughes, John F.	J. P.	1819		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Hall, Samuel	J. P.	1826		..	Pre-loyalist..	Granville.
Handfield, John	J. P.	1751		..	" ..	Annapolis.
Hankinson, Reuben	J. P.	1806		..	Loyalist	Sissiboo.
Howe, Alexander (M.P.P.)	J. P.	..	J.C.C.P.	1793	Pre-loyalist..	Granville.
Hicks, Weston	J. P.	1818		..	" ..	Annapolis.
Hall, James	J. P.	1832		..		
James, Benjamin (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1783		..	Loyalist	Granville.
Jones, Josiah	J. P.	1785	J.C.C.P.	..	"	Sissiboo.
Jones, Simeon	J. P.	1793		..	"	"
James, Thomas	J. P.	..		..	English	Granville.
Jones, Stephen	J. P.	1785		..	Loyalist	Sissiboo.
Jones, Charles	J. P.	1817		..	"	Digby.
Jones, Cereno Upham (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1817	J.C.C.P.	..	"	Sissiboo.
Jones, William	J. P.	1819		..	"	Clements.
Kysch, George Anthony	J. P.	1784		..	Loyalist	Clements.
Katherns, Samuel	J. P.	1777		..		
Kerin, Terrance	J. P.	1786		..	Loyalist	Digby.

* Clerk of the Peace.

NAMES.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Origin.	Residence.
Lovett, Phineas, jun. (M.P.P.).	J. P.	1790		..	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Lovett, Phineas (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1770	J.C.C.P.	1806	" ..	"
Lovett, Phineas, jun.	J. P.	1819		..	" ..	"
Leonard, Seth	J. P.	..		..	" ..	Wilmot.
Lovett, James Russell (M.P.P.).	J. P.	1834		..	" ..	Annapolis.
Morrison, John, jun.	J. P.	1771		..	Pre-loyalist..	
Mills, Francis	J. P.	1833		..	" ..	Granville.
Munro, Col. Henry	J. P.	176-		..	" ..	Wilmot.
McNeil, Neil	J. P.	1785		.	Loyalist	Digby.
Millidge, Thomas, Custos (M.P.P)	J. P.	1793	J.C.C.P.	1810	"	Granville.
McCarthy, Charles W.	J. P.	..		..	"	Digby.
Morton, Elkana	J. P.	1803	J.C.C.P.	1817	Pre-loyalist..	"
Millidge, Rev. John	J. P.	1817	J.C.C.P.	1817	Loyalist	Annapolis.
Morehouse, John	J. P.	1806		.	"	Digby.
McNeil, William	J. P.	1794		..	"	"
Morton, John Elkana (M.P.P.).	J. P.	1819	..	..	Pre-loyalist..	"
Marshall, William	J. P.	1834		..	"	Wilmot.
Millidge, John	J. P.	1835	..	..		
Nichols, David	J. P.	18—		..		
Neily, Robert	J. P.	..		..	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Prince, Benjamin	J. P.	1790		..	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
*Phillips, Erasmus James	J. P.	1759		..	" ..	"
Pineo, Peter	J. P.	1781		..	" ..	Granville.
Prince, Christopher	J. P.	1770		..	" ..	"
Patten, Joseph	J. P.	1763		..	" ..	Granville.
Parker, Thomas	J. P.	..		..		
Potter, Benjamin	J. P.	1834		..	Loyalist	Clements.
Perkins, Rev. Cyrus	J. P.	1810	J.C.C.P.	1810	Immigrant ..	Annapolis.
Phinney, Zebulon	J. P.	1834		..	Pre-loyalist..	Wilmot.
Payson, Elisha	J. P.	1834		..		
Quereau, Joshua	J. P.	1819		..	Loyalist	Granville.
Robertson, James	J. P.	1826		..		
Ross, Wm., Lieut. R.N.S. Regt.	J. P.	1816		..		
Ritchie, Andrew	J. P.	1799		..	Loyalist	Annapolis.
Ruggles, Richard, jun.	J. P.	1790		..	"	Clements.
Ritchie, Thos. (M.P.P.) (son of Andrew)	J. P.	1819		..	"	Annapolis.
Ritchie, John	J. P.	1779	J.C.C.P.	1786	Pre-loyalist..	"
Robinson, John	J. P.	18—		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Randall, William	J. P.	183-		..		Wilmot.
Reid, John	J. P.	1817		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Richardson, Philip	J. P.	1772		..	Pre-loyalist..	Wilmot.
Ruggles, John	J. P.	1796		..	Loyalist	"
Ruggles, Timothy, jun.	J. P.	1826		..	"	Granville.
Rutherford, Henry	J. P.	1807		..	"	Digby.
†Ritchie, Thomas, Custos Rot'm	J. P.	1832		..	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Robinson, Lieut. George	J. P.	1832		..		"
Shaw, William (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1777		..	Pre-loyalist..	Granville.
Shaw, Moses	J. P.	1793		..	" ..	"

* For the Province at large. † Judge Ritchie.

NAMES.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Office.	Date of Appointment.	Origin.	Residence.
Seabury, David (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1789	J.C.C.P.	1794	Loyalist	Annapolis.
Steele, Doctor John (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1762		..	Pre-loyalist..	"
Snodgrass, Andrew	J. P.	1786	J.C.C.P.	1807	Loyalist	Digby.
Spurr, William	J. P.	18—		..	Pre-loyalist..	Granville.
Sigogne, Rev. J. M	J. P.	1806		..	French	Clare.
Sanders, Pardon	J. P.	1819		..	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Sneden, Lawrence	J. P.	1818		..	Loyalist	"
St. Croix, Peter de	J. P.	1806		..	"	Granville.
Tinpany, Major Robert	J. P.	1784		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Thorne, Edward, Custos Rot., 1827 (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1786		..	"	Granville.
Tucker, Reuben	J. P.	1803		..	"	Digby.
Viets, Rev. Roger	J. P.	1815		..	Loyalist	Digby.
Williams, Thomas, sen	J. P.	1791	J.C.C.P.	1769	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
*Winniett, Joseph, sen. (M.P.P.)	J. P.	1759	J.C.C.P.	1761	" ..	"
Walker, Thomas	J. P.	1762		..	" ..	"
Wiswall, Rev. John	J. P.	1771		..	Loyalist	Wilmot.
Wiswall, John	J. P.	1818		..	"	"
Winniett, William	J. P.	1819		..	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Whitman, John	J. P.	1806		..	" ..	"
Warwick, John	J. P.	..	J.C.C.P.	1817	Loyalist ...	Digby.
Whitman, James	J. P.	..		..	Pre-loyalist..	Annapolis.
Wheelock, Elias	J. P.	1806	...	..	" ..	Wilmot.
Willett, Walter	J. P.	..		..		
Winniett, Joseph, jun	J. P.	1789		..	Pre-loyalist..	Clements.
Whitman, James	J. P.	18—		..	" ..	Annapolis.
Wiswall, John, jun	J. P.	1835		..		

The following is a list of the gentlemen who held the office of Custos Rotulorum (President of the Bench of Magistrates) from the division of the county in 1837 to the coming in force of the County Incorporation Act, by which the duties before devolving on the Court of Sessions and the Grand Jury were superseded:

Judge Thomas Ritchie, 1837 to 1852.

Major Chipman, 1852 to October term of sessions, 1865.

Silas L. Morse, Barrister, October, 1865, to October, 1867.

Jared C. Troop, Barrister, M.P.P., October, 1867, to October 27th, 1875.

William Hallet Ray, M.P., October 27th, 1875, to the first session of the Municipal Council, January 30th, 1880.

The first County Council was elected on the third Tuesday of November, 1879, and consisted of the following members:

Ward No. 1 (Melvern Square and Margaretsville)—D. E. McGregor.

Ward No. 2 (Middleton)—George Roach.

* For the Province at large.

Ward No. 3 (Clarence and Lawrencetown)—J. Stewart Leonard.

Ward No. 4 (Bridgetown)—Alfred Vidito, who held office till 1895, when defeated by Hector McLean.

Ward No. 5 (Belleisle)—W. H. Young.

Ward No. 6 (Granville Ferry, including Parker's Cove, etc.)—George Kennedy.

Ward No. 7 (Lower Granville)—James H. Thorne.

Ward No. 8 (Clementsport)—James P. Roop, who still holds office.

Ward No. 9 (Bear River)—William Milner.

Ward No. 10 (Annapolis Royal, including Lequille and Round Hill)—Arthur W. Corbitt and J. H. Healy.

Ward No. 11 (Carleton's Corner, including Tupperville, Bentville and Paradise)—Stephen E. Bent.

Ward No. 12 (Nictaux)—Isaac Longley.

Ward No. 13 (Springfield and Albany)—Joseph H. Freeman.

Ward No. 14 (Maitland)—Charles A. Ford.

Ward No. 15 (Dalhousie)—Joseph Buckler.

The first Warden elected was George Kennedy, 1879 to 1883. He was succeeded by James H. Thorne, 1883 to 1885; James P. Roop, 1885 to 1887; Harris Harding Chute, 1887 to 1889; James P. Roop, 1889 to the present time.

The Census.

In 1817 the population of the undivided county was 9,817; in 1827 it had increased to 14,661, distributed by religious beliefs as follows: Church of England, 4,900: Baptists, 4,872; Roman Catholics, 2,604; Methodists, 1,776; Presbyterian, 490; others, 19.

In 1838, the year after the division of the county, the population of Annapolis County was 12,036, and that of Digby County 9,189.

In 1851 the population of the county was 14,286.

In 1861 the population was 16,753, distributed among the townships and municipal wards as follows:

	Ward.		
Township of Wilmot ...	1.	(Wilmot, Margaretsville and Meadowvale, now Nos. 1 and 16)	1,836
	2.	(Middleton and Port George).....	1,474
	3.	(Clarence and Port Lorne).....	1,434
Township of Granville ..	4.	(Bridgetown and Chute's Cove, or Hampton)	1,404
	5.	(Belleisle)'.....	1,155
	6.	(Granville Ferry, Parker's Cove or Hillsburn)	1,252
	7.	(Lower Granville).....	898
Township of Clementsport	8.	(Clementsport and Clements, east and west).	1,319
	9.	(Bear River and Hessian Line, now Clementsvale)	941

	Ward.		
Township of Annapolis	10.	(Annapolis Royal, Lequille, Moschelle and Round Hill)	1,803
	11.	(Carleton's Corner, including Tupperville and east to Paradise)	707
	12.	(Nictaux)	1,238
Dalhousie	13.		561
Maitland	14.		369
Morse's Road	15.		362
			16,753

By religions as follows:

Baptists	8,859	Universalists	47
Church of England	3,520	Lutherans	40
Methodist	3,104	Congregationalists	26
Presbyterians	497	Christian Disciples	5
Catholics	439	Others	54
Quakers	65	Not given	37

Number of bushels of apples raised, 65,485. Lumber produced: 1,520 thousand feet of pine boards; 1,588 thousand feet spruce and hemlock; 52 thousand tons of square timber; 260 thousand staves.

In 1871 the population was 18,121, as follows (For number of ward and territory embraced, see census of 1861, *ante*):

By Wards.		By Religions.	
Wilmot	1,893	Baptists—	
Middleton Corner	1,542	(Regular and others, including Freewill Baptists)	10,027
Clarence	1,659	Methodists, Wesleyan	3,338
Bridgetown	1,334	Methodists, not classed as "Wesleyans"	5
Belleisle	1,006	Methodists, Episcopal	1
Granville Ferry	1,455	Church of England	3,092
Lower Granville	891	Catholics	569
Clementsport	1,302	Presbyterians	524
Bear River and Hessian Line	1,272	Adventists	176
Annapolis	2,127	"Bible Believers"	107
Carleton's Corner	700	Lutherans	52
Nictaux	1,386	Quakers	41
Dalhousie	606	Christian Conference	29
Morse's Road	381	Universalists	13
Maitland	567	Congregational	8
		Unitarian	8
		Plymouth Brethren	1
		Deists, or no religion	3
		Others	9
		Not given	118
Total	18,121	Total	18,121

Bushels of apples produced, 118,608. Cubic feet square pine timber (white), 12,791, (red), 1,144; square oak, 500; birch and maple, 13,845; all other timber, 61,636; pine logs, 38,128; other logs, 26,210; masts, spars, etc., 129; thousands of staves, 239; cords of lathwood, 157; cords of firewood, 31,530.

In 1881 the whole population was returned at 20,598, as follows (For number of ward and territory, see 1861):

Wilmot	2,275	Baptists—	
Middleton	1,625	Regular 11,114, Freewill 85	11,199
Clarence	1,739	Methodists, 3,802, Episcopal do. 3	3,805
Bridgetown	1,448	Church of England	3,557
Belleisle	1,090	Presbyterians	822
Granville Ferry	1,492	Catholics	540
Lower Granville	991	Adventists	288
Clementsport	1,330	Bible Christians	73
Bear River and Hessian Line	1,524	Lutherans	68
Annapolis Royal	2,833	Disciples	41
Carleton's Corner	862	Congregational	17
Nictaux	1,516	Universalists	16
Dalhousie	806	Quakers	12
Morse's Road	457	Unitarians	5
Maitland	610	Brethren	3
		Others	29
		Not given	104
		Professed no form of religious belief	19
Total	20,598	Total	20,598

Number of bushels of apples produced, 318,159. Cubic feet square pine timber (white), 5,700, (red), 500; oak, 2,500; tamarac, 1,950; birch and maple, 1,752; hickory, 250; of all others, 212,645; pine logs, 66,253; other logs, 96,475; masts, spars, etc., 558; thousands of staves, 449; cords lathwood, 80; cords tanbark, 116; cords firewood, 49,555.

Down to and including the year 1881, the census of population of the Dominion was taken on the *de jure* system, so called, by which all persons temporally absent, but domiciled here, were counted, and those temporarily here from other countries were excluded. But in practice many of the young men who went abroad to the large cities of the United States to find congenial employment, remained abroad; and it was decided in 1891 to adopt the *de facto* system, excluding all actually out of the Province and in some other country. This certainly excludes many of whom this county is still the home, but as no medium plan could be devised, it is perhaps the more accurate one. But I think the difference in the

two systems fairly accounts for the apparent decrease shown in the population by the census of 1891, when it was returned at 19,350, given by polling sub-divisions alphabetically arranged, as follows:

Annapolis Royal (all of the town north of the gravel pit road)	959	Maitland	422
Bear River	694	Margaretsville	703
Belleisle	1,005	Meadowvale	687
Bridgetown	1,117	Melvern	523
Carleton's Corner	846	Middleton	740
Clarence	903	Milford	416
Clements	687	New Albany	279
Clementsvale	704	Nictaux	778
Clements West	467	Parker's Cove	569
Dalhousie	402	Port George	684
Granville Ferry	905	Port Lorne	673
Lower Granville	923	Round Hill	696
Hampton	374	Springfield	589
Lawrencetown Lane	683		
Lequille	922	Total	19,350

By religions:

Baptist (including Freewill)	10,467	Disciples	14
Methodist	3,642	Unitarians	12
Church of England	3,514	Universalists	12
Roman Catholic	564	Brethren	5
Presbyterian	495	Tunker	1
Adventists	274	Protestant	1
Salvation Army	98	Others	15
Lutheran	71	Not specified	25
Bible Christian	63		
Congregational	56		
Quakers	21	Total	19,350

There are reported in 1891, 39 Baptist church edifices, 21 Methodist, 16 Church of England, 3 Presbyterian, 1 Roman Catholic (to which should be added another at Bridgetown), and one other house built for worship, but not classified.

Industrial Establishments of Annapolis County, 1891.

Establishments.	Number.	Fixed Capital.			Working Capital.	Employees over 16.	Employees under 16.	Amount Paid in Wages during the Year.	Total Value of Raw Material.	Total Value of Articles Produced.
		In Land.	In Buildings.	In Machinery and Tools.						
Blacksmitheries	46	$1960	$6815	$4590	$6030	62	3	$17406	$12413	$46995
Boots and shoes	34	850	4735	1743	5485	37	3	8565	8267	27200
Brick and tile making	2	6800	2500	3500	18700	29	..	8250	1200	14000
Cabinet and furnit're making	4	670	6200	9250	11500	36	1	12096	9588	30900
Carding and fulling mills	4	250	450	1700	75	5	..	1010	5424	8670
Carpenters' and joiners' shops	9	25	1325	1090	315	10	..	1915	1205	5002
Carriage-making	28	1085	6855	4155	6405	36	2	9321	10530	30675
Cheese factories	3	45	650	470	.	4	..	605	2910	5000
Cider making	10	..	1130	1105	1275	17	5	1200	1265	7625
Cooperages	56	2140	10528	2093	5157	62	6	6574	8921	23242
Corset factory	1	..	..	300	2000	12	..	2500	1000	4500
Dressmaking and millinery	8	..	..	265	1000	12	..	1800	2300	7410
Dried fruit and vegetables	1	..	..	500	5000	70	..	2500	7500	13000
Fish-curing	22	80	723	2278	2500	34	17	4230	6298	15701
Flour and grist mills	9	1280	2700	4510	575	9	.	1417	6710	12670
Foundries and machine works	1	250	3000	5000	6000	11	..	4000	4000	12000
Harness and saddleries	8	450	1425	800	4300	9	1	3017	3070	9550
Marble and stone-cutting	2	250	275	210	2100	6	..	2750	2396	8800
Musical instruments	1	170	500	700	1700	6	1	2000	2800	6800
Packing case factories	1	75	300	1300	200	3	..	950	1000	2800
Patent medicine factory	1	..	1200	..	8000	4	2	1200	400	3500
Photographic galleries	1	..	500	250	..	1	..	500	200	1000
Planing and mouldings	1	..	100	1000	1000	2	..	750	900	2200
Plumbers and gas-fitters	1	..	..	250	1350	1	..	550	125	1000
Printing and publish'g offices	1	200	1000	5000	3000	3	2	1500	600	3000
Pump and windmill factories	2		..	610	200	5	..	600	1044	6350
Sailmaking	1	..	..	100	2000	3	..	1000	2500	4800
Sash, door and blind factories	2	200	460	1800	960	4	1	1600	2000	5000
Saw-mills	69	11750	24995	50560	2600	318	12	67690	129881	260995
Shinglemaking	2	..	175	1100	100	3	1	550	625	2125
Ship-yards	4	400	165	775	31000	82	1	24600	18000	55050
Smelting works	1	..	..	1500	..	16	..	7000	14000	25000
Tailors and clothiers	11	1800	5030	1540	10710	45	5	10925	14505	33325
Tanneries	10	1385	9795	2210	2500	14	2	4240	5599	16285
Tinsmithing	1	325	900	250	1000	2	..	800	2800	4000
Watchmaking and jewellers	2	300	500	140	1250	3	..	1200	350	2600
Weavers	6	200	3000	4045	1500	10	..	1545	2103	4535
Wood-turning	2	250	250	200	..	10	5	3968	4882	12000

These returns are evidently defective. There were at least one woollen mill in the county and two printing and publishing establishments.

Number of bushels of apples produced, 242,192. Lumber produced: Cubic feet of square pine timber (white), 3,600, (red), 200; oak, 1,830; tamarac, 321; birch and maple, 2,662; hickory, —; all other, 244,378; number of pine logs, 47,208; other logs (spruce and other), 210,356; masts and spars, 28; thousands of staves, 632; cords of lathwood, 147; tanbark, 692; firewood, 45,337.

The Apple Trade.

The enormous development of the apple-raising and exporting business requires notice here. Probably the first shipment from this county to England was by the late Benjamin Wier, of Halifax, and Ambrose Bent, of Paradise, in 1849. The shipment was made from Halifax to Liverpool by sailing vessel, and the price realized was about $2 per barrel. In 1856 Mr. Bent shipped to Boston by schooner *Paradise* 700 barrels, the first to that market in any quantity, realizing about $2.75 per barrel. In December, 1861, A. W. Corbitt, then one of the leading merchants of Annapolis, George Wells, Dr. Frank Robinson and Pardon Sanders united in the venture of shipping the first cargo direct from Annapolis to London, and met with the loss which so often disappoints the enterprise of pioneers in business that afterwards proves profitable. About the same time John Lithgow, of Halifax, shipped a cargo direct from Annapolis to the Old Country, but this also was an unfortunate venture. The first steamer to carry apples direct from this port to London was the *Neptune*, which sailed April 2nd, 1881. She carried 6,800 barrels, of which the greater part belonged to Ambrose Bent and Benjamin Starratt, of Paradise, and arrived at London in fourteen days, Mr. Bent going in her as supercargo. This venture was fairly successful. The business from that time has continued to increase in volume, the average annual shipment from this county to England the last ten years being about 40,000 barrels.

BIOGRAPHICAL MEMOIRS

OF

MEMBERS OF THE PROVINCIAL PARLIAMENT FOR THE COUNTY OF ANNAPOLIS AND ITS SEVERAL TOWNSHIPS.

1759–1867.

COLONEL JONATHAN HOAR.

1759–1761, 1765–1770.

A century or more ago, few names were better known or more generally respected in Nova Scotia, than that of Colonel, sometimes called Judge, Hoar. He was a native of Massachusetts, and as a lieutenant in one of the colonial regiments took part in the reduction of Louisburg, 1758, and was probably also present in an inferior capacity, in the operations at the head of the Bay of Fundy, under Winslow, in 1755. The name of Jonathan Hoar occurs in a "list of families which have been settled in Nova Scotia since 1749," which bears date July, 1752, in which his household is stated to have consisted of two individuals only —both males. He was therefore certainly not married at that date, the second male being probably a servant. He seems to have remained in Halifax until about 1759, when he is found domiciled on one of the blocks of land granted to him in that year in this county. Five hundred acres having the Allain, now Lequille, River for its eastern boundary, was long known as the Hoar grant. Here he built a house, the cellar of which still remains. The dwelling stood a little to the southward of that occupied in his lifetime by the late James Rice,* whose father was the intimate friend, and sometimes in his absence, the *locum tenens*, of the grantee.

The first House of Assembly met in October, 1758, shortly after the fall of Louisburg. This assembly had been chosen by the electors of the Province at large, and its existence terminated with its only session. In 1759 a new House was called, and Colonel Hoar was elected as the first

* Torn down in 1892 when it was considered the oldest house in the vicinity of Annapolis.—[Ed.]

representative for the new county, in conjunction with Erasmus James Phillips, also a military man—who served with him until the expiration of the Assembly caused by the death of George II., in 1760. In the election which ensued in consequence of that event, 1761, Joseph Winniett and Thomas Day, civilians, were elected, but in 1765 Colonel Hoar was again chosen member for the township of Annapolis, which he continued to represent in the House, until superseded by Obadiah Wheelock in 1770.

In 1762 he was appointed to a judgeship in the newly established court of Common Pleas, in which capacity he is said to have discharged his duties with integrity and faithfulness. He also took an active and leading part in the organization of the militia of the county, and a deep interest in the cultivation of its soil. The following letter, addressed to the Provincial Secretary, will show that it was usually upon his recommendation that commissions in the militia were issued. It is dated Annapolis Royal, August 16th, 1763:

"Sir,—I had the honour of receiving a few lines from you, dated August 2nd, inclosing a number of commissions for the militia of this county. I was likewise desired to send Mr. Lovett's* name, who desires me instead of returning his name, to return his thanks to the Government for the honour designed him in giving him a Captain's commission, but by reason of indisposition of body, he begs to be excused.

"I am sorry one Captain Jabez Snow, of Granville, was neglected—one that was a captain all last war, and behaved with reputation. According to your desire I shall nominate for subalterns the following persons: Captain Hall's Company—William Graves and Benjamin Shaw; for Captain —— ——'s Company—Samuel Wade and Paul Croker; and for Captain Evans' Company, Abner Morse and Joseph Bass. I would take the liberty of recommending one Mr. Oldham Gates, in the room of Captain Lovett."

In the census enumerations of the township of Annapolis made in 1767, his household is said to have embraced five individuals—four males and one female; that is, a housekeeper, and three farm servants. They were all of American or *old* colonial birth. His farm stock in that year comprised 13 horses, 18 oxen, 23 cows, 27 young cattle and 160 sheep; and his farm produced 100 bushels of rye, 22 of barley and 20 of oats with 10 bushels of peas and beans, so that the old bachelor gentleman was really a farmer.

That Hoar resided in Annapolis, or that he was stationed there in connection with its defence in 1759, is made certain by the following incident recorded in "Niles' History of the Indian and French Wars."

"On the 30th of June, 1759, a party of the enemy, in the night, at Annapolis Royal, came and drove away twelve head of cattle which were missed in the morning. Colonel Hoar,† with a party, was ordered to pursue them, which they did, and about

* The father of the late Colonel Phineas Lovett.

† Then Captain or Major Hoar.

five in the afternoon overtook them, upon which a smart skirmish ensued, and the enemy soon retreated and left the cattle; they rallied again, but were again forced to retreat. It raining very hard, and our men being much fatigued, and having little or no provision, thought it best to return, which they did accordingly. In the morning a fresh party took out upon the pursuit, and quickly came in sight of them, upon which the enemy fled, leaving the cattle which they had recovered after our men's retiring, leaving behind them some camp kettles, ammunition and provisions, with a hat with a ball hole through the crown of it, a handkerchief and several pieces of linen with much blood on them. Upon the whole the behaviour of the officers, and especially that of the principal commander, Colonel Hoar, and the provincials, all deserve high applause, except an ensign worthy to remain nameless, whose life was so dear to him that he could not bear the thought of death, and therefore left his party, and ran back to the garrison, upwards of fourteen miles, in a short space of time.

This relation incidentally fixes the *locus* of the fray reported, to have been not far from the scene of that other less successful fight, which occurred nearly fifty years before, at Bloody Creek, 1711.

As a judge and a magistrate, he maintained a character for uprightness and intelligence, and seems to have been, by common consent, acknowledged as the leader and benefactor of the inhabitants who occupied the old capital a century and a third ago. He also appears to have been a man held in high estimation in his native province. In 1762 Governor Barnard, of that province, raised a regiment, of which he was to be himself the Colonel, for service against the French, and he selected Hoar to be its Lieutenant-Colonel; but peace having been made in the following year, the corps was not needed. It was this commission that gave him the title by which he was afterwards so well known. He was also commissioned a colonel in the local militia, in which I have already said he took a great interest, and assisted in its earliest organization.

In 1762 he seems to have resided in Halifax, for I find his name recorded as one of a Council of War, which frequently met in that year. He was also one of a court-martial, on no less than seventeen occasions, at different times in that city. In 1767 he was Surrogate Judge of Probate for Annapolis. It was about the year 1780 that he left his home at Annapolis—though tradition says for England, I am inclined to believe it would be more correct to say, for his native province—and he never returned to it again. He took ill and died, leaving no descendants to inherit his property or his name. His real estate consisted of several blocks of land amounting to 5,500 acres. This large estate was sold in 1782, to the late John Ritchie, grandfather of the Chief Justice of this Dominion, for the sum of *twenty pounds!* Colonel Prince was the executor named in the will, but how that instrument directed the property to be disposed of I do not know.

His heavy silver-hilted sword went into the possession of his *locum tenens*, the late Mr. John Rice, who many years after sent the hilt to

Boston, where he ordered it to be melted up, and a set of heavy silver spoons to be made from it. These spoons, it is said, are yet in existence, and in the possession of the family. Another relic of the worthy old Colonel remains to this day, and in an excellent state of preservation; it is a solidly constructed chest of drawers and secretary combined, in the style of a hundred years ago. It was in the possession of the late John L. Rice, deputy sheriff at Annapolis, who also had the Barnard Commission, before referred to, in his possession.

ERASMUS JAMES PHILLIPS.

1759–1760.

I do not know about this gentleman's birth and parentage, but he was probably *not* a son of Governor Phillipps. He entered the 40th regiment when a young man, and some time before the death of Armstrong in 1739, and at that period he was also a member of the Council, and as such was the friend and associate of Edward Amherst (the maternal grandfather of our General Williams); of good old Paul Mascarene, afterwards Lieutenant-Governor; of John Handfield, who superintended the embarkation of the exiled French *habitans*; and of William Winniett, then the leading merchant of Annapolis, and of his son Joseph Winniett, to whom, if I mistake not, he afterwards became a brother-in-law by his marriage with Mrs. Winniett's sister.

The first public employment assigned Mr. Phillips outside of his duties as a councillor, was that of a commissioner "to mark out and settle" the boundaries between the Province of Massachusetts Bay and the colony of Rhode Island. The royal commission under which he and his fellow-commissioners were appointed, was dated 4th September, 1740. They were selected from the provinces of New York, New Jersey, and Nova Scotia. Skene, Shirreff, Cope, and Otho Hamilton were the other Nova Scotia commissioners.

Phillips was successively ensign, lieutenant, captain, major and lieutenant-colonel in the 40th regiment, so long stationed in that town. While an ensign in 1726, he was selected by the acting governor, with Captain Joseph Bennett, of the same regiment, to accompany the French deputies to Minas to tender the oaths of allegiance to the *habitans* in that district. Soon after his return from this delicate mission he was taken into the Council, at which Board he continued to hold a seat until his death. In 1747, the year of the sad disaster at Grand Pré, Mr. Phillips was joined with Edward How in the administration of civil affairs in that portion of the Province.

From 1729 he held the commission of Judge Advocate-General in the Court of Vice-Admiralty until 1749, when on the occasion of being sworn

in as one of the Council of Cornwallis, he resigned the office, telling the new Governor that it would henceforth be impossible for him "to attend and execute the duties of said office."

Mr. Phillips was elected a member of the second House of Assembly, convened in the Province in 1759. He was chosen for this county, Colonel Jonathan Hoar being his colleague, but his legislative career was of short duration, though it ended only with his life. Previous to this event he was honoured by a vote* of thanks of the Council for services rendered in 1757 in making prisoners of a number of French *habitans*, who, having managed to avoid capture at the time of the expulsion, had formed a temporary settlement on the shores of St. Mary's Bay. He appears to have been an able, energetic and efficient officer, in both his military and civil employments, and managed with judgment public affairs requiring the exercise of skill and tact, seldom failing to acquit himself with credit and success.

On the retirement of Mascarene, Major Phillips became commander of the forces at Annapolis, in which capacity he acted until his sudden death in 1760. I copy in full a letter of instructions addressed by Governor Lawrence in 1759, as it will serve to show the nature of some of the duties belonging to his position. This letter bears date April 18th, and reads as follows:

"Sir,—You know perhaps by this time that the intended operations of the ensuing campaign will draw all the regular troops from the Bay of Fundy, and that they are to be replaced by provincials who must be totally unacquainted with the King's service in this province, or the methods of carrying it on. But as you by a long continuance here, and attention to public concerns are a competent judge of those matters, I shall rely on your vigilance and conduct.

"The object of your care will be to preserve a constant communication and intercourse throughout the Bay; to transmit all intelligence of any consequence to me, and to take the proper methods of supplying them with necessary stores and provisions.

"I now send the *Snow*† to Halifax up the bay with deputies from some of the people of Connecticut and Rhode Island. They go to view the lands that they may report the nature of them to those who are desirous of coming to settle in the Province.

"When the *York* and *Halifax* return from Boston, they shall be stationed in the Bay of Fundy, with orders to follow all such service, and I shall also order all vessels belonging to the Province who go into the bay to receive your instructions relating to the general purpose. By this means I hope that a frequent intercourse may be kept up so that I may never want intelligence, and I make no doubt of this as I am not unacquainted with your zeal for His Majesty's service.

"(Signed), Charles Lawrence."

To this communication Mr. Bulkeley, secretary, by command added the following postscript:

* This was, I believe, the first vote of the kind given in the Province.

† A snow was a four-masted schooner.

"In order to forward the service more effectual, the Government orders the Moncton schooner will also remain in the Bay of Fundy and to be stationed where Major Phillipps thinks proper. Captain Morecomb's orders direct him to receive his further orders by Major Phillipps as will appear by these."

A few months after the murder of Edward How, namely, on 1st January, 1750, Cornwallis issued a special commission to Mr. Phillips, as Judge of Probate and Wills in the premises. The recital in this document sets forth that it is done "by reason of the distance between Annapolis Royal and the said town of Halifax, the inclemency of the weather, and the difficulty of travelling through the country at this time would be attended with great inconvenience and danger to the person or persons on whom the proof of the said Will depends." In conclusion it required him "to transmit the original Will of the said Edward How together with this commission and your proceedings thereon to me at Halifax as soon as convenient may be."

As I have before stated, I believe Major Phillips married a Dyson, a sister—perhaps a cousin—of Mrs. Joseph Winniett, but whether the marriage was barren or fruitful, I do not know. The names of John and Ann *Philips* appear among the grantees of Granville, but as these names are spelled differently I think they did not belong to the Major's family.

Mr. Phillips died at Halifax, while on a visit to that town, very suddenly of apoplexy in 1760.

JOHN STEELE.

1761–1762.

This member of the Legislature was a surgeon by profession and a lieutenant in Shirley's regiment.* He came to Halifax with Cornwallis in 1749, and was a passenger on board the ship *Beaufort*. He most probably removed from that city to Annapolis in 1759 or 1760, to practise his profession. In 1752 he lived in the south suburbs of Halifax, his family then consisting of four male members over sixteen years of age, and three females over the same age.† The fact of his having no children at this period under sixteen seems to indicate that he was well advanced in years. He was the proprietor of lot No. 53 in the township of Annapolis, and his name on the plan is given as Doctor John Steele. His colleague in the representation was Joseph Woodmas, a notice of whom follows.

On the 21st July, 1761, a motion having been made in the House of Assembly to appoint a committee to prepare an address to the Governor, praying him to establish a court in the several counties, to be styled "the

* Nova Scotia Archives, 537. † Nova Scotia Archives, 656.

Inferior Court of Common Pleas," both Mr. Steele and Mr. Woodmas were chosen members of it. They prepared and presented the address on the same day to His Excellency, who in reply informed the House that he would, with the advice of the Council, constitute such immediately with rules of practice for observance in the procedure.

A bill was shortly after sent down by the Council and passed by the House. One of the clauses of the Act provided that the judges were to serve one year without salary. Mr. Steele was one of the grantees of the block of land lying next westwardly from the "Corbin and Dyson grant" a short distance west of Annapolis. He died while a member of the Assembly, and it is almost certain that his family returned to Halifax after his decease, for no family bearing that name is to be found in the enumeration made of the people in 1768.

JOSEPH WOODMAS.

1761–1765.

Mr. Woodmas represented the county for four years. He came out from England about the year 1760—perhaps a few years earlier—in the capacity of Receiver-General of Quit-rents for the Province, a position which he continued to hold till 1774. He was a leading magistrate in Halifax from the close of his legislative career till the year 1775, in which year he went to England to settle his accounts at the Treasury. He never returned to this country, having died in England shortly after the settlement of his affairs there. He was the first member of the Assembly in Nova Scotia who was ordered to apologize to the House for using improper language to a member. It appears he had had an altercation "outside the House" with Nesbitt, the Speaker, who afterward complained in his place that Woodmas, the member for Annapolis, had used "violent and threatening" words to him, whereupon the House ordered him to apologize, which he did.

Whether Mr. Woodmas ever lived at Annapolis or not, I have not been able to determine, nor whether he left heirs in the Province.

THOMAS DAY.

1761–1765.

This gentleman represented the township of Annapolis for four years, and was the colleague of Joseph Winniett in its representation in the third General Assembly. He was succeeded by Colonel Hoar in 1765. I have not been able to recover any particulars concerning him.

His name does not appear either in the census of 1768 or in that of 1770, from which it may be inferred that he was only a temporary resident in the county.

JOSEPH WINNIETT.

1761–1765, 1765–1770.

The subject of our present notice was born in Annapolis in 1726, and was the son of William Winniett, of whom a sketch will appear in the genealogies. With some of his brothers he received in the old Boston Grammar School that sound educational training which qualified him as Justice of the Peace, as Collector of Excise and Customs duties, as Judge of Probates and Wills, as Registrar of Deeds, as a special Commissioner, and as a member of the Assembly, to acquit himself with credit and success, and to gain as well as to merit the fullest approval both of those whom he served and those by whom he was employed.

At the time of his first election, in 1761, he was thirty-five years of age; his colleague was Thomas Day, and they were the first representatives of the township of Annapolis. Woodmas and Harris (the latter *vice* Steele, deceased) were members for the county at the same time. This election took place in consequence of the death of the King (George II.) in 1760. Mr. Winniett took his seat on the 7th of June, 1762. In the same year he had occasion to complain to the head of the administration (Belcher) of the conduct of Captain Sinclair, the commanding officer at Annapolis, in forcibly taking out of his possession a boat which had been furnished him by the Provincial Secretary (Bulkely) to enable him "to aid Colonel Aburthnot in bringing in the French on the Saint John River." It was also in this year that he was appointed to be a Justice of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, a position which he continued to hold for many years. In 1765 he was again elected to a seat in the Assembly, but this time for the county, and he continued to serve until the commencement of the "long parliament, in 1770."

In 1774 he, in conjunction with Colonel Lovett, of Annapolis, and James Simonds and Israel Perley, of the St. John River, was made a commissioner to settle some matter connected with the affairs in that district. He was the leading magistrate in the county for more than thirty years, and was distinguished for the impartiality and ability of his decisions, and respected as a man of fidelity and integrity in all the varied relations of life. It was his good fortune, too, to have been the intimate friend of Thomas Williams, the grandsire of General Williams, with whom he divided the esteem and regard of the universal public of all classes and of all shades of opinion.

Mr. Winniett married Mary Dyson on the 26th December, 1751, O.S. For the issue of this marriage, see genealogy, *post.*

JOHN HARRIS.

1765–1770.

If the early census returns are to be relied on, John Harris arrived in Annapolis some time before the year of the expatriation of the French *habitans* (1755) and was an eye-witness of that sad event. He may have been of English birth though he came hither from Massachusetts, to which colony he may have emigrated a few years before. In the enumeration made in 1767 his family is said to consist of eight souls, two of whom were born here. In a similar return made in 1770 his household is said to have consisted of seven members, of whom two were stated to be of American birth, and five of Acadian or Nova Scotian birth. As the latter census seems to have been taken with more care than the former, it is made certain that all his children were born after his arrival here, and as it is evident that one death had occurred since 1767 in the family, it may be that one was born before he and his wife arrived in Annapolis. He was one of the earliest grantees in the county after the French expulsion. He lived in the town of Annapolis, and was the owner of a block of land adjoining the White House field on its north-east side, including Runciman's corner and adjoining lots, and a resident on it in 1755. This family therefore ranks among the oldest now domiciled here, and with the Eassons, Lecains, Barteaux and Winnietts.

Note.—Major Millidge Harris, of Annapolis, and Delancy Harris, now of Bridgetown, are descendants.—[Ed.]

HENRY MUNROE.

1765–1768.

Henry Munroe was commissioned first lieutenant of the first company in a Highland regiment, raised in Argyleshire for service against the French in America in 1759 or about that time. The regiment had scarcely arrived in Massachusetts when the Peace of Utrecht was signed, and the war with France was ended, in consequence of which it never saw any service in the field, and was soon disbanded. According to the terms of enlistment its officers were entitled to grants of land in Nova Scotia, and Henry Munroe received a grant of two thousand acres in this county in 1765. Some of his descendants still own and occupy portions of it.

Soon after his arrival here he married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Hooper, one of the Massachusetts pre-loyalist settlers of the township of Annapolis as one of the grantees in the grants of 1759 and 1765, and in the latter year Mr. Munroe had the honour to be chosen the first representative of Granville in the Assembly of the Province, in which

he served two years, when he voluntarily vacated the seat. He was appointed a Justice of the Peace, and commissioned a lieutenant-colonel of the militia in or about 1776, a position which he continued to hold until his death, late in 1781 or early in 1782, when he died suddenly of apoplexy, leaving a widow and seven children with slender means of support, notwithstanding the large grant of land which he had secured on his arrival in the county some years before. On his death his widow wrote to his elder brother, Sir George Munroe, of Cromarty, informing him of the sudden demise of her husband, and of the condition in which she and her infant children were left by the sad event, on which Sir George ordered his London agent to remit the sum of forty pounds annually to the widow toward the support and education of the children until they reached their majority, or their mother married again. One of his great-grandsons, Henry Munroe, has also had the honour of a seat in the assembly as a representative of the county.

JOHN HICKS.

1768–1770.

The person whose name heads this notice is reputed to have been a native of Rhode Island or Connecticut, and to have come to the county some time after 1760—probably in 1763 or 1764. (See genealogy, *post.*) He was one of the original grantees of the township of Falmouth, but was settled in Granville in 1765, and was elected representative for that township in the place of Colonel Munroe, and was consequently the second member of the Assembly for that place. He resided, I think, near Bridgetown, as that locality was many years known as "Hicks' Ferry."

He ceased to discharge the duties of a representative in 1770, and his name does not occur again in connection with public affairs. Members at that time received no indemnity for attendance on their legislative duties. I regret that his name does not find a place in the early census returns which I have been able to find, but in the Capitation Tax Act returns for 1794 are recorded the names of his sons Benjamin, John Weston and Thomas Hicks. Benjamin Hicks was rated as high as the wealthiest in the assessment made at this period, and the rate paid by the others proves that they, too, were in very comfortable circumstances.

Mr. Hicks was a farmer and a pioneer in the improvements of the lands in his district, and after a useful career as such, he was gathered to his fathers somewhere near the beginning of the century. The exact date I have not been so fortunate as to obtain.

OBADIAH WHEELOCK.

1770–1774, 1774–1776.

This gentleman came to Annapolis in May, 1760, from Mendon, Massachusetts. (See census of 1768 and 1770, pp. 152-156.) His lot was situated in the Messenger District of the township, and tradition affirms that he brought a house-frame with him, a fact which has since been verified, for a few years ago the old house was taken down, and it was acknowledged by the workmen who performed the labour, that it had been constructed of timber that had been brought from abroad. I regret that Mr. Wheelock's name is not to be found in the rolls connected with the Capitation Tax Act. It is very probable he died before 1792. He was twice elected to the Assembly, and on both occasions for the township of Annapolis. His first election took place in 1770, and his second in 1774, and his public life as a legislator came to a final close in 1776. He was, therefore, a member of the Assembly for six years.

PHINEAS LOVETT, SEN.

1770–1774, 1774–1776.

I think that Phineas Lovett, sen., was a son of Daniel Lovett, for in an original plan showing the position of his lots in Annapolis township, he is styled "Captain Phineas Lovett, heir to Daniel Lovett." The lot thus referred to was No. 95, which is situated two or three miles eastward of Bridgetown on the south side of the river. His own lot was No. 28, which is in the Round Hill District, and the stream which runs through the lot is still known as "Lovett's Brook." In 1763 Colonel Hoar recommended Mr. Lovett for a captaincy in the county militia, which he declined to accept owing to "indisposition of body." He was gazetted to the Commission of the Peace in 1770. The first grist-mill and saw-mill erected on that stream was built by Phineas Lovett, sen., who appears to have been a man of enterprise and energy as well as popular among his fellows. In 1770 he was chosen to represent the county in the Assembly, with Joseph Patten as a colleague, but as no pay was given to members until 1781, it is uncertain whether he was sworn in or not, for the seat was declared vacant for non-attendance in 1774, when he was again returned by the same constituency. His re-election shows the high esteem in which he was held by the electors. The seat, however, was again vacated in 1776, and in the same year he was again elected in conjunction with John Hall, but neither of them took his seat. Have we not a key to his popularity in the fact that

many of the Massachusetts settlers at that period were not free from sympathy with their rebel brethren over the border? Hall appears to have been a leader in Granville of those who felt such sympathy, and Mr. Lovett was the leader of a like class living in his own township. This may account for their refusal or neglect to be sworn in—an act which required them to take the oath of allegiance, which they would not want to do.* He died at Annapolis, aged 84, and was buried January 19th, 1824. His son, Colonel Phineas Lovett, and grandson, James Russell Lovett, were also, at long subsequent periods, members of the House of Assembly.

JOSEPH PATTEN.

1770-1774, 1774-1776.

Mr. Patten was from Massachusetts, in which province he was born, and he came to the county in 1760 or 1761, with his family, which comprised—besides himself—his wife, one son, and two daughters. He was made a Justice of the Peace very soon after, and for a time lived in or near the town of Annapolis from which he did not remove till 1764 or 1765, when he took up his residence in Granville on the farm owned by the late Leonard Wade, Esq., and Mr. David Wade (or lot No. 77), where he continued to live until his death.

In 1763 he became involved in a dispute concerning that lot with Amos Farnsworth, "of Groton, in the Province of Massachusetts Bay," for the particulars of which see Chapter XII., p. 202, *et seq.*

Mr. Patten became a member of the Legislature in 1770, and continued to sit in it until the 10th December, 1774, when his seat and that of Obadiah Wheelock were declared vacant on account of non-attendance, and new writs were issued to fill the vacancies. He was again (1775) a successful candidate, but he appears not to have had a seat after 1776. On both occasions he represented the county, and was the colleague of Colonel Lovett. He was a leading magistrate, and it was before him, as such, that the depositions in the Shaw embroglio were chiefly made. I cannot but believe he was sometimes animated by vindictive feelings toward those who in any way differed from him in his estimate of right and wrong.

Among the miscellaneous papers in the archives, relating to the old Court of Chancery, I have found under date, 1828, a cause mentioned, entitled Benjamin Foster *versus* William Patten, but I have failed to ascertain who the defendant was, or that he was a descendant of the gentleman to whom this notice is devoted.

* See p. 162.

CHRISTOPHER PRINCE.

1772–1774, 1774–1776, 1776–1780.

Colonel Prince, as he was familiarly known a hundred years ago, a native of Kingston, near Plymouth, Mass., was the third representative of the township of Granville in the Assembly, and was first elected in 1772 in the place of John Hicks, the second member. He was certainly a pre-loyalist, and settled at Digby, where he had bought a lot of land and built a dwelling north-west of the Raquette, long before the Loyalist immigration of 1783.

In a letter from the Surveyor-General, Charles Morris, Esquire, dated Halifax, December 11th, 1784, and addressed to one of his deputies at Digby, Thomas Millidge, he requested the latter to send him "a plan of one hundred acres of land, situated on the Raquette at Digby, being lot No. 13, on which Christopher Prince *formerly* built a house, having first purchased the land from Mr. Franklin, the original grantee." It is probable that Prince lived here but a short time, and that when he removed, he went to Granville, where he continued to live during, at least, a part of the period in which he was its representative.

In 1773, 1774, 1775, 1776, and 1777, he was one of the commissioners of roads for the county—his fellow-commissioners being Joseph Winniett, Phineas Lovett, sen., Henry Evans and Thomas Williams, sen.

In the Shaw correspondence he is spoken of as "Colonel Prince," and was charged with being dilatory in ordering out the militia in 1776, to protect the county from possible invasion by the American rebels, and with having left that duty to be performed by Shaw, who was also a militia colonel.

In 1784 one Thomas Cummings, in a letter of that year to the Lieutenant-Governor, says: "Agreeably to the request of your Excellency, I spoke to Colonel Prince, who declared in the most positive manner, that he had not ordered any timber to be cut; but notwithstanding his assertion to the contrary, I have every reason to believe, from information this day given me, that he is now concerned with others in felling timber, and such as comes under the description of that which may be wanted for His Majesty's use."

At this time I think he owned and occupied the farm then known as "Belliveau's," from its ancient French owner, and recently as Fitzrandolph's, or "Bell Farm."

In 1792 he had removed to Wilmot, (Lawrencetown?) for in that year his name is found in the list of ratepayers under the Capitation Tax Act, and in 1794 he was the oldest magistrate in the county save one, Phineas Lovett, sen. He had at least two sons, William and Benjamin, who in

1792 were landholders in the township of Annapolis—the latter being in the commission of the Peace, and the former a lieutenant and adjutant in the militia. (Colonel Prince died on Christmas Day, 1799.* He had been awake, and had spoken to his grandchildren whom he heard coming very early from their rooms, advising them to return until a more seasonable hour, but was found dead in his bed when the rest of the household arose in the morning.—Ed.)

Colonel Prince was three times elected as the representative of Granville. He was for many years in the commission of the Peace, and in 1792 was made one of the commissioners under the Capitation Tax Act. Phineas Lovett, sen., John Hall, Samuel Katherns and Oldham Gates were his fellow-commissioners under the Act. He was also for many years a commissioner of highways, a very important position in those early days, when even the main thoroughfares were yet encumbered by the stumps and roots of the noble forests through which they had been cut; but besides these public employments he had striven, and not unsuccessfully, to set an example to the farmers of the county by clearing and improving several new farms, thereby encouraging those around him to pursue with hopefulness the task of providing themselves and their families with substantial and comfortable homes.

JOHN HALL.

1776.

Mr. Hall was a native of Massachusetts, from which province he came to Annapolis in 1760, and became the progenitor of numerous descendants bearing his family name. For a few years he seems to have taken up his abode in the township of Annapolis, but in 1763 or 1764 he removed to Granville with his family, and settled at a short distance eastward of the old Scotch Fort, on a farm of which he obtained a grant, and on which he dwelt till his death in 1790.

At this period there were but two schooners owned in the township, and Mr. Hall was the owner of one of them; and in 1777 three schooners of Annapolis County paid light duties at the port of Halifax, of which one, the *John*, was commanded by John Hall, jun. The other two were captained by Charles Belliveau and Abraham Knowlton, and were named the *Success* and the *Three Friends*. Mr. Hall's name is therefore intimately identified with the earliest mercantile marine of the county. He was also a leading merchant and an industrious agriculturalist. It is not, therefore, to be wondered at that he should have been looked upon

* A family monument to the Princes has been erected at Kingston, Plymouth Co., Mass., on which Colonel Prince's name is duly honoured.—[Ed.]

as a "fit and proper person" to be sent to the Assembly, and in 1776 he was offered to the electors and duly chosen, though, I think, contrary to his wishes, as he declined to be sworn in. His seat was declared vacant, and a writ issued for a new election. His colleague, Colonel Lovett, also declined to serve, and his seat was also made vacant, and in 1777 William Shaw and Henry Evans were elected in their places. Some curious items are to be found in our MS. archives relating to these "good old times," among which the following may be taken as an example: In the volume relating to treasury and customs accounts I find that in 1776 Mr. Hall bought from John Prince, merchant of Halifax, 350 gallons of rum, and in 1777, 435½ gallons of the same beverage, and these are by far the largest quantities bought by a single individual in the county—a fact which goes to prove that he was one of the largest dealers in Granville, if not the largest, at that date. He was a leading magistrate for many years.

HENRY EVANS.

1777–1784.

This gentleman's name fills the second place in the first grant of the township of Annapolis, which has for nearly a century and a quarter had reference made to it as the Felch-Evans grant. He was born in Massachusetts, and lived near or in Sudbury in that province, but was probably of Welsh origin or birth. He was sent to Halifax on behalf of the applicants for a grant of the township named for the purpose of obtaining explanations from Governor Lawrence, on some points not very clearly set forth in his proclamation touching the rights of the intending immigrants as to religious worship and freedom of thought and speech in religious and some other matters. The diary of his journey thither and of his proceedings on his arrival is for the first time printed in this volume. (See history of Annapolis township, p. 148. For his family in 1768 and 1770, see census returns, pp. 153 and 155.)

In his diary or journal he tells us that he was employed in the autumn of 1760 in surveying and "laying out" the lands for the new settlers who had arrived in considerable numbers during the spring and summer. In the following year he was appointed one of the four Justices of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for the county; but it is believed he never took a very active or leading part in magisterial affairs.

In 1777 he was elected to the Assembly as member for the county, his colleague being William Shaw, of Granville. He held the seat till he died, November 2nd, 1782, aged 57, and was succeeded by John Ritchie.

WILLIAM SHAW.

1777–1784.

Colonel William Shaw was probably a Scotchman. He was a lieutenant in the 47th regiment, and married a daughter of Rev. Thomas Wood, already mentioned. He became a colonel of militia as early as 1776, and called out the force under his command for the defence of the county at the time of the attack on Fort Cumberland by American rebels and the disaffected inhabitants of the districts on the St. John River. For full particulars of his proceedings on this occasion the reader is referred to Chapter XII.

To Mr. Shaw belongs the honour of having taken the initiative in the establishment of a public school in the city of Halifax, he having on the 23rd October, 1780, moved that a committee of the Assembly be appointed to take the matter into consideration and report results to the House. He was named a member of the committee, which, having reported favourably, and named the city of Halifax as the most desirable locality, a bill was brought in to establish such a school, and another bill to provide the means by way of a public lottery to defray the expense of erecting a suitable building, which it was estimated would cost £1,500.

In 1781 Mr. Shaw was appointed Sheriff of the County of Halifax, as, according to Murdoch, Vol. III., page 1, he was acting in that capacity in February, 1782. He must have been the first sheriff of that county.

In 1781 a motion was made in the Assembly for leave to bring in a bill to repeal certain clauses in the provincial laws relating to Roman Catholics, and Mr. Shaw was ordered to prepare and bring in a bill accordingly, which he did, and on the 1st of November, 1784, he was one of the committee to draft the answer to the Lieutenant-Governor's speech delivered at the opening of the session. On the 29th of the same month, for "having refused to attend and produce vouchers to his accounts as a public accountant, having been Sheriff of Halifax County,"* he was adjudged to be in contempt, his seat declared vacant and himself ordered to be taken into custody. He avoided arrest, however, either by secreting himself, or by suddenly leaving the city.

Mr. Shaw's name ceases to appear in a public character from the date of the vacation of his seat in 1784.

* Journals of Assembly, 1784.

JOHN RITCHIE.

1783–1785.

This gentleman was a Scotchman by birth, probably a native of Glasgow, born about 1745, and after living some time in Boston, settled in Annapolis at some date between 1770 and the summer of 1774. His name does not appear in the census returns of 1770; and as he married an Annapolis lady, whom he had not probably met before he removed here, and had a son born to him as early as July, 1775, we must presume he arrived some time within the period indicated. He went into business as a merchant, and was soon a leading spirit in the affairs of the town and county. (See page 162.) He was commissioned captain of a volunteer regiment May 22nd, 1776, but resigned his commission September 7th, 1781. He was chosen to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Mr. Evans, in 1782, and sat only two sessions, in one of which he was one of the committee of the Assembly appointed to inspect and report upon the "condition of the government house." He was held in much esteem by the people of Annapolis, and if his life had been prolonged it is reasonable to believe he would have sought a return to public life.

He was a Justice of the Peace, and in 1788 was appointed a lay Judge of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas. For his capture by the crew of an American privateer in 1781, see page 164. For his family history and very distinguished posterity, see the Ritchie genealogy, *post.* Embarking in shipping business, he met with financial reverses, and died July 20th, 1790, at the early age of forty-five.

STEPHEN DE LANCEY. JAMES DE LANCEY.

1784–1786. 1786–1792.

The revocation of the Edict of Nantes, by Louis XIV. in 1685, drove from France a great proportion of the best intellectual and religious elements it contained. Among those who sought refuge and liberty in England to avoid the persecution which followed the revival of bigotry in France, was Stephen[1] De Lancey,* the grandfather of the subject of this sketch. This gentleman, upon the application of himself and a number of others, obtained an Act of Denization from the Parliament of Great Britain, in the reign of James II., and shortly after took his departure

* In the memoirs and genealogies a small figure will sometimes be found over a Christian name. It is to be understood as a genealogical sign, the figure 1 denoting that the person thus marked was the immigrant ancestor, or person from whom a line of descent is derived; 2, for second generation, means a son of such person; 3, for third generation, a grandson, and so on.

for the New World, in which he was afterward to become the founder of a distinguished family. He arrived at New York in 1689, in June, where he entered into mercantile business, and soon became a leading and popular merchant and citizen.

In due time he was chosen to represent the people of the city and county, in the Assembly of his adopted province, an honour which was from time to time conferred upon him for a quarter of a century.* Soon after having established himself in business he married Ann Van Cortland, a lady of a good Dutch family, long settled on the Island of Manhattan, by whom he had a large family, of whom three were sons—Oliver, James and PETER[2]. The former of these was born in New York in 1717. He was a member of the Assembly in 1759, and a member of the Council in 1760. In 1776 he was appointed general of brigade in the royal service, and distinguished himself in his conduct against the rebels during the continuance of the rebellion. He resided at Bloomingdale, and when his mansion at that place was burned by the revolutionists, his wife, who was very deaf, came near being consumed in a dog kennel, in which she had hidden herself during the attack. Her husband was attainted of high treason by the Whig Government of New York, and his estates were confiscated. He died at Beverly, in England, in 1785, in the sixty-ninth year of his age. His wife was Phelia Franks, a Philadelphia lady of good family, who also died in England, in 1811, in the ninetieth year of her age, having survived her husband twenty-six years. Susan, daughter of Oliver De Lancey and Phelia Franks, married Sir William Draper, K.B., the distinguished antagonist of the still more distinguished "Junius." Charlotte, another daughter, became the wife of Sir David Dundas, Bart., who was some time a field-marshal of England. Their son, Oliver, jun., was educated in England, and afterwards entered the military service, having been made a captain at the beginning of the rebellion, a major in 1776, lieutenant-colonel in 1779, major-general in 1799, and afterwards lieutenant-general and general. He never married, and died in England at an advanced age.

James[2] De Lancey, the second son of Stephen,[1] was "a man of talents, learning and vivacity." He was educated for the legal profession, and rose to fill the position of Chief Justice of his native colony, having become the successor in that honourable office of the Honourable Lewis Morris, who was the first native selected to discharge its duties. This gentleman was the maternal ancestor of the Hon. Lewis Morris Wilkins, of the Supreme Court of this province. He was twice called upon to administer the public affairs of the Province of New York, and his administration was generally regarded with public favour, while his conduct, at the same time, was the subject of the approval of the Crown. He

* Journals and Proceedings of the Assembly of New York, 1688-1750.

died while thus employed, in 1760, leaving behind him an untarnished reputation in all the relations of life.

His son, James[3] De Lancey, jun., received his education at Eton and Cambridge, and was one of the wealthiest men in America, at the commencement of the revolution, in which he took an active part on behalf of the Crown. He was aide-de-camp to General Abercrombie, at Ticonderoga, and was a member of the Assembly from 1769 to 1775, in which year he went to England, where he spent the remainder of his days. His wife was Margaret Allen, a daughter of Chief Justice Allen, of Pennsylvania, by whom he had five children: (1) Charles, who was in the navy, and died unmarried; (2) James, who was lieutenant-colonel of the First Dragoon Guards (1851), and who was then the only survivor; (3, 4) Ann and Susan, who were living in England in 1848, unmarried, and (5) Margaret, who married Sir Jukes Granville Clifton, Bart., and who died childless.

Stephen[3] De Lancey, M.P.P., born about 1740, was a son of Peter[2] Delancey (born 1705, died 1770), the third son of the founder of the family, who owned considerable estates in Westchester County, where he lived and where his influence and popularity were very great, as he continued to represent that county in the Assembly during a period of twenty-seven consecutive years, and this mainly at the time that he represented the city and county of New York.*

James[3] De Lancey, another son of Peter,[2] was Sheriff of Westchester when the revolutionary struggle began, and in 1777 armed against the rebels as captain of a troop of light horse of fifty men, the "*élite* of the county," and soon distinguished himself by his warmth and activity in the royal cause. He obtained the title of the "Commander of the Cowboys," and afterwards the sobriquet of the "Outlaw of the Bronx." He was twice taken prisoner, once by Putnam, in 1777, and both times by stratagem, but soon regained his liberty. The troop itself was never captured. In 1781, he was at Morrisania, at which place he seems to have ended his active military career. He was "attainted" and his estate confiscated in 1779. In 1783, he came to this province and settled in the township of Annapolis, near Round Hill, on a farm long and even still known as the "De Lancey Farm," where some of his descendants yet reside, and where a monument to the memory of himself, his wife, and his son William and his wife, has been erected. He married Martha Tippetts, by whom he had a numerous family.

I extract the following notice of an affecting scene from a paper read before the New York Historical Society in 1861, by a Mr. McDonald. It describes this old Loyalist's leave-taking of his old home in the beautiful County of Westchester, the scene of his birth and his boyhood:

"The Outlaw of the Bronx," says this gentleman, "with a heavy heart,

* Journals and Proceedings of the Assembly of New York, 1688-1760.

mounted his horse, and riding to the dwellings of his friends and neighbours bade them each farewell. His paternal fields and every object presented to his view were associated with the joyful recollections of early life. The consciousness that he beheld them for the last time, and the uncertainties to be encountered in a strange country to which banishment was consigning him, conspired to awaken emotions such as the sternest bosom is sometimes compelled to entertain. It was in vain that he struggled to suppress the feelings which shook his iron heart. Nature soon obtained the mastery and he burst into tears. After weeping with uncontrollable bitterness for a few moments he shook his ancient friend by the hand, ejaculating with difficulty the words, 'God bless you, Theophilus,' and spurring forward turned his back forever upon his native valley."

The emotion exhibited on this occasion, and the tears which he shed were noble proofs that he was a man of refined and cultivated mind, and that he possessed a heart capable of those amiable feelings which do so much honour to human nature.

The farm which became the property of this gentleman is, as before stated, situated on the south side of the river immediately opposite the famed Belleisle marsh. The eastern portion of it is now known as the "Chipman Farm"—late David Hall's—but the western division is the property of a grandson of the valiant old "Outlaw of the Bronx." His family consisted of (1) William, who married his cousin, a daughter of Stephen Delancey, of whom we have yet further to speak; (2) John, some time a major in the New Brunswick Fencibles, who died at Bridgetown, at an advanced age, unmarried; (3) Oliver, who died abroad at a comparatively early age, also unmarried; (4) Stephen, who recently died without issue; (5) Peter, who survived the others and lived on his farm in South Williamston, in the township of Annapolis, and was married to a daughter of the late John Starratt, by whom he had issue, two sons and several daughters. Of the sons of James, William, at least, was a student at King's College, Windsor, before the date of the charter of that institution. Oliver also matriculated there previously to his entering the army.*

One of the daughters of James De Lancey became the wife of the late Henry Goldsmith, Esq., who was for many years Collector of Customs at Annapolis—she died childless. Another daughter married Stephen Bromley, who was a son of Walter Bromley, the founder of the Acadian school in Halifax. By this marriage there was issue, two sons, of the elder of whom, Walter Henry Bromley, having joined the regiment in which his grandfather had served as a captain, the 23rd Royal Welsh Fusiliers,

* See any of the calendars of King's College. The "S" and "J" Delancey therein also named were probably sons of Stephen.

in 1855, it may be related in his honour, that he served during the Russian War in the Crimea, before Sebastopol, with much credit to himself and the service, having been twice wounded in the disastrous attack on the little Redan. When the Indian mutiny broke out a little later his regiment was ordered to the East, but not being immediately sent to the front, he volunteered by permission into the 42nd regiment, and fell mortally wounded in the attack made for the relief of Lucknow. James De Lancey was accompanied in his exile by his brother, Stephen De Lancey, who with his family settled in Annapolis town, where he died about 1801. He was in 1765 clerk of the city and county of Albany, N.Y., and afterwards recorder of the same city, and several times served as a commissioner to treat with the Indians. On June 4, 1776, he was dining with the mayor and a number of Loyalists in honour of the King's birthday, when they were all arrested and thrown into prison on a charge of disaffection. He was released in the December following, and in 1783 came to Annapolis, and the next year became a candidate for the representation of the township to fill a vacancy, was elected, and was again elected at the general election of 1785. He abandoned the House of Assembly, and accepted a seat at the Council Board at the close of the session of 1786. Murdoch follows Sabine in stating that he vacated his seat by accepting an office in the island of Tobago, but Sabine was in error in this particular, for the Governor of that island was probably a son of James De Lancey, sometime Lieutenant-Governor of New York.

Mr. De Lancey appears to have been an active, influential and intelligent member of the Assembly.* It was he who moved a resolution in 1786 to call all persons who were in any way indebted to the public treasury to the bar of the House to account for their delinquencies. In 1791 he was appointed one of a Board of Commissioners to investigate into and report upon the matter of titles to lands in Digby. In their report made to Sir John Wentworth in that year, they denounced the mismanagement of the Board of Agents and the carelessness of the early surveyors.

He had children, of whom one, a daughter, married a cousin, the late William De Lancey, of Round Hill, by whom she had issue, a son, Stephen, who long survived and resided on the paternal farm. His son, Cadwallader, left Annapolis about the time of his father's demise, and was never afterward heard from. It was believed that he perished at sea. Stephen De Lancey was succeeded in the Provincial Parliament by his brother James, before mentioned. Colonel James De Lancey held the seat until he was appointed a member of the Council in 1794 by Sir John Wentworth, the Lieutenant-Governor, and he continued a member of that Board until his death, May 2, 1804. He was also a useful and active member both of the Legislative and Executive Departments of the Government.

* The fifth Assembly. It existed fourteen years and held seventeen sessions.

Other members of this distinguished family should be mentioned here. Sir William F. De Lancey was probably a son of Stephen Delancey, the Governor of Tobago, and was Quartermaster-General of the British army under the Duke of Wellington at Waterloo. One of *his* daughters was the wife of Sir Hudson Lowe, the custodian of Napoleon I. in St. Helena. Ann De Lancey, one of the daughters of the founder of this family, married John Watts, who became a partner in the firm of De Lancey & Watts, for many years a leading mercantile house in the city of New York. Ann Watts, her daughter, married Captain Archibald Kennedy, R.N., who afterward became the eleventh Earl of Cassilis. This lady died in 1793, leaving a daughter who became the wife of Colonel Philip Kearney, and the mother of Stephen Watts Kearney, general in the United States army. Mary, another daughter of Mrs. Watts, was the wife of Sir John Johnston, Bart., and the wife of James Fenimore Cooper, the novelist, was a cousin to the subjects of this sketch.

THOMAS BARCLAY.

1785–1789, 1789–1793, 1793–1799.

This gentleman was born in New York in 1753, and was the son of the Rev. Henry Barclay, D.D., rector of Trinity Church in that city. After having graduated at Columbia College, he studied law in the office of the distinguished John Jay. Scarcely had he concluded his legal studies when he determined to abandon the profession and enter the ranks of another—that of arms. In accordance with this resolution, he obtained a captain's commission, and served for a short time under Sir William Howe. He was afterward under Sir Henry Clinton, and succeeded in gaining the rank of major when he was only twenty-four years of age. He continued in the service until the close of the rebellion, when he and his family came to Annapolis, where he settled and resumed the practice of law, in which he rapidly made his way to first place, having been soon engaged in one side or the other in every suit of importance brought before the courts of justice. His gentlemanly demeanour, high sense of honour, great intellectual powers and superior mental culture fitted him in a peculiar manner for the discharge of the public duties with which he might be intrusted, with credit to himself and satisfaction to those whom he served. Two years had scarcely elapsed from the date of his arrival in the Province, before he was induced to seek the suffrages of the electors of the county. Mr. Barclay and David Seabury, a fellow-loyalist, were colleagues in their candidature for the county seats. Alexander Howe opposed Seabury, and the contest was close and warm between them, Barclay using all his influence to carry

Seabury. The issue of this struggle will be more fully related in the memoir of Howe. Mr. Barclay was returned and took his seat in the Assembly on its meeting on the 5th of December, 1785.

Possessed of fine debating powers as well as of pleasing personal appearance, and endowed with an energy and perseverance scarcely to be excelled, it is no wonder that he soon became a leader in its deliberations, and immediately made his influence felt in the administration of public affairs.

It was during the period in which he served as a member of the Assembly that the celebrated Impeachment case was heard before the Legislature. In November, 1787, Thomas Millidge, the first member for the township of Digby, moved a resolution to impeach the judges of the Supreme Court on a series of charges of a very grave character, and Mr. Barclay at once lent him his most earnest endeavours in sustaining the prosecution. The course taken by these gentlemen seems to have been adopted under a deep conviction that a want of legal knowledge, or of honesty of purpose, had marked the conduct of the judges in certain causes which had been tried before them, in the county which they represented, and over whose general interests they were the chosen guardians.

The judges thus attacked were Deschamps and Brenton, who had many friends both in the Assembly and in the country, and they were warmly and ably defended in the press and on the floor of the House.

The articles of impeachment set forth, among other matters, that "Whereas the township of Annapolis was heretofore granted by His Majesty to divers persons to be by them held as tenants in common; and whereas the said township hath never from the granting thereof as aforesaid, to the exhibiting of these articles, been severed or divided between the said grantees . . . by any deed executed between the parties holding the same, or by any writs of partition executed; and whereas the said grantees, their heirs and assigns, did by a certain writing made under their respective hands, but not by them sealed, agree to a certain division of the said township; and whereas a certain action of trespass and ejectment, brought in the Supreme Court, in the month of May, 1787, by a certain Abner Morse, a proprietor of the said township, against a certain Samuel Morse, also a proprietor of a part of the said township," etc. I quote this much from the document containing the charges in order that the reader may understand what follows. It appears that the paper writing above referred to, was held, in the case of Morse against Morse, tried in May, to be a valid instrument of legal value; whereas in the case of Morse against Kent, tried in November of the same year, and which was in all legal points entirely similar, the judges refused to admit it as of any value whatever. These were friendly

actions, and were occasioned by the difficulties attending the disposal of real estate, and were intended to test the validity of the unsealed agreement of division mentioned in the preamble to the articles of impeachment.

Wheelock (Obadiah) against Messenger (Ebenezer), Kervin against Bonnel, Katherns against Pineo, and other causes were quoted in the articles to establish the charges which had been formulated. The discussions which took place on this subject were marked by much eloquence and greath warmth. On the one side Barclay and Millidge displayed powers in debate seldom witnessed in the legislative halls of the Province; on the other side Alexander Howe, Richard John Uniacke, and others exhausted every resource of ingenuity with an eloquence scarcely to be exceeded, in defence of their old friends the judges.

The two former, as we have already seen, were Loyalists, the two latter gentlemen were pre-loyalists, as were also the two judges, and it is possible that a spirit of rivalry between the two parties had begun to manifest itself in the Assembly, as it had already done in some of the counties, and that it influenced the combatants in this intellectual struggle.

In 1787 Mr. Barclay and his colleagues, Millidge and Howe, were appointed a committee by the Assembly to inquire into and report upon the propriety of granting bounties toward encouraging the erection of a furnace for the reduction of native iron ores, and their manufacture into bar iron, a duty they discharged by recommending a bounty of £40 on the construction of a smelting furnace, and a bonus of double that amount for the production of any quantity of iron made from native ores.

This action afterwards led to the opening of the mines at Nictaux and Clements, and deserves notice as the pioneer movement in the development of an industry which at Nictaux, at least, is now reaching the dimensions which its importance to the country demands.

The speakership having become vacant in 1789, by the acceptance of a seat in the Council, by Mr. Blowers, Mr. Barclay was nominated to fill the position; but his colleague—Howe—smarting no doubt, under a sense of the injury which he thought Barclay had done him in supporting Seabury, named Richard John Uniacke in opposition, who was chosen by a small majority. Mr. Barclay was, however, elected Speaker of the Assembly which met in 1793, and continued to fill the chair till the close of his services as a representative in 1799, when he entered the civil service of the Crown as "Consul General of the North and Eastern States," and removed from the Province, to which he never again returned.

The Assembly having met on the 7th of June, 1799, the Speaker resigned his seat, and on the 11th the formal thanks of the House were

given to him for "his long and faithful services," an act which reflected as much credit to the Assembly as it did upon Mr. Barclay.

During the American war of 1812-1815, he was employed by the British Government as "Commissary for the care and exchange of prisoners of war," and afterwards became England's commissioner under Articles IV. and V. of the Treaty of Ghent, and with Mr. Holmes —the United States commissioner—arranged the boundary line between the two governments in Passamaquoddy Bay, a very difficult and delicate task, but one which he succeeded in performing to the entire satisfaction of the British Government. Mr. Barclay's secretary was his son, Anthony Barclay, who was for many years British Consul for the city of New York.

Another of his sons, Colonel De Lancey Barclay, entered the army at an early age and was present at Waterloo, and was an aide-de-camp to George IV. for some years. He died in 1826. Of these two sons, the former was the younger. He matriculated at King's College, Windsor, in 1805, took his degree of B.A. in 1809, and that of D.C.L. in 1827. The latter was a student at King's before that period. Other sons of the subject of this notice were also educated in part or in whole in that honoured institution of learning.*

Previous to his leaving the Province, Mr. Barclay had obtained a grant of land from the Crown which had become liable to escheat in 1818 or 1819, and steps having been taken to revest the title in the Sovereign, he addressed the following letter to the Lieutenant-Governor of this province (Dalhousie) and Council, which, as it well illustrates his style as a writer and recounts somewhat minutely his varied and valuable services to the parent government, is transcribed in full:

"New York, February, 1820.

"My Lord,—I have received information from Mr. Ritchie,† of Annapolis, N.S., that it has been moved in H. M. Council at Halifax, to direct an inquest against certain lands in the township of Aylesford whereof my sons and myself are grantees under Letters Patent. Mr. Ritchie at the same time enclosed me a copy of petition which he had delivered to your lordship on this subject, on my behalf. As he has not stated my case so fully as I consider its merits demand, and as it rests wholly with your lordship whether the inquests shall be proceeded in or not, or if commenced to order the attorney-general to enter a *noble prosequi*, I beg leave to remark that had I remained in Nova Scotia, attending to my private affairs, the five thousand acres of land in Aylesford granted to me and my sons, and which I have since purchased from them, would long since have been in a state of cultivation to protect them against an escheat, and that there is even a considerable part of the tract now under cultivation.

"My duty to His Majesty considered it necessary for me in the year 1795 to

* The calendar of King's College.

† The late Judge Thomas Ritchie who was Mr. Barclay's agent in this province.

accept the appointment unsolicited on my part, of Commissioner under the fifth Article of the Treaty of Amity, Commerce and Navigation between His Majesty and the United States of America, and I had scarcely expected an advantageous decision of the question when I received orders from the Foreign Office, accompanied by His Majesty's commission to repair forthwith to this city as H. M. Consul-General for Eastern States of America, which office I filled until the commencement of the war in 1812, when I went to England. In 1813 Government considered it necessary to have me in those States during the war, and for that purpose clothed me with the appointment of 'Agent of prisoners of war.' Toward the close of 1814 I again returned to England.

"At the peace in December of that year, it was my intention to have returned to Nova Scotia to attend to my personal affairs, but His Majesty's ministers again required my services, and I was appointed commissioner under the fourth and fifth articles of the Treaty of Ghent.

"The first of them has been directed to the no small advantage of His Majesty, and the other is so far progressed in that I confidently hope it will be terminated either in this year or the next.

"Your lordship will perceive from this relation of facts—1. That it is owing to my absence from Nova Scotia that the lands above mentioned have not been treated according to the conditions of the grant; and 2. That this absence was not of my own seeking, but by the orders of my Sovereign. It would be a hard case, therefore, to deprive me of these lands, for want of an improvement, and revest them in the Crown, when my exertions were expressly interrupted and prevented by my being ordered and detained in foreign service.

"From the above statements I am led to hope your lordship will consider me entitled to more than ordinary indulgence, and be induced to interfere in my favour, in which event I will, as soon as I am favoured with your lordship's reply, if favourable, take immediate measures to the settlement and improvement of the remainder of the lands.*

"(Signed), THOMAS BARCLAY.

"His Excellency Earl Dalhousie."

Mr. Barclay died in New York in April, 1830, at the age of seventy years, a large number of which were devoted to the public service.

DAVID SEABURY.

1785–1786.

Mr. Seabury was a brother of Samuel Seabury, D.D., the first Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States, and also one of the fifty-five petitioners, with Abijah Willard, for lands in Nova Scotia. Sabine misnames him Daniel. Tradition affirms that he once owned and occupied the Alexander Howe farm (now Gesner's) in Granville.

Having taken an active part in the revolutionary war against the

* The escheat did not take place, and Mr. Barclay's heirs recently sold the lands to a gentleman of Aylesford (now of Annapolis), who has resold them to the present proprietors. They are now very valuable.

popular cause, he became a Loyalist exile, and with his wife and several children sought a new home in this province in 1783.

His wife, a very exemplary and pious woman, about 1792 became a warm adherent to the Wesleyan movement, which, through the missionary zeal of Black and other clever and devout men, made considerable advances at that period. Two of her daughters are said to have married Methodist ministers.*

Seabury was on two several occasions returned as member of the Assembly. In 1785 he first sought the suffrages of the people in opposition to Alexander Howe, who also for the first time became a candidate for a seat in the House. In the contest which ensued much heat and party acrimony were evolved, Mr. Seabury receiving the almost undivided support of the new Loyalist settlers, besides possessing the influence of the Sheriff, Doctor Tucker.

Mr. Seabury was declared duly elected, but on the petition of his opponent, the House vacated the seat and ordered the election to be run over. The same candidates took the field and the battle was fought over.

It was during the excitement of this period that Barclay drew upon himself the censure of the Assembly for words used in a letter published in a newspaper of the day, and which seemed to impeach the wisdom of that body in vacating the seat. Tucker again returned Seabury as having been duly chosen, and Howe again petitioned against the return, claiming the seat, which was finally awarded to him by a resolution of the Assembly. Mr. Seabury's public life seems to have closed with this contest, though he was a leading magistrate in the county for the succeeding twenty years of his residence in it. In 1791 he was appointed a commissioner, with William Winniett and John Rice, for the construction of a bridge over Allain's creek, and for some years after this date he was acting agent of the Government on Indian affairs. He was also lieutenant-colonel of the county militia.

Having been reduced in wealth previous to 1806, through heavy losses sustained in the trade in which he had some time before embarked all his available means, he determined to return to his old home in the State of New York, in which he had lived in the old colonial times. From the time of this event the writer has been unable to recover any particulars concerning him.

Mr. Seabury seems to have been a man of good parts and fair education, and to have possessed considerable energy of character, and that he exerted his abilities to the utmost in the direction of the public weal, there is no reason to doubt.

* Smith's "History of Methodism in the Lower Provinces," p. 246.

BENJAMIN JAMES.

1785–1793.

The subject of this notice came to this province with the other Loyalists in 1783. He was a native of Pennsylvania, and had served as an ensign in a Loyalist corps which saw active service during the war of the revolution, and toward its close was made acting commissary of a brigade in the King's service. At the date of his arrival here his household consisted of twelve souls, of whom seven were his children. He was a man of education and culture, and was placed in the commission of the Peace before the close of his first year's residence in the county, and in 1785 he was elected member for the township of Granville, and served until 1792, an entire septennial term. During this time he was more than once chosen chairman of the Committee on Public Accounts. He also gave his assistance to his colleagues and fellow-loyalists, Barclay and Millidge, in the Judges impeachment case. In 1799 he sold his farm to the Church of England for a glebe, and removed to Halifax, where he was employed as accountant in the dockyard, and it is believed that he died in that city a few years later.

His eldest son, Lieutenant Benjamin James, of the Royal Nova Scotia regiment, lost his life in 1797 in Halifax harbour, in the performance of an act of heroism, which is thus described in the inscription on his tombstone, which was erected at the expense of His Royal Highness the Duke of Kent: "This stone, sacred to the memory of Lieutenant Benjamin James, of His Majesty's Royal Nova Scotia Regiment, who lost his life in the attempt to render assistance to the *La Tribune* frigate, on the 2nd of November, 1797, aged twenty-nine years—is placed as a testimony of the high esteem entertained of his humane endeavours on that memorable occasion by Lieutenant-General, His Royal Highness Prince Edward, commanding in the district."

Another of his sons, John W., lost his life at the capture of the Island of St. Croix in the West Indies. Peter, a third son, married a daughter of Admiral Warren, and took up his residence in England, where he died. Of his two younger sons, Daniel only remained in the county. Thomas married and settled in Halifax.

THOMAS MILLIDGE.

1786–1793, 1793–1799, 1799–1806.

This gentleman was a native of the old colony of New Jersey, and was born in 1735. He was major in Skinner's Volunteers, and he is said by Sabine to have been Surveyor-General of the Province previous to the Revolution. That he was, in early life, a practical land surveyor seems

evident enough from the following traditionary anecdote, for which I am indebted to my father, who in his youth had more than once heard the story told by Mr. Millidge himself. The substance of the story is this:

On the approach of the rebel forces, under Washington, toward the English army, whose headquarters were then at, or in the vicinity of New York, the British commander, being desirous of obtaining a correct knowledge of the position and force of the enemy, with a view to an attack, called for the services of a sufficiently daring yet prudent and competent person, to secure the information sought. It was a well-understood fact that anyone taken within the American lines, without a pass, would be liable to forfeit his life as a spy, and it, therefore, became a matter of much difficulty to find a man at once sufficiently cool and courageous to undertake so dangerous a service. Mr. Millidge, however, determined to assume the task; and he executed it with entire success, as the sequel will show.

Having dressed himself as a farmer of the district, and removed the pocket linings from the capacious skirts of his coat, he placed in its thus widened recesses, a small package of cardboards, cut into squares and numbered, and so arranged that he could easily secure the required piece when wanted, without the aid of the eye; and having also placed therein a pencil, and all the materials necessary to his purpose, he set out boldly toward the headquarters of the rebel commander, and soon contrived to have himself arrested and taken into his presence. On being questioned by Washington—who informed him that he had been seized as a spy—he naively inquired of his interrogator if he were not the people's friend, adroitly adding that, if he were *not*, he had been cruelly deceived and imposed upon by the man who had told him if he wanted to see an army, he could do so in safety by coming here; and he had done so to see the people's army, and perhaps a battle; but as it seemed he had been betrayed into going into the wrong place, he hoped his excellency would let him go back to his family and farm, in which case he promised he would never leave them again while he lived.

All this was said with such rustic simplicity, earnestness, and apparent truthfulness, that Washington, who was entirely thrown off his guard, gave the countryman a pass, to enable him to gratify his supposed desire to see what might become a battle-field, and which did, in fact, become one a few weeks later, and to put in his power to report to his sympathising neighbours the strength of the continental army, and its almost certain prospects of success when the time should come to strike a blow against its enemy. Thus armed with permission he entered the lines and commenced his work. With his hands plunged into his capacious coat-skirts and with a pencil in one of them, and the package of cardboards so turned that number one was presented in a proper manner to

be used, he sauntered through the camp, sketching unseen and secretly the position of streams, hills, ravines, villages and other features of the place, and of the surrounding country, with the sites and strength of batteries and other required particulars.

Immediately after his departure, the rough notes which were thus taken, were reduced into order, and a plan made from them of sufficient accuracy to enable the English commander to execute a successful attack upon the rebel position.

These services were rewarded by a military appointment in connection with which he continued to serve the Crown with energy, skill, and faithfulness until the close of the war. In 1783 he, with his family and a large number of other Loyalist exiles, came to Digby, where he settled and continued to reside for several years. He was, almost at once, appointed one of the deputy land surveyors for the county, having been strongly recommended to that position by Sir Guy Carleton, afterward Lord Dorchester. He appears to have been held in high estimation by the Honourable Charles Morris, sen., who was then the Surveyor-General of the Province. Under date September 10th, 1785, in a letter addressed to Millidge, he says :* " I have such confidence in you that I have no doubt you can easily procure the Board's (of Agents) approbation of your accounts, whatever may have been alleged against you ;" and a few months later in the same year, he thus speaks of him in a letter to Phineas Millidge, who had just been made a deputy : " I have received your account and those of your excellent father. I am fully convinced of your readiness to exert yourself in the public business you may hereafter have assigned you, and I have not a doubt (being educated by so good a father) but that your professional education is equal to the task you have undertaken ;" and again in a communication to Neil MacNeil, another of his deputies, dated August, 1785, he says : "The point Mr. Brudenell claims (in Long Island, Digby County) appears to have been reserved for the use of the fishery. Mr. Brudenell will consult my deputy for Digby, Major Millidge, in whom I have much confidence ; and I shall in a great measure be guided by their report ;" and under the same date he writes to the major himself : " I have no cause to find fault with you as a surveyor, but I will tell you that you shamefully neglect your private business."

Mr. Millidge was in his fortieth year when he came to Digby. He had been married several years previously to Sarah Botsford, a daughter of Amos Botsford, of Newtown, Connecticut, who was also a Loyalist exile, and who was, for a time, the chief or chairman of the Board of Agents appointed by Governor Parr to superintend the location and settlement of many families who sought a new home under the old flag in this part

* Letter Book in MS. among Nova Scotia Archives.

of the Province. This gentleman removed to New Brunswick in 1785, where he was very soon elected a member of the first House of Assembly of that province, and was chosen its Speaker, a position for which his abilities and previous training peculiarly fitted him. He died in that province at a good old age, leaving a number of children and grandchildren behind him, who have always maintained a highly respectable position in society in that province.

By this marriage Mr. Millidge had a numerous family. His eldest son was Rev. John Millidge, D.C.L., long Rector of Granville and Annapolis, who married, first, a Miss Botsford; second, Annah Simonds; and by his last wife was the father of the late John J. Millidge, of Gagetown, N.B., and George S. Millidge, Judge of Probate, Annapolis. His second son was Stephen Millidge, who married Sarah Botsford, and was father of (1) Ann, married Israel Troop; (2) Mary, married Mansfield Cornwall; (3) Eliza, married Marmaduke Backhouse, M.D.; (4) Caroline, married Edward Hicks Cutler; (5) Jane, married Samuel Cornwall; (6) Phebe, married Hon. E. B. Chandler, of New Brunswick, M.E.C., Senator and Lieutenant-Governor; (7) William Pagan, d. unm. His third son, Thomas Botsford, married Sarah Simonds, of New Brunswick, and was a leading merchant of St. John. His fourth son, Phineas, married Catherine, daughter of the late Ebenezer Cutler, and was father of Elizabeth, first wife of Israel W. Ruggles (only child), and was for many years a deputy surveyor of the county; besides two daughters, one of whom married Thomas Walker, M.P.P.

It having been determined, in 1784-85, that the new township of Digby should be represented in the Assembly, Mr. Millidge sought the suffrages of the new constitueney, and became its first representative in 1786; and during the twenty years following, he filled a conspicuous place in the Legislature of the country. One of his first legislative acts was a motion to impeach Brenton and Deschamps, two of the Judges of the Supreme Court; and his addresses to the House on this occasion are said to have been distinguished for great ability and much eloquence. In 1789 Doctor John Day, the member for Newport, having moved that Wilmot (Annapolis) together with Rawdon, and Douglas, in Hants, should be allowed members to represent them in the Parliament, Mr. Millidge and Mr. James, the member for Granville, voted against the motion, though his colleague, Howe, and Barclay, the member for Annapolis, voted in its favour. I have not been able to ascertain either the grounds or the motives of his opposition to a measure which would have been popular among many of his own constituency.

Soon after this period, he was appointed a Justice of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, and for many years he continued to hold that honourable position. He had already become a colonel in the Annapolis

militia in the eastern district, as well as of the Acadian militia of the western district, now Digby.

At the general election which took place in 1793, he, in conjunction with his fellow-loyalist, James Moody, obtained the seats for the county, Henry Rutherford, another Loyalist, having been chosen in his place for Digby. In the session of this year he procured the passage of an Act to enable deputy surveyors to administer oaths to chain-bearers. Alexander Haines,* having set forth in a petition to the House that his "property in the United States had been confiscated, in consequence of which he was unable to discharge a bond he had given in 1766 to one Daniel Woods, of the United States, who had obtained judgment thereon, and had issued an execution, and thrown him into jail at Annapolis, where he had been confined a long time, to the extreme distress of an infirm wife and numerous family," Mr. Millidge moved that it be referred to a special committee; and he as chairman of that committee soon after reported a bill for the relief of the petitioner which he had the pleasure to see passed into an Act.

In the following year, he and Captain Howe were appointed a committee to wait upon His Royal Highness the Duke of Kent, who had just arrived at Halifax, to inquire when the prince would be pleased to receive the loyal address of the House of Assembly. In 1796 he framed and introduced a bill for the "laying out, altering and repairing of roads and bridges," which became law, and continued in force for several years.

Disputes having arisen out of the conduct of the Board of Agents, who had been appointed to superintend the allotment of lands in Digby to the Loyalist exiles in 1783, and the carelessness of some of the first surveyors employed, legislative interference became necessary, and a bill to "Quiet the Possession of Lands at Digby" having been brought forward, Mr. Millidge gave it all the support in his power, though he had been one of the surveyors under that Board, and left no influence which he could exert unused, till it became a fixture on the statute book of the Province.

In the general election which occurred in 1806 he announced himself a candidate for the representation of Granville, the township in which he lived. For the particulars of this election, and the failure of Mr. Millidge to secure the seat on petition, see page 216.

He was *custos rotulorum*† of the county for nearly twenty years, as well as a leading and efficient Justice of the Peace, and in both capacities he proved a faithful and upright officer. In all matters touching the

* Many descendants of this man reside in various districts in Digby and Annapolis counties. (See his petition in Nova Scotia Archives.) No general Insolvent Debtors' Law then existed.

† President of the Bench of Magistrates.

Bench of Magistrates his advice was sought by successive lieutenant-governors in those old days of irresponsible government, but to the honour of Thomas Millidge be it said, he was careful to recommend those only to fill public offices who were worthy and capable, and who therefore adorned the positions to which, through his recommendation, they had been promoted.

The farm on which he lived, and which he owned, was that now owned and occupied by J. Bernard Calnek, Esq., J.P., with the lot next adjoining it on the west side. In his capacity as a cultivator of the soil, his example and influence were highly beneficial to the community in which he lived and laboured. His sudden death from apoplexy, which occurred in 1816, left a blank in the county which was neither soon nor easily filled.

ALEXANDER HOWE.

1786-1793, 1793-1799.

Three years after the disastrous fight at Grand Pré, in Horton, in which the brothers Noble—colonel and ensign—were killed, and Edward How* severely wounded, there was born to the latter in the old town of Annapolis a son, whose name and subsequent history are by no means so well known by his countrymen of to-day as they deserve to be. The birth of this child occurred only a few months before the melancholy death of his father, in October, 1750. He bore the name of Alexander, and was the youngest of six or seven children, possibly of more. At the age of twelve years he is said to have been with Sir William Amherst in the expedition fitted out for the recapture of Newfoundland in 1762.† It is certain, however, that in 1757, at the age of seventeen, he became an ensign in the 36th regiment, then on service in the West Indies, by purchase. In 1771 he was still a lieutenant in the same regiment and continued to serve as a subaltern therein for thirteen years. At the end of this period he sold his commission, and obtained a captaincy in the 104th regiment in 1780. In 1783, being still in the West Indies, and in ill-health, he again sold his commission and returned to his native province and county, in which he remained domiciled till about the beginning of the century.

Two years after his return the conditions of the country had undergone a great change. Its population had been nearly, if not quite doubled by the arrival and settlement of American Loyalists, the

* The subject of this memoir usually wrote his name Howe. His father's was always How.—[Ed.]

† See memorial of his widow to George IV., 1828, in Nova Scotia documents It is highly probable that he was a *protégé* of Sir William—not a volunteer.

principal men among whom were in education and manners generally superior to the older settlers; and were eager to assume a front place in the administration of local and general public affairs. A general election was about to take place, and already three Loyalist candidates were in the field, when Captain Howe determined to contest one of the seats for the county.

It is an interesting study to trace the development and progress of the spirit of rivalry which now began to exist between the old and the more recent settlers—a rivalry that continued to prevail for nearly, if not quite a half century (1783-1830), or until the amalgamation and interfusion of the parties by marriage and other causes obliterated the ancient marks of variance. This election struggle affords a fine example of the warmth which characterized this feeling. Howe, as we already know, was of a family which had resided in the Province years before the advent of even the old Massachusetts settlers of 1760, and was himself a native. He ran in opposition to David Seabury, the Loyalist colleague of Thomas Barclay. Two other Loyalists of culture and ability were candidates for Granville and Annapolis—Benjamin James for the former, and Colonel Stephen De Lancey for the latter. Robert Tucker, M.D., the Sheriff, was a Loyalist, and though he may not have exercised undue or illegal influence, it is certain that his sympathies were with his brother Loyalists, and against Howe. In the face of all the influences exerted against him, influences derived from the wealth, education and *elan* of the men who had fought for the Mother Country during all the bloody war of the Revolution, it would indeed have been a matter of surprise if he had been successful. Another element of defeat was his long previous absence from the county. Seabury was returned, but Howe claimed the seat and petitioned against the return. The grounds on which the complaint rested do not appear, but, after a patient hearing, the Assembly declared the election void and the seat vacant, and ordered a new election, which took place the same year, 1786. This new struggle was attended with great heat and excitement. Mr. Barclay addressed a letter to his chief friends and supporters in the country, urging them to strain every effort to return Seabury. The letter was addressed to Messrs. Totten, Dickson, St. Croix, De Lancey, Lovett, Prince, Pineo, Thorne and Cornwall. After complaining against the action of the Assembly and declaring that "*the majority of members appeared to have come determined, right or wrong, to vacate the election*,* he adds: "Matters being thus circumstanced it calls forth all our exertions to support our interest, and we shall deserve our fate if we

* Mr. Barclay was made to apologize to the House for these words. I am indebted to a file of *Shelburne* newspapers, for 1786, for the text of this letter. The file referred to may be seen in the Nova Scotia Historical Society's Collection.

permit Captain Howe to carry his election." In another paragraph he says: "Colonel De Lancey must again revisit Digby and every man that has interest there. Mr. St. Croix and the Messrs. Ruggles must attend to Wilmot and send word to Colonel and Lieutenant Robinson to have the mountain people down;" and he concludes with these words: "What a shame it will be to lose our election, and how great a right will the Province at large have to ground their opinion on if Captain Howe should again be returned." This letter bore date December, 1785, and the election was soon to take place. Every effort was made and Sheriff Tucker again returned Seabury as duly elected, and again Howe petitioned against the return. On the meeting of the Assembly a resolution was moved declaring that the return should be amended by inserting Howe's name therein instead of Seabury's, which was carried by a majority of two to one, and thus the struggle ended.

It was at this session of the House, June, 1789, that Mr. Barclay was ordered to apologize to the Assembly for words used in the letter from which I have quoted. The precise words complained of were those I have italicized above.

The impeachment of the Judges in 1787, on motion of Mr. Millidge, and the part taken by Mr. Howe in the spirited debates that ensued, have been related in the memoir of Mr. Barclay.

In 1791 Mr. Howe was collector of imposts and excise at Annapolis, though he resided in Granville, as appears from a letter addressed to Mr. Bulkeley, dated from that place, October 28th, in which he says:

"Mr. Clark* has joined me and we shall proceed in the further prosecution of His Excellency's directions, with regard to the *black people* that may *voluntarily* choose to remove to Sierra Leone.† By this day fortnight at furthest, in consequence of my advertisement (which I am happy to find is almost literally what is the first part of His Excellency's in the papers), we shall be able to ascertain the number, provide the tonnage and provisions, and send them off by the middle of November, or the 21st at furthest. After Monday I shall despatch Mr. Clark to Digby, and join him myself as soon as our Courts‡ are over. We have wrote to Governor Carlton and sent thence a transcript of our instruction as far as it relates to him."

In the following year (1792) he seems still to have lived in Granville; indeed there is a letter extant which affirms the fact, and speaks of his farm, which was that now, and for many years past, known as the *Gesner Farm*. It is said by tradition that his political opponent, Seabury, once owned the same property, and that it was purchased from him by Mr. Howe. The letter to which reference has just been made, was addressed

* This was Job Bennett Clark, afterwards of Sidney, C.B., where he died about the year 1814.

† Several cargoes of negroes were transported at the public expense, and by their own consent, to this African colony at this time.

‡ Mr. Howe was at the time a Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.

to the Provincial Secretary, and was concerning the removal of the negroes. In it he says he has charged one pound per day for the services in that matter, which if His Excellency thinks is too much, may be reduced, and he affirmed he "would rather have His Excellency's approbation than any pecuniary compensation," but he adds, with much *naiveté*, that he was "never so much in want of money, my Jamaica attorneys not having made any returns for several years." From this it is plain he possessed an interest in some plantation in that island.

At the general election, which occurred near the close of 1792, Mr. Howe was again a candidate, and a successful one. On the meeting of the new Assembly his old opponent Barclay was chosen Speaker, but whether he was opposed by Howe, as on a former occasion, I do not know.

His parliamentary life and labours came to a close in 1799. His public career as a representative, therefore, covers the space of thirteen years, 1786-1799. It is to be regretted that no extended reports of the speeches of members of this period have come down to our times. Judging from the shreds of correspondence and fragments of speeches which have survived to the present day, he seems to have been a gentleman of very considerable culture and intellectual power, and tradition still assures us that he was esteemed for a humane and kindly disposition, and amiable social qualities. His connection with the county terminated in 1797 or 1798, though he continued to represent it in the Assembly until 1799. He removed to the capital, where he was for some time charged with the management of the *Maroons*. Shortly after the beginning of the century he received the appointment of Assistant Commissary-General in Prince Edward Island, and was made a member of the Council there. These positions he held until 1811, when he resigned them both and returned to this province, taking up his residence in the town of Dartmouth. Before his departure from the Island he was presented with the following address, which is here given as an illustration of the high estimation his social and official conduct had gained for him during his residence there:

"SIR,—The many years you have resided here have afforded us ample opportunity of forming a just estimate of your private and public character and conduct. The test of time has stamped both with a value that cannot be effaced from our recollection. In your private situation we lose a kind-hearted friend, a sensible acquaintance, and a cheerful companion.

"In the public capacity as a member of His Majesty's Council, the Island will be deprived of those serviceable talents, of that firm aid, experience, and support, of that excellent knowledge in colonial legislation which, for a long series of years, has so justly and deservedly drawn forth the unanimous encomiums of this community. Your wish, so often reported, in the fulness of your heart, of making this Island your constant home, and of ending your days with us, has made that lively impression on our minds, which sentiments so kindly expressed justly merit, and renders your departure the more to be lamented.

"We cannot conclude without expressing our firm hope that your long services will not be allowed to go unrewarded, and that you will still meet with a remuneration from Government, sufficiently ample to make the evening of your days glide on with ease and comfort. Wishing you and your family every happiness and prosperity, we remain with sincere regard and esteem, etc., etc."

To this rather incoherent, grandiose and ill-written, but warm-hearted and friendly address, which was signed by George Irving, High Sheriff of Prince Edward Island, on behalf of the inhabitants, Mr. How made the following neatly expressed and appropriate reply:

"GENTLEMEN,—The kind and honourable testimony your approbation bears of my public and private conduct, since my arrival in this Island, is truly gratifying to me, and for which I give you my most sincere thanks. I assure you, gentlemen, that your very kindly sentiments on the subject of my departure are, and ever shall be, indelibly impressed on my heart; while it beats I will retain the affectionate respect I feel for a society in which I have been treated with the greatest kindness and hospitality, and with which it would be my pride, as well as my wish, to live.

"Circumstances having taken place by which I am obliged to quit the Island, I leave you with unfeigned sorrow, wishing your families every happiness that can be bestowed on the most favoured subjects of the Almighty's care.

"With my most earnest prayer for the prosperity of this Island, and all its inhabitants, I have the honour to remain, with affectionate regard, etc., etc.

"(Signed), ALEXANDER HOWE."

He married Margaret Ann Green, daughter of Harry Green, and granddaughter of Benjamin Green, the first Provincial Treasurer, by whom he had several children—three of whom survived him. Of these, one son was educated at King's College, Windsor, and was a class-mate of the late Rev. John Millidge, LL.D. His name was Richard John Uniacke Howe. Soon after leaving college he entered the military service, and became a captain in the 81st regiment. In 1838 he married, at Ilfracombe, in Devonshire, Judith, daughter of Thomas Benson, Esq., of Cockermouth, Cumberland, and retired on half-pay in 1840. Of the two other children no particulars have been obtained, even their sex remaining unknown to me.

He died in Dartmouth, in January, 1813, in the sixty-fourth year of his age. His widow, who survived him *thirty-three* years, died in the same town, at a very advanced age, in 1847. An interesting relic of this lady was in 1882 in the possession of Mrs. Edwin Morse, of Bridgetown, in the form of an arm-chair which is known as "Madam Howe's chair" to this day. It was probably purchased at the sale of Howe's effects, on his removal from the county, by Mrs. Morse's father, who was a neighbour.

HENRY RUTHERFORD.

1793–1799, 1799–1806, 1806–1808.

This gentleman was a Loyalist who settled in the town of Digby in 1783, where he became a prominent and enterprising merchant. No particulars are extant concerning his life and doings before his advent to the Province. That he was prosperous as a trader and popular as a man after his settlement here is certain; and it is also true that he was a man of good education, and possessed of average ability and considerable individuality of character.

He was first elected to a seat in the Assembly for the township of Digby at the general election of 1793, having been chosen in the place of Thomas Millidge, who on this occasion, with James Moody for a colleague, sought and obtained the seats for the county. Mr. Rutherford was, therefore, the second representative of the township of Digby. During the first session of this Assembly he introduced a measure for "Regulating the Herring Fishery of Annapolis and Digby," a branch of industry much prized by him, and in the prosecution of which he was actively engaged.

Mr. Rutherford was one of the contractors for the construction of the road leading from Digby to Sissiboo (now Weymouth), in 1788, under John Warwick, Thomas Gilbert, and Jesse Hoyt, who were the commissioners for the work. In 1799 he was again a candidate for the township of Digby, and had the honour of again being chosen its representative. During the seven following years he discharged the duties incumbent upon his honourable position, to the satisfaction of his constituents. Three years previously, he, with Moody and Millidge, M.P.P's, petitioned the Assembly in relation to lands at Digby, setting forth among other matters, that "in 1765, 125,000 acres of land were granted to Colonel McNutt and associates, by the name of Conway; that Sebastian Zouberbuhler was one of the grantees, and the only one whose assigns made improvements; that this grant had never been recorded; that in 1784, a grant of 100,000 acres out of the McNutt grant passed to three hundred and one persons without escheat first had; Amos Botsford had been the agent to assign to each of these grantees his proper share, not to interfere with the improvements; and that after the removal of the said Botsford to New Brunswick, the Reverend Edward Brudenell, John Stump and John Hill were appointed in his place; that this Board of Agents had assigned to others than grantees portions of the said grant by lot and number, without set bounds; that many of the said grantees have gone to other countries and made no improvements, and that those now in possession, not named in the grant, have no sort of title," and

Mr. Rutherford, therefore, asked leave to bring in a bill to "Quiet Possessions of Lands in Digby."* He had the pleasure to see this important measure carried to a successful issue.

Shortly after he introduced a bill for regulating the exportation "of red, or smoked herrings." This measure had reference to the now famed "Digby chickens," the curing and exportation of which still continues to be a lucrative industry. In 1801 he was one of the commissioners for the expenditure of money on the road from Digby to Bear River. Elisha Budd and Isaac Hatfield were his fellow-commissioners in this work. On the 27th June, 1803, he introduced a bill to provide for the maintenance of a light-house at "the gut," and another to enable the inhabitants of the town of Digby to improve the public common.

In 1806 Mr. Rutherford was for the third time a candidate for legislative honours, but on this occasion he sought one of the seats for the county. Thomas Ritchie was his colleague in this election, and they were both returned. He did not, however, live long to enjoy his success, for in May, 1808, the name of Phineas Lovett (colonel) appears on the roll as M.P.P., *vice* Rutherford *deceased.* He, therefore probably died in 1807.

Mr Rutherford played no mean part in his position as a legislator. During the sixteen years of his service in that capacity, he sat in an Assembly which can boast of a list of names distinguished in the annals of the Province. Barclay and Millidge, Uniacke and Alexander Howe, were men whose ability and culture were far beyond the limits of mediocrity, and a half century passed away before their places became filled with their equals; and though, perhaps, inferior to these in more showy qualities, the subject of this memoir may be fairly classed as their equal in practical good sense, in sound judgment, and in recognized integrity of purpose and action. He was a merchant, largely interested in the West Indian trade, in which, it is believed, he was tolerably successful. He had several children, though the *name*, I believe, has become extinct in the community which owes so much to his useful and active life. David Rutherford, one of his sons, was living in Digby in 1825, and another son, Dennis, was there in 1821. One of his daughters married the late John F. Hughes, a merchant of Digby, and left descendants, some of whom, it is believed, are still to be found in that county. Another daughter, Mary, married the Rev. Cyrus Perkins, Rector of Annapolis, and left descendants here.

* See manuscript in Archives for 1786.

JAMES MOODY.

1793–1799.

[For the major portion of the author's extended sketch of this gentleman, I will substitute the subject's own narrative or autobiography, written in 1782, and now very rare, the author not having been able to find a copy of it, but quoting it largely at second-hand from Sabine's "Loyalists." I am indebted for the opportunity of perusing and transcribing it to the courtesy of Mrs. Margaret J. Bingay, widow of the late Thomas Van Buskirk Bingay, Esq., Barrister, of Yarmouth, the great-granddaughter and eldest living descendant of Lieutenant Moody.—Ed.]

Lieut. James Moody's Narrative of his Exertions and Sufferings in the Cause of the Government since the year 1776.

Choice and plan it would seem, have seldom much influence in determining either men's characters or their conditions. These are usually the result of circumstances utterly without our control. Of the truth of this position, the writer's own recent history affords abundant proofs.

Seven years ago, few human events seemed more improbable than that he, a plain, contented farmer, settled on a large, fertile, pleasant, and well-improved farm of his own, in the best climate and happiest country in the world, should ever beat his plowshare into a sword, and commence a soldier. Nor was it less improbable that he should ever become a writer, and be called upon to print a narrative of his own adventures. Yet necessity and a sense of duty, contrary to his natural inclination, soon forced him to appear in the former of these characters; and the importunity of his friends has now prevailed with him to assume the latter.

When the present ill-fated rebellion first broke out, he was, as he has already hinted, a happy farmer, without a wish or an idea of any other enjoyment than that of making happy and being made happy with a beloved wife and three promising children. He loved his neighbours, and hopes they were not wholly without regard for him. Clear of debt, and at ease in his possessions, he had seldom thought much of political or State questions; but he felt and knew he had every possible reason to be grateful for, and attached to, that glorious constitution to which he owed his security. The first uneasiness he ever felt on account of the public, was when, after the proceedings of the first Congress were known, he foresaw the imminent danger to which this constitution was exposed; but he was completely miserable when, not long after, he saw it totally overturned.

The situation of a man who, in such a dilemma, wishes to do right, is trying and difficult. In following the multitude he was sure of popularity; this is always pleasing, and it is too dearly bought only when a

man gives up for it the approbation of his own conscience. He foresaw, in its fullest force, that torrent of reproach, insult and injury which he was sure to draw down on himself and his family by a contrary conduct; nor does he wish to deny that for some time these overawed and staggered him. For himself he felt but little; but he had either too much or too little of the man about him to bear the seeing of his nearest and dearest relatives disgraced and ruined. Of the points in debate between the parent State and his native country, he pretended not to be a competent judge; they were studiously so puzzled and perplexed that he could come to no other conclusion than that, however real or great the grievances of the Americans might be, rebellion was not the way to redress them. It requires, moreover, but little skill to know that rebellion is the foulest of all crimes, and that what was begun in wickedness must end in ruin. With this conviction strong upon his mind, he resolved that there was no difficulty, danger or distress which, as an honest man, he ought not to undergo, rather than see his country thus disgraced and undone. In spite, therefore, of his incapacity, in spite of disinclination—nay, in spite even of concern for his family—with the most ardent love for his country, and the warmest attachment to his countrymen, he resolved to do anything and to be anything, not inconsistent with integrity—to fight, to bleed, to die—rather than see the venerable constitution of his country totally lost, and his countrymen enslaved. What the consequences of this resolution have been, it is the intention of the following pages to describe.

The facts now to be related have many of them been occasionally published in the New York papers, but in a state so mutilated and imperfect as rather to excite than gratify curiosity. They are here brought together under one view in a connected narrative, and set down just as they happened. It is not pretended that all his adventures are here related; or that all the circumstances of those related are fully enumerated. It would be impolitic and dangerous for him to recount at large all his various stratagems; it would be barbarous and base to divulge all the means by which he has sometimes effected his almost miraculous escapes. But were it otherwise, nothing can be further from his aim than to make a pompous display of any supposed merit of his own. As to the truth of his principal facts, he appeals to sundry certificates and affidavits now in his possession; nay, he further appeals to every officer of every rank, who has either lately served or is still serving in America. Yet after all, from the nature of the case, the credit of some parts of this narrative must rest upon his own authority, which, he believes, will not be questioned by those who are acquainted with his character.

Of the true causes that gave birth to this unhappy quarrel, Mr. Moody

is unwilling to give any opinion. He is no politician; and, therefore, by no means qualified to reconcile the contradictory assertions and arguments of the contending parties. This only, as an individual of that description of people of whom the greatest part of every community must consist, he thinks it incumbent on him to declare that it did not originate with the *people* of America, properly so called. They felt no real grievances, and therefore could have no inducement to risk substantial advantages in the pursuit of such as were only imaginary. In making this declaration, he is confident he speaks the sentiments of the great majority of the peasantry of America. But in every country there are multitudes who, with little property and perhaps still less principle, are always disposed, and always eager for a change. Such persons are easily wrought upon, and easily persuaded to enlist under the banner of pretended patriots and forward demagogues, of whom also every country is sufficiently prolific.

In America these popular leaders had a set of men to assist them, who inherited from their ancestors the most rooted dislike and antipathy to the constitution of the parent State; and by means of their friendly co-operation, they were able to throw the whole continent into a state of ferment in the year 1774, and maddened almost every part of the country with associations, committees and liberty-poles, and all the preliminary apparatus necessary to a revolt. The general cry was "Join or die!" Mr. Moody relished neither of these alternatives, and therefore remained on his farm a silent but not unconcerned spectator of the black cloud that had been gathering, and was now ready to burst on his devoted head. It was in vain that he took every possible precaution consistent with a good conscience not to give offence. Some infatuated associations were very near consigning him to the latter of these alternatives, only because neither his judgment nor his conscience would suffer him to adopt the former. He was perpetually harassed by these committees; and a party employed by them once actually assaulted his person, having first flourished their tomahawks over his head in a most insulting manner. Finding it impossible either to convince these associators or to be convinced by them, any longer stay among them was useless, and an attempt made on him soon after made it impossible. On Sunday, March 28th, 1777, while he was walking in his grounds with his neighbour, Mr. Hutcheson, he saw a number of armed men marching toward his house. He could have no doubt of their intentions, and endeavoured to avoid them. They fired three different shots at him, but happily missed him, and he escaped. From this time, therefore, he sought the earliest opportunity to take shelter behind the British lines, and set out for this purpose in April, 1777. Seventy-three of his neighbours, all honest men of the fairest and most respectable characters,

accompanied him in this retreat. The march was long and dangerous. They were repeatedly annoyed and assaulted, and once they were under the necessity of coming to an engagement with a rebel party considerably superior in number. Men circumstanced as he and his friends were, could want no arguments to animate their exertions. The attack was sharp, but the Loyalists were successful, the enemy giving way, leaving them at liberty to pursue their route unmolested. The whole company, four only excepted, arrived safe at Bergen, where they joined Lieutenant-Colonel Barton's brigade. A few whose professions were calculated to render them useful in that department, joined the engineers.

In June following Mr. Moody and Mr. Hutcheson went privately about seventy miles into the country to enlist the friends of government. They enlisted upwards of five hundred men. The British army, then at Brunswick, was expected immediately to march through New Jersey. Mr. Moody and his friends had their agents properly placed to give them the earliest information of the army's moving, when their plan was to disarm the disaffected and generally arm the loyal. Let the reader then judge of their mortification when, whilst their adherents were high in spirits and confident of their ability, at one blow, as it were, to have crushed the rebellion in New Jersey, they were informed that General Howe had evacuated the Province, and was gone to the southward. Notwithstanding this discouragement, Mr. Moody and his party still continued in the country agreeably to their instructions, in the hope that some opportunity would still present itself to annoy the rebellious and to assist the loyal. But no such opportunity offering immediately, they soon received orders to join the army with the men they had enlisted or could enlist.

In consequence of these instructions they set forward with about one hundred Loyalists (not more than that number, from the change of prospects, were then to be prevailed upon to leave their own country; or if it had been otherwise the time was too scanty, being not more than forty-eight hours to collect them together, which it must be obvious was to be done only with great secrecy and caution), on a march of upwards of seventy miles, through a well-inhabited part of the Province. The rebels pursued them; and after several skirmishes at length came upon them with such force near Perth-Amboy, that they were obliged to give way and disperse. More than sixty of the party were taken prisoners; eight only besides Mr. Moody got within the British lines. These prisoners, after being confined in Morristown jail, were tried for what was called high treason, and above one-half of them were sentenced to die. Two, whose names were Iliss and Mee, were actually executed, the rest having been reprieved on condition of their serving in the rebel army. The love of life prevailed. They enlisted, but so strong was

their love of loyalty at the same time that, three or four excepted, who died under the hands of their captors, they all very soon after made their escape to the British army.

On comparing the number who had at first set out with him, with those who, after being taken, had returned to him, Mr. Moody found that on the alarm, some had escaped ; and some also, who had been taken and released being still missing, he concluded that they had gone back to their respective homes. This induced him to return without delay into the country, and he came back with nineteen men. Convinced that there were still many more, on whom good advice and a good example might have their proper influence, he again went out and brought back with him forty-two young men, as fine soldiers as are in the world ; some of them had just escaped from jails where they had been confined for their loyalty. All these he was happy enough to conduct safe to the king's army. From this time he continued with his battalion till 1778, having just before been made an ensign.

In the beginning of May, 1778, he was again sent into the interior parts of the rebel country, with orders to remain there as long as he could, to render such service to the Government and its friends as he should have an opportunity for, and more especially to obtain precise intelligence from Colonel Butler then supposed to be at Niagara. He employed a trusty Loyalist to go out to Colonel Butler, who fell in with him between Niagara and Wyoming, and was with him at the reduction of this last-named fortress ; and afterwards along with another of Mr. Moody's men (who, having been driven from him in the disaster just related, had gone back, and stayed with Colonel Butler all the winter, as the only place of safety he could find) he returned with the necessary information, with which they all went back and reported them at headquarters. In this interval Mr. Moody took prisoner a Mr. Martin, chief commissioner in that district for the selling of confiscated estates, a man remarkable for his spite and cruelty to the friends of the Government. It was very mortifying to Mr. Moody to have this man rescued from him by a large body of the militia after having had him in his custody about forty-eight hours. But he relates with pleasure that this incident had a good effect on this furious oppressor, inasmuch as his behaviour to his loyal neighbours was ever after much more mild and humane.

On June 10th, 1779, an opportunity of rendering some service to his country now offering, having first requested Mr. Hutcheson and six men and some guides to be of the party, he marched with sixteen of his own men from Sandy Hook to Shrewsbury. They eluded the vigilance of a rebel guard, and gained a place called the Falls. Here they surprised and took prisoners, one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, one major and

two captains, with several other persons of inferior note, and without injuring any private property destroyed a considerable magazine of powder and arms. With these prisoners, and such public stores as they were able to bring off, Mr. Hutcheson was charged, whilst Mr. Moody brought up the rear with his sixteen men to defend them. They were, as they had expected, soon pursued by double their number and overtaken. Mr. Moody kept up a smart fire on his assailants, checking and retarding them till Mr. Hutcheson with their booty got ahead to a considerable distance. He then also advanced, making for the next advantageous station, and thus proceeded from one spot to another, still covering the prisoners, till they gained a situation on the shore at Black Point where the enemy could not flank them. But just at this time the pursuers were reinforced with ten men! So that they were now forty strong. Mr. Hutcheson with one man crossed the inlet, behind which he had taken shelter, and came to Mr. Moody's assistance, and now a warm engagement ensued that lasted for three-quarters of an hour. By this time all their ammunition, amounting to upwards of eighty rounds of cartridges, was expended, and ten men only, three of whom were wounded, were in any capacity to follow their leader to the charge. The bayonet was their only resource, but this the enemy could not withstand; they fled, leaving eleven of their number killed or wounded. Unfortunately, Mr. Moody's small but gallant party could not follow up their blow, being in a manner utterly exhausted by a long harassed march, in weather intensely hot. They found the rebel captain dead, and their lieutenant also expiring on the field. There was something particularly shocking in the death of the former. He was shot by Mr. Moody whilst, with the most bitter oaths and threats of vengeance, after having missed once, he was again levelling his piece at him. Soon after this engagement one of the party came forward with a handkerchief flying from a stick, and demanded a parley. His signal was returned, signifying the willingness of the Loyalists to treat with him; and a truce was speedily agreed upon, the conditions of which were: That they should have leave to take care of their dead and wounded, whilst Mr. Moody's party was permitted, unmolested, to return to the British lines. Happily none of the wounds which any of his men received in this expedition proved mortal. The public stores which they brought away with them (besides those which they had destroyed) sold for upwards of £500 sterling, and every shilling of this money was given by Mr. Moody to the men as a small reward for their very meritorious conduct.

About the middle of October following, Mr. Moody was again sent into the interior parts of the rebel country to obtain intelligence respecting Washington's army. He succeeded, and his intelligence was communicated to General Pattison. Again about the middle of November

he was desired to find out the situation and circumstances of an army under the rebel General Sullivan, which had lately been on an expedition to the westward against the Indians. Accordingly he went eighty miles into Pennsylvania, close by Sullivan's camp, and obtained an exact account of the number of men and horses with which he went out from Easton on this Indian expedition, and the number also that he returned with.

From thence he went to Morris County, where Washington then lay with his army. And here he had the good fortune to obtain from their own books an account of the rations which were drawn for them. He next went to Pumpton, where General Gates then was, on his march to the southward, and here also he gained the exact information not only of the amount of the force then with him, but the number that were expected to join him. And now having pretty well gone through the business entrusted to him, he returned to New York, and continued there till next year.

In May, 1780, he took with him four trusty men, and went into the rebel country with the intention of surprising Governor Livingstone, a man whose conduct had been in the most abandoned degree cruel and oppressive to the loyal inhabitants of New Jersey. When with all necessary secrecy, Mr. Moody had got into his immediate neighbourhood, information was received that Mr. Livingstone was gone to Trenton to meet the Assembly ; and that on his return he was to see some persons on business at an appointed place. This made it necessary for the ensign to alter his measures, as he did immediately. He led his party into Sussex County and there left them, himself only retiring to a proper situation till his plan should be ripe for execution. Being under the necessity of again returning into Sussex before anything could be done, he had the mortification to find that one of his men had been taken prisoner by a rebel major of the name of Hoops, who extorted a confession from him that Moody was in the country, and as he imagined in quest of some person of note, who lived near Morristown. This blasted the whole project ; the intelligence was instantly sent to Livingstone, who justly concluded himself to be the person aimed at, and of course took every precaution to prevent a surprise.

Still, however, Mr. Moody flattered himself he should yet be more fortunate, and do something notwithstanding the alarm that was now spread through the country. The first plausible thing that offered was a plan to blow up the magazine at Suckasunne about sixteen miles back of Morristown; but this also proved abortive, for notwithstanding his having prevailed on some British prisoners, taken with General Burgoyne, to join him in his enterprise, the alarm was now become so general and the terror so great that they had increased their guard around this magazine

to the number of one hundred and upwards, so that he was under the necessity of abandoning his project.

Returning again into Sussex County, he now heard that several prisoners were confined on various suspicions and charges of loyalty in the jail of that county, that one of them was actually under sentence of death. This poor fellow was one of Burgoyne's soldiers, charged with crimes of a civil nature, of which, however, he was generally believed to be innocent. But when a clergyman of the Church of England interposed with his unrelenting prosecutor, and warmly urged this plea of innocence, he was sharply told, that though he might not perhaps deserve to die for the crime for which he had been committed, there could be no doubt of his deserving to die as an enemy to America. There was something so piteous as well as shameful in the case of this ill-fated victim to republican resentment, that it was determined, if possible, to release both him and his fellow-prisoners. For this purpose Mr. Moody took with him six men; and late at night entered the county town about seventy miles from New York. The inhabitants of this town were but too generally disaffected. This suggested the necessity of stratagem. Coming to the jail, the keeper called out from the window of an upper room and demanded what their business was. The ensign instantly replied: "He had a prisoner to deliver into his custody." "What! One of Moody's fellows?" said the jailer. "Yes," said the ensign. On their inquiring what the name of this supposed prisoner was, one of the party who was well known by the inhabitants of that place to be with Mr. Moody, personated the character of a prisoner, and spoke for himself. The jailer gave him a little ill language; but notwithstanding seemed highly pleased with the idea of his having so notorious a Tory in his custody. On the ensign urging him to come down and take charge of the man, he peremptorily refused, alleging that in consequence of Moody's being out, he had received strict orders to open his doors to no man after sunset, and that therefore he must wait till morning. Finding that this would not take, the ensign now changed his tone; and in a stern voice told him, "Sirrah, the man who now speaks to you is Moody; I have a strong party with me; and if you do not this moment deliver up your keys, I will instantly pull down your house about your ears." The jailer vanished in a moment. On this Mr. Moody's men, who were well skilled in the Indian war-whoop, made the air resound with such a variety of hideous yells as soon left them nothing to fear from the inhabitants of New Town, which though the county town, consists only of twenty or thirty houses. "The Indians! the Indians are come!"—said the panic-struck people; and happy were they who could soonest escape into the woods. While these things were thus going on, the ensign had made his way through a casement, and was met by a prisoner, whom he immediately

employed to procure him a light. The vanished jailer was now again produced : and most obsequiously conducted Mr. Moody to the dungeon of the poor wretch under sentence of death.

It may seem incredible, but it is an undoubted fact that notwithstanding all the horrors and awfulness of his situation, this poor, forlorn, condemned British soldier was found fast asleep ; and had slept so sound as to have heard nothing of the uproar or alarm. There is no possibility of describing the agony of this man, when on being thus suddenly aroused, he saw before him a man in arms, attended by persons whom, though they were familiarly known to him, so agitated were his spirits, he was utterly at a loss to recognize. The first and the only idea that occurred to him was, that as many of the friends of government had been privately executed in prison, the person he saw was his executioner. On Mr. Moody's repeatedly informing him of his mistake, and that he was come to release him in the name of King George, the transition from such an abyss of wretchedness to so extravagant a pitch of joy had well-nigh overcome him. Never before had the writer been present at so affecting a scene. The image of the poor soldier, alternately agitated with the extremes of despair and rapture, is at this moment present to his imagination, as strong almost as if the object were still before him ; and he has often thought there are few subjects on which a painter of taste and sensibility could more happily employ his pencil. The man looked wild, and undoubtedly was wild and hardly in his senses, and yet he laboured, and was big with some of the noblest sentiments and most powerful passions by which the human mind is ever actuated. In such circumstances it was with some difficulty that the ensign got him away. At length, however, his clothes were got on, and he with all the rest who chose to avail themselves of the opportunity were conducted into safety, notwithstanding a warm pursuit of several days. The humane reader, Mr. Moody persuades himself, will not be less affected than he himself was at the mournful sequel of this poor soldier's tale. In the course of the war he was again taken, and again conducted to the dungeon, and afterwards actually executed on the same sentence on which he had been before convicted, though he left the world with the most solemn asseverations of his innocence, as to any crime of which he had been accused, excepting only an unshaken allegiance to his sovereign.

A few other particulars respecting this poor man, who, though but a common soldier in a marching regiment, was in all the essential and best parts of his character a hero, the writer cannot excuse himself from the relation of. His situation and circumstances in the rebel country being peculiar, Mr. Moody not thinking it proper himself to return thither so soon, took the earliest means he could to have him conveyed safe to New York. But no arguments, no entreaties, could prevail with him to leave

his deliverer. "To you," said he, "I owe my life; to you, and in your service let me devote it. You have found me in circumstances of ignominy. I wish for an opportunity to convince you that you have not been mistaken in thinking me innocent. I am, and you shall find me a good soldier." It was to this fatal but fixed determination that he soon after owed the loss of his life.

When he was brought to the place of execution, the persons who had charge of him, told him they had authority to promise him a reprieve, and they did most solemnly promise it to him on condition only that he would tell them who the Loyalists in the country were that had assisted Moody. His reply was most manly and noble, and proves that real nobility of character and dignity of sentiment are appropriated to no particular rank or condition of life. "I love life," he said, "and there is nothing which a man of honour can do that I would not do to save it; but I cannot pay this price for it. The men you wish me to betray must be good men because they have assisted a good man in a good cause. Innocent as I am, I feel this an awful moment; how far it becomes you to tempt me to make it terrible, by overwhelming me in the basest guilt, yourselves must judge. My life is in your power; my conscience, I thank God, is still my own."

Another extraordinary circumstance is said to have befallen him, which as well as the preceding Mr. Moody relates on the testimony of an eye-witness yet living. Though he was a small and light man, yet the rope with which he was suspended broke. Even still this poor man's admirable presence of mind and dignity of conscious innocence did not forsake him. He instantly addressed himself to the surrounding multitude in the following words: "Gentlemen, I cannot but hope that this very extraordinary event will convince you, of what I again solemnly protest to you, that I am innocent of the crime for which you have adjudged me to die." But he still protested in vain.

The supposed crime for which he suffered was the plundering and robbing the house of a certain furious and powerful rebel. But it would be unjust to his memory not to certify, as Mr. Moody does, that he has since learned from the voluntary confession of a less conscientious Loyalist that this honest man was charged wrongfully; inasmuch as he himself, without the knowledge of the other, on the principles of retaliation and revenge, had committed the crime. The name of the above-mentioned honest soldier and martyr was Robert Maxwell, a Scotchman, who had had a good education.

Not long after, obtaining information of the British army's moving toward Springfield, Mr. Moody concluded that the campaign was open. There appeared no way in which, with his small party of seven men, he could be more useful than by securing as many as he could of the rebel

militia. Accordingly, it was not long before he contrived to take prisoners, a major, a captain, two lieutenants, and sundry committee men; in all to the amount of eighteen.

Some requested to be paroled, and the ensign complied with their request; because it was not only reasonable and humane, but because also it left him at liberty to pursue fresh objects. Some requested to take the oath of neutrality and it was not less willingly administered to them.

The rebel part of the country was now again in an alarm, and the ensign was again pursued and sought, according to the strong expression of Scripture, "as a partridge in the mountains." But, "wandering in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth," by the blessing of God, he still eluded all their researches. At length, however, being under a necessity of returning to New York he collected a few more of Burgoyne's men; and having now augmented his party to thirteen he set out for that capital. But his former good fortune now forsook him; and he himself was soon doomed to feel all those bitter calamities, from which it had been the object of his exertions to extricate others.

On the 21st of July, 1780, it was his ill-hap to fall in with an army, which the rebel General Wayne was conducting to the siege of the block-house, commanded by Captain Ward. Resistance was vain, and retreat impracticable. Mr. Moody and the greater part of his men were now obliged to submit to captivity.

He and two of his men were immediately sent to a place called the Slots, where they were confined with their hands tied behind their backs. On the 22nd they were removed to Stony Point, and on the 23rd to Colonel Robertson's house at West Point. The rebel General Howe, who commanded at this post, treated Mr. Moody with great civility, and permitted his servant to attend him. From thence, he was sent to Fishkill, to the rebel commissary of prisoners, who passed him on to Æsopus. At Æsopus he remained till the 2nd of August; when in the night he was put into a strong room, guarded by four soldiers, two within the door and two without. The sergeant in the hearing of the ensign, gave orders to the sentinels who were in the room with him, to insist on his lying down on a bed, and instantly to shoot him if he attempted to rise from it. On this he requested and insisted to see the commissary. The commissary came, and was asked if these orders were from him. His answer was: "The sergeant had done his duty; and he hoped the men would obey their orders." Mr. Moody remonstrated, and urged that it was no uncommon thing with him to rise from his bed in his sleep; he requested therefore only, that if he should happen now to be overtaken with such an infirmity, the men might be ordered to call him by his

name, and at least to awake him before they fired. All the answer he could obtain from this tyrant minion of tyrant masters, was a cool and most cutting repetition of his former words.

After having twice more changed the place of his confinement, on the 10th of August he was carried back to West Point. And here his sufferings seemed to be but beginning, for the cruelties he experienced under the immediate eye of General Arnold, who then commanded there, infinitely exceeded all that he has ever met with before or since.

Nothing can be further from Mr. Moody's wishes than to become any man's accuser, but no man should be afraid either to hear or to tell the truth, which is of no party, and should be observed by all. Humanity is, moreover, so lovely and so necessary a virtue, especially in times of civil war, that Mr. Moody owns he is proud and loves to acknowledge and to praise it even in an enemy; of course, he must lament and reprobate the want of it, though in his best friend. Under new masters, it is hoped, General Arnold has learned new maxims. Compelled by truth, however, Mr. Moody must bear him testimony that he was then faithful to his employers, and abated not an iota in fulfilling both the letter and the spirit of their general orders and instructions.

Mr. Moody feels this to be an unpleasant part of his narrative. It is with pain he pursues it. May it be permitted him then to give the subsequent part of it in the words of an affidavit taken in the Judge Advocate's Office in New York, from the mouth of William Buirtis, who was confined for his loyalty in the same prison with Mr. Moody:

"Judge Advocate's Office, New York, May 11, 1782.

"This day personally appeared William Buirtis, a Refugee from the County of West Chester, in the Province of New York, but now residing on York Island, in the province aforesaid, and being duly sworn on the Holy Evangelists of Almighty God, deposeth and saith:

"That some time in the month of August, 1780, he (the deponent) was confined in a dungeon at West Point Fort, under sentence of death, having been charged with giving certain intelligence and information to General Mathew, one of His Britannic Majesty's generals serving at that time in America. That about the middle of the month of August aforesaid, Lieutenant James Moody, of Brigadier-General Skinner's first battalion, was brought under guard, and confined in the same dungeon with him (the deponent); that the day following he (Lieutenant Moody) was put in irons and handcuffed; that the handcuffs were of a particular sort and construction, ragged on the inside next the wrist, which raggedness caused his wrists to be much cut and scarified; that soon after he (Lieutenant Moody) was ironed and handcuffed an officer came and demanded his money, saying, he 'was ordered to take what money he had, and should obey his orders punctually;' that the money was not delivered, as he, Lieutenant Moody, was resolute in refusing, and determined not to give it up. He (Lieutenant Moody) then petitioned General Benedict Arnold, at that time in the rebel service, and commanding officer at West Point, to grant him relief; in which petition he set forth the miserable situation he was in, as also the

torment he suffered, occasioned by the handcuffs; to which petition he received no answer, though he was told by two officers in the rebel service his petition had been delivered to General Arnold.

"That about a week after his first petition had been sent, he petitioned a second time for relief from his suffering, requesting moreover that he be brought to trial, observing that if he should be found guilty of death he should desire to suffer, as death was much preferable to torment, and being murdered by inches. Some little time after the delivery of the second petition, one of General Arnold's aide-de-camps, whose name he (the deponent) cannot recollect, came to the dungeon; and on seeing him (Lieutenant Moody) asked if that was the Moody whose name was a terror to every good man? On his replying that his name was Moody, he (the Aide-de-Camp) replied in a scoffing manner, 'You have got yourself into a pretty situation;' on his (Lieutenant Moody's) saying the situation was disagreeable, but he hoped it would not be of long continuance; he answered he believed not, as he would soon meet with justice (pointing at the same time to a gallows that was erected in the sight and view of the dungeon); and also added, there is the gallows ready erected, which he (meaning Moody) had long merited. Lieutenant Moody answered, he made no doubt he (the Aide-de-Camp) wished to see every loyal subject hanged, but he thanked God, the power was not in him; but if he (Lieutenant Moody) was hanged, it could be for no other reason than being a loyal subject to one of the best of kings, and under one of the best of governments, and added, if he had ten lives to lose, he would sooner forfeit the ten, as a loyal subject, than one as a rebel; and also said, he hoped to live to see him (the Aide-de-Camp) and a thousand such other villains, hanged for being rebels. The officer then said he was sent to examine his irons, as he (Lieutenant Moody) had been frequently troubling General Arnold with his petitions. On examining the irons, he said 'they were too bad,' and asked who put them on? saying 'irons were intended for security, not for torment; but if any one merited such irons, he (Lieutenant Moody) did, in his opinion.' Lieutenant Moody, however, was not relieved at that time from his irons; but about a week or ten days afterwards, an officer came from General Washington, ordered the irons to be taken off and Lieutenant Moody to be better treated. In consequence of General Washington's order, he was better used; that he (the deponent) knows nothing further that happened, as he (Lieutenant Moody) in a few days afterwards, was removed from that place.

"William Buirtis.

"Sworn before me at the time and place above mentioned.

"Richard Porter,
"*As. Dy. Judge Advocate.*"

The above-mentioned dungeon was dug out of a rock, and covered with a platform of planks badly jointed, without any roof to it; and all the rain which fell upon it immediately passed through, and lodged in the bottom of this dismal mansion. It had no floor but the natural rock; and the water, with the mud and filth collected, was commonly ankle deep in every part of it. Mr. Moody's bed was an old door, supported by four stones so as just to raise it above the surface of the water. Here he continued near four weeks; and during most of the time, while he was tormented with irons in the manner mentioned above, no food was allowed him but stinking beef and rotten flour, made up into balls or

dumplings, which were thrown into a kettle and boiled with the meat and then brought to him in a wooden bowl which was never washed and which contracted a thick crust of dough, grease and dirt. It is a wonder that such air and such food, to say nothing of the wounds upon his legs and wrists, were not fatal to him, especially as the clothes on his back were seldom dry, and at one time were continually wet for more than a week together. After Mr. Washington interfered he was served with wholesome provisions, and he was allowed to purchase for himself some milk and some vegetables.

The ways of Providence are often mysterious, frequently bringing about its ends by the most unlikely means. To this inhuman treatment in General Arnold's camp, Mr. Moody owed his future safety. On the 1st of September he was carried to Washington's camp and there confined near their Liberty-pole. Colonel Skammel, the Adjutant-General, came to see him put in irons. When they had handcuffed him he remonstrated with the colonel, desiring that his legs, which were indeed in a worse condition than even his wrists, might be examined, further adding only, that death would be infinitely preferable to a repetition of the torments he had just undergone. The colonel did examine his legs; and on seeing them he also acknowledged that his treatment had indeed been too bad, and asked if General Arnold had been made acquainted with his situation. Mr. Moody feels a sincere pleasure in publicly acknowledging his obligations and his gratitude to Colonel Skammel, who humanely gave orders to the Provost Marshal to take good care of him, and by no means to suffer any irons to be put on his legs, till they were likely to prove less distressing.

Mr. Moody attended the rebel army in its march over the New Bridge, and had an opportunity of observing their whole line and counting their artillery. Everything seemed smooth and fair, and he felt much at ease in the prospect of being soon exchanged, when very unexpectedly, he was visited by an old acquaintance, one of their colonels, who informed him that he was in two days' time to be brought to trial; that Livingstone was to be his prosecutor, and that the court-martial was carefully picked for the purpose. He subjoined that he would do well to prepare for eternity, since from the evidence which he knew would be produced there was but one issue of the business to be expected. Mr. Moody requested to be informed what it was the purpose of this evidence to prove. It was, his well-wisher told him, that he had assassinated a Captain Shaddock and a Lieutenant Hendrickson. These were the two officers who had fallen fairly in battle near Black Point, as has been already related. The ensign replied that he felt himself much at ease on that account as it could be sufficiently cleared up by their own people, who had been in and had survived the action, as well as by some of their

officers, who were at the time prisoners to him, and spectators of the whole affair. "All this," said his friend, "will be of little avail; you are so obnoxious, you have been and are likely to be so mischievous to us, that be assured we are resolved to get rid of you at any rate. Besides, you cannot deny, and it can be proved by incontestible evidence, that you have enlisted men in this State for the king's service, and this by our laws is death."

Ensign Moody affected an air of unconcern at this information, but it was too serious and important to him to be really disregarded. He resolved therefore, from that moment, to effect his escape or to perish in the attempt.

Every precaution had been taken to secure the place in which he was confined. It was nearly in the centre of the rebel camp. A sentinel was placed within the door of his prison, and another without, besides four others close around and within a few yards of the place. The time now came on which he must either make his attempt, or lose the opportunity for ever. On the night, therefore, of the 17th of September, busy in ruminating on his project, he had, on the pretence of being cold, got a watch coat thrown across his shoulders that he might better conceal from his unpleasant companion the operations which he meditated against his handcuffs. While he was racking his invention to find some possible means of extricating himself from his fetters, he providentially cast his eye on a post fastened in the ground, through which a hole had been bored with an auger, and it occurred to him it might be possible with the aid of this hole to break the bolt of his handcuffs. Watching the opportunity therefore from time to time, of the sentinel's looking another way, he thrust the point of the bolt into the above-mentioned hole, and by cautiously exerting his strength and gradually bending the iron backwards and forwards he at length broke it. Let the reader imagine what his sensations were when he found the manacles drop from his hands! He sprang instantly past the interior sentinel, and rushing on the next, with one hand he seized his musket and with the other struck him to the ground. The sentinel within, and the four others who were placed by the fence surrounding the place of his confinement, immediately gave the alarm, and in a moment the cry was general: "Moody is escaped from the Provost." It is impossible to describe the uproar which now took place throughout the whole camp. In a few minutes every man was in a bustle, every man was looking for Moody, and multitudes passed him on all sides, little suspecting that a man whom they saw deliberately marching along with a musket on his shoulder could be the fugitive they were in quest of. The darkness of the night, which was also blustering and drizzly, prevented any discrimination of his person, and was indeed the great circumstance that rendered his escape possible.

But no small difficulty still remained to be surmounted. To prevent desertion, which at that time was very frequent, Washington had surrounded his camp with a chain of sentinels, posted at about forty or fifty yards' distance from each other; he was unacquainted with their stations, to pass them undiscovered was next to impossible, and to be discovered would certainly be fatal. In this dilemma Providence again befriended him. He had gained their station without knowing it, when luckily he heard the watchword passed from one to another—"Look sharp to the chain, Moody is escaped from the Provost!" From the sound of the voices he ascertained the respective situations of these sentinels, and throwing himself on his hands and knees, he was happy enough to crawl through the vacant space between two of them unseen by either. Judging that their line of pursuit would naturally be toward the British army, he made a detour into the woods on the opposite side. Through these woods he made as much speed as the darkness of the night would permit, steering his course after the Indian manner by occasionally groping and feeling the white oak. On the south side the bark of this tree is rough and unpleasant to the touch, but on the north side it is smooth, hence it serves the sagacious traveller of the desert by night as well as by day for his compass. Through the most dismal swamps and woods he continued to wander till the night of the 21st, a space of more than fifty-six hours, during which time he had no other sustenance than a few beech leaves—which of all that the woods afforded were the least pernicious to the health and the least unpleasant to the taste—which he chewed and swallowed, to abate the intolerable craving of his hunger.

In every inhabited district he knew there were friends of the Government; and he had now learned also where and how to find them out, without endangering their safety, which was always the first object of his concern. From some of these good men he received minute information how the pursuit after him was directed, and where every guard was posted. Thus assisted, he eluded their keenest vigilance: and at length by God's blessing, to his unspeakable joy, he arrived safe at Paulus Hook.

On the 6th of March, 1781, Colonel De Lancey, the Adjutant-General, requested Mr. Moody to make an expedition into the rebel country for the purpose of intercepting Mr. Washington's despatches. He readily consented; and set out on the expedition the very next night and travelled about twenty-five miles. The following day he and his party kept concealed in a swamp. The next night, for it was only by night they could venture to stir, they had not gone far when the man who had undertaken to be their guide refused to advance a step further. No arguments, no promises, no threats, could prevail with him to proceed, though it was at his own

express desire that he was one of the party. Incensed at his being so perverse and wrong-headed, Mr. Moody in the first transports of his indignation had actually cocked his gun in order to shoot him, but happily he instantly recollected that the poor devil had a wife and family who depended on him for bread. This restrained him; and ordering his arms to be taken from him, he was under the painful necessity of returning with him to New York.

This man was remarkably earnest and vehement in his resentment against the rebels. He had been much injured by them in his property, and they had also put his father and his brother to an ignominious death. It was natural to suppose, therefore, that such a man would be true and firm. But he was loyal only through resentment and interest, not from conviction and principle. These Loyalists from principle were the men on whom he relied and no one of these ever failed him. The Adjutant-General seemed to be much disappointed on seeing the party return, supposing the hope of obtaining the despatches to be now vain. Mr. Moody informed him of what had happened, but added that he had ever since kept his eye on the renegade, and had not suffered a soul to speak to him; and requested that this caution should be still continued, and that even the sentry who was to guard him should not be permitted to have any intercourse with him. On this condition he promised again to make the attempt and hoped not without success. Accordingly he set out a second time, and on the night of the 10th he reached the Haverstraw mountains. On his march he was informed that the post had gone by that day. On the 11th the weather became very inclement, and he, with his party, suffered exceedingly from a heavy fall of snow; notwithstanding they pushed forward, hoping by rapid marches to get ahead of the rider. These efforts, though excessively fatiguing, were as yet all in vain; but on the 15th they were successful and got possession of their prize, and after some equally difficult and distressing marches on their return, they at length arrived safe with it in New York. The inexpressible hardships which the party underwent in this adventure, both from hunger and cold, were fatal to the health of most of them. Soon after Mr. Moody was made a lieutenant, having first served more than a year as a volunteer without any pay, and almost three years as an ensign.

Almost the middle of May the Adjutant-General again complained of the want of intelligence, and told Lieutenant Moody that he could not render the king's cause a more essential piece of service than by bringing in if it were possible another rebel mail. There was no declining such a solicitation. Therefore on the night of the 15th, taking four men with him, Mr. Moody set out and travelled twenty-five miles. Hitherto he and his associates met with no molestation; but they had not gone far the next night, when they perceived a considerable party of men approaching them

as secretly as possibly. Mr. Moody tried to get off by the left, but he found himself and his party enclosed on three sides. On the right was a high cliff of rocks, so rugged and steep that the enemy thought it impossible for them to escape on that side. It was obvious, from these circumstances, that an ambush was laid, and that this spot, so peculiarly convenient was chosen for the purpose; in short that Mr. Moody and his party had been betrayed by intelligence sent forward from New York. The only alternative left was to surrender and perish, or to leap down from the top of these rocks without knowing with any certainty either how high they were, or what sort of ground was at the bottom. The lieutenant bade his men follow him, and sprang forward. Providentially the ground at the bottom was soft, and everything else just as they could have wished it; they escaped unhurt and proceeded for some time unmolested. But, at no great distance crossing a swamp, just beyond it they fell in with another party, of much the same number as the former. Luckily they saw, and were not seen. A little hillock was at hand to which the lieutenant ordered his men quickly to retreat, and fall on their faces; judging that in case they were discovered, there would be some advantage in having to charge from higher ground, by which means if at all they might cut their way through the party. What he and his men felt, when they beheld so superior a force marching directly toward them, till at last they were within fifty yards; or when in this awful moment they had the happiness to see them, without being discovered, take another course, no person of sensibility will need to be told. A little council of war was now held, and it was determined to return whither only the way seemed clear. To advance was impracticable, as there now could remain not a doubt but that intelligence of the intended route had been sent from within the British lines, and that the enemy had made a proper use of it. They began, therefore, with all possible caution to measure back their steps, for they were still apprehensive of other plots and other ambushes. And now having gained the North River, and being within four miles of New York they flattered themselves they were once more out of danger. But being within a hundred yards of a certain house, how were they alarmed when they saw seventy men come out of it, and advance directly toward them! Lieutenant Moody was convinced they were rebels; but the guide insisted that they were Loyalists, and that he knew several of them. On this the latter with another man went forward to meet them, notwithstanding that the former still persisted in his opinion. A very unpleasant salute soon convinced this unfortunate duumvirate of their mistaken confidence. The main body made for the lieutenant, who had no other means of escape than to climb a steep hill; but long before he reached the summit, they had so gained on him as to be within fifty yards. He received one general discharge, and thought it little short of a miracle

that he escaped unwounded. The bullets flew like a storm of hail all around him; his clothes were shot through in several places; one ball went through his hat, and another grazed his arm. Without at all slackening his pace he turned around and discharged his musket, and by this shot killed one of his pursuers; still they kept up their fire, each man discharging his piece as fast as he could load; but gaining an opportunity of soon doubling upon them, he gave them the slip, and in due time arrived once more safe in New York. One of the two men who had escaped, and got in first, mistaking the screams of the poor fellow who was shot for those of Lieutenant Moody himself, had given out that the lieutenant was killed, for he had heard his cries; but the friends of the latter were soon happy to see so unequivocal a proof that the man was mistaken.

The very first night after his return to New York, as above related, viz., on the 18th of May, Lieutenant Moody set out again on the business of this expedition. The rebels knew that he had been driven back, and he thought it the properest time to proceed immediately in pursuit of his object. On that night, with his small party of four men, he got as far as Seceucas. The next night they crossed the Hackensack River by means of a canoe which Lieutenant Moody always kept there for such purposes, and which after crossing he concealed until his return. He then proceeded on till coming to the edge of a marsh, he fell in with a party of rebels, who were patrolling in that quarter, with a view only, it is probable, of intercepting the country people who might be carrying provisions to New York. This party discovered the lieutenant first without being seen, and suffered him to pass their van, not hailing him till some of them were in his rear, as well as some in his front. He was instantly ordered to stand, or he and all with him were dead men. This summons the lieutenant answered by an immediate discharge which they returned. He then calling on his rear to advance, as if he had a large body in reserve, and giving a second fire they soon dispersed. He was informed the next day, that this rebel party consisted of twelve men.

Marching on about four miles farther, he came to Saddle River, which it was necessary to cross; but apprehensive that there might be a guard stationed at the bridge, though the night was dismally dark and rainy, and the river had greatly overflowed its banks, he waded for several yards through a considerable depth of water, till he got close to the bridge, where he saw as he had feared a regular guard. On this he retreated with all possible speed and caution; and was obliged to wade through the river about half a mile farther up, not without much difficulty and danger.

The country being now much alarmed with rumours of Moody's being out, occasioned by this little rencontre, the mail instead of being sent

by Pompton, as it usually had been, and where it was expected to be met with, was now sent by the back road with a guard to secure it. On discovering this, the lieutenant despatched a trusty Loyalist to a distant part of the Province with letters to his friends, and particularly directing one of them whose person, figure and voice most resembled his own, to pass for him but a single hour; which he readily did. In this friend's neighbourhood lived a pompous and important justice of the peace, who was a cowardly fellow, and of course had been cruel. At this man's house, early in the evening, the person employed raised an alarm. The justice came out, and espying, as it was intended he should, a tall man, his fears convinced him it was Moody; and he instantly betook himself to the woods. The next day the rumour was general that Moody was in that part of the country; and the militia was brought down from the part where he really was, to pursue him where he was not. This facilitated the capture of the mail, which he waylaid for five days before the opportunity presented. This mail contained all the despatches that were sent in consequence of the interview between General Washington and the Count Rochambeau in Connecticut.

Lieutenant Moody caused two other mails to be taken by the people under his direction. In one of these little expeditions his brother commanded, a young man whose fearless courage in the very teeth of danger he had repeatedly witnessed. The younger Moody succeeded in his attempt, so far as to intercept the mail, but after seizing it he was attacked by a superior party and two of his men were taken; yet he himself had the good fortune to escape with that part of the papers which was in his own custody. Pennsylvania was the scene of this enterprise.

A tale far more melancholy than any yet related comes now to be told, the recollection of which (and it is impossible that he should ever forget it), will for ever wring with anguish the heart of the writer of this narrative. In the end of October 1781, Major Beckwith, aide-de-camp to General Kniphausen, came and informed Lieutenant Moody that one Addison had been with him on a project of high moment. It was nothing less than to bring off the most important books and papers of Congress. This Addison was an Englishman, and had been employed in some inferior department under Mr. Thompson, the secretary to the Congress. He was then a prisoner, and the plan was that he should be immediately exchanged, return in the usual manner to Philadelphia, and there resume his old employment. The lieutenant was abundantly careful and even scrupulous in his inquiries concerning the man's character, on which head Major Beckwith expressed the most entire confidence, and observed that Addison was equally cautious respecting the character of those who were to attend him.

The matter was of importance, and Lieutenant Moody was confident that, though it might be difficult to perform his part of the business, yet it was not impracticable. He resolved, however, as Addison might think him an object worthy of betraying, that he should not be informed of his consenting to be of the party. And if any person did inform him of it he was to say the least, very imprudent. The lieutenant pitched upon his only brother, of whom some mention has already been made, and another faithful American soldier, for this arduous enterprise. Their first instructions were to wait on Addison and to bind him as they themselves had been bound to mutual secrecy and fidelity by an oath, which the lieutenant had always administered to his followers in all his expeditions, when the importance of the object rendered such an additional tie necessary, and which as it clearly shows the principles of honour and humanity on which it was his uniform pride and purpose to act, he begs leave here to subjoin, and it is as follows, viz :

"I, the undersigned A. B., do solemnly swear on the Holy Evangelists of Almighty God, that I will stand by and be true to the persons joined with me in this expedition, and do everything in my power to accomplish the purposes of it ; and I do further swear, that in case of our taking any prisoners I will endeavour to treat them as well as our situation will admit of ; and I do further swear, that in case any accident should happen to me, and that I should be taken, I will not, even to save my life, discover or betray any person joined with me, or any Loyalist who befriends us with any information, advice or other assistance ; and I do further swear, that I will not injure nor destroy any property, even of a rebel, unless it be arms or ammunition, but faithfully pay the full price of anything we take from them, if they refuse to sell it ; and I do further swear, that I will not wound nor take away the life of any person whatever, unless they should attempt an escape when in our custody, or it shall otherwise be absolutely necessary to our own defence. So help me, God."

After taking this oath, a certain number of nights was agreed on, in which Addison was to expect them, and a certain place also appointed where he was to meet them. In such an adventure it was impossible to be exact to any time ; but it was agreed that if they failed of being at the place in any of the specified nights, he should no longer expect them ; and they further promised by proper means to apprise him, if possible, if any accident should befall them, so as either to delay or wholly put an end to their project.

Things being thus settled, Addison left New York in due form and manner, as was generally supposed in order to return to his former friends and employment, and at the proper time Lieutenant Moody and his friends followed him. The manner and circumstances of their march, it is not material nor proper here to relate ; suffice it to say, that on the night of the 7th of November, the first in the order of those that had been appointed, they arrived in the neighbourhood of Philadelphia, but

on the opposite side of the river. They found Addison already on the spot, waiting for them according to appointment. Lieutenant Moody kept a little back, at such a distance as not to have his person distinguished, yet so as to be within hearing of the conversation that passed. His brother and Marr his associate, on going up to Addison, found him apparently full of confidence and in high spirits; and everything seemed to promise success. He told them that their plot was perfectly ripe for execution, that he had secured the means of admission into the most private recesses of the State-house, so that he should be able the next evening to deliver to them the papers they were in quest of. They on their parts assured him that every necessary precaution had been taken to secure and expedite their retreat, and that they had with them *a sure friend*, who would wait for them on that side of the river, who as well as themselves would die by his side rather than desert him should any disaster befall them. He replied that they should find him as true and faithful to them and their cause as they themselves could possibly be. Soon after they crossed the river together to Philadelphia, and it is probable that on the passage Addison was for the first time informed that this friend was Lieutenant Moody. Whether it was this discovery that put it first into his head, or whether he had all along intended it, and had already taken the necessary previous steps, the lieutenant cannot certainly say, but he assures himself that every generous-minded man will be shocked when he reads, that this perfidious wretch had either sold, or was about to sell them to the Congress.

As the precise time in which they should be able to execute their plan could not be ascertained, it was agreed that Lieutenant Moody should remain at the ferry-house opposite to Philadelphia till they returned. On going into the house, he told the mistress of it by a convenient equivocation, that he was an officer of the *Jersey Brigade*, as he really was, though of that Jersey Brigade which was in the king's service. The woman understood him as speaking of a rebel corps, which was also called the Jersey Brigade. To avoid notice he pretended to be indisposed, and going upstairs, he threw himself upon a bed, and here continued to keep his room, but always awake, and always on the watch. Next morning about 11 o'clock, he saw a man walk hastily up to the house, and overheard him telling some person he met at the door, that "there was the devil to pay in Philadelphia; that there had been a plot to break into the State-house, but that one of the party had betrayed the others, that two were already taken, and that a party of soldiers had just crossed the river with him to seize their leader, who was said to be thereabouts." The lieutenant felt himself to be too nearly interested in this intelligence any longer to keep up the appearance of a sick man; and seizing his pistols, he instantly ran down stairs and made his escape. He had not

gone a hundred yards from the house when he saw the soldiers enter it. A small piece of wood lay before him in which he hoped at least to be out of sight, and he had sprung the fence in order to enter it. But it was already lined by a party of horse with a view of cutting off his retreat. Thus surrounded, all hopes of flight were in vain; and to seek for a hiding place in a clear open field, seemed equally useless. Drowning persons catch at straws; with hardly a hope of escaping so much as a moment longer undiscovered, he threw himself flat on his face in a ditch, which yet seemed of all places the least calculated for concealment, for it was without weeds or shrubs and so shallow that a quail might be seen in it. Once more he had reason to moralize on the vanity of all human contrivance and confidence; yet as Providence ordered it, the improbability of the place proved the means of his security. He had lain there but a few minutes when six of his pursuers passed within ten feet of him and very diligently examined a thickety part of the ditch that was but a few paces from him. With his pistols cocked he kept his eye constantly on them, determining that as soon as he saw himself to be discovered by any one of them, he would instantly spring up, and sell his life as dearly as might be, and refusing to be taken alive, provoke, and if possible force, them to kill him. Once or twice he thought he saw one of the soldiers look at him, and he was on the point of shooting the man; but reflecting that possibly though the soldier did see, yet he might have the humanity not to discover him (as he would fain hope was really the case), his heart smote him for his rash resolution, and he thanks God that he was restrained from putting it in execution.

From the ditch they went all around the adjacent field; and as Lieutenant Moody sometimes raised up his head a little he saw them frequently running their bayonets into some small stacks of Indian corn-fodder. This suggested to him an idea, that if he should escape till night, a place they had already explored would be the securest shelter for him. When night came he got into one of these stacks. The wind was high, which prevented the rustling of the leaves of the fodder as he entered from being heard by the people who were at that time passing close by him into the country in quest of him. His position in this retreat was very uncomfortable, for he could neither sit nor lie down. In this erect posture, however, he remained two nights and two days, without a morsel of food, for there was no corn on the stalks, and, which was infinitely more intolerable, without drink. He must not relate, for reasons which may be easily imagined, what became of him immediately after his coming out of this uneasy prison; but he will venture to inform the reader that on the fifth night after his elopement from the ferry-house, he searched the banks of the Delaware till he had the good fortune to meet with a small boat. Into this he jumped, and after waiting a little for the tide

of flood, which was near, he pushed off, and rowed a considerable way up the river. During this voyage he was several times accosted by people on the water, but having found the benefit of putting on a fearless air, he endeavoured to answer them in their own way, and recollecting some of the less polished phases of the gentlemen of the oar, he used them pretty liberally, and thus was suffered to pass on unsuspected. In due time he left his boat, and relying on the aid of Loyalists, some of whom he knew were everywhere to be found, he went into a part of the country least known to him, and the least likely for him to have thought of; and at length, after many circuitous marches, all in the night, and through pathless courses, in about five days he once more arrived safe in New York.

All these efforts for life were dictated, it would seem, rather by instinct than reason, for occupied as his mind had been with his own dangers, and his own sufferings, he can truly say his greatest uneasiness was on account of his brother. There was not a ray of hope that he could escape, and less, if possible, that he would be pardoned. He was the son of his old age to a most worthy and beloved father who had himself been a soldier, and who loved and honoured the profession. Indeed, he was a most amiable young man, as remarkable for the sweetness of his disposition as for his undaunted intrepidity. Excellent youth! Every feeling heart will forgive the tear which is now dropped to thy memory by thy sorrowing brother! He perished by an ignominious death, in the twenty-third year of his age, the news of which, as may naturally be supposed, well-nigh brought the grey hairs of a venerable father with sorrow to the grave. It did not indeed immediately cost him his life, but it cost him, what is more valuable, his reason.

His fellow-prisoner was also sentenced to death; but, on making some pretended discoveries, of no considerable moment, he was reprieved. Lieutenant Moody is sensible it contains no information that can interest the reader; yet as he preserves it as a precious relic, he persuades himself every man who is a brother will forgive his inserting an extract or two from his brother's last letter, dated November 12th, 1781, from the new jail dungeon, Philadelphia.

Dear Brother,—Let me intreat you not to grieve at my fate, and the fate of my brother soldier. Betrayed by the man on whom we depended to execute the plan proposed by Captain Beckwith, we were taken up as spies, and have been tried and condemned and are to die to-morrow. I pray you to forgive him as I do, and Lawrence Marr does also, as freely as we hope to be forgiven by our Maker. . . . One more request I have to make to you is, that taking warning by my fate, you will not hereafter so often venture yourself out of the British lines. I am in irons, but thanks to the Almighty, I still have the liberty of thought and speech. Oh! may I make a good use of them and be prepared, as I ought to be, for eternity.

Sentence has not been passed on us above two hours, all of which time I have employed in prayer, and I will continue to do to the last moment, and I bless God I feel quite cheerful."

Lieut. Moody cannot in justice close this plain and unpretending narrative, already spun out to too great a length without bearing his public testimony, feeble as it may be, in favour of, and returning his thanks, as he most cordially does, to those brave, loyal Americans, whom though in the ranks only, he shall always think it the greatest honour of his life to have commanded in these expeditions. They were in general men of some property, and, without a single exception, men of principle. They fought for what appeared to be the true interests of their country as well as to regain their little plantations, and to live in peace under a constitution, which they knew by experience to be auspicious to their happiness. Their conduct in their new profession as soldiers verifies their character; they have been brave, and they have been humane. Their honesty and honour have been uniformly conspicuous. It was a first principle, in all their excursions, never to make war against private property, and this has been religiously observed. Some striking instances of their forbearance might be given, if necessary, even when they have been provoked to retaliate by private wrongs and personal insults.

And here it ought to be mentioned, with the utmost gratitude and pleasure, that though Mr. Moody in the course of his adventures was often obliged to put his life into the hands of the Loyalists in different parts of the country, he never was disappointed or deceived by any of them. In the year 1777, he continued among them more than three months at a time, and near as long in 1778. He knew their character, and could safely confide in them. They were men of such inflexible attachment to government, that no temptations could induce them to betray their trust. Though many of them were reduced to indigence and distress, and they knew that almost any price might be obtained by giving up so obnoxious a person, yet they were so far from betraying him that they even ran great hazards in giving him assistance. Surely such merit as this is worthy of esteem and admiration; and it is humbly hoped that the many thousands in the colonies who possess it, will not be deserted by government, and consigned over to ruin and wretchedness, without an absolute necessity.

It is with the utmost concern Mr. Moody has heard of the doubts and debates that have been agitated in England concerning the number and the zeal of the Loyalists in America. It might be uncharitable, and possibly unjust, to say that every man who has entertained such doubts has some sinister purposes to serve by them; but it would be blindness in the extreme not to see that they were first raised by men who had other objects at heart than the interests of their country. Men who

have performed their own duty feebly or falsely, naturally seek to excuse themselves by throwing the blame upon others. It would ill become an obscure individual to obtrude his opinions; but an honest man may, and, when he thinks it would serve his country should, relate what he has seen. The writer of this narrative has already disclaimed all pretensions to any extraordinary share of political sagacity; but he has common-sense, he can see and he can hear. He has had more opportunities than most men of seeing and hearing the true state of loyalty in the middle colonies, and he most solemnly declares it to be his opinion that a very great majority of the people there are at this time loyal, and would still do and suffer almost anything rather than remain under the tyranny of their present rulers. Let but the war be undertaken and conducted on some plan, and with some spirit; let but commanders be employed who will encourage their services, and leave them under no apprehensions of being deserted and betrayed; and then, if they do not exert themselves, and very effectually, let every advocate they have had, or may have, be reprobated as a fool or a knave, or both together—and let the Americans continue to feel the worst punishment their worst enemies can wish them—nominal independency but real slavery.

Perhaps the honest indignation of the writer may have carried him too far; but, on such a subject, who, in *his* circumstances could speak coolly, and with any temper? That he speaks only what he thinks, no man, who is acquainted with him will doubt; and if after all he is mistaken, he errs with more and better opportunities of being right than almost any other person has ever had. He has given the strongest proofs of his sincerity, he has sacrificed his all, and little as it may be thought by others it was enough for him, and he was contented with it. He made this sacrifice because he sincerely believed what he declares and professes. If the same were to do over again he would again as cheerfully make the same sacrifice. He trusts therefore it will not be deemed presumptuous in him to say, that he cannot be decently contradicted in these matters by any man who has neither had such opportunities of informing his judgment, nor given such unequivocal proofs of his sincerity. The writer has certainly no bye-ends to serve, he is not an ambitious man nor avaricious. The profession of arms is foreign from the habits of one who has lived and wishes only to live in quiet under his own vine and under his own fig-tree; and he can truly say that if his Sovereign should be graciously pleased to confer on him the highest military honours, he would most gladly forego them all to be once more reinstated in his own farm, with his wife and children around him, as he was seven years ago.

He has hitherto received but a very trifling compensation for his services and sufferings; and he looks for no more than will free

him from indigence and enable him more effectually to serve his country. In enlisting and paying men for public services, he has expended what was saved from the wreck of his own fortune to a considerable amount, and he was reduced to the necessity of borrowing from those whose better circumstances enabled them, and whose generous spirits disposed them to hazard something in the cause of their country. This may be called *enthusiasm;* be it so. Mr. Moody will not conceal his wish that the world abounded with such enthusiasts. Not his fortune only but his constitution has been greatly impaired by the exertions he has made. His physicians recommend a sea-voyage, a change of air, and a respite of his fatigues and anxiety of mind, as the only remedies left him; and the late commander-in-chief, Sir Henry Clinton, was pleased to second their recommendation by politely inviting him to England. He acknowledges with gratitude that their kind intentions with regard to his health have not been wholly frustrated. He trusts he will soon be able, and he would rejoice to be called by the service, to return to America. He would go with recruited spirits, and unabated ardour; for, rather than outlive the freedom of his country, it is his resolution, with King William of glorious memory, even to die in the last ditch.

JAMES MOODY.

Warder Street, No. 97, November, 1782.

The following certificates, selected from a great number of others in the author's possession, are presumed to be sufficient to establish the truth of this narrative:

No. I.

"The events related in the following narrative are so very extraordinary that many gentlemen who are unacquainted with the country, and with the several circumstances, might doubt of the truth of them. I think it therefore a piece of justice due to the merit of Mr. Moody's services, to declare that I believe this narrative to be a true account of his proceedings.

"WM. FRANKLIN,
"*Late Governor of New Jersey.*"

No. II.

"I do hereby certify that Mr. James Moody came within the British lines in April, 1777, and brought in with him upwards of seventy men, all of whom, except four, entered into my brigade. That in June following he was sent into the rebel country for the purpose of enlisting men for His Majesty's service, with orders to continue there until a favourable opportunity offered for him to disarm the rebels, and arm the Loyalists, and with what men he could collect to join the royal army; but as he was prevented from putting that plan into execution by our army's taking a different route from what was expected. That Mr. Moody, being thus disappointed, assisted by two of his neighbours, soon after embodied about a hundred men with whom he attempted to join the British army but was unsuccessful. That afterwards he made two successful excursions into the rebel country,

and brought with him from Sussex County about sixty able-bodied recruits, nearly all of whom entered into my brigade ; that after this time he made many trips into New Jersey and Pennsylvania, and brought in with him many good men and gained many articles of important intelligence concerning the movements of Col. Butler, the real state of the rebel country, the situation and condition of the rebel armies under the command of their Generals Washington, Sullivan, etc. And that while Mr. Moody was under my immediate direction, he also destroyed a considerable magazine of stores near Black Point, taking prisoners, two colonels, one major, and several other officers, and broke open the Sussex County jail rescuing a number of Loyalists that were imprisoned in it, one of whom was under sentence of death, besides performing many other important services.

"I do also certify that in the month of October, 1777, the said Mr. Moody was mustered as an ensign but received no pay as such till April, 1778 ; that he continued his exertions under my direction till 1780, about which time he was taken from the regiment, which prevented his being appointed to a company in it, as it was in general believed the commander-in-chief intended doing something better for him ; that I have every reason to believe Mr. Moody received nothing from the Government to reward him for his extraordinary services, or to indemnify him for his extraordinary expenses, till 1780 ; that from the time of his joining the army in April, 1777, till his departure for Europe in May, 1782, he did upon every occasion exert himself with the utmost zeal in support of His Majesty's cause in America ; and on the whole, that I believe all that is related in his printed narrative to be true without exaggeration.

"Cortland Skinner,
"*Brigadier-General, etc.*

"London, January 30th, 1783."

No. III.

"I do hereby certify that during the time I was commandant of New York, Mr. James Moody went sundry times into the rebel country to gain intelligence of the situation and circumstances of the rebels ; that at one time he was absent five weeks in different parts of Pennsylvania and New Jersey, and brought authentic and full information of the situation and resources of the several detachments of the rebel army under command of Generals Washington and Gates, in the year 1779 ; and the prospect the rebels had at that time of procuring a loan from France. That in each of his excursions he obtained and regularly reported to me very accurate information of the rebel country, and appeared to be very zealous and attentive in promoting His Majesty's service ; and from the knowledge I have of his services and sufferings, I cannot but recommend him as a person who merits encouragement and support from the British Government.

"Jas. Pattison,
"*Major-General.*"

No. IV.

"New York, May 11th, 1782.

"Lieutenant James Moody, of the First Battalion of Brigadier-General Skinner's Brigade of Provincial Troops, having applied to me for a certificate of some particular services which he has rendered in America ; and which from their having been attempted, and in a great measure executed, during General Knyphausen's having the command within this district, I feel much satisfaction in complying with the request of this gentleman, and in expressing that Lieutenant Moody in two instances

in particular, conducted two small parties, one to Jersey and the other to Philadelphia with much personal risk, great spirit and good conduct ; and I ever found him desirous of manifesting his zeal for the good of the king's service.

"George Beckwith,

"*Major in the Army,*

"*Aide-de-camp to His Excellency General Knyphausen.*"

No. V.

"New York, May 10th, 1782.

"By serving in different public departments in the army in North America under the command of His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton, I have had opportunities of knowing of several military exploits, very essential and contributory to His Majesty's service being performed by Lieutenant James Moody, of the Provincial Corps, called the First Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers, in the execution of which, he not only underwent the most severe hardships, but encountered almost every possible risk of his life, as well from these hardships (which naturally affected his constitution) as from the enemy. He, however, persevered in defiance of every obstacle with such an ardour and resolution as plainly evinced an uncommon zeal and attachment to his king and country.

"Step. P. Adye,

"*D. Judge Advocate.*"

No. VI.

"New York, May 11th, 1782.

"I, the subscriber, do hereby certify that shortly after Major-General Pattison was appointed commandant of New York, and I was employed as his secretary, Lieutenant James Moody of the First Battalion New Jersey Volunteers, having returned from the country, where he had been engaged in collecting intelligence, etc., appeared at the commandant's office and communicated to me for the information of General Pattison, a variety of accounts relative to the situation of the rebel army, etc., which I laid before the general. From this time an intimacy commenced between us ; and Mr. Moody afterwards, previously and confidentially consulted me on the practicability of several excursions he intended to make in the rebel country ; and particularly with respect to his intention to make Governor Livingston a prisoner. Mentioning his want of cash to carry into execution so essential a service, I offered to supply him with twenty-five guineas for this purpose, and to be his security, or to borrow at interest a larger sum, it being out of my power to advance more ; but being supplied with money by His Excellency Lieutenant General Robertson, he was enabled to go out without my assistance. Mr. Moody's failing in this attempt, was owing to one of his party being taken ; by which means Mr. Livingston discovered Mr. Moody's being out, took the alarm, and raised the country ; and with difficulty Mr. Moody escaped falling into his hands ; but was afterwards unfortunately taken by a party of rebels and carried to the provost-guard at Mr. Washington's headquarters, where he was confined, and from whence he made his escape and returned to New York.

"Mr. Moody afterwards made various excursions into the country, and many miles without the British lines ; took several rebel mails, containing intelligence of great importance, and brought them safe to New York. In these excursions he ran great risques of falling into the hands of the rebels, and his health was much

exposed from lying many nights and days in woods and swamps to avoid a discovery. In these excursions Mr. Moody disregarded either the seasons, the fatigue or the risques he ran.

"And on the whole of his conduct, I have every reason to believe him entirely disinterested and actuated only by that zeal for His Majesty's service which he has on every occasion exhibited. From Mr. Moody's declaration, and other evidence, I have every reason to believe, that the contributions he has from time to time received, were by no means adequate to the expenses incurred on these occasions. And I know that Mr. Moody did at his own expense and credit, support his men, whose health from a participation of too much toil and fatigue with him, on these excursions, has been greatly impaired.

"JOHN L. C. ROOME,

"*Secretary to Major-General Pattison,*
late Commandant of New York, etc."

No. VII.

"Extract of a letter from the Rev. Mr. Brown (a very respectable clergyman of New Jersey, now in New York) to Rev. Dr. Chandler, dated May 10th, 1782:

"'You will receive Mr. Moody as my particular friend, and as one most firmly attached to His Majesty, and the constitution both in Church and State. He has both done and suffered great things from a principle of loyalty. You may give full credit to all he says, and if he tells you some things seemingly incredible, still you are to believe him. He is honest, sober and firm—never intimidated by danger, and of undeviating probity and honour.'

"Extract of a letter from Rev. Dr. Inglis, Rector of New York, to the same person, dated May 11th, 1782:

"'Mr. Moody is one of the most active partisans we have, and perhaps has run more risque than any other man during the war. He has brought in three rebel mails, and has often been in the greatest perils among false brethren. The story of his adventures will entertain and astonish you. He goes home at Sir Henry Clinton's desire, who has promised to do something for him adequate to his services.'

"In justice to Mr. Moody, I think it my duty to furnish him with the above extracts.

"T. B. CHANDLER.

"August 23rd, 1782."

Sabine, who we must remember is an American writer, says in his history of the Loyalists, that Mr. Moody was a remarkable man, and warmly eulogizes many features of his character and career, emphasizing with a very gratifying candour and fairness the fact that Mr. Moody fought from principle, and most disinterestedly, and from an honest and loyal desire to live and die a British subject. Sabine says: "His own narrative, singularly candid as regards the Whigs, bears the impress of truth," and further, "I have in my possession more than twenty letters and other papers which, dated at different periods and written by different persons of distinguished merit, show that he was much respected by clergymen and civilians, as well as by gentlemen of the army."

It seems that the only rewards he obtained for his valuable services were a temporary allowance of £100 sterling a year, a grant of a tract of wilderness land in Nova Scotia, and the half-pay of an officer of his rank. In 1785 he returned to Halifax, whence he removed to his land at Sissiboo—now Weymouth—in the following year, where he established a new home for himself and family, and lived until his decease on the first day of April, 1809.

Mr. Moody was a candidate for a seat in the Assembly at the general election in 1793. His brother Loyalist, Thomas Barclay, was his colleague. They were successful, and represented the county until 1799. Mr. Moody seems to have attended to his legislative duties with exactness, and to have taken considerable part in the debates of that period.

Very soon after his settlement at Weymouth he commenced an agitation for a division of the county. In the petition praying for an Act of the Assembly for that purpose, he and his co-petitioners suggest Bear (Imbert's) River as a proper eastern boundary of the new county, with Weymouth for the county town, and speak of Clare as a very flourishing and prosperous district. Their request was not granted, nor did he succeed any better after he became a member; and forty-seven years were to pass away before such a division was effected. In attestation of his sound judgment the river which he named as the proper eastern boundary was the one selected when the division was made.

Owing to the lapse of his pension and half-pay at his death, and unexpected losses sustained before that event, his widow found herself, in her declining years, in very straitened financial circumstances, and was advised to ask the British Government to extend to her, her deceased husband's pension for the remainder of her life. She accordingly forwarded to the Earl of Liverpool, Secretary of State for the Colonies, a memorial setting forth the facts of his services and of her circumstances in detail. This memorial was accompanied by the following certificatory document:

"I do hereby certify that James Moody, Esq., mentioned in the foregoing petition, was well known to me for several years at New York, during the American revolution, and subsequently in London and Nova Scotia; that the particulars concerning him stated in the petition are all correct; that he was an officer in one of the regiments at New York, and very particularly distinguished by his active intrepidity in the most hazardous undertakings in His Majesty's service; that during a long residence in Nova Scotia he was eminently useful in promoting loyalty and order as a magistrate, an officer, and a member of the Legislature. And further, that the petitioner, Jane Moody, his widow, is a woman of virtuous and very respectable character, now reduced to extreme indigence; and, therefore, I beg humbly to recommend the prayer of the petition as every way deserving of favourable consideration.

"(Signed), CHARLES NOVA SCOTIA."

It gives me great pleasure to transcribe these documents. No man was better qualified from personal knowledge to speak of Moody's "active intrepidity in the most hazardous undertakings," than Doctor Inglis, and no man's testimony could be regarded of greater value.

[Mrs. Jane Moody, through the influence of Doctor Inglis, and of His Royal Highness the Duke of Kent, who had been a warm friend of her deceased husband, received a pension of £81 sterling during her life.—Ed.]

EDWARD THORNE.

1799-1806.

Mr. Thorne was a native of the old colony of New York, where he was born in 1746, and from which he emigrated to this province in 1783; where he soon after recommenced life by making a new home in Lower Granville, on what is still known as "the old Thorne property." It is known that the family was held in esteem in the community of which it formed a part before, and at the time of, the revolution, and that the conduct of its members was marked by so strict a loyalty to the Crown as to render them obnoxious to the revolted party, to confiscation of their property, and to make their exile a necessity.

Mr. Thorne was made a magistrate at an early day after the settlement in Granville, and he held the office until his decease. The obituary notice published immediately after his death, states that he had been a Justice of the Peace for fifty years, and if that statement be true, he must have held the position in New York as early as 1770, which is not only possible, but very probable; but as he lived only thirty-seven years in this province, he could not have held the appointment for more than that number of years in it. In his official capacity he was much respected and greatly employed.

Mr. Thorne had a number of children. His son, James Thorne, succeeded to the possession of the homestead on his father's death, and descendants are very numerous, some of whom are to be found in Granville, and others in St. John, N.B., some in Halifax, and others in Ottawa. One of his daughters, Jane, was the wife of the late Timothy Ruggles, who for many years was a representative of Granville in the Assembly.

THOMAS RITCHIE.

1806–1811, 1811–1818, 1818–1820, 1820–1824.

The subject of this memoir was the second son of John Ritchie, M.P.P., and was born in Annapolis, September 21, 1777. His useful life fills a large space in the history of the Province, especially in its legislative history, and deserves a longer and more able biography than this sketch is likely to be. Few men had greater influence in the community in which he lived, and still fewer knew how to exert such an influence so wisely and so well.

Mr. Ritchie studied law in the office of Thos. Barclay, who had himself studied under the celebrated John Jay, and was admitted to the bar about 1795, and, at the beginning of the century, on the removal of Mr. Barclay from the Province, succeeded that gentleman in a large and valuable practice, which he held and enlarged until 1824, when he resigned his seat in the Assembly, and accepted a place on the Bench of the Court of Common Pleas.

He entered public life in 1806, having been elected as one of the county representatives in that year. He was chosen without opposition. He speaks of the county, at that time, as being "the largest and most populous in the Province, Halifax excepted," and affirms that he continued to be elected *without opposition*, until his elevation to the bench in 1824. It is probable that no man in Nova Scotia ever held a seat in the Assembly for so long and continuous a period without an election contest.

Among the many bills introduced into the Assembly by Mr. Ritchie was one in 1808 "to regulate Negro Servitude." (See p. 284.) Probably this was the last motion made in our Legislature in relation to slavery. In relation to the militia laws, Mr. Ritchie did not only aid in their consolidation and revision, but by becoming the lieutenant-colonel of one of the Annapolis regiments, took care that their usefulness should not be lost for want of his personal services; and so thorough an officer did he prove himself that he received the special thanks of the Lieutenant-Governor, in a letter from the Adjutant-General by His Excellency's command, dated January 3, 1827.

The summer of 1816 was one of severe drought, in consequence of which there was a general failure of crops, and considerable distress was felt by the rural population throughout the Province. So pressing and general was the want of food, that the farmers were compelled to use the grains usually reserved for seed for the following spring's planting. Mr. Ritchie wrote to the Honourable Michael Wallace on the 4th of May, 1817, in relation to this occurrence as follows: "The distress in this part



Hon. Thomas Ritchie,

Judge of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas.

of the Province is not as extensive as heretofore reported; seed corn is scarce, but we hear of few families who are altogether destitute; seed is of more consequence than other relief, it is not too late for barley, etc." The Government of the day acting with promptness and wisdom, had ordered a large quantity of maize, wheat, rye and barley, from the great firm of Lennox, Maitland & Co., of New York, to enable them to meet the emergency; and the farmers of Annapolis received out of this supply four hundred bushels of maize, five hundred bushels of barley, and one hundred and seventy-two barrels of rye flour, to assist to carry them through, or until the autumn harvests could be made available. These timely supplies alleviated the evils under which the people laboured, but they did not entirely remove them, and the ill effects of their previous bad harvests followed them a year or two longer. Mr. Ritchie's letters, reports and recommendations generally attest the soundness of his judgments and his honesty of purpose, while they contain many passages that, from the lapse of time, are beginning to possess considerable historical value. In January, 1821, he wrote to the Honourable S. S. Blowers representing that there were then only two magistrates residing in the extensive township of Granville, and recommending the appointment of Mr. Samuel Chesley and Mr. Samuel Hall, sons of former justices. What a contrast with the state of these matters to-day!

In 1822 Mr. Ritchie, as chairman of the Committee of the Assembly on "Fisheries, Agriculture and Commerce," made a report to the House which showed how thoroughly his mind was penetrated by the conviction that we should extend our trade to the other continental colonies, or Canada, especially to Quebec; that we should make ourselves the importers of West India products to be sent thither, thus providing employment for our vessels, and by bringing back cargoes of flour, rendering the country independent of our republican neighbours.

Judge Ritchie was appointed President of the Court of Sessions of the Peace (*custos rotulorum*) on the 17th of March, 1828; a position the functions of which he always faithfully and ably discharged. It seems to have been characteristic of him that whatever duty he undertook to perform, or whatever work he endeavoured to achieve, he applied all his powers to do it in a creditable manner, and he seldom failed in his object. As legislator, lawyer, judge, magistrate, militia officer, or man of business he brought to his aid a mind possessed of a power of analysis and discrimination, which seldom suffered him to go astray, and his untiring industry and persistent application enabled him to accomplish creditably with comparative ease much that, to a man of weaker mental or physical development, would have been entirely impossible of attainment.

During the long period that he held the office of first Justice in the

Court of Common Pleas for the Western District (which embraced the present counties of Annapolis, Digby, Yarmouth and Shelburne), it was his custom to render term by term a detailed and elaborate report of the business of the Courts over which he presided, and of other matters of local interest to the Lieutenant-Governor. These reports are very full and precise, and contain much interesting and valuable information upon the various topics on which they treat, and are really very useful in this respect. Sir James Kempt, to whom many of them were addressed, thus refers to them in a letter to Mr. Ritchie under date of August 19th, 1828:

"I thank you for the report which accompanies your letter on the state of the Western District, after the spring sittings of the Courts over which you preside. Such reports are to me valuable documents, and I cannot leave the Province without expressing to you my obligations for the impartial manner in which you have discharged the duties of the very important offices which you fill.

"JAMES KEMPT."

In 1830 he was a candidate for the office of Attorney-General of the Province, *vice* R. J. Uniacke. In a document found in the public archives, dated October of that year, his public services are thus summarized: "The public were largely indebted to him for the consolidation and amendment of the militia laws; he was the originator of the treasury note system which had proved so beneficial to the country since 1812; the loan bill introduced by him to alleviate the distresses caused by the change from war to peace, which became law in 1819 and had produced the results intended, was his work; as chairman of the Committee on the Consolidated Revenue Acts, he had done good service; he had been offered the Speakership of the House, but felt it his duty to decline, and he was then the oldest member of the bar after the Chief Justice and Master of the Rolls, and Judges Wilkins and Wiswall. He died November 10th, 1852, in the seventy-sixth year of his age.

The number of this gentleman's descendants, only one more remote than a grandson, who have devoted themselves to the legal profession, a large proportion of whom attained to eminence, one the highest eminence possible in the Dominion, is so remarkable as to deserve mention here. They are as follows:

Sons: (1) Hon. John W. Ritchie, Judge in Equity of the Supreme Court of Nova Scotia; (2) Sir Wm. J. Ritchie, Chief Justice of Canada; (3) Rev. James J. Ritchie, Barrister fourteen years before taking orders; (4) George W. Ritchie, Barrister, who lived at Fredericton, N.B.; (5) Hon. J. Norman Ritchie, Judge of the Supreme Court of Nova Scotia. *Grandsons*: (6) Thomas Ritchie, (7) George Ritchie, of Halifax, N.S., sons of Hon. J. W. Ritchie; (8) William Ritchie, (9) Robert R. Ritchie, of New Brunswick, (10) J. Almon Ritchie, (11) Owen Ritchie, of Ontario, four sons of the Chief Justice of Canada; (12) Charles T. C. MacColla, son of his daughter Laleah; (13) James J. Ritchie, Q.C., of Annapolis, (14) W. B. Almon Ritchie, Q.C., of Halifax, sons of Rev. J. J. Ritchie; (15) George W. Ritchie, of

Halifax, son of George W. Ritchie. *Great-grandson*: T. Reginald Robertson, of Kentville, N.S., son of Laleah, daughter of Rev. James J. Ritchie.

Two of the brothers of Hon. Thomas Ritchie's first wife were eminent lawyers (see memoirs of John and Hon. J. W. Johnstone), and a remarkable number of her nephews have also attained notable positions in the same profession.—[Ed.]

THOMAS WALKER.

1806–1808.

This gentleman was the son of Thomas Walker, a native of Scotland, who, a short time before 1770, was appointed Naval Officer for the port of Annapolis,* where it is believed he resided until his decease. That the senior Thomas Walker came to Annapolis after 1767 and before 1770 is certain, as his name does not appear in the census return of the former year, but is found in that of the latter. His family then consisted of eight souls, including himself and wife, the last-named being of American, *i.e.*, old colonial birth. Their six children were all of Nova Scotia birth, though certainly not all born at Annapolis. In addition to these particulars, we learn from the same return that he was the owner of four hundred acres of land.

His eldest son, the subject of this sketch, was probably twelve or fourteen years of age at the time of his father's removal to Annapolis, and at the time of the arrival of the Loyalists he would have attained to complete manhood. It is possible he may have received the appointment of Naval Officer after his father's death, but it is more probable that at an early period of his life, he employed himself in mercantile pursuits. Toward the close of the century he married Phœbe, daughter of Colonel Thomas Millidge, by whom he had several children.

At the general election which took place in 1806, he was brought forward as a candidate for the seat for the township in which he lived, and was opposed by Edward Whitman, a son of Deacon John Whitman. (See Whitman family, *post.*) Mr. Whitman lived toward the eastern extremity of the township (near Lawrencetown), and Mr. Walker still nearer to the western extremity.

The contest proved to be a very close one, and was characterized by much acrimony of feeling. The proceedings to which it gave rise have developed some facts, which, without them, would probably have been lost to us for ever. Mr. Walker, having received a majority of votes, was returned as duly elected by Winniett, the Sheriff, who had recently been appointed to fill the vacancy caused by the death of the late incumbent (Dickson). His opponent, however, petitioned against the

* In a MS. of the author's I find it stated that he was a lieutenant in the 60th regiment, 2nd battalion; commission dated April, 1775.—[Ed.]

return, setting forth in his memorial that there were only "one hundred and thirty-nine good votes in the present township of Annapolis," out of which he affirmed that Walker had polled only sixty-one, whilst seventy-eight had been cast for him, being a clear majority against the sitting member of seventeen votes. He also complained that the Sheriff had refused to allow the vote of John Hicks, a Quaker, who declined to swear to his qualification as an elector, though he was known by the Sheriff himself to be an opulent freeholder; and that the vote of Fairfield Woodbury was refused, though the deed of his property had been lodged in the office of registry* for more than two years before the election, and was declared by the Sheriff not yet recorded.

In addition to these objections, he further alleged that "the Sheriff," had admitted a minor to vote for Walker; and also "one Thomas Clarke who had no freehold"; but the most serious and important of his allegations he reserved for the close of his memorial, it was this: "That the said Thomas Walker had bribed one Jonathan Payson to vote for him, by promising to discontinue a suit-at-law, which he, the said Thomas Walker, had brought against the said Payson in the Supreme Court." The new House met on the 18th November, 1806, and on the 11th December the Assembly declared the election void, a conclusion that did not seem to be satisfactory to either of the parties. Lewis M. Wilkins, father of the late judge of that name, was the Speaker of this House, and the whole case was referred to the home government for a final decision. It was not, however, until the 3rd of March, 1808, that the Speaker informed the House that "His Honour," the Administrator of the Government, had received a despatch from Lord Castlereagh, in which he was commanded to have a writ issued for the election of a member in the room of Thomas Walker for the township of Annapolis.

A writ was, therefore, immediately ordered, and an election took place, which resulted in the return of William Robertson, Esq., better known as Colonel Robertson, who was sworn in and took his seat on the 19th of May, 1808.

Mr. Walker had at least two sons and at least four daughters. The eldest of these sons, whose name was Thomas Millidge Walker, died at sea. The second son, Rev. William Walker, D.D., a minister of the Church of England, lived to an advanced age in New Brunswick, in which province he married and leaves descendants. The daughters of Mr. Walker were as follows: (1) Elizabeth, married Francis Willoughby Pickman, of Salem, Mass., afterwards of Annapolis Royal and St. John, N.B., and has left several sons and daughters. One of the latter is the wife of George Lynch, Esq., of Digby, and another of Herbert Crosskill, Deputy Provincial Secretary; (2) Anna Maria, married George R.

* The Sheriff was also Registrar of Deeds for the county.

Grassie, for many years Sheriff of Colchester, and afterwards Prothonotary of the Supreme Court of Annapolis. One of his daughters was the wife of E. C. Cowling, Judge of Probate; another, of Jared C. Troop, Speaker of the House of Assembly; (3) Mary, married 1835, Ed. H. Cutler, Sheriff and Registrar of Deeds, Annapolis; (4) Phœbe, died unmarried in 1893; Margaret, who married in 1816, John Newton, lieutenant in the Royal Navy, was also probably a daughter, and the eldest. A sister of Thomas Walker was the mother of General Sir W. Fenwick Williams, of Kars.

ISAIAH SHAW.

1806–1812, 1812–1819.

As the author left no memoir of this very useful and valuable member among his papers, nor any materials by which I could compile one, I can only refer the reader to page 202, and pages 216 and 217, *ante*, and the genealogy of the Shaw family, *post*.—[Ed.]

JOHN WARWICK.

1806–1811, 1811–1818, 1818–1820.

John Warwick was a native of the north riding of Yorkshire. He left his native country in 1774, and arrived in the New England colonies in the same year. The great struggle for independence was about commencing, and in 1775 Mr. W. took arms on the royal side and continued "to aid and assist the king" until the close of the war, when he came to Digby with his family, where he settled and resided until his death, which took place in or not long after 1830.

In a communication to Sir James Kempt, in 1821, he says he was encouraged to remain at Digby "by the benefit to be derived from the *public* fishery adjoining the town-plot" now and long known as the "Joggins." He also tells his correspondent that he "had cleared and cultivated two new farms from a wilderness state." He was appointed deputy post-master in 1800, and continued to discharge the duties devolved upon him in that capacity for nearly twenty-five years. He was first elected to serve in the general assembly at the elections of 1806, and was again returned for the township of Digby in 1811, and served his constituency for the full period of twelve years. In 1818 he sought the suffrages of the county as the colleague of Thomas Ritchie, Esq., and was once more duly returned, and served until the dissolution of the House on the demise of the Crown in 1820.

Mr. Warwick was distinguished for his uprightness of purpose and

conduct, as well as for his abounding common-sense. Conservative in his opinions, but liberal in his charities, he well deserved the popularity he enjoyed in the county and the Assembly. Foremost in all acts tending to elevate the morals and secure the interests of his constituents, they were fully justified in the long-continued confidence they reposed in him.*

WILLIAM ROBERTSON.

1808–1811.

This gentleman was of Scottish descent, perhaps of Scottish birth, and settled in Annapolis about the time of the influx of the Loyalists, of whom he is said to have been one. He was early engaged in mercantile pursuits, in which he seems to have been employed until his decease. He was long and generally esteemed as an enthusiastic and efficient militia officer, and was commonly known, first as "major" and afterwards as "colonel" Robertson. During the last quarter of the past century, and the first decade of the present, he played a leading part in the creation and prosecution of a direct trade with the British and Foreign West Indies—a trade which, at the time of his decease, had reached considerable dimensions, and brought much wealth to the town and surrounding country.

Mr. Robertson married Sarah, daughter of Robert Timpany, a major in the New Jersey volunteers. Her father had been educated at Glasgow, but was an Irishman by birth, and emigrated to Philadelphia in 1760, and was employed in educational pursuits until the commencement of the revolution, when he entered the third battalion of the corps above named, and saw "a severe and continual service" until its close in 1783. Mr. Timpany died in 1844 at the very advanced age of one hundred and two years, having been born in 1742.

This marriage, which took place about 1785, was productive of a large family of children. Among them was John, whose memoir is given in another place; and James, a merchant, who afterwards removed to St. John, N.B., where his descendants still reside,† and Alexander, who settled in Digby where he died, all of whom left issue.

In 1807 Mr. Robertson was appointed agent for Indian affairs in the county, by Sir John Wentworth, an office the duties of which he

* The above is only a skeleton which the author intended to fill out into a more extended biography, only one sheet of which is to be found. Colonel Warwick was a very interesting character, and a man of great influence in Digby in his day. —[Ed.]

† The wife of James was a sister of Sir W. F. Williams, of Kars, and they were the parents of Fenwick Robertson, a merchant who, I think, finally settled in New York, and Rev. Thomas Robertson, long Rector of St. George's, N.B., who was father of the founder of the great firm of Manchester, Robertson & Allison.—[Ed.]

discharged with great faithfulness for several years. In 1808 he was elected to fill a vacancy in the representation of the township of Annapolis, caused by the unseating of Thomas Walker, who had obtained the seat at the general election in 1806. He was sworn in, and took his seat in the assembly on the twentieth day of May, 1808, and remained the sitting member until the dissolution of the House which took place in 1811.

Mr. Robertson was not distinguished for oratorical power, though he could, when occasion required, express his opinions with considerable force and ability; and the well-known integrity of his character made his utterances of value to the House. He is known to have possessed the confidence of the community in which he lived, and to have merited the consideration so cordially and generally extended to him.

It must not be omitted to mention that one of Mr. Robertson's daughters was the wife of a grandson of Brigadier-General Ruggles, Dwight Ruggles, Esq., whose son, the late William Robertson Ruggles, was one of the leading merchants and post-master of Annapolis, to the time of his death.

JOHN HARRIS.

1811–1818.

This gentleman was a son of Samuel Harris, a pre-loyalist settler in Granville, in which township he is known to have resided in 1770, when his family consisted of eight souls, himself and wife and six children, four of which were born in Nova Scotia and two in Massachusetts. It seems very doubtful whether there was any consanguinity between this family and that of John Harris, of Annapolis, whose memoir has already been given. The former is said to have been of English birth in the census of 1767, and the latter is stated in the returns for Granville in 1770 to have been born in Massachusetts, besides the descendants claim no blood relationship to each other. One circumstance, however, for a time caused the writer much trouble,—they were of the same profession, land surveyors, and one of them was a "junior." After full investigation it was found that the "junior" was always used in the address of the *elder* John Harris, who was the son of that John whose memoir has been referred to, and never to the subject of this sketch. They were equally distinguished for the excellency and accuracy of their surveys, and were both deputies of the Provincial Surveyor-General.

Mr. Harris was probably born in Granville, though he afterwards settled in the township of Annapolis on a farm about two and a half miles to the eastward of the town, which he cultivated and improved till his death. In 1815 he was employed by the Government of Lord

Dalhousie to survey and lay out the Dalhousie Road. (See history of Dalhousie settlement, *ante* p. 260.)

Mr. Harris was brought out at the general election, which occurred in 1811, as a candidate for the representation of the township of Annapolis, the seat for which had been filled, since 1808, by Colonel Robertson. Whether he ran in opposition to that gentleman or not is uncertain, but it is certain that he was returned and discharged the functions of member for the next seven years. In 1812 he opposed the passage of Mr. Ritchie's "Treasury Note Bill," though he voted in the minority on the occasion. The "Act to Encourage Schools" which passed in 1814, received his warm support as well as approbation. On the whole, he appears to have been a very intelligent and industrious representative, and to have deserved well of his constituents. During his period of service he obtained a grant of eighty pounds for the building of a new bridge over Sawmill Creek, which was constructed under the superintendence of the late Mr. Benjamin Fairn. He was the Commissioner who laid out and constructed the road still known as the Hessian Line road in 1809. In these, and many similar services, he proved himself eminently useful and skilful. His legislative career closed with the dissolution of the Assembly, of which he was a member, in 1817. In 1820 the House of Assembly granted him one hundred pounds for his services in laying out and surveying highways, and a plan —then much needed—showing the connections of granted lands in the county.

PELEG WISWALL.

1812–1816.

Mr. Wiswall was the eldest son of the late Rev. John Wiswall, Rector of Cornwallis and Wilmot, having been born in Falmouth, Me., in 1762; and when his father, after his exile from Maine, became a chaplain in the navy, he accompanied him in the ship. He attained his majority about the time of his arrival in the Province. He became a lawyer by profession, and proved a successful one. Energetic, faithful and persevering in all his conduct, he soon acquired the confidence and business of a large circle of clients, and his legal attainments and forensic talents secured for him a high place in the estimation of the bar and the bench. The western part of the Province formed the chief theatre of his practice. His headquarters was for the most part fixed in the beautiful village of Digby, which had special charms for him, having been almost exclusively settled by brother Loyalists.*

* Many anecdotes illustrative of Mr. Wiswall's idiosyncrasies of mental constitution and outward manners were long preserved. The late John McGregor, barrister, so long a notable citizen of Halifax, used to relate the following. When a youth he

In 1812 Mr. Wiswall became a candidate for the electors' suffrages, with the late Judge Ritchie as a colleague, and was successful in gaining a seat in the Assembly as one of the county representatives. His legislative career, which was marked by his usual activity, and the scrupulous discharge of the onerous duties connected with it, was destined to be of but short duration. It was terminated in 1816 by his elevation to the bench, as Associate Judge in the Supreme Court and Master in Chancery, an event which took place on the thirty-first of March in that year. For the long period of twenty years from the date of this appointment he administered the laws with an integrity, intelligence and uprightness that distinguished him and did him honour.

In 1798 Sir John Wentworth, the Lieutenant-Governor, appointed a commission to investigate the nature of the complaints concerning the title of certain lands in the township of Digby, and Mr. Wiswall was one of the gentlemen named in that document. The report is in his handwriting, and quite exhaustive of the subject. In this document, whose length prevents transcription, the mismanagement of the old Board of Agents, and the carelessness of the early surveyors are denounced with considerable severity.

Our manuscript archives abound with articles from his pen addressed to various individuals connected with the administration of public affairs, and embrace a wide range of topics. Some of these papers incidentally afford glimpses of men and things not elsewhere to be obtained and well worthy of record. As an instance: In a letter addressed to Sir Rupert D. George, dated October 10th, 1827, he writes thus concerning the Longley* family, "Referring to a petition of William Longley in relation to some (church?) lands, I wish Government may be inclined to favour Mr. Longley, as he is of a family that early purchased and improved in this county, and all the men of his family are remarkable

called on Mr. Wiswall to consult him about entering on a course of legal study, and was somewhat abashed at his singular presence, peculiar dress of a past generation, and quick and irritable motions, as well as speech, when the following dialogue occurred:

Mr. W.—"Well, my man, and so you'd like to be a lawyer?"

Student—"Yes, sir; I think I would like to be one."

Mr. W.—"Where's your gun, my boy? I want to see your gun my young gentleman. Fond of sporting, eh?"

Student—"I have no gun, sir; don't know whether I'd like gunning."

Mr. W.—"No gun! Well you keep a boat then; like boating?"

Student—"I do not own any boat, sir; don't know how to use one."

Mr. W.—"You wear a watch, or keep a dog" (snappishly)?

Student—"I am too poor to wear a watch, and I have no dog."

Mr. W. (with an earnest and gratified manner)—"You'll do, lad, if you persevere in the course you have begun. The law is a jealous mistress, and cannot be won except by the greatest and undivided devotion. To gain her you must sacrifice everything that diverts your attention from her. Remember this, my lad, and I will ensure you success; and you may rely on any assistance in my power to aid you" (the last sentences in the kindest and most sincere way).

* The William Longley referred to was an uncle to Avard Longley, M.P.

for good husbandry, as well as for general respectability of manners and conduct."

Mr. Wiswall, in a letter to the Provincial Secretary, bearing date December 1st, 1826, thus wrote on the subject of the division of the county: "To form two counties out of the present County of Annapolis was first proposed when the American Loyalists settled Digby and the lands westward. At that time there was not (as now) good roads of communication, and consequently attendance on the courts and county offices at Annapolis, to the western settlers was expensive and difficult. . . . The present population of the county may, perhaps, amount to twelve thousand souls and is increasing, but the increase (owing to the barrenness of the soil southward) will be chiefly within the long and narrow line of settlement." In another part of this paper he expresses himself as opposed to a division of the county, but very honestly adds: "The Government may have reasons for it unknown to me, yet I feel it to be my duty to lay before them all the information in my power." He concludes this communication by saying that he thinks the eastern settlers want a court-house at Bridgetown and the line of division at Imbert's River, and naively suggests that "election calculations" move those settlers to desire that boundary.

In 1820, four hundred of the inhabitants of Digby and vicinity petitioned the Government to revoke a grant made in the previous year, of the Joggins fishing flats, to Thomas Andrews. In their memorial they set forth that this fishery had been a *public* one since 1772, and that it had always been managed for the public good and on its behalf, by the Court of General Sessions of the Peace for the district, and that the recent granting of it was a great and general injury and a public wrong, which could be overcome only by annulling the patent complained of. This document, which seems to have been drawn up with much care and considerable ability, was referred to Judge Wiswall by the Lieutenant-Governor for his opinion and advice. In his report on the subject, which was able and perhaps impartial, he arrived at the conclusion that "a public fishery is mischievous," and therefore advised His Excellency not to grant the relief sought.

In 1826 Charles Budd, afterwards and for several years the representative of the township, made application for a grant of the water lot at the foot of "Maiden Lane," which was transmitted to the Judge for his advice. In his report to Sir James Kempt he says: "When the first settlers were located in 1783 and 1784, and the township plot of Digby laid out, no mention or consideration had taken place respecting any lands below high-water mark;" and therefore recommended compliance with Mr. Budd's application. This measure was opposed by the inhabitants who, in their petition against it, informed the Government, "that

in laying out the town plot of Digby the beach at the foot of Maiden Lane and the adjoining beach eastward were publicly agreed upon and set apart as a public slip, and has, as such, been *invariably* held and used to the present day, being the only safe landing on the whole front of this extensive village; though by the indulgence of the public, several vessels have been built at the foot of the said Maiden Lane by Lovett & Crookshank,* and by Stewart † & Budd."

Although his sympathies were easily excited in favour of his Loyalist brethren, to his honour be it said they were not confined to that class of the population. We have seen how kindly he wrote of William Longley, a pre-loyalist. Of another gentleman, not a Loyalist, he wrote in an equally honourable and just way. In the new general Commission of the Peace issued in 1818, the name of John Whitman was, from some unexplained cause, omitted, though he had long served with credit as a magistrate. This omission was a matter of public regret, and a number of influential persons petitioned to have his name added to the roll. In placing his signature to the memorial, Mr. Wiswall added the following certificate: "John Whitman, Esq., has been known to me ever since he was first placed in the general Commission of the Peace. He is exemplary in private life, and has ever conducted himself as an active, zealous and useful magistrate."

On the establishment of Boards of Health in 1832, Judge Wiswall was appointed President of that for Digby, the other members being Charles Budd, John E. Morton, and Doctor Lightfoot. This appointment, if it had any duties attached to it involving labour, must have been very gratifying to the good old judge, who wrote to Sir James Kempt in 1827 as follows: "From the peculiar structure of the law regulating my appointment, it necessarily results that I must have long vacations between my public services, and I cannot but wish that so much useless time should be employed in any way that my advanced age and feeble abilities are competent to, in other offices, together with that I now fill, and which I am prohibited from holding. Emoluments I do not seek, as I have chosen my residence, and circumscribed my desires, so as to be at ease on that head, but *conscious inutility* is among the most unpleasant sensations."

His writings were as voluminous as they were varied, indeed his pen never seemed to require rest. No subject of any importance from a public point of view, escaped his notice. Education, law, agriculture, manufactures, local and general politics, religion, each, at one time or other of his long and active life, received elucidation and illustration from his pen. It is therefore to be hoped that some loving hand, at no

* Phineas Lovett, jun., son of Colonel Lovett. Crookshank was of St. John, N B.

† Late Post-master and Prothonotary of the Supreme Court, at Digby.

distant day, will be found to write an amplified biography of one who has contributed so largely to the public good, and who has left behind him so many valuable materials for such a work.

NOTE.—Judge Wiswall's only child was the wife of Charles Budd, M.P.P. for the township of Digby, and had no children.—[ED.]

CERENO UPHAM JONES.

1816-1818.

Mr. Jones was elected in 1816 to fill the vacancy created in the representation of the county by the elevation of Peleg Wiswall to the Bench of the Supreme Court. He served for the balance of the term only, that is to say, till 1818, in which year he was succeeded by John Warwick, of Digby. It does not appear whether he sought re-election or not. In 1822 he was appointed a Justice of the Peace, an office then deemed one of importance and honour. In 1824 he was one of the Associate Judges of the Court of Common Pleas for the County. His residence was at Sissiboo, now Weymouth, where he always lived, and died at an advanced age, about the middle of the century. His father, Elisha Jones, was one of fourteen sons of Colonel Elisha Jones, of Weston, Mass., six at least of whom became active Loyalists in the war of the rebellion, and at its close were exiled to the provinces. Of these, Ephraim and another settled in Upper Canada, where they left a large posterity, including several noted judges, Ephraim being father of the Honourable Jonas Jones of the Supreme Court. Elisha, Josiah, Simeon and Stephen settled in what is now Digby County, Nova Scotia, but Elisha soon after the peace returned, with all the members of his household, except Cereno Upham, who remained and left a very numerous posterity. He was the great-grandfather of Herbert Ladd Jones, lately the talented member for Digby County in the Canadian Parliament. Stephen was grandfather of Honourable A. G. Jones, of Halifax. Josiah was the father of Charles Jones and Edward A., both prominent merchants and public men, and through the son Edward, grandfather of Dr. Josiah Edgar Jones, of Digby, in 1896 the Conservative candidate for parliament in Digby. The family has produced eminent men in the United States, and is descended from Lewis Jones, who emigrated, it is supposed from Wales, among the very earliest settlers. The descent of the gentleman named at the head of this sketch is, I think, as follows: Lewis,[1] Josiah,[2] Josiah,[3] Josiah,[4] Col. Elisha[5] (the youngest), Elisha,[6] Cereno, or Sereno,[7] for the latter is certainly the correct spelling of the Christian name although the other has become common in the family.

The writer remembers Judge Jones as a worthy and venerable aged

Christian, and "gentleman of the old school," who must have been a most faithful and honest representative. His occupation was that of farmer and country merchant, with several local public offices, and he was a useful man in the community in which he lived.

NOTE.—The above is filled up from a skeleton sketch found among Mr. Calnek's MSS.—[ED.]

THOMAS RITCHIE.

1819–1820.

This gentleman was a son of Andrew Ritchie, sen., and therefore a cousin-german of John Ritchie, M.P.P., and a first cousin once removed of the other and more distinguished Thomas Ritchie, unless the author and myself are mistaken in our genealogical conclusions. He sat but two sessions. He was (to use the words of a venerable informant of the editor many years ago) a "very capable man," and tradition says a respected and useful magistrate. He died in 1833, aged seventy, unmarried, leaving a good estate which he divided by will among several nephews and nieces.—[ED.]

TIMOTHY RUGGLES.

1818–1820, 1820–1827, 1827–1830, 1830–1831.

The member of the Assembly of whom we are about to speak was the eldest son of Timothy, who was the eldest son of General Timothy Ruggles, and who had been many years settled in Belleisle, where his children were born, with the exception of the eldest who was born in 1777, the year after the arrival of the family in Nova Scotia, and probably at Halifax or Digby. He was reared on his father's farm in Granville, of which, on the occasion of his decease he became sole proprietor. It was and still continues to be a very valuable estate. In addition to agricultural pursuits he added an extensive and profitable mercantile establishment which resulted in his becoming one of the wealthiest men in the county.

Mr. Ruggles' public life began in 1818, he having sought and obtained the suffrages of a majority of the electors of Granville in that year. On the demise of the Crown in 1820 he was again returned to the Assembly, and filled the seat until the general election in 1827, when he was once more chosen after a sharp contest. This new House did not live out half its days, having died simultaneously with King George IV. in 1830. In the general election which followed he was again a candidate, and was opposed by James Delap, Esq., and after a very

exciting and close struggle, characterized by great acrimony of feeling, he was returned by a very small majority. This was the fourth time he had been honoured by the electors of Granville with their confidence. His antagonist demanded a scrutiny of votes and an expensive and exhaustive investigation took place, which ended by leaving the relative position of the parties precisely as before, with Mr. Ruggles in possession of the seat.

These repeated and spirited political tournaments were attended by an exhibition of great partisan warmth and personal animosity, which afterwards culminated in an act of incendiarism on the night of the 5th of October, 1830, by which the store of Mr. Ruggles, with its varied and valuable contents, was entirely consumed. By this untoward event he was the loser of two thousand pounds, a loss which did not materially lessen his wealth, but which nevertheless contributed, in no small degree, to his comparatively early death in the following year. Being a man of a warm and affectionate disposition, when it seemed certain that the destruction of his property had been the deliberate and malicious act of an enemy, the knowledge proved a source of grief and irritation injurious to his health and destructive to his peace of mind which it may be fairly alleged hastened his decease.

Mr. Ruggles married Jane, daughter of Edward Thorne, a former member of the Assembly, by whom he had three sons and several daughters. One of his sons only survives to the present time, Timothy Dwight Ruggles, Q.C., of Bridgetown, who long held a leading position in his profession in the county, and still survives. His second son, Edward Thorne Ruggles, died in Ontario, and the youngest son, Stephen Thorne Ruggles, died a few years ago in Granville. Neither of these gentlemen left descendants.

As a representative, Mr. Ruggles was careful to watch over and guard the local interests of his constituents, and in all matters of trade and finance he was esteemed as an authority of no mean order, and his opinions on such matters are said to have had much weight in the Assembly. He was eminently endowed with cheerfulness of disposition, as well as a genial temperament, and the ludicrous and witty had uncommon charms for him. Conservative in his opinions, he was not easily diverted from the course he was inclined to follow, and the voice of popular clamour had no effect upon him. Neither the blandishments of flattery nor the allurements of ease or office could turn him aside from the purpose which a sense of duty had caused him to form. He is still remembered as an obliging friend, a kind and thoughtful neighbour, a genial companion, a witty, yet often wise councillor, a placable enemy and a hospitable host.

His body rests beside that of his father in the Episcopal burial-yard

at Belleisle, and within a stone's throw of the old family dwelling, which afterwards became the property of John Wade, the worthy descendant of Captain John Wade, who was one of the first pre-loyalist settlers in Granville.

WILLIAM H. ROACH.

1818–1820, 1820–1827, 1827–1830, 1830–1836.

By the Editor.

William Henry Roach was a son of John Roach, and grandson of James Roche or Roach, a native of Limerick, Ireland. (See genealogies.) He was born in Annapolis, January 12th, 1784, and was educated in McNamara's High School, until the death of the latter in 1798, after which there is a tradition that he attended the school taught by Ichabod Corbitt. Full of ambition, at the age of nineteen he went to Jamaica, where his cousin, Frederic Lamont, owned a plantation and was a resident magistrate at Falmouth. On the voyage the vessel was boarded by a boat from H. B. M. ship *L'Hercule*, a number of sick sailors from the man-of-war put on board of her, and a corresponding number of her crew, with young Roach, her only passenger, "impressed" and compelled to serve on board the man-of-war. He was immediately appointed captain's clerk on board the *L'Hercule*, the man who had filled that office having been killed in battle a day or two previously. The vessel having put into Falmouth, Jamaica, through the influence of his cousin, Mr. Lamont, he was released from further service in the navy, and found employment as a book-keeper on the Trelawny estate, Montego Bay. Here an event occurred that led to his promotion as overseer of the Trelawny plantation. Witnessing the cruel and inhuman beating of a female slave, in a delicate condition, by a driver under the old overseer's superintendence, and seeing the latter, not satisfied, continuing the whipping himself, he rushed upon the overseer, seized the lash, applied it to him, and knocking him down held him till the poor woman could be taken to the hospital where she died from the effect of her injuries. The overseer ordered him arrested, but he urged the crowd of slaves that accompanied him on his way to jail to commit no act of violence, and they complied with his advice. The next day Mr. Scarlett, the Attorney, and Mr. Irving, the proprietor of the estate, arrived, and after an investigation commended young Roach for his conduct, dismissed the old overseer, and appointed Roach in his place. In this capacity he abolished whipping on the estate and substituted milder punishment. He was the first to substitute the plough for the hoe, and carts for the usual method of carrying away the waste from cane grinding on the head by the slaves. He became very popular among the planters, and was soon commissioned

captain and major of militia. Returning from Jamaica, he married, March 17th, 1811, Mary Ann, third daughter of Major Robert Timpany, a noted Loyalist of Digby. He about that time went to the State of New York and established himself on the Hudson in the West India business; but when the war of 1812 broke out, every alien was obliged to take the oath of allegiance to the Republic, or leave the country within a limited number of days. He did not hesitate between loyalty and self-interest, and coming back to the Province he abandoned all his effects in the United States to the enemy; but he fitted out a heavily armed cutter of sixty men, and sought reprisals in American waters with some success. Very soon, however, he settled down in Digby as a merchant, and began to take a lively interest in public affairs.

On Mr. Warwick changing his candidature from the township of Digby to the county, Mr. Roach was brought forward as a candidate in his place. He was opposed by Thomas H. Ruggles,* grandson of General Timothy, through his youngest son Richard, and after a keen contest was declared elected by a majority of one, and his return petitioned against. The Assembly, which met on the 11th February, 1819, after the usual inquiry declared the seat vacant, and ordered a new election. He and his old opponent were again candidates, and after another sharp but decisive battle, Mr. Roach was returned by twenty-one of a majority, and held the seat until the dissolution of the Assembly by the demise of the Crown in 1820. The question of a division of the county was a lively one at this early period. On December 5th in this year, Messrs. P. Wiswall, Robert Timpany, G. K. Nichols, Joseph Fitzrandolph, Thomas White, David Rutherford and John F. Hughes, in a joint letter to Mr. Roach, say, "We fear that the industry, talent and interest of Mr. Ritchie will be employed to support the Clements petitioners, and to put the Annapolis district as far westward as possible, and in so doing he may entertain a persuasion that he is consulting the interest of the main part of his constituents, especially those among whom he resides." The object of this communication was to guard Mr. Roach against the influences that would be exerted to secure a line of division that would be disadvantageous to Digby. The townspeople of Digby always desired that the eastern boundary of their county should be placed as far east as possible, so that they would have better claims for making Digby the shire town rather than Weymouth, which was desired by the people of that vicinity, and by the inhabitants of Clare.

In 1827 he was elected for the County of Annapolis as a colleague of Thomas C. Haliburton, and again in 1830 as a colleague of Mr. Ritchie; but in 1836, when a strong combination between the east and west was

* Father of Benjamin Henry Ruggles and the late Frederic Williams Ruggles, of Westport.—[Ed.]

formed for the purpose of effecting a division of the county in spite of the lukewarmness of the people in the central districts, and the apprehensions and ambitions of rival towns which tended to retard the movement, he was defeated. Mr. Roach was among the ablest and most patriotic men in the House, and one of the most interesting characters of his day in the public life of Nova Scotia. His opposition to the scheme of the Shubenacadie canal, in which he stood almost, if not quite alone, is sufficient to prove his practical wisdom and sagacity. He pointed out its utter futility in scathing terms, that have proved prophetic. In 1828 and 1829 we find him actively advocating the erection of the piers or breakwaters at Port George and Margaretsville. In 1832 he proposed a change in the mode of selecting committees of the House; supported a bill to establish a bank, and opposed an increased grant to Grammar Schools, on the ground that the Common Schools needed all the extra support the country was able to supply. The House voted itself extra pay that session, Mr. Roach and the other member for Annapolis voting against it. He carried through the House an Act for the abolition of imprisonment for debt, and an Act for the inspection of flour and breadstuffs, then a much required piece of legislation. He was a Reformer, and assailed existing abuses with a boldness, eloquence and wit scarcely inferior to those of the more distinguished tribune of the people who succeeded him, Hon. Joseph Howe. Tradition in the western section of his constituency, now the County of Digby, long assigned to him the palm of popularity over all the public men who ever represented them. His removal to Halifax may have contributed somewhat to his defeat in 1836. He resided in the capital, filling for many years the office of Inspector of Flour, which was pressed on him by the Governor, Sir Peregrine Maitland. In 1850 he returned to Digby to spend the remainder of his days, and without the freshness of his youth, but with all his old-time fire and vigour he undertook an election campaign in 1851, and although a new generation of electors had grown up and very many of his old friends had passed away, his name was still a tower of strength. He was accepted as the Conservative candidate, and came nearer to succeeding than any other who had offered in that interest for several elections, being only eighty behind Mr. Bourneuf, the Frenchman, who being supported by the unanimous vote of the Acadians of Clare, usually carried his elections over the English, who were divided on party lines, by majorities of hundreds. In his speech on that occasion he charged the "Liberal" Government, led by Mr. Howe and William Young, with being recreant to the principles by the assertion of which they had secured public favour, and guilty of the same abuses as those they had formerly denounced when in opposition to the old "Tory" rulers of a former day, supporting his charges in a speech of great power and logic, and as it seemed to the

writer, of genuine Irish eloquence. Mr. James B. Holdsworth, a Liberal, was also a candidate at this election for the last time.

Mr. Roach was endowed with a sound physical constitution and fine personal appearance, as well as great intellectual power and force and eloquence of expression. He died at Digby, October 6th, 1861, in his seventy-seventh year. "He was loyal to his Queen; loving to his kind; lenient to his children. *In Paradiso Gloria.*"

NOTE.—The above imperfect sketch is compiled from some notes of Mr. Calnek, and from information supplied me by my old friend, Rev. Robert Timpany Roche, D.D., now of Eatontown, New Jersey, and some traditions and memories of my own.—[ED.]

SAMUEL CAMPBELL.

1820–1827.

This member was a son of Colin Campbell, who was born in one of the old colonies in 1751, and who took an active part in the revolutionary contest on behalf of the Crown, in consequence of which he became an exile in 1782-83 and settled in St. Andrews, N.B., where he was soon afterwards made Collector of Customs. He did not, however, long remain in that province, having been appointed to fill a similar position in the then populous and flourishing town of Shelburne in this province, in which he lived for the long period of forty years, during all which time he continued to hold the collectorship of that port. He was chosen to represent the County of Shelburne in the Assembly and served one term of seven years. In the latter part of his life he removed from Shelburne to New Edinburgh,* then in Annapolis, now in Digby County, where he ended his days in 1834 at the very advanced age of eighty-three years.

It is probable that his son, the subject of this sketch, was born at Shelburne and educated there. In 1821, while Mr. Campbell was a member of the Assembly, he forwarded the sum of $43.50, a contribution made by some of the inhabitants of New Edinburgh and vicinity, toward the fund then being raised for the erection of a statue in honour of H.R.H. the Duke of Kent. In the letter accompanying this remittance he very *naively* uses the following language, which, if then known, would, from the justice and truth they marked, have proved very annoying to the individuals referred to: "There are," says he "in this vicinity several persons who have for *thirty* years been receiving half-pay from the king, who in this instance have declined to show their attachment though in ample circumstances." In 1823 it was in contemplation to erect a new township in the County of Digby, which was to include the peninsula known as "Digby Neck." The inhabitants of this district

* At the south side of Sissiboo River, at its mouth.—[ED.]

had petitioned the Government to have the "Neck" made a separate township.

This petition was referred by the authorities to Charles Morris, Esq., the Surveyor-General, who reported as follows:

"I have examined the general plan of the township of Digby according to the grant of the said township, and submit the following description for the proposed limits of that part of said township to be set apart as a distinct and separate township to be hereafter called the township of Weymouth, to wit: To be bounded easterly by the easternmost line of William Saunders, near the sea-wall, so called, running across the peninsula of Digby by said line N. 40° W. to the Bay of Fundy; bounded on the north by the Bay of Fundy, on the south by the Bay of St. Mary's, and on the west by the Petit Passage, and also to include the islands called Long and Briar islands lying to the westward of said limits according to the annexed plan. The above to form part of the new township."

The reader will perceive by the foregoing description that the "Neck" was to be severed from Digby and annexed to Weymouth, a measure which was by no means pleasing to the inhabitants. The matter was now referred to Mr. Campbell, who was one of the representatives of the county. In June, 1823, he reported his concurrence in the scheme proposed. He had been requested by the Lieutenant-Governor, through the Honourable William Hill, then Secretary of the Province, to ascertain if the boundaries named by Mr. Morris would be acceptable to the people whose interests would be affected, and especially of those of the peninsula. In his report in reply, which is a lengthy one, he tells Mr. Hill as follows:

"I have to observe that the inhabitants of the western part of Digby are perfectly satisfied with the proposed arrangement. I had also notified the inhabitants of the Neck of the same, and yesterday crossed over to Sandy Cove, which is about the centre of the inhabitants, to know their dispositions on the subject, and found twelve or fifteen of the chief farmers, some of which were from the eastern extremity, some from Trout Cove and other parts of the 'Neck,' among whom was John Morehouse, J.P., an old and respected inhabitant near Sandy Cove, and William Johnson * from near the western extremity.

"It appeared that this latter gentleman had taken a very decided part against the proposed arrangement, and although Mr. Morehouse said he had taken a ride up the 'Neck' a day or two before and found nearly all the people agreeable to the mode proposed by His Excellency, yet Mr. Johnson who had since been riding about, and had drawn up a writing, had forty or fifty against it, among which were the widow women, and many of the signatures were in the same handwriting, and also the names of persons who had the day before held up their hands to the contrary. Mr. Morehouse, on the other hand, assured me if he had set out the way Mr. Johnston had he could have obtained the signatures of more than two-thirds of the inhabitants in favour of joining the new township."

* Ancestor of the Johnsons of Digby Neck, of whom I have an early recollection as a very worthy and influential old gentleman, on terms of warm friendship with the late Judge Elkanah Morton.—[Ed.]

The dissentients, however, under the leadership of Johnson carried the day, and were not included in Weymouth, although they failed to get set off as an independent township. It is a somewhat curious fact that, according to Mr. Campbell's statement, elsewhere made in this same report, Long and Briar islands had up to the time of his writing never been included in any township. He concludes his communication by stating one objection:

"The description of Weymouth as respects the Clare boundary and New Edinburgh line is not so clearly expressed as to be satisfactory to the inhabitants of Clare and New Edinburgh, for if it is the disposition in defining the new township to cross the Sissiboo and take in the town plot of New Edinburgh it is altogether against wishes of both Clare and New Edinburgh the latter of which has always been included in Clare since the first settlement. The following is the description of the line acknowledged and known, and called the western boundary of Digby, viz.: In the description after the word Digby, 'Thence westwardly until it meets the Clare line; thence northerly along the said line until it strikes four rods to the south-west of Colonel Taylor's barn; then northerly down the Sissiboo River, until it strikes the large bar of rocks at the mouth of the said river; thence easterly, etc.' This is agreeable to the line that has always been known and remained from time to time."

Mr. Campbell was the colleague of Thomas Ritchie in the candidature for the seats for the county in the general election which took place in 1820, in consequence of the death of George III., and was duly returned as one of the representatives. He proved to be an active and useful member, and held his seat until 1827, when a new election took place, at which, I believe, he declined to become a candidate. He was placed in the Commission of the Peace in middle life, and bore the name of being an impartial and intelligent magistrate. He was for several years one of the local Board of Land Commissioners, and also Sub-collector of Customs at New Edinburgh for a long period of time and until his death.

NOTE.—He was half-brother of the late Hon. John Campbell, of Liverpool, and of the late Colin Campbell, sen., of Weymouth, Registrar of Deeds, and half-uncle of the late Hon. Colin Campbell, of Weymouth. He married, first, a daughter of Samuel Marshall, M.P.P. for Yarmouth; and second, a daughter of Sereno U. Jones, M.P.P., of Weymouth. A daughter by first wife married Henry Dwight Ruggles, M.D., of Weymouth, and has many descendants. He was a good specimen of the "old school" of colonial gentlemen.—[ED.]

JOHN ROBERTSON.

1820–1827.

This gentleman was a son of the late Colonel William Robertson who represented the township of Annapolis from 1808 to 1811, and whose memoir has already been given to the reader. He married a daughter of Frederick Davoue, mentioned elsewhere.*

In his youth Mr. Robertson manifested so great a love for the sea that he ran away from his home in order to gratify his desire for a life upon its waters. Endowed with an indomitable will, a daring spirit and strong physical organization, he was admirably suited to combat the dangers and hardships incident to a sea-going life. He soon became a good sailor, and rose rapidly to the position of second mate in a large Indiaman, the name of which I have been unable to recover. An anecdote connected with his service on board this ship is worthy of record. On one of his voyages to or from a port in the East Indies the ship was attacked by a piratical armed vessel, and would have suffered capture if it had not been for his coolness and courage on the occasion. When the enemy was discovered she was a considerable distance to windward, but was rapidly bearing down upon the ship, and soon after sent a shot across her bow as a command to heave to. The captain hastily called a council of his officers, informed them that there were no arms on board and urged upon them the propriety of the peaceful surrender of the ship and her cargo as the best means of saving their lives, a course which would have undoubtedly been adopted if Robertson had not opposed it. He said it would, in his judgment, be better to sell their lives, if necessary, in the defence of the vessel and cargo, than to submit tamely to a capture which could lead only to their being murdered in cold blood; that the crew would make a good defence with such weapons as were at hand, and use every means in their power to beat off the assailants, and that such a united and determined effort would have, at least, a chance of success. Having then offered to take charge of the ship and conduct the defence, by permission of the captain, he was placed in the temporary command. He then addressed the crew in a spirited speech telling them the danger they all were in, and how he proposed to meet it. The men hailed his plans and his pluck with shouts of approval, and placing themselves under his command, under his direction began to arm themselves with handspikes, marlinspikes and other bludgeons for the conflict in which they were to contend for liberty and life.

Nearer and nearer approached the piratical cruiser until she was

* See page 248.

within easy range of the merchantman. Robertson now ordered the latter to be hove to, as if it were the intention to surrender at discretion, bidding the crew to conceal themselves behind the bulwarks until he gave the order to act. In the meantime boats were lowered by the enemy, filled with armed men and sent to take possession of what they looked upon as a certain prize. The first of the boats approached the ship on the larboard side, and when her crew were in the act of boarding, they were met by an unexpected attack by the crew of the ship, so sudden and impetuous, so vigorous and furious that but few of the assailants escaped destruction, many of them being hurled back into the sea and drowned and many more killed outright. The other boat, which approached the opposite side of the ship a few minutes later, suffered a similar fate, her crew having met an equally vigorous and disastrous repulse. The evening was now about closing in, and the enemy fearing from what had taken place that his own capture might follow if he should continue his operations, allowed the vessel to continue her voyage without further molestation.

For the coolness and bravery exhibited by Mr. Robertson in thus saving the ship and her cargo, which was a valuable one—both being insured with Lloyds—he was presented by the underwriters with a bonus of £500 sterling, as a recognition of the valuable service rendered by him on that occasion. He soon afterwards abandoned the sea and devoted himself to mercantile business in his native town.

On the demise of the Crown in 1820 the Assembly was dissolved and writs were issued for a general election. Mr. Robertson was brought out as a candidate to oppose Phineas Lovett, jun.,* a gentleman of much influence and of good family, who had previously announced himself as a candidate for the township seat. Mr. Lovett, who, beside being a prominent merchant, had many other advantages in his favour, it was generally believed, would be successful; which he probably would have been but for the extraordinary tact with which Mr. Robertson conducted the campaign.

Shortly after this election, owing to unforeseen and unexpected losses, he failed in business, and was arrested by one or more of his creditors and thrown into prison. On the meeting of the Assembly it asserted its privilege by demanding his release, that he might attend to his legislative duties during the session. No similar case had ever before occurred in the history of the county, and I do not think one has since happened.

Mr. Robertson died early in August, 1872, aged 88. His self-reliant and straightforward conduct in life gained for him the respect and regard of the community in which he resided. He left many descendants.

* This Phineas Lovett was a son of Colonel Lovett, and grandson of Captain Phineas Lovett. He never obtained a seat in the Assembly.

ABRAHAM GESNER.

1824–1827.

The subject of this memoir was born in New Jersey, in 1755. He was a twin brother of the late Henry Gesner, of Cornwallis, who was the father of Abraham Gesner, M.D., the well-known geologist and writer. The family are of Swiss origin, and emigrated from the Fatherland early in the eighteenth century to America, where they soon became the owners of valuable real estate in New Jersey, which was afterward confiscated on account of their adhesion to the Royal cause in the revolutionary contest.

In a memorial to Sir James Kempt, in 1828, asking for half-pay, Mr. Gesner informed His Excellency that he had entered the military service of his country at the age of sixteen years, in the King's Orange Rangers, then commanded by Samuel V. Bayard; that he was with Sir Henry Clinton in his northern expedition, and present at the storming and taking of Fort Montgomery, and was in another engagement of less note; that he had bought his commission from a Captain Bethel; that he had sought refuge with the British army in 1776, and came to this place in 1779; and that he had served in the militia of this colony for the long period of forty years—that is to say, from 1788.

Toward the close of the past century, he became the proprietor of the Noble property, in Granville, then known as the Alexander Howe farm, which included lots Nos, 95, 96, and 97, in that township, including an area of 1,500 acres of marsh, pasture and woodland. This estate he took much pride in improving and beautifying. To him the people of the county are greatly indebted for the present flourishing condition of its fruit orchards. So fully was he persuaded of the value of this branch of industry that he imported, from time to time, scions of the most approved varieties of apples from Great Britain and the United States, at his own expense, for gratuitous distribution, with a view to create and encourage a love for pomological pursuits. He paid unusual attention to fruit culture on his own farm, and had the pleasure of possessing as the result of his skill and efforts, the finest and most productive fruit orchard in the county, perhaps in the Province.

In 1824, Thomas Ritchie having vacated his seat in the Assembly, by accepting the appointment of a seat on the bench of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, Mr. Gesner, or as he was more generally called, Major Gesner, was brought out as a candidate to fill the vacancy, and was duly returned. His uprightness of character and sincerity of purpose commanded the respect of parliament and people, though he seldom spoke on any other than questions connected with local affairs.

In the general election of 1827, he declined a nomination, urging the increasing infirmities of age and his desire to finish his few remaining years in the pursuits to which he had devoted so large a part of his life, and in which he had enjoyed so much happiness and success. His descendants are very numerous, and some of them still own and occupy portions of the extensive and valuable homestead.

THOMAS CHANDLER HALIBURTON.

1827–1829.

The County of Annapolis has been signally fortunate in having been represented in the Legislature of the Province by so great a number of distinguished and able men. Among these none have deserved or obtained so wide a celebrity as he whose name stands at the head of this memoir. As barrister, legislator and judge, he has left a record of which his countrymen need not be ashamed, while his writings have gained for him a fame of which they may boast with just pleasure and pride. Mr. Haliburton was born in Windsor, December 17th, 1796. "He was descended from an ancient Scottish family of the same name mentioned in Border history of the sixteenth century as 'leal, true and honest men and good borderers against the English.' In the early part of the eighteenth century, and near the close of Queen Anne's reign, a branch of the family emigrated to Boston in the (now) United States. Mr. Haliburton was the only child of William Hersey Otis Haliburton, who was Clerk of the Peace for the County of Hants in 1786, and afterwards a justice of the Court of Common Pleas, by Lucy, eldest daughter of Major Grant, an officer of professional reputation, who fell while resisting an attack made by a body of rebels during the American revolutionary war." The foregoing particulars have been copied from Morgan's *Bibliotheca Canadensis*, which, however, errs in imputing to the Nova Scotia branch a Loyalist origin, for the father of W. H. O. Haliburton was among the settlers in Newport, Hants County, in 1760.*

The following is culled from the fragment of a manuscript of Mrs. William M. Johnstone, the mother of the late Hon. Jas. W. Johnstone: "Mr. Johnstone was made an ensign in the New York volunteers under

* I will further add that W. H. O. Haliburton was born September 3rd, 1767, in Hants County, and was one of seven children: (1) William, born September 2nd, 1762, died April 16th, 1764; (2) Susanna Hamilton, born May 16th, 1765; (3) W. H. Otis; (4) Charlotte, born September 20th, 1770; (5) Abigail, born June 15th, 1773; (6) John Gustavus, born January 23rd, 1775; (7) George Mordant, born June 30th, 1777. Their father was William Haliburton, born April 16th, 1739, and married in Nova Scotia, April 9th, 1761, Susanna Otis. George, a brother of William, also came to Nova Scotia among the early settlers, and was Registrar of Deeds of Kings County in 1766.—[Ed.]



Judge T. C. Haliburton,

Author of "Sam Slick."

the command of an old Scotch veteran who was like a father to him, and loved him as a son. Mr. Johnstone was near him when he fell dead in gallantly storming Fort Montgomery. His widow and daughters came after the peace to Nova Scotia. The former perished in the snow at Partridge Island near St. John, N.B., along with Colonel Chandler and many others. The daughters married, one a Chandler, one a Morse, and one Mr. Haliburton, of Windsor, father of the present judge, author of 'Sam Slick.'"

Mr. Haliburton was at the Grammar School, and afterwards at the University of King's College, Windsor, under the Rev. Dr. William Porter, of Brazenose College, Oxford, and the Rev. William Cochran, of Trinity College, Dublin, having matriculated in 1810. His career in college, where he graduated in 1815, was marked by complete success and the attainment of high honours. On leaving college he made choice of the profession of law, the study of which he probably pursued at Windsor. Having concluded his studies he was duly admitted a barrister of the Supreme Court in 1820. In July, 1821, he removed to Annapolis, which continued to be his home until his appointment to the Bench in October, 1829. It was during this period that he wrote his "Historical and Statistical Account" of his native province. He had not been long settled in the "ancient capital" before he acquired an extensive and lucrative practice and became a popular advocate. In 1827 a general election took place, and Mr. Haliburton was brought forward as a candidate for one of the county seats, and his friends were successful in returning him by a fair majority. He was at the same time judge in the Court of Probate and Wills, an office which he continued to hold as long as he lived in the county. At the meeting of the new Assembly he commenced his short but commendable career as a member of the Legislature. He is said to have possessed brilliant oratorical powers. Murdoch thus speaks in connection with one of his efforts in the Assembly, but I will quote some passages from the speech he eulogizes. One of the results of the general election was the choice of a Roman Catholic gentleman by a constituency in Cape Breton. The "Declarations and Test Oaths against Popery" were a bar to his taking his seat in the Assembly, because as a Catholic he would not take such oaths. Richard John Uniacke, on the meeting of the House, moved an "address to His Majesty praying him to dispense with the oaths hitherto required." Mr. Haliburton seconded the resolution, and in doing so delivered a speech so characterized by breadth of charity and nobleness of feeling, by regard for civil and religious liberty, and by such true eloquence that it deserves to be reproduced. After some pertinent preliminary remarks he said :

"He was proud to make the acknowledgment that he stood there the unsolicited and voluntary friend and advocate of the Catholics. In considering this question

he should set out with stating that every man had a right to participate in the civil government of that country of which he was a member, without the imposition of any test oaths, unless such restriction was necessary to the safety of that government; but when the Stuart race became extinct the test oaths should have been buried with the last of that unfortunate family. Whatever might be the effect of emancipation in Great Britain, here there was not the slightest pretension for continuing restrictions, for if the whole House and all the Council were Catholics it would be impossible to alter the Constitution, for the governor was appointed by the king and not by the people, and no Act could pass without his consent. What was the reason that Protestants and Catholics, in this country, mingled in the same social circle and lived in such perfect harmony? How was it that the Catholic mourned his Protestant friend in death whom he had loved in life, put his hand to the bier, followed his mortal remains to their last abode, and mingled his tears with the dust that covered him?" . . .

After reference to the state of this matter in England and Ireland, he referred to the old monastic institutions of the former country as follows:

"The property of the Catholic Church had passed into the hands of the Protestant clergy, the glebes, the tythes, the domains of the monasteries. Who could behold those monasteries, still venerable in their ruins, without regret? The abodes of science and of charity and hospitality, where the wayworn pilgrim and the weary traveller reposed their limbs, and partook of the hospitable cheer, where the poor received their daily food, and in the gratitude of their hearts implored blessings on the good and pious men who fed them; where learning held its court, and science waved its torch amid the gloom of barbarity and ignorance.

"Allow me, Mr. Speaker, to stray as I often have done in years gone by, for hours and for days amidst those ruins, and tell me—for you, too, have paused to view the desolate scene—did you not seem to hear, as you passed through those tessellated courts and grass-grown pavements, the faint sounds of the slow and solemn march of the holy procession? Did you not seem to hear the evening chime fling its soft and melancholy music over the still, sequestered vale, or hear the seraph choir pour its full tide of song through the long protracted aisle, or along the high and arched roof?

"Did not the mouldering column, the Gothic arch, the riven wall and the ivied turret, while they drew the unbidden sigh at the work of the spoiler, claim the tribute of a tear to the memory of the great and good men who founded them? It was said that Catholics were unfriendly to civil liberty; but that, like many other aspersions cast upon them, was false! Who created Magna Charta? Who established judges, trial by jury, magistrates, sheriffs, etc.? Catholics! To that calumniated people we were indebted for all that we most boasted of. Were they not brave and loyal? Ask the verdant sods of Chrysler's Farm, ask Chateauguay, ask Queenston Heights, and they will tell you they cover Catholic valour and Catholic loyalty—the heroes who fell in the cause of their country! Here where there was no cause of division, no property in dispute, their feelings had full scope. We found them good subjects and good friends. Friendship was natural to the heart of man, as the ivy seeks the oak and clings to its stock, and embraces its stem, and encircles its limbs in beautiful festoons and wild luxuriance; and aspires to its top, and waves its tendrils above it as a banner, in triumph of having conquered the king of the forest. Look at the township of Clare. It was a beautiful sight, a whole people having the same customs, speaking

the same language, and uniting in the same religion. It was a sight worthy the admiration of man and the approbation of God. Look at their worthy pastor, the Abbé Sigogne ; see him at sunrise with his little flock around him, returning thanks to the Giver of all good things. Follow him to the bed of sickness, see him pouring the balm of consolation into the wounds of the afflicted ; into his field, where he was setting an example of industry to his people ; into his closet, where he was instructing the innocence of youth ; into the chapel, and you would see the savage, rushing from the wilderness with all his wild and ungovernable passions upon him, standing subdued and awed in the presence of the holy man ! You would hear him tell him to discern this God in the stillness and solitude of the forest, in the roar of the cataract, in the order and splendour of the planetary system, and in the diurnal change of night and day. That savage forgets not to thank his god that the white man has taught him the light of revelation in the dialect of the Indian."

He then entered into a detailed account of the removal of the French Acadians, too lengthy for insertion, and continued, "As the representative of the descendants of these people, he asked not for the removal of the restrictions as a favour; he would not accept it from their commiseration, he demanded it from their justice." He concluded by saying :

"Every man who lays his hand on the New Testament and says that is his book of faith, whether he be Catholic or Protestant, Churchman or Dissenter, Baptist or Methodist, however much we may differ in doctrinal points, he is my brother and I embrace him. We all travel by different roads to the same God. In that path which I pursue, should I meet a Catholic I salute him, I journey with him, and when we shall arrive at the *flammantia limina mundi*—when that time shall come, as come it must ; when the tongue that now speaks shall moulder and decay ; when the lungs that now breathe the genial air of heaven shall refuse me their office ; when these earthly vestments shall sink into the bosom of their mother earth, and be ready to mingle with the clods of the valley, I will, with that Catholic, take a longing, lingering, retrospective view. I will kneel with him, and instead of saying in the words of the presumptuous Pharisee, 'I thank God I am not like this papist,' I will pray that, as kindred, we may be equally forgiven, that as brothers we may be both received."

In 1829 he received the appointment of Chief Justice* of the Inferior Courts of Common Pleas for the middle division of Nova Scotia. He was then but thirty-two years old, being the youngest judge in that court, and he honourably and faithfully discharged the duties of his judicial position until the Common Pleas Court was abolished and the judges were granted pensions. In 1841 he was appointed a justice of the Supreme Court, and for fifteen years "he exercised the functions of that important office with unvarying zeal and ability." In February, 1856, he resigned his seat on the bench, and soon after went to England, where he took up his residence during the remainder of his life.

Mr. Haliburton visited England in 1838, and on his return in May,

* As remarked on page 314, note, the other judges were not of the profession, but chosen from the Magistrates of the County.

1839, he was tendered a public dinner which he accepted, and which took place on the 4th of June, the late Hon. James Boyle Uniacke presiding. On the occasion of the announcement of the fourth "toast" —"Thomas C. Haliburton, Esq., our distinguished guest and countryman; to him his native land is indebted for the first record of its history, and by his talents and genius his name is enrolled in the annals of literature"—

In his reply Mr. Haliburton "thanked the president for the flattering remarks with which he prefaced the toast, and the company for the kindly feelings they had evinced on drinking it. He referred to the history of Nova Scotia, and gave his reasons for writing it. As a native he knew his country had been misrepresented in all the books which had noticed the Province. It was declared to be cold, sterile and forbidding, and only a fit habitation for wolves. The Reverend Doctor Cochran and the Reverend Mr. Brown had both taken great pains in collecting materials, with the intention of submitting similar works to the public, but the hand of death had interposed and their labours were stopped. He had written a history of Nova Scotia, not as Tory, Whig or Radical, but because he was proud of his country and anxious to explain its history, its topography, its fine harbours and its great resources. The work, he said, was hastily written, and while his time was occupied with legislative business and the arduous duties of his profession. He was aware of its many defects, but he was also aware that they had been generously overlooked. Much as his friends might think he had done for his country by the history to which he alluded, still he was satisfied that he had not done enough. He longed to see the industries and enterprises of the Province more fully set forth, and with this view he had already given publicity to the 'Sayings and Doings of Sam Slick,' with whom he had made two journeys, and intended making a third. He repeated his acknowledgments for the honour done him amid applause, and resumed his seat."

This occasion afforded him an opportunity of making the first authoritative announcement of the authorship of "The Clockmaker"—a confession he felt it his duty to make in order to correct the impression resting on many minds that the author, whoever he was, intended nothing more than to *amuse* his readers by a relation of laughable stories; an object the furthest removed from his real purpose, namely, to use them only as an instrument in exciting the public attention to lessons of most serious import to the public welfare. From this time his readers' minds were directed to the serious, practical and useful side of the subjects discussed, and which was none the less effective because it came accompanied by shouts of uproarious laughter.

"Shortly after Judge Haliburton took up his residence in England he was solicited to come forward as a member for the House of Commons for the County of Middlesex, a proposal which he declined; but at the general election in 1859 he was induced to go into Parliament mainly from his friendship with the Duke of Northumberland, who offered him his support as a candidate for Launceston, where the Duke's influence was very strong. The borough was small, and the labours imposed on its representative was light. His ambition did not, however, lead him

to covet that distinction, and his health and feelings rendered parliamentary life somewhat irksome to him. In his speech of acknowledgment on the occasion of his election, he thanked the electors, 'not merely in his own name, but on behalf of four million of British subjects on the other side of the water, who, up to the present time, had not had one individual in the House of Commons through whom they might be heard.' The new member for Launceston took his seat in the House as a Conservative, but at the same time declared himself to be 'a representative of all parties rather than as a party man.'"

At a large meeting at Teignmouth, William Lindsay, M.P., having spoken of the usefulness of the humorous works of the author of "Sam Slick," the following characteristic reply was elicited from the author:

"Mr. Lindsay has alluded to my books and said there was an object of usefulness in them. In that he is right, for I should indeed feel ashamed of myself —it would be very unsuitable and very incompatible with the situation of judge, which I have held in another part of the world—if I should sit down and write a jest-book to make people laugh. That would be a very undignified employment for a judge, and a very unprofitable one; but I thought I might do a very great service to my countrymen—for I am a native of the other side of the water—provided I could convey to them certain truths which I thought would be either too homely for them to care much about, or too dry for them, unless, like doctor's pills, they had a little sugar put about them. I, therefore, wrapped them with a litle humour, in order that when people read them for amusement they might find that they had learned something they did not know before.

"During his residence at Islesworth he endeared himself to the people in contributing assistance to their local institutions and aiding their philanthropical and charitable efforts, and in identifying himself with their interests generally. The village of Islesworth will henceforth be associated with the most pleasing reminiscences of Mr. Justice Haliburton; the names of Cowley, Thompson, Pope and Walpole will find a kindred spirit in the world-wide reputation of the author of 'Sam Slick,' who, like them, died on the banks of the Thames."

He died at Islesworth, England, August 27th, 1865.

The following will be found a tolerably correct list of the writings of Mr. Haliburton, and will possess considerable interest for our readers:

1. "An Historical and Statistical Account of Nova Scotia," 1829. This work is too well known to require any special notice here. It comprised two volumes and was printed in Halifax, and met with a considerable sale and the thanks of the provincial Assembly. It is now becoming rare

2. "The Clockmaker." This work consisted of three series, and its humorous aspects immediately attracted more than colonial recognition, editions having been issued from the English and American press, which found a ready and extensive sale on both sides of the Atlantic, and did more to make the author's name known abroad than anything he ever wrote. They were first published in 1837, 1838 and 1840 respectively.

3. "The Letter Bag of the Great Western; or, Life in a Steamer,"

1840, in one volume. Compared with its immediate predecessors this volume was decidedly inferior, and not so well received by the public, though it found admirers.

4. "The Bubbles of Canada," one volume, 1839, found many readers, but failed to add very much to the writer's reputation.

5. "A Reply to the Report of the Earl of Durham," one volume, 1839. This production was estimated very differently by different readers, according as its political views agreed with or opposed their own.

6. "Wise Saws and Modern Instances," one volume, 1843. Like the last-mentioned this work met with general commendation, and had an extensive sale.

7. "The Old Judge; or, Life in a Colony," one volume, 1843. This volume was eagerly received by American readers, and added considerably to the author's reputation in England.

8. "Rule and Misrule of the English in America," one volume, 1843. This book has never received the credit it deserves. The labour and research bestowed upon it must have been very great. His estimate of the Puritan character, religious, social and political, would of necessity render it unpopular in New England, and the indifference of the middle classes of the English people toward American historical subjects offered a sufficient bar to a large sale among them. Notwithstanding its past neglect we have an abiding faith that the time will come when it will add to Mr. Haliburton's literary fame.

9. "The Attaché; or, Sam Slick in England, one volume, 1843 and 1844. The hero of this book outdoes himself in the realms of drollery and broad humour, though he does not fail to impress a moral of serious and wholesome import upon the minds of his readers.

10. "Nature and Human Nature," one volume, 1855. Social and political philosophy and the illustration of many serious truths mingle with the smiles excited by its perusal. It was a favourite at home and abroad.

11 "An Address at Glasgow on the Present Condition and Resources of British North America," 1857. This address was intended to make the native land of the author and the adjoining colonies better known and esteemed in the parent country, and was in some degree instrumental in carrying its aim into effect.

12. "The Season Ticket," 1858, 1859. A very interesting book, not so well known in this country as some of his other works.

13. "A Speech in the House of Commons on the Repeal of the Timber Duties, and Colonial Wood," 1860. This speech brought before the Commons a view of the subject discussed from a standpoint not easily to be attained by other members of that body, and was of considerable interest as presenting the opinions of a colonist on the matter, and not without its appropriate influence on the debate.

[" Traits of American Humour," one volume, 1843, and " The Americans at Home ; or, Bye-ways, Backwoods and Prairies," one volume, 1843, were compilations edited by Judge Haliburton ; and " Sayings and Doings of Sam Slick, Esq., with his opinions on Matrimony," one volume, 1844, " Sam Slick in Search of a Wife," one volume, 1844, and " Yankee Stories," one volume, 1852, were unauthorized American editions of parts of his previously named works, with some interpolations and additions.—Ed.]

Of his humorous works a writer* of no mean note says :

" I have ever read and valued the conversations of Samuel Slick, not for humour, exquisite and racy as it is, in many of their chapters, but for the deep, instructive, moral and sound lessons of practical instruction they convey to the country. There is not a provincial custom, opinion or prejudice opposed to steady or persevering industry, and, of course, to the progress of individual and general prosperity, which is not exposed and treated with consummate tact and ridicule. . . . The natural advantages of this country are drawn in glowing colours, but these are ever set off with jokes upon indolence and want of energy and enterprise, too highly coloured perhaps, but still done with sufficient skill to point the moral."

In relation to the literary works of Mr. Haliburton a writer in the *Bibliotheca Canadensis*, of Morgan, writes thus concerning them :

" For the purpose of preserving or at least reviving some anecdotes and good stories, that were then fast dying out, connected with colonial life, he began a series of anonymous articles in the *Nova Scotian* newspaper, then edited by Joseph Howe, and made use of a Yankee pedlar as his mouthpiece. The character thus adopted or imagined proved to be a ' hit,' and was copied by the American press. They were collected and published at Halifax anonymously, and several editions were soon after issued in the United States of America. A copy was taken hence to England by General Fox, who gave it to Richard Bently, the publisher. To Judge Haliburton's surprise he learned that an English edition had been issued and was very favourably received in England. For some time the authorship was assigned to an American gentleman in London, until Mr. Haliburton visited the Mother Country and became known as the author. For his ' Sam Slick ' he received nothing from the publisher, as the work had not been copyrighted, but Mr. Bently presented him with a silver salver, on which was an inscription, written by the Reverend Richard Barham, better known as the author of the ' Ingoldsby Legends.'

" Between Barham, Theodore Hook and Mr. Haliburton an intimacy sprang up. They frequently dined together at the Athenæum to which they belonged, and many good stories told by Hook and Barham were remembered by the Judge long after death had deprived him of their society."

Note by the Editor.—As a judge, Haliburton was not gifted with the legal learning or calm, judicial mind of his namesake and contemporary, Chief Justice Halliburton, nor the acute penetration of Judge Bliss, but he was fully equal to the average of the judges of his day. He was reluctant to be bound by precedents, and had a wholesome contempt for technicalities when they interposed an obstacle

* George Rennie Young.

to the administration of justice and right between man and man. His constant study of, and keen insight into, human nature, and of the methods and habits of mind of people of every class in the Province, made him a strong judge on circuit, where he was quick to detect and bold to denounce perjury and fraud, and in criminal cases he was proverbially a "terror to evil-doers." He could show but scant patience to a counsel seeking by technicalities, or by working on the feelings of a jury, to secure the acquittal of a prisoner obviously guilty. He was prompt and decided in the execution of judicial business. His sense of the ludicrous and fondness for punning were very conspicuous on the bench, and sometimes to a degree not altogether consistent with the dignity of the position, or the gravity of the occasion.

JOHN E. MORTON.

1827-1830.

Mr. Morton's father was probably the first male child born in Cornwallis after the French expulsion, having been born in that township in 1761. He was descended from an ancient Scottish family "of some repute," as he modestly affirms in his memorial to the Earl of Dalhousie in 1821. In the same document he says that he lost his right leg in 1776 when fifteen years old, from the accidental discharge of a holster pistol in the hands of Lieutenant-Governor Arbuthnot, at a militia review which took place in that year in Cornwallis. In 1783, being then twenty-two years of age, he removed to New Brunswick and "went into trade" on the St. John River, where he "had charge of building the first ship constructed in that province." This ship was called the *Lord Sheffield*, and was sold to Arnold* and Hoyt, merchants of St. John, and tradition adds that the purchasers never paid the price agreed on.

In 1794 he was made a J. P. for the county in which he resided, but in 1802, at the earnest solicitation of Sir John Wentworth, then Lieutenant-Governor of the Province, he removed hither, and chose the beautiful village of Digby as his future home. Here he was at once put into the Commission of the Peace, and in 1805 was appointed Deputy Registrar of Deeds, Deputy Collector of Imports and Excise, Preventive Officer of the port (without salary) and Sub-collector of Customs. In 1810 he was made Justice of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, and judge in the Court of Probates and Wills for the districts of Digby and Clare. These offices, he declared, did not yield him a revenue of £100 a year. He performed all the duties of them without employing an assistant, and he speaks of them as being "arduous, expensive and perilous." In the event of a division of the county, which was then in agitation, he feared

*Benedict Arnold—the traitor, as our American cousins delight to call him—was for several years engaged in mercantile pursuits in that city. The descendants of Hoyt, the partner, are still to be found in New Brunswick.

the loss of some of his official income, and therefore asked His Excellency, in such case, to confirm him all the positions he then held. The accident by which he lost his leg seems to have been a cause of Mr. Morton's preferment. Arbuthnot, deeply regretful of the injury suffered through his act, appears to have left him as a sort of legacy to his gubernatorial successors, with instructions to watch over and forward his interests, and up to the close of the administration of Sir John Wentworth his wishes were generally complied with.

By the Editor.

The above sketch of Mr. Morton's father, preliminary to a memoir of the member himself, I publish, in order to perpetuate the name of a man once a very conspicuous figure in the social and official life of the old County of Annapolis, and of Digby after it was set off. A man of commanding stature and stately bearing, he possessed a well-cultured mind, and was one of the most courteous and at the same time punctilious of the old school of colonial gentlemen, filling the various offices he held with the old-style firmness and well-sustained dignity. He was one of my earliest friends, and died very aged before I had quite attained manhood. But the supposed descent from the Scotch Earls of Morton, to which allusion is made, is one of those imaginary pedigrees that indulged the fancy of so many American families in the last generation, before more scientific genealogical research revealed the true old-world origin of many of our New England forefathers. It is now settled that George Morton, the agent at London of the Pilgrim Church at Leyden, and later of the Plymouth Colony, was a native of Austerfield, Yorkshire, $2\frac{1}{2}$ miles from Scrooby, where the Pilgrim congregation worshipped before they emigrated to Leyden. His son Nathaniel, born 1613, in England, was long the accomplished and brilliant Secretary of the Plymouth Colony, of which both he and his father wrote valuable descriptive and historical accounts, precious to subsequent historians. In every generation they have produced most able men in all the departments of professional and political life. The descent of the M.P.P. is as follows: George,[1] Ephraim,[2] George,[3] Ephraim,[4] Elkana,[5] Elkana,[6] born 1731, Judge Elkana,[7] born 1761, John Elkana.[8] The latter was the eldest son and was born in 1793, probably in New Brunswick. He died April 20th, 1835, while filling the office of Collector of Customs at Digby.

"Of manly bearing and kind disposition, he was much esteemed; his active and unwearied exertions as a captain and adjutant of militia were highly appreciated, and as an M.P.P. of a former House of Assembly his independence, integrity and zeal in that capacity, as in all other stations in life, were eminently conspicuous." He was certainly an able, influential and very popular member, and his early death cut short a career of

great promise, and was long deeply deplored by the public. His widow, who was a Miss Beckwith, with her children, removed from Digby to western Cornwallis, where they enjoyed the care of her brother, Samuel Beckwith. Fenimore E. Morton, of Sussex Vale, Kings County, N.B., for a time Solicitor-General of that province, and now Judge of Probate for his county, is his son.

JOHN JOHNSTONE.

1829-1830, 1830-1836.

This gentleman was an elder brother of the late Judge in Equity, to whose record, further on in the book, the reader is referred.

Mr. Johnstone's birth took place near Kingston, Jamaica, on the 31st of January, 1790. In 1823 he married Laura, daughter of the Honourable William Stephenson, then a leading member of the bar, and of the government of the island, and very soon afterwards removed to this province, where he resumed the practice of the law, the profession to which he had been bred. He settled in the town of Annapolis and soon acquired a very considerable and lucrative practice.

A vacancy having been made in the representation of the county, in 1828, by the elevation of Thomas C. Haliburton to a judgeship in the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, he became a candidate for the seat, and was duly elected, though he had been scarcely three years a resident in the county. This House of Assembly having been dissolved by the death of the king (George IV.), he again sought the suffrages of the electors, and was duly returned. He held his seat in the new Assembly until his death, which occurred in Falmouth, England, in 1836.

Not long after his first election and shortly before the rising of the House he lost his first wife in the most painful and distressing manner. On retiring to her sleeping apartment, where a little one had shortly before been laid to rest, in some manner never fully explained, her night-dress caught fire, and before it could be extinguished, she was burned so badly that she soon afterwards died.* He afterwards married Mary, eldest daughter of the late James William Kelly, Collector of Customs at St. John, N.B.

Mr. Johnstone was a gentleman of solid rather than brilliant attainments and abilities. His energy, perseverance and untiring industry were remarkable, and his general force of character, high sense of honour and amiable disposition gained for him the confidence and esteem of all who were brought within the sphere of his influence. As a representative

* The house stood between the present residences of Judge Savary and Captain C. D. Pickles. Mrs. Johnstone's grave is to be seen in the old cemetery, near that of her husband's grandfather, John Lightenstone.—[Ed.]

of the people he discharged all the duties devolved upon him with a devotedness that is remembered to this day. To his advocacy the people of the county are largely indebted for the existence of the many useful breakwaters upon its shores, especially those of Wilmot.

In 1834 Mr. Johnstone presented petitions from the inhabitants of the eastern district, praying that Annapolis be made a free Port of Entry; and urged upon the Assembly the propriety of granting their request. He was unsuccessful, however, in his efforts, and the people had to wait a few years longer for the boon desired.

More than sixty years ago, John De Lancey, a son of Colonel James De Lancey, erected a bridge over the Annapolis River at a point not far from the dwelling of his brother, Peter De Lancey, and dedicated it to the public use. It was built at his own cost, and although the public were never great gainers from his generous act, owing to its sudden destruction by a flood two or three years after its completion, it is proper that such a munificent action should be held in remembrance. Mr. De Lancey having become otherwise impoverished in 1830, was advised by his many friends to seek reimbursement for the loss sustained in the construction of the unfortunate bridge, and he did so by petition to the Assembly. This memorial was referred to a special committee of which Mr. Johnstone was the chairman. The petition stated, "that about three or four years ago your petitioner was induced at the recommendation of the inhabitants of Wilmot and by the wish of those of Annapolis, in this part of the county, to erect a bridge over the river and which the people having enjoyed the use of for a period of three years until last September, when an extraordinary fall of rain so increased the strength and quantity of water in the river that it carried it away as well as three other large and well-established bridges." These facts were reported to the Assembly by the committee, with a recommendation for a favourable consideration of the petitioner's claims.

He was generally chosen chairman of the House committees on which he served, and the journals of the Assembly abound in reports written by his hand, some of them involving considerable research and care in their preparation.

Toward the close of 1835 his health had become considerably impaired, though he continued to work during the session as he had done in past sessions. In the spring of 1836 he was advised by his physician to try the effect of a sea voyage, in consequence of which he embarked for England, where he died as before stated, in the forty-sixth year of his age.

Mr. Johnstone left issue, a daughter by his first marriage. By his second marriage he had a son and daughter. All these children survived him and two are still living. The former is the wife of the Rev. W.

Rupert Cochran, son of Rev. J. C. Cochran, of Halifax, and grandson of Rev. Dr. Cochran, of King's College, and lives in England; the son is James W. Kelly Johnstone, Esq., Barrister, of Halifax. A daughter by the second marriage died young.

CHARLES BUDD.

1830–1836, 1843–1847.

Charles Budd was the son of Elisha Budd, of White Plains, N.Y., who was born there in 1762. The family afterwards removed to Rye, in New York, where they were settled when the revolutionary war began. James Budd, the father of Elisha, was shot in his own door during the struggle, by a rebel. The son, who was a youth when this terrible fate met his parents, became a volunteer in the British service soon after, and was present at the siege of Savannah, and in several engagements in the south in the last campaigns of the war. At the peace in 1783 he removed to Digby, being then but twenty-one years old, where he settled and some time after married. His wife was a daughter of Isaac Bonnell who was also a Loyalist of good family, and who, during his long and useful life, held several offices under the Government in that town, with credit to himself and satisfaction to the public. This marriage resulted in the birth of five children, three sons and two daughters. One of the former is the person whom this paper is designed chiefly to notice.

Mr. Budd's father became a leading merchant and ship-owner of the place, and was esteemed as a most enterprising and worthy man. The commencement of the present century found him engaged in a lucrative and extensive trade with the West Indies and the Mother Country. Previous to this time he had become the proprietor, by purchase, of the lands and house of the Reverend Mr. Brudenell, an Episcopal clergyman, who was the successor of Amos Botsford as chairman of the Board of Agents, appointed by Governor Parr to superintend the settlement of Loyalist exiles who had resolved to make for themselves new homes on the beautiful shores of Digby basin. He served for some years as a Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and was an active and efficient magistrate. In 1813 he made a voyage to Liverpool, England, probably in one of his own ships, where he took ill and died, in the fifty-second year of his age.

Charles Budd, his son, who was born April 1st, 1795, first became a candidate for the suffrages of the electors of his native township at the general election which occurred in consequence of the demise of George IV. in 1830. This township had long been noted for the heat and closeness of the political contests through which it awarded the honour

of its representation in the Assembly—witness the struggles between Roach and Ruggles and Roach and Hughes ten or twelve years earlier. Budd, however, was successful on this occasion, and took his seat accordingly. He was a man of but few words, but of sound judgment and sterling integrity. He seldom troubled the House with what could be called a "speech," but not unfrequently in a few well-chosen and judicious words gave it the benefit of his opinion on the subject undergoing debate, and he was always listened to with attention and respect. In politics he was an unflinching Conservative, and he began, continued, and ended his legislative career as such. When party action was called for, his vote could always be safely counted on; though no man knew better how to modify, or even to abandon his views when he was persuaded they were injurious or impracticable.

In 1831 he took an active and beneficial part in the endeavour to improve the facilities of communication between the western part of the Province and St. John, N.B. On the 21st December of that year, he wrote to Sir Rupert D. George, then Provincial Secretary, advocating a subsidy for James Whitney's steamer, named the *Henrietta.*

At the election of 1836, Mr. Budd was again a candidate, and was opposed by James B. Holdsworth, a gentleman of Loyalist descent, and an enterprising merchant of Digby. The ferment which preceded and accompanied the change in our political institutions, called "Responsible Government," was raging with considerable fury. Mr. Budd represented the *statum quo*; Mr. Holdsworth was the standard-bearer of Reform. A very animated canvass had been made by both parties, which was continued during the conflict, at the close of which Mr. Holdsworth was declared duly elected.

At the next election, however, Mr. Budd regained the seat, and held it until defeated, in 1851, by John C. Wade, Esq. In 1855 he unsuccessfully opposed Mr. Wade, after which he retired from political life. He had in the meantime been unfortunate in his business as a merchant. He filled until within a few months of his death the office of Registrar of Probate for the County of Digby, and as Custos of the county he discharged with an intense and unselfish devotion to the public interests the gratuitous duties of that office until the sessions were superseded by the County Council. He was a vestryman of Trinity Church, Digby, for fifty years, and was made an honorary vestryman when the infirmities of age prevented his attendance at the evening meetings of the Board. He died at Digby, aged 89, April 24th, 1884. His wife, who was a daughter of Judge Wiswall, had long predeceased him. They had no issue. One of his sisters was the mother of the distinguished Canadian writer, Professor James De Mille, and another, of Rev. E. E. B. Nichols, D.D., a leading Church of England divine of Nova Scotia.—[Ed.]

JAMES DELAP.

1831–1836.

The author left but a few scattered notes of this gentleman. For particulars of his family, see the genealogy. He was a farmer and ship-builder, a man of some ability as a speaker, a son-in-law of a former very popular member, Isaiah Shaw, and a strong Reformer in politics. After representing the township of Granville for the period indicated, he was defeated by Mr. S. S. Thorne in 1836, but was a standard-bearer of his party in several elections.—[Ed.]

FREDERIC A. ROBICHEAU.

1836–1840.

By the Editor.

Frederic Armand Robicheau, the first Acadian Frenchman elected to the Provincial Parliament, an honour which he shared with Simon D'Entremont, who represented the township of Argyle in the same House, was the third child of Armand and Rosalie (Bourque) Robicheau; his grandfather, Prudent Robicheau, jun., who married Cecile Dugas, was son of Prudent Robicheau, sen., who married Anne Dugas, and was among the Acadian inhabitants at the "Cape" of Annapolis, January 22nd, 1715, when the last-named gentleman took the oath of allegiance. On April 5th, 1727, Prudent Robicheau, sen., was commissioned Justice of the Peace in Annapolis. Nevertheless his son and grandson shared the fate of the other Acadians, and, deprived of all their possessions, were removed and landed in some other part of the continent. The subject of this sketch married Marguerite, daughter of Cyriacque Melanson, and settled at Corberrie, near the shore of Lake Wentworth, beyond the New Tusket settlement, and about seventeen miles south from Weymouth. Want of roads was a bar to much direct intercourse between his home and the centre of the Acadian population, then rapidly growing along the shore of St. Mary's Bay in the extreme western end of the county. But in that remote and obscure locality Mr. Robicheau cultivated his mind and kept abreast of the public intelligence of his day. Brought out in 1836 in conjunction with Mr. Holland, he led the poll, and proved a useful and very competent member. Having secured the division of the county, and the allotment of a member to the township of Clare, he was about running for the new County of Digby, but was advised to give way to Mr. Holdsworth, who had been defeated in the election for the township of Digby by Mr. Budd, and seek election for

the newly enfranchised township of Clare. Unexpectedly he was opposed in Clare, and defeated by a majority of about sixty, by Mr. Anselm F. Comeau, who was a man of very extensive family connections and personal influence. In 1840 he was again a candidate, and again defeated by Mr. Comeau. In 1839 he was appointed a Justice of the Peace. His brother, Mathurin A. Robicheau, was a number of years later a member for the township of Clare, and afterwards for the County of Digby. Both were fine specimens, physically and morally, of their nationality. He died April 18th, 1863, and in the Catholic cemetery at Corberrie stands a fine marble monument commemorating the fact that he was the "Premier Representative Acadien á la Legislature de la Nouvelle Ecosse."

NOTE.—I am indebted for most of these facts to Wilson's "History of Digby," now in press.

WILLIAM HOLLAND.

1836–1840.

The remote ancestors of this gentleman were English. One of them went to Ireland about the year 1640, or a little earlier, and settled in the County of Armagh, in the Province of Ulster, where the subject of this sketch was born in 1782. His early days were spent in that county, and in it he was married. His wife was a Miss Rielly. In June, 1812, he took passage in an American vessel, bound to New York, with his wife and one child, with the intention of finding a home in the United States, but fortune had ordained otherwise. The second American war was then in progress, and the ship in which Mr. Holland was a passenger was captured by a British cruiser and taken into Halifax; and in the spring of the following year he found himself in Wilmot, in the County of Annapolis, where he bought a farm and made for himself a new home. Here he soon became prosperous, as he deserved to be. His farm, which was situated in the district now known as "Torbrook," was a new one, and required labour and skill to make it profitable, and these requisites were not wanting in his case. He was a pronounced Methodist, and with Col. Bayard, in his later years, did much to promote the influence of Methodism in the eastern part of the county. His marriage was blessed by four children, of whom three were born in this province. Of these one, William, died unmarried at the age of thirty-two. The other two were daughters, who married George Allen and Thomas Moffat respectively, and are both deceased. Thomas, the eldest son,* who was born in Ireland in 1810, and who lived in Wilmot, survived till a few

* The author states that he was indebted to this son, Thomas Holland, for the facts stated in the text.

years ago, and was twice married: first to a daughter of the late Alexander Walker, of Aylesford, and secondly to a daughter of the late Andrew Henderson, of Annapolis Royal.

Mr. Holland was selected as a candidate for the representation of the county at the general election in 1836, the particulars of which are mentioned on page 286. After the division of the county, which it was the especial mission of the two members then elected to accomplish, he does not seem to have again courted political honours, but lived a retired life on his farm, until he died at an advanced age.

ELNATHAN WHITMAN.

1836–1840.

Elnathan Whitman, son of John, and grandson of Deacon John Whitman, was born at Rosette on the eighteenth day of November, 1785, and there he received such education as the district and the period afforded, and was afterwards engaged in agriculture and fruit-raising during the remainder of his long life. He was twice married: first to Eleanor, daughter of Thomas Spurr, and about the time of this marriage he purchased a farm from the late Robert Jefferson, near his father's homestead, on which he continued to reside until his death in 1868, at the prolonged age of eighty-three years. His second wife was Charlotte, daughter of Sheriff Tupper, of Queens County. By his first wife he had the following children: (1) John, (2) William Esmond, (3) Charles Bailey, (4) Edward, and (5) George, who was afterward a representative of the county in the Assembly, and is now a member of the Legislative Council. There was but one child by the second marriage —Maria Louisa, who became the wife of Captain Samuel Bogart, of Granville.

At the general election in 1836, Mr. Whitman consented to become a candidate for legislative honours, and after an exciting contest was elected by a fair majority over his opponent, the late Joseph Fitz Randolph, by whom a scrutiny was demanded, at the conclusion of which the sitting member retained the seat. As a member of the Assembly he was diligent and attentive, no known duty being at any time left undischarged by him, though he seldom addressed the House on other than purely local subjects.

Though he was a Conservative in politics, he was at the same time a staunch guardian of popular rights, so far as they, in his judgment, tended to, or were supposed to, contribute to the general welfare. In 1840 he declined an offered nomination, legislative position or honours yielding no compensation to him for the partial loss of home enjoyments.

As a husband, father, friend, neighbour and Christian, he not only obtained, but deserved a "good report" from the entire community in which he lived. His hospitalities were proverbial, and were extended to all who had occasion to seek them, and were never refused on account of condition or creed.

JAMES B. HOLDSWORTH.*

1836–1840, 1840–1843.

James Bourne Holdsworth was son of John and Mehitable (Bourne) Holdsworth. His mother was of the Bourne family of the "Old Colony" of Plymouth, and he was a grandson of James Ardington and Elizabeth Holdsworth. His father and grandfather were Loyalists. He was the standard-bearer of the old Reform party in the western section of the county after the death of John E. Morton, and in 1836 defeated Mr. Budd, the Conservative candidate for the township of Digby. In 1840, after the division of the county, he was defeated by Mr. Budd for his first constituency by thirty-three majority, the whole number polled being 485 in a very exciting election; but his friends brought him forward for the new County of Digby, inducing Mr. F. A. Robicheau to retire in his favour. He was returned, Mr. Edward A. Jones, of Westport, his opponent, retiring after a day or two of the contest. In subsequent elections the French of Clare always brought forward a member for the county, and by giving him a united support, carried him by enormous majorities over the English candidates, who only got an English vote divided on party lines. He was a merchant and farmer, never married, a man of pleasing address and graceful speech on the hustings, but took no part in the debates in the House. A Commission of the Peace was conferred on him, and when the revered Elkanah Morton died in 1848, the arduous position of Custos was added, and later that of Commissioner in the Supreme Court. He died at Digby, March 24th, 1859, aged 63, much regretted as an amiable and useful citizen, and long remembered as an honourable and worthy representative of the school of politics to which he belonged.

STEPHEN SNEDEN THORNE.

1836–1840, 1840–1843, 1843–1847, 1847–1851, 1851–1855, 1855–1858.

Mr. Thorne was born in Granville in 1795. He was a son of James Thorne and grandson of Edward Thorne, an American Loyalist of New York, a memoir of whom has already been furnished to the readers of

* From Wilson's "History of Digby," by permission, with slight additions and alterations.

this volume. In his boyhood he served an apprenticeship to mercantile pursuits in the warehouse and office of his maternal uncle, the late Stephen Sneden, a Loyalist gentleman then doing business in Annapolis. About the year 1817 or 1818 he married Mehitable, daughter of James Hall, Esq., of Granville, and granddaughter of John Hall, one of the pre-loyalist settlers of that township. Shortly after this event he became the business partner of his uncle by marriage, the late Timothy Ruggles, a grandson of General Ruggles, and settled at Belleisle, where he continued to reside until the destruction of their warehouse by fire in 1830 or 1831, or the dissolution of the partnership by the death of Mr. Ruggles in 1831. Not long after he removed to Bridgetown, then rapidly rising into importance. Here he commenced business on his own account, and soon became regarded as a man of strict integrity and unimpeachable character in all his dealings, as well as amiable in all his social relations. On the death of Mr. Ruggles a writ was issued for the election of a representative to fill the vacancy in the Assembly caused by that event, and Mr. Delap—a brother-in-law of Mr. Thorne—was chosen, but much dissatisfaction existing at the close of his term of service, especially among the electors of the eastern section of the township, they determined to bring out a candidate to oppose him should he be brought forward at the election of 1836. The writer well remembers hearing his father say on his return from a caucus which had been called for the purpose of choosing a candidate, that Mr. Thorne was the man selected, and that he feared he would decline a nomination. His scruples were finally, though after much difficulty, overcome, and an active canvass commenced on his behalf. The polling lasted several days, and the contest was a keen one and marked by much bitterness of spirit on both sides; in fact, no one of to-day can easily imagine the bustle and confusion, and noise, and tumult that characterized election struggles in "the good old times," with their "open houses," their drinking habits, the coaxing, wheedling and threatening used to sway the electors, their quarrels and fisticuffs. All honour to the man who promoted the reform that changed all this bedlam scene into one of order and decorum by limiting the contest to a single day.

At the close of the poll Mr. Thorne, having a majority of eight votes, was declared duly elected by the sheriff. Mr. Delap, however, demanded a scrutiny* of votes, and petitioned the Assembly against the return. On the meeting of the Assembly a committee was struck to whom the dispute was referred, and who, after a patient investigation, reported in favour of the sitting candidate. Mr. Thorne was a staunch

* Scrutinies and petitions against returns formed a marked feature among the results of this election. Joseph Fitz Randolph petitioned against the return of Elnathan Whitman, and John W. Ritchie against Robicheau of Clare, as well as stated above, Delap against Thorne.

Conservative of the old school. The loyalty, and perhaps some of the prejudices of his Loyalist forefathers had been inherited by him, and it is not a matter for wonder, therefore, that he took sides against the popular party in the agitations that stirred the Legislature and the country for some years. To his honour be it said, however, that his vote was never denied to any measure which he honestly thought would promote the public welfare. In the very first session of the Assembly in whose deliberations he was permitted to take part, he voted for the division of the county, which the influence of the old capital had opposed and prevented for a period of nearly, if not quite, half a century; but he was generally averse to any change in the modes of administration until he was fully convinced they would prove prejudicial neither to the rights of the Crown, nor the true interests of the people at large.

In 1840, so much to the satisfaction of his friends and constituents had he discharged his public duties, he was again brought forward as a candidate for their suffrages, and was compelled to face the old opposition animated by the same fierce partyism, and led and guided by the same determined and experienced leaders. The canvass which ensued was, on both sides, a very earnest and exhaustive one.

The close of the poll on this occasion exhibited a majority of fourteen votes in Mr. Thorne's favour. His friends who exulted in the hardly-won triumph honoured him with a *chairing*, and he was drawn from the polling booth to his own residence, in an open carriage, by a number of his supporters and admirers, and in the evening the village was illuminated in honour of the victory. Mr. Thorne retired from political life on accepting the position of Chairman of the Board of Works in 1857, and was succeeded in the representation of the township by his son-in-law, T. D. Ruggles, Esq., who held it two years and is yet living. He afterwards held the office of Collector of Customs at Bridgetown, until his death at an advanced age, December 30th, 1874.

SAMUEL BISHOP CHIPMAN.

1840–1843.

The subject of this sketch was the only son of Major Chipman, by his wife, Elizabeth Bishop, and grandson of Handley Chipman, who came to Nova Scotia in 1761, and his second wife, Nancy Post. He was born August 2nd, 1803, and passed his early days in agricultural employments, which, not having been endowed with a very vigorous constitution, he exchanged for commercial pursuits, and settled in the then infant village of Lawrencetown, in Wilmot, as the proprietor of a country store, where by strenuous application and business enterprise, he soon acquired a considerable fortune. Agreeable and obliging in his conduct, and upright and honourable in his dealings, he seldom failed to make friends of his

customers, and laid the foundation of a popularity that ultimately carried him into public life.

Mr. Chipman was the first representative of the county after the severance of the western from the eastern districts, which took place in 1837. He was chosen by the Reform party, and gave his warm and undivided support to that party in the new Assembly until its dissolution in 1840. He was the only representative from the county who voted in favour of the Quadrennial Bill, which finally passed on the 17th of April, 1838—that measure having been opposed by the township members, Messieurs Thorne and Whitman. In the general election in 1843 he again went to the hustings as a candidate, and was opposed and defeated by the Attorney-General of the day, the Hon. J. W. Johnstone, and though he contested the seat with that gentleman in subsequent elections he never succeeded in winning the seat again.

Mr. Chipman married Levicia, daughter of Mr. John Marshall, of Annapolis, by whom he had issue two sons and a daughter. Of these the oldest, Edward W. Chipman, was for many years one of the leading dry goods merchants of Halifax, of which city he was for some time an alderman. In 1878 he removed from the Province; and is now living in Minnesota, in the United States. Sophia Levicia, the daughter, married James E. Chipman, Esq., the senior partner in the well-known firm, Chipman Brothers, hardware merchants of Halifax.

Mr. Chipman was highly esteemed for hospitality, enterprise and integrity. He filled the position of Post-master at Lawrencetown for several years, and for a lengthened period was in the Commission of the Peace, chiefly discharging the duties of that office in the courts of general sessions of the peace. He died after a short illness, August 22nd, 1855, aged 52.

HENRY GATES.

1841–1843.

By the Editor.

For the Gates family, see genealogy. Mr. Gates, the tenth child of Jonas Gates, and grandson of Captain Oldham Gates, honourably mentioned in the early history of the township of Annapolis, received a sound education in the English branches, and learned the trade of a blacksmith under the late Stephen Bent. He early developed a taste for useful reading and an interest in the public affairs of the town and county. He was a zealous Methodist, and one of the leading promoters and supporters of the Methodist Church in the town, and a leader in its musical services. He took a warm interest in militia affairs, and was the popular captain of a company. He lived about two miles below the

town of Annapolis, on the property now owned by Thomas Cain and John Dunn. Of good judgment and agreeable and genial manners, he was a candidate in the Reform interest in 1841, and defeated Mr. Alfred Whitman; but on the dissolution in 1843, when Mr. Johnston led the Conservative party, he was defeated by Mr. Whitman, and died about 1847, much regretted by many friends on both sides of politics.

JAMES WILLIAM JOHNSTONE.

1843–1864.

The subject of this memoir was a descendant of very ancient and honourable families both on the paternal and maternal sides. His mother—Elizabeth Lightenstone—was the granddaughter of the Rev. Gustavus Philip Lightenstone, a Protestant clergyman at Peterhoff, in the island of Cronstadt, near the mouth of the River Neva, in Russia, and her father, John Lightenstone, was born in the island named about 1735.* This family, which had long been domiciled in England, was originally from Germany where the name was spelled Lichtenstein. The Rev. Gustavus Philip Lightenstone, or Lichtenstein, was born, educated and married in England. His wife—Beatrice Elizabeth Lloyd—who is said to have been born in Ireland or Scotland, was probably of Welsh origin. His son, the maternal grandfather of Mr. Johnstone, was also educated in England, and when a young man sought and obtained employment of some kind in the British service which required his presence in the old American colonies, to one of which, Georgia, he went out about the time of its first settlement. Some years after his arrival there he married Catherine Delegal, a native of Georgia, who was, however, of French Huguenot extraction, and whose grandfather was commandant of the island of Jersey at the time of his decease. Her father, Philip Delegal,† was a lieutenant in the British army, and went to Georgia with General Oglethorpe, in the early settlement of that colony. The ancestors of these men had been driven to seek refuge in England by the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, in 1685.

The marriage of John Lightenstone with Catherine Delegal resulted in the birth of an only child, named Elizabeth, who, a few years subsequently became the wife of William Moreton Johnstone, and still further on the mother of the subject of this sketch. This marriage took place in Savannah, Georgia, on the twenty-first day of November, 1779. Mrs. Johnstone had the misfortune to lose the tender care and companionship of her mother when she "was just turned of ten years of

* He died in Annapolis, where a slab, marking his resting-place, is to be seen near that of the first wife of his grandson, John Johnstone.

† Philip Delegal's wife is said to have been a Miss Daley, of Irish birth.—[Ed.]

age,"—a loss which she was old enough to deplore very deeply. Few women with whose history I am acquainted have led a more eventful and checkered, or a more heroic and honourable life than the mother of the late Honourable Judge Johnstone. From the day on which she became a wife until the close of the Revolutionary war she was doomed to long and painful separations from her husband, who commanded a troop of dragoons, and was in consequence obliged to endure severe hardships, and to encounter dangers more dreadful to contemplate, either of which might at any moment terminate the life of one whom she most dearly loved, and whose well-being had become inseparable from her own. The war clouds rolled more and more rapidly and threateningly toward the South during the last years of the strife, and her husband, who viewed the situation from a standpoint of necessity unknown to her, determined on her removal from Georgia to St. Augustine, in Florida, then belonging to Spain. Here she and her child would be safe from the perils which surrounded her in her native and beloved Georgia. She obeyed his request with alacrity and what cheerfulness she could command, though she knew that in doing so she would be compelled to pass long and weary intervals without any news or assurance of his safety, and that of other friends who would be still exposed to the perils from which she alone would be exempt. At length peace spread her white wings of joy over the devastated colonies, but only to witness a relentless persecution—a widespread confiscation of the property of the vanquished Loyalists. The end of the fratricidal war, which made "confusion worse confounded" during the preceding eight years, did not bring an end to the discomforts consequent upon her separation from her husband, nor to her prospects of continuous domestic repose.

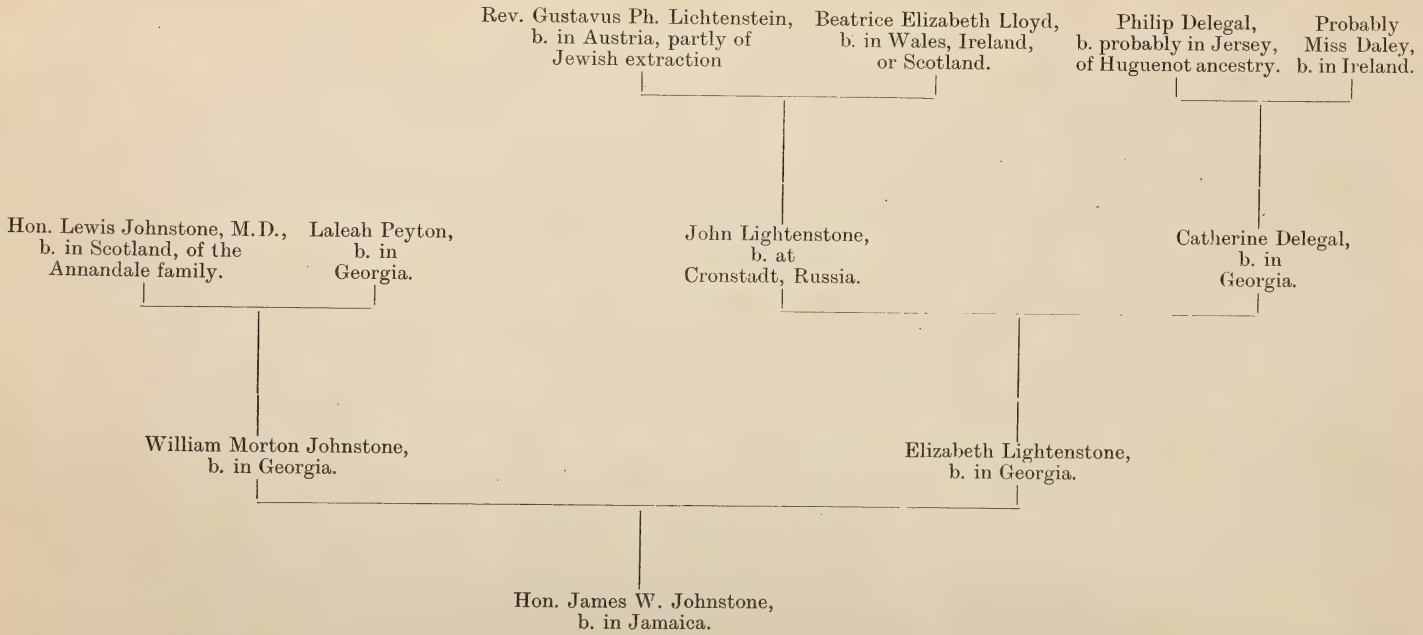
A voyage across the Atlantic a hundred years ago was a very different affair from what it is now, with our ocean steam palace ships, their luxurious furnishings, rapid speed, and disregard of adverse winds; yet this lady, in the interests of her family, braved its dangers and endured its discomforts and hardships no less than eight times, including six voyages between Great Britain and Jamaica, besides making several other trips of almost equal length and danger.

The Johnstones are descended from a very ancient Scottish family who trace their ancestors to the days of the Crusades, if not to those of the Conquest.* The grandfather† of him whose name heads this article was

*The Marquesses of Annandale were of this family, and the title, now long dormant, is claimed to belong to the representative of these Nova Scotia Johnstones, Lewis Johnstone, M.D., of Stellarton.—[Ed.]

†Lewis Johnstone, M.D., Member of Council and Superintendent of Police in Georgia, and said to have been the last royal governor of the Province, married a Miss Peyton, of an old Georgia family, of Norman-English origin. The earliest known ancestor of the Johnstone family was one John, who early in the twelfth century

ANCESTRAL CHART, JOHNSTONE FAMILY.



The above shows the ancestry of Hon. J. W. Johnstone back to the immigrant from Europe in every line except that of the Peyton family. John and Robert Peyton, the ancestors of this family, came to Virginia very early in its history, and were progenitors of several men very notable in arms, literature and statesmanship. They were descended from Reginald de Peyton, nephew of William de Malet, with whom he served under William I. at the battle of Hastings, and some of whose issue were ennobled in the fourteenth century. (See Burke's "General Armory.")

bred to the medical profession, and emigrated to Georgia about the time that witnessed the arrival of John Lightenstone in that province. His family consisted of several children of whom four at least were sons. Two of these were in Philadelphia pursuing their studies for the profession of their father when the Revolutionary war commenced, and both of them left the peaceful teachings of good old Doctor Hossack, exchanged the scalpel for the sword, and devoted all their energies to the cause of the Crown in that great and disastrous struggle. William, as has already been stated, obtained a captain's commission in the New York Rangers, —a corps which performed a great part of their services in the Carolinas and Georgia. Two or three years before the close of the war three troops of horse were raised and organized in Georgia, and Captain Johnstone was offered the command of one of them. He agreed to accept the offer on the condition that his rank and pay in the Rangers should be continued, and the fact that the condition was complied with affirms authoritatively the estimation in which his dashing and daring qualities as a soldier were held by his superior officers.

The marriage resulted in a family of seven children who reached maturity, of whom four were sons and three daughters. The sons were named Andrew, Lewis, John and James William, and the daughters bore the names of Catherine, Eliza and Laleah.

At the close of the war Captain Johnstone was advised by his father—whose Georgian estates had been confiscated, and his financial circumstances much deranged and straitened in consequence—to go to Edinburgh and complete his medical education, which he did. His old friend, Colonel, afterwards Sir Archibald, Campbell, who was then about to sail for India, offered, if he would accompany him to that country, to use all the influence in his power to further his interests there. At the same time he had offers of similar influence if he would go to Jamaica, and after due consideration he resolved to seek a new home in the West instead of the East.

James William Johnstone was born in the island of Jamaica, on the 29th August, 1792, and at an early age was sent to Scotland for education. For that purpose he was placed under the care of Dr. Duncan, the founder of savings banks institutions, and whose name will long be honoured on that account. It is believed that he went to Scotland with

received a grant of land from the first or second De Brus (Bruce) of Annandale. This property was called John's toun (town), and so his son was known as Gilbert de Johnstoun (Gilbert of John's town); and when surnames became finally fixed as distinguishing families, the name Johnstone was developed, the Annandales, for the most part, zealously clinging to the old final *e*. (See Blackwood, January, 1896.) Ben Jonson was of this stock, illustrating in his spelling as a great "wit" should, that "brevity is the soul of wit." But when he visited Aberdeen and the City Council sought to do him, as an illustrious countryman, their highest honour, they wrote his name "Johnestoune," putting in it all the letters they possibly could.—[Ed.]

his father on the occasion of his visit in 1802, being at that time in the eleventh year of his age. He seems to have remained under the tuition of Duncan until about the period of his father's death, when he was called to return, not to his home in Jamaica* but to Nova Scotia, where he arrived in the spring of 1808, having nearly completed his sixteenth year. His sister Eliza had married Thomas Ritchie, M.P.P. for Annapolis, during the preceding year, and to him young Johnstone, his brother-in-law, was articled as a student-at-law soon after his arrival. As he did not attain to his majority until 1813, he was not admitted to the bar until that year. He commenced the practice of his profession at Kentville, in Kings County, but some time after he removed to Annapolis, where he continued to practise for some years. He afterward selected the capital as presenting a better field for ultimate success in his profession; perhaps he had begun to feel the consciousness of the latent powers he possessed, and which lacked opportunity and *opposition* only to develop them into brilliant activity. Here he soon began to make his presence felt in the courts. His unflinching integrity, untiring industry, fertility of resource in the management of causes, his thorough knowledge of the law, and the occasional bursts of eloquence manifested in his addresses to juries on important occasions, soon elevated him to a first place at the bar, and gained for him the ear and the respect of the judges; and the lapse of each succeeding year witnessed an augmentation in the volume of his practice, and an increase to his growing fame. His name soon became associated, as counsel, with every cause of importance tried in the capital, or on the circuits which he usually travelled. Such a person could scarcely fail to attract the notice of those having in charge the administration of the public affairs; therefore, on the 29th July, 1834, he was selected to fill the post of Solicitor-General, an appointment which was then made by the Crown. He was at the same time created a member of the Legislative Council, which then also exercised executive powers. From his seat at this Board he witnessed and watched the movement—then just beginning—to effect a radical change in the system of colonial government. That he was strongly opposed to the introduction of violent and ill-considered changes, his writings and speeches abundantly testify; but that he was inimical to such changes as would operate beneficially upon the country, by enlarging the liberty of the subject without endangering the rights of the Crown, cannot be truly asserted. His motto in these matters was *festina lente* —hasten slowly. Let the new succeed the old by a series of gradual displacements; do not tear down till you have decided *how* and *what* to

* I am not quite certain of this. It seems probable that he would first have visited his mother in Jamaica, and I am inclined to believe that he did so, and that he was sent to his brother-in-law, Ritchie, from thence.

rebuild; retain what has been proved of use; reform abuses when they are known to exist; "prove all things and hold fast that which is good."

He was one of the delegates appointed by this province in 1838 to meet Lord Durham, the newly appointed Governor-General, at Quebec, to confer with him touching the measures required to restore harmony in the political condition of the British American colonies. At the close of the conference, the Nova Scotia delegates, on the 22nd of September, presented an address to that gentleman, which it is believed was the work of Mr. Johnstone, from which the following extracts are made:

"The duties of the mission with which we have been entrusted by the Lieutenant-Governor of Nova Scotia, and the frankness of communication permitted by your Lordship, have brought us into acquaintance with your Lordship's feelings and views in relation to British North America, and irresistibly impressed our minds with the conviction that your Lordship cherishes an ardent desire to elevate the colonies committed to your government, and entertains conceptions calculated to render that desire effective."

"In a review of the short period of the Government under your Lordship's personal direction, we behold your Lordship with that feeling so congenial to Englishmen, which turns with repugnance from the shedding of blood on the scaffold, blending justice with mercy; while returning tranquillity had already rewarded an administration conducted without the sacrifice of one human life; and we were aware that improved laws and institutions were in preparation, which, under a government firm, mild and impartial, gave to the future the reasonable prospect of restored confidence and renovated prosperity."

Mr. Johnstone was much pleased with Lord Durham and his visit to Quebec on this occasion, and augured favourable results from the action of that gentleman in Canadian affairs.

On the 28th of April, 1841, he was made Attorney and Advocate-General, and on the 26th of May following he was gazetted Procurator in the Court of Vice-Admiralty for the Province. It should be stated here that on the severance of the Executive from the Legislative Council in January, 1838, he was reappointed a member of both these councils. In order to make plain the circumstances under which it became, or seemed to become, desirable for Mr. Johnstone to seek a seat in the popular branch of the Legislature, it is necessary to refer to the political condition of the Province at this period.* The generation of to-day have but a faint perception of the fermentation which preceded and attended the remodelling and reconstruction of our colonial constitutions. In Quebec and Ontario, or Upper and Lower Canada as they were then called, the excitement culminated in open rebellion against the Crown, and the cause of the Reformers was stained with blood. In this province,

* See also pages 289, 290.—[Ed.]

through the commendable patience and moderation of the leaders of both the great parties, better results were finally gained without resort to such deplorable means. Perhaps they were insensibly controlled by a large and thoughtful body of men, not organized as a party, however, whose loyal disposition and dislike of change from mere love of novelty, rendered it both *unwise* and *unsafe* for the extremists to press their notions too urgently or too far. This moderate, unorganized party were not averse to reasonable changes in the mode of administration of public affair—to such changes as would increase the liberties of the subject without diminishing the rights and powers vested in the sovereign, and would thus preserve the proper balance of authority, and the security and stability of government. It may be said, as a general truth, to have been led by the clergy, who, to their honour be it said, in public and in private, without regard to denominational distinctions, used all their influence on the side of mutual moderation and forbearance.

So heated had become the partisanship of the extremists of both the parties, that reason and persuasion lost their powers, argument led to no beneficial result, and conversation on political subjects but too frequently led to personal incrimination and insult. Families hitherto socially united became estranged from each other, and even the members of the same family, having taken different sides on the topics agitating the public mind, severed all friendly intercourse and in some cases unhappily became the inveterate enemies of each other.

No man knew better than Mr. Johnstone that in this condition of the body politic there was great danger that reform might degenerate into disorganization, and that ill-considered measures might be adopted, not only subversive of the existing form of government, but destructive to the best interests of the people themselves, who, notwithstanding all that was said to the contrary, always received his warmest sympathies, and whose welfare he most sincerely desired. In evidence of this we quote a passage or two from his celebrated Mason hall speech delivered in March, 1840.

"I do not attend here to sustain any party or any peculiar line of politics, but to vindicate the bodies to which I belong from imputations which have been cast upon them. I am not here to court applause on the one side or the other. Ever since I came into public life—not on my own solicitations, but because I was called to it and thought it my duty to respond to the call—I have endeavoured to occupy a position, which left me not without a hope of being useful. . . . The Province is not my birthplace, but it is the birthplace of my children, and my honour and interests are all bound up in Nova Scotia.

"Mr. Howe uttered a sentiment which was cheered by you, and heartily do I respond to it. He said that he wanted to see the institutions of the country such that the poorest boy might see the highest situations within his reach by means of intelligence and integrity, and with my whole heart I say amen. . . . Although I

hold office, I am a Dissenter, and I am one who holds no high Tory principles, and never did. When I was offered a seat in the Council, from choice I refrained from it, and continued to do so while it was a matter of choice, and only consented to accept when it appeared to be my duty, and I felt that as a Crown officer and Dissenter that my influence might be directed for the public good."

In relation to responsible government he said :

"I do not oppose it on the main principle, if I oppose it at all. It means, as I understand the subject, the assimilation of the Government of the Province to the Government of the Mother Country, and the power of the House of Assembly to that of the House of Commons. I am not speaking as a partisan ; I am addressing you sincerely, on your dearest interests, in which a false step may lead to great evils. If the new system were the blessing spoken of—if it included a sound constitution and wholesome institutions well administered, it would be desirable ; but be cautious how you make changes."

These extracts ought to convince the most sceptical that Mr. Johnstone was anything but the stereotyped Tory that it was the fashion, in certain circles, at that time, to regard him. To his wise suggestions and moderation of sentiment, the people of this province are largely indebted for the gradual and safe development of the great change in the administration of its affairs which was about being introduced.

The period now approached when, at the earnest solicitation of many and influential friends, and in obedience to what seemed the call of duty, he resolved to seek a seat in the Assembly ; and he at once resolved to appeal to the county where a large portion of his youthful days had been spent ; besides, in Annapolis he was a freeholder, and therefore possessed of the qualification required of a candidate under the system then prevailing.

The writer well remembers the clamour that ensued when the announcement was made that he intended to contest the seat for the county against the late member, Mr. S. B. Chipman. The Reformers raised the cry of "lawyer" and "non-resident," and to influence the vote of Churchmen, they were reminded that he was an apostate from that Church ; and the Baptists were told that, though he had attached himself to their communion, he was an interested convert, and insincere in his professions. Political parties were not then so distinctly defined as they became a little later on, and the canvass began under any but favourable circumstances. His own denomination—the Baptists—were divided, and a majority* of them opposed him with much bitterness and determination ; but it must in fairness be added that those of them who gave him their support manifested an equal warmth and earnestness in his behalf. The election took place under the old system, and the polling continued for several days. At the close of each succeeding day, while

* I have always supposed the majority of the Baptists supported him.—[Ed.]

the scene of voting was in the western sections of the county, Mr. Johnstone continued to lead the poll, with constantly augmented majorities. This was a favourable symptom of the final result; but it was well known that he must bring to the east such a majority as could not be reached by his opponent, whose strength was known to be in that direction. In consequence of this his election was virtually assured before the voting was transferred to Lawrencetown, where Mr. Chipman resided, who, finding success on his side hopeless, resigned the contest, leaving his antagonist to be returned by a majority of 377 votes. He was then, in 1843, fifty-one years of age, and had been thirty years in the active practice of his profession.

Among the measures introduced by Mr. Johnstone and passed by this Assembly none, in public utility, equalled that usually known as the "Simultaneous Polling Act," under the provisions of which the counties were divided into convenient districts or wards, in which the polling was to take place on the same day. By this means large gatherings of the electors were rendered impossible, and in consequence much of the noise, drunkenness, fighting and other indecorums, which too often marked these events in previous years, were avoided or materially lessened, and much valuable time conserved to the electors themselves. This bill became law on the seventeenth day of March, 1847, and was reduced to practice with eminent success in the same year in which it was passed. The Assembly having been dissolved by lapse of time, writs were issued for calling a new one, and Mr. Johnstone announced himself a candidate a second time. He was opposed by Mr. Samuel B. Chipman, who, not daunted by his former defeat, became the standard-bearer of the Liberal party, and went to the polls with what he declared a fair prospect of success. The canvass had been, as was usually the case in the county, a very thorough and animated one, but the termination of the contest proved that the popularity of his adversary had not been diminished, as he gained the seat by a majority of 267 votes, and his colleagues were returned for the townships of Annapolis and Granville.

The elections throughout the Province generally, however, had been adverse to the Conservatives, who resigned and gave place to a Liberal administration. Mr. Johnstone being chosen as the leader of the Opposition, he continued to act in that capacity for the ten following years, during which his brilliant qualities were as conspicuously exhibited as they could have been as the leader of a government. The last session of this Assembly witnessed a series of stormy debates on a variety of subjects—railways, elective councils, tariff, etc.—in all of which he took a leading part. He opposed the passage of a bill for the creating a franchise dependent on the assessment rolls without further revision, and declaimed earnestly and eloquently against it, declaring that its provisions

were fraught with great evils and injury to the Province, through the manipulation of the assessment by dishonest assessors, for party political purposes. On the tariff question he spoke in these words :*

"That as this was the last session of the House, he had concluded on second thought not to introduce a resolution which he had just prepared, but which he would read as propounding his views on the subject before the House. He had been very much struck with an expression in the speech of the President of the United States that it was the true policy of that large commercial nation to lay their duties so as to answer the double purpose of revenue and protection of home industry. *This he believed was our true policy.* Could we indeed enjoy free trade in its proper sense, he had no doubt it would be best for Nova Scotia; but so long as the United States of America laid our exports under burdensome and almost prohibitory duties, it was absurd to talk of free trade. Between the altered policy of England and the determination of the United States to adhere to her distinctive system, the colonies were crushed and crippled, and it was now time for Nova Scotia to protect, as far as she had the power, the products of her soil and the industry of her inhabitants. The resolution is as follows: Resolved, 'That the policy required is that the duties levied for the purposes of revenue should be regulated by such a tariff as will afford for us a high practical encouragement to the productions and industries of the country.'"

To the policy of constructing the Nova Scotia railways by the Government, as public works, he offered a most able and strenuous opposition, declaring himself favourable to the method of granting subventions to such companies as might be willing to undertake to build them—a policy which, though not adopted at that time, has since been recognized as more conducive to the public interests and general welfare. During this session it was that he moved resolutions affirming the propriety of making the Legislative Council an elective body, which he enforced in a logical and forcible speech, which had a considerable effect upon the public opinion of the country in favour of such a measure.

The general election of 1851 found Mr. Johnstone again soliciting the suffrages of the people of Annapolis, and for a third time he was opposed by the Liberals in the person of their old champion, Mr. S. B. Chipman, but he was again returned by a majority of 275 votes. The elections, however, still left Mr. Johnstone without a plurality of votes in the new Assembly, and he was forced to continue his services to the country as the leader of an increased and vigorous Opposition.

The railway question was the "burning" one of the day. The Government had declared in favour of the policy of building it as a public work—a policy which Mr. Johnstone, as we have before stated, opposed with all his powers. In his first speech upon the subject, on the third

*The reader will perhaps be surprised to find that Mr. Johnstone so clearly stated and endorsed the "National Policy" of to-day, nearly thirty years before its adoption by the Parliament of the Dominion, yet the speech and resolution above quoted are clear proofs of the fact.

day of February, 1852, in replying to some statements made by a member for Kings County, he addressed the House as follows:

"The honourable gentleman complains of my inflexibility of character; that may be one of my characteristics, and, if so, I am afraid it is rather too late to commence the work of amendment in this particular. However, I am not disposed to regret its possession, and certainly there is no subject to which I can look back with more contentment, and upon which I feel less inclined to alter my course of action, than the subject of the railway. I have heretofore expressed in no measured terms, my belief that the execution of this work by Government would prove injurious to the welfare of the Province."

This struggle, so far as it related to the adoption of a policy, ended for a time in forcing the Government to accept the Facility Bills of the Opposition. Mr. Annand, in his "Public Speeches and Letters," Vol. II., page 152, says: "The House, though there was a clear majority to sustain the Government, became equally divided and brought to a deadlock on the railway question. . . . Mr. Howe abandoned the field, offering to pass the Facility Bills required by the Opposition." This legislation did not, however, have the effect Mr. Johnstone had hoped for and expected, as no company was organized under it during the time limited for that purpose, and the Government policy was, in consequence, revived in 1854. However, he had the gratification of knowing that his measure of success had met the approval and secured the plaudits of a very large proportion of the people of the Province.

The Temperance question had recently come to the front, and at this time attracted and demanded the attention of all classes of the people. Early in the third decade of the century societies began to be formed in several of the counties, by individuals who were willing to subscribe a pledge of partial abstinence from the use of alcoholic liquors; but it soon came to be felt that nothing short of total abstinence could successfully and entirely abate the evils which grew out of the abuse of these stimulants, and therefore the doctrine of "teetotalism," as it was called, supplanted those of partial abstinence, and out of the new opinions various organizations were rapidly evolved, having the common object of overcoming, and so far as possible of eradicating, the vice of drunkenness. The founders of these bodies had adopted the principle of "moral suasion" as the means of accomplishing their ends. Nothing could be more reasonable than this doctrine; nothing could be more humane than the desire, by such means, to reclaim the drunkard and restore him to society, and much good was done by the movement while this method of action remained the chief plank in the temperance platform.

Heretofore the liquor traffic had been controlled by license laws of a more or less restrictive character; but it did not require much acumen on the part of the leaders of the temperance men, to draw the only logical

sequence from certain premises which they had adopted as being fundamentally sound and true, after they had entered upon the second phase of their movement. They declared that not the abuse only, but the use of alcohol in all its forms as a beverage, was, though not equally afflictive in its effects, yet in a moral sense, equally sinful, dangerous, and to be avoided; in fact, they went further and denounced the moderate drinker as a greater criminal than the absolute drunkard. If the traffic in "strong drink" was the source of the evils to be abated—was in itself an evil, no government could license it without sin, nor delegate the power to others to do so without the same offence. Therefore, to be consistent, the license laws should be abolished; and in their place they proposed to enact a law prohibiting the manufacture, importation, sale and use of all spirituous liquors, or, in other words, to substitute "legal suasion" for "moral suasion."

Mr. Johnstone was a teetotaler from choice and from principle long before these movements had commenced, and there can be but little doubt he had watched the different phases they had assumed, and the many changes which they had undergone in the course of their development, with great interest, if not at all times with unalloyed pleasure. No man could be more desirous to mitigate or remove the evils caused by the abuse of stimulants than he, but few men saw the whole field of battle, and knew the positions of the combatants, the weak and the strong points in the ranks of both armies, and the ultimate effects of victory or defeat, so clearly as he. It had long been a maxim with him that it was a blunder to make laws in advance of public opinion;* that laws, to be effectual, should be the result of a call from the educated opinion of a majority of the people whose welfare or interests they are intended to secure. On one occasion in the writer's presence, a lady of the county suggested that he should avail himself of the opportunity afforded by his return to power to introduce an Education Act to give the people free schools, based on the assessment of all. He spoke in reply somewhat as follows: "Are the people prepared to tax themselves to secure the advantages afforded by free schools? Would not the more wealthy among the rural population object to their taxes being increased in order that their poorer neighbours might have their burdens lessened? Would not those who had, at a very considerable expense, educated their children, object to a change which would involve their continued taxation for the benefit of those who possessed nothing to tax? When the first of these questions can be answered in the affirmative, and the two remaining ones in the negative, by any considerable majority of the people, legislation will

*If this principle had always governed the policy of Mr. Johnstone and his successor in the leadership of his party, neither the School Law nor Confederation would have been adopted in Nova Scotia.—[Ed.]

become safe, but not otherwise. If, therefore, we would have this measure adopted, the people must be instructed as to its value; it should be discussed in every debating club and in every newspaper, and at every fireside in the country. I am glad that you are striving to bring about that condition of public opinion on the subject which I so heartily desire to see, and without which no law can be made a boon or a blessing to the people."

As in the educational so also in the temperance matter; and it is nearly certain that Mr. Johnstone was not, at heart, a supporter of the principle of enforcing temperance by legal enactments and therefore did not very deeply regret his failure to place such a law upon our statute books. But to him and his colleague, Avard Longley, we were indebted for many improvements in the license laws, and in him the temperance fraternities always found a sincere friend, a wise counsellor and a firm supporter.

On the occasion of the general election in 1855, Mr. Johnstone was opposed for the fourth and last time by his old antagonist Chipman, but was again triumphantly returned as the county representative. The Liberals, however, succeeded in gaining a majority in the new Assembly, though they were not destined to guide the ship of State much longer. Events originating in riots on the line of railway then in course of construction, led to a breach between the administration and its Roman Catholic supporters in the House, which finally culminated, during the second session, 1857, in an adverse vote which forced their resignation, when Mr. Johnstone was called upon to form a new government, a task in which he was eminently successful, accepting the Attorney-Generalship and the position of leader. On going back for re-election he was opposed by Mr. (late the honourable) William Caguey Whitman, but was returned by a majority of 395 votes, the largest he had ever received in the county.

One of the first acts of the new administration was to take measures, too long neglected, toward an equitable settlement of the mines question. All the ungranted mines and minerals of the Province had been formerly leased to the Duke of York, a younger brother of George IV., and this lease had been assigned or transferred to a London firm—Rundell, Bridges and Rundell—in consideration of certain moneys paid by them to the creditors of His Royal Highness; and these gentlemen formed a company afterwards known as the "General Mining Association," for the purpose of opening and working the mines of Nova Scotia, which thus became a close monopoly during the continuance of the lease. Much dissatisfaction was caused among the people of the Province by these operations. They contended that the king had exceeded his powers in granting this lease without the consent of their Legislature. In 1849 the Civil List Bill—

by which the estate of the Crown was vested in the Provincial Government—became law; and it was claimed that no lease of the mines was any longer valid without colonial sanction. The mining business of the country was thus brought to a standstill, and the interests of all parties endangered. In the session of 1857, therefore, Mr. Johnstone obtained power from the Legislature to appoint delegates to proceed to England, with a view to bring about, if possible, a compromise with the lessees, subject, however, to ratification or rejection by the Assembly. In consequence of this he and Mr. Adams G. Archibald—then a prominent member of the Opposition—late Lieutenant-Governor, were chosen by the Executive as such delegates. They went to London in June of that year, and succeeded in effecting an arrangement with the Association, which, while it secured their rights in the mines then opened and worked by them, conceded to Nova Scotia the ownership of all others. The terms of this agreement were laid before the Assembly at its next session, and after a lively and full discussion, the question to accept them was carried by a vote of *thirty-two* against *nineteen*, or by a majority of thirteen votes.

A more lucky event for Nova Scotia in a financial point of view than the settlement of this vexed question never occurred. If it had been delayed four years longer, the terms thus secured would have become impossible, and the Province would have been forced to await the expiration of the lease for the recovery and resumption of its rights—rights through which, at the time of writing, it derives nearly if not quite one-fifth of its revenues. In 1861 it will be remembered that the discovery of the existence of gold in this country was made, and as soon as the knowledge of this important fact had reached the ears of the lessees, they would, of course, have declined to entertain any terms whatever. To Mr. Johnstone justly belongs the credit of having propounded the measure which made a settlement possible, as soon as circumstances had placed him in a position to do so; and the highly beneficial results, which are so certainly felt in this hour of her history, will be readily acknowledged by every candid son of Nova Scotia.

On the 16th day of February, 1856, the Attorney-General—Young—in a speech of great eloquence, moved a resolution pledging the Assembly to provide the sum of one hundred and fifty guineas, to be expended in the purchase of a sword, to be presented to Sir William Fenwick Williams, "as a mark of the high esteem in which his character as a man and a soldier, and more especially his heroic courage and constancy in the defence of Kars, are held by the Legislature of his native province." This resolution was seconded by Mr. Johnstone in a speech equally eloquent and appropriate, in which, among other things, he said:

"It has been the singular fortune of Nova Scotians—when we consider the comparatively small population of our country—to mark with pride and view with unmingled satisfaction the achievements of their fellow-countrymen abroad; and although we may have been called to mourn their loss, we have mourned them as heroes who have fallen covered with glory; we have mourned them, but there has been a pride of country in our sorrow, for they have braved danger and met death with an undaunted front and unwavering courage. Thus have we felt the loss of Welsford and Parker, to many of us known familiarly. This resolution acknowledges the merits of General Williams, the hero of Kars. We are not called upon to mourn him as numbered with the dead, for though we have occasion for sorrow when we reflect that, from circumstances over which he had no control, he with his gallant band, has fallen into the hands of the enemy. But we find him only a victim to a misfortune, which, if indomitable courage and consummate skill had been able to avert it, would never have overtaken him. . . . I regard the achievements and position of General Williams as unapproached and unequalled in the history of the present war. Many have exhibited an heroic courage not to be surpassed, but he has united to the bravery of the man the skill and military capacity of the distinguished leader. His professional skill in perfecting the defence of Kars may be best judged by its terrible effectiveness on the day of assault; his talents in organizing and inspiring troops have the highest testimony in the spectacle of defeated, dispirited and ill-disciplined bands winning laurels that veterans might envy, and achieving a triumph in the defence of Kars that will go down immortalized to posterity, a defence carried on and sustained by no mere animal courage, but with cool, unalterable determination, united with provident precaution and conducted with admirable skill. In reading the history of that memorable day, as contained in the graphic and eloquent despatch of General Williams, which may well compare with many of the classic accounts of ancient battles, one cannot fail to be impressed with a sense of his genius and ability. . . . Under these circumstances we are paying to him no vain compliment, no empty honour in passing this resolution—we are paying that tribute which as Nova Scotians, and the descendants of Englishmen, we feel due to a native of our province whose achievements abroad have been characterized by a courage so exalted, a fortitude so invincible, and an ability so great. We are paying this compliment to one who, though compelled to yield to a dire necessity against which neither strength, nor courage, nor intellect can contend, is yet covered with glory, and who is endeared but the more to the hearts and sympathies of all true Britons, and we are but claiming for our own province a share of his glory by claiming him as our own."

In the session of the following year, 1857, the "Catholic Question," as it was then generally called, was ventilated in the Assembly. The discussion arose upon a resolution, involving a want of confidence in the Liberal ministry, which was moved by Mr. Johnstone in amendment to the address in reply to the speech from the throne. The debate occupied about fourteen days, and was characterized by the exhibition of great ability and eloquence by speakers on both sides, as well as by considerable acrimony and warmth. Mr. Johnstone's speech, on this occasion, occupied parts of three several days, and was perhaps the ablest effort of his political life. For close reasoning, spontaneous retort, elegance of diction, and eloquence in delivery, it must always hold a foremost place

in the records of such literature. To quote the whole speech would be out of place in this memoir, but we cannot refuse to insert its eloquent peroration, which was intended as a summary of the points made in it. He said :

"If any doubt could exist as to the imbecility of the Government last winter, there is no room to doubt their weakness now. Rebuked, threatened, ridiculed before the whole people by two of their own officers,—the Chief Railway Commissioner and the Queen's Printer,—they meekly submitted. At the dictates of these two insubordinates, aided by some followers in this House, they are willing to purchase leave to live by the unworthy sacrifice of a political supporter, on the poor pretence of an alleged offence of the same nature, but far less aggravated in degree, than that perpetrated by those two government officials and dictators. Outraging by their conduct a portion of their firmest supporters, they now insult their understanding by charging them with dishonour in allying themselves with Protestant Conservatives of liberal principles and practices, and demanding that they shall remain bound to Protestant Liberals who have abandoned in their practice the liberal principles which they professed.

"We are taunted on the alliance of Conservatives and Catholics as if one or both were tainted with political leprosy. Sir, we are men, and as men entitled to meet on the broad ground of a common humanity, for our platform is, Equality of Civil and Religious Freedom. As Christians, I trust we are wise enough and virtuous enough to know how to enjoy civil freedom and political privileges without the sacrifice on either side of religious independence, a blessing without which the name of civil liberty were but a mockery. As citizens we unite in valuing the free institutions of our country, and in the determination to uphold them, as they exist in Nova Scotia, with inflexible integrity ; and I trust neither of us can claim precedence in the loyalty and reverence we bear our beloved Sovereign as the head of the Empire, or in the love we cherish toward her as the brightest example of all that adorns, elevates and ennobles her sex.

"The loyalty of Irishmen has been questioned. I dare not assume the duty of their vindication when Erin's own sons have so often fulfilled that office with an eloquence peculiarly their own, and which I can never reach. I may, however, be permitted to say that it does seem harsh and ungrateful that any imputation like this should be ventured so recently after the names of Alma, Inkerman and Sebastopol have been added to the scroll where Britain's glories have been inscribed. While yet unmouldered lie, amid the heights and precipices and ravines of those now historic scenes, commingling in the same graves, the remains of Irishmen with those of their fellow-countrymen—men who together met the common enemy, and when the battle fiercely raged, and death reigned rampant over the field, indiscriminating, reaped the abounding harvest,—knew no rivalry but who foremost should reach the deadliest strife, who first should pour forth his life in his country's service ! Heroic men ! in their life attesting, and sealing in death the noble truth though they learned it not from the classic page—*Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori.*"

The speech from which the foregoing extracts are made, inculcating and defending principles that lie at the very foundations of civil and religious freedom, showed, in an unmistakable manner, the true sentiments of the man.

After an elaborate and eloquent reply by Mr. Howe, a division of the House was called when Mr. Johnstone had the gratification to find that he had carried a majority with him against the Government, which resigned during the next day, as we have already seen.

Among the last speeches made by Mr. Johnstone in the Assembly was one on the question of a "Union of the Colonies," or to be more exact, on the "Union of the Maritime Colonies," in which he eloquently set forth his views on the general subject, a few extracts from which will not be considered out of place here.

"I may say that it has been among the first objects of my ambition, as a public man, to secure a union of these colonies. This aspiration arose from the conviction that it was essentially necessary for the purpose of raising us up and giving us a position. I know that, divided as we are, small in extent and population, we must continue to occupy a very inferior position among the communities of peoples. Now, it was not from any ambitious motives that I deprecated our condition; not from any motive of power on behalf of the community with which I might be associated. I felt that the position we occupied was unfavourable to the elevation of the body politic, and that it was antagonistic to the development of anything like a large and generous and ennobled public sentiment. We cannot but feel that in a small community, where public measures amount to matters of small general moment, where parties are brought into personal collision so closely, and personal interests and feelings are necessarily made prominent objects and motives of action, it is impossible there can be that unanimity of feeling, that enlargement of view, that elevation of purpose which is so desirable in every country. Therefore, it was that I, as an inhabitant of this country, the home of myself and my children after me, felt that my first duty was to endeavour to create this enlargement and elevation of public sentiment by extending the sphere of political action, which could only be done by a union of the British North American Provinces, of the Queen's subjects on this side of the Atlantic."

After comparing the political condition of the colonies with that of the United States, he said:

"In early life I held strong democratic sentiments, for, strange to say, though I have been called a leading Tory in Nova Scotia, I was in my youth actuated by the Whig principles of English statesmen. I was early captivated, as many young men are, with the illusions of a Republic—of a Republic that was working out the great problem they had taken in hand; but reflection and observation have gradually sobered down this sentiment, and I feel that, however valuable a republic may be for giving energy to individual action, it is wanting in that power of elevation and nobility of sentiment, and responsibility of action, which can alone raise nations to that high-toned condition which we desire to see, and our minds figure before us, as the objects of our aspirations. I trust that that portion of this continent over which the British flag is waving, will continue to possess perfect freedom of action, with all the elevation and refinement which proceed from connection with monarchical and aristocratic institutions." . . .

Returning to the subject of a union he concluded a most eloquent speech in these words:

"I would wish to see such a union as would unite all the parts into a homogeneous* whole, and make a people worthy of the source from whence they sprung, and perpetuate to all time to come, the character, name, honour, and institutions of that great country of which we are proud to form a part."

In the same year, and during the railway discussion which then took place, Mr. Johnstone urged the necessity for the construction of the great Intercolonial Railway as a means to Union, "independent of its commercial advantage." In this same debate he paid so warm and just a compliment to his constituents that it deserves to be recorded here. He was defending himself against the charge of inconsistency in proposing to build the Pictou railway as a government work,—a policy which it was said was distasteful to the county he represented, a fact of which it had been supposed he was forgetful. He said:

"It may seem a strange position for me to occupy; to bring forward this measure and state the reasons which induce me to do so. I feel in doing so I am promoting the interests of the people of Nova Scotia; and I feel I am promoting them in the most beneficial way that is practicable; and if any man imagines for a moment that in advocating this measure, I have lost sight of the peculiar claims that bind me to the western portion of the Province, he utterly misunderstands my character and fails to appreciate my motives. Do I forget the interests of my own constituents? Do I forget the claims of the people of Annapolis upon me?—of that constituency that through twenty years without fail and without wavering has rendered me its confidence, and a large proportion of those who compose it more than their confidence,—their personal affection, respect and esteem? Forget *their* interests! No; 'let my right hand forget its cunning and my tongue cleave to the roof of my mouth,' before I forget the interests of that constituency."

Mr. Johnstone's political career was now rapidly drawing to a close. During thirty years he had devoted the energies of the best years of his life to the public service,—namely, from his appointment to the Solicitor-Generalship, in 1834, to his resignation of the Attorney-Generalship and leadership of the Government, in 1864. During this period he had served as Solicitor-General from 1834 to 1841, when he was made Attorney-General, in which capacity he acted from 1841 to 1848, and again from 1857 to 1860, and in 1863 and 1864. Twenty out of these thirty years he was the representative of this county, and since 1843 had run successfully no less than eight elections, all of which, save the last, were contested. During the session of 1863-64 an Act was passed authorizing the appointment of an additional judge in the Supreme Court, to have special jurisdiction in all matters pertaining to Equity proceedings, which had formerly been vested in the Court of Chancery, so called, in a judge

* He appears to have used the word "homogeneous" as more expressive of a Legislative than a Federal Union. In this same speech he said: "I have never favoured a Union of the Provinces by way of Federation, for it did not appear to tend to the great object we had in view."

styled the Master of the Rolls, the title of the new judge to be "Judge in Equity." To this position the subject of this memoir was appointed on the 11th day of May, 1864, and he held the place during the remaining period of his life—about ten years. It is a well-recognized fact that he was in this capacity a most able, painstaking and efficient judge. The judgments delivered by him were marked by their clearness, general soundness and great ability and learning.*

A year before Mr. Johnstone's decease he visited the south of France on account of the state of his health, which had become very much impaired. This course had been taken under medical advice, and it was hoped that a season of rest from laborious and exhaustive mental labour would so recuperate his physical system that the life of the "old man eloquent" would be spared to the public for a few years longer. But this was not to be.

The gentleman who for many years had been his great political antagonist—Mr. Howe—whose health was also in a shattered condition, was, shortly after, elevated to the gubernatorial chair of his native province, an honour to which he was very justly entitled. He had occupied the position, however, for only a few months when he died. On the occurrence of this untoward event Mr. Johnstone was selected by the Governor-General to succeed Mr. Howe, and on the receipt of the news of the appointment, in France, where he then was, he notified his acceptance of the position, and at once commenced his journey homeward with somewhat improved health, and it was earnestly hoped that his life would be spared to assume the duties thus imposed on him; but on his return to England he suffered a relapse, which in a few weeks ended in his decease at or near Brighton.† The event caused deep grief and disappointment in the hearts of his many friends and admirers, who felt that he eminently deserved the honour which had been conferred upon him as a suitable crowning act in recognition of his life-long and valuable services to the people of Nova Scotia.

It only remains to add the following very just estimate of the character of the late Judge in Equity, which is extracted from a book bearing the title "Acadia College and Horton Academy." Dawson & Co., Montreal, 1881:

"A portraiture of more difficult execution is required to present a just idea of the late Judge Johnstone. In religious discussions and questions in the church, always

* I feel bound to add that in all the qualities that make a great judge, Judge Johnstone, although seventy-one years old when appointed, was the equal, if not the superior, of any who had preceded him on the Bench of Nova Scotia. He possessed in a most eminent degree the legal and judicial mind. His incomparable powers of analysis, and ready application of legal principles to all the details of a case, and force, clearness and logical methods of expression, would have given him high rank in any court of the Empire.—[Ed]

†He was buried at Cheltenham.—[Ed.]

the most modest and meekest of men, he nevertheless was intellectually a giant. A most impressive sight it was to see this man with talents which at the bar and in the legislative halls could hold men by the hour in speechless admiration, take his place in meetings of the church with the manifest humility of one who felt himself 'less the least.'

"In private and public life, by the natural bent of his mind as well as training, Mr. Johnstone was, in the best sense of the word, a gentleman; meanness and falsehood were abhorrent to his nature, and his intercourse was marked by a delicate sense of propriety. His higher moral perceptions also were remarkable for their strength and power. Give him the maintenance or defence of a case in which, as against his client, justice was denied or feebleness oppressed, and he was often known to fire and soar aloft in a manner truly wonderful. On such occasions he often surpassed himself, and all classes of men, unlettered and cultivated, friends and antagonists, have equally expressed themselves with admiration of his extraordinary power. Nor was this quick sense of justice and right dependent on the excitement of courts or popular contests; private and intimate intercourse no less revealed this trait in Mr. Johnstone as an original element of his moral constitution. To one knowing him sufficiently, and contrasting his finely moulded character with the coarse natures of many men, even in high position, how naturally and mournfully comes now the exclamation, 'When shall we look upon his like again?'"

ALFRED WHITMAN.

1844–1848, 1848–1852, 1852–1856.

Alfred Whitman was a brother of Elnathan and a son of John Whitman, and was born at Rosette in 1797. When a young man he served a time as clerk and book-keeper with Phineas Lovett, who was then engaged in a large West India business. Here he acquired a general knowledge of trade matters, which proved of great service to him in after life, and formed habits of industry and attention to business which gained for him a good name and aided him in conquering success in the battle of life, which he always fought in a brave and intelligent spirit.

Shortly after leaving the employ of Mr. Lovett, he married Jane, daughter of Thomas Spurr, and settled on the farm at Rosette, where he continued to live until, failing health unfitting him to pursue so laborious a calling, he removed to the town of Annapolis and entered into trade. He was thus employed when in 1840 he became a candidate for the suffrages of the electors of the township of Annapolis in the room of his elder brother Elnathan. He was opposed by the late Henry Gates, of the township of Clements, who after a severe contest defeated Mr. Whitman, obtaining the seat by a small majority. This election took place during a period of ferment attending an important change in the political constitution of the Province, and was characterized by great warmth and acrimony.

At the general election in 1844 he again became a candidate, and

obtained the seat by acclamation. He was again returned in 1847, 1851 and 1855, and in 1857 he was elevated to the Legislative Council, and continued a member of that branch until his death, January 27th, 1861.

MOSES SHAW.

1855-1859, 1859-1863.

By the Editor.

Mr. Shaw was for the greater part of his life a merchant at Clementsport. I do not know whether in his earlier years he was a supporter of the Reform movement, but after the establishment of responsible government, and the later struggle between Mr. Howe and Mr. Johnstone mentioned in previous pages began, he was a pronounced adherent of the new Conservative party led by the latter. A man of recognized social standing, good judgment, and respected by people of all classes, he had conferred on him, what had always theretofore been considered, the honour of a Commission of the Peace. After Mr. Howe and his colleagues, as a result of the election of 1847, succeeded to power in the following year, they advised the Lieutenant-Governor, Sir John Harvey, to cancel all the old appointments and issue a new General Commission of the Peace, in which the names of several of the most worthy and respected magistrates in each county who were Conservatives in politics were omitted, that of Mr. Shaw among them; and a very large number of warm partisans of the new Government were appointed, some of them, of course, very worthy men, but some inferior in fitness and social and educational qualifications to those whom they had superseded. This act, so unworthy of a great statesman, and which no candid man can help admitting is a stain on an otherwise brilliant record, we must assume Mr. Howe himself regretted in later years. It added intensely to the prevailing political bitterness; and, on its being brought to the notice of the Home Government, was severely censured, as the gentlemen affected, appointed under a former regime, held their honourable distinctions during good behaviour on the faith of the Crown; and the Lieutenant-Governor was threatened with recall if he did not insist on the injury done them being redressed; but the Colonial Secretary's despatches on the subject were not made public until Mr. Johnstone's second accession to power ten years later. Mr. Shaw, in January, 1849, was presented with an address of sympathy and confidence on this occasion, signed by two hundred and fifty inhabitants of the township of Clements of both political parties, among them Mr. W. H. Ray, then coming to the front as a prominent Liberal; and he was not long afterwards reinstated, as were most of the other victims of this deplorable act of party resentment.

In 1855, Mr. Shaw was returned for the township of Annapolis as a

supporter of Mr. Johnstone, and in 1859 was again returned as one of the three county members. During his second term he saw fit to change his political relations, and began to support the new Government which had supplanted that of Mr. Johnstone; and was, in consequence, defeated in 1863 by Mr. George Whitman, now of the Legislative Council. He continued in affiliation with the Liberal party until his death, January 23rd, 1870, aged 61. He was a staunch member of the Church of England, a man of good presence and fair ability, and many amiable, personal qualities.

AVARD LONGLEY.

1859–1863, 1863–1867.

Mr. Longley was a son of Asaph and a grandson of Israel Longley, of Shirley, in Massachusetts, who came to this province in 1760, or a little later, and settled in Granville, probably on the farm recently owned and occupied by his youngest son, the late Israel Longley. He was educated in the Paradise Grammar School, after which he was employed in agricultural pursuits until after the time of his father's death, when he disposed of his share of the estate to his elder and only brother, the late Israel Longley, and embarked in mercantile business. He was twice married: (1) Anna Whitman, by whom he had one daughter, Ella, wife of Reuben Harlow; (2) Charlotte Troop, youngest daughter of the late William Henry Troop, J.P., by whom he had issue. From his early youth Mr. Longley manifested a fondness for books and a taste for literature, and by attaching himself to literary and debating societies, lost no opportunity of improving his mental endowments and in acquiring rhetorical freedom in the expression of his thoughts and opinions. At a very early period in the later temperance movements, guided by the organization known as the Sons of Temperance, he became associated with that order, and in its division rooms he found "ample room and verge enough" for the culture and display of his debating powers.

The passage of the Act which changed the mixed, or township representation to a purely county one opened to the township of Wilmot equal franchisal rights with the other townships, and therefore gave general satisfaction to that division of the county whose electors had hitherto, for nearly a century, the privilege of voting for county candidates only, while her sisters, Annapolis and Granville, not only voted for them, but also for candidates to represent themselves as townships.

At the general election in 1859 they found themselves for the first time on a perfect equality with the others, and Mr. Longley, of that township, was selected, with the Hon. J. W. Johnstone and Moses Shaw, Esq., of Clements, as one of the Conservative candidates. They were

opposed by W. H. Ray, W. C. Whitman and Israel Longley, Esqs.—the latter gentleman being Mr. Longley's brother—who had been chosen as the Liberal standard-bearers. A vigorous canvass was made by both parties, and both went to the polls certain of success; but the Conservatives were successful by considerable majorities, and Mr. Longley was thus initiated into public life as a member of the twenty-second parliament of his native province.

Mr. Longley, who had previously devoted much of his time to the question of temperance, soon became an exponent of that cause in the Assembly, one of his acts being a bill to amend the acts relating to license then on the statute books. He wisely, however, refrained from taking or seeking a leading part in the discussions that occupied the time of the Assembly at this period, his party being then in Opposition; though he could not resist the impulse to make a spirited attack on two of the members, who, having been elected by the Conservatives, had subsequently yielded their support to the Government.

In 1863 Mr. Longley was again returned—and this time at the head of the poll—with his colleagues Mr. Johnstone and Mr. George Whitman—the latter of whom was brought out in the place of Mr. Shaw, who, having voted against his party and joined the ranks of the Liberals, had rendered himself obnoxious. The Liberal candidates at this election were Israel Longley, W. H. Ray, and Moses Shaw, Esqs., who were defeated, but by lessened numbers, Mr. Ray falling only seventeen below the Hon. Mr. Johnstone. The result of the elections throughout the Province having been generally favourable, the Liberals resigned and a Conservative administration was formed with Mr. Johnstone, as Attorney-General, at its head. Mr. Longley was appointed on the Committee of Public Accounts, and on that connected with reporting and printing. Laborious, diligent and conscientious, his services as a committee-man were highly esteemed, and never without fruitful results. In December, 1864, he was appointed Commissioner of Railways for Nova Scotia, and filled the office with ability until June, 1869. We shall now proceed to give a few extracts from some of his many parliamentary speeches made in this Assembly. On the question of the Pictou Railway he said:

"I would not say a single word on the question before us if I did not occupy a somewhat peculiar position. Since the inception of railways in this province I have stood opposed to them, in this House and out of it, and in my own county particularly have again and again spoken against the construction of railways by Government. I feel it, therefore, necessary for my own sake to furnish some reasons to my constituents for giving my support to this measure. I may say that were the question now before the Legislature whether we should begin the construction of railways by Government or not, I have no hesitation in saying that I would oppose the undertaking by that policy; but we are all familiar with the argument based on the fact that we have got them, and that there has already been a large expenditure of

money made in connection with these works. It seems to me that it can be clearly shown that it is not only for the interests of the County of Pictou, and other counties to the eastward, but really for the interests of the whole country that the railway should be further extended, not only to the Gulf of St. Lawrence, but also, at no distant day, to the counties lying west of the terminus at Windsor. . . . At the time the railway system of this province was commenced, and a million of pounds expended in connection with the undertaking, it was never contemplated, either by the supporters of railways by Government, or by those who opposed that policy, that the railway, having reached certain points should remain stationary. It was believed that the time would arrive when it would be necessary to extend it both east and west; and I believe that the time has now arrived, and it is the duty of the Government and their present supporters to stand forward as the advocates of extension. I shall not be surprised if the people west express themselves with some disapproval at the road not proceeding west simultaneously with the extension east, but anxious as I am to meet their wishes in this respect, I am persuaded the soundest policy has been adopted. To extend east and west at the same time would very materially delay the completion of the line to Pictou, and accomplish little or nothing for the west. . . . Let us look, therefore, hopefully on the future, and no longer stand in dread of disasters to come. With every obligation of the country met, and a surplus of $100,000 in the treasury at the end of the year; with a a road grant including extras in excess of any former period; with the rich return of our mines and minerals and general prosperity, why should we refuse to proceed with our public works, and thus check enterprise and mar our progress to honour and future success."

In moving resolutions for the repeal of the "Act for the regulation and support of Dalhousie College," which had been passed during the previous session, Mr. Longley said:

"I am not insensible to the many disadvantages under which I labour in speaking at the present time. I have not the stimulating influences which operate upon the mind of the Provincial Secretary this evening. A man cannot but feel a certain degree of excitement when he knows he carries with him even the sympathies of the galleries. But the public man who cannot withstand such influences ought never to enter public life. I feel that so far as the result of this debate is concerned it would be well if I waived the privilege of closing this discussion, but I would be untrue to myself as well as to a large proportion of the people of this country whom I believe I represent on this question, if I were to restrain myself from giving expression to some extent of the indignant feeling which has been produced on my mind this evening. . . . I do not pretend to say that in reference to this or any other question I can at all reach the marked eloquence that distinguishes other gentlemen in this Legislature, but I think I can say that I have put the facts that are connected with this question in a manner that is fully appreciated by a large proportion of the people of this country. . . . I believe that the honest, fair and manly course to pursue would have been for the Presbyterian body, and I say it with all respect, if they desired higher education for their young men, to have imitated the example set by King's, Acadia and Sackville, and have raised the funds to bring up the institution to such a position that they would not feel ashamed to place it side by side with those of the other denominations who have done so much to merit the gratitude of the people of this country. I know that as far as I am able to understand the necessity of the country, and more especially as far as relates

to the peculiar circumstances and views of my own denomination, that it will be a long time before they are attracted from an institution hallowed by so many reminiscences—an institution which is indeed the result of toil and self-sacrifice. I look forward to the time, not far distant, when this question will cause no little agitation in this country, and I have been very considerably influenced in bringing this resolution forward, by the hope that this Legislature would see the necessity o passing it, with a view of settling this vexed question upon an equitable basis before it is too late."

The resolution touching a "Union of the Maritime Colonies," moved by Dr. Tupper in the session of 1864, does not seem to have met the approval of Mr. Longley, though he afterwards supported a larger union. In speaking to this question he said:

"Somehow or other it appeared to be unadvisable to include Canada in this arrangement, but he was inclined to think, if there is to be any union at all, it should be one of all the provinces. . . . A great deal of importance has been attached to the argument that this union would afford a wider field of action for our politicians, and thereby soften the asperities that arise in a contracted sphere of political action. He had little doubt there were several leading gentlemen in these provinces whose ambition sought a wider range, and it was certainly a great pity that their desires could not be gratified. He looked upon the geographical position of this province as far superior to that of any of the others, and its resources and financial conditions were equally superior, and he felt it would be unwise to jeopardise a condition of things so eminently satisfactory. He did not accede to the doctrine that a union would abate sectional jealousies and personal animosities. He was very far from believing that a union was going to mitigate any existing evil, but was rather inclined to the opinion that it would bring into play various influences and interests that we should rather seek to avoid."

In this very momentous session he lent his most earnest assistance in the passage of the Education Bill which had for its objects the establishment of free schools throughout the Province, and the general elevation of the character of the instruction to be imparted in them. This Act, notwithstanding its obvious utility, was for a time very unpopular among a certain class of influential voters throughout the country, and in no county more so than in Annapolis. Men who had for many years contributed generously for educational purposes, and who had educated their sons and daughters at their own expense, thought it a hardship if not an injustice to be forced to assist in the education of others by the payment of taxes for that purpose, and this feeling told strongly in the coming elections. Not even the anti-union excitement of that day acted more injuriously to the candidates who had been members of the late Assembly. It is scarcely to be wondered at, therefore, that Mr. Longley suffered a defeat in the battle of 1867, when he contested the seat for the House of Commons. Nor had the ferment been so far diminished as to enable him to obtain a seat in the Local Assembly in 1871, having with his colleague, T. W. Chesley, suffered another defeat. But with

a persistence that cannot but be regarded as hopeful he contested the seat for the Commons with Colonel Ray, who once more bore his standard to victory. Beaten, but not dispirited, he resolved to seek a seat in the Local House in 1873, and with Mr. William B. Troop for a colleague he once more appealed to his old constituency, and after a sharp conflict succeeded in snatching the honours from his opponents, Messieurs Bent and Parker. In 1878 he for the third time became a candidate in opposition to Mr. Ray for the seat in the Parliament of the Dominion, and succeeded, after a close canvass, in scoring a consoling victory, but retired from active public life at the expiration of that parliament in 1882, and died on the morning of his sixtieth birthday, February 22nd, 1884. Mr. Longley was on several occasions Chairman of the Baptist Convention of the Maritime Provinces.

As a speaker he is not to be placed among our Dominion orators, though he was considerably above mediocrity in that particular, and not without occasional eloquence and force, while his enunciation was distinct and his diction agreeable. He took a great interest in the improvement of stock, and the creation of cheese factories; and by word and deed acquired distinguished recognition as a friend to the great cause of Temperance, having at various times been appointed to first positions in the different organizations formed for the furtherance of its principles.

Three other members of the pre-confederation Parliament of Nova Scotia from this county, still survive among us, and the editor expresses a hope that the day is long distant when the "Memoir" of either of them will require to be written. T. D. Ruggles, Esq., Q.C., of Bridgetown (1857–1859), retired from the political arena after two years' service, and could never be induced to re-enter it. Hon. George Whitman, of Round Hill (1863–1867), and Hon. W. H. Ray, of Clementsport (1865-1867), are now useful and active members of the Legislative Council.

BIOGRAPHICAL AND GENEALOGICAL SKETCHES

OF THE

FAMILIES OF THE EARLY ENGLISH SETTLERS AND GRANTEES OF THE COUNTY OF ANNAPOLIS.

EXPLANATION OF SIGNS AND ABBREVIATIONS.

Signs : The small figure over a Christian name denotes the generation in which the person is removed from the ancestor from whom his descent is traced ; thus John [1] denotes that John is the ancestor, John,[2] or James,[2] the second generation, or son of the ancestor, and so on, for each generation.

The Roman numerals on the left of the names of children in a family are intended to denote the order of their births, while an occasional Arabic numeral still further to the left indicates that the person so numbered and his family will be more fully treated and the genealogy in his line expanded under that number further on.

Abbreviations : b., *born ;* d., *died,* or *dead ;* bu., *buried ;* m., *married ;* unm., *unmarried ;* ch., *child,* or *children ;* g. ch., *grandchild,* or *grandchildren ;* gt., *great ;* s., *son ;* dau., *daughter ;* w., *wife ;* wid., *widow :* bpd., *baptized ;* a., *aged.*

Armstrong. Richard Armstrong, b. 1749, according to tradition a native of Dundee, but who had lived in his boyhood and early youth on the border, came to Halifax in 1770 ; and it is said either the late Joseph Winniett, or the late Thomas Williams induced him to come to Annapolis, and employed him for a few years in farming operations. In 1776 he had removed to Granville for he was on duty in that year as one of the garrison in the old Scotch fort, in anticipation of an expected attack by troops from the revolted colonies. Here he became acquainted with Catherine Schafner, whom he married about 1777. Many descendants are in Digby and Kings counties and the other provinces, and one, a rising barrister, in Yarmouth.

i. John Adam, b. 1778, m. 1808, Lois Phinney : Ch. : 1, Zebulon Phinney, b. 1810, m. Margaret Cochran ; 2, Richard, b. 1812, m. Mary Foster (dau. of Samuel) ; 3, Caleb, b. 1815, d. unm. ; 4, Henrietta, b. 1818, m. Rev. Cornelius Kennedy ; 5, Sampson, b. 1821, d. unm.

ii. James, b. 1780, m. 1806, Ann Phinney: Ch.: 1, William, b. 1806; 2, Catharine, m. Hopkins; 3, Barnabas; 4, Calvin, b. 1819, m.

iii. Richard, b. 1782, m. 1804, Ann Walker (dau. of Peter): Ch.: 1, John, b. 1805, m. (1st) Ruth Dunn, (2nd) Lucinda McBride; 2, Sutton, b. 1806, m. Mary Ann Curry; 3, Walker, b. 1809, m. Eliza Bishop; 4, Eliza Ann, m. James Lynam Marshall; 5, Stilman, m. Louisa Lovelace; 6, James, m. (1st) Elizabeth Pearce, (2nd) Elizabeth Morse; 7, Catharine, m. Reuben Hyland; 8, Frances, unm.

iv. George, b. 1784, m. 1814, Salome Whitman: Ch.: 1, Edward Whitman, b. 1815, m. (1st) 1837, Lucy Worster Halfyard, (2nd) 1869, Eliza Connor; 2, George, b. 1817, unm.; 3, Anna, b. 1819; 4, Elwood, b. 1822, m. Mary Eliza Kent; 5, Edward, b. 1824, m. Sarah Ann Currill, the parents of Ernest H. Armstrong, Esq., barrister; 6, Adelaide, b. 1827; 7, Oldham, m. 1846, Dorothy Rice; 8, Schafner, m. Porter; 9, Asa, m. (1st) Ann Murphy, (2nd) Jane Furness; 10, Thomas Ansley, m. Sophia Murphy.

v. William, m. (1st) 1812, Bertha Thorne, (2nd) Ann Milbury: Ch.: 1, Hannah, b. 1813, m. William McMillan; 2, Jonathan W., b. 1814, m.; 3, James W., b. 1817, m.; 4, Sands, b. 1819, m. Jane Williams; 5, Stephen, m. Jane Clowry; (by 2nd wife): 6, William Henry, m. Nancy Elliott; 7, Bertha Ann, m. Murray Elliott; 8, Sarah E., m. Aaron Bolsor; 9, Maria Sands, m. William Slocomb; 10, Charles I., m. Amelia Rumsey; 11, David H., m. Maria S. Marshall.

vi. Francis, m. (1st) Nancy Hutton, (2nd) Mary Gilliland, *née* Barnes: Ch.: 1, James, m. Margaret Robinson; 2, George, m. Mary Creighton; 3, Francis; 4, Robert, d. unm.; 5, John; 6, Jane, m. Baxter; (by 2nd wife): 7, Charles Ansley, m. Sybil, dau. of Calvin Chute; 8, George Troop, m. Abbie Elizabeth, dau. of T. Odell; 9, Catharine, b. 1825, m. Thomas Ross, J.P.; 10, Elsie, m. (1st) Henry Taylor, (2nd) Philip Taylor; 11, James; 12, Frank, m. (1st) Sarah Cossaboom, (2nd) Hannah Thurber.

vii. Charles, d. unm.

viii. Edward, d. unm.

ix. Nelson, m. 1825, Mary Bolsor: Ch.: 1, Alice, b. 1826, m. Peter Berteaux; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1828, m. James Harold; 3, Abigail, b. 1831, m. Benjamin Daniels; 4, Sarah, b. 1835, m. William Somerby; 5, Eliza Emily, b. 1837, m. Simon Goverson; 6, Lois Ann, b. 1839, m. Charles A. Drake; 7, Catherine, b. 1842, m. Hammond.

x. Abigail, m. Anthony Wilkins.

xi. Elizabeth, m. (1st) James Erskine, (2nd) William Mumford.

Bailey. (*By the Editor.*) Rev. Jacob Bailey was born in Rowley, Mass., in 1731, of poor parents, and graduated at Harvard, where he was a classmate of John Adams, Sir John Wentworth, and other eminent men. He at first taught school, then became a Congregational minister, and, becoming impressed with the claims of the Episcopal order and authority, he went to England and was ordained in 1760. When the revolution broke out he was in charge of an Episcopal Church in Pownalborough, Me. Unable to agree and unite with the majority of his neighbours he was soon subjected to persecution and ill-treatment of a most revolting character On September 7th, 1774, he started

for Boston, and his diary of this journey says: "September 8th, lodged at Williams'; ill-treated. 23rd, mobbed at Brunswick; got home at night. 26th, abroad; fled from the mob, lodged at George Meirs'." He kept himself concealed there for two days to avoid the fury of these champions of political liberty and liberty of conscience. Under date October 17th of that year he says of the situation of the Episcopal ministry of that day, "They are daily persecuted with provoking insults, loaded with shocking execrations, and alarmed with the most bloody menaces, and that not by the meaner rabble, but by persons of the highest distinction; and even those who heretofore were in the greatest repute for moderation, piety and tenderness, have now lost every sentiment of humanity, behave with the wildest fury and destruction, and breathe forth nothing but slaughter and destruction against all who are unwilling to engage in their extravagant schemes." Late in December, 1775, or in January, 1776, it was proposed in a public meeting that a Liberty-pole be erected in front of his church, and that if he refused to consecrate it he should be whipped around it; but the motion was lost by a majority of two. The malcontents were satisfied on this occasion by shooting his heifer and killing seven of his sheep out of twelve. In October, 1777, after being concealed in his own house, he managed to escape to Boston, leaving his family in distressing circumstances. On one occasion his wife and children narrowly escaped murder. In 1778 he took refuge among some Loyalists in Boston, and thus describes his dress before a friend in that city furnished him with "a handsome coat, jacket and breeches": "an old rusty, thread-bare black coat which had been turned and the button-holes worked with thread almost white, with a number of breaches about the elbows; a jacket of the same, much fractured about the button-holes and hanging loose, occasioned by the leanness of my carcase which was at the time greatly emaciated by the constant exercise of temperance; a pair of breeches constructed of coarse bed-tick of a dirty yellow colour, and so uncouth as to suffer several repairs, in particular a perpendicular patch upon each knee of a different complexion from the original piece," etc. In October of that year he was "presented" by the grand jury for preaching "treason," the charge being based on his having read one of the regular lessons of the day, Num. xvi. 26. After being twice fired at, and several times driven to roam about disguised, he escaped with his family to Halifax. On his landing, he and the party who came with him were struck by the inquisitive gaze of the people of the town, who "flocked toward the water to indulge their curiosity." To prevent, "a multitude of impertinent interrogations," he stood on the quarter-deck and exclaimed aloud: "Gentlemen, we are a company of fugitives from Kennebec in New England, driven by famine and persecution to take

refuge among you, and therefore I must entreat your candour and compassion to excuse the meanness and singularity of our dress." In October, 1779, he settled in Cornwallis, where he remained as pastor of the Church of England until 1782, when he came to Annapolis, and was rector of St. Luke's Church until his death in 1808. He married, August 1761, Sarah, daughter of Dr. John Weeks, of Hampton, N.H., sister of Rev. Joshua Wingate Weeks. She died 1817, aged 75. Children who survived him:

i. Charles Percy, b. May 3, 1777, Captain of Grenadiers, killed at battle of Chippewa, July 5, 1815.
ii. Rebecca Lavinia, b. 1780, d. Jan. 4, 1827.
iii. Charlotte Maria, bpd. Feb. 3, 1784, d. June, 1857.
iv. Thomas Henry, bpd. May 11, 1786, m. Elizabeth Ward (English), d. March 31, 1824. She d. June, 1882, aged 94. He was prominent as a militia officer, barrack-master, etc., and had ch.: 1, Mary Eliza, b. Sept. 29, 1812, d. June, 1827; 2, Elizabeth, b. Dec. 17, 1815, d. Oct., 1832.; 3, Charlotte Wybault, b. Dec. 5, 1817, d. 1889; 4, Martha Ann, b. Aug. 27, 1819; 5, Sarah Jane, b. March 30, 1821.
v. William Gilbert, b. June 8, 1788, was a gifted and successful lawyer; m. 1809, Elizabeth, 2nd dau. of Col. James De Lancey, and d. May 26, 1822. She d. Dec., 1836, aged 47. Ch.: 1, William, b. 1813, d.; 2, Maria Eliza, m. Jan. 23, 1834, Peter Bonnett; 3, Mary Freer, b. 1820; had also by a second wife (Maria Mence). Hafiz Bailey, removed to New York, and Stathern Bailey, long a Justice of the Peace, who has left a highly respectable posterity in the county.
vi. Elizabeth Ann, bpd. Jan., 1792, m. Jan. 14, 1816, James Whitman.

Baker. John Baker was a descendant, perhaps grandson, of Thomas Baker, who emigrated from Norwich, England. (There was a Thomas Baker, born in Kent, where his ancestors had held land since the days of Henry III., and who came to America in 1635, and settled at Roxbury —a leading man, and friend of John Eliot, the apostle to the Indians. Many of his posterity have become noted. In 1637 John Baker, born in Norwich, grocer, aged 39, with wife Elizabeth, aged 31, and children Elizabeth, John and Thomas, and "4 saruants," came over to Charlestown, being with a number of others chartered to sail in the *John and Dorothy*, and the *Rose*. This is evidently the one from whom our author derives the Bakers of Wilmot. See Drake's "Founders of New England," p. 44.—Ed.) He first settled about 1760, on some of the vacated French lands in the Annapolis valley, but sold out and removed to the eastern division, and finally settled in Wilmot.* He married in Massachusetts, Persis Wheeler, and had children:

i. John, m. Mary Reagh: Ch.: 1, Calvin, m. Charlotte Tupper; 2, Luther, m. Elizabeth Stronach; 3, Henry, m. Eunice Bowlby, *née* Tupper; 4, Ward, m. Hannah Saunders; 5, John, m. (1st) Elizabeth Gates, (2nd) Isabel Smith, *née* Fales; 6, Mary, d. unm.

* He is said to have been a brother of Col. Jacob Baker, of Philadelphia, whose estate is now worth $40,000,000.

ii. Judith, m. John Gates.
iii. Jacob, m. Sarah Fales: Ch.: 1, Manley, d. unm; 2, Mary, m. (1st) Edward Goucher, (2nd) John Randall (son of David); 3, Betsey, m. Issachar Harris; 4, Maria, m. John Baker; 5, Marshall, d. unm.; 6, Seraph, m. Alexander Clark; 7, Harriet, m. Andrew Harris; 8, Thomas, m. Mary Berteaux; 9, Hepzibah, d. unm.; 10, Susan, m. Samuel Downie; 11, Jacob Gilbert, m. (1st) Mary Clarke, (2nd) Rachel Downie.
iv. Sarah, m. James Moody.
v. Hepzibah, m. Jonas Gates.
vi. Henry, m. (1st) — Crocker, (2nd) — Ward: Ch.: 1, John, m. Maria Baker; 2, Elizabeth, m. Robert Sproul; 3, Susan, m. John McGregor; 4, Mary, m. Thomas Cousins; 5, Sophia, m. Elliott Sproule; 6, Azubah, m. William Tupper; 7, Eunice, m. Henry Pearce; 8, Tamar, m. Isaac Spinney; (by 2nd wife): 9, Nelson, m. Mary Bowlby (no issue); 10, Jacob, d. unm.; 11, Henry, m. Charlotte Ray.
vii. Joab, m. 1804, Mary Nichols: Ch.: 1, William, b. 1805, d. unm.; 2, Jane, b. 1807; 3, William, b. 1809, m. Ann McGregor; 4, James Parker, b. 1812, m. Caroline Banks; 5, Robert, b. 1815, m. Catharine Ward; 6, Margaret, b. 1817; 7, Charlotte, b. 1817.

Balcom. John and Isaac Balcom were probably sons of Silas Balcom, who came with, or shortly before, Samuel, presumably his brother, one being in Granville in 1770, the other three years earlier. They were probably sons of Samuel and grandsons of Henry and Elizabeth, who were living in Massachusetts in 1668, and came among the settlers of 1760. The name is derived from the Celtic *bal*, a town, and the old English *combe*, a little valley, and would indicate that the remote ancestor from whom it was derived was a resident of some place known as "the village of the valley." The name occurs in the list of the soldiers sent from the old colonies to the head of the Bay of Fundy in 1755, for the purpose of seizing the French region, and among those who participated in the final capture of Louisburg, in 1768. The main branches of the family settled at Paradise. Among the descendants of these two brothers have been several medical men and clergymen, and the more recent members of the family have dispersed themselves into various regions on the continent. Samuel Balcom married Mary Brigham in Massachusetts, and had children born in this county:

i. Henry, b. 1768, d. 1850, m. Ann Morse, who was b. 1770, d. 1860, and had ch.: 1, Jonas, b. 1797, m. Salome Parker; 2, Ann, b. 1799, m. (1st) Silas Parker, (2nd) Joseph Wade; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1803; 4, Lucy, b. 1805, m. Jacob Durland, jun.; and probably one or more others.
ii. Jonas, b. 1770, m. Miss McLeay, of East Halifax County, and was ancestor of the late Henry Balcom, formerly M.P.P. for Halifax East.
iii. Reuben, b. 1772, m., 1796, Phœbe Messenger, and had ch.: 1, Lydia, b. 1797, m. Jacob Durland; 2, Mary, b. 1799, m. Rev. Obed Parker; 3, Samuel, b. 1801, m. Lucy Parker; 4, Ebenezer, b. 1803, m. Helen Longley; 5, Maria, b. 1806, d. 1806; 6, Reuben, b. 1811, m. Dorcas Emily Longley; 7, Lovicia, b. 1814, d. unm.; 8, Eliza, b. 1816, m. Obadiah Neily; 9, William Elder, b. 1819, m. (in N. B.).

iv. Joseph Brigham, b. 1774, m., 1801, Phœbe Tufts, and had ch.: 1, Silas, b. 1802, m. (1st) Ann VanBuskirk; (2nd) Amberman, wid.; 2, Major, b. 1804, m. Mary Roax; 3, Lavinia, b. 1806, m. John Remson; 4, Aurelia, b. 1808, d. unm.; 5, William, b. 1810, d. unm.; 6, David Harris, b. 1812, m. Mary Willett; 7, Seraphina Ann, b. 1815, m. Paul Amberman; 8, Phillis, b. 1816, d. unm.; 9, Theresa, b. 1819, d. unm.; 10, Leonora, b. 1821, m. Jacob Durland, jun.; 11, Joseph Allen, b. 1823, m. twice; 12, Samuel Judson, b. 1827, m. Elizabeth Banks; 13, Jonas W. H., b. 1829, m. Mary Banks.
v. Sarah, b. 1776, m. George Starratt.
vi. Asa, b. 1778, d. unm.
vii. Lucy, b. 1780, m. 1803, Abednego Parker.
viii. ——, b. 1782, m. John McCormick.
ix. Lydia, b. 1780, m. Abijah Parker.

Silas Balcom married Susan —— and had children:

i. Abel, m. (2nd) Mary Valentine.
ii. Rachel, m. Benjamin Harris.
iii. John, b. 1776, m. 1792, Ellen Gilmore, b. 1772, and had ch.: 1, William, b. 1792, d. unm.; 2, James, b. 1794, m. 1816, Mary Potter, b. 1796; 3, Mary, b. 1796, m. John Potter; 4, Margaret Ann, b. 1799, m. Joseph Potter; 5, Susan, b. 1801, m. Ambrose Bent (no issue); 6, John, m. (1st) Catherine Lowe, (2nd) Merritt; 7, Eleanor, m. William Lent; 8, Sarah Ann, m. Jesse Warne.
iv. Olivia, m. Joseph Potter.
v. Mary, m. John Hardwick.
vi. Abigail, m. John Carty.
vii. Lucy, m. — Merritt.
viii. Susan, d. unm.
ix. Eunice, d. unm.
x. Isaac, m. 1808, and had ch.: William, m. 1806, Ruth McKenzie.
xi. Sarah, m. Abraham Lowe.
xii. Joseph, m. 1808, Sarah Wright, and had ch.: 1, Emmeline, b. 1809; 2, William Henry, b. 1811; 3, James Stanley, b. 1813; 4, John, b. 1815; 5, Joseph; 6, Allen, b. 1820; 7, Henrietta, b. 1822.

Baltzor, or Bolsor. Christopher Baltzor, with his wife, two sons and a daughter, came with the German settlers to Lunenburg, and in 1764 removed to Granville. His sons Peter and Christopher removed to Wilmot, the latter having sold out the farm now owned and occupied by Henry Calnek. Christopher married in Germany, Barbara, who after his death, m. (2nd) Adam Schafner (his 2nd wife), and d. July, 1782. They had children:

i. Christopher, m. Lydia Woodbury (dau. of Jonathan, sen., M.D.) and had ch.: 1, Foster, m. (1st) Lydia Bass (dau. of Alden), (2nd) Jane McNeily; 2, Peter, m. Phebe Clark; 3, Jonathan Woodbury, m. Ann S. Thomas; 4, Hiram, m. (1st) Louise Pineo, (2nd) Minetta Pineo; 5, Lydia, m. Samuel McBride; 6, Amy H., m. William English; 7, Mahala, m. William Thomas; 8, Horatia Nelson, m. Zachariah Daniels; 9, Hannah, m. John Margeson; 10, Love, m. Francis Burns; 11, Margaret, m. Asaph Daniels.

ii. Peter, m. Catharine Zeiglar, and had ch.: 1, John, m. Sarah ; 2, Frederic, m. Alice Oliver ; 3, Zeiglar, m. Susan Dickson ; 4, Mary, m. 1795, Thomas E. Berteaux ; 5, Dorothy, m. Jonas Rice ; 6, Elizabeth, m. Simon Riley ; 7, Hannah, m. — Porter ; 8, Andrew, m. Pamela Worthylake ; 9, Christopher, d. unm.

Bancroft. Jeremiah Bancroft was descended from John Bancroft, who, with his wife and children, came over from London in 1632, and settled in the colony of Massachusetts Bay, and was the ancestor of Bancroft, the great American historian. The line of descent was from John,[1] through Thomas,[2] Thomas,[3] Samuel,[4] and Samuel,[5] who married Sarah Holt. Samuel,[6] who married Sarah Poole in Massachusetts, came here with the Massachusetts settlers in 1761, or perhaps a little later, with his father and brothers and sisters, who all shortly afterwards returned to Massachusetts, except Hannah and Jeremiah. The former married John Starratt, of Granville, and the latter settled near Round Hill. Jeremiah, born 1763, married 1789, Sarah Payson, daughter of Jonathan, and had children.

i. Samuel, b. 1789, m. Margaret Davis, and had ch.: 1, Sarah, m. Captain Baker ; 2, Margaret, m. Gillis ; 3, Almira, m. Fowler.
ii. Elizabeth Tilestone, b. 1791.
iii. Ann, b. 1793, m. Samuel Starratt.
iv. Elisha, b. 1795, m. June 21, 1838, Sarah Ann Austen, and had ch.: 1, Lucilla, b. Apr. 2, 1839, d. unm.; 2, Joseph Austen, d. unm.; 3, Rev. James William Johnston, b. Aug. 11, 1844, m. Mary Fowler; 4, Samuel Elisha, b. Dec. 15, 1847, m. (1st) Alice Mills, (2nd) Anna Laura Parker ; 5, Edmund Crawley, b. Feb. 5, 1849, d. unm.; 6, Sarah S., b. Aug. 12, 1851, m. Charles Davitt.
v. William, b. 1798, m. June 11, 1821, Rebecca Hamilton, and had ch.: 1, William Allen, b. 1824, m. 1845, Huldah Ricketson ; 2, Elisha L., b. Aug. 4, 1831, m. Louisa LeCain.
vi. Joseph, b. 1800, m. Jane Fitzrandolph, and had ch.: 1, Henry Shaw, m. Penelope Lake ; 2, Caroline D., d. unm.; 3, Edward, d. unm.; 4, Mary, d. unm.; 5, Joseph, m. Emma Hoskin, wid., *née* Denton.
vii. Handley, b. 1802.
viii. Sarah, b. 1804, unm.
ix. Caroline, b. 1808, m. Adolphus Payson.
x. Rev. Jeremiah, b. 1811, m. (1st) Ann Starratt, (2nd) Augusta Marshall, and had ch.: 1, Edwin A., m. Minerva Hamilton ; 2, Bessie, m. William Dimock ; 3, Lucius B., m. Jane Burgess ; 4, Samuel B., d. unm.; 7, Mary Emma, d. unm.; 8, Clarence Payson, d. unm.; (by 2nd wife): Ernest Marshall, m. Rachel Mosher.
xi. Maria, b. 1814, unm.

Banks. 1. Richard Banks, the immigrant ancestor of this family, came to America and settled at Scituate, in Plymouth Colony. He may be the nephew Richard, son of William, mentioned in the will of John Banckes, of London, 1630. He was afterward sent to lay out and organize new townships in what is now Maine, settled in York County

in that province, and held several important public offices there. He married Elizabeth, daughter of John and Elizabeth Alcocke, of York. From them, through John,[2] who married Elizabeth, daughter of Peter Turbat Moses,[3] who married Ruth, daughter of Elias and Magdalen Weare, came Joshua,[4] born September 13, 1713, married September 18, 1737, Mary Mutchmore, who, with all his family, came to this county in 1760. His son Moses, on his marriage, settled in Wilmot, and Joshua followed him some years later. Children, besides others :

(2) i. Moses, b. 1738, or 1739.
(3) ii. Joshua, bpd. Nov. 4, 1750.
iii. Joseph, b. May 11, 1752, said to have settled in eastern New Jersey.
iv. Elizabeth, b. July 20, 1755, m. Phineas Graves, 8 ch.
v. Jeremiah, b. about 1756, d. aged 80, unm.

2. Moses Banks, b. 1738, m. (1st) 1764, Jane Spinney, (2nd) 1778, Judith Saunders. Children :

i. Ruth, b. 1764.
ii. Elizabeth, b. 1766, m. James Austins.
iii. Ann, b. 1768.
iv. Moses, b. about 1770, m. Olive Morton : Ch.: 1, Phineas, m. Eunice Dodge ; 2, Joseph, m. Hannah Ward ; 3, Edmund, m. Eunice Morton ; 4, Maria, m. George Duncanson ; 5, John, m. Elizabeth Beals ; 6, William, m. Harriet Patterson ; 7, George, m. (1st) Sarah Taylor ; (2nd) Nancy Marshall ; 8, Emily, m. James Duncanson.
v. Richard, b. 1773, m. Nancy Patterson.
vi. Joseph.
vii. Benjamin.

By second wife :

viii. Timothy Saunders, m. 1809, Margaret Bass : Ch.: *1, Caroline, b. about 1809, m. James Parker Baker ; 2, John, b. 1811, m. Ann Spinney (dau. of Joseph) ; 3, Mary, b. 1813, m. Benaiah Spinney ; 4, Alden, b. 1815, m. Maria Banks ; 5, David, b. 1817, m. Maria Patterson ; 6, Margaret, b. 1819, m. John Burns ; 7, Amoret, b. 1821, m. William Henry Harris at Bear River ; 8, Joseph, b. 1823, d. 1876, m. Dorothy Payson, d. 1876 ; 9, Betsey, b. 1826, m. James, son of John Banks ; 10, Dimock, b. 1825, m. Elizabeth Goucher (dau. of Edward).
ix. Eliphalet, m. Hannah Saunders : Ch.: 1, Timothy S., m. Mary Burpee ; 2, Henry, m. Mary Cropley ; 3, David, m. Mary Beaufry, New Brunswick ; 4, Judith, m. David Morine ; 5, Martha, m. John Robar ; 6, Abraham, m. Sarah Rice ; 7, Thomas, m. Maria Ernst ; 8, Obadiah, m. Margaret Riley ; 9, Ezekiel, m. Helen Baker (no issue).
x. Jeremy, d. unm.
xi. Judith, d. young.
xii. Jane, m. Daniel Whitman.
xiii. Judith, unm.

* The author of the "Chute Genealogies" makes Eliza, m. John Crocker, the eldest, necessarily postponing the births of Caroline and John, and says Alden m. (1st) Hannah Cogswell, (2nd) Seraphina Patterson, (3rd) Maria Whitman, *née* Banks.

3. Joshua Banks, b. 1749, m. 1776, Dorothea Craft, and d. 1846, aged 96. Children:

i. George, b. 1778, m. 1805, Elizabeth Nelson: Ch.: 1, Hannah, b. 1809, m. Burton Chute; 2, Sarah, b. 1811, m. Silas Jackson; 3, James Nelson, b. 1814, m. Dorothea Beals; 4, Craft, b. 1816, m. Sophia Chute, *née* Marshall; 5, Frederic, b. 1819, m. (1st) Naomi Marshall, (2nd) Lois Chute; 6, Eliza Ann, b. 1821, m. William Jackson; 7, Eleanor, b. 1826, m. (1st) Sidney Marshall, (2nd) Samuel Moore; 8, Isaac, b. 1828, m. Eliza Foster; 9, Margaret Ann, b. 1831, m. Howard Mayhew.

ii. John, b. 1779, m. 1811, Mary, dau. of Joel Farnsworth: Ch.: 1, William, b. 1812, m. (1st) Rachel Elliott, (2nd) Mary Foster; 2, Handley, b. 1814, m. Armanilla Marshall; 3, Ann, b. 1816, d. 1819; 4, Abigail, b. 1819, d. unm.; 5, Margaret, b. 1820, m. Rev. Henry Archilles; 6, Maria, b. 1822, m. (1st) Wm. H. Roach, (2nd) Archibald Burns; 7, James, b. 1824, m. Elizabeth Banks; 8, Henry, b. 1826, m. (1st) Rebecca Vidito, (2nd) Rebecca Hoffman; 9, Mary Eliza, b. 1828, m. Weston Johnston.

iii. Henry, b. 1781, d. 1878, m. 1804, Thankful Farnsworth, b. 1786, d. 1868: Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1805, m. Charles Foster; 2, Joel Farnsworth, b. 1807, m. Deborah Slocomb; 3, Joshua, b. 1810, d. 1843, m. Catharine Slocomb; 4, Caleb, b. 1812, d. 1831, unm.; 5, Henry, b. 1814, m. (1st) Catharine Durland, (2nd) Wilhelmina Congdon; 6, Louisa, b. 1817, m. John W. Gilliatt; 7, Frances, b. 1819, m. Gideon Beardsley; 8, Rebecca, b. 1823, m. Parker Neily; 9, Susan, b. 1825, m. George Neily; 10, Caleb Ansley, b. 1830, m. Caroline Rafuse.

iv. James, b. 1782, m. 1810, Sarah Rice: Ch.: 1, Silas, b. 1811, d. 1836, unm.; 2, Joseph, b. 1812, m. Leah Durland; 3, James, b. 1812, m. (1st) Margaret Moody, (2nd) ———; 4, Eliza, b. 1816, m. Thomas Elliott; 5, Dorothea, b. 1818, d. 1819; 6, Jacob, b. 1822, m. Ruth Ann Burns; 7, Sidney, m. Sarah, dau. of Wilbur Parker.

v. Christopher, b. 1785, m. (1st) 1811, Phœbe Durland, (2nd) Jerusha, dau. Isaac Longley: Ch.: 1, Eliza, b. 1812, m. Reis Worthylake; 2, Cornelia, b. 1815, m. John McKenzie; 3, Charles, b. 1816, m. (1st) Sarah Ann McKenzie, (2nd) Angelina Whitman, *née* Slocomb; 4, William, b. 1818, m. Hannah Rankin; 5, Angelina, b. 1820, m. Israel Brooks; 6, George, b. 1823, m. Rebecca Messenger; 7, Maria, b. 1825, m. William Crocker; 8, John Ward, b. 1827, m. Rachel McKenzie; 9, Russell, b. 1829, m. Lovicia Marshall; 10, Sarah, b. 1831, m. Solomon Charlton; 11, Joseph Clark, d. unm.

vi. Hannah, b. 1786, m. Elijah Beals.

vii. Frances, b. 1788, d. 1803.

viii. Mary, b. 1791, d. 1803.

ix. Elizabeth, b. 1793, m. Bayard Payson.

x. Jacob, b. 1794, m. Elizabeth Witt: Ch.: 1, Louisa, m. John Wilson; 2, Sarah Bethiah, m. Albert Sproul; 3, John, m. Jane Neily; 4, George Craft, m. Sarah Ann Durland; 5, Samuel, d. unm.; 6, Ambrose, m. (1st) Sarah Eliza Whitman, (2nd) Matilda Whitman, (3rd) Armanilla Sproul; 7, Maria, m (1st) Isaac Whitman, (2nd) Alden Banks.

xi. Frederic, b. 1797, m. 1819, Hannah Graves: Ch.: 1, Philo, b. 1820, d. unm.; 2, Gilbert, b. 1822, unm.; 3, Alexander, b. 1824, unm.; 4, Israel, b. 1827, d. unm.; 5, John, b. 1829, m. Rachel Wilson; 6, Elizabeth, b. 1831, m. Aaron Carlton; 7, Phineas, b. 1834, m. Harriet Wilson; 8, Eliza Jane, b. 1836, m. William Dalton; 9, Margaret, b. 1840, m. Curtis Dalton.

xii. William, b. 1800, m. about 1830, Margaret Ann Warwick : Ch : 1, Mary Eliza, m. Des Brisay Balcom ; 2, Jessie, b. 1835, m. Thomas Chesley (son of Samuel).

Another family of BANKS is noticed by the author in his MSS., but their origin and the usual biographical note of the ancestor are wanting. Thomas Wheeler Banks married toward the close of last century, Sarah, daughter of Abel Wheelock, and had children :

i. John, b. Sept. 12, 1797, m. 1826, Nancy Benjamin : Ch.: 1, Ezekiel Cleaveland, b. March 6, 1827, m. Susan Maria Dodge ; 2, Jacob b. Dec. 2, 1828, m. Bethia Robinson ; 3, Thomas, d. unm.; 4, Elizabeth, d. unm.; 5, Mary Salome, m. Jonas W. H. Balcom ; 6, Sarah Amanda, m. James A. Cox ; 7, Ingraham Bill, m. Mary McPhee.
ii. William, m. Harriet Wheelock (no issue).
iii. Sarah, m. Andrew Brown.
iv. Abel, m. (1st) Susan Freeman, (2nd) — Morse (no issue).
v. Elizabeth, m. William Clark Felch.
vi. Rufus, m. Mary Ann Heming : Ch.: 1, Asahel, m. Sarah Forbes ; 2, Alice Maud, m. Reis Goucher ; 3, Sarah Elizabeth, m. Charles Walcott ; 4, Ingram Rufus, d. unm.; 5, Thomas, d. unm.; 6, Edward Manning, unm.; 7, Belle, d. unm.; 8, Minnie Maria, unm.; 9, Annie, d. unm.
vii. Sophia, m. Benjamin Wheelock.
viii. Thomas, m. Salome Benjamin : Ch.: 1, Amelia, m. Francis Smith ; 2, Augusta, m. Manning Armstrong ; 3, Mary Eliza, d. unm. ; 4, Annie, m. John Foster ; 5, William Harvey, d. unm.; 6, Charles Thomas, d. unm.
ix. Clarinda, m. Robert Berteaux.
x. Zechariah, m. Mary Dodge : Ch. : 1, Lydia Adelia, m. Albert Dodge; 2, Thomas, unm. ; 3, Emma, m. Marius Cooley ; 4, Jacob, b. 1828.

BASS. The Bass family of this county, of whom JOSEPH BASS was the progenitor, was of considerable distinction. John Bass, probably grandson of the immigrant ancestor, was born at Newbury, Mass., about 1700, and educated at Harvard. Joseph and John, two of his sons, came to this county as permanent settlers in 1783 ; the former was a grantee in the township of Annapolis, and lived near Clark's Ferry, remarkable for his hospitality, especially to members of the English Church ; he d. 1826; the latter settled in or near Liverpool, Queens County. Edward Bass, D.D., his other son, b. 1726, d. 1803, was the first Episcopal Bishop of Massachusetts. In this province the name is now often spelt Barss. Joseph Bass, b. about 1730, m. (1st) Elizabeth Crowell, (2nd) Lydia Alden, and had children :

i. William, d. unm. at Nictaux, aged about 80.
ii. Joseph, d. unm. (killed in an encounter with pirates).
iii. John, a school-teacher.
iv. Alden, m. Christina Burns, and had ch. : 1, Mary, m. Caleb Slocomb ; 2, Margery, m. John Dugan ; 3, Lydia, m. William Rhodes ; 4, Elizabeth, m. Foster Bolser ; 5, Margaret, m.

Timothy S. Banks ; 6, Joseph, m. Elizabeth Robinson, and had ch.: *William*, d. young ; *Margaret*, m. William Morton ; *George*, m. Sarah A. Brown ; *Joseph T.*, m. Hannah Starratt ; *Robert*, m. Mary Ann Nichols.

v. Elizabeth, m. Rev. Charles Scott.
vi. Sarah, d. at Nictaux, aged over 70.
vii. Margaret, m. Timothy Saunders Banks.
viii. Edward, m. and lived in Newbury Port, Mass.
ix. Thankful, d. unm. at Bridgetown, over 80.

Bath. John Bath, of Yorkshire, came with his uncle, William Clark, sailing from Hull, aged about 19, bringing his uncle's horses overland by the mere trail which then existed from Windsor to Annapolis, while the latter with his family and farm tools came around in a schooner. He married in 1776, Keziah Hill, a daughter of one of the earliest Massachusetts settlers ; and the lot on which he lived in Granville is still owned by his descendants. He was the first to convey the mails to Halifax on horseback ; previously they had been carried on foot. He died Nov. 3, 1816, aged 65. Children :

i. Elizabeth, b. 1778.
ii. John, jun., b. 1779, m. (1st) 1803, Elizabeth Troop, (2nd) 1820, Phebe Troop, and had ch.: 1, Hannah, b. 1804 ; 2, Keziah Ann, b. 1806, d. 1807 ; 3, Keziah Ann, b. 1809, m. James Edwin Reed; 4, John Fletcher, b. 1811, m. Elizabeth Hall ; 5, Mary Eliza, b. 1813, m. Gilbert Bent ; 6, Jacob Valentine, b. 1818, d. unm. ; 7, Elizabeth, b. 1822, m. Charles Fitzrandolph (2nd w.); 8, Eliza, b. 1823 ; 9, Abner, b. 1825, m. — Chipman; 10, Henrietta M., b. 1833 ; 11, Robert.
iii. Mary, b. 1783.
iv. Tamar, b. 1785, m. 1806, Valentine Troop.
v. Hannah, b. 1787, d. 1802.
vi. Robert, b. 1789, m. 1812, Minetta Willoughby : Ch.: 1, Augustus Willoughby, b. 1814 ; 2, Henrietta Maria, b. 1815, m. James Longley ; 3, Robert Hall, b. 1819, m. Eliza Ann Clark ; 4, Samuel Henry, b. 1821 ; 5, John Edward, b. 1827, m. Elizabeth Wade ; 6, Albert Leander, b 1829.
vii. Henrietta Cooper, b. 1792, m. Abner Troop.

Beals. Asa Beals was a Loyalist of 1783, probably from Massachusetts. William Beals came among the Pilgrims to Plymouth in 1621, in the *Fortune*, the next vessel after the *Mayflower* ; and there was an Asa Beale in Plymouth, 1720. Our present subject was born in 1755, and was descended probably from John Beals who came to Hingham, Mass., from England, 1638, through the line of Jeremiah,[2] Jeremiah, jun.,[3] Andrew,[4] and Abel, sen.[5] He was nephew by marriage of Isaac Kent, whose daughter, Abigail Kent, he married here, and settled in the eastern part of the township, where he was often employed as Commissioner for laying out and constructing roads. He married (2nd) Mary Miller, widow of Richard Clarke. He gave a farm to each of his eight sons, and to each of his two sons-in-law. He died 1820. Children :

i. Andrew, m. Charlotte Charlton, and had ch.: 1, Nancy, m. Elijah Reed; 2, Henry Charlton, m. 1831, Sarah Felch; 3, Jerusha, m. Micah Bent; 4, Elizabeth, m. (1st) Edward Henshaw, (2nd) — Winchester; 5, Mary, m. John McGregor; 6, James, m. 1837, Mary Ann Elliott; 7, Andrew, m. Widow Gertrude Palmer, *née* Smith; 8, Robert, m. Naomi Grant; 9, John, m. Elizabeth Jefferson; 10, Caroline, d. unm.; 11, Emily, m. Nehemiah Beals; 12, Samuel, m. Ellen Powers.

ii. Abel Beals (3rd) jun., m. Susannah Hennebury: Ch.: 1, William, m. 1829, Mary Hannam; 2, Seth, m. — Fitzrandolph; 3, Micah, m. Jerusha Beals; 4, Elizabeth, m. Frank Egerton; 5, Charlotte, unm.; 6, Celia, m. (1st) Francis Gray, (2nd) Benjamin Rathburn, (3rd) Edward Martin; 7, Mary, m. William Margeson; 8, Simon, d. unm.; 9, Richard, d. unm.

iii. Seth, d. 1797, unm.

iv. Stephen, m. Nancy Henshaw, and had ch.: 1, Samuel, b. 1815, m. Sarah Hersey; 2, George F., b. 1816, m. Ann Boomer; 3, Sarah Jane, b. 1818, m. Micah Kent; 4, Stephen, b. 1820, m. Charlotte Boomer; 5, Edward, b. 1822, m. Sarah Chute; 6, Elijah, b. 1823, m. Lucretia Rand; 7, Isaac, b. 1827, m. Louisa Jane Chute; 8, Lucinda, b. 1825, d. 1828; 9, Priscilla, m. Joseph Crewson; 10, Lucy, m. John Beals.

v. Isaac, b. 1803, m. 1820, Catherine Kent, and had ch.: 1, John Strong, b. 1822, m. Sarah Jane Dennison; 2, Mary Eliza, b. 1824, m. Asa Whitman; 3, Nehemiah, b. 1827, m. Emily Beals; 4, Christina, b. 1833, m. Robert H. Hutt; 5, Isaac, b. 1837, m. Mary E. Gates.

vi. Joshua, m. 1807, Rebecca Taylor (dau. of James): Ch.: 1, Abigail, b. 1809, m. Frederick Taylor; 2, Sarah Sutcliffe, b. 1811, m. John Whitman; 3, Amy, b. 1813, m. Dennis Bent; 4, Isaac, b. 1815, m. Mary Harris; 5, Stephen, b. 1817, m. Mary Ann Payson; 6, Rachel, born 1819, m. William H. Harris; 7, Rebecca, b. 1821, m. William Phinney; 8, Eleanor, b. 1823, m. Edward Payson; 9, Catherine, b 1825, unm.

vii. Elijah, b. 1788, d. 1847, m. 1813, Hannah Banks, who was b. 1786, d. 1870: Ch.: 1, Henry, b. 1813, m. Frances Ruggles; 2, Priestly, b. 1814, m. Hannah Phinney; 3, Cooper, b. 1816, m. Sarah Ann Ruggles; 4, Jacob, b. 1819, d. 1820; 5, Jacob, b. 1821, m. Phebe Berteaux; 6, John, m. Lucy Beals; 7, Arod, m. Margaret Sheriff; 8, Caleb, m. Eliza Whitman; 9, Elizabeth, b. 1817, m. John Banks; 10, Dorothy, m. Samuel Banks; 11, Anna, m. Rice Daniels.

viii. Arod, m. 1807, Catharine Delong: Ch.: 1, Rev. Wesley C., b. 1808, m.; 2, Experience, b. 1810, m. Angus Morrison Gidney; 3, Abel, b. 1812, d. unm.; 4, Susannah, b. 1813, m. Ebenezer Rice Whitman; 5, Mary, b. 1815, m. George Everett; 6, Isabel Eliza, b. 1817, m. James Davenport; 7, Elias, b. 1819, m. Seraph Dodge; 8, Catharine, m. Isaac Longley.

ix. John Cooper, b. 1806, m. (1st) 1828, Nancy Clark, (2nd) Sarah Ann Ruggles: Ch.: 1, Miner C., b. 1828, m. Emmeline Bishop; 2, Margaret Ann, b. 1830, m. Thomas Yarrigal; 3, Louisa, b. 1832, m. Judson W. Bishop; 4, Jacob, b. 1834, m. (1st) Sarah Miller, (2nd) Maggie Warwick; 5, Lavinia, m. Phineas Charlton; 6, Henrietta, m. John Hall; 7, Mary, m. Ingraham B. Bishop; 8, Edward, m. Ella Easson.

x. Rachel, m. Boyd McNair.

xi. Abigail, m. Edward Henshaw.

Benson. Christopher Benson, born in Sidwell, Exeter, England, 1720, came to New York, in 1760, with his wife and two children. When the war broke out he espoused the loyal side, and was an efficient officer in a Loyalist corps; coming to this province in 1783. His sons were then twenty-two and fifteen years old respectively. His son-in-law, William Seaman, accompanied him, and settled in Granville, where for several years he was town clerk, but afterwards returned to New York. Major Benson was a man of considerable culture and intelligence, and for nearly forty years gave active and efficient gratuitous service in militia affairs. He lived to a great age. He married in 1751, Mary Simmons, b. 1731, d. 1805. Children:

i. Hannah, b. 1753, d. 1784.
ii. Mary Simmons, b. 1756.
iii. Christopher, b. 1760, in New York; m. 1784, Lucy Dunn, b Dec., 1760: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1785, m. Jacob Merry; 2, Helen, b. 1786, m. Archibald Hicks; 3, Mary, b. 1788, m. Isaiah Sanders; 4, Lucy, b. 1791, m. William Merry; 5, Grace, b. 1793, m. Chipman Beckwith; 6, Rebecca, b. 1795, m. George Gray; 7, Christopher, b. 1797,* m. (1st) Betsy Merritt, (2nd) Jemima Letteney; 8, William S., b. 1799, m. Leonora Merry.
iv. William Simmons, b. 1768, m. Tamar Messenger; several ch.
v. Elizabeth Brewerton, b. 1771, m. William Seaman.
vi. Rebecca, b. 1774.
vii. Mary Demont, b. 1778.

Bent. David Bent was descended from John Bent, a native of Penton-Grafton, some seventy miles south-west from London, who came over from Southampton to Sudbury, Mass., in 1638, through his son Peter and grandson Hopestill and great-grandson Micah, the father of David. Micah, who married 1737, Grace, daughter of David Rice, came to Annapolis in 1760, with sons David, Micah, Peter and Hopestill. Peter, who died shortly after his arrival, is said to have been the first of these settlers to receive burial in Canada's oldest grave-yard. Hopestill and Micah returned to their old Massachusetts homes. David, who was born March 18, 1739, and married in Massachusetts, Mary, daughter of Ebenezer Felch, settled shortly after his arrival in the locality now known as Bentville. He was one of the Sudbury men selected by their fellows to view this valley and report upon its eligibility for new homes under Governor Lawrence's proclamation. His children were:

i. Micah, m. Abigail Harrington, and had ch.: 1, Beriah, m. Lovejoy Parker; perhaps others. He was drowned and wid. m. Arod Kent.
ii. Ebenezer, twin of Micah, d. unm.
iii. David, m. Ruth Parker and had ch.: 1, Asaph, b. 1788, m. Sarah Fales; 2, Theresa, b. 1789; 3, Isaac, b. 1791, m. 1815, Miriam

* Christopher Benson and Betsy Merritt had ch.: 1, Rebecca Ann, m. James H. Parker; 2, Mary Eliza; 3, Georgiana; 4, Adeline, m. William Feindal; 5, John, m Harriet, dau. of John C. Wilson; 6, Edgar, m. Catharine Wentzel; 7, George, m. Ida Nichol; 8, James; 9, Isabel; 10, Christopher.

Young ; 4, Rufus, b, 1793, m. 1820, Ann Starratt ; 5, Abigail, b. 1795 ; 6, David, b. 1798, m. 1834, Elizabeth Ann Bent ; 7, Rebecca, b. 1800 ; 8, Ruth, b. 1803 ; 9, Miriam, b. 1804.

iv. Joseph, m. 1792, Anna Longley, and had ch. : 1, Warren b. 1793, m. Frances Shafner ; 2, Lucy, b. 1795, m. George Willett ; 3, Amelia, b. 1797, m. Gilbert Ray ; 4, Israel L., b. 1799, d. 1854, m. (1st) Hannah Bath, (2nd) Susan Foster ; 5, Susan, b. 1801, m. George Fellows ; 6, Mary, b. 1802, m. Aaron Eaton ; 7, Rev. J. Fletcher, b. 1806, m. Susan Berry ; 8, William L., b. 1809, m. (1st) Maria M. Troop, (2nd) Charlotte Hardwick; 9, Gilbert, b. 1813, m. (1st) Mary L. Bath, (2nd) Matilda Breeze ; 10, John, b. 1822, d. unm.

v. William, J. P., b. 1769, d. 1833, m. 1796, Abigail, dau. of Phineas Lovett, and had ch. : 1, William Lovett, M.D., m. Euphemia Longmire and settled as a physician at Digby ; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1800, m. Caleb Marshall ; 3, Abigail, b. 1802, m. (1st) John Forrest, (2nd) Edward McLatchy, of Hants Co. ; 4, Maria, b, 1804, m. William Marshall ; 5, Phineas L., b. 1807, m. Maria Boehner ; 6, Stillman, b. 1810, m. Miss Morse ; 7, Selina b. 1813, m. Walter Ricketson.

vi. Asa, m. (1st) Lois Tupper, (2nd) Mary Tupper, (3rd) in 1832, Ann Busby, and had ch. : 1, Ambrose, m. Susan Balcom ; 2, Elias, m. Elizabeth Hardwicke ; 3, Eliakim, m. Naomi Brown ; 4, Ann d. unm. ; 5, David, unm. ; (by 2nd wife) : 6, Mary, m. John Warner ; 7, ——, d. unm. ; (by 3rd wife) : 8, Busby, b. 1833, m. Susan Morse Miller ; 9, Ralph, b. 1836, m. Sarah Whitman ; 10, John Zenas, b. 1839, m. Lucy Gesner ; 11, Albenia, m. John Bartlett ; 12, Anna, m. Thomas Bowles. There was probably also a son Asa, m. Jane Felch.

vii. Stephen, m. 1797, Amy Tupper (dau. of Elisha), and had ch. : 1, Elizabeth Sprague, b, 1798, m. Archibald Rolls ; 2, Jerusha Prince, b. 1800, m. James D'Arcy ; 3, Caroline, b. 1803, m. Adam Hawkes ; 4, James S., b. 1806, m. (1st) Lucina Morse, (2nd) Margaret Boole ; 5, Lucy Ann, b. 1808, m. Charles Elliott ; 6, Amy, b. 1810, m. James Thomas ; 7, William Henry, b. 1813, d. unm. ; 8, Louisa Bathia, b. 1816, unm. ; 9, Susan Murilla, b. 1819, m. Obadiah Parker ; 10, Stephen Edward, b. 1823, m. (1st) Jane Willett, (2nd) Mary E. Parker, (3rd) Emma Bent, widow, *née* Bacon.

viii. Silas, m. Mary Newcomb, and had ch. : 1, Newcomb, m. Hannah Foster ; 2, Mary, m. Jesse Philips ; 3, James m. Amoret Martin ; 4, Denis, m. Amy Beals ; 5, Eliza, m. David Bent.

ix. Sarah, m. John Poole.

x. Dorcas, m. Isaac Longley.

xi. Mary, m. Solomon Harrington.

xii. Elizabeth, d. unm.

xiii, xiv. Twins, d.

Samuel Bent, born August 15, 1743, descended in the fifth generation from John Bent, the immigrant ancestor of David Bent, through Peter,[2] Hopestill,[3] Peter,[4] was in his youth an apprentice to Captain John Wade, whom he followed into service against the French in 1759, and was in the battle on the plains of Abraham ; and family tradition says he had the honour to hoist the British flag on that great occasion. It is said that when victory had become assured a flag-staff was called for, and young Bent being a mechanic was detailed to procure one from the tall, straight fir-trees which lined the heights, while others dug the hole to set it in. In their haste they forgot to reeve the necessary lanyard before

the staff had been finally "stepped." Several tried to climb it, carry up the line, and reeve it through the block, and Bent at length succeeded, carrying up the end of the line in his teeth, after which feat he was accorded the privilege of hoisting the flag. The small hand-saw used by him in preparing the staff is still in the possession of one of his descendants, Joseph Bent, of Granville, who still owns and occupies a large portion of the homestead on which his progenitor settled when he reached his majority. He came to Granville the year following the capture of Quebec, married in 1760, Rachel, sister of Moses Ray, and had children :

i. Samuel, b. 1765, m. (1st) Mary Leonard, (2nd) — Brown : Ch. : 1, Lawrence ; 2, Martin, m. — Hunt ; 3, Rachel, m. 1814, Abraham Bogart ; (by 2nd wife) : 4, Alice, m. 1835, Cornelius Bogart ; 5, Nedebiah, m. ; 6, Edward, m.

ii. Nedebiah, b. 1767, m. 1788, Elizabeth Truesdal : Ch. : 1, Experience, b. 1789, m. Thomas Messenger ; 2, Samuel, b. 1791, m. Theodosia Crabb ; 3, Abigail, b. 1793, m. David Messenger ; 4, Alpheus, b. 1795, d. unm. ; 5, Mary, b. 1797, d. 1797 ; 6, Phebe, b. 1798, m. Joseph Brown ; 7, Jesse, b. 1801, m. Mahala Kniffen ; 8, Ezekiel, b. 1803, m. (1st) Frances Bolsor, (2nd) Betsey Berteaux ; 9, John, b. 1805, d. unm. ; 10, Ellen, b. 1807, m. Christopher Bolsor ; 11, Rachel, d. unm.

iii. Seth, b. 1769, m. (1st) Lucy Hackelton, (2nd) Elizabeth O'Brian : Ch. : 1, John, m. Phebe Miller ; 2, Lucy, d. unm. ; 3, Sarah, m. David Young ; 4, Margaret, m. David Milbury ; (by 2nd wife) : 5, Grandison, m. Lydia Saunders ; 6, Moses, d. unm. ; 7, Edward, d. unm. ; 8, Mary Ann.

iv. Jesse, b, 1771, m. 1801, Sarah Hackelton : Ch. : 1, William, b. 1802, m. Ruth North (no issue) ; 2, Eliza, b. 1804, d. unm. ; 3, Lee Vose, b. 1806, m. Elvira Wade (no issue) ; 4, Seth, b. 1810, m. Eliza Fairn ; 5, George, b. 1813, m. Ellen Macsweeny ; 6, Ambrose, b. 1817 m. (1st) Amoret Morse, (2nd) Eunice Ross, (3rd) Clara, dau. of W. Y. Foster ; 7, Edmund Foster, b. 1822, m. (1st) Amanda Starratt, (2nd) Sarah Freeman, (3rd) Elizabeth Chesley, *née* Albe, widow of Rev. R. A. Chesley.

v. James, b. 1772, m.

vi. John, b. 1774, a J.P., m. 1809, Mary Harris : Ch. : 1, Mary, b. 1810, m. Henry Gesner, J.P. ; 2, Sarah, b. 1813, m. Robert Parker, J.P. ; 3, John Harris, b. 1815, m. Eunice Dodge ; 4, William Henry, b. 1819, m. Caroline Gesner ; 5, Euphemia, b. 1820, m. Wm. Henry Young ; 6, Emily, b. 1822, m. John Crozier.

vii. Ebenezer, b. 1783, m. 1809, Loretta Dench, b. 1781, d. 1858 : Ch. : 1, Robert, b. 1810, m. Theresa Hicks ; 2, Henry, b. 1812, m. Olivia Miller ; 3, Deborah, b. 1814, m. Jesse Dodge ; 4, Eunice, b. 1816, m. Ezekiel Burns ; 5, Ezra, b. 1819, m. Ann Phinney ; 6, Hannah, b. 1823, m. Joseph Troop ; 7, Abraham, b. 1824, m. Mary Young ; 8, Mary, b. 1827, m. Stephen Milbury ; 9, Jacob Fritz, b. 1827, m. (1st) Elizabeth Witherspoon, (2nd) Caroline Bent.

viii. Rachel, b. 1777, m. John Elliott.

ix. Nancy, b. 1779, m. John Fritz.

x. Elias, b. 1785, m. (1st) 1811, Mary Ann VanBlarcom, (2nd) Susan Anthony : Ch. : 1, Anne, b. 1812 ; 2, Joseph, b. 1816, m. Elizabeth Steadman ; 3, Maria, b. 1819 ; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1821, m. ; 5, Georgina, b. 1823 ; 6, John, b. 1826, d. unm. ; 7, Ebenezer, b. 1828, m. Elizabeth Morrison ; 8, Ruth, b. 1832 ; 9, George Thomas, b. 1835, m. Horatio Gesner ; (by 2nd w.) : 10, William ; 11, Alfred, m. Laura Sulis.

xi. Charles, b. 1787, m. 1814, Elizabeth Wade : Ch. : 1, Lucy, b. 1814, m. John Hutchison ; 2, Stephen, b. 1815, m. Cynthia Wade ; 3, Helen, b. 1820, m. Robert Hoseason ; 4, Ann, b. 1818, m. John Roney ; 5, Rachel (or Maria), m. Edward Shafner ; 6, Samuel, b. 1822, m. Mary Abraham ; 7, Benjamin, b. 1824, m. Keziah Young ; 8, Daniel, b. 1826, m. Elizabeth Oliver ; 9, Prudence, b. 1829, m. George Covert ; 10, Hannah, b. 1832, m. Edwin Wade ; 11, Mary, b. 1828.

BERTEAUX. 1. PHILIP BERTEAUX was born in the Island of Guernsey, of French Protestant parents, who fled thither from France after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, in 1685. He was commissioned "Master Carpenter" in the employ of the Board of Ordnance, and came to Annapolis in that capacity. He was one of the grantees of the "Cape Grant," so called. His very numerous posterity are to be found in various parts of Nova Scotia, and from Nova Scotia to British Columbia, and in the United States. The name of his first wife is not known. The second was Elizabeth Gould. He died about 1780, aged over 60. He had children :

(2) i. William, b. about 1750.
ii. Ann, m. Henry Hardwick.
iii. Perhaps John.
By second wife :
iv. Thomas Edward, m. Nov. 14, 1795, Mary, dau. of Foster Baltzor, g. dau. of Christopher, and gt. g. dau. of Christopher, sen. : Ch. : 1, Mary, b. 1796, m. (1st) Thos. Palmer, (2nd) Samuel Slocomb ; 2, John, b. Dec. 13, 1797, m. Elizabeth, dau. of Peter Baltzor ; 3, Alice, b. 1799, m. Thomas, son of John Robinson ; 4, Ann Maria, b. Jan. 17, 1802, m. Chipman, son of Joseph Brown ; 5, Philip, b. 1804, m. Susan Brown, sister of Chipman, 11 ch. ; 6, Dorothy, b. Dec. 14, 1806, m. Peter McBride ; 7, Elizabeth, b. April 10, 1808, m. Ezekiel Bent ; 8, Sarah Ann, b. July 25, 1812, m. Joseph Dugan ; 9, Julia, b. March 1, 1816, m. William Howell.
v. Margaret } d. unm.
vi. Susan }

2. WILLIAM BERTEAUX, probably eldest son of Philip, born probably about 1750, married Ann, daughter of Michael Spurr, and had children :

(3) i. Charles, b. 1773.
ii. Philip, b. 1780, m. 1808, Catherine Chute, wid. of John Wear.
iii. Elizabeth, bpd. Aug. 26, 1785, m. William Morehouse.
iv. Edward, bpd, June, 1787, m. Dec. 5, 1810, Mercy Whitman : Ch. : 1, Freeman, b. Aug. 27, 1811, m. Lucy Ann Rice ; 2, Edward James, b. July 3, 1813, m. Margaret Ann Tupper ; 3, Benjamin Spinney, b. Dec. 29, 1815, m. Anne Baker ; 4, Ann Whitman, b. May 1, 1818, m. William Potter ; 5, Louisa, b. April 15, 1820, m. Josiah Potter ; 6, David, d. unm.
v. Mary, b. Nov. 5, 1789, d. same year.
vi. George, b. March 7, bpd. June 25, 1792, m. Dec. 29, 1817, Eliza Williams : Ch. : 1, Helen Augusta, b. Dec., 1818, m. Alexander Harris ; 2, Elizabeth, b. May 25, 1821, m. William Wells ; 3, Alfred, b. March 23, 1823, m. Dec. 26, 1849, Isabella Howe

(dau. of William); 4, Sarah Jane, b. Aug. 5, 1825, d. unm.; 5, Charlotte Ann, b. Aug. 12, 1827, m. Charles Wells; 6, Emily, b. Sept. 14, 1829, m. John McDormand; 7, Henry, b. Aug, 5, 1831, d. unm.; 8, Maria, b. May 18, 1833, m. Oliver Bracebridge; 9, Seraph, b. Feb. 28, 1835, m. George LeCain; 10, Lucinda, b. Mar. 23, 1837, m. (1st) Jesse Beals, (2nd) George Stevens; 11, Caroline, b. June 16, 1841, m. George Wells; 12, George Augustus, b. Feb. 27, 1843, m. Phœbe Jefferson; 13, Louisa, b. Sept. 1, 1845, m. Edmund Clark.

vii. Mary, b. Aug. 20, 1794, m. William Fairn.

viii. Nancy, b. 1800, m. Henry Hardwick.

ix. Mercy, m. Henry Gates, M.P.P. (his 2nd wife).

3. Charles Berteaux, born, it is stated, in 1773, but perhaps later, married November 1, 1798, Mary Robinson. Children:

i. William, b. March 3, 1800, m. Feb. 26, 1824, Mary Hardwick: Ch.: 1, John Henry, b. Mar. 10, 1825, m. Hannah Chute; 2, Emmeline Elizabeth, b. Sept. 20, 1827, m. Ambrose Moore; 3, Mary Jane, b. Aug. 28, 1830, m.; 4, Judson Adoniram, b. Aug. 22, 1833, d. unm.

ii. Charles, b. June 5, 1801, m. Jan. 12, 1826, Sarah Dunn: Ch.: 1, Mary Jane, b. Nov. 23, 1826, m. Aaron Young; 2, Charles Wesley, b. May 23, 1828, m. (1st) Charlotte Robinson, (2nd) Abigail Burgess; 3, Sarah Ann, b. 1831, m. William Ker Henderson; 4, William Henry, b. 1833, unm.; 5, Isabel, b. 1835, m. George Romans; 6, Mezelva, b. 1837, unm.; 7, Priscilla, b. 1839, m. George Lynam; 8, Almira, b. 1840, m. William E. Foster; 9, Celenia, b 1841, d. unm.; 10, Amanda, b. 1843, m. John McKeown; 11, George E., b. 1845, m. Jessie Quinton; 12, Celia, b. 1850, d. unm.; 13, Sarah Ann, b. 1854.

iii. Ann, b. March 23, 1803, m. Samuel Wheelock.

iv. James, b. Sept. 18, 1804, m. 1829, Parnie Wheelock: Ch.: 1, Letitia Salome, b. 1830, m. James Hutchinson; 2, Harriet Ann, b. 1832, m. Isaac Newcomb; 3, Helen, b. 1833, m. Harding Spinney; 4, Parnie, b. 1834, m. Caleb Spinney; 5, Samuel, b. 1835, m. Sarah Ann Banks; 6, Ezekiel, b. 1837, m. Louisa Nichols; 7, Lucinda Jane, m. Charles Nichols; 8, James Maynard, m. Desiah Smith; 9, Emily Jane, m. Ansley Banks; 10, Laleah, m. William Shaw; 11, William Burton, m. Mary Jane Allison.

v. Robert, b. Sept. 18, 1804 (twin), m. Olivia Wheelock: Ch.: 1, Lucinda, m. John Patterson; 2, Harvey, m. Frances Morton; 3, James Henry, m. Susan Palmer; 4, Albert, m. Harriet Spinney; 5, Robert Dickie, m. Sarah Hutchinson; 6. Adoniram Judson, m.; 7, Joseph, m. (1st) Eliza Rice, (2nd) — Thomas, *née* Parker.

vi. Edward, b. Aug. 7, 1807, m. 1837, Mercy Whitman, niece of his uncle Edward's wife: Ch.: 1, Albert, m. Mary LeCain; 2, David, m. Maggie Shaw; 3, Maria, m. Benjamin B. Hardwick; 4, Edward, m. Mary Croker; 5, Laleah, m. Marchant Rockwell; 6, Ada, m. David W. Corning.

vii. John Henry, b. March 9, 1809, m. Sarah Neily: Ch.: 1, Obadiah, m. Lydia Eliza Harris; 2, Albert, m. Ella G. Wheelock; 3, Sophronia, m. James E. Oakes; 4, Fitch, m.; 5, Edwin, m. Ella Bent; 6, Sophia, m. Melton Nichols; 7, Annie, d. unm.; 8, Burton, d. unm.

viii. Mary, b. Oct. 5, 1812, m. Thomas Baker.

ix. Harriet, m. — Jones.

BISHOP. PETER BISHOP, of Connecticut, was a grantee in the township of Horton in 1759. One of his sons, the late Deacon William Bishop, removed to this county late in the century. Nothing is ascertained of the immigrant ancestor, but Peter is supposed to have been his grandfather. (Probably the American line extends back a generation or two more.—ED.) William married 1785, Elizabeth Copps. Children :

i. Daniel, b. 1786, m. Lucy Stevens, *née* Kinney.
ii. Samuel, b. 1788, m., 1809, Elizabeth Hutchinson : Ch.: 1, Winckworth, b. 1810, m. (in United States) ; 2, Eunice Ann, b. 1812, m. Charles Anderson ; 3, Rebecca, b. 1815, m. Robert Starratt ; 4, Major Chipman, b. 1820, m. 1851, Frances H. Farrington ; 5, Harriett, m. Robert Graves ; 6, Eliza, m. James Bennett ; 7, Emmeline, m. Miner C. Beals ; 8, Hannah Thorne, d. unm. ; 9, Mary Woodbury, m. Greene Tingley.
iii. William, b. 1790, m. Rebecca Morse : Ch.: 1, Edward, m. — Collins; 2, William Henry, m. Martha Jane Durgin ; 3, Elizabeth, m. Charles Woodbury ; 4, Charlotte, m. Ingraham Fitch.
iv. Sherman, b. 1792, d. unm.
v. George, b. 1794, m. 1817, Diadama Longley : Ch.: 1, Mary Ann, b. 1818, m. Samuel Fitzrandolph ; 2, Mary Eliza, b. 1821, d. unm. ; 3, Samuel Chipman, b. 1823, m. Mary Robinson ; 4, Susan Melvina, b. 1825, m. Asa Tupper Morse ; 5, William, b. 1828, m. Mary Ann Morse ; 6, Lavinia, b. 1830 ; 7, Harriet Adelaide, b. 1832, m. Benjamin Prince ; 8, Dorcas Amelia, b. 1834, m. James B. Neily ; 9, Henrietta, b. 1836, m. ; 10, George Ingram, b. 1836, m. Amanda Chipman ; 11, Lucy Caroline, b. 1841, m. Burton Neily.
vi. Elias, b. 1797, m. 1821, Lovicia Longley : Ch.: 1, Isaac Longley, b. 1821, m. Mary Ann Spinney ; 2, Diadam, m. Thomas Chittick; 3, Selina, m. William Patterson ; 4, Israel, m. Harriet Pineo *née* Clark (no issue) ; 5, George, m. Margaret Smith ; 6, John, m. Eunice Parker ; 7, Annie, m. Thomas Welton ; 8, Adelaide, d. unm.; 9, Mary E. ; 10, David, m. Jane Graves ; 11, William Edgar, m. Isabella Spurr.
vii. Thomas, b. 1799, m., 1823, Ann Fitzrandolph : Ch.: 1, Eliza Jane, b. 1826, m. Edward Schafner ; 2, Randolph, b. 1828.
viii. Mary Ann, b. 1806, m. (1st) Israel Longley, (2nd) Manning Morse.
ix. Eliza, b. 1808, m. Major Chipman, J.P.

BOGART. The immigrant ancestor of this family was among the best of the good old Dutch settlers of New Amsterdam (New York). Early in the seventeenth century one of the family appears among the founders of Albany, now the capital of that great State. CORNELIUS and THUNIS BOGART, relatives—perhaps first cousins—came to this county among the Loyalists, and settled in Lower Granville.

CORNELIUS BOGART, had children :

i. Luke, b. in New York, m. 1790, Eva Helms, b. in New York.: Ch.: 1, Margaret, b. 1792, m. George Worster ; 2, Cornelius, b. 1794, m. Hannah Johnston ; 3, Samuel Helms, b. 1797, m. Margaret Johnston ; 4, Abraham, b. 1799, m. (1st) Alice Brown, (2nd) 1814, Rachel Bent ; 5, John, b. 1803, m. (1st) Sarah Emmeline Quigley, (2nd) Matilda Vroom ; 6, Eleanor, b.

1801, m. Martin Oliver ; 7, Isaac, b. 1806, m. Atalanta Croscup ; 8, Horatio Nelson, b. 1807, m. Lucy Croscup ; 9, Jacob, b, 1809, m.; 10, Margaret Jane, b. 1811, m. George Croscup; 11, George, b. 1813, d. 1816.

ii. Abraham, m. (1st) 1810, Alice Brown, (2nd) 1814, Rachel Bent : Ch.: 1, Cornelius, b. 1811, m. 1835, Alice Bent ; 2, Alice, b. 1813, d. 1819 ; (by 2nd wife) : 3, Samuel, b. 1814, d. 1819 ; 4, John, b. 1816, m. Mary Ann Durland ; 5, Mary, b. 1817, m. Daniel Bohaker ; 6, Cornelius, b. 1819, m. George Schafner ; 7, Phebe, b. 1821, m. Solomon Farnsworth ; 8, Charles William, b. 1822, d. 1825 ; 9, Charles, b. 1825, m. Cassie Sloan ; 10, Margaret, b. 1827, d. unm.; 11, William Henry, b. 1830, d. unm.

Thunis Bogart, b. 1750, m. 1778 : Children :

i. Abraham, b, 1778, d. unm.
ii. Isaac, b. 1780, d. unm.
iii. Jacob, b. 1782, m. Elizabeth Hart : Ch.: 1, Matilda, m. Robert Wylie, a native of Invernesshire, Scotland ; 2, Mary, m. Zebediah Croscup ; 3, Thomas Hart, d. unm.; 4, Henrietta, m. J. Bernhardt Calnek.
iv. Thunis, b. 1785, m. (1st) Mary Ann Anderson, (2nd) Mary Lambertson : Ch.: 1, Thunis, m. Georgina McCormick.
v. Katrina, m. Edward Thorne.
vi. Mary, m. (1st) John Lambertson, (2nd) Elias Quereau.

Bowlby. The father of Richard Bowlby, the progenitor of this family, was born in Lancashire, England, and came to America in 1700, and afterwards married and settled in New Jersey. In an obituary notice a few years since, of his grandson, Adam Bowlby, of Ontario (whose son, Ward Hamilton Bowlby, M.A., LL.B., is County Crown Attorney of Waterloo County, Ontario), it was stated that his ancestor was one of the twelve associated with Penn in the charter or administration of the government of Pennsylvania. I cannot explain that statement. Richard Bowlby came here, a Loyalist, from New Jersey with his wife and family in 1783, and settled about two miles east of Lawrencetown on land lately owned by Charles Elliott, where he died at the age of ninety-nine years and ten months. His eldest son, after his marriage, settled on Gates' Mountain. The wife of the Adjutant-General of the Dominion, at Ottawa, is a descendant of Richard Bowlby, being a daughter of his grandson Adam, and so, but in a female line, is the widow of the author, and other descendants are among the people of note in Ontario, New Brunswick, Michigan, and elsewhere. A brother settled in Shelburne County. His wife was Mary Drake ; and children :

i. Richard, jun., m. 1786, Elizabeth, dau. of Adam Hawkesworth and Elizabeth Wedgewood, both natives of Yorkshire : Ch.: 1, Josiah, b. 1787, d. 1803, unm. ; 2, Mary, b. 1790, d. 1803, unm. ; 3, Richard, b. 1792, m. Leah Elliott ; 4, Adam, b. 1793, m. — Soverene (in Ontario) ; 5, Samuel, b. 1794, m. Rachel Gates ; 6, George, b. 1795, m. Mary Miller ; 7, Elizabeth, b, 1797, m.

Asahel Walker Dodge ; 8, Sidney Smith, b. 1799, m. — Soverene (in Ontario) ; 9, Sarah, b. 1802, m. Lawrence Phinney ; 10, Thomas, b. 1803, m. (1st) Ann Gates, (2nd) Elizabeth Downie, (3rd) Thankful Bowles ; 11, Mary, b. 1805, m. Thomas Harris ; 12, John Wedgewood, b. 1811, m. Lavinia Gates.

ii. George, m. (1st) Elizabeth Chesley, (2nd) — : Ch.: 1, Abraham, m. Rachel Phinney ; 2, Jordan, m. 1821, Eunice, dau. of Thomas Tupper, brother of Rev. Charles ; he d. 1828, and she m. (2nd) Henry Baker ; 3, Martha, m. Calvin Phinney ; 4, Achsa, m. William Chesley ; 5, George, m. Sarah DeWitt ; 6, Solomon, m. Susan Spriggs Slocomb ; 7, Ann, m. Barnabas Phinney ; 8, Amelia, m. Thomas Kempton ; 9, Mary m. Richard Kempton.

iii. Thomas, m. (in Ontario).

iv. Catharine, m. Solomon Simpson.

v. Mary, m. — Wilson.

vi. Rachel, m. Jolly Longshore.

vii. Sarah, m. — Bray.

viii. Martha, m. —.

Brinton. John Brinton, or Brenton, who is said to have been a native of the north of Ireland, and to have been a weaver by trade, married Jemima, daughter of John Clark, of Yorkshire. The family, which are not numerous, are still largely located in the vicinity of his settlement. A great-grandson, Rev. Charles John Brenton, M.A., is a clergyman of the English Church in British Columbia. Children :

i. John, m. (1st) 1814, Susan Quereau, (2nd) Marv Messenger : Ch.: 1, Sarah Ann, d. 1825 ; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1816, m. (1st) Francis Lent, (2nd) — ; 3, Charles, b. 1829, m. Ellen Young ; 4, Elias, b. 1825, m. Hannah Chute ; 5, Joshua, b. 1822, m. Nancy Messenger ; 6, Ethalinda, b. 1827, m. James Mitchell ; 7, Sarah Ann, b. 1831, m. John Starratt ; 8, Ansley, b. 1830, m. Sarah Starratt (no issue) ; 9, Melissa, m. Joseph Graves.

ii. Charles, m. 1817, Charity Quereau : Ch.: 1, Francis, b. 1823, m. Sarah Ann Chute ; 2, Sarah Elizabeth, b. 1817, m. (1st) Francis Lent ; 3, Judith Ann, b. 1820, m. Joseph Corbitt ; 4, Charles H., b. 1829, m. Elizabeth Chute.

iii. Ellen, m. Beverley Robinson Beardsley.

Brown. Thomas Brown was a native of England, probably of Yorkshire, who came over not long after the arrival of the Massachusetts settlers, for in 1767 he married Mary, daughter of Peter Starratt, then living in Granville. Soon after this he became owner of a farm a little to the eastward of Bridgetown. He had children :

i. John, m. 1800, Mary Farnsworth : Ch. : 1, John, b. 1801, d. unm. ; 2, Mary, b. 1802, d. 1826, unm. ; 3, Charles, b. 1803, d. 1830, unm. ; 4, Lucy, b. 1805, m. Timothy Strong ; 5, Frances, b. 1807, m. Isaac Marshall ; 6, Sarah Ann, b. 1809, m. Thomas Brown ; 7, Abigail, b. 1812, m. James Cornwell ; 8, Ansley, b. 1814, m. (1st) Mary Morse, (2nd) Ann Manning ; 9, Louisa, b. 1816, m. (1st) George Crowe, (2nd) Eliakim Tupper ; 10, Manning, b. 1818, m. Mary Ann Foster.

ii. George, m. 1796, Ann Clark : Ch. : 1, Thomas, b. 1797, m. Sarah Ann Brown ; 2, George, b. 1801, m. Harriet (or Dorcas) Longley ; 3, Mary, 1798, m. James Hall ; 4, Joseph, b. 1803, m. Ellen Gates (dau. Jos.) ; 5, William, b. 1805, m. (1st) Mary Cornwell, (2nd) Mary Shaw ; 6, Seth, b. 1807, m. Jane Snow ; 7, Ann, b. 1808, m. Joseph Rice ; 8, Sophia, b. 1810, m. Silvanus Snow ; 9, Susan, b. 1814, d. 1833, unm. ; 10, Eliza, b. 1812, m. David Harris ; 11, Loretta, b. 1815, d. unm. ; 12, Simon, b. 1819, m. Rachel Dill.

Calnek.* Jacob Calnek, my grandfather, was of Jewish ancestry, and himself a "Hebrew of Hebrews." He was born in Saxe Coburg-Gotha in 1745, and died in central Granville, 1831, at the advanced age of eighty-six years. He married in 1771, at Arolsen, the capital of the dominions of the Margrave of Anspach, Rosina Wolf, a native of Berlin, whose grandfather, Bernhardt Wolf, was a native of Hartzfeldt, in Franconia. His father, Jacob Bernhardt Wolf, removed to Berlin where he married Hendel Burnett of that city, where my grandmother was born in 1753. She died in 1822 in Granville. She was also of Jewish parentage. My grandfather's only sister, of whom I have any knowledge, married Johan Stiglitz, and was the grandmother of the late Baron Alexander Von Stiglitz, of St. Petersburg, who was one of the millionaires of that wealthy capital, and who died without issue, leaving $75,000,000, Canadian currency, to his nephews, the Herren Herders of that city. In 1775 Jacob Calnek, the ancestor of the American family of Calnek, was commissioned "Quarter Master" of the first battalion of Anspach, whose services in the revolutionary war were employed on behalf of the Crown. At the close of the contest, having first received the consent of the Margrave, he determined to settle in Nova Scotia, and having been recommended by Sir Guy Carleton as being entitled to a grant of land, he obtained one in Clements, in which township many of his countrymen, who had been employed in the same service, were about to settle. He then wrote to his wife in Berlin, from whom he had been separated for the previous seven years, to join him here with four children then born to them, which she did in 1784. In the meantime her husband had caused a log-house to be erected on his lands—those lately occupied by Charles Jefferson, in Clements—which were situated in the wilds of that township. On her arrival she transferred herself, children, and such valuables as she possessed, and they were not few, nor of scant worth, into the new dwelling, which had been prepared for them, and commenced a new and, to her, a strange life. Not many months had elapsed before an event occurred which left them in extreme poverty. Their house and its entire contents were destroyed by fire during their temporary absence, and the loss they sustained was the loss of everything

* This I copied verbatim from the author's MS.—[Ed.

they possessed, except the clothing they stood in, and their children. After some years of incessant struggle and deprivation they bought a farm in Granville, and gradually became more easy in financial circumstances, and one of the grandsons still owns and occupies the old homestead. Their descendants are comparatively small in number, and are greatly scattered. Thomas Maurice Calnek, M.D., is a leading physician in Costa Rica, and another great-grandson is paymaster on the railways of that State; another is deputy manager of the Acadian coal mines in Pictou County, and two others are settled in Manitoba. Others are living in the island of Jamaica and in the United States, but the larger number have homes in their native county and province.

1. Jacob Calnek, b. 1745, d. 1831, m. Rosina Wolf, b. 1753, d. 1822. Children:

i. Samuel, b. 1772, d. 1837, m. — Arundel (in Jamaica): Ch.: 1 (only), Thomas, d. unm.
ii. Rachel, b. 1773, d. 1852, unm.
iii. Bernhardt, b. 1775, d. 1812, unm.
(2) iv. Maurice, b. 1777.
v. William, b. 1786, d. 1829, unm.
(3) vi. Jeremiah, b. 1789.

2. Maurice Calnek, b. 1777, m. 1820, Elizabeth Longmire, and d. 1848. Children:

(4) i. John Bernhardt, b. 1821.
(5) ii. Henry, b. 1823.
iii. Mary Hester, b. 1825, m. Rev. John Moore Campbell, M.A., Rector of Granville.
iv. Sarah Jane, b. 1827, m. John McCormick.

3. Jeremiah Calnek, b. 1789, m. 1821, Anne Marshall, and d. 1880. Children:

(6) i. William Arthur, b. 1822.
ii. Robert Wolf, b. 1823, d. unm.
iii. Rosina Wolf, b. 1825, m. Rev. Henry Harris Hamilton.
iv. Benjamin Marshall, b. 1827.
v. Ann Maria, b. 1828, unm.
vi. Alfred Augustus, b. 1829, d. unm.
vii. Edward George, b. 1831, m. Mary Edna Colby.

4. John Bernhardt Calnek, b. 1821, m. 1850, Henrietta Bogart, d. 1896. Children:

i. Thomas Maurice, M.D., unm.
ii. Gilbert, m. Blanche Willett (no issue).
iii. Julia, m. William Young.
iv. Rosina Wolf, unm.
v. Agnes, m. Alfred William Randall, a native of Antigonish. (See Randall.)
vi. Matilda Wylie, unm.

5. Henry Calnek, b. 1823, m. Annie Eaton : still living. Children :

i. Jacob, m. 1887, Mary Bohaker : Ch. : 1, Hulda M., b. 1888, d. 1890 ; 2, Annie Atalanta.
ii. Laura, m. Rev. Alton Bent, Rector of Pugwash.
iii. Emma, unm.

6. William Arthur Calnek, b. 1822, m. 1851, Armanilla, daughter of Lawrence Phinney, d. 1892. Children :

i. Bertha, b. 1852, m. William West.
ii. Ernest Robert Wolf, b. 1853, unm.
iii. Mary Campbell, d. unm.
iv. Frederic Hamilton Stiglitz, m. 1887, Margaret Simpson.
v. Mary Bowlby Wedgewood, d. unm.
vi. Carl Casper Jacob, m. 1885, Elizabeth McBride : Ch. : 1, William Arthur, b. 1886 ; 2, Edith Elizabeth, b. 1888. He resides in Winnipeg.
vii. Sarah DeWolfe, m. 1890, William F. Farmer.
viii. Bessie Blair, unm.
ix. Edith Victoria, unm.

Charlton. John Charlton came from Newcastle-on-Tyne, England, to this county about the same time as the Massachusetts settlers, and obtained a grant of land in western Wilmot. In 1765 he had cleared fifty acres on lots Nos. 26 and 27, and had a stock of twenty-five head of horned cattle. He built the first saw-mill in that section of the county, for which he obtained a bounty offered by the Government in 1786. It was situated about midway between the old post road and the present Brooklyn road, on the stream generally known as Palmer's brook. Henry Charlton, one of his sons, went to the upper provinces, and it is said was ancestor of John Charlton, M.P. for North Norfolk. Henry Charlton, b. 1723, d. 1816, m. 1762, Mary Crane, b. 1739, d. 1815. Children :

i. Experience, b. 1762, d. 1851, m. Simon Delong.
ii. Aaron, b. 1765, d. 1838, m. Grace Dunn : Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1793, m. Jonathan Woodbury (son of Foster) ; 2, Letitia, b. 1795, m. Isaac Dodge ; 3, Henry Dunn, b. 1797, m. Amy Nichols ; 4, Sarah, b. 1799, m. Mark Simpson ; 5, Mary, b. 1801, m. Edward Thorne Young ; 6, Edward, b. 1805, d. unm.
iii. Mary, b. 1767, d. 1843, m. Charles Worthylake.
iv. James, b. 1768, d. 1846, m. 1784, Sarah Simpson : Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1785, m. Henry Grant ; 2, Henry, b. 1788, m. Catharine Gardner ; 3, James, b. 1790, m. Rachel Graves ; 4, Silas Crane, b. 1793, m. Ann Graves ; 5, Elizabeth, b. 1795, d. unm. ; 6, Charlotte, b. 1797, m. (1st) — Dunn, (2nd) Benjamin Sabin (the father of Charlton Sabean, J.P., long Custos of the District of Clare, Digby Co.); 7, William, b. 1799, m. Lydia Marshall ; 8, Harris, b. 1802, d. 1805 ; 9, Thomas, b. 1804, m. Ann Katherns ; 10, Sarah, b. 1807, m. (1st) Cornelius Brooks, (2nd) Peter Mosher.
v. Henry, b. 1770, m. —. Removed to one of the upper provinces.

vi. Charlotte, b. 1773, d. 1871, m. Andrew Beals.
vii. Isabella, b. 1775, d. 1850, m. Henry Grant, of Weymouth.
viii. Robert, b. 1778, d. 1874, m. 1806, Elizabeth Starratt: Ch.: 1 (only), Theresa, m. Wheelock Chipman.

CHESLEY. 1. PHILIP CHESLEY, the immigrant ancestor of this family, was probably from the vicinity of Dover, England, and was among the founders of the city of Dover, New Hampshire, in 1642. Thomas,[2] his son, the first of the name born in America, was killed by Indians in 1697, and Philip,[2] another son, had two sons, Capt. Samuel[3] and James,[3] killed in military service in 1707, probably in the attack on Port Royal in that year. Capt. Samuel had a son Samuel,[4] b. 1691, who also had a son Samuel,[5] b. 1713, and m. 1733. Samuel[6] Chesley, a son of the latter, joined the colonial forces raised against Louisburg in 1758, but arriving too late to participate actively in the siege, spent the winter of 1758-59 in Halifax, and was sent in the spring to survey the lots of five hundred acres set off to the N. E. emigrants to Granville; took up one of them himself, and in 1761 married Eleanor, a daughter of Samuel Moore, who had removed thither in 1760. He induced his brothers Joseph[6] and Benjamin[6] to come; and the former took a lot of five hundred acres adjoining Samuel's, but soon returned to New Hampshire, selling out to Samuel for £20. BENJAMIN[6] settled in Wilmot near the present site of Middleton. SAMUEL,[6] an intelligent and well-read man and leading magistrate, planted the first orchard of any importance in Wilmot, on a farm called "Cold Spring," which he gave his son James. Benjamin also soon planted a large orchard on his farm, some of the trees of which still bear fruit. Samuel,[6] b. 1734, d. 1818, m. Eleanor Moore, who d. 1822. Children:

i. Samuel, b. 1763, m. (1st) Eunice Fellows, (2nd) Louisa Lovett: Ch.: 1, William Smith, m. 1817, Achsa Bowlby; 2, Phebe, m. Robert Ansley; 3, Samuel, m. Mary Ann Delap; 4, Maria, m. William Nichol; (by 2nd wife): 5, Thomas Willett, barrister, b. 1814, m. (1st) Amelia Bishop (no issue), (2nd) Rachel Clark (no issue); 6, Rev. Robert Ansley, b. April 16, 1816, m. Hannah Albe; 7, Charles Lovett, b. 1819, m. Mary Fitch; 8, Phebe, b. 1821, m. Edward T. Knowles; 9, Henry Shaw, b. 1825, m. Mary Godfrey; 10, Phineas Lovett, b. 1827, m. Helen T. Croscup.
ii. Molly, b. 1764, m. Horace Thomas Clements.
iii. Betty, b. 1766, m. George Bowlby.
iv. Susannah, b. 1769, m. Andrew Marshall.
v. Benjamin, b. 1772, d. 1804, m. Ann Dodge (dau. of Asahel), and had ch.: 1 (only), Benjamin, b. 1804, m. Harriet Letteney.
vi. Hepzibah, b. 1773, m. Elijah Phinney.
vii. Nancy, b. 1776, d. 1806, unm.
viii. James, b. 1779, m. 1805, Patience Hicks (dau. of Thomas): Ch.: 1, Russell, b. 1806, m. (1st) Lydia Barnaby, (2nd) Selina Woodworth; 2, Hicks, b. 1808, m. Sophia Chute; 3, Hanson, b. 1810, m. Eliza Woodworth; 4, Nancy, b. 1814, m. John Rice; 5,

Robert, b, 1816, m. Harriet Marshall ; 6, Mary E., b. 1818, m. (1st) John Archibald, (2nd) William Marshall ; 7, Edward, b. 1820, m. Margaret Morse ; 8, Samuel ; 9, Benjamin ; 10, James (triplets, all d.).

Benjamin[6] Chesley (brother of Samuel) was born 1736, and died 1823. He married (1st) — Hill, (2nd) Joanna Hatch. Children :

i. Benjamin, b. 1770, d. 1771.
ii. Joseph, b. 1773, m., removed to U. S.: Ch.: Charles and others.
iii. Lucretia, b. 1775, m. (1st) George Munroe, (2nd) William Pearce.
iv. Amy, b. 1776, m. Benjamin Rumsey.
v. Asa, b. 1777, m. Rachel Davidson : Ch.: 1, George Edward, b. 1820, m. (1st) — Fowler, (2nd) Charlotte Balcom, *née* Marshall ; 2, Eunice Amelia, b. 1821, d. unm.; 3, Amy Lucretia, b. 1823, m. John Ansley ; 4, Alexina, b. 1826, d. unm. ; 5, Charlotte Hill, b. 1828, m. Elizabeth Landers.
By second wife :
vi. John, b. 1779, m. Lucretia Longley : Ch.: 1, John Nelson, b. 1805, m. Elizabeth Young ; 2, William Ambrose, b. 1807, m. (1st) Waite Sanford, (2nd) Mary Ann Alger ; 3, Martha Eliza, b. 1809, m. Allan Morse ; 4, Benjamin, b. 1812, m. Elizabeth Leonard ; 5, Diadama Ann, b. 1814, m. Noble H. Beckwith ; 6, Phebe Lovicia, b. 1817, m. John Huston ; 7, Bethia, b. 1820, unm.
vii. Paul, b. 1781, m. Ann McKenzie : Ch.: 1, Ichabod, b. 1816, d. unm.; 2, William, b. 1817, d. unm. ; 3, Mary Ann, b. 1819 ; 4, Eleanor, b. 1820 ; 5, Susan, d. unm.
viii. Joanna, b. 1784, m. Joseph Stirck.
ix. Sarah, d. unm.
x. Elizabeth, b. 1789, m. William Elliott.
xi. Rachel, b. 1792, m. Henry Robinson, M.D.
xii. Samuel, b. 1794, m. Rebecca Durland : Ch.: 1, Phœbe, b. 1824, m. Edward Palmer ; 2, Caroline, b. 1825, m. Joseph Palmer ; 3, William H., b. 1827, m. Adelia Whitman ; 4, Eliza, b. 1828, m. Avard Vroom ; 5, Havilah, b. 1831, m. Parker ; 6, Joanna, b. 1833, m. Ingram Beals ; 7, —, m. Sampson Beals.
xiii. Patience, b. 1797, m. John Pearce.
xiv. Ichabod, b. 1800, d. 1811.

Chipman. (The name was no doubt originally a place-name from Chippenham, by a not uncommon inversion in the development of names. —Ed.) John Chipman, of Dorsetshire, England, came to Plymouth Colony in 1631 in the same ship that brought Endicott. He married (1st) Hope, daughter of the celebrated Pilgrim, John Howland, a passenger in the *Mayflower* ; (2nd) Ruth, daughter of William Sargent and widow of Jonathan Winslow and of Rev. Richard Bourne. He had eleven children, descendants of whom in prominent positions have been domiciled in nearly every State of the Union and Province of the Dominion, and in some of the West India Islands. His tenth child, John,[2] b. March 3, 1669-70, m. (1st) Mary, dau. of Stephen Skiff, (2nd) Elizabeth, dau. of Thomas Handley, a native of London, (3rd) Hannah Hoxie. The eleventh child of John Chipman was by his second wife,

and named HANDLEY,[3] b. August 31, 1717, m. (1st) April 24, 1740, Jean, dau. of Col. John and Margaret Allen, of Martha's Vineyard. He came to Cornwallis, N.S., 1761. He m. (2nd) December 14, 1775, Nancy, dau. of Stephen and Elizabeth (Clarke) Post. He filled the offices of Justice of the Peace and Judge of Probate. He died May 27, 1799, leaving some MS. comments on the New Testament, and other interesting literary relics. (See p. 187.) Children :

i. Elizabeth, b. Feb. 19, 1741, m. William Dexter, of Cranston, R.I.
ii. John, b. July 21, 1742, d. in infancy.
iii. Margaret, b. July 17, 1743, m. Richard Bacon, Providence, R.I.
iv. John, b. Dec. 18, 1744, m. 1764, Eunice Dixon and had 15 ch.—8 sons and 7 daughters ; lived in Cornwallis, was Custos of the County, d. 1836, a. 91.
v. Catherine, b. Nov. 11, 1746, m. John Beckwith, jun.
vi. Handley, b. Oct. 9, 1748, d. in Nov.
vii. Rebecca, b. Nov. 8, 1750, m. Samuel Beckwith.
viii. Anthony, b. 1754 ; was a soldier in American Army.
ix. Rev. Thomas Handley, b. Jan. 17, 1756, m. (1st) Mary, dau. of John Huston, of Cornwallis, (2nd) 1786, Jane Harding, of Boston, (3rd) 1820, Mrs. Mary Briggs, Portland Me., (4th) Mary Dunn. He came to Annapolis County about 1790, settled on the farm owned more recently by Calvin Corbett, and in 1807 removed to a lot in Nictaux, on which a grandson now or lately lived. He d. Oct. 11, 1830. Ch.: 1, Jane, b. Oct. 20. 1777, m. Nov., 1798, John M. Morse ; 2, Margaret, b. Sept. 8, 1779, m. George Troop ; 3, John H., b. June 12, 1781, m. (1st) March, 1801, Hopestead Barnaby, (2nd) Ann Prince, *née* Johnston ; 4, Ann, b. Aug. 6, 1784, m. Daniel Lovett ; (by 2nd wife) : 5, Helen, m. William D. Randall ; 6, Mary, m. George Fitch ; 7, Thomas H., d. unm.; 8, Samuel Lord, b. 1803, m. (1st) Oct. 25, 1827, Mercy Fitzrandolph,(2nd) Ann Tomlinson *née* Schafner ; 9, Joseph Wheelock, m. Jan. 25, 1824, Theresa, dau. of Robert Charlton ; 10, Eliza, m. John Quirk.

By second wife :

x. William Allen, b. Nov. 8, 1757, d. aged about 85, m. Nov. 20, 1777, Ann, dau. of Samuel Osborne: Ch.: 1, Rebecca, b. June 28, 1779, m. April 28, 1795, John Barnaby ; 2, Rev. William, b. Nov. 29, 1781, m. (1st) Feb. 24, 1803, Mary McGowan Dickey, (2nd) Eliza A., dau. of his uncle Thomas Holmes Chipman, and had 21 ch., one of the eldest, the late W. H. Chipman, M.P, and the youngest, HIS HONOR JUDGE CHIPMAN, of Kentville ; 3, Handley, b. July 25, 1784, m. (1st) Oct. 4, 1809, Polly Burbidge, (2nd) June 19, 1815, Annie Hoyt ; 4, Sarah, b. Aug. 10, 1788, m. Sept. 3, 1805, James R., son of Phineas Lovett ; 5, Hon. Samuel, b. Oct. 18, 1790, d. Nov. 10, 1891, m. (1st) May 16, 1815, Elizabeth Gesner, (2nd), Jessie Hardie ; 6, Anna, b. Dec. 16, 1795, m. Thomas, son of Phineas Lovett.
xi. Nancy, b. Oct. 6, 1772, m. May 27, 1793, Capt. Abner Morse.
xii. Thomas Holmes, b. (in N. S.) Jan. 17, 1777, m. Nov. 10, 1798, Elizabeth, dau. of Israel Andrews: Ch.: 1, Handley ; 2, Israel, both b. 1799, d. same year ; 3, Wm. Handley, b. Feb. 10. 1801, lived at Bridgetown ; m. (1st) Elizabeth, dau. of Joseph Troop ; (2nd) Lorena, dau. of Jonathan Woodbury ; 4, James Andrews, b. Dec. 26, 1802, d. 1823 ; 5, Wentworth Allen, b. Nov. 10, 1804, m. June 23, 1831, Mary Jane Troop ; 6, Eliza A., b. July 3, 1807, m. Rev. William Chipman ; 7, Noble, b. Feb. 1810, d. young ; 8, John

A., b. May 18, 1812, m. Feb. 25, 1836, Elizabeth, dau. of Alpheus Harris ; 9, Zachariah, b. April 18, 1814, lived at St. Stephen, N.B., father of Lady Tilley, 2nd wife of Sir S. L. Tilley ; 10, Sarah M., b. April 22, 1816, d. May ; 11, Harriet, b. Aug. 19, 1818.

xiii. Zachariah, b. March 20, 1779, m. Nov. 29, 1800, Abigail, dau. of James and Mary (Dodge) Brown, Wenham, Mass., widow of Joseph Shaw, Yarmouth ; lived in Yarmouth, d. July, 1, 1860 : Ch.: 1, Bethia, b. Dec. 10, 1801, m. Sept. 11, 1828, John C. Wilson, of Wilmot ; 2, Thomas Dane, b. July 27, 1803, m. Mary Alice, dau. of Rev. Harris Harding, grandf. of Lewis Chipman, Barrister, Yarmouth ; 3, Rev. Holmes, b. Dec. 10, 1804, m. Jan., 1827, Eliza, dau. of Alexander Bayne ; 4, Abigail, b. May 3, 1806, m. Jan. 27, 1825, Jacob Flint ; 5, Zachariah, b. May 17, 1813, d. in Oct. ; 6, Nancy Jane, b. April 25, 1816, m. Obed McKenna.

xiv. Major, b. Dec. 4, 1780, m. Nov. 25, 1802, Elizabeth, dau. of Wm. Bishop, lived near Lawrencetown, Custos, etc., d. March 28, 1871 : Ch.: 1, Samuel B., (M.P.P.), b. Aug. 2, 1803, m. Lovicia Marshall ; 2, Nancy, b. March 2, 1805, d. young ; 3, Edward, b. Nov. 2, 1807, d. young ; 4, Lavinia, b. Feb. 2, 1811, m. William Morse.

xv. Stephen, b. June 29, 1784, m. (1st) March 24, 1804, Nancy Tupper, (2nd) 1847, Jane Tupper, of St. John, N.B.: Ch.: 1, Miner Tupper, b. Dec. 9, 1805, d. Nov. 2, 1826 ; 2, Maria, b. Feb. 15, 1807, d. Aug. 11, 1824 ; 3, Alfred, b. Aug. 9, 1809, d. 1831, unm.; (by 2nd wife) : 4, Nancy Maria, b. July 2, 1848, m. (1st) Rev. Donald Gordon, (2nd) Thomas Kelly.

The sixth child of John Chipman, the immigrant, was Samuel,[2] b. April 15th, 1661 ; he was father of Rev. John,[3] b. Feb. 16, 1691. The Rev. John was father of Ward[4] Chipman, b. 1754, graduate of Harvard, a Loyalist, who was father of Hon. Ward[5] Chipman, Chief Justice of New Brunswick.

Chute. All the numerous family of Chute in this and the neighboring counties are descended from John Chute, who was born at Byfield, in Rowley, Mass., June, 1792, and married at Timberlane, now Hampstead, N.H., Judith, dau. of Benjamin and Sarah Foster, a sister of the Isaac and Ezekiel who founded the Nova Scotia families of Foster. He was great-great-grandson of Lionel Chute, the noted school-teacher of the infant town of Ipswich, who came over from Dedham, Essex County, England, in 1634, and was of a family that came over with William the Conqueror. Baron Le Chute commanded a regiment of Norman troops at the battle of Hastings. John Chute came here in 1759 and was probably the first artificer in iron to settle in Granville. The lot he settled on was in recent times still occupied by the late Dimock Chute in his lifetime. He died November, 1791. The County of Annapolis in every section owes much to the thrift and energy of the descendants of John Chute. Children:

i. Samuel, b. Feb. 16, 1746-7, drowned Nov. 12, 1786, m. July 11, 1768, Sarah, dau. of Nathaniel Barnes : Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. Dec. 31, 1768, m. Joseph Weare ; 2, Mary, b. Dec. 24, 1770, m.

Ebenezer Woodworth; 3, Daniel, b. Oct. 7, 1772, m. Sarah Weare; 4, Abraham, b. Feb. 18, 1775, m. Mehitable Foster; 5, William, b. June 2, 1777, m. Mary Marshall; 6, Sarah, b. July 9, 1779; 7, Samuel, b. Aug. 5, 1781; 8, Prior, b. Dec. 18, 1783, m. Elizabeth Randall, d. 1820; 9, Rachel, b. Dec. 29, 1785, m. Solomon Marshall, June, 1805.

ii. John, b. April 7, 1748, d. May 7, 1748.

iii. Hannah, b. Sept. 16, 1749, d, Nov. 1, 1749.

iv. John, b. April 9, 1752, m. Mary, dau. of Capt. Paul Crocker, of Lunenburg, Mass., moved to "The Joggin," near Digby, d. March 8, 1841: Ch.: 1, Joanna, b. July 9, 1772, m. 1799, Timothy Brooks; 2, Crocker, b. Jan. 23, 1774, m. 1797, Cynthia Dodge, moved to Lunenburg, Mass.; 3, Elizabeth, P., b. April 18, 1776, m. 1792, Richard Chandler, from Yorkshire, England; 4, George Washington, b. April, 27, 1778, m. 1797, Anna Bathrick, and lived in Lunenburg, Mass.; 5, Daniel Austin, b. March 16, 1780, d. 1796; 6, Paul, b. 1782, m. Aug. 5, 1804, Bethia, dau. of Dr. Azor and Gloriana Betts, lived at "The Joggin," near Digby; 7, Mary, b. April 19, 1785, m. (1st) 1801, Solomon Farnesworth, (2nd) Feb. 15, 1813, John Ellis; 8, Lydia, b. April 19, 1785, m. Samuel Foster; 9, Peter Prescott, b. May 27, 1787, m. 1808, Lucy, dau. of David Randall, d. 1865; 10, Eleanor, b. July 11, 1789, m. James, son of John and Sarah Adams; 11 John, b. Oct. 14, 1790, m. Dec. 26, 1813, Abigail, dau. of Stephen Jones, and lived near "The Joggin," Digby; 12, Leah Fowler, b. April 7, 1793, m. 1814, Robert, son of Jacob and Mary Woodman; 13, Joseph Fowler, b. Feb. 21, 1795, m. July 25, 1816, Susan Harris Pelham, lived near Digby.

v. Benjamin, b. Sept. 27, 1754, m. 1777, Martha, dau. of Ezekiel and Mary Foster: Ch.: 1, James, b. April 19, 1778, m. Feb. 5, 1801, Phebe, dau. of Thomas Chute; 2, Mary, b. May 21, 1780, m. Jan. 8, 1801, Aquila, son of John and Patience Longley; Seth, b. Sept. 15, 1782, m. Dec. 16, 1805, Ann, dau. of Caleb Fowler; 4, Hannah, b. Dec. 16, 1784, m. Handley Chute; 5, Benjamin, b. April, 14, 1787, m. Oct. 1808, Hepzibah, dau. of Israel and Susanna Fellows; 6, Ezekiel, b. Jan. 6, 1790, m. March 11, 1819, Lydia, dau. of Aaron Morse; 7, Joseph, b. Dec. 9, 1792, m. Nov. 29, 1831, Theresa, dau. of Amos Randall; 8, Eaton, b. Aug. 25, 1795, d. Sept. 22, 1796; 9, Martha, b. Aug. 17, 1799, m. Nov. 18, 1823, Isaac Woodbury, jun.

vi. Thomas, b. March 13, 1757, m. 1778, Sybil, dau. of William and Lydia Marshall: Ch.: 1, Catharine, b. March 1, 1797, m. John Weare; 2, Thomas, b. June 14, 1780, m. (1st) Oct. 30, 1804, Mary, dau. of John and Eunice Troop, (2nd) Dec. 7, 1818, Jane, dau. of David Shook, lived at Bear River, Annapolis County, and moved to Malahide, Ont.; 3, Phebe, b. Jan. 13, 1782, m. James Chute; 4, Susannah, b. March 12, 1784, d. Oct., 1797; 5, Esther, b. Oct. 19, 1785, m. July 7, 1807, Rev. Gilbert Spurr; 6, Sarah, b. Oct. 30, 1787, m. Dec. 16, 1811, William, son of Isaac Marshall; 7, Andrew, b. Sept. 15, 1789, m. Feb. 17, 1814, Olive, dau. of Eleazer Woodworth; 8, Abel, b. Oct. 5, 1791, m. Dec. 7, 1817, Sophia Potter, lived on Hessian Line road, a licentiate preacher, father of Harris Harding Chute, M.P.P.; 9, Elizabeth, b. June 30, 1793, d. Dec. 22, 1813; 10, Calvin, b. Oct. 23, 1795, m. Dec. 27, 1819, Maria, dau. of Joseph and Maria Gilliland; 11, John, b. Sept. 25, 1797, m. Sept. 25, 1821, Eliza, dau. of Joseph Potter, 2nd jun.; 12, Susan, b. Oct. 22, 1799, m. Abram Chute; 13, Binea, b. June 23, 1801, m. Nov. 12, 1829, Louisa Jane Foster; 14, Sophia, b. June 26, 1803, m. Boemer Chute; 15, Hicks, b. Aug. 14, 1806, died Aug. 18, 1806; 16, James Edward, b. May 5, 1810, m. Sarah Matilda, dau. of Asa Foster.

vii. Sarah, b. Nov. 3, 1758, m. 1777, Thomas Hicks.
viii. James, b. Jan. 22, 1762 (the first in Granville), m. (1st) 1783, Elizabeth, dau. of Abner and Anna Morse, (2nd) Jan. 28, 1802, Elizabeth, dau. of John and Sylvia (Harris) Wright: Ch.: 1, Abner, b. Dec. 2, 1783, m. Feb. 28, 1807, Sophia, dau. of Edward and Lois McBride, killed by lightning, Aug. 15, 1842; 2, John, b. 1785, d. 1797; 3, Silas, b. June 15, 1787, m. Nov. 26, 1812, Mary Roach, lived at Upper Clarence; 4, Jacob, b. Feb., 1789, d. Oct. 19, 1817; 5, Handley, b. Dec. 13, 1790, m. Jan. 13, 1814, Hannah, dau. of Benjamin and Martha Chute, lived at Chute's Cove (now Hampton); 6, Helen, b. 1792, d. Nov., 1797; 7, David Morse, b. Jan. 3, 1795, m. Jan. 20, 1818, Sarah, dau. of Richard and Elizabeth Chandler; 8, Ann, b. 1797, d. soon; (by 2nd wife): 9, Dimock, b. Jan. 17, 1803, m. Sept. 26, 1850, Minetta Ann, dau. of Ezekiel and Lydia A. Chute; 10, Sydney, b. Oct., 1804, d. June 17, 1826; 11, Christopher Harris, b. Jan. 3, 1807, d. Aug. 2, 1853; 12, Angus, b. May 14, 1809, teacher in St. Louis, 1860; 13, George, b. March 30, 1812, d. May 19, 1823; 14, Rev. Obed, b. Aug. 8, 1814, m. Mary Jane, dau. of Charles and Janet Cox; 15, Caroline Hadassa, b. March 28, 1819, d. April 3, 1886; 16, Elizabeth Charlotte, b. Aug. 13, 1822, d. Nov. 29, 1843.
ix. Hannah, b. Jan. 22, 1764, m. 1785, Obadiah Morse.
x. Susan, b. Dec. 10, 1767, m. Feb. 5, 1788, Amos Randall.

Rev. Obed Chute, M.A., born near Bridgetown, was a prominent, able and much esteemed Baptist clergyman, and father of Rev. Arthur Crawley Chute, now the accomplished and able pastor of the First Baptist Church, Halifax.

The reader is referred to the full and very valuable genealogies of this family and its connections by Mr. W. E. Chute.

Clark. William Clark, a highly respectable tenant farmer of Yorkshire, came with his family of four children and nephew, John Bath, in 1774, his wife having died just before his departure from Hull. On his arrival at Halifax he bought a lot in Granville from Mr. Fletcher, the Deputy Provost Marshal of the County. In about a year he returned to England, and when he came out again, brought with him his brother John, who, with his wife and five daughters, settled in the eastern suburbs of Bridgetown, on the farm more lately known as the Joseph Troop farm, where he died in 1782, leaving no male issue. William Clark married (1st) 1759, Dorothy ——, and (2nd) Mary, dau. of Mrs. James,* a widow, of Annapolis, formerly of Kilkenny, Ireland, who married for a second husband, Robert Walker, and had children:

i. Mary, m. Andrew Walker.
ii. William, b. 1764, m. Elizabeth Oatley, and had ch.: 1, William, m. (1st) 1833, Henrietta Durland, (2nd) Mary Eaton Fellows; 2,

* In the biographical sketch Mr. Calnek says he married the daughter of a Widow James, and that there were no children by the union. In the genealogy he says he married the Widow James, and mentions several children born in Nova Scotia.

Mary, m. Amos Dillon, of Digby; 3, Richard, m. Susan Harris; 4, John, m. (1st) Ann Whitman, (2nd) Emma Tanner; 5, Elizabeth, m. Benjamin Langley; 6, Dorothea, d. unm.; 7, Thomas; 8, Mary, unm.

iii. Richard, b. 1766, m. Mary Miller (dau. of Francis): Ch.: 1, Maria, m. James Harris; 2, Elizabeth, m. Joseph Harris; 3, William, m. Joanna Dunn; 4, Rachel, m. Jacob Dodge; 5, Nancy, m. Cooper Beals; 6, Joseph, m. Maria Morgan; 7, Mary, m. David Bent Longley; 8, Richard, m. Mary Elizabeth Warwick.

iv. Rachel, b. 1768, m. Francis Miller (his 2nd wife).

By second wife:

v. Robert, b. 1777, in N.S., m. Catherine Bohaker: Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1804, m. David Foster; 2, Joseph, b. 1805, m. Hannah Gilmore, *née* Eagleson; 3, James, b. 1806, d. unm.; 4, James, b. 1808, d. unm.; 5, Charlotte, b. 1810, m. Thomas Granville Walker; 6, Richard, b. 1812, m. Elizabeth Ann Shafner; 7, Charles, b. 1814, m. Barbara Beck, *née* Byrne; 8, Daniel, b. 1816, m. (1st) Eliza Wheelock (dau. of Sumner), (2nd) Louisa Hall; 9, Robert, b. 1820, m.; 10, Rachel, b. 1818, m. Thomas W. Chesley, Q.C.; 11, Edmund, b. 1822, m. Irene Walker; 12, Hannah Elizabeth, b. 1823, m. Henry Greenwood.

vi. James, b. 1779, m. Mary McGrath: Ch.: 1, James, b. 1818, d. 1833; 2, Robert, b. 1819, d. 1822; 3, Felinda, b. 1822, m. (1st) Leonard McCormick, (2nd) Jonathan Taylor; 4, Robert Miner, b. 1827, unm.; 5, Eliza Ann, b. 1824, m. Robert H. Bath, J.P.; 6, Joseph Norman, b. 1829, d. 1884; 7, Rachel Adelaide, b. 1833, m. Abner Troop.

vii. John, b. 1782, m. Mary Robinson: Ch.: 1, Amoret, m. Sidney Poole; 2, Mary, m. William Gates; 3, John, m. Louisa Berry; 4, Tamar, m. James Van Buskirk; 5, Robert Ralph, m. Maria Durland; 6, Nancy, m. Andrew Lee; 7, Caroline, m. Albert Lyons; 8, Wallace, d. unm.

viii. Thomas, b. 1784, m. Mary Crocker: Ch.: 1, Elijah, m. (in Fredericton, N.B.); 2, Gilbert, m. (in Yarmouth); 3, Nancy; perhaps others.

ix. Henry, b. 1786, m. Sarah Robinson: Ch.: 1, Henrietta, m. Edward Foster Thorne; 2, William Henry, m. (1st) Prudence Reagh, (2nd) Ceretha Chute; 3, Mary Matilda, m. John King; 4, Edwin Ruthven, m. Lydia Steadman (in U.S.A.).

x. Nancy, b. 1788, m. Gilbert Fowler.

xi. Joseph, b. 1791, d. unm.

CORBITT. ISAIAH CORBITT, whose name is found in the census of 1768, came, tradition says, from some place "back of Boston," with the other early Massachusetts settlers. He had, besides perhaps others, a son Ambrose Alvan, whose name appears in the capitation tax list of 1794. AMBROSE ALVAN CORBITT was married twice; the name of the first wife I do not know; the second was Martha Clark. He had children, perhaps besides others:

i. Ichabod, b. 1780, "died March 30, 1861, aged 80." Having received an injury to his knee which hindered him from following out-door pursuits, he is said to have begun teaching school at the age of 14, and followed that calling until his death. He married, 1802, Elizabeth Fairn: Ch.: 1, Ambrose Alvan, b. April 5, 1803, m. — Dunn, d. Dec. 22, 1865; 2, Benjamin Uriah Stearns, b. Jan. 11, 1808, d. Feb., 1879, unm.; 3, Sarah, b. March 28, 1810,

d. Nov. 17, same year ; 4, William Henry, b. Apr. 6, 1812, m. April 7, 1833, Freelove Kniffen ; 5, Elizabeth Ann, b. Dec. 28, 1814, m. George Orde ; 6, Mary Louisa, b. April, 17, 1817, m. John Bacon ; 7, Arthur Wellington, b. April 30, 1819, m. Mary E. Holland, and was long a leading merchant and lately postmaster of Annapolis ; 8, James Edward, b. April 12, 1822, m. June 20, 1847, Elizabeth LeCain ; 9, Helen Sophia, b. April 4, 1824, m. John Rice ; 10, Caroline, m. John Spurr.

By second wife :

ii. John, b. 1783, m. Feb. 8, 1817, Maria Marshall (dau. of John) : Ch : 1, Mary Ann, b. Aug. 8, 1818, m. Henry Gilliatt ; 2, John, b. Sept. 10, 1820, d. unm. ; 3, Eliza, m. John Samuel Woodworth ; 4, Selina, m. Dudley Woodworth ; 5, Calvin, m. Lucy Croscup ; 6, Alfred, d. unm. ; 7, Charlotte, m. Solomon Marshall ; 8, Maria Sawyer, d. unm. ; 9, Melvina, m. Peter Nickerson ; 10, Ada, m. Robert Marshall (son of Stephen), of Marshalltown.

iii. Ariel, m. Margaret Foster ; several ch.

COVERT. WILLIAM COVERT, of a very respectable old New York Dutch family, and brother Abraham, Loyalists, came here in 1783, and first sat down in Wilmot, but soon William moved to Granville, and Abraham to New Brunswick. The late Hon. John Covert, and Rev. W. S. Covert, Rector of Grand Manan, N.B., are descendants of the latter. About the same time, John, a cousin of these brothers, settled in lower Granville. William Covert married Charlotte McBride and had children :

i. Edward, m. 1819, Rosanna Wade and had ch. : 1, Osborne, b. 1820, m. Deborah Fraser ; 2, Charlotte, b. 1822, m. Alfred Young ; 3, Keziah, b. 1823, unm. ; 4, David W., b. 1824, m. Mary Anthony ; 5, William, b. 1826, unm. ; 6, Elizabeth, b. 1829, m. Isaiah Young ; 7, Phebe A., b. 1831, m. William White ; 8, James, b. 1834, d. (at sea) unm. ; 9, Augusta, m, Robert Hill Young ; 10, Daniel W., m. (1st) Hannah Maria ——, (2nd) Martha E. Hogan.

ii. Elizabeth, unm.

iii. Abraham, m. 1823, Sarah Young (dau. of Samuel) : Ch. : 1, Mary Ann, b. 1824, m. Enos Flewelling ; 2, Amoret, b. 1825, m. Samuel Flewelling ; 3, George A., b. 1828, m. Prudence Bent ; 4, Charles W., b. 1833, m. (1st) Woodbury, (2nd) Sanders, *née* —— ; 5, Samantha, b. 1836, m. Bayard Margeson.

iv. John, d. unm.

v. Mary, m. Thomas Wade.

vi. Japhet, m. Margaret Kinsman (no issue).

vii. Phebe, m. Elisha Fitch.

viii. Sophia, d. unm.

ix. William, m. Mary Ann Crosbie : Ch. : 1, John, m. Ann Gesner ; 2, Robert, unm. ; 3, Charles, m. Hannah Nutter ; 4, Samuel, d. unm. ; 5, Amelia, umm. ; 6, Elizabeth, m. Russell Longmire ; 7, Frederic, m. Mary Hester Longmire ; 8, Gertrude, unm. ; 9, Caroline, unm. ; 10, Fenwick, d. (at sea) unm. ; 11, Herbert, d. unm.

JOHN COVERT, cousin of the preceding, born in New York, 1754, m. Mary Mussels. Children :

i. Mary, d. unm.

ii. William, m. Matilda Snow: Ch.: 1, Luke, m. (1st) Elizabeth Everett, (2nd) Ceretha Jane Tanch; 2, Jonathan D., d. unm.; 3, Sarah H., m. (1st) James Woodland, (2nd) William Tracey; 4, Mary E., d. unm.; 5, William Henry, d. unm.; 6, James (abroad); 7, Matilda Wylie, d. unm.; 8, Hannibal, d. unm.; 9, Georgina, m. Myrus Branscombe (no issue).
iii. Luke, d. unm.
iv. John, d. unm.
v. Edward Thorne, m. Maria Roop: Ch.: 1, Mary Ann, m. Joseph Barnett; 2, John, m. Mary Elizabeth Chute (dau. of Ezra); 3, Elizabeth, John Johnson; 4, Caroline, m. Samuel Ryder; 5, Cynthia, m. George Peabody; 6, Emma Eliza, m. Richard Burpee Chute; 7, Edward Wallace, m. Caroline Croscup.

Cropley. William Cropley, a native of Suffolk County, England, came here in 1783, a widower, with one child, a son about twelve years old, and settled on Hanley Mountain, which was for some years the most populous and prosperous settlement in Wilmot. Mr. Cropley, being a member of the Church of England, officiated as lay-reader in the absence of the rector, Rev. Mr. Wiswall, for many years. He was also the first school-master there, being appointed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. His son, John Cropley, born in 1771, married in 1794, Mary, daughter of Anthony Marshall, and died in 1858. He had children:

i. William, b. 1794, m. 1813, Elizabeth Hall: Ch.: 1, John, b. 1814, m. Charlotte Durland; 2, Mary, b. 1816, m. Henry, son of Eliphalet Banks; 3, William H., b. 1819, m. — Foster; 4, James, b. 1822, m. Martha Hall; 5, Peter, d. unm.
ii. Mary, b. 1800, m. James Downie.
iii. Henry Alline, b. 1803, m. Maria Miller: Ch.: 1, Sarah; 2, Bamford, m. Lucinda Milbury; 3, Maria, unm.; 4, Lavinia, m. (1st) Isaac Milbury, (2nd) Henry Pearce; 5, Charlotte, m. Edward Pearce.
iv. Catharine, b. 1805, m. George Miller.
v. John, b. 1807, m. Louisa Miller: Ch.: 1, James Edward, m. Sarah Hawkesworth, now Mrs. J. F. Saunders, Digby; 2, Sarah Elizabeth, m. Robert Miller; 3, Mary, m. Oldham Bowlby (no issue); 4, Adelaide, m. George Mosher; 5, Alexander Stephen, m. Adelia Kerr (no issue); 6, Jacob, m. Alma Lyle; 7, Emma, d. unm; 8, Wallace, m. Mary Stephenson; 9, Anna, m. William B. Hawkesworth, of Digby, now of Marblehead.
vi. Rachel, b. 1809, m. 1830, Ambrose Gates.
vii. Edward, b. 1813, m. Susan Graves (several children).
viii. David, b. 1815, m. Amoret Starratt (several children).
x. James, b. 1818, m. Rebecca Elliott.

Croscup. Ludwig Croscup, of German extraction, came here among the Loyalists of 1783 with a considerable family, and settled not far from Goat Island, Granville. He had been married in New York. He had children:

i. John, b. 1775, m. (1st) — Fowler, (2nd) Ann Quereau: Ch.: 1, John, m. Mary Hall; 2, Esther, m. James Shafner; 3, Benjamin,

m. 1823, Ann Healy ; 4, Edward Fowler, m. Catharine Shafner ; (by 2nd wife) : 5, Sarah Ann, m. George Dexter, M.D. ; 6, Stephen de Gros, m. Sarah Anderson ; 7, Joshua, m. Rebecca Ann Hicks (she d. Nov. 26, 1889).

ii. Ann, b. 1777, m. John Quereau.

iii. Daniel, b. 1779, m. (1st) 1808, Lucy Hall, (2nd) Sarah Quereau : Ch. : 1, Mary, b. 1809, m. Joseph Anderson ; 2, Atalanta, b. 1811, m. Isaac Bogart ; 3, George, b. 1813, m. Jane Bogart ; 4, Lucy, b. 1815, m. Nelson Bogart ; 5, Daniel, b. 1817, d. 1824 ; 6, William, b. 1819, m. Hannah Amelia Schafner ; (by 2nd wife) : 7, Sarah Elizabeth, b. 1825, d. unm. ; 8, Daniel, b. 1826, unm. ; 9, Susan, b. 1829, m. Robert Purdy.

iv. George, b. 1781, m. 1809, Martha Hall : Ch. : 1, Joseph William, b 1810, m. Armanilla Ricketson ; 2, John, b. 1812, m. (1st) Eliza Hall, (2nd) —.

v. Ludwig, b. 1783, m. 1807, Elizabeth Calkin : Ch. : 1, George Lampson, b. 1808, d. unm. ; 2, Ludwig Zebediah, b. 1810 (no issue) ; 3, Ezekiel Henry, b. 1813, m. (1st) Ann Bent, (2nd) Eliza Crouse ; 4, William, b. 1818, m. Hannah Cutten ; 5, Mary Ann, b. 1822, d. unm. ; 6, Caroline E., b. 1829, m. Captain John Henry Bogart.

Daniels. 1. Asa Daniels was an original grantee of the township of Annapolis, coming in the *Charming Molly*. He settled near the centre of the township, and his descendants still reside in that portion of it. The family is of English origin, and the immigrant ancestor was among the early settlers in the old colonies. He was born 1733, and married Mary Rider, who was born 1731, and died 1810. He died 1813. Children :

(2) i. Ephraim, b. 1761.
(3) ii. Joseph, b. 1763.
iii. Deborah, m. Nathaniel Langley.

2. Ephraim Daniels, born 1761, married Anna Langley, and had children :

i. Levi, b. ——, m. April 13, 1809, Elizabeth Woodbridge : Ch. : 1, Cyrus, b. April 18, 1810 ; 2, Israel Fellows, b. Sept. 28, 1811 ; 3, Stephen, b. Oct. 14, 1813 ; 4, Samuel, b. May 25, 1816 ; 5, John Elliott, b. Jan. 25, 1818.

ii. Asa, m. Nov. 24, 1819, Frances Oliver : Ch. : 1, James, b. Aug. 14, 1821 ; 2, Benjamin, b. July 2, 1824.

iii. Ephraim, m. Dec. 25, 1828 : Ch. : 1, Jeremiah, b. June 12, 1831 ; 2, Israel Edmund, b. May 31, 1833 ; 3, Harriet Elizabeth, b. Sept. 22, 1835 ; 4, William Henry, b. Sept. 17, 1838 ; 5, Phebe Jane, b. June 25, 1842 ; 6, Sydney Harris, b. April 30, 1846 ; 7, Norman Wallace, b. April 12, 1851.

iv. James, d. 1820

v. Benjamin, m. Ann Beardsley.*

* Rev. John Beardsley, of Poughkeepsie, N.Y., b. at Stratford, Conn., 1732, was in 1778, Chaplain of the Loyal American Regiment, commanded by Col. Beverley Robinson. In 1783 he came with his regiment to St. John, N.B., lived at Maugerville and Kingston, and d. 1810. His youngest son, Hon. Bartholomew C., prominent in public life in New Brunswick, d. at Toronto, 1855. Other descendants have

vi. Joel, m. Dec. 31, 1830, Eliza Langley: Ch.: 1, Busby, b. Nov. 27, 1831; 2, Charlotte, b. Feb. 28, 1832; 3, Winchester, b. July 25, 1835; 4, Asa, b. Aug. 18, 1838; 5, Hennigar, b. June 6, 1844; 6, Alice Isadora, b. April 23, 1853.
vii. Patience, m. Thomas Moore.
viii. Sarah, d. Aug. 2, 1821.

3. Joseph Daniels was born 1763, married June 13, 1786, Mary Langley: Children:

i. Joseph, b. April 18, 1788, m. Aug. 24, 1809, Mercy Tufts: Ch.: 1, Simeon, b. Oct. 21, 1810; 2, Phebe, b. June 13, 1813; 3, Hannah, b. Sept. 30, 1816; 4, George, b. Sept. 26, 1821.
ii. Mary, b. July 19, 1791, m. (1st) Robert Thomas, (2nd) Thomas Callahan.
iii. Phebe, b. Oct. 29, 1793, m. Thomas Margeson.
iv. Asa, b. Nov. 18, 1795, m. Margaret Balsor.
v. Alpheus, b. Aug. 13, 1798, m. Oct. 5, 1821, Mary Oliver: Ch.: 1, Eliza Ann, b. Jan. 18, 1823; 2, David Oliver, b. July 6, 1825; 3, Caroline Francis, b. Sept. 27, 1831.
vi. Zephaniah, b. May 27, 1801, m. Nov. 4, 1829, Sarah Langley: Ch.: 1, William Burton, b. April 27, 1833; 2, Sarah Ann, b. Aug. 28, 1836.
vii. Zachariah, b. Aug. 13, 1804, m. Jan. 16, 1823, Horatia Nelson Balsor: Ch.: 1, Wellington, b. Jan. 24, 1824; 2, Samuel, b. April 14, 1826; 3, Mahala Elizabeth, b. July 6, 1828; 4, Ebenezer Rice, b. July 15, 1831; 5, John Henry, b. Jan. 11, 1834; 6, Alexander C., b. July 25, 1836; 7, Thersey (Theresa?), b. Mar. 22, 1839; 8, Alpheus, b. Aug. 31, 1841; 9, Mahala Elizabeth, b. April 3, 1842. (Wellington Daniels, eldest son of Zachariah, is father of Orlando T. Daniels, Esq., Barrister-at-law, Bridgetown.)
viii. Eli, b. April 4, 1806.
ix. Beriah Bent, b. April 8, 1808, m. Nov. 7, 1833, Susan Langley; 5 ch.
x. William, b. 1810.

Davies. John William Davies, of Wales, came to Annapolis 1749, married in 1753, Ann ——, and died in 1794. He left at least one son, George Davies, who married January 4, 1791, Mary, daughter of Abraham Spurr, and had children:

i. Mary Elizabeth, b. May 15, 1792, m. May 4, 1816, John George Struve.
ii. Ann Martha, b. Dec. 1, 1793, m. March 8, 1815, Fred. LeCain. She d. Nov. 30, 1819.
iii. Thomas Harris, b. Jan. 11, 1799. Rev. Thomas Harris Davies went to St. John, left the Church of England for the Methodist, was ordained, and went to Sheffield, N.B., in 1823, and preached on various circuits in the two provinces, including Cape Breton.

been conspicuous in that province. Col. Beverley Robinson Beardsley, probably a son, m. Sarah Hatch, and lived at or near Port Lorne, Annapolis County, many years: Ch.: 1, John, m.; 2, Sarah, m. Thomas Rhodes; 3, Samuel Campfield, m. Lavinia Margeson; 4, Beverley R., jun., m. Nellie Brinton; 5, Elizabeth, m. David Marshall; 6, Anna, m. Edward Moore (his 2nd wife); Patience, d. young. The name still flourishes in the county.—[Ed.]

He was a faithful and able minister. He married Lavinia Drew: Ch.: 1, George S., m. Mary Ann Schmidt; 2, Mary E., m. (1st) Owen Chapman, (2nd) William Etter; 3, Lavinia Drew; 4, Anna M., m. Nicholas Mosher; 5, Sarah E., m. John H. Hicks; 6, Thomas William, removed to New Hampshire; 7, Charlotte N.; 8, Edward James; 9, Theresa C.; 10, Henrietta A., m. Enoch Dodge; 11, Augusta B., m. Rev. George E. Tufts, Bangor, Me.; 12, Emma S., m. Robert Johnston.

iv. William Henry, b. 1804.

Davoue. Col. Frederic Davoue was a prominent figure in the social and public life of the county after the arrival of the Loyalists. He married (1st) Bethia, daughter of Gabriel Purdy, (2nd) Bethia Sterns. This lady was a widow, and had by first husband a daughter, Margaret Ann, who married Sereno U. Jones, Esq., of Weymouth, his second wife, and became the mother of Sterns Jones, Esq., of Weymouth, and others. Eliza, a daughter by his first marriage, married 1792, Luke Spenser. Bethia Ann, his eldest daughter by second marriage, married January 4, 1814, John Robertson, Esq., whose daughter Charlotte married Reed Willett, and is now living in Annapolis; several descendants. Floriana, another daughter, married January 29, 1815, Anthony Vancrossen Somersill Forbes, of H. M. 64th Regiment, father of Dr. Forbes, M.P., and grandfather of Judge Forbes, of Liverpool, N.S. Col. Davoue died February 4, 1811, aged 87, and is buried in a small lot near the "mile board," where some of the de St. Croix family, also Huguenots, rest.

De Lancey.* Col. James De Lancey was born September 6, 1747, and married Martha Tippett. He died May 2, 1804. Children:

i. William, b. April 9, 1783, d. July, 1869, m. Oct. 2, 1808, Elizabeth, dau. of Stephen De Lancey: Ch.: 1, Maria Esther, b. Aug. 6, 1810; 2, Stephen James, b. Aug. 20, 1812; 3, William Peter, b. March 3, 1814.
ii. Maria, b. Jan. 23, 1786, m. 1809, William Gilbert Bailey.
iii. Elizabeth, b. Aug. 27, 1789, m. Feb. 1, 1808, Henry Goldsmith (no issue).
iv. James, b. April, 1789, d. 1813, in Canada.
v. John, b. June, 1791.
vi. Oliver, b. April 30, 1793. Killed in battle.
vii. Susan, b. April 3, 1798, d. Sept., 1813.
viii. Stephen, b. March 27, 1800, d. without issue.
ix. Peter, b. April 24, 1802, m. Elizabeth, dau. of John and Mary (Saunders) Starratt, and had two sons and several daughters.
x. Ann, b. June 10, 1804, m. Nov. 13, 1825, Stephen Bromley, son of Walter Bromley, of the Royal Acadian School, Halifax.

Delap.—In 1729 the ship *George and Ann*, Rymer master, was chartered to sail from Dublin to Philadelphia with 114 passengers; the real number on board was said to be 190. They set sail on May 29th

* See memoirs of Stephen and James De Lancey, p. 339.

provisioned for two months, but the voyage was prolonged to 135 days, during which more than half died of privation and disease. The surviving passengers suspecting a design of the captain to compass their destruction in order to possess himself of their money and effects, overpowered him and demanded that he land them at the nearest place, which proved to be Monotony Point, near Eastham, Mass. The captain proceeded with his ship to Philadelphia, where he was prosecuted for his misconduct, convicted and executed. A passenger named Delap, from Cavan, Ireland, with wife and four daughters, all died, the mother not till after the landing, leaving one son, JAMES, aged 14. He learned the trade of a blacksmith, and married Mary, daughter of Benjamin O'Kelly, at Yarmouth, Mass., June 22, 1738. She was born April 8, 1720. They lived at Barnstable, Mass., over thirty years, and then moved to Granville in the spring of 1775, probably as Loyalist refugees. He died there in 1787, aged 72. Their children were:

i. Rose, b. 1739, m. 1759, Ebenezer Scudder.
ii. Abigail, b. 1741, m. 1764, John Coleman.
iii. Catherine, b. 1743, m. Amos Otis, Barnstable.
iv. Thomas, b. 1745, died in shipwreck on Nantucket, Dec. 6, 1771.
v. Mary, b. 1747, m. Seth Backus, of Barnstable.
vi. Sarah, b, 1750, m. Capt. James (or Jonas) Farnsworth, 4 ch.
vii. Jane, b. 1752, m. 1774, Jonas Farnsworth, cousin to the ot 10 ch., 1 was Rev. James Delap Farnsworth.
viii. Hannah, b. 1765, m. Samuel Street, or Steel, captain British Navy.
ix. Temperance, b. 1757, m. Deacon Thaddeus Harris (son of Lebbeus) lived in Cornwallis, di. 1832. 5 ch.
x. James, b. 1759, m. (1st) 1779, Sarah Walker, who d. about 1828, (2nd) Elizabeth, dau. of Lieut. Samuel Pickering, of the American Army, and wid. of John Pingree (son of Moses). He d. April 17, 1841: Ch.: 1, Thomas, b. about 1780, m. Mary Ann Lloyd and had 10 ch., who were related to the celebrated Wm. Lloyd Garrison—I think cousins; 2, James. JAMES DELAP was an efficient and respected member of the Provincial Parliament, m. (1st) Mary, dau. of Isaiah Shaw, (2nd) Eliza, dau. of James Hall, 11 ch.; 3, Robert, m. Hannah Hall (dau. of Samuel); 4, William, m. Sophia, dau. of Rev. David Harris (son of Libbeus); 5, Mary, m. James Hall; 6, Jane, m. Samuel Pickup; 7, Sarah, m. Weston Hall; 8, Hannah, m. Thomas Robblee; 9, Temperance, m. Samuel Hall, jun.; 10, Abigail, d. 1867, a. 70. (The order in which these are inserted is not the order of the birth of the ch. of James.)

DE ST. CROIX. JOSHUA DE ST. CROIX, of Huguenot extraction, a prominent Loyalist, married Leah Gauladette, and had children:

i. Leah, m. Samuel Willett.
ii. Mary, m. (1st) Caleb Fowler, (2nd) Isaac Woodbury.
iii. Benjamin, lived in Prince Edward Island.
iv. Joshua, d. unm.
v. Peter, m. Euphemia Palmer: Ch.: 1, Leah, m. Thomas Sinclair, M.D.; 2, Joshua, d. unm.; 3, Benjamin, lived in U.S.; 4, Euphemia, m. Isaac Bonnett; 5, Peter Lewis, lived in U.S.

DITMARS. The Ditmars family of this county are descended from Jan Jansen, of Ditmarsen, in the Duchy of Holstein, Lower Saxony, who had a grant of land at Dutch Kills, Long Island, State of New York, in 1647. He died before 1650, early in which year his widow, Neeltie Douwe, remarried, leaving sons John[2] and Douwe,[2] or Dow. One Dow Ditmars, in 1758, held a commission as a lieutenant in a company that went under General Abercrombie to Ticonderoga. Another DOUWE or DOW DITMARS came to Nova Scotia with the Loyalists of 1783, and, according to the best information I can get, was born in 1724, and married in 1747. I cannot give the names of the ancestors intervening lineally between John[2] or Douwe[2] and him. There was also a Loyalist John J. Ditmars, who died here in 1829, aged 97. 1. DOUWE DITMARS, the Loyalist, was, in 1777, a trustee to provide fuel and other articles for the hospital on Long Island, and afterwards an ensign in the loyal forces. He had children:

(2) i. Isaac, b. 1748.
ii. Douwe, b. 1750, m. 1779, Kate Snediker: Ch.: 1, Catherine, b. 1780, m. Nicholas Jones; 2, Phebe, b. 1783; 3, Mary b. 1787, m. John Roop; 4, Sarah, b. 1790, d. 1814.
iii. John, b. 1752 m. 1776, Magdalen Vanderbilt, d. 1822: Ch: 1, Dow, b. 1777; 2, Jeremiah, b. 1779, m. Elizabeth ——, and d. 1824; 3, Catherine, b. 1781, d. 1795, 4, John, b. 1783, m. 1805, Jane Vroom, d. 1851; 5, Abigail, b. 1786, m. Henry Vroom; 6, ~~Jane~~, Isaac b. 1789, m. 1813, Lemma Vroom; 7, Magdalen, b. 1792, d. 1795; 8, Mary, b. 1794, d. 1795; 9, Catherine, b. 1796, m. Rev. Israel Potter; 10, Mary Magdalen, b. 1798, m. William L. Ray.

2. ISAAC DITMARS, born 1748, married Jane, daughter of George Vroom, and had children:

i. Douwe Isaac, b. 1772, m. 1794, Elizabeth Fowler: Ch.: 1, John Henry, b. 1795, m. (1st) Horatia Gesner, (2nd) Jane E. Burns; 2, Jane, b. 1797, m. Peter Boice; 3, Isaac, b. 1798, m. Elizabeth Spurr; 4, Gilbert Fowler, m. (1st) Welthea Ryerson, (2nd) Harriett Ruggles (dau. of Thomas H.); 5, William.
ii. Sarah, b. 1774, m. Samuel Purdy.

DODGE. JOSIAH DODGE, ancestor of the Granville family of the name, was born in Massachusetts, about 1718, and was descended from Richard Dodge, of Salem, 1638, who was son of John Dodge, of Somersetshire, England. Josiah Dodge served in the expedition against Louisburg in 1758, and in 1759 was sent to assist in the survey of that township; after completing this service he returned to his old home, and came here in 1761 with his family and the machinery for a grist mill, which he erected on the Phinney brook, so called. He married (1st) Susanna Knowlton, who died 1758, (2nd) 1760, Hannah Conant. The first grant of the township being to a number of proprietors as tenants in common on certain conditions, was voided, and a new one made in severalty, and

he was appointed to carry out the plan of the Government, and ably discharged the duty. The homestead, to which his son Benjamin succeeded, was the lot a part of which has been in this generation owned and occupied by David Phinney, about three miles west of Bridgetown: Children:

i. Josiah, b. 1740, m. Martha Wheelock.
ii. Susannah, b. 1742, m. Israel Fellows,
iii. Rhoda, b. 1744, m. Abraham Hinds.
iv. Sarah, b. 1745, m. Jonathan Leonard.
v. Asahel, b. 1751, m. 1792, Anna Walker: Ch.: 1, Asahel Walker, b. 1793, m. Elizabeth Bowlby; 2, Benjamin b. 1795, m.; 3, William, b. 1787, m. Mary Phinney; 4, Sarah, m.; 5, Josiah, m. 1819, Sarah Randall; 6, Ann, b. 1799, m. (1st) Benjamin Chesley, (2nd) Lot Phinney; 7, Susanna, m. Daniel Logan; 8, Thomas, m. Sarah Benedict.
vi. Benjamin, b. 1754, d. March, 1825, m. 1776, Tabitha Perkins: Ch.: 1, Esther, b. 1780, m. William Longley; 2, Ruth, b. 1784, m. — Rhodes; 3, Susanna, b. 1786, d. 1820; 4, Benjamin Knowlton, b. 1790, m. 1817, Abigail Addison *née* Cormery; 5, Reuben, b. 1793, m. (1st) Catharine A. Dodge, (2nd) Louisa Sanders.
vii. Phebe, b. 1758, d.
viii. Eunice, b. 1761.
ix. Mary, b. 1764.

Stephen[5] Dodge, a descendant of Tristram[1] Dodge, of Block Island, Rhode Island, through William,[2] Jeremiah,[3] Tristram,[4] was born at Oyster Bay, Long Island, N.Y., 1748, came with his wife Blanche Shadwin and several children, a worthy Loyalist of 1783, and settled first in Granville, but afterwards in Wilmot, where he obtained a grant to the rear of the river grants, north of Middleton West. He died 1808. Children:

i. Sarah, b. 1771, m. David Nichols.
ii. Charles, b. 1773, m. (1st) 1794, Mehitable Gates, (2nd) Margaret Ruloffson: Ch.: 1, Ambrose, b. 1795, m. (1st) Abigail Parker, (2nd) ——; 2, Susannah, b. 1797, m. Christopher Margeson; 3, Maria, b. 1800, m. Robert Nichols; (by 2nd wife): 4, Minetta Ann, b. 1808, m. George Moore; 5, Mary Helen, b. 1810, m. Walter Welton; 6, Mehitable, b. 1813, m. Lemuel Nichols; 7, Emily, b. 1815, m. John Wheelock; 8, Charles Rulof, b. 1817, m. Jane Walker; 9, Louisa, b. 1819, m. Joseph Spinney; 10, Lindly Moore, b. 1821, m. Harriet Sandford; 11, Elizabeth Amy, b. 1824, m. Elizabeth Cleveland Wheelock; 12, William Allen, b. 1826, m. Lois Ruggles; 13, Samuel Fowler, b. 1829, m. Lydia McGill.
iii. Samuel, b. 1775, m. 1806, Lydia Woodbury: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1806, m. William Huston Chipman; 2, Arthur, m. Rebecca Chipman; 3, Emily, b. 1810, m. Luther Morse; 4, John, b. 1813, d. 1887, m. Harriet Woodbury; 5, George, b. 1815, m. Harriet Parker; 6, Mary, b. 1817, m. Zachariah Banks; 7, Edwin, b. 1819, m. Keziah Dodge; 8, Charles, b. 1822, m. Parker Dodge; 9, Harriet, b. 1825, m. Obadiah Dodge; 10, Lavinia, b. 1829, m. Valentine Troop.
iv. Mary, b. 1778, m. Elias Moore.

v. Freelove, b. 1781, m. Isaac Longley.
vi. Stephen, b. 1784, d. unm.
vii. Jacob, b. 1786, m. (1st) Rachel Clark, (2nd) a widow, *née* Crouse.
viii. John, b. 1789, m. 1819, Mehitable Ruloffson : Ch.: 1, Ann, b. 1820, m. Artemus, son of Ward Wheelock ; 2, Alfred Gilpin, b. 1822, m. (1st) Harriet Randall, (2nd) Amelia Chipman, (3rd) Charlotte Lamont ; 3, Mary Priscilla, b. 1824, m. Wm. Morehouse ; 4, John Alline, b. 1826, d. in infancy ; 5, Ethelinda, b. 1828, m. William C. Bill ; 6, Isaiah Shaw, b. 1830, m. (1st) Anna Bill, (2nd) Martha Palfrey ; 7, Arabella Adelia, b. 1833, m. William C. Bill, M.P.P. ; 8, Henrietta, b. 1835, d. unm.
ix. Isaac, m. (1st) Letitia Charlton, (2nd) Grace Young, (3rd) Cynthia Messenger : Ch.: 1, Evalina, m. David Fitzrandolph ; 2, Letitia, m. George Hewling ; 3, Sarah, m. Henry Munroe ; 4, John Wesley, m. Samantha Covert.

Durland. Daniel Durland, a highly respectable Loyalist from New York, settled in Wilmot in 1783, and was one of the original grantees of Mount Hanley. Probably it is the same name as Dorland, of which James is mentioned by Sabine as coming to Shelburne from New York, and perhaps of German origin ; and it may have originated from the Dutch Van der Lind. Mr. Durland married Sarah De Mothe, or De Mott, a lady of Huguenot extraction. Children :

i. Zebulon, J.P., m. Catharine Miller : Ch.: 1, Mary, b. May, 1786, d. —— ; 2, Mary, b. 1788, m. Asaph Whitman ; 3, Jacob, b. 1790, m. 1815, Lydia Balcom ; 4, Catharine, b. 1792 ; 5, Freelove, b. 1794, m. Philo Beardsley ; 6, Sarah, b. 1797, m. John Ross ; 7, Zebulon, b. 1800, m. Sophia Ann Starratt ; 8, Louisa, b. 1805, m. John Dunn ; 9, Daniel, b. 1807, m. Susan Leonard ; 10, Rachel Ann, b. 1809, m. Richard Durland.
ii. Daniel, m. Sarah Hawksworth : Ch. : 1, Cornelia, b. 1799, m. Anthony Wilkins ; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1800, m. William Brown ; 3, Rebecca, b. 1803, m. Samuel Chesley ; 4, Sarah, b. 1805, m. William Sproul ; 5, Caleb R., b. 1807, m. Louisa Whitman ; 6, Elijah Phinney, b. 1810, m. Hannah Phinney ; 7, Ann, b. 1812, m. Benjamin Brown ; 8, Adam Easton, b. 1814, m. Deborah Young ; 9, Caroline, b. 1817, m. George Young ; 10, Leonora, b. 1819, m. Joseph Banks ; 11, Isaac, b. 1821, m. — Beardsley.
iii. John, d. 1800, m. Cynthia, dau. of Joseph Ruggles : Ch.: 1, James Harvey, b. 1792, d. aged 26 ; 2, Demotte, b, 1793 ; 3, Joseph, b. 1795, m. (1st) Sarah Brown, (2nd) Dorothy Jane (Wiswall) Russell, lived at Specht's Cove, now Barton, Digby Co. ; 4, John, b. 1800, m. Ann Brown.
iv. Sarah, m. Jacob Miller.
v. Joseph, m. Elizabeth McBride : Ch.: 1, Harriet, b. 1799, m. John Elliott ; 2, Alexander, b. 1800, m. Amoret Brown ; 3, Miranda, b. 1802, m. Joseph Lee ; 4, Catharine, b. 1805, m. John Stirck ; 5, Hannah, b. 1807, m. William Clark ; 6, Charlotte, b. 1809, m. John Cropley.
vi. Demotte, b. 1771, d. 1845, m. Elizabeth Milbury : Ch.: 1, Phineas, b. 1800, m. Mary McNayr ; 2, Richard, b. 1802, m. Rachel Ann Durland ; 3, William, b. 1803, m. Julia Maund ; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1805, m. Thomas Grinton ; 5, Mercy, b. 1807, m. John Eagan ; 6, Pamela, b. 1810, m. Croaker, M.D. ; 7, Marietta, b. 1813, m. Henry Zwicker.

vii. Charles, d. in infancy.
viii. Charles, m. Charlotte Robinson: Ch.: 1, Charlotte, m. Michael Hinds; 2, Phebe, m. Isaac Noyes; 3, Charles, m. Elizabeth Longley; 4, Maria A., m. Ralph Clark; 5, Demotte, m. Elizabeth Durland; 6, Mary, m. Charles Durland; 7, Catharine, m. ——; 8, Thomas O., m. Sarah Slocomb; 9, John Dallas, m. Harriet Durland.
ix. Thomas, m. Amelia Congdon: Ch.: 1, Mary, m. William Bent; 2, Eunice, m. James Best; 3, Joseph, b. Feb., 1815, m. Lavinia Marshall; 4, Elizabeth, m. Demotte Durland (son of Charles); 5, Brian, m. Fanny Ryan; 6, Charles, m. (1st) Mary Durland, (2nd) Annie Best; 7, Zebulon, m. Jan. 10, 1849, Matilda Anderson; 8, William, m. Charlotte Hinds; 9, Harriet, m. John Durland; 10, Amelia, m. John Late.
x. Elizabeth, m. Lot Phinney.
xi. Mary, m. 1802, Alexander James.
xii. Catharine, m. Joseph Neily.
xiii. Phebe, m. Christopher Banks.

Easson. 1. John Easson was commissioned in 1737 by the Board of Ordnance in London as a Master Artificer, and sent on service to Annapolis Royal. He afterwards married in Nova Scotia a young Scotch lady to whom he was engaged before he came over, and who, according to tradition, when the time arrived at which he became able to marry, came out to Nova Scotia, his duties here preventing him from leaving. The name was often spelt Easton. He received a grant of the lands of one Gautier, a native of France, and son-in-law of Louis Allain, who had owned them, after they had been confiscated for Gautier's disloyalty in 1745. This was the Allain from which Allain's creek or river derived its name. The condition of Mr. Easson's grant was that he should keep up the mill. He married January 27, 1741, Avis Stewart, and had children:

i. John, b. Jan. 7, 1742, d. Aug. 3 same year.
ii. Euphemia, b. May 15, 1744, d. unm.
(2) iii. David, b. Aug. 25, 1748.
iv. William, b. Aug. 27, 1750, m. in Jamaica Mary Moffatt Utten: Ch.: 1, James Utten, d. 1833; 2, Eliza Surrey, d. unm.; 3, Avis Phillips, m. the distinguished divine, Rev. John William Dering Gray, D.D., long Rector of Trinity Church, St. John, N.B., and was mother of the late Benjamin G. Gray, Esq., Barrister, of Halifax.

2. David Easson was born August 25, 1748, and married Elizabeth Fisher, widow of Charles Mott, and had children:

(3) i. William Stewart, b. Sept. 20, 1771.
ii. David, b. May 3, 1773, m. Zeruiah Fairn: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth Ann, m. Sidney Sanders; 2, Mary Fisher, m. Tarbell Wheelock; 3, John, b. Jan. 25, 1811, m. Mary Miller Hoyt, and had ch.: *Alexander*, *James*, *Mary Ann* and *Elizabeth*.
iii. Elizabeth, b. Dec. 20, 1775, m. Matthew Ritchie (son of Andrew, sen.).

iv. John, b. Nov. 13, 1778.
v. Avis, b. March 1, 1780, m. Robert Ritchie (son of Andrew, sen.).
vi. Sarah, b. May 22, 1782, m. Frederic Hardwick.
vii. Thomas, b. Dec. 29, 1784, m. 1809, Catharine Ryerson : Ch.: 1, Sarah Ann, b. 1810, unm.; 2, Letitia, b. 1812, m. William Jones; 3, Frances Maria, b. 1814, d.; 4, Mary, b. 1817, m. 1843, Stephen Payson ; 5, Charlotte, b. 1821, m. 1845, William E. Ruggles ; 6, Frances, b. 1823, m. 1841, Stephen M. Ruggles.
viii. Alexander, b. 1786, m. 1813, Zeruiah Easson, *née* Fairn : Ch.: 1, Avis Stewart, b. 1815, m. James F. Hoyt ; 2, Deborah, b. 1816, d. unm.; 3, Helen, b. 1818, m. Alfred Hoyt ; 4, Benjamin, b. 1819, d. same year ; 5, David, m. Sarah Ritchie ; 6, Caroline, d. unm.; 7, Henry, m. Mary Allan ; 8, James, m. Hannah Reed ; 9, Thomas, b. 1831 ; 10, Emma Avis, b. 1834.

3. William Stewart Easson was born September 20, 1771, married Barbara Polham, and had children :

i. Eliza, m. Henry Hardwick.
ii. Frances, m. Abraham Lent.
iii. David, m. (1st) Miss Baker, (2nd) Harriet Marshman : Ch.: 1, William, b. 1816, m. (1st) Margaret McArthur, (2nd) Charlotte Fitch, *née* Bishop ; 2, Thomas, b. 1818, m. Margaret Ann Nichols ; 3, Frances, b. 1820, m. Isaac William Marshall ; 4, Benjamin, b. 1823, d. unm.; (by 2nd wife) : 5, Mary Jane, b. 1826, m. Peter Johnston ; 6, Willett, b. 1828, m. Elizabeth Messenger ; Henry Allan, b. 1830, went abroad ; 8, Mary Ann, b. 1832, m. Uriah Johnston ; 9, Harriet Johnston, b. 1835, unm.; 10, Barbara, b. 1836, m. James Hall ; 11, Eunice, b. 1839, m. Robert Chute.
iv. Barbara, m. William Hardwick.

Elliott. John Elliott, the ancestor of one family of the name, was a native of the north of Ireland, and came to the Province quite young. There is a tradition that his parents died of ship-fever on the passage out. He was brought up on a farm in Granville, but removed to the Hanley Mountain after his marriage to Rachel, daughter of Samuel Bent, in 1792. He had children :

i. William, b. 1793, m. Elizabeth Chesley : Ch.: 1, John, m. Lucy Ann Buckman ; 2, Ann, m. William Banks ; 3, Rachel, m. Thomas Rowland ; 4, Lucy, m. Richard Bolsor ; 5, Lorena, m. George Newcomb ; 6, Henry, d. unm.; 7, Edward, m. 1848, Azubah Buckman ; 8, Rebecca, m. James Cropley.
ii. Nancy, b. 1795, m. (1st) John West, (2nd) —
iii. Leah, b. 1797, m. Richard Bowlby.
iv. John, b. 1799, m. Harriet Durland : Ch.: 1, Russell, m. Anne Lee ; 2, Wentworth, m. Sarah Wilkins ; 3, Elizabeth, m. Peter Bolsor ; 4, Murray, m. Bertha M. Armstrong ; 5, Nancy, m. (1st) William Armstrong, (2nd) John Bolsor ; 6, Charles A., m. Ruth Slocomb ; 7, Samuel, m. Lavinia Slocomb ; 8, Henrietta, m. Joseph Fritz ; 9, Euphemia, m. Henry Brown ; 10, Clark, d. unm.; 11, Zebulon, m. Susan Brown.
v. Benjamin, b. 1801, m. Ann Ackerly : Ch.: 1, Abraham, m. Caroline Bent (no issue); 2, Isaac, m. (1st) Mary Bowlby, (2nd) — Parker ; 3, Rachel, m. Samuel Bowlby ; 4, Jacob, m. Harriet Lee ; 5, Bayard, m. Zeruiah Dempsey (no issue); 6, John, m. Maria Morton ; 7, Phebe, m. Enoch Bowlby.

vi. Rachel, b. 1803, m. Samuel Marshall.
vii. Charles, b. 1805, m. Lucy Bent : 2 sons d. unm, 3 daus.
viii. Margaret, b. 1807, m. Thomas Marshall.
ix. Robert, b. 1810, m. Lavinia Brown : 6 sons and 5 daus.
x. Thomas, b. 1812, m. Eliza Banks : 7 sons and 4 daus.

Samuel Elliott was the ancestor of another family of Elliotts, and came from the same part of Ireland about the same time as John, but there is no consanguinity known between the families. Tradition says that he also lost his parents on shipboard. He certainly lost his father when a child, was brought up on a farm at Granville, and removed to Wilmot, in which township he settled in East Clarence. He married, 1789, Priscilla Fellows, and had children :

i. John, b. 1791, m. Elizabeth Huntington, b. 1786, d. 1868 (no issue).
ii. Phebe, b. 1794.
iii. Catharine, b. 1796, m. Abner Foster.
iv. Samuel, b. 1799, d. unm.
v. Israel, b. 1804, m. Hopestead Barnaby : Ch.: 1, Leander S., b. 1834, m. Phebe Jane Balcom ; 2, Margaret Elizabeth, m. Parker Morse : 3, George, m. Adelia Barnaby ; 4, Edville, m. Nellie Smith.
vi. Abigail, b. 1806, m. Robert Stone.
vii. Joseph, b. 1809, m. Sarah Ann Leonard : Ch.: 1, Jane Josephine, m. James Moore ; 2, James Rupert, m. Mary Betts ; 3, Leonard William, m. Carrie Mary Freeman ; 4, Edwin James, m. Ella Moore Miller.
viii. Sarah Ann, b. 1811, m. (1st) Edward Morse, (2nd) Warren Longley.

Fairn. This is certainly a Scotch name, but our author, while assigning the family to an English origin, says that Benjamin Fairn, who came here in 1783, then scarcely of age, may have been of German extraction. (I think he was a descendant of a Scotch immigrant to New England.—Ed.) He married Sarah, daughter of Ebenezer Rice, and settled near him in the vicinity of Saw-mill Creek, on land some of which is still owned by descendants. He had children :

i. Nancy, m. (1st), James G. Roach, (2nd) Oldham Whitman.
ii. Elizabeth, m. Ichabod Corbitt.
iii. Sarah, m. Jasper Williams.
iv. William, m. 1813, Mary Berteaux : Ch.: 1, Edward, b. 1813, m. Eliza Oakes ; 2, Benjamin, b. 1815, m. Mary Ann Hoyt (no issue) ; 3, William, b. 1817, m. Harriet Gates ; 4, Charlotte Maria, b. 1819, m. William Hardwick ; 5, Augusta, b. 1822, m. Abraham Ditmars ; 6, Mercy, b. 1824, m. Henry Lockwood ; 7, Charles Henry, b. 1826, m. Elizabeth Ann Hardwick ; 8, John L., b. 1828, m. Lavinia Hardwick (no issue) ; 9, Eleanor, b. 1830, m. Thomas Hardwick ; 10, Sarah, b. 1832, m. Gilbert Purdy.
v. Zeruiah, m. Alexander Easson.
vi. Henry, m. Mary Robinson : Ch.: 1, James, d. unm.; 2, Ann, m. Joseph Tomlinson ; 3, Susan, m. John Burbidge ; 4, Eliza, m. Seth Bent ; 5, Francis, m. Frances Chapman ; 6, Henrietta, m. John Prince.

Fales. Ebenezer Fales with his son Benjamin came here about 1760 from Taunton, Mass., and obtained a grant of land at the eastern end of the township of Wilmot, near the stream known as "The Fales River." The son settled on a farm which he purchased on the Stronach Mountain from Brigadier-General Ruggles. Benjamin Fales had married Rachel Bassett, of Taunton, who had a brother Richard educated at Harvard, a brilliant and ready-witted, but eccentric young man, who once, during the recess of a sitting of the Court of which his uncle Fales was clerk, was challenged by the latter, who was fond a joke, to extemporize a verse or rhyme that would turn the laugh against him, and promptly expressed himself thus:

"The children of Israel asked for meat,
And Jehovah sent them quails;
The Court of Taunton wanted a clerk,
And the devil sent it Fales."

It is said this tendency to ready wit and humor still characterizes the descendants of Rachel (Bassett) Fales, whose dust reposes in one of the Wilmot church-yards. Children:

i. Benjamin, jun., m. Harriet Gates: Ch.: 1, Benjamin, d. unm.; 2, Oldham, m. Eliza Marshall; 3, Joel, m. (U.S.); 4, Amos, m. (1st) Sarah Morton, (2nd) Eliza Whitman; 5, Rachel, m. (1st) William Neily, (2nd) Thomas Ward; 6, Abigail, m. Harris Ward.
ii. Daniel, m. Elizabeth Larlie: Ch.: 1, Margaret, b. 1806, m. Nelson Stronach; 2, Isaac, m. Mary Baker; 3, Jacob, m. Charlotte Baker; 4, Sarah, m. (1st) Lot Phinney, (2nd) Asaph Bent, (3rd) Elias Fales; 5, Abraham, b. 1809, m. Francis Ray; 6, Amos, m. Eliza Burns (no issue); 7, Daniel, m. Hannah Fales; 8, Elizabath, m. Thomas Eaton; 9, Rosanna, m. Stephen Burns.
iii. Ebenezer, m. 1803, Hannah Brown: Ch.: 1, Joseph, b, 1804, d. unm.; 2, Benjamin, b. 1806, d. unm; 3, Daniel, unm.; 4, John, m. Cassie Brown; 5, James, d. unm.; 6, Elias, m. Sarah Fales; 7, Isaac, m. Phebe Cook; 8, Elizabeth, m. (1st) John Smith, (2nd) John Baker; 9, Mary, m. Timothy Grimes; 10, Rachel, m. William Ogilby; 11, Anna, m. Edmund Brown; 12, Miriam, d. unm.
iv. Mary, m. George Stronach.
v. Abigail, m. Joel Farnsworth.
vi. Rachel, m. James Gates.
vii. Sarah, m. Jacob Baker.
viii. Betsey, m. John Gates.

Farnsworth. Amos[3] Farnsworth, born Nov. 27, 1704, was a grandson, through Benjamin[2] Farnsworth, sen., by his wife Mary, dau. of Jonas Prescott, of Matthias[1] Farnsworth, who was born in 1612, in Lancaster, England, and came to Lynn, and later settled at Groton, Mass. Amos came from Groton in 1760, and secured lot No. 77 in Granville, a portion of which has in recent years been occupied by Robert Parker, J.P. On this lot was a house, said to have been the only house of the dispersed

Acadians that escaped conflagration, being saved by a sudden shower. He returned to Groton, but did not bring his family here until 1763. Returning to Massachusetts on some business, he was drowned crossing the Nashua River, Dec. 5, 1775. He had ch.: 1, Sarah, b. Oct. 10, 1736, d. Sept. 19, 1756; 2, Rachel, b. Jan. 29, 1738, m. June 16, 1761, Jabez Holden; 3, Lydia, b. Nov. 24, 1739, m. Sept. 26, 1765, Wm. Shedd; 4, Susanna, b. Aug. 25, 1741, m. Aug. 25, 1761, John Sawtell, jun.; 5, Lucy, b. Nov. 1743, m. Solomon Farnsworth (cousin); 6, Amos, b. June 24, 1746, d. July 9, 1749; 7, Lt. Jonas, b. Aug. 18, 1748, m. 1774, Jane, dau. of James and Mary Delap (probably removed to Wilmot), d. July 16, 1805; 8, Mary, b. 1757, m. Joseph Potter, jun.; 9, Amos, jun., b. April 28, 1754 (was an active revolutionary officer, attaining rank of Major of artillery); 10, Benjamin, b. Oct. 24, 1757 (drowned with his father).

Benjamin[3] Farnsworth, Jun, an older son of Benjamin,[2] sen., b. Jan. 16, 1699, m. (1st) Patience ——, (2nd) March 19, 1736, Rebecca Pratt, of Malden, had 5 ch., of whom one, Solomon, was b. 1738, m. (1st) Dec. 6, 1770, in Nova Scotia, a cousin, Lucy Farnsworth, (2nd) May 23, 1801, Mary, dau. of John Chute, and settled at Chute's Cove: Ch.: 1, Sarah, b. June 4, 1773, m. Michael Miller; 2, Frances, b. Oct. 11, 1774, m. (1st) 1796, Rev. James Manning, (2nd) Henry Troop, (3rd) Aaron Morse; 3, Lucy, b. June 15, 1777, m. James Eaton; 4, Mary, b. 1779, m. John Brown; 5, Solomon, b. 1781, d. 1782; 6, Benjamin, b. Feb. 1, 1802, m. (1st) Anna Matilda, dau. of John and Rebecca Ellis, (2nd) 1822, Phebe, dau. of Henry Milbury; 7, Peter, b. July 9, 1803, m. April 29, 1827, Mary, dau. of Michael and Abigail Holden; 8, John Chute, b. Oct. 11, 1805, m. (1st) Feb. 15, 1826, Mary Cecilia, dau. of Job Pack, (2nd) Nancy, dau. of James and Phebe Chute, (3rd) Elizabeth Charlotte Chute; 9, Mary, b. 1807, m. William Hall; 10, Solomon, b. Oct. 9, 1809, m. (1st) Nov. 19, 1833, Anna B., dau. of James Cummings, (2nd) Phebe, dau. of Abraham Bogart (lived at Stony Beach).

Jonas[3] Farnsworth, another son of Benjamin, sen., b. Oct. 14, 1713, m. Thankful Ward (dau. of Obadiah), and had 9 children, of whom Isaac[4] the 6th and Joel[4] the 9th, came to Granville. Isaac,[4] b. Aug. 9, 1750, m. (1st) Hannah Hill, (2nd) Martha Barth, and afterwards lived in Jonesboro', Me. Ch.: 1, Daniel, b. about 1774, m. Dec. 8, 1803, Jerusha Earl, of Horton, and settled at Aylesford; 2, Ichabod; 3, Royal; 4, Asa, m. Betsey Weston; 5, Amaziah; 6, Isaac; 7, Martha, m. Reuben Libbey; 8, Hannah, m. Joseph Libbey; 9, Mary.

Joel,[4] b. May 28, 1757, m. (1st) Abigail Fales, (2nd) Sarah Perkins, lived at Clarence, and had 11 daughters.

FELLOWS. 1. ISRAEL[5] FELLOWS, or FELLOWES, was a descendant of William, who was born in England in 1609, and came to Ipswich, Mass., in 1639, through Joseph,[2] who m. 1675, Ruth Frails, and d. 1729; Joseph,[3] who m. 1701, Sarah Kimball; Benjamin,[4] b. 1711, m. (1st) Eunice Dodge, who d. 1747, (2nd) Mrs. Sarah Elwell, who d. 1777, (3rd) 1778, Mrs. Rebecca Louther, who d. 1802. Israel, who was born Jan. 4, 1741, at Ipswich, came to Granville in 1761, and in 1768 bought lot 147 from John Crocker, one of the grantees. He m. (1st) March 29, 1762, Susanna, dau. of Josiah Dodge, (2nd) Joanna Smith, and died 1815. Children:

i. Eunice, b. Feb. 11, 1763, m. John, son of Valentine Troop.
(2) ii. Joseph, b. March 17, 1765.
iii. Susannah, b. 1767, d. in infancy.
iv. Susannah, b. Feb. 23, 1769, m. Edward, son of John Dunn.
v. Ann, b. May 15, 1772, m. Samuel Chesley.
vi. Cynthia, b. April 12, 1775, m. Oliver Foster.
vii. Phœbe, b. 1777, d. young.
viii. Sarah, b. 1780, d. young.
ix. Ebenezer, b. 1782, d. unm.
x. Priscilla, b. 1785, m. Samuel Elliott.
xi. Hepzibah, b. 1787, m. Benjamin Chute, jun.

2. REV. JOSEPH FELLOWS, b. March 17, 1765, m. April 10, 1788, Catherine Troop, and died April 18, 1820. Children:

i. Israel, b. March 27, 1789, m. 1811, Ann Phinney Hall, and d. at St. John, N.B., 1863: Ch.: Mary Ann, b. 1811, m. John Bath Longley; 2, Catherine, b. 1815, m. J. V. Troop, of St. John, M.P.P., etc.; 3, Susan Eliza, b. 1820, m. George Camber; 4, Havilah Hall, b. 1824, m. Stephen Sneden Hall; 5, JAMES ISRAEL, b. 1826, m. (1st) Elizabeth Allen, (2nd) Jane Hamlyn Crane.

ii. Joseph, born July 30, 1792, m. (1st) 1820, Sophia Rice, dau. of Joseph Troop, (2nd) 1828, Charlotte Sophia Hians, who was a sister of Hetty Hians, wife of John Howe, Postmaster-General, half-bro. of Hon. Jos. Howe: Ch.: 1, Olivia, m. James Hardwick; (by 2nd wife): 2, Richard Henry, b. 1830, d. unm; 3, Catherine Howe, b. 1831, m. David M. Dickie; 4, George Edward, b. 1833, m. Nancy Dickie; 5, John Howe, b. 1835, d. 1838; 6, William, b. 1837, m. (1st) Augusta Best, (2nd) Jane Nichols, *née* Dickinson; 7, John Israel, b. 1839, m. Althia Stowers; 8, Joseph Howe, M.D., b. 1840, d. unm.; 9, Benjamin Smith, m. Annie Shafner.

iii. George Troop, b. Dec. 30, 1795, m. Susan Morse, dau. of Joseph Bent: Ch.: 1, Sophia, b. 1823, m. Obadiah Parker; 2, Joseph, b. 1826, m. Annie Parker; 3, Amelia R., b. 1830, m. Charles Parker; 4, Mary, b. 1832, m. Wm. Clark; 5, George, b. 1840, d. 1874; 6, Charlotte, b. 1837, d. 1846.

iv. James Edward, m. Eliza, dau. of Augustus Willoughby, and d. 1824: Ch.: 1, James Edward, b. 1822, d. 1840; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1824.

v. Benjamin Smith, b. Feb. 26, 1805, m. Eliza Willoughby, his brother's wid.: Ch.: 1, James Edward, b. 1827, m. Charlotte S., dau. of Wm. H. Morse; 2, Minetta, b. 1829, m. Joseph F. Ballister; 3, Margaret, b. 1832, d. young; 4, Anna, b. 1835, m. Hon. Samuel Leonard Shannon, Q.C., D.C.L.; 5, Maria S., b. 1839, m. John M. Parker, d. 1892; 6, Lucretia, b. 1839, d. in infancy; 7, Bertha, b. 1845, m. John R. Mitchie.

FITZRANDOLPH. This is a purely Norman name, as all proper family names beginning with Fitz are. This prefix is the old Norman equivalent to the modern French *fils*, a son. In days when second names were beginning to be used to distinguish families, the sons of a man named Randolph or Gerald, would be designated Fitzrandolph or Fitzgerald. The family must therefore be of very ancient repute in England. The Annapolis branch derive from Edward,[1] who was born 1614 in Nottinghamshire, and came to America in 1630, and married at Scituate, May 10, 1637, Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Thomas Blossom, of Plymouth, through Nathaniel,[2] Edward,[3] Nathaniel,[4] ROBERT,[5] who came to Annapolis among the Loyalists, bringing his wife, Phebe Pearsall, and five children with him, and first settled in what is now Digby County, but later on lands granted to him at Lawrencetown. Later still he exchanged lands with Christopher Prince, from whom he received what is still known as the "Bell" Farm, near Bridgetown, until lately owned in this family. He died December 15, 1830, aged 93. His widow died December 15, 1832, aged 83. He had children:

i. Mary, b. at Woodbridge, Mass., 1773.
ii. Samuel, b. at Elizabethtown, N.J., m. Mary McLean; descendants in New York; perhaps the celebrated publisher, Anson D. Fitzrandolph is among them.
iii. Mercy, b. at Elizabethtown, N.J.
iv. Joseph, b. 1781, at Staten Island, N.Y., m. (1st) Charlotte Burkett, (2nd) Catharine Dewolf: Ch.: 1, Edward H., m. Sarah Little, *née* Fitzrandolph; 2, John, m. Anne Gorham; 3, James H., m. Susan Menzies, lived at Digby, a leading merchant and magistrate, posterity numerous and respectable, but scattered; a distinguished son, Hon. Archibald Fitzrandolph, resides at Fredericton, N.B.; 4, Maria, m. Alexander Sawers, M.D.; 5, Charles, m. Elizabeth Bath.
v. Robert, m. (1st) Sept. 15, 1802, Jane Lee, she died March 29, 1812, in her 27th year, (2nd) Oct. 29th, 1812, Sarah Nichols, she d. May 17, 1816, (3rd) May 18, 1817, Mary Nichols, she d. April 23, 1821, (4th) Phebe Tupper: Ch.: 1, Ann, b. July 29, 1803, m.; 2, Mary, b. Oct. 4, 1805, m. Seth Beals; 3, Eliza, b. May 12, 1808; 4, Phebe, b. May 13, 1811, d. July 29, 1813; (by 2nd wife): 5, Samuel Rowland, b. Nov. 4, 1813, m. Maria A. Bishop; 6, David Nichols, b. March 13, 1815, m. Evaline Dodge; (by 3rd wife): 7, Mary Charlotte, m. Kinsman Neily; 8, Henrietta, b. Feb. 24, 1819; 9, John Lindley, b. Nov. 23, 1820, m. Maria Shafner; (by 4th wife): 10, Robert Elias, m. Isabella Runciman.
vi. John Lindley, a physician, m. Sept. 11, 1811, Eliza Willis, in New York; he d. at St. John N.B., June 5, 1823: Ch.: 1, William Walter, b. Nov. 16, 1812; 2, James Cornwall, b. April 28th, 1814; 3, Edmond, b. Sept. 9, 1817; 4, John Richardson, b. April 1, 1820; 5, Caroline Eliza, b. (posthumus) Oct. 26, 1823.

FOSTER. BENJAMIN FOSTER, great-grandson of Reginald, who, born about 1595, came, probably, from Exeter, England, in 1638, to Ipswich, Mass., through Isaac, his son, and Jacob, his grandson, was born October 6, 1689, married March 15, 1725, Sarah, daughter of Ezekiel Woodward,

and died either in Hampstead, N.H., or immediately after his arrival in Nova Scotia. In 1760, his widow with sons Isaac, Ezekiel and Jeremiah, settled in Granville, where she died in 1805, aged 104. Jeremiah returned to the old colonies and settled it is supposed in Maine. The descendants of the other two are very numerous in Nova Scotia, including lawyers (the present Judge of Probate of Halifax is one of them) physicians, clergymen, merchants and shipbuilders. No individual family has done more than this in the planting of orchards and changing the wilderness landscapes of a century ago into objects of value and beauty. Monuments of their industry and intelligence are conspicuous in every township and hamlet of the county. Benjamin's daughter Judith, born 1726, married John Chute, and daughter Elizabeth married 1761, Francis B. LeCain, whose first wife was Alicia Maria Hyde, and lived in Annapolis. Sarah married Abel Wheelock.

Isaac Foster, born in Massachusetts, 1728, married in New Hampshire, October 31, 1754, Mehitable Worthing (dau. of Samuel). He died 1819. Children:

i. Benjamin, b. May 24, 1755, m. (1st) Jan. 23, 1776, Elizabeth, dau. of Col. Philip Richardson, (2nd) Mary Pamela, dau. of Edward Robinson and Mary Chandler, widow of John Park: Ch.: 1, Mehitable, b. May 6, 1778, m. Abram Chute; 2, Elizabeth, b. Sept. 1, 1780, m. James Taylor; 3, Benjamin, b. Aug. 2, 1782, m. Mary, dau. of Samuel Randall; 4, Samuel, b. Sept. 9, 1784, m. (1st) March 17, 1805, Lydia Chute (dau. of John), (2nd) Dec. 4, 1835, Catherine, dau. of Thomas Crips, d. July 29, 1879; 5, Susanna, b. Aug. 31, 1786, m. Francis Tupper (son of Charles); 6, Mary, b. Dec. 29, 1788, m. Samuel Tupper (brother to Francis); 7, Isaac, b. April 9, 1791, m. Oct. 6, 1814, Elizabeth, dau. of John Patterson, d. Nov. 19, 1867; 8, Abner, b. May 9th, 1793, m. (1st) Oct. 29, 1818, Sarah, dau. of Benjamin Wheelock, (2nd) Katie Elliot; 9, Lucy, b. May 24, 1795, m. 1816, William Woodworth, son of Eleazer; 10, Solomon F., b. Aug. 3, 1797, m. Susan Phinney, dau. of Zaccheus; 11, Philip, b. July 3, 1799, m. Susan dau. of William Frail; 12, Helen F., b. Aug. 3, 1801, d. Dec. 10, 1833; 13, Catherine, b. Nov. 28, 1804, m. Enoch, son of Gardner Dodge.

ii. Jacob, b, 1757, d. 1759.

iii. Sarah, b. Aug. 15, 1760, m. 1779, John Adams.

iv. Isaac, b. Aug. 24, 1763, m. 1790, Betsey, dau. of William Gilliatt: Ch.: 1, Charles, b. about 1795, m. (1st) 1820, Mary, dau. of Henry Banks, (2nd) Mary Ann Green; 2, Mary, b. 1797, m. Charles, son of John Dunn; 3, Betsey M., b. 1799, m. Daniel Vaughan; 4, Hannah, b. 1801, m. Edward, son of Samuel Foster; 5, Ann, b. Aug. 20, 1803, d. Sept. 15, 1889; 6, Archie G., b. 1805, d. 1811; 7, Jerusha, b. April 7, 1807, m. Phineas, son of Thomas Phinney; 8, William, b. Dec. 27, 1813, m. Hannah Huntington.

v. Mehitable, b. March 23, 1766, m. Oct. 29, 1786, Thos. Phinney (son of Isaac and Anna).

vi. Elizabeth, b. Dec. 17, 1768, m. Dec. 24, 1789, Jordan, son of Abednego Ricketson.

vii. Samuel, b. Oct. 1, 1770, m. Elizabeth Wilson : Ch.: 1, Edward W., m. Hannah, dau. of Isaac Foster, jun.; 2, Margaret, m. Ariel Corbitt; 3, Clark; 4, Mary, m. Edward Bruce; 5, Zipporah, m. Edward Gilliatt; 6, Matilda, m. John Milner; 7, Eliza, m. Richard Armstrong; 8, John; 9, Ichabod Corbitt, m. Hannah Allen.

viii. Oliver, b. May 1, 1773, m. (1st) Cynthia, dau. of Israel Fellows, (2nd) Elizabeth, dau. of Daniel Saunders, had ch. : 1, David, b. June 19, 1797, m. (1st) 1827, Mary Clarke, (2nd) Azubah Wheelock; 2, Cynthia, b. March 24, 1799, m. Job Randall; 3, Archibald Marsden, b. April 14, 1801, m. Eliza Bent; 4, Ann, b. July 1, 1803, m. William, b. 1794, son of Fred. Fitch; 5, Maria, b. Aug. 23, 1807, died April 25, 1822; 6, Jerusha, b. May 19, 1809, m. July 18, 1829, Henry, son of Wm. Ruffee, 3 ch.; 7, Robert H., b. March 5, 1812, m. Elizabeth Hall (dau. of John); 8, Susan, b. Nov. 8, 1813, m. Israel, son of Joseph Bent; (by 2nd wife): 9, Oliver, b. 1817, m. Betsey Woodbury; 10, Israel, b. 1819, m. (1st) Minetta, dau. of Asa Foster, wid. of Obadiah Moore, jun., (2nd) Ann Manning, wid. of Ainsley Brown; 11, Mary Ann, b. 1821, m. (1st) William Morse, (2nd) J. M. Brown; 12, Daniel J., b. 1824, m. Mary J. Edgerly; 13, Charles William, b. 1826.

ix. Asa, b. Nov. 24, 1776, m. July 26, 1798, Rhoda Hicks, and lived below Bridgetown, farmer and mill-owner, d. Sept. 20, 1854: Ch.: 1, Harriet, b. April 26, 1799, m. Nathan, son of Amos and Susan Randall; 2, Irene, b. March 17, 1802, m. Charles, son of Maurice Peters; 3, Avicia, b. Oct. 12, 1804, m. James Peters (bro. of Charles); 4. William Worthing, b. Aug. 15, 1806, m. (1st) Harriet Calvert, 1837 (2nd) Hannah Wheelock (dau. of Asaph); 5, Susan Ann, b. Sept. 16, 1808, m. 1833, Jacob, son of Benjamin Foster, jun.; 6, Louisa Jane, b. May 4, 1811, m. Binea Chute; 7, Minetta, b. Feb. 7, 1813, m. (1st) Obadiah Morse, jun., (2nd) Israel Foster; 8, Oliver G., b. Dec. 11, 1816, m. Eliphal Ann Chute, d. (Bayham, Ont.) 1894; 9, S. Matilda, b. Dec. 16, 1818, m. J. M. Chute; 10, Leah, b. Jan. 27, 1820; 11, Eliza, b. March 5, 1823, m. Jan. 30, 1850, Charles, son of Theodore Hill.

Ezekiel Foster, b. in Massachusetts about 1730, d. Jan. 29, 1819, m. (1st) in Hampstead, N.H., Oct. 31, 1754, Mary Roberts, (2nd) Sept. 30, 1770, Ruth, dau. of William Farnsworth. Children:

i. Sarah, b. 1756, d. 1760.

ii. Martha, b. Aug. 13, 1757, m. Benjamin Chute.

iii. John, b. in New Hampshire, March 29, 1760, m. Dec. 26, 1781, Elizabeth, dau. of Abednego Ricketson, a minister in the Methodist Church, d. Sept. 29, 1827 : Ch.: 1, Phœbe, b. May 28, 1783, d. June 6; 2, John, b. April 11, 1784, m. July 14, 1813, Sarah Brown, d. Feb. 21, 1857; 3, Ruth, b. Aug. 12, 1787, m. May 21, 1807, Walter Wilkins; 4, Phebe, b. Jan. 28, 1790, m. 1823, James Roach; 5, Frederick, b. May 13, 1792, m. 1814, Rachel Benedict, 5 ch.; 6, Willis, b. Nov. 15, 1794, m. (1st) 1826, Susanna, dau. of Wm. Pierce, (2nd) Nancy, dau. of Ezra Foster, 5 ch.; 7, Elizabeth, b. Dec. 23, 1796, m. Oct. 10, 1817, James, son of Wm. Pierce; 8, Henry, b. May 20, 1799, m. March 15, 1827, Jane Truesdale; 9, Ezekiel, b. July 26, 1801, m. Sept. 5, 1822, Eliza, dau. of John and Margaret Dugan; 10, Mary Ann, b. Jan. 10, 1804, m. Jan. 1, 1829, Zebulon Neily; 11, Bayard, b. July 8, 1808, m. Mary Ann, dau. of Ezra F. Foster.

iv. Ezekiel, jun., b. March 30, 1763, m. May, 1803, Elizabeth Bacon, dau. of Joseph Dring: Ch.: 1, Thomas, b. 1804, m. Feb. 12, 1827, Mary, dau. of Benjamin Wheelock; 2, Ezra, b, 1807, m. Nov. 8, 1831, Hannah Bohaker (dau. of Michael); 3, Elizabeth Ann, b. 1809, m. Abel Wheelock (bro. of Mary); 4, Mary F., b. 1811, m. William Banks; 5, Tamar B., m. Benjamin Randall; 6, Ethelinda, b. 1816, d. May 9, 1846; 7, Adolphus W., b. 1818, m. Caroline, dau. of Jonathan Woodbury; 8, Israel, b. 1821, d. 1822; 9, Martha, b. 1824, m. Rev. Isaac McCann.

v. Joseph, b. Oct. 18, 1771, m. Jane, dau. of Moses Ray: Ch.: 1, Ruth, b. 1796, d. March, 1814; 2, Ezekiel, b. 1799, m. June 21, 1821, Mary A. Waters; 3, Jane, b. 1801, m. Abel Wheelock (son of John); 4, Hannah, b. 1802, m. Newcomb Bent; 5, Joseph, b. 1805, m. Zilpah, dau. of Michael Martin; 6, John M., b. 1807, m. Lucilla, dau. of Fairfield, son of Jonathan Woodbury; 7, Sophia Ann, b. 1807, m. Edward, son of Michael Martin; 8, Ezra, b. Sept. 1814, m. (1st) Mary Ann Burkitt, (2nd) Mary Ann VanBuskirk.

vi. Ezra Farnsworth, b. Aug. 1, 1773, m. Jan. 24, 1798, Susanna, dau. of John Troop: Ch.: 1, Nancy, b. Jan. 25, 1799, m. Jan. 29, 1833, Willis, son of John Foster; 2, Gilbert, b. Sept. 16, 1800, d. 1865; 3, Rufus, b. June 3, 1802, m. Aug. 4, 1838, Christina Tough (2 sons); 4, Mary Ann, b. 1804, m. Bayard Foster; 5, William Young, b. May 23, 1806, m. Minetta, dau. of Seth Leonard; 6, George, b. Aug. 18, 1808, d. unm.; 7, Lucy, b. Aug. 2, 1810, m. William Tough; 8, Eunice, b. Oct. 25, 1812, m. Fred. L. B. Vroom (son of George); 9, Israel, b. May 8, 1815, d. young; 10, Frances Eliza, b. July 6, 1817, m. William Vroom (bro. to Frederic); 11, Susanna, b. July 1, 1822, unm.

GATES. 1. STEPHEN GATES, with wife Ann, and children Thomas and Simon, came over in the *Diligent* in 1638 from Norwich, England, to Hingham, and thence to Cambridge, Mass., and died 1662. Capt. Oldham Gates, born in Cambridge, 1716, was his great-grandson, through his son Simon and grandson Amos, who married, 1703, Hannah, daughter of Samuel Oldham, her mother being Hannah Dana. OLDHAM GATES married (1st) 1745, Mehitable, daughter of John Trowbridge, (2nd) Patience (or Frances) Bartlett, (3rd) Thankful Adams, (4th) Jennie Dow or Dowe, (5th) Jemima Potts, widow. He arrived here as early as 1760, and in 1763 he was commissioned Captain of the militia. (According to the "Chute Genealogies" he was in 1775 in the Royal forces, and wounded at Bunker Hill; but I would suggest some nephew, perhaps son of his brother Amos, for that distinction.—ED.) He was a grantee in both divisions of the township, and about 1783 sold his lands in the first division and removed to those assigned him in the second division, the Nictaux district. One of his sons, Oldham, and three grandsons, sons of his son John, settled on the North Mountain, north of Middleton, and gave their name to that portion of it. They were the founders of Port George, which, it is to be regretted, was not called Gatesville in their honor. In 1812 Charles Dodge and the brothers Gates built the first vessel ever launched there, and perhaps the first ever built on the whole

North Mountain. She was intended for a privateer (see p. 286). He had children :

(2) i. Jonas, b. 1746.
ii. Dorothy, m. Edward Whitman, sen.
By second wife :
iii. James, b. 1753, m. Rachel Fales, and lived in Melvern Square : Ch.: 1, John, m. Catherine Smith, dau. of Francis and g. dau. of Austin ; 2, Benjamin, m. Elizabeth Goucher; 3, Ruth, m. John, son of David and Amy Randall ; 4, Mary, m. Alex. Clark ; 5, Ella, m. Samuel Miller ; 6, Oldham, m. Lavinia McNeill ; 7, Rachel, d. 1822 ; 8, Daniel, m. Harriet, dau. of Stephen Jefferson ; 9, Eliza, d. young ; 10, Sarah, m. John Hayes.
iv. John, b. according to "Chute Genealogies," in 1756,* m. Judith Baker : Ch.: 1, James, b. 1783, m. Mary Ward ; 2, Elias, b. 1785, m. (1st) Hannah Ward, (2nd) Olivia Hurst, *née* Farnsworth ; 3, Jacob, b. March 7, 1788, m. (1st) Mary Brown, (2nd) Mary Pierce ; 4, Azuba, b. 1789, m. Ward Wheelock, son of Elias ; 5, Ann, m. Jonathan, son of Austin Smith ; 6, Susanna, m. William Pierce, jun. ; 7, Silas, m. Sarah, dau. of Joel Farnsworth.
By third wife :
v. Amos, m. Margaret Larley (no issue).
vi. Mary, b. 1758, m. Ezekiel Brown.
vii. Thankful, b. 1760, m. Paul Crocker, jun., lived in Aylesford.
viii. Hannah, b. about 1763, m. Benjamin Fales.
ix. Oldham, jun., b. 1765, m. (1st) Rachel, dau. of George Stronach, (2nd) Eleanor, dau. of John Slocum : Ch.: 1, George, b. 1807, m. Louisa, dau. of Isaac Landers ; 2, Rachel, m. Samuel Bowlby; 3, Lavinia, b. Jan. 3, 1815, m. John Hawkesworth ; 4, Maria, b. Sept. 15, 1816 ; 5, William, b. 1818, m. Sarah E., dau. of Ambrose Gates, (2nd) Susan, dau. of Wm. Hawkins ; 6, Amos, b. 1820, d. 1848 ; 7, Sarah E., b. 1822, m. William VanBuskirk ; 8, Caleb, b. 1824, m. Anna, dau. of Andreas Bohaker.
x. Samuel, b. 1772, m. July 16, 1797, Sarah, dau. of William Marshall : Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. July 16, 1799, m. 1818, Willard Graves ; 2, Ambrose, b. Dec. 20, 1802, m. 1830, Rachel, dau. of John Cropley ; 3, Amoret, b. Jan. 26, 1804, m. Edward, son of Joseph Brown ; 4, Samuel, b. Aug. 8, 1807, d. abroad ; 5, William, b. Sept. 26, 1810, m. Mary, dau. of John Clark, removed to Michigan or California ; 6, Willett, b. Aug. 25, 1814, m. 1844, Mary, dau. of Joseph Neily ; 7, Sarah Ann, b. Dec. 18, 1819, m. Daniel, son of Enoch Wood.

2. Jonas Gates, son of Captain Oldham, born probably at Spencer, Mass., 1746, married Hepzibah Baker, died about 1823. Children :

i. John, b. about 1785, m. Elizabeth Fales, d. about 1835 : Ch.: 1, Ruth, m. (1st) Levi Phinney, (2nd) Betsey Marshall ; 2, Ann, m. Thomas, son of Richard Bowlby ; 3, Caroline, m. Joseph, son of Stephen Goucher ; 4, Joseph Dimock, m. Eliza, dau. of James and Rachel Ray ; 5, Burton, d. young ; 6, Enoch, m. Mary Eliza Marshall, (dau. of William, jun.) ; 7, Evaline, m. George S. Phinney ; 8, Mary, m. Oliver Randall ; 9, Elijah, m. Eliza, dau. of John Eagan ; 10, Hepzibah, m. John, son of John Spinney.

* The Chute genealogy mentions a tradition that John and not James was by first wife.

ii. Thomas, m. June 18, 1804, Mary Ann VanBuskirk: Ch.: 1, T. Handley Chipman, b. June 15, 1805, m. Mary Hardy Marshall; 2, Mehitable, b. Oct. 2, 1806, m. Oliver Brown; 3, Phebe, b. June 10, 1808, m. Wm. Cook; 4, Bathsheba, b. March 5, 1860, m. Elijah Downey; 5, Thomas Ansley, b. March 6, 1812, m. Eliza Downey; 6, Elizabeth, b. March 25, 1814, m. John Baker, jun.; 7, Henry, b. Dec. 7, 1815, m.; 8, Burtis, b. Feb. 3, 1818, m. in Maine; 9, George Neily, b. Feb. 23, 1820, m. in Maine; 10, Rev. Lawrence VanB., b. 1823; 11, Susan, m. George Boynton (Ontario).
iii. Mehitable, m. Charles Dodge.
iv. Susan, b. Jan., 1778, m. Nathan Randall.
v. Sarah, b. 1786, m. John Reagh.
vi. Elizabeth, b. 1794, m. George Neily (son of Joseph).
vii. Prudence, b. 1796, m. William, son of John McKenna.
viii. Hepzibah, b. 1797, m. (1st) William Stronach, (2nd) Ephraim Downie.
ix. Joseph, m. 1812, Hulda Brown, d. 1860, aged about 70: Ch.: 7 sons and 2 daus.
x. Henry, m. (1st) Mary Van Horne Tupper, (2nd) July 6, 1813, Mercy, dau. of William Berteaux; was M.P.P. for township of Annapolis one term: Ch.: 4 sons and 4 daus., one Edwin Gates, Esq., High Sheriff of the County of Annapolis.

Gesner. The Gesners of Annapolis County are descended from Hendrick Gesner, a native of Germany who settled in New York, in 1709. A son John married Famitcha Brauer, of New York, of respectable Dutch origin, and two of the nine children of this marriage—Henry and Abraham, twins born in 1756—obtained commissions in one of the loyal regiments, and came to Nova Scotia in 1783. Henry settled in Cornwallis.* Abraham's biography will be found among the memoirs of the M.P.P's. He married 1786, Elizabeth Steadman, and had children:

i. Hannah, b. 1787, d. 1883, m. John Troop.
ii. Famitcha, b. 1788, d. 1879, m. Andrew Walker.
iii. Jacob, b. 1791, m. Elizabeth Trites (Westmoreland, N.B.): Ch.: 1, Catherine, m. 1837, Abraham Jones; 2, Elizabeth Caroline, m. 1844, William Henry Bent; 3, Thomas, m. 1855, Olive Cutler; 4, Isaac, m. 1852, Mary Farrell; 5, Malcolm, m. 1855, Eliza Thorne; 6, Edward, m. Elizabeth Murdoch; 7, Abraham, m. 1860, Barbara Wallace; 8, Jacob, m. 1862, Catharine Carpenter; 9, Margaret, m. Mariner Hicks; 10, William, m. Sophia Briggs; 11, Alice, m. Alfred Bonnell.
iv. Elizabeth, b. 1793, d. 1883, unm.
v. Maria, b. 1795, d. 1886, unm.
vi. Henry, b. 1797, d. 1869, m. Mary Bent.
vii. Horatia, b. 1799, m. John Henry Ditmars.
viii. Caroline, b. 1802, m. Moses Shaw, M.P.P.

* Henry, m. in Cornwallis, 1786, Sarah Pineo, and died 1850. They had ch.: 1, Rebecca, b. 1787, m. Elkanah Terry; 2, John Henry, b. 1789; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1791, m. Hon. Samuel Chipman; 4, David Henry; 5, Famitcha, b. 1795, m. 1821, Benjamin Cossitt; 6, Dr. Abraham, the distinguished naturalist, b. 1797, m. Sophia, dau. of Dr. J. Webster, and d. 1864; 7, Gibbs Henry, b. 1799; 8, Sarah C., b. 1802, m. Dr. Carr; 9, Henry, b. 1804, m. —— Kidston; 10, Ann Maria, b. 1806, m. Edward Hamilton; 11, Lucy, b. 1809; 12, Charlotte Ann, b. 1813, m. Samuel Barnaby.—[Ed.]

ix. Isaac, b. 1804, d. 1824, unm.
x. Abraham, b. 1806, m. Christina Young, d. 1853: Ch.: 1, Ann, m. John Covert; 2, Horatia, m. George Bent; 3, Mary Grassie, m. Joseph Bennett; 4, Famitcha Sibronte, m. James Gordon; 5, Abraham, unm.; 6, Isaac, m. Frances Hazlewood.
xi. De Lancey Moody, b. 1809, m. (1st) Lucy A. Longley, (2nd) Jane Eagleson: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1869, unm.; 2, Samuel, m. Elizabeth Brinton, *née* Chute; 3, Famitcha, m. John Z. Bent; 4, Leander, unm.; 5, Mary, unm.; 6, Rupert Derby, m. Hannah Covert; 7, Alice, m. Watson Jones; 8, Percy Eugene, unm.; (by 2nd wife): 9, Jacob Valentine, unm.; 10, Edith May; 11, Arthur Wesley; 12, Hannah Gladis; 13, Bessie Maud.
xii. George Provost, b. 1812, d. 1882, m. Phebe Young: Ch.: 1, James Edward; 2, Ann Amelia, m. Jacob Boehner; 3, Margaret Jane, m. Alfred Bent; 4, Agnes Emma, m. Albert D. Munroe; 5, William Young, m. Mary Ann Ley; 6, Elizabeth Cordelia Lawrence, m. John B. Gesner; 7, Horatio Nelson, m. (1st) Anna Roop (no issue), (2nd) Margaret Bent; 8, George Rawlings, m. Amazetta Hazelwood; 9, Armanilla, m. Sylvester Bent; 10, Maria R., m. Norman Roop; 11, Abraham Van D., d. unm.; 12, Seth Leonard, d. unm.; 13, John Henry, m. Floretta Hawke.

GILLIATT. WILLIAM GILLIATT was born in Yorkshire, 1738, came to Granville about 1774, and settled on a farm in Granville, on which the homestead is still occupied by his descendants. He married in England Rebecca Appleby, born 1743, and had children (of whom perhaps three were born in England):

i. Elizabeth, b. 1769, m. Isaac Foster.
ii. William, b. 1771, m. 1801, Lydia Potter: Ch.: 1, Susanna, b. 1802, m. William Henry Shipley; 2, Mary Ann, b. 1805, m. William Franklin Potter; 3, Joseph, b. 1807, m. Keziah Witherspoon; 4, Rebecca, b. 1809, m. (1st) Walter Willett, (2nd) Samuel Hall; 5, David, b. 1811, m. Mary Ann Hardwick; 6, Israel, b. 1813, m. Sarah Potter; 7, William Allen, b. 1815, m. Olivia Phinney; 8, James, b. 1817, m. Jerusha Kinsman.
iii. Mary, b. 1773, m. John Wheelock.
iv. Rebecca, b. 1774, m. Douwe Amberman.†
v. Ann, b. 1776, m. Thomas Hamilton.
vi. John, b. 1778, m. Susan Potter: Ch.: 1, Eliza, m.; 2, Esther, m.; 3, Ann, m.; 4, Harriet, m. Nelson Miller; 5, John, m. Sabina Benson; 6, Edmund, m. Susan Dunn; 7, Warren, d. unm.; 8, James, d. unm.
vii. Catharine, b. 1780, m. James Van Blarcom.
viii. Thomas, b. 1782, m. Catharine Webber: Ch.: 1, James, m. Margaret Anderson; 2, William, m. Susan Starr; 3, Jeremiah, m.; 4, Thomas Henry, m. (1st) Zipporah Foster, (2nd) Mary Ann Corbitt; 5, Catharine m. Silas Potter; 6, Mary Magdalen, m. Josiah J. Ruggles; 7, Christopher, m. Mary Ann Potter.
ix. Hannah, b. 1784.
x. Sarah, b. 1786, m. Stephen Parker.

† Douwe Amberman, b. in the old colony of New York, of Dutch or German origin, came to Granville probably with father and brothers, Loyalists: Ch.: 1, Mary Ann, b. 1801; 2, William, b. 1803; 3, Paul, b. 1805; 4, Jane, m. Robert Mills (son of William); 5, Sarah A., b. 1807; 8, Douwe, m. Elizabeth Letteney (dau. of William); 9, Catharine, b. 1811; 10, David, b. 1813; 11, John, b. 1816.

xi. Michael. b. 1789, m. 1810, Amelia Parker : Ch.: 1, Rebecca Ann, b. 1810, m. John Oliver ; 2, William, b. 1813, m. Margaret Parker ; 3, John Wesley, b. 1816, m. Louisa Banks ; 4, James, b. 1819, m. (1st) Susan Spurr, (2nd) Martha Chute (no issue) ; 5, Edmund, b. 1823, m. Amoret Chute ; 6, George, b. 1826, m. Sophia Zwicker.

Goucher. Edward and Stephen Goucher came to the county in 1783. They may have been sons or brothers of the Joseph Goucher, a Loyalist, who was a grantee of St. John at the same period. Stephen named a son Joseph. Stephen Goucher, b. 1762, m. 1785, Mary Gage, b. 1764, d. 1848. Children :

i. William, b. 1785, m. Mehitable Crocker : Ch.: 1, Susan, m. Jacob Jewet ; 2, Mary, m. John Brown ; 3, Wesley, d. unm.; 4, Rebecca, d. unm.; 5, Lindley, d. unm.; 6, John, d. unm.; 7, James, m. Maria Weaver ; 8, Phebe, m. Daniel Ward ; 9, Maria, m. Robert Early ; 10, David, m. (1st) Elizabeth McGranaham, (2nd) Bertha Graves ; 11, Alpheus, m. Rachel Marshall ; 12, Wesley, m. Maggie Wilkins.

ii. Edward, b. 1787, m. Mary Baker : Ch.: 1, Lovicia ; 2, Reis, m. (1st) Flannagan, (2nd) Elizabeth Woodbury ; 3, Seraph, m. Leason Baker ; 4, Elizabeth, m. Dimock Banks ; 5, Ann, m. Samuel L. Tilley.

iii. Joseph, b. 1789, m. Caroline Gates (dau. of John) : Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, m. William Stephenson ; 2, Dimock, m. Martha Saunders ; 3, Rosanna, m. John Welsh, of Digby ; 4, Henry, m. Margaret Parker ; 5, Rev. John, m. Angelina Marshall ; 6, Mary, m. Silvanus Munroe ; 7, Inglis, m. Ella Tilley.

iv. Manley, b. 1791, m. Susan Randall : Ch.: 1, Ambrose, m. (1st) Amanda Palmer, (2nd) Mary Tilley ; 2, George, m. (1st) Augusta Nichols, (2nd) Lavinia Nichols ; 3, Sidney, m. Fannie Goucher ; 4, James, m. Abigail Parker ; 5, Charles, m. Edna Burkett (no issue); 6, Sarah Jane, m. Samuel Patterson ; 7, Lavinia, m. Job Randall ; 8, Sophia, d. unm. ; 9, Margaret, d. unm. ; 10, —, d. unm.

v. David, b. 1793, m. Mary Ann Gage : Ch. : 1, Phebe, m. James Upton ; 2, Charles, m. Bessie Perkins ; 3, Fannie, m. Sidney Goucher ; 4, George, m. Anna White ; 5, Frederic, d. unm.

vi. John, m. Diadama Wiggins.

vii. Elizabeth, b. 1797, m. Benjamin Gates.

viii. Hannah, b. 1799, m. William McKenna.

ix. Phebe, b. 1802, m. John Simmons.

Edward Goucher, married Hannah Wilson, and had children :

i. Rebecca, m. (1st) George Starratt, (2nd) William Phinney.

ii. Mary, m. James Armstrong.

iii. John, m. (1st) Nancy Grimes, (2nd) Nancy Grimes, her niece : Ch.: 1, —, d. unm.; 2, Rev. Walter, m. Sarah Saunders ; 3, Hannah, d. unm.; 4, William, m. (1st) Phebe Swallow, (2nd) Sophia Ocker ; 5, Rev. John, m. — (lives in England, where he is rector of a parish) ; 6, Rebecca, m. Peter Margeson ; 7, James, m. Elizabeth Durland ; 8, Mary Ann, m. Silas Margeson ; 9, Hugh Parker, m. Mary Trask.

HALL. 1. JOHN HALL came here in 1760 with his brother Zechariah, from Medford, Mass., and settled in Lower Granville. (See memoir, page 336.) He was descended from Nathaniel Hall, who came from England to Dorchester, Mass., in 1634, through his son John, who was born in 1626, m. April 2, 1656, Elizabeth, dau. of Percival and Ellen Greer, and was "select-man" of Medford in 1690; and grandson John, b. Dec. 13, 1660, who m. Jemima, dau. of Joseph Sill; and great-grandson John, who was born 1690, and m. 1720, Elizabeth, dau. of Timothy Walker; was a representative, had 9 other children, and d. Aug. 8, 1746. One of his children, b. 1730, d. in Boston, 1792, m. Abigail Brooks, may have been the Joseph whose name is in the capitation tax list of Annapolis in 1792. John, fourth of the name in lineal order, was born 1720, and m. (1st) 1746, Mary Keizer, who died 1782, aged 62, (2nd) about 1790, Mary Kelley, widow of James Delap, and died 1792. Children:

(2) i. John, b. July 24, 1747.
ii. Henry, b. June 29, 1749, d. 1841, unm.
iii. Moses, b. Nov. 28, 1750, m. Martha Sprague.
iv. Aaron, b. 1752. These two did not come to Nova Scotia.
v. Mary, b. 1755, d. 1757.
vi. Lucy, b. 1757, m. George Wooster.
vii. Samuel, b. 1759, d. 1760.
viii. Elizabeth, b. 1761, in N.S., m. Capt. Henry Harris, Bear River.
(3) ix. James, b. 1764.
(4) x. Samuel, b. 1767.

Perhaps David Hall, b. May 30, 1746, and Thomas, b. Aug. 14, 1748, were also of this family.

2. JOHN HALL was born July 24, 1747, and in 1773 m. Elizabeth, dau. of William Pritchard, and lived in Granville. Children:

i. John Taylor, b. 1774, d. young.
ii. Mary, b. 1776, d. 1779.
iii. Elizabeth, b. 1778, d. 1800.
iv. Atalanta, b. 1780, m. William Porter.
v. William, b. 1783, d. young.
vi. Joseph Cossins, b. 1785, m. (1st) Hannah Shafner, (2nd) Deborah Calkins: Ch.: 1, John, m. Catherine Longley; 2, Hannah, m. William Henry Munroe; (by 2nd wife): 3, Ann, m. Ryder; 4, Margaret, m. Asa Porter; 5, Eliza, m. John Croscup.
vii. George Wooster, b. 1785 (twin*), m. Elizabeth, dau. of Joseph Thomas: Ch.: 1, Sarah, m. Daniel Kennedy; 2, Elizabeth, m. William Blaney; 3, Martha, m. Andrew Randall; 4, Joseph, m. (1st) Priscilla Cushing, (2nd) Abigail Young, *née* Litch; 5, Armanilla, d. unm.; 6, George, d. unm.; 7, Mary Ann, m. Isaac Vroom.
viii. Moses, b. 1787, m. Sybil, dau. of James Thorne: Ch.: Elizabeth P., b. 1831, m. John H. Foster.
ix. Thomas, b. 1790, d. 1856, unm.
x. Sarah, m. (1st) Daniel, son of Andreas Bohaker, d. 1812, (2nd) John Croscup.
xi. Lucy, m. Daniel Croscup.
xii. Martha, m George Croscup.

* St. Luke's church record has "twins of John Hall, bpd. July 1, 1798."

3. James Hall was born in 1764, and m. (1st) 1790, Havilah Shaw, (2nd) 1816, Mary Delap; was appointed a Justice of the Peace in 1807. Mr. Millidge, Custos of the County, in a report to the Governor, advised against Mr. Hall's appointment as a magistrate on account of his alleged democratic principles, and because he was a "Newlight." The loyalty of these seceders from old Congregationalism was suspected. He died in 1846. Children:

i. Mary Keizer, b. 1791, m. Samuel, son of John Morehouse.
ii. David Shaw, b. 1793, m. (1st) Catherine Wade, (2nd) Susan Hall, *née* Reed, (3rd) Mrs. Lawrence: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth Ann, b. 1816, m. J. Fletcher Bath, J.P.; 2, James Henry, b. 1820, m. (1st) 1842, Mary S. Cutler; 3, Edward Fellows, b, 1822, m. Jerusha Tupper; 4, David Reid, b. 1828, d. 1833; 5, Mary Jane, b. 1832.
iii. James Harris, b. 1795, m. Jane, dau. of James Thorn: Ch.: 1, James, b. 1823, m. Ann W. DeForest; 2, David Harris, b. 1824, m. Susan Mary Gove; 3, Stephen S., b. 1826, m. Havilah Shaw Fellows; 4, Havilah, b. 1828, d. unm.; 5, Annie Maria, b. 1830, m. George DeForest.
iv. Mehitable Patten, b. 1797, m. Stephen Sneden Thorne, M.P.P.
v. Elizabeth Catharine, b. 1799, m. James Delap, M.P.P.
vi. Ann Phinney, b. 1800, m. Israel Fellows.
vii. Thomas Harris, b. 1802, m. Susanna Reid: Ch.: 1, Lucy, m. Robert Mills, J.P.; and others.
viii. Lawrence, b. 1804, m. 1828, Ann Eliza Eaton: Ch: 1, Edward H., b. 1829, m. Caroline Hall, d. 1884; 2, Mary Eliza, b. 1830, d. 1833; 3, Harris, b. 1832, m. Bathia Mechie, d. 1858; 4, Lawrence, b. 1835, m. twice, ; 5, Jacob, b. 1837, d. 1838; 6, Jacob V., b. 1839, d. 1850; 7, Charles W., b. 1841, m. Eliza Wing, d. 1877; 8, Samuel, b. 1844, m. Alice. dau. of Tarbell Wheelock; 7, Mary Ann, b. 1847, m. George Hoyt.
ix. Zebina, b. 1807, m. Sarah Harris (dau. of Alpheus): Ch.: 1, Zebina S., m. Georgina Carlisle; 2, Alpheus Harris, m. Sarah Banks (Newfoundland); 3, Havilah, m. David Bath; 4, Lucille, m. Henry Fairweather; 5, Henry, d. unm.; 6, Elvidge, d. unm.; 7, Stephen, m. Elizabeth Macdonald; 8, William, m. Sophia Duncan.
x. William Henry, b. 1809, m. Ann Robblee: Ch.: 1, Moses Shaw, m. Frances ——; 2, Thomas Harris, m. Emma Kate Estabrooks.
xi. Joseph Reid, b. 1812, m. Susan Robblee: Ch.: 1, Mary Havilah, m. William Smith; 2, Susan, d. unm.; 3, Hannah Jane, m. George W. Mills; 4, James Reid, m. Elizabeth Pritchard Hall; 5, Laura Judson, m. Nelson Lutz.
xii. Samuel, b. 1815, m. Louisa Hall: Ch.: 1, Mary Ann, m. Weston A. Fowler.

By second wife:

xiii. Joseph, b. 1819, m. Phebe Shaw.
xiv. Havilah, b. 1826, d. young.

4. Samuel Hall, b. 1767, m. 1791, Ruth Hicks (dau. of John), who was born 1765, d. 1856. Children:

i. Weston, b. 1792, m. 1816, Sarah, dau. of James Delap: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1818, m. Robert Foster; 2, Louisa Jane, b. 1821, m. (1st) Samuel Hall, (2nd) Daniel Clark; 3, Sarah Ann, b. 1824, m. Stephen Eaton; 4, James Weston, b. 1829, d. unm.; 5, Ruth, b. 1833, m. William Winchester.

ii. Hannah, b. 1794, m. (1st) Robert, son of James Delap, (2nd) Robert Randall.
iii. Henry, b. 1795, m. Nancy, dau. of James Eaton : Ch.: 1, Lucy Ann, b. 1826, m. Joseph Robblee ; 2, Stephen, b. 1829, d. unm.; 3, Watson, d. unm.; 4, Moses, b. 1831, m. Frances Murphy ; 5, Caroline, b. 1835, m. David Delap ; 6, Henry, b. 1837, m. Elizabeth Fowler ; 7, Edward, d. unm.; 8, John, d. unm.; 9, Hannah, m. Stephen Blaney.
iv. Nancy, b. 1796, m. Thomas Young.
v. Phebe, b. 1798, m. James, son of Sylvester Wade.
vi. Samuel, b. 1800, m. 1825, Temperance Delap (no issue).
vii. John, b. 1802, d. Oct., 1867, unm.
viii. Elizabeth, b. 1804, d. 1809.
ix. Elizabeth Ruth, b. 1809, m. Edward Eaton, J.P.

John Hall, progenitor of another family of the name, was a native of the city of Bristol, England. He resided in the eastern section of the county before 1790. In 1793 he married Nancy, daughter of the then late Lieut.-Col. Henry Munroe, and settled on the North Mountain, near the line between Wilmot and Granville. Children :

i. John, b. 1795, m. 1817, Eleanor Clark : Ch.: 1, Sarah Ann, b. 1819, d. unm.; 2, Mary Matilda, b. 1821, m. Eleazer Woodworth ; 3, David, b. 1823, m. Ann Foster ; 4, Eleanor, b. 1825, m. William Lawrence ; 5, John Allen, b. 1827, d. 1829 ; 6, Eliza, b. 1829, m. Charles Hogan ; 7, Elizabeth, b. 1832, unm.; 8, William Clark, d. unm.; 9, Uriah, m. Julia M. Graves.
ii. James, b. 1797, m. 1820, Mary Brown (dau. of George) : Ch.: 1, Peter, b. 1820, m. Almira Brown ; 2, Eliza, b. 1822, m. Dewitt ; 3, George, b. 1823, m. Eliza Jane Johnston ; 4, Charles H., b. 1825, m. (1st) Louisa Roach, (2nd) Jane Messenger ; 5, Hezekiah, b. 1827, m. Lorena Gates ; 6, Thomas, b. 1829, m. (1st) Lizzie Whitney, (2nd) Mary Wyman ; 7, Charlotte, b. 1831, m. Solomon Chute ; 8, Susan, b. 1832, m. George W. Wilson ; 9. Sarah Lavinia, b. 1833, m. Robert Early ; 10, Mary Matilda, b. 1836, m. George W. Wilson ; 11, James, m. Barbara Easson ; 12, Samantha, d. unm.
iii. Henry, b. 1799, m. Seraphina Brown : Ch.: 1, Charles Wesley, m. (1st) Sarah Beardsley, (2nd) Harriet Snow ; 2, Susanna, m. David Hamilton ; 3, John H., m. Naomi Ogilby ; 4, Rev. William E., m. Margaret Bass (dau. of George).
iv. William, b. 1801, m. Mary Farnsworth : Ch.: 1, Solomon, m. Mary Jane Fisher ; 2, Manning, d. unm.; 3, John W. (in Australia); 4, Mary Eliza, m. Samuel Haines ; 5, Jacob Reis, m. Armanilla Reagh ; 6, Sarah Ann, m. Elkana Bowlby ; 7, William, unm.; 8, Joshua C., d. unm.; 9, George, d. unm.; 10, George, d. unm.
v. Mary, b. 1803, m. William Cropley.
vi. Charlotte, b. 1805, m. Joseph Hoffman.
vii. Ann, b. 1807, m. Peter Margeson.

Hardwick. The oldest census returns for the township of Annapolis, those for 1767, state the household of Heinrich or Henry Hardwick to consist of five members, of whom two were of foreign birth. (I should have taken Hardwick for a purely English name, but if the Christian name was spelt Heinrich, it must have been in this instance German ;

especially if "foreign," was meant to indicate that they were born outside the King's dominions, and not merely outside the Province. Harttman, the maiden name of his wife, is certainly German.—Ed.) He obtained lands probably within the limits of the banlieue, and soon became a prosperous farmer. Children:

i. Henry, m. 1798, Ann Berteaux: Ch.: 1, Ann, b, 1799, m. John Lockwood; 2, Thomas, b. 1800, d. unm.; 3, William Henry, b. 1802, m. Barbara Easson; 4, Edward, b. 1804, m. (1st) Jane Dickie, (2nd) Hannah Marshall; 5, James, b. 1806, m. (1st) Rebecca Dickie, (2nd) Olivia Fellows, (3rd) Rebecca McLatchy; 6, Louisa, b. 1808, m. Nathan Tupper; 7, Alexander, b. 1810, m. Harriet Troop; 8, George, b. 1813, m. Susan, dau. of Andrew Henderson; 9, Charlotte, b. 1815, m. William Bent; 10, Mary Jane, b. 1820, m. George, son of Andrew Henderson.

ii. Frederic, m. 1801, Sarah Easson: Ch.: 1, Catharine, b. 1802, d. unm.; 2, Christina, b. 1804, m. William Whitman; 3, Bethiah, b. 1807, d. unm.; 4, William, b. 1809, m. (1st) Elizabeth Simpson, (2nd) Charlotte Fairn; 5, Henry Petre, b. 1811, m. Maria Fleet; 6, Andrew Bierdman, b. 1813, m. Caroline Whitman; 7, Henrietta, b. 1815, m. David Fitzrandolph; 8, Frederic, b, 1817, unm.; 9, James, b, 1819, m. Sarah Coleman, *née* Brown; 10, Mary Ann, b. 1821, m. David Gilliatt; 11, Alfred, b. 1821, m. Mary Eliza Potter; 12, Edmund, b. 1823, m. Mary Elizabeth Hardwick.

iii. John, m. Mary Balcom: Ch.: 1, Mary, m. William Berteaux; 2, Elizabeth, m. Elias Bent; 3, Henry, m. 1825, Eliza Easson; 4, Josiah, m. Henrietta Starratt; 5, John, m. Jane Neily, *née* Burchill; 6, Susan, m. Jacob Starratt; 7, James, m. Susan Starratt.

iv. Lucretia, m. John Kent.

v. Mary, m. Zara Kent.

Harris. Three families of Harris settled in Annapolis County during the latter part of the last century. 1, John Harris, the progenitor of the oldest of these families, came before 1755. According to the memoir of John Harris, M.P.P., Thomas, one of his sons, was Adjutant of Militia in 1776, during the threatened invasion of that and the following year, and John, another son, was a Deputy Crown Land Surveyor from the time of the arrival of the Loyalists. He was married in, or before, 1752, and had sons:

(2) i. Thomas, b. probably 1753.
(3) ii. John, jun.
(4) iii. Henry, b. 1757.

2. Thomas Harris, born probably 1753, may have been the second but probably the eldest son of John, sen. He married about 1775, Mary LeCain, and had children:

i. Capt. John, b. 1775, or 1776, m. 1799, Mary Shaw: Ch.: 1, Thomas (lived in Eastport); 2, Henry, d. (at sea) unm.; 3, Nelson, d. (at sea) unm.; 4, Charles B., d. (in Ontario); 5, John McNamara, m.

Diadama McDormand ; 6, Moses, m. (1st) Rachel Rice, (2nd Sophia Rice ; 7, Isaiah, d. unm. ; 8, Mary, m. George Ryerson ; 9, Susan, d. unm.

ii. Thomas, b. 1777, d. (abroad) unm.

3. John Harris, Jun., date of birth unknown, but a John Harris, according to the church records, was buried Sept. 5, 1822, aged 70. He married (1st) Maria Dunn, (2nd) Mary De Lancey. Children :

By first wife :

i. Henry, b. 1780, d. 1797.
ii. Polly, b. 1781, m. John Bent.
iii. Sarah, b. 1786, bpd. April 7, 1787, d. 1808.
iv. John, b. 1786, d. 1808.
v. George, b, 1788, m. Sarah Parker : Ch.: 1, Stephen, m. Catharine Potter ; 2, Lydia, m. (1st) Israel Chute, (2nd) Alexander Ross ; 3, John, m. Mary A. Balcom (dau. of Henry) ; 4, Sarah Ann, m. William Miller ; 5, Elizabeth, m. William Henry Balcom ; 6, George H., m. (1st) Lovicia Balcom, (2nd) Harriet Parker, (3rd) Mary Parker ; 7, Mary, m. Caleb S. Phinney ; 8, David, m. Angelina Troop ; 9, Alden, m. Sophia Allison.
vi. Letitia, b. 1790, d. 1790.

By second wife :

vii. Charlotte, b. 1792, m. William Davis.
viii. Mary Ann, b. 1794, d. 1797.
ix. Ann Seabury, b. 1796, d. 1798.
x. James DeLancey, b. 1799, d. Dec., 1832, m. Mary Woodbury (who after his death m. Wm. B. Perkins) : Ch.: 1, Isabel, b. 1822, m. J. Millidge Harris ; 2, Charlotte, b. 1824, m. Robert Longley ; 3, DeLancey, b. 1827, m. Mehitable Walker ; 4, Mary W., b. 1829, m. Cory Odell ; 7, James Bonnett, m. Ann Eliza Pitman.

4. Henry Harris, b. 1757, m. 1783, Elizabeth Hall (dau. of John), and probably inherited the homestead. Children :

i. Mary, b. 1784, m. Edward Morgan.
ii. Joseph Hall, b. 1785, bpd. Dec. 12, m. Elizabeth Clark : Ch.: 1, Richard, m. Sarah Ann Brennan ; 2, William Henry, m. (1st) Rachel Beals, (2nd) Amoret Banks ; 3, Mary, m. Isaac Beals ; 4, Henrietta, m. William H. Dunn ; 5, Elizabeth Jane, m. (1st) Elizabeth Turnbull, (2nd) David Rice ; 6, Louisa, m. Edmund E. Johnston ; 7, Abigail, m. Israel McFadden.
iii. James, b. 1787, m. (1st) Maria Clarke, (2nd) Sarah Green : Ch.: 1, Edward, m. (1st) Maria Lumley, (2nd) Sarah — ; 2, Nancy, m. Elisha Woodbury ; 3, Louisa, m. Joseph Godfrey ; 4, Harriet, m. William Crouse ; 5, Sutcliffe, m. Rebecca Pitman ; 6, Matilda, m. George A. Purdy ; 7, Susan, m. Richard Clark ; (by 2nd wife) : 8, Isaac Seth, d. unm. ; 9, Albert, m. Frances M. Ryerson ; 10, Leah, m. William F. Rice ; 11, Robert, d. unm. ; 12, Emma, m. Silas Parker.
iv. William Henry, b. 1788, bpd. Sept. 7, m. (1st), 1810, Hannah Hetrick, (2nd), 1829, Ann Pine : Ch.: 1, Samuel Andrew, b. 1811, m. April 30, 1834, Eliza Rice ; 2, Elijah, b. 1813, m. Mary Crouse ; 3, Thomas, b. 1814, m. (1st) Keziah Troop, (2nd) Angelina Oakes, *née* Kempton ; 4, John Millidge, b. 1824, m. Isabel Harris (no issue) ; 5, Hannah, b. 1826, m. John Troop (no issue); 6, Wallace, b. 1828, m. Sophia Reed ; 7, Eliza Ann, m. Henry Copeland.

v. Samuel, b. 1790, m. Debby Ann McAlister (in Ontario).
vi. Elizabeth, b. 1792, bpd. Jan. 17, 1793, m. John Carty.
vii. John Vankirk, b. 1794, bpd. Sept. 14, m. Jane Holmes (in Ontario).
viii. Lucy, b. 1796, m. Robert Ludlow Harris.
ix. Amelia, b. 1798, d. unm.
x. Ann, b. 1801, m. Abraham Spurr.

Samuel Harris came to Annapolis in 1760 or 1761. He had married in 1755, Mary Cook, daughter of Caleb Cook, descendant of Francis Cook of the *Mayflower*, and was himself a great-grandson of Arthur Harris, who came from Plymouth, Devonshire, England, to New England, and was of Duxbury, Mass., in 1640, and one of the original proprietors of Bridgewater, and first settlers of West Bridgewater, 1652. Arthur's son Isaac, born about 1644, married Mercy, daughter of Robert Latham. Mercy Latham's mother was Susannah, daughter of John Winslow, and granddaughter of Mary Chilton, who, according to tradition, was the first person to land on "Plymouth Rock." Isaac had a son Samuel, born about 1669, who married, in 1710, Abigail Harden. Their son Samuel, born in Bridgewater, Mass., 1728, moved to Plympton, thence to Boston, thence to Nova Scotia, with wife and three children. More than fifty years afterwards his eldest son was elected a member of the Provincial Parliament for the township of Annapolis. (See his memoirs.) Other descendants have kept up the honours of the name. John S. Harris, founder of the great iron foundry and car factory of Harris & Allan, St. John, N.B.; Michael S. Harris and his sons, prominent merchants at Moncton, N.B., and one leading lawyer, one leading clergyman, and one able physician in this province testify to the far-reaching importance of the migration to Annapolis County of Samuel Harris. Children:

i. John, b. 1758, m. (1st) Oct. 30, 1785, Abigail, dau. of Michael Spurr, (2nd) Aug. 3, 1806, Anna, dau. of William Letteney: Ch.: 1, Sarah, b. Aug. 20, 1786, m. Robert Jefferson, jun.; 2, John Spurr, b. Dec. 23, 1787,* m. Jan. 27, 1814, Christina, dau. of John Conrad Heterick; 3, Josiah, b. Dec. 24, 1789, d. Sept. 22, 1808; 4, Harriet (or Henrietta), b. Dec. 27, 1791, m. Edmund Ward Johnson, of Digby County; 5, George, m. (1st) June 25, 1819, Elizabeth Whitman, (2nd) Anna Purdy (no issue); 6, Arzarehah Morse, b. Feb. 13, 1796, m. Anna Vaughan, Providence, R.I., d. in Boston; 7, Anna, b. Feb. 25, 1798, m. (1st) Asaph Whitman, (2nd) John Whitman; 8, Horatio Nelson, b. April 20, 1800, m. Ann Maria Robinson; 9, Caroline (twin of H. Nelson), m. Spinney Whitman; (by 2nd wife): 10, Evans, b. 1807, d. 1807; 11, Sidney Smith, b. Dec. 8, 1808, m. about 1834, Sarah Allen; 12, Arthur William, b. Jan. 7, 1810, m. Oct. 22, 1833, Caroline, dau. of Phineas Oakes, J.P.; 13, Alexander, b. March 24, 1813, m. Helen Augusta Berteaux; 14, Hannah Eliza, b. Feb. 16, 1815, m. Dec. 15, 1834, Phineas Lovett Oakes; 15, Philip Richardson, b. Jan. 16, 1818, m. Oct. 14, 1841, Charlotte A., dau. of Jasper Williams.

* The burial of a John Harris appears on the church record, February 3rd, 1839, aged 52.

ii. Lydia, b. 1759, m. 1792, Robert Laidley.
iii. Sylvia, b. 1760, m. John Wright, from Halifax (had son, Stanley, whose descendants are in Digby County).
iv. Sarah, b. 1761, m. Samuel Hill (Machias, Me.).
v. Samuel, b. April 21, 1763, d. Nov. 11, 1834, m. Jan. 4, 1798, Elizabeth Evans Jefferson (dau. of Robert): Ch.: 1, Elizabeth J., b. Dec. 12, 1798, d. April 25, 1855, unm.; 2, Henry J., b. Sept. 11, 1800, d. July 27, 1839, aged 39; 3, Stephen, b. 1802, d. 1803; 4, Sarah J., b. Aug. 6, 1804, d. June 22, 1846; 5, Mary A., b. July 14, 1806, d. Nov. 25, 1889; 6, Josiah, b. Sept. 19, 1808, d. July 27, 1822; 7, Henrietta, b. March 26, 1811, d. 1896; 8, Robert Jefferson, b. May 18, 1813, m. Rebecca, dau. of Col. Isaac Ditmars, and grand-niece of Governor Peter D. Vroom, of New Jersey; 9, Samuel, b. April 16, 1815, d. May 29, 1877; 10, John, b. Feb. 3, 1818, m. Aug. 9, 1860, Sarah, dau. of Richard W. Jones, of Weymouth; 11, William, b. April 21, 1820, m. Phebe Ann Witherspoon; held prominent positions in County of Elgin, Ontario, and he and his wife were honoured by a monument erected by the citizens of Iona and vicinity in that county.
vi. Benjamin, b. 1764, m. Rachel Balcom (dau. of Silas): Ch.: 1, Thomas, bpd. Sept. 23, 1789, m. Leaphy, dau. of John Roop; 2, Sylvia, m. Nov. 3, 1825, James M. Potter; 3, Frederic, b. about 1797, d. about 1828, unm.; 4, Christopher Prince, b. about 1800, d. unm.; 5, James Stanley, b. Oct. 25, 1803, m. Nov. 8, 1836, Louisa Ann, dau. of Benjamin Wilson, of Dorchester, N.B.; 6, Mary Emma, m. — Elliott.
vii. Christopher Prince, b. Aug. 8, 1767, m. July 25, 1791, Elizabeth, dau. of Abraham Spurr, and lived on the Digby side of Bear River: Ch.: 1, Robert Laidley, b. June 9, 1792, m. April 25, 1816, Lucy Hall, dau. of Henry Harris; 2, Mary Amelia, b. June 25, 1794, m. Feb. 19, 1824, Andrew, son of John Hennigar; 3, Jane Elizabeth, b. Dec. 23, 1796, m. Jan. 24, 1819, Joel, son of Thomas McDormand; 4, Ann, b. Sept. 20, 1799, m. Nov. 25, 1825, Thomas P. Williams, jun.; 5, Eliza, b. Feb. 9, 1802, d. Oct. 19, 1808; 6, Michael Spurr, b. Sept. 22, 1804 (mayor of Moncton, etc.), m. in Annapolis, May 11, 1826, Sarah Ann, dau. of John Troop, Esq.; 7, George Davis, b. May 20, 1808, m. July 27, 1832, Sophia H. M., dau. of Fred. Rupert, St. John, N.B.; 8, Edmund Reece, b. Jan. 23, 1811, m. Dec. 23, 1840, Susan, dau. of Rev. Henry Saunders; 9, Eliza Maria, b. Sept. 7, 1814, m. William Short, from Plymouth, England; 10, Benjamin James, b. March 2, 1817, m. Sept. 11, 1854, Susan Amanda, dau. of James Potter.
viii. Joseph, twin of Christopher P., d. unm.
ix. Josiah, b. Aug., 1770, d. unm.

A third family of Harrises sprang from JOHN HARRIS, a native of Dublin, who was born about the middle of the last century, entered the army, attained the rank of sergeant, fought in the battle of Bunker Hill, and after twenty years' service, got his discharge in Annapolis, where his company was then stationed, and soon after married Elizabeth Graves, of Granville. Children:

i. Esther, m. John Burkitt.
ii. Charlotte, m. (1st) Richard Hawkins (killed at the capture of Castine), (2nd) James Moore.
iii. Rachel, m. James Ray.
iv. Susan, m. Edmund Morton.

v. John, settled and married in Maine.
vi. David, b. 1800, m. Eliza Brown : Ch. : 1, John, m. Leah Bowlby ; 2, George, m. Mary Jane Spinney ; 3, William, m. Gertrude Graves ; 4, Fletcher, d. unm. ; 5, Alonzo, m. Mary Woodbury ; 6, Rachel, m. Christopher McLean ; 7, Lavinia, m. (1st) D'Arcy Phinney, (2nd) Napoleon Morris ; 8, Asa, d. unm. ; 9, Mary Jane, d. unm ; 10, Emma, d. unm. ; 11, David, d. unm.
vii. Thomas, b. 1802, m. Mary Bowlby, b. 1808 : Ch. : 1, Charlotte, d. unm ; 2, Emma, d. unm. ; 3, James (abroad) ; 4, John, d. unm. ; 5, Susan, m. James Phinney ; 6, Richard, m. Mary Prime ; 7, Harriet, m. Ambrose Miller ; 8, William, m. Cecilia Cropley.
viii. Eliza, m. Joseph Dodge.

Hawkesworth. Adam Hawkesworth, born about 1740 in Yorkshire, came to Nova Scotia in 1763, with his wife, Elizabeth Wedgewood, and lived in Annapolis and Digby counties. He died about 1805. Children :

i. Hannah, b. 1764, m. James Smith.
ii. Elizabeth, b. 1765, m. Richard Bowlby.
iii. John, b. 1768, m. Sarah Slocomb : Ch. : 1, Adam Hueston, b. 1795, m. Mary Slocomb, 3 ch. ; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1799, m. Robert Douglas ; 3, John Slocomb, b. 1803, m. Ruby Clark ; 4, George, b. 1806, m. Hannah Young ; 5, Joshua, b. 1808, m. (1st) Mary McCormick (dau. of Daniel), 9 ch., (2nd) Rachel McCormick (dau. of John).
iv. George, b. 1773, m. Catherine Zeiglar.
v. Sarah, b. 1775, m. Daniel Durland.
vi. Mary, b. 1777, m. Cephas Welton.
vii. Ann, b. 1782, m. — McBride.
viii. Ruby, b. 1785, m. John Slocomb.

Healy. This family comes from a very ancient and eminent Devonshire stock. The name has in some generations been spelt Hele. It is entirely distinct from the Irish family of the same name, although they both may have been descended from a Norman ancestor, one of whose sons may have settled in Ireland. But it is stated on the authority of so great a genealogist and herald as Burke, that the family possessed the manor of Heale or Hele in the Parish of Bradich, North Devon, long before the Conquest, hence the name, de la Hele. Burke assigns to a family of Healy a coat of arms very nearly the same as that of Hele. William Heley, b. 1613, was of Marshfield, Mass., in 1643, and of Roxbury in 1649. He was married five times : (1st) 1643, Grace Ives, of Watertown ; (2nd) 1650, Mary Rogers (daughter of Rev. Nathaniel), who left a son William, b. 1652 ; (3rd) 1653, Grace Buttrice, who left a son Nathaniel, b. 1659; (4th) 1661, Phebe Green, who left sons, Samuel, b. 1662, and Paul, b. 1664 ; (5th) 1667, Sarah Brown, of Hampton, N.H. Ebenezer Healy,* from Marblehead, Mass., who was among the first grantees of Yarmouth, in 1762, was a descendant,

*His daughter Hannah married Wm. Haskell, and was the mother of the Editor's mother's mother. Allen Haley, Esq., M.P., of Windsor, is from his son Comfort, through Jeremiah, and Allen, sen.

but through which of these sons I do not know.* He married Grace Boleyn† for his second wife, and his fourth son, JOHN HEALY, removed early to Granville. He married (1st) 1795, Mary Morrison, b. Sept. 15, 1773, d. 1795; (2nd) Mary, dau. of Benjamin Brown 1st, an original grantee of Yarmouth, who d. 1797: she was born 1773 and died 1803; (3rd) Sarah Anderson; and had children:

i. Josiah, b. 1795, m. Jane Kennedy: Ch.: 1, Daniel, d. unm.; 2, John, m. Angelina Shafner; 3, Margaret, m. Robert Delap.
By second wife:
ii. Elizabeth, b. 1798, m. James Morrison.
iii. John, b. 1799, d. unm.
iv. Mary Ann, b. 1801, m. (1st) Benjamin Croscup, (2nd) Thomas Anthony, (3rd) James Anthony.
v. Grace Matilda, b. 1803, d. unm.
By third wife:
vi. Ebenezer, b. 1805, d. unm.
vii. Mary, b. 1806, m. William Fash.
viii. Isaac William, b. 1808, m. (1st) Amelia Keans, (2nd) Elizabeth Crisp: Ch.: 1, John Henry, b. 1836, m. Sarah Jane Whitman; 2, Joseph Comfort, b. 1837, m. — Armstrong; 3, William C., b. 1839, m. Henrietta Whitman; 4, Anderson, m (1st) Lavinia Anderson, (2nd) Isabella Elliott; 5, Theron P., b. 1844, m. Anna Jefferson; 6, Eleanor Erena, b. 1846, m. Edward McDormand; 7, Charles, b. 1849, d. 1852; 8, Granville B., b. 1851, m. Elizabeth Smith.
ix. Anderson, b. 1810, m. Mary Dellimer, several ch.
x. Joseph Comfort, b. 1812, m. Eunice Bishop.
xi. Eliza Ann, m. William Roop.
xii. Charles William, m. Louisa Turple.

HICKS. JOHN HICKS was a descendant in the fifth generation from Robert Hicks, who came to Plymouth colony from Bermondsey, Southwark, London, in 1621, in the *Fortune*, which brought the second party of Pilgrim Fathers, the line of descent being Samuel,[2] Thomas,[3] Thomas.[4] He is said to have been son of James, born about 1550, grandson of Baptist, born about 1526, great-grandson of Thomas, born about 1470, and great-great-grandson of John Hicks, who was descended from Ellis Hicks, knighted by Edward the Black Prince after the battle of Poictiers.‡ He married in Friends' Meeting, at Tiverton, R.I., in 1740, Elizabeth Russell. He was in religion a Quaker, the first of that persuasion to settle in the county. (See further memoirs of John Hicks, M.P.P., p. 334.) One of the family was founder of the sect of Quakers called Hicksites. Three of his sons, John, Benjamin and Thomas, settled in the township of Annapolis. His son Weston, born at Falmouth, in 1760, owned the farm now occupied by his grandson, Weston A. Fowler,

* See "N. E. Historic-Genealogical Register" for 1892, p. 207.

† So Mr. Calnek says; but I find a tradition that she was 2nd wife of Josiah Healey, the son or a brother of the grantee of Yarmouth.—[ED.]

‡ Chute Genealogies.

and was many years in the Commission of the Peace. These men were reckoned among our wealthiest and most successful farmers in the latter part of the last century: Children:

i. Hannah.
ii. Ephraim, b. 1744.
iii. Seth, b. 1746.
iv. Russell, b. 1747.
v. Patience, b. 1752.
vi. Benjamin, b. 1750, m. Elizabeth Morrison: Ch.: 1, Joseph, b. April 18, 1773; 2, Archibald, b. June 16, 1774, m. Helen Benson; 3, Russell, b. March 4, 1776; 4, Findlay, b. Nov. 10, 1777, m. Theresa Church; 5, Benjamin, b. July 18, 1779; 6, Mary, b. May 20, 1781, m. Parker Oakes; 7, Seth, b. April 1, 1783, d. March 1, 1800; 8, Ruth, b. Dec. 24, 1784, d. March 11, 1812; 9, Hannah, b. April 10, 1786, m. John Sanders; 10, Prudence, b. Feb. 19, 1789, d. Sept. 5, 1790; 11, John, b. Sept. 6, 1790.
vii. John, b. Nov. 4, 1755, d. 1815, m. Sarah Church, b. 1767, d. 1819: Ch.: 1, Hannah, b 1778, m. David Morse; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1780, d. unm.; 3, Constant, b. 1783, m. Eliza Johnston; 4, Martha, b. 1784, m. David Jess; 5, Rebecca, b. 1787, d. 1799; 6, John, b. 1789, m. (1st) 1820, Phebe Church, (2nd) Theresa Morse (dau. of Obadiah); 7, Sarah, b. 1791, d. 1813; 8, Mary, b. 1794, m. John Lockhart; 9, Lucinda, b. 1796, m. John Church; 10, Margaret, b. 1797, m. Abner Morse (son of Obadiah).
viii. Thomas, b. 1758 or 1759, d. 1826, aged 67, m. 1778, Sarah Chute: Ch.: 1, Patience, b. 1778, m. James Chesley; 2, Sarah, b. Feb. 11, 1780, m, John Rice; 3, Mary, b. Feb. 23, 1783, m. Nicholas, Haines; 4, Ruby, b. Jan. 26, 1785, m. Asa Foster; 5, Job, b. Feb. 3, 1786, m. 1809, Bridget Burrows; 6, Susan, b. 1788, m. John Rice; 7, Charles, b. April 7, 1790, m. Mary Kirk; 8, Amelia, b. June 9, 1793, m. David Welch; 9, Gilbert, b. Feb. 1, 1795, d. 1834, unm.; 10, Harriet, b. 1797, m. John Murdoch; 11, Joseph, b. June 10, 1799, m. Lavinia Langley; 12, Horatio Nelson, b. July 29, 1801, m. Elizabeth Mongard.
ix. John Weston, b. 1760.
x. Hannah, b. 1763, d. unm.
xi. Ruth, b. 1765, d. unm.

Edward How—His Family and Times. Two How or Howe families have lived and prospered in Nova Scotia. Of the elder of these—elder in the time of its domiciliation here—I desire now to give some account. Of the latter, everybody knows that it was of Loyalist antecedents, and that its most distinguished member became, in his last days, lieutenant-governor of his native province, after a brilliant political career, during which he conferred upon it many a boon and benefit not soon to be forgotten by a grateful and appreciative people.

"John How, or Howe, of Hodinhule, or Hodinhull, in Warwickshire, was one of the early settlers of Massachusetts, and his son John was one of the original proprietors and settlers of the town of Sudbury, in that province. He took the freeman's oath in May, 1640, and was select-man and marshal in 1642. He was one of the thirteen inhabitants of said town who petitioned for a tract of eight miles square for the town of

Marlboro'; and, according to tradition, the first English person who came to reside in that town. He lived near the Indian plantation fields, conciliating by his prudence and kindness his savage neighbours and enjoying their highest respect and confidence, being made their umpire in all their differences. In 1661 he was appointed to keep a house of entertainment, and kept the same when there were but two houses between his tavern and Worcester. His descendants occupied the same place for many generations. He died about 1686 (his will was proved in 1689), and he had by his wife Mary, who died about 1698, twelve children born between 1641 and 1663, ten sons and two daughters, of whom the second son, Samuel, born Oct. 20, 1642, married Martha Bent in 1663, and had in Sudbury, before 1675, seven children, of whom the seventh, David, born Nov. 2, 1674, married Hepzibah Death* in 1700, and kept the 'How Tavern,'† at Sudbury, which has been continued by his descendants of the same name, upon the same spot, to the present time (1850), the same being now kept by Lyman How, Esq. He had six children between 1702 and 1721, of whom David, the fifth child, married Abigail Hubbard, March 15, 1742 or 1743, and had ten children: Bulkeley, Persis, Peter, Abigail, Joseph, Israel, Alice, David, Rebecca and Lucy."

The subject of my memoir was probably an elder brother of David How who married Hepzibah Death, and therefore belongs to the eldest branch of the family.

"The descendants of John How, living in Marlboro' and in other towns in the vicinity, are very numerous. They sustain, generally as is believed, a reputation which reflects no dishonour upon their ancestry, many of whom were distinguished as leading men in the new settlements, and all, as far as is known, as fearless and undaunted in times of peril and alarm. Of the early members of the family, John, the son of John the first named, was killed in an engagement with the Indians in 1675. Thomas, another son, was a colonel, sheriff, justice of the peace, and one of the leading men of the town of Marlboro' for many years.

"The coat of arms of John How, the original received from England by him, being now in the possession of Lyman How, at the 'How Tavern,' Sudbury, bears the following inscription: 'Creation. The most Noble and Puissant Ld. Charles How, Erl. of Lancaster and Baron How of Wormleighton, 1st Commissary of the Treasury, 1st Gentleman of ye Bedchamber to his Majesty, Knight of the Garter, and one of ye, Govr. of the Charter House. Created Baron of Wormleighton in the Co. of Warwick, Nov. 18, 1606, in the 4th of James ye 1st, and Erl. of Lancaster, June 8, 1643, in ye 19th, Charles ye 1st, of this family, which derived themselves from a younger branch of ye antient Baron Hows,

* A corruption of the Norman name D'Aeth.—[Ed.]

† The scene of Longfellow's "Tales of a Wayside Inn."—[Ed.]

men famous many ages since in England, among which were Hugh How, the father and son, great favourites of King Edward ye 2nd—John How, Esquire, son to John How, of Hodinhule, in the Co. of Warwick, &c.' Arms he beareth,—*Gules* a chevron *Argent*, between three cross-crosslets *Or*, three wolf's heads on ye same crest on a wreath, a wyvern or Dragon partid per pale, *Or* and *Vert*, perced through ye mouth with an arrow, 'by the name of How,' ye Wolfs are ye famous arms, ye crosslets for great actions done by ye Erl. &c."*

So much for the ennobled ancestors of the How families of Nova Scotia.† Edward How, whose life was mainly passed in this county and province, was born in Massachusetts toward the close of the seventeenth century. On his arrival at Annapolis he was young and unmarried. The possession of Acadia by the English meant to the people of the old colonies a participation in its valuable and profitable peltry trade, and in its almost inexhaustible fisheries, and some of them, in consequence, eagerly embraced the opportunity of settling in it. Young How appears to have been one of these, and he seems to have fixed his headquarters at the old capital. The precise time of his coming is nowhere stated, but it was probably between 1720 and 1725. Here his business transactions with the French *habitans* and Indians made a study of their respective languages necessary, and he successfully applied himself to acquiring a knowledge of them. During this period he had cultivated the acquaintance and friendship of the members of the Government, as well as of the inhabitants of the town, and about 1730—perhaps a little earlier or a little later—he married Mary Magdalen Winniett, the third or fourth daughter of William Winniett, then and afterwards the leading vessel-owner and merchant in all Acadia. From this time he began to be regarded as a leading man in the community, and to be employed by the Government (whom he appears to have kept posted on the schemes and conduct of the French and Indians), whenever emergency required his aid. No man in the country had acquired so great an influence over the Indians, and the French inhabitants regarded him with much esteem and confidence. This ascendancy was twofold, being based on his knowledge of their languages, and the integrity he uniformly exhibited in all his dealings with them. The estimation in which he was held by the Government procured him a seat at the Council Board in 1736, a position which he retained until his death in 1750, a period of fourteen years. Previously, however, to his appointment to a seat in the Council he had

* The foregoing paragraphs have been compiled and extracted from a work entitled "Memorial of the Morses," by the late Rev. Abner Morse, of Massachusetts.

† Hon. Joseph Howe was descended from Abraham,[1] of Roxbury, Mass., supposed to have been a native of Hatfield, Broad Oak, Essex, England, through Isaac,[2] Isaac,[3] Joseph,[4] John,[5] the Loyalist.—[Ed.]

been a resident of Canso for some time, where he filled with complete satisfaction to the Government the offices of Commissary of Musters, High Sheriff or Provost Marshall, Justice of the Peace and Captain in the militia. As a magistrate at this period he took occasion to preserve the authority of the civil over the military power. Aldridge, a captain in the 40th regiment, was as commandant at Canso, charged by How and others with having deprived them of some of their civil rights, and appealed to Lieutenant-Governor Armstrong at Annapolis to interfere on their behalf; and to the honour of Armstrong be it said he took instant steps to stop the outrage. He wrote to Aldridge that he had assumed powers not vested in Phillips or himself, and told him that he had always referred civil matters to the justices of the peace and a committee of the people at Canso. He said in addition that the officers in command were entitled to sit as president in all the meetings on civil affairs.

The reader is referred to pages 111 to 113 for an account of the battle of Grand Pré on the night of February 11th, 1747; of Mr. How's position there as commissary of provisions, of his being wounded in the struggle, captured and exchanged. He was at that time also acting as the judge in the Court of Vice-Admiralty, and was thenceforth frequently engaged in the conduct of matters of importance on behalf of the rulers of the Province, and having a knowledge of both the French and Micmac tongues, he was enabled to conduct negotiations with the people of those nations with better discretion, and a greater certainty of success than one not so accomplished.

On the arrival of Cornwallis as governor in 1749, he was summoned from Annapolis by that gentleman, and sworn as a member of the new council which was then formed. Among the last acts of his useful and active life was the negotiation of a new treaty with the Indian tribes distributed along the northern shore of the Bay of Fundy, or perhaps more correctly to induce them to renew the treaty which they had ratified in 1746. He succeeded in this mission, and at a council held on board the *Beaufort*, in Halifax harbor (no house had yet been built where the city now stands), on the 14th of August, 1749, in reply to the first question put to the Sachems by the governor as to their object in coming to see him, they replied*: "Captain How told us that your Excellency ordered us to come, and we came in obedience to your orders."

The chiefs agreed to renew the treaty, and were told that after their return Mr. How would be sent to them as the bearer of presents, in case their tribes consented to ratify what they had agreed upon. In due time he received the formal ratification by the Indians, and distributed the gifts as promised. An interesting incident occurred in connection with his visit to the Indians of St. John River about this time. Cornwallis,

* See Nova Scotia Archives—printed volume—p. 572.

in his despatch to the Duke of Bedford, dated 20th August, 1749, says: "Your Grace will desire to know what happened at St. John River. 'They (Captain Rous, commander of the ship *Albany*, and Mr. How) found nobody at the old forts, and for some time saw no inhabitants at all, French or Indian. At last a French schooner arrived with provisions. Captain Rous took the schooner, and agreed to release her, provided the master would go up the river and bring down the French officers. Accordingly the master went up in his canoe, and next day a French officer, with thirty men and 150 St. John Indians (French colours flying) came opposite to the *Albany*, and planted their colours on the shore within musket-shot. Captain Rous sent Mr. How to order them to strike their colours. The officers made great difficulties, and many apologized. Captain How answered he did not come to reason the matter, but to order it to be done; that he could not answer for the consequences if it was not done immediately. The officer begged him to propose to Captain Rous to allow him to march back with the colours flying, and he would return next day without them. How carried the message to Captain Rous, who repeated the order that the colours should be struck that minute, which was accordingly done.'"

The years 1747, 1748 and 1749 witnessed most determined efforts on the part of the French to secure their alliance with the Indians, and to inspire the *habitans* of Acadia with the belief that France would soon drive the English from the peninsula. They already claimed all parts of the country outside that district, and had erected fortifications at Chignecto, and on the River Misseguash. In order to carry out their purpose in exciting the hostilities of the Indians, the Governor of Canada sent Louis Joseph de la Loutre, a priest whose long residence in the country had made him familiar with the names, habits and languages of those people, to clinch them to their interests, and to use them as instruments to annoy and distress the English garrisons and settlers, especially to Halifax, in 1749. To oppose this shrewd and wily agent, Governor Cornwallis looked to Edward How for assistance. How possessed all the good qualities of de la Loutre without his bad ones, and was the only man in the Province who possessed a tithe of the influence over the aborigines necessary to compete with the Frenchman, and he was therefore almost continually employed in distributing presents, and conducting negotiations tending to checkmate the doings of his antagonist during the years named, and it was while discharging these duties that he met with his sudden and untimely death.

A French officer,* connected with Louisburg, has left on record a

* Pichon, who could hardly be called a French officer, for although ostensibly such, he conducted a traitorous correspondence with the English. He was a native of Marseilles, but his mother was an English woman named Tyrrell.—[Ed.]

protest against the charge that his countrymen in the service at Beau Séjour, had any hand in this cruel murder. He says: "What is not a wrecked priest capable of doing? He (De la Loutre) clothed an Indian named Cope * in an officer's regimentals, and laying an ambuscade of Indians near to the fort, he sent Cope to it, waving a white handkerchief in his hand, which was the usual sign for admittance of the French into the English fort, having affairs with the commander of the fort. The Major of the fort, a worthy man, and greatly beloved by all the French officers, taking Cope for a French officer, came out with his usual politeness to receive him.† But he no sooner appeared than the Indians in ambush fired at him and killed him. All the French had the greatest horror and indignation at La Loutre's barbarous actions, and I dare say if the Court of France had known them, they would have been very far from approving them, but he had so ingratiated himself with the Marquis de la Gallissonniere, that it became a crime to write against him."

The following is the account of this tragedy as given by Governor Cornwallis, in a despatch to the Duke of Bedford, dated Nov. 27th, 1750: "I have now an affair of a more extraordinary nature to inform you of. Captain How was employed upon the expedition to Chiegnecto as knowing the country well, and being better acquainted both with the Indians and inhabitants, and, poor man, fancied he knew the French better, and personally those villains La Corne and La Loutre. His whole aim and study was to try at a peace with the Indians, and to get our prisoners out of their hands. For which purpose he had frequent conferences with La Loutre and the French officers under a flag of truce. . . . Captain How and the officers held a parley for some time across the river. How had no sooner taken leave of the officer, than a party that lay perdue fired a volley at him and shot him through the heart."

William Cotterell, then acting as Provincial Secretary, in a letter under date, June 3, 1754, addressed to Captain Otho Hamilton, of Annapolis, to whom La Loutre had written expressing a desire on his part to put a stop to the hostility of the Indians, which had resulted too frequently in acts not recognized in the codes of civilized warfare, says: "Having so often experienced his (La Loutre) proneness to all manner of mischief and iniquity, I do not believe in his good intentions; and I can for my own part assure you, that he made the very same proposal, nearly verbatim, that you have now transmitted, to Captain How and me at Chignecto about three days before he caused that horrible

* "Whom I saw some years afterwards at Miramichi—has hair curled, powdered and in a bag."

† How is here styled "Major," and Cornwallis often calls him "Captain," why I cannot tell, as I am not aware of his having any military rank.

treachery to be perpetrated against poor How, who was drawn into it under a pretence of conference with La Loutre upon this very subject."*

The sad event occurred in October of the year 1750. His untimely death left a blank in the society of the old capital not easily filled. His widow was left with a large family of children, the youngest of which was but a few months old, and who in after years filled a prominent place in the country. The eldest daughter, Deborah, became the wife of Samuel Cottnam, who was a captain in the 40th regiment so long stationed at Annapolis, in which place they were married. There was probably another daughter, who married Winkworth Tonge, and was the mother of William Cottnam Tonge (well known toward the close of the last century, and during the first decades of the present, as one of the clever men of the day), and the grandmother of the clever young poetess, Griselda Tonge, whose early death alone prevented her from fitly carving her name on the shield of Fame.

Of the sons, I think William was the eldest, and it is more than probable that he and his brothers were sent by their father for education to Boston. This son settled in what is now known as the County of Cumberland, where he married the widow of Joseph Morse, the founder of Amherst. Her maiden name was Olive Mason, of Medfield, Massachusetts, and after the confiscation of her young husband's property for treason, she went to her native town, where she lived until her death in 1807, at the age of eighty-three years. Her husband having failed in his wild attempt to bring this province into line with the revolted provinces, he was obliged to cross the borders, which he did, and where, having obtained the commission of a major, he fought for the revolutionists until the close of the struggle. Whether he left descendants or not I do not know, nor when nor where he died. At the time of his treason, he was a coroner, and seems to have been the near neighbour and intimate friend of the disaffected families then residing there. Mr. How's second son was named Edward, and lived and, I think, died in Annapolis. He was gazetted a Justice in the Court of Common Pleas, on the 18th February, 1785, and most probably died soon after, as I find John Ritchie appointed to the same office in 1786. He was probably never married. Another son entered the military service and was an officer in the Royal Fusiliers—the seventh regiment of foot—and died abroad, probably unmarried. Joseph—who was the youngest son but one—entered the navy as a lieutenant on board His Majesty's ship *Leviathan*, and was present at the great naval engagement near Cape Trafalgar, in 1805.

* La Loutre's apologists, notably Father Maillard, a worthy priest, say the Indians alone were guilty, being inspired by religious fanaticism, How, as they thought, having spoken irreverently of the Virgin Mary fourteen years before. (See Parkman's "Montcalm and Wolfe," Vol. I., p. 119).—[Ed.]

He too died in the service, leaving no issue that I am aware of. A memoir of his youngest son, Alexander Howe, M.P.P., appears on p. 355.

[There are many descendants of Edward How in the other provinces of Canada of high social and official rank—among them, Theodore Doucet, M.P.; his sister, Lady Middleton, wife of the late Commander-in-chief; the Countess de Bligny, Edmund Barnard, Esq., Q.C.; Lieut.-Col. Hughes, Chief of Police, Montreal; Odilon Doucet, Esq., P.O. Department, Ottawa; Antoine Prince, M.P.P.; Auguste Richard, Vice-Consul of France, Winnipeg; Canons Jean and Joel Prince, and Edouard Richard, Author.—Ed.]

Hoyt. Jesse Hoyt, born in 1744, married in 1764, Mary Raymond, came here a Loyalist in 1783 from Norwalk, Conn. He was a descendant in the sixth generation from Simon Hoyt who came to Charleston, Mass., in 1628, and settled later at Scituate, and afterwards at Windsor, Conn., the line being Simon,[1] Walter,[2] Zerubbabel,[3] Joseph,[4] James,[5] the latter of whom, born perhaps about 1720, married 1743, Hannah Gould. Children:

i. Silas, b. 1765, m. 1802, Jane, dau. of Sheriff Dickson, and settled near Annapolis: Ch.: 1, Alexander Dickson, b. 1803, m. 1827, Sophia, dau. of Stephen Jones, J.P., and settled at Weymouth, where his widow lives, in 1896, a. 102; 2, Polly Miller, b. 1805, m. 1837, John Easson; 3, Mary Ann, b. 1806, m. Benjamin Fairn; 4, James Frederic, b. 1809, m. Euphemia Stewart Easson: (Ch.: 1, *Jesse*, m. Clara Jane Cogswell; 2, *John Miller*, m. Mary Manning Drew; 3, *Alexander Easson*, m. Georgina Adelaide Tremain; 4, *William Henry*, m. Mary Hatch, of London, Eng.; 5, *Agnes Miller*, m. George LeCain; 6, *James Alfred*, m. Eleanor Cochran; 7, *Zaidee*, m. Frederic V. Tremain; 8, *Benjamin Fairn;* 9, *Mary Jane*, d. unm.; 10, *Fannie Helen*); 5, William Henry, b. 1811, m. Eliza J. Doucet; 6, Alfred, b. 1817, m. 1841, Helen Edson; 7, George, b. 1819, m. 1845, Maria Alfrida Doucet; 8, Charles, b. 1822, m. Sarah Jane Quirk.
ii. Jesse, b. 1767, d. 1838, m. Irene Wheelock: Ch.: 1, Mary Ann, b. 1805; 2, Harriet, b. 1808, m. James Smallie; 3, Edward Miller, b. 1810, m. Hannah R. Betts, lived in St. John, N.B.
iii. Mary, b. 1767, m. 1787, Nathan B. Miller.
iv. Hannah, b. 1774, d. 1777, at Huntingdon, L.I.
v. Frederic, b. 1776, d. unm. (lost in the woods at Weymouth and perished).
vi. Hannah, b. 1775, d. 1779, at Oyster Bay, N.Y.
vii. Harriet, b. 1781, d. 1796.
viii. Alfred, b. 1783, at Annapolis, d. 1783, at Weymouth.
ix. Ann, b. 1784, m. 1814, Handly Chipman.
x. James Moody, b. 1789, m. Mary Nesbit.

James. See memoir of Benjamin James, M.P.P. He was born 1742, and married, 1767, Elizabeth Wright, born 1743, and had children:

i. Elizabeth, b. 1768, m. Henry Sinclair.
ii. Benjamin, b. 1770, d. unm. (see the memoir, p. 350).

iii. Christopher, b. 1771, d. unm.
iv. John William, b. 1774, d. unm.
v. Sarah Ann, b. 1778.
vi. Peter P., b. 1781, m. Miss Warren.
vii. Daniel Weir, b. 1782,* m. Ann, dau. of John Ritchie, M.P.P., and settled in Annapolis: Ch.: 1, Benjamin John Ritchie, d. unm.; 2, Thomas Andrew Taylor, m. Abigail Kent; 3, Charles McCarthy, b. 1810, bpd. Jan. 11, 1811, m. — Bulleye; 4, William Johnston, bpd. Jan., 1813 (abroad); 5, Daniel Weir, m. Lecain; 6, John Wyman, m. (1st) Ann Phinney, (2nd) Ann Ritchie, was long postmaster at Lawrencetown.
viii. Thomas Wright, b. 1785, m. Mary Jacobs; was Deputy Provincial Secretary many years.

JEFFERSON. ROBERT JEFFERSON came from Yorkshire, England, where he was born in 1750, to Halifax, and thence to Annapolis, where he was employed by Col. Evans to assist him in managing his farm near Round Hill, and eighteen months afterwards married the colonel's daughter Elizabeth. He then became sole manager of the farm, and on the death of his father-in-law, the owner of it, and died 1812, leaving many descendants now scattered far and wide. Children:

i. Abigail, b. 1774, m. (1st) Richard Mongarde, (2nd) Gideon Clark.
ii. Stephen, b. 1776, m. Elizabeth Griffin: Ch.: 1, Stephen Henry, m. Margaret Ann Jefferson; 2, Jane, m. Lot Hutt; 3, Betsey, m. David Swallow; 4, Sarah, m. Benjamin Hutt; 5, Phebe, m. Peter Mosher; 6, Harriet, m. Daniel Gates.
iii. Henry Evans, b. 1778, d. unm.
iv. Elizabeth Evans, b. 1779, m. Samuel Harris.
v. Sarah, b. 1780, m. (1st) William Halliday, (2nd) Elias Woodworth.
vi. Robert, b. about 1782, m. Sarah Harris: Ch.: 1, Abigail Spurr, b. 1811, m. (1st) John G. Fitzgibbon, (2nd) Charles D. Strong; 2, George Henry Evans, b. 1812, m. (1st) Sarah Purdy, (2nd) Mary Welch; 3, James Edmund Harris, b. 1815, m. Mary Potter; 4, Robert John, b. 1817, m. Jane Wilson; 5, Charles Clancy, b. 1819, m. (1st) Frances Purdy, (2nd) Elizabeth Adelaide Ruggles; 6, Caroline Augusta, b. 1821, m. George Edmund Johnston; 7, Elizabeth Evans, b. 1824, m. Anthony Potter; 8, William Jesse, b. 1826, m. Emmeline Strong (no issue); 9, Helen Sophia, b. 1828, m. (1st) John Wilson, (2nd) Wallace Lent; 10, Louisa, b. 1830, m. Charles Campbell.
vii. John, b. 1784, m. (1st) Catharine McNair, (2nd) Ann McNair: Ch.: 1, Evans, m. Susan Floyd; 2, Catharine, m. Edward Marshall; 3, Maria, m. Rowland Marshall; 4, Rachel, m. David Starratt; 5, John, m. Ella Saunders; 6, Elias, m. (1st) Emma Saunders, (2nd) Zebia Plumb.
viii. Mary Ann, b. 1786, d. unm.
ix. Jane, b. 1790, m. Aaron Hardy.
x. Amelia Maria, b. 1792, m. Stephen Jefferson.
xi. Thomas, b. 1794, m. Nancy Vidito: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, m. (1st) Andrew Ritchie, (2nd) George Ritchie; 2, Henry E., m. Nancy Telfer; 3, Eleanor, d. unm.; 4, Maria, m. Henry Walker; 5, Richard, d. unm.; 6, William Bernard, m. Mary Jane Walker; 7, Thomas, m. Seraph Hindon; 8, Harriet, m. Charles Ritchie;

* February 27, 1828, the St. Luke's church records have "Daniel James, buried, aged 49."

9, John, d. unm.; 10, William, m. Isabel Clark ; 11, James, unm.; 12, Minetta, unm.

xii. Phebe, b. 1796, m. John Copeland.
xiii. Harriet, b. 1798, m. John Webster.
xiv. William, b. 1800, m. 1832, Maria Burton (dau. of James John, a native of England); Ch. : six sons and four daughters, many of them now living.

KENT. ISAAC KENT, one of the original grantees of the township, came from one of the old colonies in 1760 with his wife and children, and settled near Round Hill, on a lot which I believe is in part owned by some of his posterity to-day. It is not improbable that Chancellor Kent, the author of the Commentaries, well known to every student of law, was descended from the immigrant ancestor. (Probably the first of the name in America was Richard Kent, who came in the *Mary and John*, arriving at Ipswich, Massachusetts Bay, about May 1, 1634.—[ED.]) Isaac Kent had children :

i. Isaac, remained in Massachusetts.
ii. John, m. Lucretia Hardwick, and removed to one of the eastern counties.
iii. Zarah, m. Mary Hardwick : Ch.: 1, John, m. Rebecca Burket; 2, Elizabeth, m. John Warner ; 3, Catharine, m. Isaac Beals ; 4, Henry, m. Margaret Whitman ; 5, Mary, m. William Brennan; 6, Christina, unm.; 7, Isaac, unm.; 8, Ann, unm.
iv. Arod, m. 1801, Abigail Bent, *née* Harrington : Ch.: 1, Micah, m. Jane Beals ; 2, Abigail, m. Thomas A. James ; 3, Eliza, d. unm.
v. Anna, m. Israel Longley.
vi. Abigail, m. Abel Beals.

LANGLEY. A pre-loyalist family from Massachusetts, JOHN LANGLEY came over with wife and several children, and obtained a grant of five hundred acres in the township of Annapolis. He married in Massachusetts, Patience Tollman. Children :

i. John, m. Beulah Winchester : Ch.: 1, Patience, m. Frederic Boehler ; 2. John, m. Hannah Oliver ; 3, Nathan W., m. Elizabeth Walker ; 4, Martha, m. Peter Long.
ii. Nathaniel, m. Deborah Daniels : Ch.: 1, Betsey, m. Nathaniel Whitman ; 2, Mary, m. Joseph Wilson ; 3. Samuel, m. 1809, Hannah Tufts ; 4, Amy, m. — Risteen ; 5, Susan, m. Beriah Bent Daniels ; 6, Deborah, m. William Pool ; 7, Sarah ; 8, Lucy, m. — Gregory ; 9, Asahel.
iii. Mary, m. Joseph Daniels.
iv. Ann, m. Ephraim Daniels.
v. Aquila, m. 1800, Mary Chute : Ch.: 1, Sophia, b. 1802, d. unm.; 2, Benjamin, b. 1805, m. Elizabeth Clark ; 3, Levi, b. 1807, m. Abigail Messenger ; 4, Lavinia, b. 1810, m. Joseph Hicks; 5, Ezekiel, b. 1814, d. unm ; 6, Martha, b. 1819, m. William B. Long.
vi. Sarah, d. unm.
vii. William, m. 1803, Ann Messenger : Ch.: 1, Nathaniel, b. 1806, d. unm.; 2, Elizabeth, b. 1809, m. John Abbott ; 3, Diadama, b. 1810, unm.; 4, Daniel, b. 1817, m. Helen Langley ; 5, Phebe Ann, b. 1821, d. unm.

LECAIN. The name of this family was formerly spelt LEQUESNE, it being a purely French name. 1. FRANCIS BARCLAY LEQUESNE, whose name became Anglicised to its present form, came to Annapolis from the Island of Jersey as "Master Artificer" or "Armourer" in the employ of the Board of Ordnance. The family were of the gentry, and their coat of arms, "*ar. a lion pass. gules,*" motto, "*Suis ducibus usque fidelis.*" The following obituary notice of him in Minns' *Weekly Chronicle*, published at Halifax in 1806, is presumably from the pen of Rev. Jacob Bailey: "Died at Annapolis Royal, Francis Barclay Lecain, aged 85 years—the oldest settler in this county, and who lived sixty-four years in this town. He was always an honest and worthy man, and left about 100 descendants. He was fifty-five years a Freemason." He must, if these figures were correct, have arrived here just five years after the arrival of John Easson, who had pre-deceased him by about twenty years. He married (1st), September 1, 1745, Alicia Maria, only daughter of Thomas Hyde, who also had been a "Master" in the Ordnance Department. She died September 23, 1758. He married (2nd) Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin and Mary (Woodward) Foster. His second daughter married John Ritchie, and thus became the grandmother of the Chief Justice of Canada and his distinguished brothers. In his long residence here he was an eye-witness of all the stirring and fateful events of which this historic town was the centre, and was contemporary of the long series of brilliant men mentioned in these pages, from Mascarene to De Lancey, all of whom were his friends and associates. Children:

i. John, b. Oct. 30, 1746, m. Sarah Providence; accidentally shot, leaving small family, not traced.
ii. Alicia Maria, b. Jan. 5, 1748, m. John Ritchie, M.P.P.
iii. Elizabeth, b. May 17, 1750, m. Thomas Harris.
iv. Annie, b. Feb. 17, 1752, m. John Skelton, removed to Canada.
v. Mary, b. June 21, 1754, m. Abraham, son of Michael Spurr.
(2) vi. Thomas,* b. Aug. 20, 1756.

By second wife:

(3) vii. Francis, b. 1762.
viii. Benjamin, b. 1764, m. Mary Winchester, no issue.
ix. Nicholas, b. 1765, m. Catherine Jost; had sons: 1, Francis Barclay, m. Margaret Bond (no issue); 2, John William, d unm.; 3, Arthur Walter Wilkie, d. unm.; 4, George Frederic Augustus, m. Susan B. Oxner, and lived in Halifax and afterwards in Berwick (had seven sons and three daughters); daus.: 1, Catherine Elizabeth, m. Felix King, of H. M. dockyard, Halifax, (had two daus., one

* I take the dates of births of Francis B. LeCain's children from an affidavit made by him in claiming for them a legacy left his wife by her aunt, Lady Mary Keate, sister of Thomas Hyde's wife. Many years later a belief became prevalent that a colossal fortune awaited the heirs of some Thomas Hyde, and I have found that numerous descendants of Francis B. Le Cain by his second wife, ignorant of the second marriage, spent money and time in trying to investigate and recover this fortune, under the erroneous impression that they were descendants of Alicia Maria Hyde, instead of Elizabeth Foster.—[ED.]

m. Rev. Arthur W. Cook, of Kingston, Ont.); 2, Eliza, m. Rev. John Stannage; 3, Ann, m. James Cameron; 4, Alicia Maria, d. young; 5, Sophia Edwina, m. Joshua Kaulbach, merchant, Lunenburg; 6 (10th child), Susan Parker, m. Edward Pierson Archbold, son of late Capt. P. Archbold, Royal Meath Regiment, and had two sons, *Edward Thorn Ambrose* and Rev. *Francis H. W. Archbold*, Honorary Curate of St. Paul's, Halifax.

(4) x. William, b. 1767.

2. Thomas Lecain, b. Aug. 20, 1756, m. Martha Wilkie. Children:

i. David, m. Feb., 1808, Ann Dickson: Ch.: 1, Thomas Henry, b. Aug. 7, 1809, d. unm.; 2, Mary Jane, b. Nov. 22, 1811, m. Silas Hancock; 3, Frederic, b. Aug. 7, 1813, d. 1888, m. Mary Lecain (dau. of Peter); 4, Margaret Eliza, b. April 26, 1816, d. unm.; 5, Walter William Wilkie, b. April 16, 1818, m. — Ross, in Batavia.
ii. Frederic, m. (1st) Ann Davies, (2nd) an American, and removed to United States.
iii. Walter, m. Frances Thomas, lived in St. John and died there.
iv. Francis, d. unm.
v. Maria Lavinia, bpd. Aug. 16, 1796.

3. Francis Lecain. The first child of Francis Lecain, by his second wife, married Margaret McNeish Ritchie; she died Aug., 1843, aged 81, and had children:

i. Charles, b. June 22, 1785, m. March 4, 1820, Maria Eliza Mence: Ch.: 1, Margaret, b. Dec. 31, 1826, m. Robert S. Spurr; 2, Barclay Farquharson, b. Feb. 16, 1829.
ii. Elizabeth, b. Nov. 20, 1786, m. David Fleet; 4 ch., 2 sons and 2 daus.
iii. Andrew Ritchie, b. May 18, 1788, bpd. Oct. 16, d. unm.
iv. James, b. June 26, 1790, m. 1817, Frances Ryerson: Ch.: 1, Anna Maria, b. June 14, 1818, m. Avard Gates; 2, Margaret Eliza, b. July 1, 1821, m. John L. Rice; 3, James Francis, b. Oct. 20, 1823, m. Jan. 13, 1850, Sarah, dau. of James Morse; 4, Sarah Ann, b. June 11, 1825, m. Isaiah Potter; 5, John M., b. March 1, 1827, m. Adelaide Durkee, d. in Yarmouth; 6, George, b. 1829, m. Agnes Hoyt; 7, Amasa, b. 1831, d. unm.; 8, Thomas, b. 1833, d. unm.; 9, Mary, m. Albert Berteaux.
v. Margaret McNeish, b. Dec. 27, 1791, m. Joseph Wells.
vi. John, b. April 11, 1794, m. Dec. 31, 1828, Maria Eliza Stewart: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth Georgina, b. Oct. 22, 1832, d. Aug. 18, 1848; 2, Maria Louisa, b. Sept. 26, 1835, m. Elisha Bancroft; 3, George Augustus, b. Nov. 4, 1839, m. Seraphina Berteaux; 4, Georgina Mence, b. Sept. 15, 1849, m. William M. Bailey.
vii. Nicholas, b. Jan. 18, 1796, m. Feb. 27, 1840, Margaret Lucretia Williams: Ch.: 1, Francis, b. Sept. 15, 1840, d. young; 2, William, b. Aug. 29, 1844, m. Zeruiah Williams; 3, Andrew, b. Dec. 18, 1845, m. Emma Sanders; 4, Margaret McNeish, b. Nov. 9, 1847, m. William Hardwick.
viii. Benjamin, b. March 23, 1800, d. Sept. 4, 1801.
ix. Alicia Maria, d. unm.

4. William Lecain, born 1767, and married Sarah Henshaw; he died 1830. Children:

i. Peter, m. Mary Tomlinson: Ch.: 1, Mary, m. Frederic Lecain; 2, Elizabeth, m. James Corbett; 3, Eliza, m. James Wright; 4, Margaret, m. Andrew Hogan; 5, Sarah, m. Duncan Miller; 6, Susan, m. George Stailing, d. in Digby.
ii. Thomas, m. Sarah Orde: Ch.: 1, William, m. Margaret Sweenie; 2, Thomas, m. Minetta Rhodda; 3, John, m. Rebecca Hannan; 4, James, m. — Berry; 5, Frank, m. —; 6, Colin, m. Rachel Merritt; 7, Elizabeth,* m. (1st) Robert Jestings, (2nd) Thomas P. Berry; 8, Mary Hester, m. Edward C. Berry; 9, Susan, m. John Purdy; 10, Martha, m. William Milner; 11, Sarah, m. Long; 12, a dau., m. Joseph Rawding.
iii. William, m. Ellen Ritchie (dau. of Robert), and had ch.: 1, John, d. unm.; 2, Alexander, d. unm.; 3, Sarah, d. unm.; 4, Avis, d. unm.; 5, Malvina, d.; 6, Charlotte, d. unm; 7, Fanny, m. Israel Young; 8, Harriet, m. Daniel Dukeshire.
iv. Elizabeth, m. Alexander Ritchie.
v. Ann, m. William Webb.

Leonard. Jonathan Leonard was born at Lyme, Conn., between 1735 and 1740. After his arrival here he married in 1764, Sarah, daughter of Josiah Dodge. He was at one time possessed of one thousand acres of the best land in the township of Granville, which he disposed of at the time of the arrival of the Loyalists and removed to the Paradise District, where he built one of the first saw-mills in the township, and died in 1812. It is probable he served in the expedition against Louisburg in 1758. (At least two Leonards came to America from Wales among the earliest emigrants. Solomon, born in Monmouthshire, was with the Pilgrims at Leyden, and settled in Duxbury, before 1637; and Thomas came from Pontypool, in the same county, and settled in Taunton, Mass. There were several prominent Loyalists of the name, and many became eminent in the United States in various callings.—Ed.) Children:

i. Phebe, b. 1765, m. John Wade, jun.
ii. Seth, b. 1767, d. 1786, unm.
iii. Mollie, b. 1770, m. Samuel Bent, jun.
iv. Jonathan, b. 1772, d. 1772.
v. Deborah, b. 1773, d. 1773.
vi. Abiel, b. 1775, m. Letitia Hackelton: Ch.: 1, Seth, d. unm.; 2, William, m. Louisa Anderson (went abroad); 3, Sarah, m. Martin VanBlarcom; 4, Elizabeth, m. Job Young.
vii. Bettie, b. 1777, m. (1st) John de Witt, (2nd) Samuel McCormick, jun.
viii. Putnam, b. 1779, m. 1804, Ann McGregor (dau. of John): Ch.: 1, Richard Saunders, b. 1805, m. Hannah McLellan; 2, John, b. 1807, d. unm.; 3, Susan, b. 1809, m. Daniel Durland; 4, Parker, b. 1812, d. unm.
ix. Susanna, b. 1782, m.
x. Seth, b. 1787, m. 1808, Elizabeth Merry (dau. of William): Ch.: 1, Benjamin Dodge, b. 1809, m. (1st) Susan Longley, (2nd) Louisa McCormick; 2, Ann, b. 1811, m. Joseph Elliott; 3, Susanna, b. 1814, m. Amherst Martin Morse; 4, Minetta, b. 1816, m. William Young Foster.

* Mr. Chute informs me that this should be Sarah.—[Ed.]

Longley. This eminent Annapolis County family are descended from William Longley, who came from England to America in 1636, and was one of the founders of Groton in that colony. He had a son William,[2] and the latter had a son William,[3] who married Experience Crisp, by whom he had a family which in 1694, with two exceptions, were murdered by the Indians, including both the parents. A little girl of eleven years, and a boy still younger, had been captured by the Indians the evening previous to the massacre, while in a field near the edge of the forest, a short distance from the habitation. They were taken to Ville Marie, now Montreal, where Lydia, the girl, was ransomed by the Mother Superior of the convent there, and educated in the faith of the Roman Catholic Church, to which she became a devoted adherent, and finally became herself Mother Superior of the same institution. In her letters written in after years to her relatives, she ardently urged them to return to the bosom of the Holy Catholic Church. Her brother John was brought up to the nomadic life of his captors. When in after years he was redeemed, it was with great difficulty that he was persuaded to abandon this life, and to return to his kindred, his inheritance, and civilization. In the traditions of the family he is spoken of as "John the Captive." He was twice married, his first wife being Sarah Prescott, and his second, Deborah Houghton. He died in 1750, ten years before his son, William Longley (who was born in 1708), with his wife, Mary Parker, and son Israel, at that time fifteen years old, came to this county, and settled on a lot in the Belleisle District, where some of his descendants are still living. After Israel had attained majority, the father relinquished this farm to him and returned to his old home in Shirley, Mass., where he died in 1788. Israel, who was born in 1745, married 1770, Anna, daughter of Isaac Kent, and had children :

i. Isaac, b. 1771, m. (1st) Dorcas Bent, (2nd) Freelove Dodge : Ch. : 1, Maria, b. 1795, m. James Whitman ; 2, Israel, b. 1797, m. Mary Ann Bishop ; 3, Diadama, b. 1799, m. George Bishop ; 4, Lovicia, b. 1801, m. Elias Bishop ; 5, Anne, b. 1802, m. Benjamin Whitman ; 6, Lucy, b. 1804, m. Richard Nichols ; 7, David Bent, b. 1806, m. Mary Clark ; 8, Elizabeth, b. 1809, m. Charles Durland ; (by 2nd wife) : 9, John Fletcher, b. 1815, d. unm. ; 10, Dorcas Emily, b. 1817, m. Reuben Balcom ; 11, Minetta, b. 1819, d. unm. ; 12, Isaac, b. 1823, m. Catharine Beals.

ii. Anna, b. 1773, m. Joseph Bent.

iii. William, b. 1775, m. Esther Dodge : Ch. : 1, Bethiah, d. unm. ; 2, Susan, m. Benjamin D. Leonard ; 3, Warren, m. (1st) Minetta Morse, (2nd) Sarah Ann Morse, *née* Elliott.

iv. Asaph, b. 1776, m. (1st) 1804, Grace Morse, (2nd) 1807, Dorcas Poole : Ch. : 1, Warren, b. 1805, d. unm. ; (by 2nd wife) : 2, Helen, b. 1808, m. Ebenezer Balcom ; 3, Caroline Sarah, b. 1810, m. John Hall ; 4, Israel, b. 1813, m. Frances Manning, the father of Hon. J. Wilberforce Longley, M.P.P., Attorney-General of Nova Scotia ; 5, Harriet Sophia, b. 1815, m. (1st) George Brown, (2nd) William Sproul ; 6, William, d. unm. ; 7, Hon. Avard Longley, M.P.P., M.P., etc (see his memoir).

v. Israel, b. 1780, m. (1st) 1804, Mary Bath, (2nd) Minetta Willoughby: Ch.: 1, Tamar Cecilia, b. 1805, unm.; 2, John Bath, b. 1808, m. Mary Ann Fellows; 3, Israel James, b. 1811, m. Henrietta Bath; 4, Lucy Ann, b. 1813, m. Delancy Gesner; 5, Samuel Charles, b. 1815, m. Eliza Isabella Fowler; 6, Nehemiah Fletcher, b. 1817, d. unm.; 7, Robert Wesley, b. 1821, m. Charlotte Harris; 8, Mary Elizabeth, b. 1824, m. John Milbury.
vi. Christina, b. 1785, m. John Chesley.
vii. Diadama, b. 1782, m. John McNeill.
viii. Elizabeth, b. 1787, m. John Tupper.
ix. Lucy, b. 1789, d. unm.
x. Wesley, b. 1794, d. (at sea) unm.

Lovett. See memoir of Phineas Lovett, sen., M.P.P. Phineas Lovett, Jun., b. 1745, was elected for the Township of Annapolis, in 1775, and then father and son were contemporary members for one session, during which, perhaps, neither of them attended. In the list in the Almanac for 1776, copied in Murdoch, Vol. ii., p. 582, his name does not appear. It reappears in 1777, and he evidently sat until 1784. He m., 1769, Abigail Thayer, and d. June, 1828. Children:

i. Beulah, m. John Fitzrandolph.
ii. Daniel, m. Anna, dau. of Rev. Thos. H. Chipman: Ch.: 1, Phineas, b. 1806, m. (in England); 2, Eliza Ann, b. 1808, d. unm.; 3, Abigail, b. 1810, m. Zebulon Phinney, d. Jan. 19, 1890; 4, Harriet Jane, b. 1811, d. unm.; 5, Daniel Merritt, b. 1815, m. Lydia Pitman; 6, John Heuston, b. 1820, m. Rachel Dodge; 7, Maria, b. 1822, m. Ebenezer H. DeWolfe.
iii. William, d. unm.
iv. Rachel, m. Phineas Oakes.
v. Elizabeth, m. Elisha Bishop.
vi. James Russell, b. 1781, m. 1806, Sarah, dau. of William Allen Chipman, was M.P.P. for the Township of Annapolis from 1827 to 1836, and d. 1864: Ch.: 1, William Henry, b. Mar. 30, 1807, d. 1886, unm.; 2, Mary Ann, b. Feb. 16, 1810, m. J. Edw. Starr; 3, Elizabeth Albro, b. Sept. 11, 1812, d. 1869, unm.; 4, James Russell, b. June 23, 1814, d. 1838, unm.; 5, Sarah Rebecca, b. Sept. 25, 1816, d. 1837, unm.; 6, John Chandler, b. June 10, 1819, d. 1840, unm.; 7, Thomas Edward, m. in England, d. 1869; 8, Samuel Bagshaw, d. in Florida, unm.; 9, Eunice S., m. Nov. 25, 1847, George Thomson, Esq., of Halifax; 10, Maria C., m. William Smellie, of Scotland; 11, Adelaide, m. Peter McPhee, of Halifax, d. 1870.
vii. Phineas, m. 1800, Margaret Rutherford (dau. of Henry, M.P.P.): Ch.: 1, Sarah, b. 1801, d. 1801; 2, Mary Eliza, b. 1803, m. Charles Moody; 3, Henry Rutherford, b. 1805, unm; 4, Margaret Jane, b. 1807, d. unm.; 5, Charles Phineas, b. 1809, d. 1816; 6, Amelia Maria, b. 1812, d. 1812; 7, Ann Isabella, b. 1819, m. — Golding; 8, Sophia Amelia, b. 1821, m. W. Forsyth Turnbull, of Digby.
viii. Thomas, m. Ann, dau. of William Allen Chipman: Ch.: 1, Margaret, m. James L. DeWolfe; 2, Mary, d. unm.: 3, Sarah, unm.; 4, Henry, m. Annie Johnstone, dau. of Dr. Lewis and niece of Hon. J. W. Johnstone; 5, Agnes T., m. James W. King, of Windsor, M.P.P., etc.
ix. Abigail, m. William Bent, J.P.
x. Louisa, m. Samuel Chesley, J.P.
xi. Mary, m. (1st) Henry Shaw, merchant of Digby, (2nd) Richard Stephens, of Digby, a native of England (no issue).

MARGESON. GIDEON MARGESON was a worthy Loyalist of 1783. The first of the name in America was Edmund Margeson, who came in the *Mayflower* in 1620, but he died, it is said, unmarried, and certainly very young, during the first year of the settlement. The name does not appear again among the early settlers of Massachusetts. He married Lavinia, daughter of Robert Wilson, of New York, and sister of Christopher Wilson, an immigrant of 1774 from Yorkshire. Children :

i. John, b. 1785, m. 1810, Hannah Bolsor : Ch.: 1, John, b. 1811, m. (1st) Lydia Morine, (2nd) Wilhelmina Ann Newcomb ; 2, Jonathan Woodbury, b. 1815, d. 1884, m. Rebecca Condell ; 3, Thomas, b. 1816, m. Miriam Simpson ; 4, Margaret, b. 1818, m. George Bezanson ; 5, William, b. 1820, m. Susan Randall ; 6, Benjamin, b. 1823, m. (1st) Eunice White, (2nd) Sarah Nichols ; 7, Edward, b. 1826, m. (1st) Caroline Wilson, (2nd) Harriet Brown ; 8, Leander, b. 1827, m. (1st) Jane McGorical, (2nd) Mary Ann Parker ; 9, Love, b. 1829, m. John Woodworth ; 10, Hannah, b. 1832, m. Milan.

ii. Robert, b. 1787, m. 1813, Rachel Fritz : Ch.: 1, William, b. 1814, m. Mary Beals ; 2, James, b. 1815, m. Margaret Morris ; 3, Jane Wilson, b. 1817, m. Patrick Stephenson ; 4, Mary, b. 1819, m. John Phillips : 5, Nancy, m. James Collins ; 6, Peter, m. (1st) Sarah Jane Pool, (2nd) Rebecca Whitman, *née* Goucher ; 7, Lavinia, m. Morgan Connell ; 8, Margaret, b. 1820, d. unm.

iii.* Silas, m. (1st) Mehitable Reagh, (2nd) Ann Merick, *née* Brown: Ch.: 1, Susanna m. Bayard Margeson ; 2, John Wesley m. Sarah Amelia Gesner : 3, Lavinia m. (1st) Ansel T. Baker, (2nd) Rev. Mr. Martel ; 4, Elizabeth, m. (1st) Henry McKenna, (2nd) James Morse, (3rd) Adam Bowlby ; 5, Sarah Jane, d. unm. ; 6, Isaac, m. Mary Price ; 7, Margaret, m. Sidney Borden ; 8, Mary, m. Isaac Parker.

iv. Lavinia, m. Samuel Campfield Beardsley.

v. Thomas, m. 1813, Phebe Daniels : Ch.: 1, Christopher, b. 1814, m. Margaret Reagh ; 2, Ella, b. 1817, d. unm.; 3, Mary E., b. 1819, m. James N. Spicer ; 4, Robert C. b. 1822, m. (1st) Rebecca Spicer, (2nd) Jane Smithers ; 5, Thomas, b. 1825, m. Hannah Spicer ; 6, Lavinia, b. 1827, m. Wellington Daniels ; 7, Phebe Ann, b. 1813, m. Lewis Morris ; 8, Silas, b. 1829, m. Mary Ann Goucher ; 9, Ellen, b. 1834, m. John Berteaux.

vi. Peter, m. Ann Hall.

vii. Christopher, m. Susan Dodge (dau. of Charles).

MARSHALL. This name is derived from the title "Mareschall," and the English, Irish and Scotch Marshalls claim descent from Roger le Mareschall, or "the Marshall," who at Hastings arrayed the forces of the Conqueror for the battle. The title of Earls Marshalls of England became hereditary in the family, and by the marriage of William the Protector with the only daughter and sole heiress of Strongbow, Earl of Pembroke, and Eva his wife, they became Earls of Pembroke in England. In Ireland members of this family were Princes Palatine of Leinster,

* The order in which the remainder are placed may not be correct.

and the title of Marshall of Ireland became vested in a younger branch by letters patent. William, the immigrant to America, became one of the founders of Dedham, Mass. In 1760 four of the name, supposed to have been his great-grandsons, came over to Nova Scotia. (For ISAAC and WILLIAM, see page 199.) ANTHONY settled first at Wilmot, and afterwards removed to and founded Marshalltown, Digby County; SOLOMON settled in the township of Annapolis. William's eldest (surviving) son, Andrew Willett Marshall, cut the first tree in what is now the beautiful district of Clarence Centre. While these four pioneers are supposed by most of their descendants to have been brothers, Solomon is reported to have come over to Massachusetts from Pennsylvania, and Anthony from Rhode Island. WILLIAM MARSHALL married April 22, 1761, Lydia, daughter of George Willett, of Roxbury, and had children:

i. Sybil, b. Feb. 3, 1762, m. Deacon Thomas Chute.
ii. William, b. Oct. 21, 1763, d. Sept. 6, 1764.
iii. William, b. Aug. 5, 1765, d. Sept. 30, 1776.
iv. Catharine, b. Sept. 10, 1767, d. Jan. 5, 1779.
v. Andrew Willett, b. Feb. 23, 1770, m. Jan. 29, 1792, Susannah, dau. of Samuel Chesley, d. Sept. 28, 1865: Ch.: 1, Nancy, b. Aug. 27, 1793, m. Oct. 23, 1821, Jeremiah, son of Jacob Calnek; 2, Andrew, jun., b. Oct. 31, 1795, m. Oct. 21, 1819, Abigail Morse; 3, Caleb, b. Nov. 30, 1797, m. Nov. 11, 1823, Eliza, dau. of William Bent; 4, Susan, b. Aug. 24, 1800, m. Joseph Starratt; 5, Eliza, b. Aug. 16, 1802, m. Nov. 4, 1829, Daniel, son of Richard Nichols; 6, Benjamin, b. July, 1804, m. 1830, Eliza Beattie; 7, Helen, b. Feb. 11, 1807, d. May 24, 1849; 8, Sidney, b. April 16, 1809, d. 1811; 9, Sidney, b. May 31, 1814, m. Feb. 23, 1837, Tamar Chute.
vi. John, b. April 20, 1772, m. Oct. 17, 1797, Nancy, dau. of Abednego Ricketson: Ch.: 1, Maria, b. Oct. 14, 1798, m. Feb. 8, 1820, John, son of Alvan Corbitt; 2, Susanna, b. March 9, 1800; 3, Willett, b. Feb. 9, 1802, m. 1826, Margaret, dau. of Joseph Johnson; 4, Lovicia, b. Nov. 8, 1803, m. Samuel Bishop Chipman, M.P.P.; 5, William, b. April 22, 1805, m. May 10, 1831, Maria, dau. of Wm. Bent; 6, Calvin, b. April 2, 1807, d.; 7, Sophia, b. Aug. 14, 1810, m. Dec. 19, 1838, William, son of Joseph Johnson; 8, Eliza, b. July 31, 1812, m. Jan. 4, 1848, Thomas A., son of Antonio Gavaza; 9, Mary Ann, b. Feb. 10, 1816, m. June 22, 1847, William Freeman Marshall (his first w.); 10, John James, b. June 7, 1818, m. Dec. 16, 1852, Maria Randolph.
vii. Abel R., b. May 13, 1774, m. Jan. 4, 1798, Esther, dau. of Daniel Felch: Ch.: 1, William, b. 1798, m. July 4, 1822, Mary Fritz; 2, Samuel, b. Nov. 25, 1800, m. Rachel, dau. of John Elliott; 3, Deacon Thomas A., b. Nov. 7, 1802, m. Margaret Elliott (sister of Rachel), 11 ch.; 4, Lydia, b. Feb. 12, 1805, m. W., son of James Charlton; 5, Rufus, b. Sept. 15, 1810, m. Mary Jane Webster.
viii. Elizabeth, b. March 28, 1776, m. William Marshall (son of Isaac).
ix. Calvin, b. April 16, 1778, m. Helen Phinney (dau. of Zaccheus), lived at Petitcodiac.
x. Sarah, b. Aug. 27, 1780, m. Samuel Gates.

Solomon Marshall, born about 1745, m. (1st) in Pennsylvania, Sarah Clarke (or Simpson), (2nd) Hannah Kendall. Children :

i. Sarah, b. about 1773, m. Benjamin Milbury.

By second wife :

ii. Mary, b. 1776.

iii. Elisha, b. 1778, m. 1806, Cynthia Marshall (dau. of Isaac) : Ch. : 1, Caroline, b. 1807, m. James Sullivan ; 2, Eliza, b. 1809, m. Oldham Fales ; 3, Rev. Levi Baptist, b. 1811, m. Ann Collins ; 4, Seth, m. (1st) Maria Fritz, (2nd) Isabella Urthing ; 5, Lucy, m. David F. Milbury ; 6, Emily, m. Wm. Locke ; 7, Mercy, m. Jacob Locke ; 8, Jacob, m. Mary Ward ; 9, Gardiner, d. unm. ; 10, Enoch, d. unm.

iv. Samuel, b. 1780, m. (1st) Nancy Risteen, (2nd) Ann Tufts, (3rd) Mary Chute, *née* Marshall, (4th) Cynthia, dau. of James Jarvis, and wid. of Hughy Gray : Ch. : 1, Sophia, b. 1807, m. Edward Arminson ; 2, William, b. 1809, m. Hannah Ward ; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1811, m. (1st) Stephen Brown, (2nd) Nelson Baker ; 4, Louisa, b. 1813, m. Stephen Tufts ; 5, Rebecca, m. James Mitchell ; 6, Abigail, m. Robinson Palmer ; 7, Joseph, m. Rebecca Walker ; 8, Mary Ann, m. John Hawkesworth ; 9, Catherine, m. James Devinney ; 10, Samuel, m. Fanny Welton ; 11, Salome, m. Israel Bent.

v. Obadiah, b 1781, d. 1857, m. 1805, Margaret Eaton : Ch. : 1, Pamela, b. 1806, m. James Brown ; 2, Mary, b. 1809, m. Handley C. Gates ; 3, Lucy, b. 1812, m. Phineas Hudson ; 4, John, b. 1815, m. Sarah Marshall ; 5, Margaret, b. 1817, m. Rufus Robbins ; 6, William, b. 1819, m. Margaret Flannagan ; 7, Robert, b. 1821, m. Margaret Morse ; 8, Sarah Ann, m. Daniel Whitman ; 9, Eunice, m. (1st) Whitman, (2nd) Munroe ; 10, Elias, m. Nancy Freeman.

vi. Rebecca, b. 1783, m. Joseph Snell.

vii. Solomon, jun., b. 1785, m. June, 1805, Rachel Chute : Ch. : 1, Nelson, b. 1810, d. without issue ; 2, James Lynam, m. Eliza Ann Armstrong (dau. of Richard).

viii. Seth, b. 1787, went abroad.

ix. Hannah, b. 1789, d. 1790.

x. Levi, b. 1790, d. 1869, m. (1st) Catharine (2nd) Mary, daus. of Rev. John White : Ch. : 1, Lamitty Ann, d. unm. ; 2, James Manning, m. (1st) Mary Whitman, (2nd) Freelove Bruce ; 3, Frances Maria, m. Jabez Morton ; 4, Sarah, m. John Marshall ; 5, Edward, m. Margaret Moffatt ; 6, Henry Worth, m. (1st) Ann M. Morton, (2nd) Phebe Morton ; 7, Catharine, m. James Peyton Pierce ; 8, Zachariah, d. unm. ; 9, Adoniram Judson, m. Barbara Rafuse.

xi. Susanna, b. 1792, m. Levi Cole.

xii. Sarah, b. 1794, m. 1812, Wm. Greenham.

xiii. Elizabeth, b. 1798.

Isaac Marshall, b. 1738 (Mr. Chute says June 10, 1748), married (1st) 1772, Mary Robbins, (2nd) Ruth Morton, *née* Parish. Had children :

i. Otis, b. Feb. 21, 1773, m. July 12, 1796, Silence, dau. of Daniel Felch, Esq., lived at Marshall's Cove, now Port Lorne : Ch. : 1, Daniel, b. 1797, m. 1834, Amoret McKean ; 2, Lucy, b. 1799, d. young ; 3, Mary, b. 1802, m. Wm. Vidito ; 4, Isaac, b. Oct. 14,

1804, m. Frances Brown (dau. John); 5, Rebecca, b. Oct. 14, 1804, m. Allen Clark; 6, John, b. 1806, m. Rachel Kathern, 5 ch.; 7, Oliver, b. 1808, m. Mary, dau. of Jesse Videtoe, 10 ch.; 8, Diadama, m. Elkana McLeod, 6 ch.; 9, George Gardner, b. 1811, m. Caroline, dau. of Jesse Viditoe; 10, Louisa, m. Chesley Stark; 11, Allen, m. Rachel, dau. John Henry Snyder; 12, Calvin, m. Lucy, dau. of Peter Strong; 13, Eliza, m. Alex. Jackson.

ii. Lucy, b. Jan. 6, 1775, m. George Gardner.

iii. William, b. Aug. 14, 1777, m. (1st) Elizabeth Marshall, (2nd) Sarah Chute: Ch.: 1, Asaph, b. Aug. 27, 1802, m. Eliza Morse (dau. Jonathan); 2, William, jun., b. July 17, 1804, m. Grace Smith (dau. Frank, g. dau. Austin); 3, Calvin, b. and d. 1808; 4, Elizabeth, b. Jan. 12, 1811, m. Levi Phinney.

iv. Mary, b. Sept. 10, 1779, m. Jan. 30, 1801, William Chute (son of Samuel).

v. Cynthia, b. Nov. 27, 1781, m. Elisha Marshall.

vi. Pricilla, b. Nov. 29, 1783, m. Henry, son of John Dunn.

vii. David, b. Sept. 17, 1786, m. Aug. 23, 1806, Elizabeth Beardsley, and lived near Port Lorne: Ch.: 1, Enoch, b. 1807, m. Jane Hanselpicker; 2, Beverly Robinson, b. 1809, m. Susan Messenger; 3, Ebenezer Robbins, b. 1811, d. unm.; 4, Wellington, b. 1813, m. Hannah Bolsor; 5, Mary, b. 1815, m. Samuel Foster, jun.; 6, Elizabeth, b. 1817, m. VanBuren Foster; 7, David, b. 1819, d. unm.; 8, Lavinia, b. 1821, m. Joseph, son of Thomas Durland; 9, Sarah Ann, b. 1822, m. Warren, son of Benjamin Foster; 10, Olivia, b. 1824, m. Henry O. Dalton; 11, Ebenezer, b. 1825, m. Barbara Ann Grant; 12, Isaac William, b. 1828, m. Frances Easson.

viii. Catharine, b. July 2, 1791, d. young.

ANTHONY MARSHALL, who went to Digby, has a very large posterity. He had children:

1, Abigail, b. 1765, m. John Henry Snyder; 2, Joseph, b. 1766, m. Temperance Eldridge; 3, Richard, b. Jan. 30, 1768, m. (1st) Hannah Bacon, (2nd) Martha Marshall, *née* Ingles; 4, Isaac, b. March 12, 1770, m. Rachel, dau. of James and Elizabeth Potter; 5, Rachel, b. 1771, m. Richard Collins; 6, Mary, b. 1773, m. John Cropley; 7, William, b. 1776, m. Rebecca White, and lived at South Range, Digby County; 8, Solomon, b. 1779, m. May 13, 1802, Martha, dau. James Ingles, and lived at Marshalltown; left eight sons.

A full record of them is in the Chute Genealogies.

MCBRIDE. EDWARD MCBRIDE, an immigrant from the north of Ireland, married, 1765, Lois Hill, and had children:

1, Charlotte, b. 1766; 2, Samuel, b. 1768, whose dau. Elizabeth m. Joseph Durland (son of Daniel); 3, Japhet, b. 1770; 4, Bettie, b. 1772; 5, Edward, b. 1774; 6, Sophia, b. 1776, m. Abner Chute; 7, William, b. 1780; 8, Anne, b. 1781.

MCCORMICK. The family of this name, who with all deference, I think, ought to spell the name MacCormac, or McCormack, the former being nearer the original name, are descended from Samuel McCormick,

a native of the north of Ireland, although probably of Scottish origin, who was born in 1741, and emigrated in the latter part of the eighteenth century. It is said the vessel that brought him was bound to New York, but put into Halifax from stress of weather. Shortly after his arrival there he removed to Horton, where he remained a few years, and coming afterwards to the township of Granville, he purchased a lot of five hundred acres in the vicinity of which many of his descendants now reside. Some of his descendants have figured very largely in ship-building, commerce, and prominent public service, not forgetting news-paper enterprise. He married, 1770, Mary Blair, and died June 12, 1823. She died December 27, 1826. Children:

i. Jane, b. 1770, m. Robert Young.

ii. Samuel, b. 1772, m. 1802, Elizabeth, widow of John DeWitt, and dau. of Jonathan Leonard: Ch.: 1, Samuel Leonard, b. April 7, 1804, m. Bethia Robertson; 2, William, b. Feb. 2, 1806, m. Miss Burnham, of Digby; 3, Sarah, b. March 8, 1808, m. Benjamin Sanders, of Rosette; 4, John, b. Nov. 2, 1809, m. Margaret J., dau. of Richard James, Esq.; 5, Seth, b. Sept. 22, 1811, d. Dec. 25, 1813; 6, Louisa, b. June 25, 1813, m. Benjamin Leonard, Paradise; 7, Ambrose, b. May 23, 1815, m. Phebe Post, of Digby.

iii. John, b. 1774, d. 1849, m. 1803, Phebe Balcom: Ch.: 1, William, m. Letitia Withers; 2, Samuel, m. Oct. 29, 1850, Elizabeth McDormand; 3, Maria, m. William Wade; 4, Lydia, m. Leonard Wade; 5, Jane, m. John Mills; 6, Sarah, m. Stephen Troop; 7, Rachel, m. Joshua Hawkesworth; 8, George, b. March 10, 1821, m. Bessie Bent; 9, John, m. Sarah Calnek; 10, Gilbert, b. July 4, 1823, m. Martha Tupper.

iv. Daniel, b. June 26, 1782, m. 1808, Susanna Young (dau. of William). She d. June 8, 1830: Ch.: 1, William Young, b. Nov. 17, 1809, d. Sept. 8, 1835, unm.; 2, Mary, b. Nov. 16, 1811, m. Joshua Hawkesworth; 3, James Parker, b. May 3, 1814, d. unm.; 4, Miriam Jane, b. June 29, 1816, m. Wm. Chaloner, an Englishman living in Boston; 5, Edward Thorne, b. Sept. 13, 1818, m. Miss Neville, Granville; 6, Hannah Maria, b. Feb. 23, 1821, m. (1st) Charles Edward Farnham, of Digby, (2nd) Frank Smith, of St. John, a native of Ireland; 7, Margaret Catherine, b. July 27, 1823; 8, Statira Ann, b. Jan. 26, 1826, m. Abner Rice; 9, Job Young, b. Nov. 3, 1829, m. Miss Melick, of Wilmot.

v. Thomas, b. 1785, m. Sept. 15, 1811, Elizabeth Winchester (dau. of Spencer): Ch.: 1, Grace, b. June 28, 1812, m. Winslow Odell; 2, Frances, b. Aug. 30, 1813, m. Wm. Letteney; 3, Thomas, b. Feb. 18, 1815, drowned June 8, 1835; 4, Hannah, b. June 11, 1816, m. Captain Wm. Bogart; 5, Elizabeth, b. June 12, 1818, m. (1st) Thomas Daley, (2nd) Moses Dykeman, (3rd) Rev. George Armstrong; 6, Henry, b. March 3, 1820, drowned June 8, 1835; 7, Ann, b. Sept. 30, 1821, d. unm.; 8, Henrietta, b. May 25, 1823, m. William Sullivan; 9, Jacob, b. May 19, 1825, d. Nov. 14, 1828; 10, James, b. July 12, 1827, m. Miss Stackhouse; 11, Edward, b. Oct., 1829, m., living in Texas; 12, Samuel, twin of Edward, m. Miss Cole, of Carleton, N.B., now in Dacotah; 13, Stephen, b. March 3, 1832, m. 1854, Miss Watts, St. John, N.B.; 14, Mary Catherine, b. June 26, 1834, d. April 21, 1836.

McDormand. (*By the Editor.*) I am indebted to Mr. Chute, author of the "Chute Genealogies," for the following information: William McDormand, from an ancient Ulster family of Scotch origin and good repute, removed with his wife and family from the valley of the Brandywine to Annapolis in 1761, under the auspices of Henry Evans, and occupied lot 9, about three miles from the town. His sons were:

i. William, jun., b. May, 1739, first settled in Digby, then at Gulliver's Cove, Digby Neck, and then again in Digby, occupying the lot on which the Baptist Church now stands, and d. before 1807. His widow in that year opened her house for the first Baptist services in that place. He m. (1st) Meribah, dau. of Wm. FitzGerald, sen., of Wilmot; (2nd) May 25, 1802, Tabitha, dau. of Joseph Webber, and wid. of George Schreiber, a Loyalist: Ch.: 1, Jane, m. James Robinson; 2, Mary, m. David Cossaboom; 3, Margaret, m. Edward W., s. of John C. Small; 4, Susan m. —; 5, Sarah, m. John McKay; 6, John, m. —; 7, James, m. — Sypher; 8, Charles, m. Jane McKay.

ii. Robert, m. Mary Morrill, first settled in Digby, and in 1811 removed to Western Canada, where she d. 1817, and he survived several years: Ch.: 1, Nancy, m. James McIntyre; 2, Mary, m. —; 3, Rev. Cormac, m. (1st) Miss Watt, (2nd) Prudence Morrill; 4, Robert, m. Rebecca Arnold; 5, Thomas, m. (1st) Elizabeth McDormand, (2nd) Margaret Snow; 6, Wilson, m. Lucy Buckman; 7, Jane, m. David Cossaboom; 8, James, m. Deborah, dau. of Robert Morrill; 9, Rev. William, m. Jerusha Wells.

iii. Thomas, m. 1790, Lavinia Webber, of Granville: Ch.: 1, Joel, b. 1792, m. Jane Elizabeth Harris; 2, John, m. Dorinda Whitman, 5 ch.; 3, Joseph, m. in England; 4, William, a mariner; 5, Elizabeth, d. young.

iv. James, m. Ann, dau. of Judah Rice, lived at Westport, Briar Island, but removed to Port Burwell, Ont., about 1830: Ch.: 1, Sarah, m. Elisha Payson; 2, James, fate unknown; 3, Mary, m. Samuel Teed; Rachel, m. Francis Harris, jun.; 5, Elizabeth, m. Thomas McDormand; 6, Jane, m. (1st) William Bailey, (2nd) Lemuel Morehouse; 7, Charlotte, m. John, s. of Jacob Medlar; Frances, m. Isaac Titus, jun.; 9, Nelson, m. Eleanor McConnell; 10, Sidney, m. Sarah, dau. of Isaac Morehouse.

McKenzie. As the name would clearly indicate, this family is of Scotch origin. Alexander McKenzie, born about 1733, came over to Halifax about the middle of the last century, soon came down to Granville, and there married in 1765, Mary, daughter of Walter Wilkins, who was born in Halifax, probably in 1749. They settled at Stony Beach, below Granville Ferry. He died July 14, 1820. She died 1843, aged 93. Children:

i. Sarah, b. June 24, 1766, m. (1st) June 15, 1786, Joseph Thomas, (2nd) 1829, Deacon Thomas Chute.

ii. Mary, b. 1768, d. young.

iii. Walter, b. May 4, 1770, a master mariner, d. probably unm., Dec. 24, 1799, in his vessel, in Annapolis River.

iv. William, b. May 4, 1770, m. Hannah, dau. of Ebenezer Corning, 1795, lived at Stony Beach, d. March, 1859: Ch.: 1, Alexander,

b. May 4, 1796, m. Mary, dau. of Dr. Andrew Sideler, 10 ch. ; 2, Bethiah, b. Sept. 15, 1797, m. John, son of Manasseh Litch ; 3, Abigail, b. Sept. 1, 1799, m. James Martin, who d. seven months later ; 4, Mary, b. Aug. 3, 1802, m. Gilbert Cress, 7 ch. ; 5, Hannah, b. June 7, 1804, m. James Litch ; 6, Elsie, b. April 5, 1807, m. William Turple ; 7, Eleanor, b. June 27, 1809, m. Thomas Sproul, jun. ; 8, Eliza M., b. Jan. 18, 1812, m. (1st) John B., son of Jonathan McKenzie, (2nd) James Killam ; 9, Sarah A., b. May 1, 1813, m. Rev. John O. Woodworth ; 10, Margaret Jane, b. Sept. 3, 1815, m. Thomas, son of John Perry.

v. Abba, b. 1773, d. 1776.

vi. Elizabeth, b. 1776, m. Oct. 3, 1799, George, son of Gideon Witt, who came from Lynn, Mass., to Granville, 13 ch.

vii. John, b. about 1779, a follower of Rev. Henry Alline, and an evangelist or preacher.

viii. Nancy, m. Paul Chesley.

ix. Alexander, b. 1784, m. (1st) Mary, dau. of Willoughby Sollows, of Yarmouth, (2nd) Edith, dau. of Joseph Saunders, widow of William Harris : Ch. : 1, Walter, m. Mary, dau. of Ansel Crosby ; 2, William, m. Rachel, dau. of John Landers ; 3, Eleanor, m. Nathan, son of Jabez Landers ; 4, Ruth, m. William, son of Isaac Balcom ; 5. Mary Caroline.

x. Susan, b. Sept. 26, 1786, m. James C. Steadman.

xi. Mary, b. 1790, m. Henry, son of Abednego Ricketson, no ch.

MESSENGER. HENRY[1] MESSENGER came from England to Boston in 1637 ; married Sarah —, and had a son Thomas,[2] born 1661, who married Elizabeth Mellows ; they had a son Ebenezer,[3] born in 1697, who, in 1719, married Rebecca Sweetzer ; and from this marriage came Ebenezer[4] Messenger, jun., who was born in 1723 (or 1720), and came to Nova Scotia with the other early Massachusetts settlers, bringing his wife with him. She died, and he married (2nd) Madame de Chevry, but his children were by the first wife. He died at Annapolis in 1806, said to be aged 86. His children were : 1, Ebenezer,[5] who married Margaret Hooper ; 2, Lydia, married William Lawrence ; 3, John. Ebenezer,[5] who came with his father, married Margaret Hooper. Had children :

i. Henry, m. Dec. 15, 1792, Anna Wilson, and had ch. : 1, Amelia, b. 1794, m., probably, Elijah Phinney ; 2, Ann, b. 1796, m. George Munroe ; 3, Henry, b. 1798, m. Hannah Abott, 6 ch. ; 4, Timothy, b. 1800, m. Eliza Messenger, 4 ch. ; 5, James, b. Dec. 15, 1801, m. (1st) Susan Thomas, 7 ch., (2nd) Grace (Smith) Marshall ; 6, David, b. Feb. 20, 1804, m. Catharine Parsons ; 7, Mary, b. 1806, m. Samuel Parker ; 8, Jane Elizabeth, b. 1807, d. 1828 ; 9, Michael (or Lewis), b. 1809, m. (1st) Phebe Ann Bruce, (2nd) Grace Payzant ; 10, Cynthia, b. 1811, m. Isaac Dodge ; 11, Eliza Ann, b. Dec., 1813, d. Nov. 9, 1828 ; 12, Major, b. 1817, m. Sarah Kinsman, 6 ch.

ii. John, m. 1808, Nancy Truesdell, 4 ch.

iii. Ebenezer, m. 1805, Mary Munroe : Ch. : 1, Thomasine, b. 1806, m. William Benson ; 2, Ebenezer, b. 1808, m. Margaret Bruce ; 3, Emily, b. 1810 ; 4, Louisa, b. 1813, m. James Craft ; 5, Eliza Ann, b. 1816, m. Timothy Messenger ; 6, Maria, b 1819, m. John Bruce ; 7, Armanilla, b. 1821, m. John T. Craft ; 8, Amelia, b. 1824, m. — ; 9, Isaiah, b. 1826, m. Mehitable Sampson.

iv. Ezekiel, m. Mary Ricketson: Ch.: 1, Obadiah, m. Ann McGregor; 2, Daniel m.; 3, Jordan, m. Elizabeth Munroe; 4, Eli, m. Christina Marshall; 5, Lawrence m. 1832, Mary Ann Soper; 6, Mary, m. John Brinton; 7, Phebe, m. Andrew Munroe; 8, Eliza, m. William Merritt; 9, Susan, m. (1st) Beverley R. Marshall, (2nd) William Brown; 10, Elsie Ann; 11, Lovicia; 12, Emmeline; 13, William Henry, m. Mary Roach; 14, Nancy, b. 1820, m. Joshua Brinton, b. 1819.
v. George Nugent, b. 1784, m. Mary Harrington, 4 ch.
vi. Thomas, m. Experience Bent, 3 ch.
vii. David, m. Abigail Bent, 8 ch
viii. Phebe, m. Reuben Balcom.
ix. Ann, m. William Longley.
x. Lydia, m. Daniel Bruce.

MILBURY. Our author made no note on the founder of this family, except a memorandum that seems to indicate that he was from York, but the author of the "Chute Genealogies" says "from Ireland." It seems a purely English name. THOMAS MILBURY married 1764, Elizabeth Barnes (daughter of Nathaniel), and had children:

i. Thomas, b. 1765, m. Phebe Saunders: Ch.: 1, Phebe, b. 1797, m. Nathaniel Harris (son of Benjamin and g. son of Samuel, of Yarmouth); 2, Thomas, b. 1799, drowned; 3, Joseph, b. 1802, m. 1828, Rebecca Weare; 4, David, b. 1803, d. 1804.
ii. Benjamin, b. 1767, m. Sarah Marshall (dau. of Solomon): Ch.: 1, Mercy, m. (1st) James Bryan, (2nd) James Nickerson (perhaps Nicholson); 2, Willard, m. Eunice, dau. of John Weaver; 3, Samuel, b. 1804, m. Mary, dau. of Silas Bent; 4, Solomon, m. (1st) Phebe Sproul (dau. of W. Roach); 5, Benjamin, m. Clarissa, dau. of John Viditoe (lived in Digby and d. by an accident. A son *Alfred Henry*, being partly brought up by a Savary, adopted that surname, served in American navy and settled in United States); 6 and 7, Simeon and Thomas, b. 1810, d. soon; 8, John Wesley, b. 1812, m (1st) Hannah Ward (dau. of Jonas); 9, Lucinda, b. 1814, m. Asaph, son of Reis Stronach; 10, Sarah Ann, b. 1817, m. Edwin Downey; 11, Whitfield, b. 1820, m. Eunice Sproul.
iii. James, b. 1770, m. Sarah (Fletcher) Milbury: Ch.: 1, Joseph, b. Dec. 14, 1796, m. Priscilla, dau. of Wm. Chute; 2, James, b. July 8, 1798, m. Mary, dau. of Henry Milbury; 3, Elizabeth, b. July 27, 1800; 4, Henry, b. Oct. 18, 1801, m. Mary Young; 5, Susanna, b. Feb. 22, 1803, m. John Brown; 6, Anna, b. Jan. 21, 1805, m. William Armstrong; 7, Mary, b. June 21, 1807, m, William Nichols; 8, David F., b. Sept. 8, 1810, m. Lucy Marshall (dau. of Elisha); 9, Lucy, b. Nov. 17, 1812, m. James Lynam Chute; 10, John, m. Seraphina Chute (dau. of William); 11, Elizabeth, b. Nov. 2, 1817, m. Harrington Messenger; 12, Fletcher, b. July 30, 1819, m. Sarah J. Sproul.
iv. Mary, b. 1772, m. Demotte Durland.
v. Elizabeth, b. 1774.
vi. Joseph, b. 1776, d. at sea.
vii. Henry, b. 1778, m. (1st) 1804, Sarah, dau. of John Wade, (2nd) Mary (Fletcher) Young: Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1805, m. James Milbury; 2, David, b. 1807, m. Margaret Bent; 3, John, b. 1809, m. Mary Elizabeth Longley; 4, Phebe, b. 1812, m. Benjamin Farnsworth; 5, James Priestly, b. 1815, m. Henrietta Clark; 6, Stephen, b. 1817, m. Mary Bent; 7, Seth, b. 1819, m. (1st)

Keziah Kedy, (2nd) Elizabeth Crooks; 8, Edward, b. 1823, m. Margaret Holland.

viii. Samuel, b. 1780, m. (1st) Katy Nye, (2nd) Elizabeth Fowler.
ix. Richard, b. 1782, m. Phebe Everett.
x. Sarah, b. 1785, m. Joseph T. Barnes.

MILLER. FRANCIS MILLER came, according to family tradition, from New York to Granville not long after the Massachusetts settlers of 1760. In 1770 he had, according to the census returns, 8 children, 6 of whom were of Nova Scotian birth. His eldest son Henry, when a young man, returned to New York, where an uncle resided, married and left descendants there. His son Francis removed to Bear River, married Rachel, a daughter of William Clark, and Jacob, at the time of his marriage, settled in Wilmot. He married Molley —— and had children:

i. Henry, b. 1765, m. and lived in New York.
ii. Catherine, b. 1768, m. Zebulon Durland.
iii. Molley, b. 1770, m. Richard Clarke.
iv. Adam Francis, b. 1771, m. 1805, Rachel Clark: Ch.: 1, Thomas, b. 1806, m. Mary Wade; 2, William, b. 1808, m. Sarah Ann Harris; 3, Mary, b. 1810, m. William Dunn; 4, Sophia, b. 1812, m. Joseph Rice; 5, Nelson, b. 1811, m. Harriet Gilliat; 6, Margaret Ann, b. 1814, m. Jacob Troop.
v. Jacob, b. 1774, m. 1798, Sarah Durland: Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1799, m. George Bowlby; 2, George, b. 1800, m. (1st) Eliza Rhodes, (2nd) Catherine Cropley; 3, Eliza, b. 1802, m. William Slocomb; 4, Phebe, b. 1804, m. John Bent; 5, Martha, b. 1806; 6, Sarah, b. 1808, m. Thomas Nee; 7, Louisa, b. 1810, m. John Cropley; 8, Francis, b. 1812, m. Elizabeth Slocomb; 9, John, b. 1816, m. Phebe Hayes; 10, Jacob, b. 1814, m. Cecilia Morse; 11, Henry, b. 1819, m. Lavinia Slocomb.

MICHAEL MILLER, of German extraction, a New York Loyalist, by tradition of the same family as the last named, but not within known degrees of relationship, married (1st) Sarah, daughter of Solomon Farnsworth, (2nd) 1801, Susanna Grimes. Children:

i. Solomon Farnsworth, m. Sarah Travis, and had ch.: 1, Ann, m. (1st) John Morrison Wade; 2, Mary Jane, m. Stephen Fowler; 3, Elizabeth, d. unm.; 4, Olivia, m. Henry Bent; 5, John, d. unm.; 6, Solomon, d. unm.; 7, Solomon, m. Elizabeth Easson; 8, William E., m. Jane Easson.
ii. William, d. unm.
iii. Harris, m. 1818, Sarah Gaskell: Ch.: 1, Sophia, b. 1819, m. (1st) Eaton Chute, (2nd) Solomon Chute; 2, Michael, b. 1822, m. Elizabeth Chute; 3, William, b. 1825, m. Elizabeth Sanders; 4, Benjamin, b. 1828, m. Catharine Sanders; 5, Mary, m. Alexander Witt.
iv. Edward, d. unm.
v. James, m. 1822, Eleanor Chandler: Ch.: 1, Eliza Matilda, b. 1824, m. (1st) Charles Lingley, (2nd) Thomas Delap; 2, Sarah Ann, b. 1826, m. (1st) Jacob Bogart, (2nd) Charles Mills; 3, Catherine, b. 1828, d. unm.; 4, James Edward, b. 1830, m. Horatia Steadman; 5, Weston Hicks, b. 1832, m. Almaretta Sanders; 6, Lois, m. David Tucker; 7, Louisa, b. 1836, m. James Harvey.

By second wife :

vi. Hanley, d. unm.
vii. Thomas Hanley, b. 1805.
viii. Michael, b. 1807, m. 1834, Lucy Ann Merry ; 3 sons d. unm., several daus.
ix. Sarah Ann, b. 1808.
x. Jacob Edward, b. 1812, d. unm.
xi. Irene Salome, d. unm.

Mills. The Mills family of Granville are a branch of a family long domiciled at or near Scarborough, Yorkshire, whose patronymic was Milnes, the change in the spelling of the name being adopted about the time of the arrival of the immigrant ancestor in Nova Scotia. Milnes is a conspicuous name among the gentry of Derbyshire, which adjoins Yorkshire on the south. Three brothers, whose father's Christian name is lost, but whose mother's maiden name was said to be Milner, came over about 1773 or 1774. The eldest, Francis, never married. He was a magistrate for several years and highly esteemed. William Mills, the next eldest, married Hannah McCormick, and had children : 1, John, long a J.P. and leading merchant and ship-builder, m. Jane McCormick ; the father of John B. Mills, Esq., M.P., 10 children in all ; 2, Elizabeth, m. David Witherspoon ; 3, Ann, m. Robert Witherspoon ; 4, Robert, m. Jane Amberman, 4 children ; 5, William, m. Emily Troop, 9 children ; 6, David, m. Mary Halfyard, 11 children.

Robert Mills, the youngest, married Hannah Lovett, and had children : 1, Robert, m. Lucy Hall, 6 children ; 2, Sarah Ann, m. Alfred Troop.

There was an Elizabeth Mills, m. Oct. 12, 1790, John Weatherspoon, jun., perhaps a sister of the three immigrant brothers.

Milner. Jonathan Milner was born in Yorkshire, England, and came to this province in the last quarter of the last century. He married Ann Oliver, was a farmer, and settled in Clements. Another immigrant named Milner, distinctly cognate, settled in Granville in 1812. Children :

i. John, b. about 1776, m. Tamar, dau. of Daniel Pine : Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1804, d. unm.; 2, Sarah Ann, b. 1805, m. James Fraser, jun.; 3, John K., m. Dorcas Pinckney ; 4, Rebecca, m. Samuel Westlake ; 5, Hannah, d. unm.; 6, Daniel P., b. 1810, m. Ann Mott (dau. of John).
ii. Jonathan, jun., m. (1st) Lois Potter, (2nd) Hannah, dau. of Daniel Pine : Ch.: 1, Ann, b. about 1800, m. Daniel W. Milner ; 2, John, b. 1810, d. 1840 ; (by 2nd wife) : 3, Mary Ann, m. Peter, son of Thos. Berry (his 2nd wife) ; 4, Samuel, m. Mary Eliza Jones ; 5, Sutliffe, m. Cecilia Kiley ; 6, Louisa, m. Ezekiel Sanford.
iii. Thomas, m. (1st) Elizabeth Warner, (2nd) Nancy Ham, wid. of Jacob Weilant : Ch.: 1, Daniel W., m. Anna, dau. of Jonathan Milner ; 2, Thomas H. m. Lovicia, dau. of James Wright (no

issue); 3, Frederic, m. Bethiah, dau. of James Wright; 4, James, m. Mary, daughter of Andrew Dukeshire; 5, Mary, m. William, son of James Wright; 6, Hannah, m. Ward Wright; 7, J. Conrad, m. Diadama, dau. of Wm. Spurr; 8, Joshua, b. 1816, m. Sarah Hines; 9, Oliver, d. aged 20; 10, Elsie, b. 1822, m. John Potter (son of Benjamin); (by 2nd wife): 11, William, m. Martha LeCain (dau. of Thomas); 12, Rebecca, m. John, son of Peter Berry; 13, Ann Oliver, m. Edward Manning Sanford.

iv. Sarah, d. unm., aged 80.
v. Elche, m. John Trimper.
vi. Beulah, d. unm., aged about 70.
vii. Mary, d. unm., aged about 75.
viii. Anna, m. William McNeill.
ix. Elizabeth, m. 1814, Benjamin Lecain, and d. 1865, aged 87. He d. 1892.

Morse. Samuel Morse,[1] born in England, 1585, was son of Rev Thomas Morse, of Foxearth, Essex County, England, and with wife Elizabeth came to New England in the ship *Increase*, Robert Lee, master, in 1625, and settled at Dedham, and died at Medfield, Mass., April 5, 1654, aged 69. His eldest son, Daniel,[2] born in 1613, married Lydia ——, and lived in Medfield and Sherborn, Mass., and died June 5, 1688, leaving a son Daniel,[3] born 1640, who married 1669, Elizabeth Barbour, of Sherborn, and died Sept. 29, 1702. His son Daniel,[4] born July 10, 1672, married Susannah Holbrook, 1696, and died 1717; had a son Obadiah,[5] born at Sherborn, Aug. 15, 1704, married 1728, Mercy Walker, and died in 1753. This Obadiah was the father of Abner and Samuel Morse, who came to this county, and were grantees in the township of Annapolis.

Abner Morse, born in Sherborn, Mass., 1731, married, 1754, Anna Church, and had children:

i. Abner, jun. (called Capt. Abner), b. Dec. 6, 1756, d. Dec. 4, 1839, m. (1st) 1774, Elizabeth, dau. of Timothy Saunders, (2nd) May 27, 1793, Nancy, dau. of Handley Chipman: Ch.: 1, Ann, m. Henry Balcom; 2, Church,* b. 1777, m. 1800, Elizabeth Parker (dau. of Nathaniel); 3, Diadama, m. Nathan Parker, jun.; 4, Hannah, b. 1782, m. Henry Alline Parker; 5, Rachel, b. 1788, m. William McGregor; (by 2nd wife): 6, Hanley C., b. May 7, 1795, m. Jerusha, dau. of Asa Tupper; 7, Elizabeth, b. March 2, 1797, m. 1813, Deacon John Wilson; 8, Rebecca, b. April 9, 1799, m. William, son of Thomas Bishop; 9, Abigail, b. April 23, 1801, m. Andrew Marshall, jun.; 10, Lucy Grant, b. 1803, m. John VanNorden; 11, Caroline, b. March 7, 1805, m. Abel

* Our author makes Church Morse the twelfth child of the first Abner and Anna Church. I have followed Mr. Chute's later conclusion with some doubt. Church had children: 1, Helen, b. April 6, 1801, m. Abner Parker; 2, Benaiah, b. Dec. 22, 1802, m. (1st) Elizabeth (widow Baker), dau. of John Robinson, (2nd) Elizabeth Cutler; 3, Jonathan, m. Elizabeth, dau. of Samuel Spinney; 4, Elizabeth, b. Jan. 17, 1807, m. (1st) James Saunders, (2nd) William Copeland; 5, Nathan Parker, b. Dec. 12, 1809, m. (1st) Mary A. Roach, (2nd) Elizabeth Elliott; 6, Charlotte, b. and d. 1812; 7, Abner, b. July 1, 1813, m. Nov. 9, 1834, Mary Elizabeth, dau. of Elijah Purdy.

Banks; 12, Emmeline, b. July 4, 1807, m. Edward Bauckman; 13, Harriet, b. June 22, 1809, m. Ambrose Poole; 14, Abner, b. Nov. 15, 1811, m. Sarah Ann, dau. of David Morse; 15, Eunice, b. 1814, m. (1st) Stephen Harris, (2nd) James Purdy, (3rd) John Bennett, of Digby.

ii. Anna, b. Nov. 30, 1758, m. Jacob Troop.

iii. Elizabeth, b. March 2, 1761 (in N.S.), m. James Chute.

iv. Obadiah, b. Feb. 13, 1763, m. Hannah Chute: Ch.: 1, Sophia, b. April 9, 1786, m. March 29, 1807, Robert Neily; 2, Peter, b. Oct., 1788, m. 1811, Mary, dau. of John Wheelock; 3, Judith, b. Sept. 13, 1791, m. Sept. 30, 1815, Guy, son of Lemuel Newton; 4, Alexander, b. 1793, m. (1st) March 11, 1816, Amy Chesley, (2nd) Mary Ann Truesdale, her half-sister; 5, Abner, b. July 29, 1795, m. (1st) Feb. 22, 1821, Margaret, dau. of John Hicks, (2nd) Oct. 16, 1834, Mary, dau. of Jonathan Parker, (3rd) 1856, Caroline S., dau. of Archibald Hicks; 6, Luther, b. May 28, 1798, m. (1st) Oct. 12, 1833, Mary, dau. of Fairfield Woodbury, (2nd) Nov. 6, 1851, Emily Dodge; 7, Lavinia, b. Aug. 14, 1801, m. Stephen Taylor; 8, Theresa, b. 1803, m. John Hicks, jun.; 9, Hannah Maria, b. April 8, 1806, m. Jan. 20, 1829, Rev. Obed Parker; 10, Obadiah, jun., b. Dec. 20, 1809, m. Sept. 11, 1834, Minetta, dau. of Asa and Ruby Foster.

v. Jonathan, b. July 6, 1765, m. (1st) Margaret Beckwith, (2nd) Lucy Grant, 2 daus.

vi. Silas, b. Aug. 26, 1767, m. (1st) July 25, 1791, Helen, dau. of Capt. Grant, (2nd) Elizabeth Osborne, wid. of John H. Chipman, (3rd) Sarah Bishop, wid. of Daniel Chipman: Ch.: 1, Robert Grant, b. 1794, d. about 1820; 2, William Haliburton, b. 1796, m. 1824, Catharine, dau. of Joseph Troop; (by 2nd wife): 3, Silas L. (Barrister, Q.C.), d. unm.; 4, John Osborne, m. (1st) Rhoda Parker, (2nd) Harriet Stephens; 5, Helen G.; 6, Sarah, b. 1812; 7, Charles, b. 1815, m. Margaret Henderson; 8, Elizabeth, b. 1816, m. James Smith, Windsor; 9, Thomas A., b. Jan. 23, 1820, m. Marguerite Maria, dau. of George B. Oxley.

vii. Mercy, b. Feb. 3, 1770, m. George, son of Valentine and Katy Troop.

viii. Daniel, b. Feb. 5, 1772, m. Jane, dau. of Isaac Woodbury: Ch.: 1, Sampson, d. at 4 years; 2, Susan, m. Abel Parker; 3. Seraph, m. Amos Patterson; 4, Daniel, m. Susanna Parker; 5, Isabel, m. Sidney Welton; 6, Jane, m. Rev. David Chase; 7, Leverett, m. Hannah Chase.

ix. John Martin, b. July 21, 1774, m. Nov., 1798, Jane, dau. of Rev. T. H. Chipman: Ch.: 1, William Huston, b. 1799, m. Miriam Parker; 2, Mary A., b. 1801, m. Jonathan Crane; 3, Louisa, b. 1805, m. Elijah Parker; 4, Margaret, b. 1809, m. John Balcom (son of Henry); 5, Evaline, b. 1811, m. Edward Parker; 6, Gaines, b. 1813, d. young; 7, M. Rosenblade, b. Oct. 23, 1815, m. Charlotte Johnson; 8, Rev. John Chipman, b. 1819, m. (1st) Isabel, dau. of Abner Woodworth; (2nd) Frances L. Dakin (dau. of Edward); 9, Eliza Q., m. Isaac Hamilton.

x. David, b. Jan. 16, 1777, m. Hannah, dau. of John Hicks, jun.: Ch.: 1, Constant, m. Sarah Songster; 2, Edward, m. Elizabeth Spurr, wid. of William Ditmars; 3, John A., m. Sarah Smith; 4, David, jun., m. Harriet Morse (dau. of Jonathan C.); 5, William, d. 1894, aged 80; 6, Lucinda, m. James, son of Stephen Bent; 7, Mary, m. Ansley, son of John Brown; 8, Sarah Ann, m. Abner Morse, 2nd jun.

xi. Abigail, b. April 18, 1779, d. Aug. 18.

xii. Hannah, b. Oct. 14, 1780, m. Moses Rice (son of Judah).

Samuel Morse was born at Sherborn, Mass., 1739, married about 1765, Lydia Church. Children :

i. Samuel, b. about 1768, m. 1796, Amoret, dau. of Elias Wheelock : Ch.: 1, Elias, b. 1798, m. Lucy Boehner ; 2, Samuel, b. 1800, m. Eliza, dau. of Stephen Boehner; 3, Major, b. March 16, 1802, m. Margaret Kennedy ; 4, Amoret, b. 1804, d. 1825, unm.; 5, Amherst Martin, b. 1806. m. Susan Leonard ; 6, Abigail, b. 1809, d. 1827; 7, Wellington, b. 1812, d. 1818 ; 8, Sophia, b. 1815, m. Stillman Bent ; 9, Lydia, b. 1818.

ii. Aaron, b. Dec. 5, 1770, m. (1st) 1796, Eleanor McGregor, (2nd) 1828, as her third husband, Frances Farnsworth, wid. of Rev. James Manning and Henry Troop : Ch. : 1, Aaron, b. 1796, m. Seraph, dau. of Michael Martin ; 2, Lydia A., b. Dec. 2, 1797, m. Ezekiel Chute ; 3, William, m. Lavinia, dau. of Major Chipman ; 4, Edward Manning, m. (1st) Mary Ann, dau. of William Bishop, and wid. of Israel Longley, (2nd) Lucretia C. Croscup, wid. of Israel Delap ; 5, Joseph, b. 1806, d. unm. ; 6, Eleanor, b. 1808, m. James Starratt ; 7, Henry Alline, b. 1813, m. Mary Elizabeth, dau. of Peter Starratt.

iii. Jonathan Church, m. 1800, Susanna, dau. of William Longley: Ch. : 1, Samuel Edward, b. 1801, m. Sarah Ann Elliott (dau. of John); 2, Israel Longley, m. Susan Sturmey ; 3, Eliza, b. May 23, 1805, m. Asaph Marshall ; 4, Susan Harriet, b. 1807, m. David Morse, jun.; 5, Lucy Adelia, b. 1810, m. Arthur, son of John J. Palmer ; 6, Caroline Herdersay, b. 1813, m. Lawrence Phinney ; 7, Minetta, b. 1817, m. Warren Longley ; 8, Mary Cecilia, b. 1821, m. Jacob Miller, jun.

iv. Lydia, m. Samuel Young.

v. Grace, m. Asaph Longley.

vi. Abigail, m. Obadiah Parker.

The Rev. Arzarelah Morse, descended probably from William, who came from Marlborough, Wilts, to Newbury, in 1635, born January 16, 1745, B.A. Harvard 1761, was in Annapolis County between 1770 and 1790; perhaps later. His daughter Diadama married Michael Spurr, jun. (See Spurr.)

Morton. Joseph Morton came from Massachusetts in 1760, returned to settle his affairs there, and it is said was, while in the harbor of Boston, accidentally thrust overboard from the deck of the vessel on which he was about coming back, by a friend with whom he was trying his skill as a wrestler, and notwithstanding all efforts to rescue him he was drowned. For his ancestry see memoir of John Elkanah, M.P.P. I cannot fix the parentage of this Joseph among several of the name who can be traced.* His only son Joseph married in 1771, Eleanor Blood, and after her death, Ruth Parish, and had children :

i. Susanna, b. 1772, m. Thomas Dodge.

ii. Solomon, b. 1774, m. Mary Roberts : Ch.: 1, Martha, m. David Leavitt ; 2, Eliza, m. Thomas Dakin (Digby Co.); 3, Eunice, m. Edmund Banks ; 4, Allen, m. — ; 5, Abraham, m. — Merritt ; 6, George ; 7, Levi ; 8, Lucy Ann, m. — Bryan ; 9, Solomon.

* He is certainly one of the Josephs mentioned in Davis' "Landmarks of Plymouth," p. 190.

iii. Olivia, b. 1776, m. Moses Banks.
iv. Abraham, b. 1778, d. 1844, m. Miriam Roberts : Ch.: 1, Martha Hall, b. 1802, m. Robert Foster ; 2, Joseph, b. 1805, m. Deborah Morse ; 3, William, b. 1807, m. Mary Morehouse ; 4, Lydia, b. 1804, d. 1805 ; 5, Silas H., b. 1809, d. abroad ; 6, Lydia, b. 1811; 7, Mary Ann, b. 1813, m. William Dakin ; 8, Susan, b. 1815, m. John Dakin ; 9, Charles, b. 1819 ; 10, Sarah Jane, b. 1823, m. Robert Cossaboom ; 11, James Whitney, b. 1825, m. Sophia Morehouse ; 12, Daniel D., b. 1827, m. (1st) Charlotte Farnsworth, (2nd) Adelaide Jordan ; 13, Elkana, b. 1830, m. Eliza Welch.
v. Frederic, b. 1780, m. (1st) 1809, Rachel Farnsworth, (2nd) Sarah Whitman, (3rd) Elizabeth Cousins : Ch.: 1, Rachel, b. 1809, m. Abraham Foster ; (by 2nd wife) : 2, Sarah, b. 1811, m. Amos Fales ; 3, Daniel W., b. 1812, m. Margaret Bass ; 4, Zaccheus, b. 1813, m. Eliza Gould ; 5, Mary, b. 1816, m. George Valentine ; 6, Susanna, b. 1818, m. William Hawkins ; 7, Robert S., b. 1820, m. Hannah Morse.
vi. Alethea, b. 1782, m. Miriam Roberts.
vii. Edmund, b. 1784, m. Susan Harris : Ch.: 1, Joseph, b. 1812, m. Matilda Woodbury ; 2, Eleanor Blood, b. 1815, m. Daniel Starratt ; 3, William Fairfield, b. 1816, m. — Clark ; 4, Anna Maria, b. 1818, m. Foster Woodbury ; 5, James Robert, b. 1819, m. Lucy Gates ; 6, John, b. 1821, m. Louisa Taylor ; 7, Louisa b. 1823, m. John McNeill ; 8, Eliza, b. 1826.
viii. Eleanor, b. 1786, m. Benjamin Taylor.
ix. Thomasine, b. 1788, m. Stephen Taylor.
x. Huldah, b. 1790, died with her mother.
By second wife :
xi. James, b. 1795.

Munroe. See memoir of Lieut.-Col. Henry Munroe, M.P.P., the ancestor of this family. He married 1767, Sarah Hooper, and had children :

i. George, b. 1768, m. Lucretia Chesley : Ch.: 1, George, m. Ann Messenger ; 2, Sarah, m. Ezekiel Newcomb; and probably others.
ii. Henry, b. 1770, m. 1806, Elizabeth Green, b. 1782, d. 1874 : Ch.: 1, Ennis, b. 1806, m. Miriam Young ; 2, Henry, b. 1808, m. Susan Young ; 3, Maria, b. 1810, unm. ; 4, Mercy, b. 1813, m. Thomas Crocker ; 5, Sarah, b. 1813, m. Charles Henry Green ; 6, Rachel, b. 1815, m. Ray Hewland ; 7, Catherine, b. 1817, m. Henry Smith ; 8, Margaret, b. 1817, m. Henry Dodge ; 9, Thomas Green, b. 1817, m. Rebecca Kent (these three were triplets); 10, Mary, b. 1820, unm. ; 11, Elizabeth, b. 1821, m. George Young ; 12, Martha, b. 1823, m. John Angel ; 13, James Edward, b. 1826, m. (1st) Patience Wilcox, (2nd) Dora Yates.
iii. John, b. 1772, m. 1799, Eva Bohaker : Ch.: 1, Andreas, b. 1800, m. Phebe Messenger ; 2, John, b. 1803, m. (1st) ——, (2nd) Sarah Picket ; 3, William Henry, b. 1806, m. Hannah Hall ; 4, Michael Bohaker, b. 1808, m. Loretta A. Newcomb ; 5, Daniel, b. 1810, m. (1st) Olivia Ann Stevens, (2nd) Elizabeth Lent ; 6, Wellington, b. 1812, d. 1828 ; 7, Foster, b. 1815, m. Caroline Jarvis.
iv. Robert, b. 1774, m. 1806, Penelope Green (dau. of Thomas) : Ch.: 1, Caroline, b. 1807, m. Rev. Nathaniel Vidito ; 2, Thomas, b. 1808, m. Tryphena Dolliver ; 3, John, b. 1809, m. Matilda

Burke ; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1810, m. Jordan Messenger ; 5, Alfred, b. 1812, m. Mary Ann Macpherson ; 6, Valentine, m. Deborah Smith (dau. of James and Esther Savery Smith, of Digby Co.) ; 7, Millidge, b. 1817, d. unm. ; 8, Sophia, b. 1818, m. John Munroe ; 9, Penelope, b. 1820, m. William Elder Thomas ; 10, Desiah, b. 1822, m. Richard Merry ; 11, Georgina, b. 1823, m. William Beach ; 12, Mary, b. 1825, m. Abraham Thomas ; 13, William Ruffee, b. 1827, m. Maria Shipley ; 14, Robert, b. 1830, m. Susan Marshall.

v. David, b. 1776, m. (1st) Rhoda Simpson, (2nd) Elizabeth Katherns : Ch. : 1, Robert, d. unm. ; 2, John, m. Sophia Munroe ; 3, David Davidson, m. Abigail Winchester ; 4, Sarah, d. unm. ; 5, Ethelinda, m. Daniel Messenger ; (by 2nd wife) : 6, Alexander, b. 1816, m. Rachel Dakin ; 7, Walter, b. 1819, m. Julia Dakin ; 8, Lucinda, b. 1817 ; 9, Nancy, b. 1821, unm. ; 10, Allan, b. 1823, d. unm. ; 11, Ruffee, b. 1827, m. Freelove Sharp ; 12, Eunice, b. 1825 ; 13, Pauline, b. 1829, d. unm. ; 14, Helen, b. 1833, m. — Stevens.

vi. Elizabeth, b. 1778, m. William Ruffee.

vii. Sarah, b. 1780, m. (1st) David Hendrick, (2nd) Francis Crabb.

NEILY. JOSEPH NEILY, with brother ROBERT and brother-in-law James Reagh, who had married his sister Martha, arrived in the Province about 1765, and spent some time near Windsor, where he married Jane Clark, daughter of his employer, John Clark, a leading farmer there. He was the son of John Neily, and was born in the north of Ireland about 1745. In 1768 they came to this country, and Joseph settled on the farm next east of the Wilmot Creek. Robert lived awhile on the adjoining lot, and then removed to Walton, Hants County. Joseph had children :

i. Joseph, m. 1805, Catharine Durland : Ch. : 1, Ward, b. 1807, m. Caroline Young ; 2, Joseph Clark, m. Eliza M. Porter ; 3, Irene, b. 1810, m. Edward Brown ; 4, Harriet P., b. 1812, m. Daniel North ; 5, Catharine, b. 1813, m. Moses Young ; 6, Mary, b. 1816, m. Willett Gates ; 7, E. Kinsman, b. 1818, m. Charlotte Fitzrandolph ; 8, George, b. 1820, m. Susan Banks ; 9, James Parker, b. 1822, m. Rebecca Banks ; 10, Ann, b. 1825, m. William Hians.

ii. Robert, m. (1st) 1807, Sophia Morse, (2nd) Elizabeth Gates, *née* Goucher : Ch. : 1, Susan Jane, b. 1808, m. (1st) James Parton, (2nd) John Hardwick ; 2, John Clark, b. 1810, m Georgina Merry ; 3, Sarah, b. 1813, m. John Berteaux ; 4, Obadiah, b. 1816, m. Eliza Balcom (no issue) ; 5, Samuel Theophilus, b. 1818, m. Sarah Wheelock ; 6, Robert Voorhies, b. 1820, m. Leah Burchille, d. 1850 ; 7, James B., b. 1823, m. Amelia Bishop ; 8, William A., b 1825, m. Elizabeth Grant ; 9, Ingraham Elder, b. 1828, m. Mary Schafner ; 10, Adoniram Burton, b. 1831, m. Lucy Bishop.

iii. John, m. 1803, Elizabeth Durland : Ch. : 1, Zebulon, b. 1805, m. Mary Foster ; 2, Robert, b. 1807, m. Ann Woodbury ; 3, Jacob, b. 1809, m. Lucy Ann Welton ; 4, George, b. 1811, m. Sarah Spinney ; 5, Maria Durland, b. 1813, m. Parker Welton ; 6. Susanna Inglis, b. 1816, m. William Rhodes ; 7, Andrew Inglis, b. 1819, m. Lydia Saunders ; 8, John, b. 1823, m. Helen Wilson ; 9, William, b. 1825, m. (1st) Anne Marshall, (2nd) Eliza Jacques ; 10, Joseph, b. 1827, m. Susan Blair.

iv. George, m. (1st) Elizabeth Gates, (2nd) Catharine Walker: Ch.: 1, William, d. unm; 2, Helen, m. Austin Welton; 3, John Clark, m. Eunice Sandford; (by 2nd wife): 4, George, m. Emily Palmer; 5, Archibald, m. Jane Abbott; 6, Margaret Ann, m. William Woodbury; 7, Emily, m. James Palmer; 8, Jane, m. Thomas Handley Saunders; 9, Joseph, m. Udavilla Welton; 10, Susan, m. James Craig.
v. Peter, m. 1811, Ann Wilson (of Parrsboro'); Ch.: 1, John, b. 1812; 2, Anna, b. 1813, d. unm.; 3, Jane, b. 1815; 4, Anne; 5, Richard Wilson, d. unm.; 6, Rebecca Wilson, b. 1818.
vi. Mary, m. Joab Baker.
vii. Margaret, m. (1st), — Mumford, (2nd)—.
viii. Jane, m. John West.
ix. Francis, m. Zebina Roach.

Nichols. Probably the name Richard Nichols in the capitation tax list of 1791 may be meant for Thomas Richards Nichols, son of William, a Loyalist, who was descended from a younger son of Colonel Nichols, Governor of New York early in the eighteenth century, and who settled in Connecticut; perhaps a grandson. He married Mary Richards. Tradition says while in service on the loyal side he was taken prisoner and treated with great severity. He was much feared and dreaded by the enemy, and being informed it was their design to put him to death on some pretext, he planned an escape. He and other prisoners seized and gagged the inner guard, secured his musket, overpowered all opposition, and escalading the outer wall of the prison, fled to the nearest forest, through which they pushed toward the Delaware River, which then formed the limit of the rebel lines. Finding no boat there, his companions shrank from the attempt to cross the river, then filled with floating ice, as fraught with certain death. "My capture will be the signal of certain death to me," said he as he sprang in, and fighting his way among the ice-floes, succeeded in reaching the opposite shore, a feat which caused his death a few months later from the chill he received. His widow, with her three sons and one daughter, came here in 1783 with the Loyalists, and afterwards married Ezekiel Welton. Descendants are in Kings County, Eastern Annapolis and, I think, Digby County. Another branch of this family, George K. Nichols, a nephew in some way, I think, of Judge Wiswall, came about the same time, studied law with Mr. Wiswall while he was at Bar, and settled in Digby, married a daughter of Elisha Budd, and had a son eminent in the Church, Rev. Edward Elisha Budd Nichols, D.D., Rector of Liverpool. William Nichols and wife, Mary Richards, had children:

i. William, d. aged 20.
ii. David, m. 1789, Sarah Dodge (dau. of Stephen): Ch.: 1, Sarah, b. 1790, m. Robert Fitzrandolph; 2, Mary, b. 1792, m. Robert Fitzrandolph; 3, William, b. 1794, m. (1st) Phebe Young, (2nd) Mary Milbury; 4, Amy, b. 1797, m. Henry D. Charlton; 5,

Stephen, b. 1799, m. (1st) Mary Ruloffson, (2nd) Miriam Wilkins, *née* Nichols ; 6, Freelove, b. 1802, d. 1821, unm. ; 7, Lois, b. 1804, m. James Payzant.

iii. Thomas Richards, m. Mary Robinson : Ch. : 1, Margaret, m. Thomas Ruggles (son of Joseph) ; 2, Sarah, d. unm. ; 3, William Richards, m. Lavinia Patterson ; 4, Robert, m. Maria Dodge ; 5, John, m. Sarah Patterson ; 6, Thomas, m. Alethea Patterson ; 7, Daniel, m. (1st) Eliza Marshall (dau. of Solomon, Digby), (2nd) Hannah Hardwick, *née* Marshall (no issue) ; 8, Elijah, m. Maria Patterson ; 9, Lemuel, m. Mehitable Dodge ; 10, Mary, m. Rev. Martin Randall ; 11, George, m. Minetta Dodge.

iv. George, m. Catharine Ricketson : Ch. : 1, Susan, m. Daniel Bruce ; 2, Henry, m. Ann Boutilier ; 3, William, m. Azubah Smith ; 4, Miriam, m. (1st) Anthony Wilkins, (2nd) Stephen Nichols ; 5, Sarah, m. Abraham Moore ; 6, George, m. Ann Sproul.

v. Lois, m. (1st) Joseph Ruggles, (2nd) Nicholas Beckwith.

Oakes. Jesse Oakes, a Loyalist of 1783, after a residence of some years in Digby, removed to the township of Annapolis, and settled near Bridgetown, on the farm now occupied by John Hicks. His second wife was Deborah Baldwin, believed to have been a sister of the Rev. John Baldwin, D.D., of Boston. Henry, his only son by his first wife, married Mary Fitzrandolph, settled on the east bank of the Joggin near Digby, and was the ancestor of the Digby people of the name. Phineas, the eldest by the second wife, settled in the District of New Albany ; Israel and Jesse settled in Bridgetown, but the former afterwards removed to Bridgewater, and thence to Halifax, Delancey Oakes, railway contractor, being one of his sons. The latter died in Bridgetown, leaving an only child, a son, the late Morrison Oakes, M.D. Parker Oakes, another son of the Loyalist, removed to Wilmot, near Lawrencetown. Children of Jesse Oakes :

i. Henry, m. Mary Fitzrandolph : Ch. : 1, Edward Henry, m. Anna M. Littelle, of New York ; 2, Edwin Randolph, M.P. and M.L.C., m. Georgina J. M. Bragg ; 3, Eliza, m. Daniel Ansley (no issue) ; 4, Anne, m. William Payson ; 5, Adelaide M., m. Barzillai Forsyth ; 6, George, d. unm.

By second wife :

ii. Phineas, d. 1854, m. 1806, Rachel Lovett : Ch. : 1, Phineas Lovett, m. Eliza Harris ; 2, Abigail, b. 1808, m. Joseph Whitman ; 3, Jesse, b. 1809, m. Eliza Whitman ; 4, Eliza, b. 1811, m. Edward Fairn ; 5, Caroline, b. 1814, m. Arthur Harris ; 6, Mary Jane, b. 1817, m. Ansley Whitman ; 7, Charles Henry, b. 1819, m. Charlotte Parker ; 8, Louisa, m. Gordon Bishop ; 9, Deborah, m. Enoch Bishop.

iii. Parker, m. (1st) 1810, Ruth Hicks, d. 1812, (2nd) Nancy Hicks : Ch. : 1, Ruth, b. 1812, m. George Bruce ; (by 2nd wife) : 2, John Wellington, b. 1814, unm. ; 3, Elizabeth Ann, b. 1815, m. William Bent ; 4, Olivia, b. 1817, m. William Bent ; 5, Hannah, b. 1819, unm. ; 6, Nancy, b. 1820, m. Edwin Nichols ; 7, Caroline, b. 1822, d. unm. ; 8, Millidge Rupert, d. unm.

iv. Israel, m. 1813, Maria Dickson : Ch. : 1, Robert Dickson, b. 1815, m. Eliza Turner ; 2, William Baldwin, b. 1817, m. —— ; 3, Henry Charles, b. 1820 ; 4, Stephen Delancey, m. ——.

v. Jesse, m. 1811, Catharine Morrison: Ch.: 1, Adelia Maria, b. 1813, d. unm.; 2, Carman, b. 1815, d. unm.; 3, Morrison (M.D.), b. 1817, m. Agatha, dau. of Richard James, Esq., who, after his death, m. Dr. Jennings, of Halifax. Their dau. Maria, m. George Braganza, son of E. R. Oakes, of Digby, and leaves one son, Morrison.
vi. Seth, d. unm.
vii. Priscilla, m. Weston Hicks.

Parker. Major Nathaniel Parker, from whom one of the families of the name in this county derives its origin, was grandson of Nathaniel, of Shrewsbury, Mass., through his son William, and was born 1743, in Dorchester, Mass., and was a soldier in the British army at the siege of Quebec. He settled in the eastern section of the county. It is said that for several years those that fed at his table numbered twenty, including two children of his first wife. All of his sixteen children grew to adult age, married, and had families. He and his wife were the first persons in the county to receive baptism by immersion, to obtain which they were obliged to travel on horseback (she on a pillion behind him), through an immense wilderness, the greater part of the distance from Annapolis to the Gaspereaux Valley in Kings County. He was a leading man among the early settlers, and had much to do with the laying out and construction of roads and in other public affairs. His descendants are very numerous in this county and in Kings, among whom may be mentioned nearly (or perhaps quite) half a score of Baptist ministers, and one if not two Methodist ministers, besides physicians, dentists, farmers, mechanics, manufacturers and teachers. He married about 1766, Anna Hardy, who died about 1778; (2nd) Salome, dau. of Deacon John Whitman, widow of Major Ezekiel Cleveland, and died 1830, having had children:

i. William, b. about 1770, m. 1790, Lydia Benjamin, lived in Aylesford, and had ch.: 1, Silas, b. Dec., 1790, m. Nancy Balcom, and d. 1860; 2, Mary, b. 1792, m. (1st) Job Randall, (2nd) Joseph Wade; 3, Deacon Abel, b. Nov. 8, 1793, m. Jan. 25, 1821, lived in Berwick; 4, Salome, b. Sept. 2, 1796, m. Feb. 25, 1823, Jonas, son of Henry Balcom; 5, Miriam, b. Sept. 1, 1799, m. (1st) William Chase, (2nd) Foster Chute; 6, Rev. Obed, b. Nov. 24, 1803, m. (1st) Hannah Maria Morse, (2nd) Jan. 24, 1837, Mary, dau. of Reuben Balcom. He d. July 1, 1890; 7, Susanna, b. Nov. 24, 1805, m. Daniel Morse, jun.; 8, Edward, b. March 1, 1808, m. Evalina, dau. of John W. Morse; 9, Nathaniel, b. Oct. 14, 1810, d. July 18, 1880; 10, Rev. James, b. Aug. 25, 1813, m. July 12, 1842, Phebe, dau. of Zebulon, and g. dau. of Daniel Durland, d. Jan. 26, 1876.
ii. Nathaniel, b. 1772, m. (1st) 1799, Diadama Morse (dau. of Capt. Abner), (2nd) 1855, Sarah Ann, dau. of Stephen Parker, wid. of George Harris, lived at Bear River, and d. 1860, having had ch.: 1, Abner, m. Helen, dau. of Church Morse, d. 1873; 2, Edward, m. Betsey, dau. of Henry Balcom, d. 1876; 3, Alfred, m. Charlotte McGee; 4, Lucy, m. Samuel Balcom; 5, William, m. (1st) Eliza, dau. of Foster Woodbury, jun., (2nd) John, son of Jesse Viditoe;

6, Harriet, m. John, son of Shippy Spurr ; 7, Nathaniel, m. Ann Baker ; 8, Mary, d. a. 18 ; 9, Benjamin Hardy, m. Abigail, dau. of Alex. Morse ; 10, John, m. Minetta, dau. of Alex. Morse ; 11, Elizabeth A., m. Jacob Wood.

iii. Allen or Alline, b. 1774, m. Hannah Morse (dau. of Abner and g. dau. of Obadiah), d. 1871 : Ch.: 1, Stephen, b. 1802, d. unm.; 2, Deidamia, b. 1803, m. Enoch Parish ; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1805, m. Ezekiel Banks ; 4, Rachel, b. 1807, m.; 5, Daniel, b. 1811, d. unm. 1885 ; 6, Handley, b. 1814, m.; 7, Willard G., b. 1816, m. Lois Nichols Ruggles ; 8, Church, b. 1820, m.; 9, Sophia, b. 1822, m. Henry Ewing ; 10, Andrew B., b. 1824 ; 11, Rev. Warren Longley, b. 1826, m. Sarah Ewing ; 12, Miriam, d. unm.; 13, Lydia, d. unm.

iv. Mary, b, 1775, m. Daniel Benjamin, Horton, N.S.

v. Miriam, b. 1776, m. Elias Graves, 5 ch.

vi. Lucy, b. 1778, m. Deacon Cephas Welton, 7 ch.

By second wife :

vii. Henry, b. 1780, m. (1st) Eleanor Starratt, (2nd) Sophia Prentiss, *née* Tupper : Ch.: 1, George Starratt, m. (1st) Abigail Payzant, (2nd) Susan Smith ; 2, Matilda Christopher ; 3, Harvey, d. unm.; 4, Salome, d. unm.; 5, Evalina, d. unm.; (by 2nd wife) : 6, Lydia, m. Edward Christopher ; 7, Eleanor, m. William T. Christopher ; 8, Sophia, m. Elnathan Christopher ; 9, Charlotte, [m. Charles Oakes.

viii. Elizabeth, b. 1781, m. 1800, (1st) Church Morse, 9 ch., (2nd) Samuel Felch.

ix. Parnie, b. 1783, m. 1801, Abel Wheelock, 9 ch.

x. Irene, b. 1785, m. Hugh, son of Patrick Grimes, d. 1823, 10 ch.

xi. Mittie, b. 1788, m. John Wheelock.

xii. Lovefry, b. 1790, m. (1st) Beriah Bent, (2nd), 1828, Simeon Freeman.

xiii. Charlotte, b. 1792, m. Deacon Zoeth Freeman, 5 ch.

xiv. Letitia, b. 1794, m. Daniel (or Donald) McPherson, 9 ch.

xv. Rev. Maynard, b. 1795, m. (1st) 1821, Catharine Spurr, (2nd) Margaret (Miller) Norwell, d. 1860, 13 ch.

xvi. Maria, b. 1800, m. Deacon Luther Leadbetter, d. 1874, 5 ch.

Abijah Parker, our author thinks, probably came from Lunenburg, Worcester County, Mass., to Nova Scotia : but be that as it may, he was descendant of a branch of the Parker family, early settled in Groton, Middlesex County, Mass., his father being Obadiah, grandfather Nathaniel, and great-grandfather Thomas. He was among the early settlers in Granville, and in 1764 married Miriam Johnson, widow of Timothy Ricketson. He accumulated a considerable estate (including several seven- and fourteen-acre marsh lots) in the Belleisle District and in Wilmot, and died in 1780. One of his sons built the first brick dwelling in the township, which still stands. His sons Isaac and Timothy settled in Wilmot. Children :

i. Abijah, b. 1766, m. 1789, Lydia Balcom : Ch.: 1, Stephen, b. 1790, Sarah Gilliatt ; 2, Amelia, b. 1791, m. Michael Gilliatt ; 3, Sarah, b. 1793, m. George Harris ; 4, Samuel, b. 1795, m. Mary Messenger ; 5, Abijah, b. 1798, d. unm.; 6, Abednego, b. 1800, m. Sarah Brennan ; 7, Marsden, m. Maria Halliday : 8, Mary, m. Jacob Stark ; 9, Elizabeth, m. John Carter.

ii. Abednego, b. 1768, m. 1803, Lucy Balcom : Ch.: 1, Susanna, b. 1804, m. George Troop ; 2, Wilbert, b. 1806, m. Charlotte Rice ; 3, Timothy, b. 1808, m. — ; 4, Jonas, m. Jane Douglas ; 5, Obadiah, m. Sophia Fellows ; 6, Susan, m. — ; 7, Mary Ann, m. James Douglas ; 8, William, m. Rebecca Christopher.

iii. James, m. (1st) 1795, Hannah Young (no issue), (2nd) Mary Chute, *née* Roach.

iv. Timothy, m. 1800, Mary Ann McGregor : Ch.: 1, John, b. 1801, m.; 2, James, b. 1803, m. Mary Slocum ; 3, George Harvey, b. 1805, m. Mary Ann Young ; 4, Shadrach, b. 1809, m. Sarah Ann Amberman ; 5, Mary Ann, b. 1811, m. Prescott ; 6, Margaret Fell, b. 1813 ; 7, Helen, b, 1815 ; 8, Hannah, b. 1818, m. Israel Young ; 9, Keziah, b. 1821, d. unm.

v. Obadiah, b. 1775, m. (1st) Keziah Morse, (2nd) Elizabeth, dau. of John Bath : Ch.: 1, Abigail, m. Ambrose Dodge; (by 2nd wife): 2, John Bath, b. 1804, m. Phebe, dau. of James Eaton ; 3, Keziah, b. 1805, d. unm.; 4, Robert, b. 1809, m. Sarah, dau. of John Bent (no issue) ; Charles W., b. 1811, m. Margaret, dau. of Abner Troop ; 6, Ambrose, b. 1812, m. Horatia, dau. of James Steadman ; 7, Tamar, b. 1814, m. Jonathan Anderson ; 8, Harriet, b. 1817, m. George, son of Samuel Dodge ; 9, Obadiah, jun., b. 1822, m. Murilla, dau. of Stephen Bent ; 10, Keziah, b. 1821. Obadiah, jun., was father of J. G. Hennigar Parker, barrister.

vi. Hannah, m. William Young.

vii. Miriam, m. Jordan Ricketson.

Phinney. This family is probably descended from one of the earliest settlers of Plymouth, Mass. The ancestor is perhaps John or Robert Finney, both of whom came from England with their mother in 1638, and were the ancestors of a very numerous posterity. (See Davis' "Landmarks of Plymouth," App., p. 109.) Isaac Phinney, the progenitor of one of the families of the name in this county, was born at Barnstable, Cape Cod, in 1739, and came to Granville in 1760. About the same time came Zaccheus Phinney, who was born in 1720, said by some to have been a cousin, by others a nephew, of Isaac. He was son of Benjamin, grandson of John, great-grandson of John, and great-great-grandson of John, who was at Scituate, Mass., about 1630, and may have been the John Finney of 1638. Isaac married, 1763, Ann Thomas, of Welsh origin. Some years later Zaccheus married Lois Starratt, and removed to Paradise District, where he settled and reared his children :

i. James, m. Mary Sproule : Ch.: 1, Susan, b. 1802, m. Solomon Foster ; 2, Martha, b. 1804, m. Handley Chute ; 3, Mary Ann, b. 1806, m. Conrad ; 4, Zaccheus, b. 1808, m. Elizabeth Clark ; 5, John, b 1810, m. Helen Starratt : 6, Eleanor (or Helen), b. 1812 ; 7, Hannah, b. 1814 ; 8, Lois, b. 1815, m. William Spurr ; 9, Zeruiah, b. 1817, m. — ; 10, Elijah, b. 1819, m. Mary E. Foster ; 11, Sarah, b. 1820, m. Gilbert Hill ; 12, James, b. 1822, d. unm.

ii. Lois, m. John Armstrong.

iii. Mary, m. Caleb Schafner.

iv. Rachel, m. Abraham Bowlby.

v. Ellen, m. Calvin Marshall.

vi. Calvin, m. (1st) Maria Rumsey, (2nd) Martha Sprou'e, *née* Bowlby : Ch.: 1, William, b. 1823, m Martha Graves ; 2, Ann, b. 1827, m. Israel Bent ; 3, Benjamin, b. 1829, d. unm.; 4, Amy, b. 1831, m. Alfred Clark ; 5, Maria, b. 1834, unm.

vii. Barnabas, m. (1st) Eunice West, (2nd) Ann Bowlby : Ch.: 1, James, m. Amelia Morse ; 2, Caleb S., m. (1st) Mary Harris, (2nd) Lavinia Bent ; (3) George B., d. unm.

viii. Ann, m. James Armstrong.

Isaac Phinney, born at Barnstable in 1739, married in 1763, Ann Thomas, and settled on a lot in Granville, about midway between Bridgetown and Belleisle. His name has been given to a section of the North Mountain lying to the northward of his dwelling, the "Phinney Mountain," and in the township of Wilmot a similar section of this range of hills, once called "Ruggles' Mountain," is now called "Phinney Mountain" after one of his sons. Children :

i. Mehitable, b. 1764, m. Ruloff Ruloffson.

ii. Thomas, b. 1765, m. 1786, Mehitable Foster, who was b. 1764, d. 1858 : Ch. : 1, Isaac, b. 1787, d. 1867, m. (1st) Sarah Borden, (2nd) Cynthia Willett, *née* Troop ; 2, William, b. 1789, d. 1877, m. (1st) 1813, Rebecca Starratt, (2nd) Mary Marshall, *née* Bennett ; 3, Ann, b. 1791, d. 1794 ; 4, Cynthia, b. 1793, m. Thomas Horsfield ; 5, Elizabeth, b. 1795, d. 1796 ; 6, Ann, b 1797, m. William Walker ; 7, Walter W., b. 1799, d. 1826, unm. ; 8, Caroline, b. 1801, d. 1863, m. David Dill ; 9, Elizabeth, b. 1803, m. Daniel Felch ; 10, Phineas, b. 1808, m. Jerusha A. Foster.

iii. Lot, b. 1767, m. (1st) 1786, Elizabeth Durland, (2nd) Ann Chesley, *née* Dodge : Ch. : 1, Elijah, b. 1787, m. (1st) Amelia Messenger, (2nd) — Messenger ; 2, Zebulon, b. 1789, m. (1st) Hannah Roberts, (2nd) Abigail Lovett ; 3, Lawrence, m. (1st) 1821, Sarah Bowlby, (2nd) Caroline Morse ; 4, Stephen, b. 1792, m. Jane D'Arcy ; 5, Levi, m. (1st) Ruth Gates, (2nd) Elizabeth Marshall ; 6, John, d. unm. ; 7, Abigail, b. 1794, m. Wells Congdon ; 8, Elizabeth, m. John Stephenson ; 9, Mary, m. William Dodge (his 2nd wife) ; 10, Ann, m. John W. James.

iv. Levi, b. 1769, went to Mass., no further record.

v. Abigail, b. 1771, m. Walter Willett.

vi. Elijah, b. 1773, m. 1796, Hepzibah Chesley : Ch. : 1, Stephen A., b. 1797, d. unm. ; 2, Lot, b. 1798, d. unm. ; 3, Benjamin, m. (1st) Olivia Sangster, (2nd) Mary Burns ; 4, Margaret, m. Handley Tupper ; 5, Ann Felix McNeill ; 6, Ellen, m. Francis D'Arcy ; 7, Deidamia, m. John Shaw ; 8, Mary, m. (1st) Israel Miller, (2nd) William Shaw ; 9, Sarah, m. Benjamin Sangster ; 10, Harriet, m. William Shaw ; 11, Elijah, m. (1st) Lydia Masters, (2nd) Abigail Newcomb.

vii. Desiah, b. 1776, m. David Shaw.

Pickup. Samuel Pickup served in the 38th regiment, from which he retired in 1783, and threw in his lot with the Loyalists. At the time of his arrival here he had been married eight years, and had four children. In the muster rolls of 1784 he is said to be domiciled in the township of Annapolis, as he still was in 1792, but he probably died in Clements, where his son George, married and settled. The first two generations of the

family were devoted to farming, but the succeeding ones have found a more congenial pursuit in mercantile and shipping business. William D. Pickup, of St. John, N.B., and London, Eng., died some years ago leaving considerable fortune, while his brother Samuel carried on an extensive ship-building and shipping business at Granville Ferry for many years. The son of the latter, Samuel W. W. Pickup, Esq., of the same place, a member of the municipal council, is the present head of the family. Samuel Pickup, the Loyalist, married, 1774, Mary Brown, and had children :

i. George, b. 1775, m. 1797, Sarah Balcom, and had ch. : 1, Susan, b. 1798, d. 1833, m. ; 2, Mary, b. 1800, m. James Randall ; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1803, m. William Jones ; 4, George, d. unm.
ii. William, b. 1777, m. 1803, Sarah Timberlake.
iii. Margaret, b. 1780, m. — Morgan.
iv. Samuel, b. 1783, m. 1810, Jane Delap, and had ch. : 1, Sarah Ann, b. 1811, m. John Roop, jun. ; 2, William D., b. 1813, d. unm. in England ; 3, James, b. 1815, d. (abroad) unm. ; 4, George, b. 1817, d. unm. ; 5, Samuel, b. 1818, m. (1st) Rachel Ray, (2nd) Celina Willett.
v. James, b. 1780, d. unm.
vi. Jane, m. John Roop, sen.

Potter. The Joseph Potter who took refuge here from the dangers and evils of the revolutionary war, appears to have lived only four years after the peace of 1783. His son Joseph must have been in the valley as early as 1772, for he in that year married Mary Farnsworth, who although born in Massachusetts, had then been twelve years in the county. Benjamin was in the county in 1774. It seems probable that their father came here about 1770. (Nicholas and Robert Potter, supposed to be sons of Robert Potter, came to Lynn, Mass., about 1634. Robert being persecuted as a Quaker, moved to Rhode Island, where he founded the town of Warwick. He was probably the ancestor of Bishop Potter, of New York. Nicholas had a son Robert born before 1630. He married, Jan. 25, 1660, Ruth, sixth child of Robert and Phebe Driver, of Lynn. He had a son Robert born March 18, 1661, who married, 1682, Martha Hale, and had son Ephraim. Ephraim was the father of Joseph Potter above mentioned who was born in Marlboro,' Middlesex County, Mass., Feb. 3, 1713, married 1735, and died April 1, 1791. This I take from the "Chute Genealogies."—Ed.) He had children :

i. Mary, b. July 3, 1736.
ii. Betty, b. June 22, 1738, m. Goudey.
(2) iii. Joseph, b. Aug. 23, 1741.
iv. Robert, b. Nov. 7, 1745.
(3) v. Benjamin, b. May 9, 1749.
vi. Eben, b. Aug. 11, 1751.
vii. Sarah, b. Nov. 21, 1753.
viii. John, b. March 31, 1757.
ix. Reuben, b. Dec. 9, 1759.

2. Joseph Potter, born in Marlboro', Mass., Aug. 23, 1741, m. (1st) 1761, Zebudah Hadyn, (2nd) in Nova Scotia, Mary Farnsworth. Mr. Potter volunteered into military service in a regiment raised by Governor Shirley, and commanded by Col. Jonathan Bailey, and was at the battle of Ticonderoga, July 8, 1758, where Lord Howe was killed. (See Parkman's "Montcalm and Wolfe," p. 97). After the revolution he was active in promoting the operations of the iron mines at Clementsport. Children:

i. Aaron, b. July 11, 1762, d. young.

ii. Israel, b. July, 1763, m. Jan. 7, 1786, Mary, dau. of Capt. John Rice, and became a zealous and faithful preacher of the Gospel in the Baptist communion: Ch.: 1, Aaron, b. Sept. 3, 1786, m. Susanna, dau. of Anthony Purdy; 2, Zebudah, b. March 22, 1788, m. 1807, Josiah Spurr; 3, Rev. Israel, jun., b. Jan. 7, 1790, m. Catharine, dau. of John Ditmars; 4, John, b. Jan. 17, 1792, m. (1st) Mary, dau. of John Balcom, (2nd) Maria Marshall; 5, Joseph, b. Jan. 31, 1794, m. Margaret, dau. of John Balcom; 6, Mary, b. May 16, 1796, m. James Balcom; 7, Sarah, b. Dec., 1798, m. Josiah Spurr (his 2nd wife); 8, Fanny, b. Jan. 11, 1800; 9, James Manning, b. April 7, 1802, m. (1st) Sylvia, dau. of Benjamin Harris, (2nd) Caroline, dau of Benjamin Wilson, St. John; 10, Jacob, b. Feb. 10, 1804, m. (1st) Catharine Warne, (2nd) Maria Cook; 11, Susanna, b. Feb. 10, 1804, m. Henry Watkeys; 12, Ann, m. Rev. J. B. Cogswell; 13, Josiah Spurr, b. Feb. 22, 1810, m. (1st) Louisa, dau. of Edward Berteaux, (2nd) Naomi G. Brown, widow of Eliakim Bent; 14, Zeruiah, b. Dec. 24, 1812, m. Thomas, son of Jonathan Hurd; 15, Isaiah S., b. Oct. 9, 1814, m. Sarah A. LeCain.

iii. Mary, b. Feb. 7, 1766, m. John, son of Matthias Rice.

iv. Joseph, b. June 14, 1773, m. (1st) 1796, Lois Hadyn, (2nd) Olive, dau. of John Balcom: Ch.: 1, Warren, b. July 15, 1797, m. Martha Lewis, of Long Island, N.S.; 2, Sophia, b. March 25, 1799, m. Abel Chute; 3, Eliza, b. Aug. 7, 1801, m. John Chute (son of Thomas); 4, Louisa, b. March 3, 1804, m. Feb. 6, 1825, James Purdy; 5, Joseph Lyman, b. May 30, 1807, m. Lydia Witt; 6, William Franklin, b. Oct. 16, 1809, m. (1st) Mary Ann, dau. of William Gilliatt, (2nd) Mrs. Phebe Kennedy, *née* German; 7, Mary, b. Jan. 23, 1811, m. (1st) Asahel Howard, (2nd) Solomon, son of George Bowlby; 8, Sally, b. March 6, 1814, m. Israel, son of William Gilliatt; 9, Silas, b. Nov. 5, 1816, m. Catharine, dau. of Thomas Gilliatt.

v. Samuel, b. Dec. 9, 1774.

vi. Sarah, b. Aug. 4, 1776, m. John Dyer, and went to Marietta, Ohio.

vii. Benjamin, b. Dec. 11, 1777, m. Jane, dau. of Abraham Spurr, d. June, 1861: Ch.: 1, Eliza, b. 1799, m. Caleb Soulice (Sulis) of French Huguenot extraction; 2, Thomas, b. April 1, 1800, m. Sarah A., dau. of Jeremiah Smith, jun.; 3, John L., m. Caroline Hunt (dau. of Elijah, and sister of Rev. Abraham S.); 4, William F., b. about 1804, m. Abigail O., dau. of Capt. Simpson; 5, Henry, b. about 1807, m. Polly Rice (dau. of Silas); 6, Cynthia, b. about 1810, m. William Jones, jun.; 7, Jane, b. about 1812, m. John, son of Jeremiah Ditmars; 8, James M., b. about 1815, m. Elizabeth Sharp; 9, Edward W., b. about 1818, m. Abigail Sulis; 10, Emmeline, b. about 1822, m. George S. Sulis.

viii. Lydia, b. Oct. 29, 1779, m. 1801, William Gilliatt, jun.

ix. Franklin, b. April 28, 1781, m. (1st) Cynthia Boice, (2nd) Abigail O'Brien, (3rd) Mrs. Durkee, *née* Robbins, of Yarmouth : Ch. : 1, George Boice, b. 1807, m. Sarah Payson, was many years a J.P., and some years Warden of Digby County ; 2, Mary Ann, m. Holland Payson ; 3, Mehitable, m. Ethel Davis ; 4, William, m. Ann Welch ; 5, Joseph J., d. at sea ; 6, Edward J., m. Ellen Boudreau, an Acadian French lady, posterity in Clare ; 7, Charles J., m. Cynthia White ; 8, Franklin, m. Rachel Payson ; 9, Cynthia, m. John D. Southern ; 10, Thomas Rankin, d. in West Indies ; 11, Phebe Susan, m. Joseph Southern.

x. Martha, b. April 9, 1783, m. Thomas Rice.

xi. Susan, b. Feb. 18, 1785, m. John Gilliatt.

xii. Esther, b. March 16, 1787, m. (1st) 1809, John Armstrong, (2nd) Stephen Taylor.

3. Benjamin Potter, b. in Marlboro', Mass., May 9, 1749, m. 1773, Sarah Angier, and died in Clements, January 16, 1823. Children :

i. Hannah, b. 1774, m. John Burns.

ii. Sarah, b. 1776.

iii. Mary E., b. 1778, m. David Spinney.

iv. Joseph, b. April 5, 1781, m. 1811, Susan, dau. of Samuel Cutting, and settled in Framingham, Mass.

v. Louisa, b. July 22, 1784, m. Jonathan Milner.

vi. Asa, b. 1786.

vii. Benjamin, b. Aug. 10, 1789, m. Jan. 21, 1811, Ruth Weare, d. Nov. 27, 1850 : Ch. : 1, Phebe, b. Aug. 1811, m. John, son of Philip Lightizer ; 2, Ann, b. June 24, 1813, m. Elijah, son of James Berry ; 3, Sarah E., b. May 14, 1815, m. Edw. J. Woodworth ; 4, Asa, b. April 30, 1817, m. Jan. 1, 1847, Elizabeth, dau. of Abraham Bowlby ; 5, Emmeline, b. Sept. 7, 1819, m. Joseph Weare Robbins ; 6, Deacon Ezra, b. Oct. 26, 1821, m. Zebuda, dau. of Aaron Potter ; 7, John, b. Oct., 1823, m. Elche, dau. of Thomas Milner ; 8, Maria, b. March 24, 1825, m. John Henry Lecain ; 9, Rebecca, b. June 13, 1827, m. Aaron Potter, jun. ; 10, Benjamin, b. June 10, 1830, m. Mary, dau. of Joseph Lightizer ; 11, Ruth, b. Nov., 1835, m. John Henry Milner.

Prince. See memoir of Christopher Prince, M.P.P. He was descended in the fourth generation from John[1] Prince, b. 1610, student at Oxford, son of Rev. John, of East Shefford, Berkshire, through Thomas,[2] Job.[3] John[1] came to Cambridge, Mass, 1633, thence to Hull, and d. 1676. Christopher married (1st) Mary Foster, (2nd) Ann Payson, and had children :

i. Benjamin, a Doctor of Medicine, m. Jerusha Tupper ; went to New York.

ii. John, m. (abroad).

iii. Granville, drowned, unm.

iv. Sarah, m. Samuel Randall.

By second wife :

v. Christopher Kimball, m. Ann Johnston : Ch. : 1, Olivia Sophia, b. 1816, m. George Leavitt ; 2, Mary Ann, b. 1818, m. Abner Parsons ; 3, John Christopher, b. 1820, m. Henrietta Fairn ; 4, Sarah Ann, b. 1822, m. Isaac Chute ; 5, Benjamin, b. 1824, m. Harriet A. Bishop ; 6, Christopher Kimball, jun., b. 1826, d. 1828 ; 7, George Johnston, b. 1827, d. 1829.

vi. Elizabeth, m. (1st) William Cagney, (2nd) Edward Whitman, jun. The burial of a Wm. Prince, aged 80, is found in the church records, Annapolis, April 30, 1829.

PURDY. The Purdys of Annapolis and Digby counties came of sturdy and sterling Loyalist stock, many of the name having left a very honorable record on that side of the revolutionary struggle. (See "Sabine's Loyalists.") GABRIEL, the immediate ancestor of this branch, belonged to the Province of New York. (He was descended in the fourth generation from Francis Purdy who died at Fairfield, Conn., in 1658, through the latter's son Francis and grandson Samuel.—ED.) Two of his sons, Anthony and Josiah, were grantees in the township of Clements, erected in 1784. Gabriel, who held the commission of captain, was born in 1721, and died in 1803. He married Bethiah Miller in New York, and had children :

i. Gloriana, b. 1747, m. Dr. Azor Betts.
ii. James, b. 1749, d. 1749.
iii. Gabriel, b. 1750, d. 1752.
iv. Samuel, b. 1752, d. 1758.
v. Gabriel, b. 1755, m. Jane —.
vi. Anthony, b. 1757, m. 1784, Frances Russell : Ch : 1, Gloriana, b. 1785, d. unm.; 2, Susanna, b, 1787, m. Aaron Potter ; 3, Bethiah, b. 1790, m. John Burritt ; 4, Gabriel, b. 1792, m. Jane Ward ; 5, Ann, b. 1794, d. unm. ; 6, James Russell, b. 1799, m. (1st) Louisa Potter, (2nd) Eliza Ann Gilliatt, (3rd) Eunice Harris, *née* Morse ; 7, Elizabeth, b. 1801, d. unm. ; 8, Josiah, b. 1803, m. Hannah Witt ; 9, Mary Ann, b. 1805, m. 1824, John Charles Closson.
vii. Lewis, b. 1758, m. Sarah Robinson.
viii. Bethiah, b. 1761, m. Frederic Davoue.
xi. Josiah, b. 1764, m. probably Hannah Witt
x. Samuel, b. 1765, m. 1797, Sarah Ditmars : Ch. : 1, Bethiah, b. 1798, m. Thomas Andrews ; 2, Jane, b. 1799, d. unm. 1846; 3, Gabriel James, b. 1801, m. Jane Dodge (in Ontario); 4, Isaac Ditmars, b. 1802, m. Sarah Ann Vroom ; 5, Mary E., b. 1804, m. Henry F. Vroom ; 6, Sarah, b. 1806, d. 1808 ; 7, Henry, b. 1807, m. Letitia, dau. of Jeremiah Ditmars ; 8, John V., b. 1809, m. Mary Vroom (daughter of George); 9, William S., b. 1811, m. Harriet Augusta Ryerson ; 10, Samuel, b. 1813, died 1890, unm. ; 11, Sarah Ann, b. 1814, m. Captain Hiram Betts ; 12, Douw, 6, 1816, m. Eliza J. Burns ; 13, Frances Gloriana, b. 1817, m. Capt. William Anthony ; 14, George A., b. 1820, m. Matilda Harris ; 15, Sereno, b. 1822, m. Mary Jane, dau. of John Ditmars.
xi. Elijah, b. 1767, m. Mary Elizabeth Henrietta Schenk, d. 1837 : Ch. : 1, James Lewis, b. 1802, m. Sarah Robinson ; 2, Eleanor Ann, b. 1804, m. (1st) Richard Ruggles, jun., (2nd) Henry Fowler Vroom ; 3, Bethiah Davoue, b. 1806, m. Rev. John C. Austen ; 4, Mary Elizabeth, b. 1808, m. Abner Morse (son of Church) ; 5, Sarah, b. 1810, m. George Jefferson ; 6, Margaret, b. 1814 ; 7, Sterns, b. 1816, m. Elizabeth Dukeshire ; 8, Susanna Gloriana, b. 1817, m. James T. Hinxman ; 9, William Henry, b. 1820, d. unm. ; 10, Frances, b. 1822, m. Charles Clancy Jefferson ; 11, Robert, b. 1824, m. Susan A. Croscup.

RANDALL. The Randalls of this county are descended from John Randall, who was of Westerly, R.I., in 1684. David, son of his son Stephen, was born at Stonington, Conn., May 4, 1719; married at Preston, Conn., Nov. 6, 1739, Keziah Davidson; removed to Nova Scotia in 1766, and died in Kings County in 1784. His sons, among whom was the David in the list of capitation tax-payers, 1792, were most useful pioneer settlers wherever they went, transmitting to their posterity more than average intellectual power. Children:

i. Nathan, d. young.
ii. Keziah, m. March 4, 1743, — Murchant, in New York.
iii. Lucy, b. Feb. 4, 1744.
iv. Sarah, b. Jan. 2, 1746, m. John Newcomb.
v. David, b. in Preston, Conn., Jan. 17, 1748, m. Nov. 23, 1775, Amy, dau. of Elisha Whitney, of Hanley Mountain, living in the township of Annapolis, but finally settled in Aylesford: Ch.: 1, John, m. (1st) Ruth Gates, (2nd) Nancy Downy, (3rd) Mary Goucher; 2, Lucy, b. 1780, d. young; 3, Jonathan, b. Aug. 15, 1781, lived in Maine; 4, William D, b. Oct. 1783, m. Helen, dau. of Rev. T. H. Chipman; 5, George, d. young; 6, Lucy, m. Peter P. Chute; 7, Amy; 8, Eunice; 9, David, b. Mar. 28, 1793; 10, Olive.
vi. Jonathan, b. April 2, 1751, m. a dau. of S. Willoughby.
vii. Samuel, b. Sept. 10, 1753, m. 1783, Sarah Ann, dau. of Col. Benjamin Prince, and lived in Aylesford.
viii. Amos, b. Dec. 30, 1755, m. 1789, Susanna Chute, and lived near Bridgetown, he d. March 24, 1837: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1789, m. Benjamin Chute; 2, Nathan, b. 1791, m. Harriet Foster; 3, John, b. 1794, m. Ceretha Dexter; 4, Susanna, b. 1796, d. 1799; 5, James, b. 1798; m. Mary Pickup; 6, Thomas, b. 1800, d. in Antigonish, May 12, 1830; 7, Susanna, b. 1802, m. James Fitzmaurice; 8, Mary, b. 1805, d. unm.; 9, Theresa, b. 1807, m. Joseph Chute; 10, Benjamin, b. 1810, m. Tamar Foster; 11, Charlotte, b. 1813, m. James Fitzmaurice.
ix. Hezekiah, b. Jan. 29, 1758.
x. Elisha, b. 1760, m. Mary Atwater, *née* Tuttle, and settled at Antigonish.
xi. John, b. 1762, d. young.
xii. Nathan, b. May 7, 1764, m. 1795, Susanna, dau. of Jonas Gates, and had 10 children, among them Rev. Charles Randall, Baptist, of Weymouth, and Rev. Samuel Martin Randall.

RAY. The MOSES RAY of 1791 was probably a native of Belfast, and came to the county about the year 1764, when the Neilys, Burnses and McBrides of the north of Ireland came over. He married Ann, a daughter of Nathaniel Barnes, one of the Massachusetts settlers in Granville, and had children:

i. Jane, b. 1775, m. Joseph Foster.
ii. John, b. 1777, m. Deborah Farnsworth, and had ch.: 1, Rachel; 2, Henry, m. Lavinia Beardsley; 3, Sarah, m. John Quin; 4, William, m. Sarah Rhodes; 5, John, m. Elizabeth Wheelock (dau. of Calvin); 6, Judson, m. Lavinia Rhodes; 7, Ichabod, m. Maria Foster.

iii. Moses, b. 1781, m. and d. in Ireland, where he was said to have become rich.

iv. James, b. 1785, m. Rachel Harris (dau. of John), a native of Dublin, who served as a sergeant in a British regiment at Bunker Hill: Ch.: 1, Ann, m. Wesley Reagh; 2, Charlotte, m. Henry Baker; 3, Eliza, m. Dimock Gates; 4, Jane, m. Parker Bowlby; 5, Susan, m. John Ward; 6, Frances, m. Abraham Fales; 7, John, m. Rachel Vantassel (in N.Y.); 8, James, m. (1st) Elizabeth Sproule, (2nd) Lucinda Clark, *née* Graves.

Reagh. The word *reagh* is of Celtic origin, meaning ruler or lord, equivalent to the terminal rih, or rich, in old Gothic and Norse names. (See Ritchie.) The Latin *rex*, a king, and verb *rego*, to rule, are no doubt from the same root. Thus Castlereagh is the lord or ruler of the castle. James Reagh, a native of Belfast, in the north of Ireland, with his brothers-in-law Neily and newly wedded wife, Martha Neily (dau. of John), their sister. He bought a farm on the Ardoise Hills, on the old Halifax road, but on his death, about ten years later, his widow removed to Wilmot. His son Joseph went to one of the upper provinces. His son John married Sarah Gates, and became a resident in what is now Margaretsville, and was the faithful steward and agent of Hon. John Halliburton, who owned an extensive grant there. John Reagh had children (besides Joseph):

i. John, b. 1773, m. 1804, Sarah Gates, b. 1785: Ch.: 1, Wesley, b. 1804, m. Ann Ray; 2, Gilbert, b. 1806, m. Jane Beach; 3, Mehitable, b. 1807, m. Silas Margeson; 4, Susanna, b. 1809, m. Abraham Stronach; 5, Abraham, b. 1811, m. Sarah Tupper; 6, Mary, b. 1813, m. (1st) Rees Stronach, (2nd) John McKeown; 7, Isaac, b. 1815, m. Anne Tupper; 8, Prudence, b. 1818, m. William Clark; 9, Elizabeth, b. 1820, m. Adam Bowlby; 10, Margaret, b. 1822, m. Christopher Margeson; 11, Sarah Ann, b. 1824, m. Bayard Margeson; 12, Helen, b. 1826, m. Elias Phinney; 13, Jacob, b. 1825, d. unm.

ii. Joseph, m. Nancy Durland, *née* Hawkesworth.

iii. Polly, m. John Baker, jun.

iv. Catherine, m. Jonas Wood.

Rice. The three families bearing this name came to this county in 1760, and are derived from a common and not very remote ancestor. It is probable that Beriah Rice was uncle to John and Ebenezer, who are believed to have been cousins; for he was an old man in 1760, and died about four or five years after his settlement. He and several of his sons were grantees of the township, in which they held lots Nos. 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92 and 93, in the western end, and Nos. 2, 3 and 46 in the eastern division. These lots contained 4,672 acres of the choicest land in the county. Beriah Rice, sen., of Westboro', in the County of Worcester, was born 1702. One of his sons settled in Cape Breton. Rice, the photographic artist in the Greely polar expedition, was a descendant. Judah

Rice, his oldest son, soon after his father's death sold his farm near Bloody Creek, and removed to Lower Granville, where he built a house near Stony Beach, supposed to have been the first dwelling erected at that place, and there the greater number of his children were born. He had been married in Massachusetts, probably about 1758, and his eldest son was born there in 1759. About the beginning of the century he removed to Briar Island, and soon afterwards died at Westport. His sons, Moses, Simeon and William, settled on Briar Island. (The editor remembers some worthy old men of the name on the island, but it does not exist there now, although there are several descendants in female lines.) In his will he gave his son Stephen all his real estate in Connecticut, Massachusetts, Rhode Island and New Hampshire, which proves he was a man of some wealth before he came to Nova Scotia, His sons, Timothy, Benjamin and Joseph, remained on their lands near Bridgetown, the latter finally settling near Round Hill, where he died, 1839, at an advanced age.

The lands granted to Ebenezer Rice (who had previously been a country merchant) were in the immediate neighborhood of Saw-mill Creek, now known as Moschelle. When he came here he had been eighteen years married, his youngest child being six and his eldest, Ebenezer, being eighteen in 1760. He lived here thirty-two years, and had been married fifty years when he died. The dates of his children's births were found in an old ledger preserved by the Fairn family, the immediate ancestor of which married his daughter.

John Rice, who was born in Worcester, Mass., December 26, 1738, came here unmarried. On his marriage, May 6, 1761, to Sarah, daughter of Zephaniah and Eunice Smith, he settled on the farm of Colonel Jonathan Hoar, who owned a grant of five hundred acres on the west side of Lequille River. There John Rice's eight children were born. At Colonel Hoar's death he purchased part of the farm, of which he was succeeded in the possession by his youngest son James, who from his birth, in 1790, lived on it until his death, February 4, 1886, nearly ninety-six years. The family was descended from Edmund Rice, of Birkhamstead, Hertfordshire, England, in 1627, who came to America in 1638, and settled in Sudbury, Mass.; through Thomas, the latter's fourth child; Gershom, eighth child of Thomas; and Matthias, the fifth child of Gershom—John being the eldest son of Matthias.

1. Beriah Rice married Mary Goodnow, and had children.

(2) i. Judah, b. 1731.
ii. Asaph, b. 1733, m. Mary Morse.
iii. Timothy, b. 1740, m.
iv. Mercy, or Mary, b. 1742, m. Paul Hazeltine (no issue).
v. Rachel, b. 1744, m. Obadiah Wheelock, M.P.P.

(3) vi. Beriah, jun., b. 1746.
vii. Sarah, b. 1748, m. Elias Wheelock, J.P.
viii. Benjamin, b. 1749, m.
ix. Stephen, b. 1751 (returned to Massachusetts).
x. Joseph, b. 1753, m. Fairn.
xi. Lucy, b. 1755, m. Elkanah Morton.

2. Judah Rice, b. 1731, m. 1758, Sarah Kelly, of Leominster, Worcester County, Mass., and had children :

i. Anna, b. 1759, m. James McDormand.
ii. Simeon, b. 1761, m. Nancy Burton, and had ch.: 1, Elizabeth, m. Andrew Coggins, Westport ; probably others.
iii. Azubah, b. 1763, m. Samuel Buckman.
iv. Stephen, b. 1765, m. Jane DeWolf, of Liverpool, N.S., and had ch.: 1, Eliza Jane, d. unm.; 2, Stephenson, d. unm.
v. Moses, b. 1768, m. Hannah Morse (dau. of Abner), and had ch.: 1, Aaron, m. Ann Payson ; 2, Harriet, m. John Payson ; 3, Eunice, m. Thomas Haycock ; 4, Edward, m. Cecilia Bailey ; 5, Elizabeth Ann, m. James Titus ; 6, John, d. unm.; 7, Mary, m. Thomas Haycock ; 8. Hanley, b. 1804, m. Eliza Jane Bailey ; 9, Caroline, m. Rice Coggins ; 10, Phebe, b. 1808, m. Jacob Merrill (perhaps Morrell).
vi. Aaron, b. 1770, d. unm. in West Indies.
vii. Letitia, b. 1772, m. William Johnson, of Granville.
viii. Mary, b. 1774, m. Benjamin Berry.
ix. John, b. 1776, m. (1st) Sarah Hicks, (2nd) Susan Hicks.
x. William Pickett, b. 1776, m. Eunice Prentiss : Ch.: 1, Louisa, m. John Payson ; 2, William, m. Sarah Ann White ; 3, Mary, m. Tileston Payson ; 4, Lucy, d. unm.; 5, Julia, m. Thomas Horsefield ; 6, John, m. Charlotte Turner ; 7, Sophia, m. Benjamin Henry Ruggles ; 8, Henry, d. unm.; 9, Sarah Jane, m. Charles Bailey.
xi. Sarah, b. 1778, m. William Johnson.
xii. Lucy, b. 1781, m. Francis Ogsbury, or Augsbury, of New York.

3. Beriah Rice, Jun., b. 1746, m. (1st) in Cape Breton, Miss McSweeny, (2nd) Naomi McQuillan,* and had children :

i. Asaph, m. 1803, Nancy Elderkin, and had ch.: 1, Sidney Smith, M.D., b. 1804 ; 2, William, b. 1805, m. Mary Ann Allen ; 3, John, b. 1808, m. Lucy Hicks ; 4, Timothy, b. 1811, m. 1838, Mary Alice Newcomb ; 5, James Benjamin, b. 1813, m.; 6. Joseph Troop, b. 1818, d. unm.; 7, Asaph, b. 1821, d. unm.; 8, Jephtha, b. 1823, m. (1st) Mrs. Roundy, widow, (2nd) — Morse.
ii. Sarah, m. Joseph Troop.
iii. (Perhaps) Beriah.

1. John Rice, married (1st) May 6, 1761, Sarah, daughter of Zephaniah and Eunice Smith, (2nd) Mary, daughter of Joseph and Zebudah Potter, and had children :

(2) i. Silas, b. 1762.
ii. John, b. 1764, d. 1784.

* There may be an error here. It may have been a son of Beriah who married Naomi McQuillan

iii. Sarah, b. 1766, d. 1784.
iv. Mary, b. 1769, m. Rev. Israel Potter, d. 1849.
v. Joseph, b. 1771, d. 1784.
vi. William, b. 1774, m. Ann, dau. of Aaron Hardy, lived east side of Bear River, d. about 1834 : Ch.: 1, Ann, b. about 1800, d. unm.; 2, Stephen, m. Mercy (or Martha), dau. of George and Sarah Kniffen ; 3, William, m. Jane, dau. of Benjamin Cushing (and was father of *Benjamin*, b. about 1822, *Ambrose*, b. 1824, *Leaphy*, *Stephen*, *Charles*, and some who d. young) ; 4, James, m. Eliza McMullin, removed to Eastport ; 5, John, m. (1st) Leah, dau. of John Crouse, (2nd) Jane Sweeny ; 6, Mary, m. Ambrose, son of John Taylor, jun.
vii. Thomas, b. May, 23rd, 1779, m. about 1800, Martha Potter (dau. of Joseph) and was the first settler at Bear River village, built the first bridge there, and was a pioneer ship-builder and mill-owner, handing down these enterprises to three or four successful generations of his posterity : Ch.: 1, David, b. 1801, m. (1st) Mary, dau. of George and Sarah Kniffen, (2nd) Elizabeth, dau. of Joseph Harris, widow of William Turnbull, d. Jan. 12, 1881, left 6 children, of whom 4 sons are well-known and prominent citizens, influential in both counties ; 2, Rev. Israel, b. 1803, m. (1st) Lois Whitman, (2nd) Jan. 1, 1829, Susan, dau. of John Crouse, had 13 ch.; 3, Mary, b. 1805, m. John, son of Abraham Lent ; 4, Zebuda, b. 1807, m. Henry Alline Rice, a cousin ; 5, Deidamia, b. 1809, m. John Copeland, jun., 9 ch.; 6, Franklin, b. 1811, m. (1st) Susan, dau. of Silas Hardy, (2nd) Eliza Hardy, her sister, (3rd) Mary Amelia Rhodes, 5 ch. by 1st, and 4 by 2nd wife ; 7, Jane, b. 1814, m. Harris Morgan, 6 ch.; 8, Esther Ann, b. Nov. 25, 1816, m. William Reed (son of Samuel, of London, England) ; 9, Martha, b. April 19, 1819, m. Alfred Rice (son of John, of Silas), 8 ch.; 10, Catherine, b. March 18, 1822, m. (1st) Thomas, son of John McLearn, (2nd) Edward, son of Edwin Christopher ; 11, Silas, m. Elizabeth Hughes ; 12, Cynthia, m. Alexander Ross, of Irish descent.
viii. Joseph, b. 1787, d. 1795.
ix. James, b. near Annapolis, 1790,[1] m. (1st) Feb. 11, 1813, Dorothy, dau. of Miner Tupper, (2nd) June 18, 1818, Ann Evans, d. Feb. 14, 1886, a. 96 : Ch.: 1, John L., b. 1813, m. Eliza LeCain, d. 1882 ; 2, Mary D., b. 1815, m. Stephen Young ; 3, Elizabeth S., b. 1819, m. Arthur Ruggles (son of Richard J.), 6 ch.; 4, Charlotte A., b. 1821 ; 5, Sarah D., b. 1823, m. Joseph Potter (son of Rev. Israel) ; 6, Esther R., b. 1825, d. 1826 ; 7, William E., b. 1826, d. 1833 ; 8, Henry J., b. 1829, m. Elizabeth, dau. of Abner Morse ; 9, Rebecca W., b. 1830, m. Harvey Hennigar ; 10, Arthur S., b. 1832, d. 1833 ; 11, Catherine, b. 1835, d. 1837 ; 12, Harriet A., b. 1837.

2. Silas Rice, b. Annapolis, 1762, m. Sarah[5] Kniffen (descendant of George,[1] of Stratford, Conn., 1666, through George,[2] George,[3] George[4]). Lived in Hillsburgh, Digby Co., a highly respected farmer, d. 1853, aged 91. She d. 1856, aged 90. Children :

i. John, b. 1786, m. (1st) Mary, dau. Aaron Hardy, (2nd) Margaret Potter, wid., *née* Balcom, (3rd) Elizabeth, wid. of John Balsor Rice, *née* Chute : Ch. (by 1st wife) : 1, Alfred, b. July 11, 1819, m. Martha, dau. of Thomas and Martha (Potter) Rice ; 2, James, d. unm.; 3. Eliza, m. Samuel A. Harris ; 4, Caroline ; 5, Emily ;

(by 2nd wife): 6, John G., m. (1st) Armanilla, dau. of Richard Ruggles, (2nd) Margaret Ray; 7, Margaret, m. Charles Ingles; (by 3rd wife): 8, Henry, m.

ii. Sally, m. James, son of Joshua Banks, 3 children.

iii. George, a master mariner, m. Harriet, dau. of Richard Clarke, and had ch.: 1, Sarah Ann, m. John Yerghall, or Yarrigle; 2, Robert, m. Maria Peters; 3, Minetta, m. David Lent; 4, Isaiah, d. unm.; 5, Edward, m. Margaret Bogart.

iv. Betsey, b. 1794, m. William, son of Thomas Berry, 7 children.

v. Joseph, b. 1798, m. (1st) Sophia, dau. of Francis Miller, (2nd) Anna Brown, d. 1871: Ch.: 1, Francis, m. Louisa Purdy; 2, Wm. Henry, m. Sophia Marshall; 3, Edward, m. Bridget —; 4, Norman, m. (1st) Julia Lent, (2nd) wid. Potter, *née* Robblee; 5, Mary Ann, m. Abraham Lent; also according to the "Chute Genealogies," Rachel, Thomas, Whitefield, Sophia and Leonard, 10 in all.

vi. Mary, m. Henry, son of Benjamin and Jane Potter.

vii. Henry Alline, b. 1803, m. (1st) Zebudah, dau. of Thomas and Martha Rice, (2nd) Leonora, dau. of Deacon Aaron Chute: Ch.: 1, Lois; 2, David; 3, Alline; 4, Aaron; 5, Thomas; 6, Wesley; 7, Melissa; 8, Melvina; 9, Mary Elizabeth; 10, Alexander Ross.

viii. Dorothy, b. 1806, m. Oldham, son of James Armstrong, 2 children.

ix. Charlotte, m. Wilber, son of Abednego Parker.

x. Aaron, b. Dec. 22, 1813, m. Ann, dau. of Wm. Aymar, 4 children.

Ebenezer Rice, Jun., was descended in the seventh generation from the immigrant ancestor, Edmund,[1] through Thomas,[2] Thomas,[3] Percy,[4] Phineas,[5] Ebenezer.[6] * He was born in 1743, married a Miss Balcom in 1778, and had children:

i. Jonas, b. 1779, m. 1801, Dorothy Balsor: Ch.: 1, Samuel, b. 1802, m. (1st) Martha Watt, (2nd) Strong; 2, Hannah, b. 1804, m. (1st) John Crouse, (2nd) Jacob Dodge; 3, John, b. 1806, d. young; 4, John, b. 1810, m. Elizabeth Chute; 5, Ebenezer, b. 1812, m. Eliza Thomas; 6, Elizabeth, b. 1816, m. John Thomas.

ii. Levi, b. 1781, m. Margaret Robinson: Ch.: 1, John, m. Helen Corbitt; 2, Abner, m. Statira McCormick: 3, William, m. (1st) Jane Spurr, (2nd) Margaret Mott; 4, Benjamin, m. Helen Spurr; 5, Jonas, m. Avis Spurr; 6, Levi, m. Statira Hawkesworth; 7, Lucy Ann, m. Freeman Berteaux; 8, Susan, d. unm.; 9, Diah, m. John Sulis.

iii. Ann, b. 1783, m. Michael Spurr.

Ricketson. The name is probably an old corruption of Richardson, and of Northern origin. Abednego and Timothy came perhaps from Ricketsonville, Mass., but there is a tradition that they had lived in one of the Carolinas before they came to Nova Scotia. Timothy died of small-pox before 1770. Abednego settled about half-way between Bridgetown and Belleisle. He married in 1757, Phebe Tucker, and died 1778. Children:

* Besides, and younger than Ebenezer, jun., Ebenezer, sen., had: 2, Joseph, m. (1st) Mary Green, (2nd) Huldah Wilcox; 3, Benjamin, m. Sarah Green; 4, Anna, d. young; 5, William, d. young; 6, Sarah, m. Benjamin Fairn; 7, Elizabeth, m. John Whitman.

i. Bathsheba, b. 1758, m. 1779, Robert Sproule.
ii. Henry, b. 1760 (in N.S.), m. Mary McKenzie (no issue).
iii. Elizabeth, b. 1762, m. 1781, John Foster.
iv. Phebe, b. 1765, m. Matthew Roach.
v. Jordan, b. 1767, m. (1st) 1789, Elizabeth Foster, (2nd) 1796, Hannah Parker: Ch.: 1, Henry, b. 1790, m. 1814, Charlotte Thomas; 2, Phebe, b. 1792, m. Theodore Hill; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1795, m. Frederic Roach; 4, Miriam, b. 1801, d. unm.; 5, Abednego, b. 1804, d. unm.; 6, Jordan, b. 1806, d. 1822, unm.; 7, Charlotte, b. 1808, m. William K. Wheelock; 8, Shadrac, b. 1811, m. Sarah Hester Thorne; 9, Susanna, b. 1811, m. (1st) Jacob Lowe, (2nd) William H. Everett; 10, Ann, b. 1813, unm.; 11, James Parker, b. 1817, m. Eliza Bohaker (no issue).
vi. Catharine, b. 1770, m. Litch.
vii. Patience, b. 1770, m. George Nichols.
viii. Frederic, b. 1772, m. (1st) Charlotte McKenzie, (2nd) 1810, Mary Thomas: Ch.: 1, Walter, b. 1810, m. (1st) 1837, Selina Bent, (2nd) Ella E. Johnston; 2, Joseph Henry, b. 1813, m. — Steadman; 3, Armanilla, b. 1815, m. George Johnston; 4, Mary Ann, b. 1817, m. Edward Backman; 5, Elizabeth, d. unm.; 6, John, m. — (in Maine).
ix. Mary, b. 1775, m. Ezekiel Messenger.
x. Nancy, b. 1777, m. John Marshall.

RITCHIE. (*By the Editor.*) The name is derived from the Gothic and old German root word *rich* or *rih*, signifying *rule* or *dominion*, generally found in terminations, as *Heinrich*, from old German *heim*, *home*, translated *Henry*, and interpreted to mean "Prince, or Ruler of Home"; *Friedrich*, translated *Frederic*, "Prince of Peace"; thus sometimes in English taking the favourite English termination *y*, and in other names retaining the sound of *c*. It is often found at the beginning of a name, as in the familiar Richard, Richmond, etc. The surname Richan is another instance. The name Rich by itself is a well-known name, and no doubt the original of this name, the terminal syllable being an after-growth. Rich, MacRich, MacRichie or McRitchie, Ritchie would be the natural order of development. The family is said to have been a sept of the clan McPherson. In Ireland the name is generally spelt Richey; in modern Scotland it usually takes the *t*. JOHN RITCHIE, Esq., a native, it is supposed, of Glasgow, came to Annapolis from Boston as early as 1775, probably earlier, and perhaps one or two years before the arrival of his uncle* Andrew, whose family will be next recorded. (See memoir, p.

* There was no point on which the deceased author was more positive than on this relationship. He says, however, that they were probably natives of Ardoch, in Perthshire, and erroneously assigns Andrew's death to the year 1781. Anxious to clear up this genealogical problem in a remarkable family, I consulted Mr. William A. Ritchie, of this town, who has long familiarized himself with the traditions of the Easson, LeCain and Ritchie families, and he gives me what he has found among the descendants of Andrew Ritchie, and some of the descendants of John, naming especially as his informants the following persons, who lived contemporary with those who, it is to be supposed, would know: His grandmother, whose husband, William LeCain, was the brother of the wife of the first John Ritchie; and Andrew Stirling Ritchie, born in 1785, youngest son of the first John. The tradition he

341.) He married, as for reasons stated in the note I now believe, (1st) in 1770, when about twenty-five years old, in Edinburgh, a lady whose Christian name was Janet; (2nd) at Annapolis, not later than the summer or autumn of 1776, Alicia Maria, daughter of Francis B. LeQuesne, or LeCain, and became the father of a District Chief Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, grandfather of three Supreme Court judges (one the Chief Justice of Canada), and great-grandfather of a present Judge of our County Courts. His widow survived him twenty-seven years. They had children :

i. John Corbett, b. July 11, 1775. His "birthday" I learn from his only surviving daughter; the year from the church records of Sydney, where his burial is registered, "July 16, 1860, a. 85 years." As a young man of fine martial appearance he attracted the attention of the Duke of Kent, who induced him to accept a commission in the Royal Nova Scotia Regiment, raised in 1793, and recruited to its full strength of officers and men in the autumn of 1794. (Murdoch, Vol. 3, p. 131.) His name first appears as an officer in 1796, when the name of Anthony George Kysh, who that year sold out his commission, disappears from the list as a lieutenant, and that of John C. Ritchie appears as the junior lieutenant. In the list of officers when the regiment was disbanded in 1802 (Murdoch, Vol. 2, p. 210), his name appears the eighth in order of seventeen lieutenants, and second before that of Timothy Ruggles, who was b. March 7, 1776. Afterwards he removed to Sydney, where he is said to have been one of the lessees of the coal mines, and is described in the church records as "clerk of

gives me is that Andrew Ritchie came to Boston with wife, Margaret McNeish, and his first two children; that in due time he sent his eldest son John to Glasgow to school; that while this son was in Glasgow a brother of Andrew died, leaving a son JOHN; that the latter came out to Boston with his cousin John, and was thenceforth an inmate of his uncle Andrew's household until he attained his majority, when he went into partnership with or was set up in business by his uncle. He tells me that the late Andrew Stirling Ritchie claimed expressly to have been named in honour of his father's uncle Andrew, whose full name was Andrew Stirling, although he never used the second or its initial in practice. I may here observe that a second Christian name was seldom or never known among English-speaking people until towards the middle of the last century, and the second name, or its initial, was generally disused until very recent times. (Of this the case of Thomas Barclay, M.P.P., is an example.) The only two grandsons of Andrew Ritchie now surviving, think the latter came to Boston before the birth of his second child ; and one of them, aged 84, but with naturally excellent mental capacity entirely unimpaired, tells me one brother with a son came over with, or immediately after, Andrew, but the other nephew John, father of Judge Thomas Ritchie, came some years later. He states that he knew both the judge and A. S. Ritchie in their lifetimes, and was known by them as second cousins ; and another reliable man, son of a deceased grandson of Andrew, well remembers his father and Andrew Stirling Ritchie associating and conversing together on the footing of second cousins, grandsons of brothers. It is notable that the four children of John were given the very same names as the first four children of Andrew, sen. ; and a man born in 1788, who took an intelligent interest in the politics of the county in 1819, informed me about forty years ago that the two Thomas Ritchies who sat for the county and township respectively in 1819 were cousins. About the relationship of two prominent public men, it does not seem likely that contemporary opinion would be misinformed. But seeking to verify or disprove these traditions, I sought traces of the family in Boston, and found on the Suffolk Court files, folio 72,446, under date of February 28th, 1754, that Andrew Ritchie "from the country" (which my informant, Rev. Anson Titus, a most accomplished archæologist and genealogist, assures me is a mere *lapsus plumæ* for "from the *old* country") had

the mines," and was long a prominent citizen. He m. (1st) while stationed at Halifax, Aug. 18, 1800, Alexis, dau. of Col. Campbell, 21st regiment, (2nd) at Sydney, Nov. 18, 1807, Amelia, dau. of Hon. David Matthews, a Loyalist, Attorney-General of Cape Breton: Ch.: 1, Harriet Despard, bpd. Dec. 14, 1801, lived when young with her uncle Thomas at "The Grange," Annapolis, m. Charles Boggs, d. at Windsor, several ch.: 2, Helen Ann, bpd. Sept. 11, 1803, d. at Halifax, unm.; 3, Thomas Campbell, b. 1805, whose baptism is not recorded at Sydney, the parish being vacant for a year at that period; he went away when a young man and d. abroad; 4, Alexis Jane, bpd. July 14, 1806, d. 1837, bu. Jan. 19 (her mother d. at her birth); (by 2nd w.): 5, Caroline Maria, b. Sept. 21, bpd. Oct. 17, 1808, m. Hon. Edmund Murray Dodd, Judge of the Supreme Court (his 2nd w.), and is the mother of His Honour Edmund Murray Dodd, Judge of the County Courts, and had 9 other ch. Amelia (Matthews) Ritchie d. April 14, 1816. By second wife:*

ii. Thomas, b. Sept. 21, 1777. (See memoir of Thomas Ritchie, M.P.P., p. 394.) He m. (1st) July 27, 1807, Elizabeth, dau. of William Moreton Johnstone. She d. June (bu. 23rd), 1819, a. 32; (2nd) May 20, 1823, Elizabeth, dau. of George Best, of Pershore, County of Worcester, England, a sister of the Rector of Granville. She d. —; (3rd) Sept. 30, 1830, Anne, dau. of Col. Joseph Norman Bond, of Yarmouth: Ch.: 1, John William, b. March 26, 1808, m. Amelia, dau. of Hon. William Bruce Almon, M.D., d. 1889; 2, Thomas Andrew, b. 1810, m. Laleah Almon (sister of Amelia), d. 1889 (no issue); 3, William Johnstone, b. Oct. 28, 1813, m. (1st) Miss Strange, of St. Andrews, N.B., (2nd) Grace Vernon, dau. of Thomas L. Nicholson, Esq., of St. John, and step-dau. of Admiral W. FitzW. Owen, R.N., d. Sept. 25, 1892; 4, Laleah,

been in the town "fifteen days"; and folio 73,520, under date of October 1st, 1754, says Andrew Ritchie, with *wife* and *child*, "hath been here some time." His second child, Ann, according to her recorded age at burial, must therefore have been born between October 1st and November 24th, 1754. In 1762 *Mr.* Andrew Ritchie was appointed constable, but declined to serve. The prefixes "Mr." and "Mrs." in those days in New England were carefully confined to persons of recognized standing in the community. "Good-man" and "good-wife" denoted people of humbler rank. Finally, under date of October 26th, 1770, in Suffolk Court files, folio 89,902, we have, "John Richie and wife Jennet (Janet), last from Edinburgh, come to town with Capt. John Dunn the 21st October, 1770, in the ship *Glasco. They lodge now at Mr. Andrew Richie's*, in Marlborough Street." I cannot but conclude that these were the Andrew and John who came to Annapolis, and it would follow that John Ritchie was a widower when he married Miss LeCain, which is very likely, seeing that he was born in 1745, and men in those days very rarely indeed remained single after the age of twenty-four or twenty-five. He was no doubt son of an elder brother of Andrew, whose name, there is reason to suppose, was Thomas, and probably both he and his uncle possessed means as well as social standing. The substance of the traditions seems fully confirmed by the entries cited, and by the recorded age at death of John's son, John Corbett Ritchie, while Judge Thomas Ritchie, on the stone erected by him in honour of his mother, describes himself as *her* eldest son. The fact that no tradition of another marriage survives, and that in some lines of John's descendants the tradition of a relationship between Andrew and John is lost, is no surprise to a genealogist; but it is surprising that no obituary notice of so prominent a public man as John Ritchie can be found in Halifax or Boston papers, or the *Gentleman's Magazine* of the period. His descendants claim as the arms of the family the following, which differ from those of the Ritchies of Craigtown, granted as late as 1758, chiefly in substituting griffins' heads for lions' heads: "1st and 4th, three griffins' heads erased on a chief gules; 2nd and 3rd, a crescent between three crosses molino argent; *crest:* a unicorn's head erased; *motto:* virtute acquiritur honos."

*I find a very faint tradition in the town that John C. and Thomas were only half-brothers.

m. (1st) June 3, 1835, Charles Thomas Cunningham MacColla, Barrister, (2nd) Aug. 28, 1852, Anthony Francis Forbes, son of Capt. Anthony VanSomersill Forbes ; 5, Rev. James Johnstone, b. Feb. 9, 1816, d. Jan. 22, 1892, m. (1st) Eliza Almon (sister of Amelia), 2 sons and 2 daus., (2nd) Sophia Barr, wid., *née* Garretson, of N.Y., one son, *George W.*; 6, Elizabeth Lightenstone, b. 1817, bpd. Jan. 25, 1818, m. Nov. 19, 1840, Hon. William Johnstone Almon, Senator (bro. of Amelia) ; 7, George Wildman, b. 1819 (bpd. Oct. 3), m. Miss Jane Cudlip, of New Brunswick, d. young, several ch. ; (by 3rd wife) : 8, Alicia Maria, bpd. April 11, 1833, d. young ; 9, Joseph Norman, b. May 25, 1834, m. (1st) April 14, 1858, Anne Mary, dau. of Septimus E. Scaife, (2nd) June 7, 1877, Mary, dau. of John Cochran, Esq., Newport, (3rd), June 4, 1895, her cousin, Alice Maud, dau. of James H. Cochran, of Brooklyn, Hants County.

iii. Ann, b. Aug., 1781,* m. Daniel W. James. She was buried "March 26, 1854, a. 72."

iv. Andrew Stirling, b. probably autumn of 1785, bpd. April 23, 1786, " Andrew Ritchie, of Rosette, buried Dec. 12, 1859, a. 74 " (St. Luke's Ch. rec.) He for some years was a merchant of St. John, N.B., where he m. Margaret, dau. of Dr. Adino Paddock, and represented the city and County of St. John in the Provincial Parliament from 1821 to 1827 inclusive, his colleagues in his first term being Ward Chipman, afterwards Chief Justice, John Wilmot and Charles Simonds, all distinguished men. He then returned to Annapolis, and lived on St. George's St., lower town, but removed to Dalhousie and thence to Rosette : Ch. : 1, Margaret Paddock, m. 1853, George Gilmour ; 2, William Pagan, m. and lives in Perry, Me. ; 3, Alicia Maria, m. William Gormley ; 4, Thomas Heaborn, b 1823, d. Feb. 2, 1896, m. Jan. 29, 1852, Margaret Elizabeth Copeland, and had son *John*, b. 1854, now in railway employ, *Clarence* and others ; 5, Andrew Stirling, b. 1827, bu. Jan., 1850, a. 22, unm. ; 6, Elizabeth Johnstone, bpd. May 7, 1833, d. a. 4 years ; 7, Anna Thurgar, b. May 27, 1835, m. Sept. 11, 1876, John Wyman James, Esq. ; (probably) 8, Edward, b. May 15, 1843, m. Nov. 21, 1872, Annie, dau. of Richardson Harris, Esq.

Of the above sons of Thomas Ritchie, Hon. John W. Ritchie was Solicitor-General and M.L.C., 1864-67, member of the Colonial Conference on the union of the Provinces, 1866-67, Senator, 1867, and appointed Judge of the Supreme Court in Equity, September 28, 1870. Sir William Johnstone Ritchie practised law in St. John, N.B., was a member of the Government in 1854, Judge of Supreme Court, 1855, Chief Justice of New Brunswick, December 6, 1865, and Judge of the Supreme Court of Canada, October, 1875, and knighted after being appointed Chief Justice of Canada, January 11, 1879. Hon. Joseph Norman Ritchie was appointed Judge of the Supreme Court of Nova Scotia, September 26, 1885, and is still living.

1. Andrew Ritchie married in Scotland, Margaret McNeish, and came to Boston, Mass., with his first-born child, and therefore between 1752 and 1755. The rest of his children were born in Boston. He seems to

* See p. 164.



James J. Ritchie

Rev. James J. Ritchie,

Rector of St. Luke's, Annapolis.

have remained in Boston till September 3, 1777, when he was denounced by the "Committee of Correspondence and Safety" as being "inimical to this State;" after which he doubtless hastened* to join his nephew at Annapolis, with his daughters and young children, but the two or three eldest sons probably remained and took some part in the war on the loyal side, for in the muster rolls of Loyalists and discharged soldiers at Annapolis taken between 18th and 24th June, 1784, the following names appear as "Loyalists settled at Annapolis": Andrew, Andrew 2nd, Thomas, Matthew, James and John Ritchie, of whom Andrew, sen., and John were married, and each had a child under ten. In the Digby grant of February 20, 1784, the names Andrew Ritchie, Andrew Ritchie, jun., and Thomas Ritchie follow one another, 300 acres to Andrew, sen., and 100 to each of the others; and at some distance down there is a grant of 300 to John, which would seem to imply that Andrew, jun., and Thomas were both unmarried. The author quoted the "customs accounts" in the archives as showing that Andrew and the first John Ritchie were merchants in Annapolis as early as 1776. Andrew, sen., was a leading spirit of the town from the time of his arrival till his death, October 3, 1807. The dates of the birth of his children I get from their recorded ages at burial, except Andrew and Matthew, of whom I can find no such record, and only place Matthew after James because he is so placed when named with James in their father's will. Children:

(2) i. John, b. 1751 or 1752.
ii. Ann, b. before Nov. 24, 1754, m. William Cross ("bu. Nov. 27, 1842, a. 88").
iii. Margaret, b. about 1757, m. Francis B. LeCain, jun.
(3) iv. Andrew, b. 1760.
v. Thomas, b. about 1763. Thomas Ritchie lived on a farm, took a great interest and wielded some influence in public affairs; was elected a member for the township of Annapolis, and made a Justice of the Peace in 1819; never married; was buried May 13, 1833, aged 70, a capable and worthy public man.
vi. James, b. before May 14, 1767, bu. May 14, 1847, a. 80, m. Rebecca Messenger, probably dau. of Ebenezer[4]: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, m. James Copeland; 2, Harriet, m. Thomas Hindon; 3, John, m. — Wright, of Clements, and at one time lived at North Range, Digby County, where his brother-in-law, Stanley Wright, had settled, probably several ch.; 4, James, settled and m. in N.B.; 5, Daniel, m. Milbury (sister of Beecher M.); 6, Elliott, m. Lydia Potter, *née* DeWitt; 7, Charles, m. in N.B.; 8, Thomas, d. unm.
(4) vii. Matthew.† (His surviving son, David, aged 95, thinks Matthew should be next after Thomas.)
(5) viii. Robert, b. about 1772.

* Tradition says he escaped violence by flight in the night to Marblehead, where he got on board a British man-of-war.

† Wherever I have met any family of this surname, however spelt, I have found Matthew a favourite Christian name in it.

2. John Ritchie, born 1751, married, perhaps in Boston, Elizabeth Prescott, or Proctor, and lived on the place a little to the eastward of the Cape, now occupied by the widow of Alexander Ritchie, son of Andrew, 2nd, and near what was known as the Fred. Hardwick place. If he went to school in Glasgow, as tradition says, and came home with the other John, his cousin, he must, on his return, have been about nineteen. He died January 1, 1835, aged 83. Children :

i. Margaret, b. about 1774, m. 1791, Charles Mott.
ii. Elizabeth, b. about 1776, m. (1st) George, son of Peter Pineo, jun. (who lost his life at Allain's Creek bridge during its construction), (2nd) — Bulleye.
iii. John, b. 1779, d. 1781.
iv. Thomas, b. 1782 (?), descendants not traced. There was a Thomas Ritchie, bpd. Dec. 28, 1786, whom I cannot place, unless he is of this family.*
v. John, b. 1785, d. unm. at sea (perhaps the one bpd. Dec. 28, 1786).
vi. Rebecca, b. 1790, bpd. June 28, m. 1810, Sergeant-Major Robert Trotter, 23rd Regt. Royal Welsh Fusiliers.
vii. Mary Ann, b. 1793, bpd. March, 1794, d. unm.
viii. Robert (a son or dau. of John, name not entered, was bpd. Jan. 2, 1799), m. March 8, 1820, Martha Mossman : Ch.: 1, Ninetta, bpd. July 2, 1821 ; 2, Azelia Lonsdale, bpd. June 1, 1823. He removed to N. B., where he probably had other children.

3. Andrew Ritchie was baptized in the First Presbyterian Church, Boston, June 1, 1760, and is the only one of the children of the first Andrew whose baptismal record I can find. He married, one would judge from the dates of his children's births, after 1790, Elizabeth Card, of Windsor, or, as some traditions have it, a woman whose mother's name was Card. Perhaps she was a widow—and there is some reason for supposing he may have been previously married, and the father of James Ritchie, who lived near Yarmouth. He, after living some years at Windsor, returned to the county, and died at the house of his son Andrew at Rosette, or Moschelle, about 1828. His widow was buried April 27, 1853, aged 85. Children :

i. Matthew, b. probably 1797 (a son or dau. of Andrew R. was bpd. Jan. 14, 1798), m. June 2, 1823, Jane Ellis : Ch.: 1, Wilkinson James Exshaw, bpd. Oct. 27, 1824, m. Sept. 29, 1845, Ann Balsor, several ch.
ii. William H., b. 1798, bpd. Jan. 2, 1799, m. (1st) May 14, 1821, Mary Ritchie (dau. of Robert), (2nd) Jan. 18, 1849, Mary MacLauchlan : Ch.: 1, Jane Eliza, bpd. 1826, m. June 20, 1844, Stathern Bailey ; 2, Charles, bpd. 1826 ; (by 2nd wife) : 3, Mary, m. Joseph Copeland ; 4, Fannie, d. unm.

* The few first year's entries of Mr. Bailey's register are admittedly made after the event, and therefore defective, owing, he writes, to his not being able to procure a suitable book, and no records kept previous to his arrival can be found. He alleged that they had been taken to Halifax, and I think it likely they are in the military archives in London. A William Ritchie was baptized August, 1784.

iii. Andrew, b. about 1804, d. Nov. 28, 1851, a. 47, m. (1st) Catharine Barker, (2nd) Aug. 13, 1837, Elizabeth Evans Jefferson : Ch.: (by 1st w.) 1, Thomas, b. at Rosette, 1829, m. and lives in Yarmouth ; (by 2nd w.) 2, Adeline Alexis, m. Joseph R. Kinney, of Yarmouth, M.P.P. (his 1st w.) ; 3, John Reid. d. — ; James Henry, resides in California ; 5, Mary Reid, m. George Kinney, of Yarmouth— these last four were all baptized Nov. 21, 1844 ; 6, Cornelia, bpd. June 4, 1846, m. J. Moore Campbell McDormand ; 7, Alexander, m. Nov. 30, 1875, Sarah Harris (dau. of Alexander); 8, Andrew ; 9, Charlotte, m. William Spurr.

iv. Thomas H., b. 1806, m. June 14, 1829, Jane Copeland, and d. Dec. 25, 1852, a. 46 : Ch. : 1, Charles, b. Jan. 20, 1830, m. Dec. 30, 1855, Harriet Jefferson ; 2, John Arthur, b. Jan. 20, 1831, m. Harriet McDonald (lived at Milton, Queen's County), two sons ; 3, William, b. June 28, 1834, m. Janet McMullen (in Liverpool) ; 4, Edmund, b. March 28, 1836, m. Feb. 4, 1864, Jane Copeland (dau. of James) ; 5, Robert Miller, b. July, 3, 1838, m. (1st) Mary Hennesy, (2nd) Agnes, dau. of Sylvester Comeau, of Marshalltown ; 6, George, b. July 16, 1840, d. unm.; 7, Thomas, b. Aug., 1843, m. Maria Christopher (lived in Boston); 8, James, b. Feb. 12, 1846, m. Evaline Ritchie (dau. of Alexander, son of Andrew) ; 9, Henry Albert, b. Nov. 12, 1850, m. Elizabeth Ritchie (dau. of Thomas, son of Andrew Stirling).

iv. George, said to be younger than the preceding, m. Elizabeth Ritchie, *née* Jefferson : Ch.: 1 only, Jennie, m. Jesse Jefferson. A George Ritchie d. 1878, bu. Oct. 28, said to be "aged 74."

vi. Susan, m. John Langley.

vii. Caroline, m. William Hindon.

viii. Alexander, b. 1813, m. Nov. 21, 1844, Mary Jane Sweet. He d. 1886, a. 73. Ch.: 1, Margaret LeCain, bpd. May 17, 1846 ; 2, Fanny, b. July 31, 1850 ; 4, Evaline, b. Apr. 21, 1852, perhaps others.

4. Matthew Ritchie married Elizabeth Easson, who was born 1775. He was a master mariner. She was buried October 1, 1847, aged 72. Children :

i. Thomas Easson, b. Oct. 3, 1793, m. Nov. 11, 1821, Jane Thompson : Ch.: 1, John Edmund, b. 1824 ; 2, James, living on Virginia Road; 3, Charlotte (these two were bpd. Jan. 6, 1830); 4, Charles, bpd. Sept., 1833 ; 5, Mary Jane, bpd. Sept. 15, 1835 ; 6, Avis, bpd. Feb. 3, 1838 ; 7, Dorinda Thompson, bpd. Feb. 27, 1840 ; 8, George, bpd. Aug. 8, 1841. One dau. m. William Pinkney, one m. James Robertson.

ii. Maria, b. Aug. 15, 1795, d. 1815.

iii. John, b. Sept. 29, 1798, m. Mary Stiles : Ch.: 1, Enoch ; 2, Freeman ; and others.

iv. Andrew, b. Sept. 22, 1799, d. March, 1888, unm.

v. David Easson, b. Oct. 9, 1801, m. March 3, 1831, Catherine Ryerson : Ch.: 1, Simeon, d. unm.; 2, Sarah, m. David Easson ; 3, Charles, d. unm.; 4, Selina, m. Dec. 13, 1858, Charles Steadman ; 5, Stephen Delancey Ryerson, m Nov. 9, 1871, Fannie Sanders.

vi. Avis, b. April 10, 1804, m. Thomas R. Spurr (son of Michael 3rd).

vii. Harriet, b. March 13, 1806, m. William Wheaton.

viii. Clara, b. Jan. 6, 1807, d. unm.

ix. William, b. June 24, 1810, m. June 10, 1851, Maria Sweet : Ch.: Several daus.

x. Mary Ann, b. Sept. 22, 1813.

5. Robert Ritchie, born about 1772, married Avis Easson, was a school-teacher, and died June (bu. June 5), 1853, aged 81. Children:

i. Alexander Easson, bpd. Dec., 1799, m. Jan. 8, 1830, Elizabeth LeCain, d. Aug. 24, 1834: Ch.: 1, William A., b. April 15, 1831, m. Jan. 30, 1857, Fannie Foster (had one child *Norman F.*, died without issue); 2, John Moore Campbell, b. May 5, 1832, m. Joanna Daly (two daus., *Mary*, d., and *Bessie*).
ii. John Easson, b. Jan. 19, 1813, m. 1838, Harriet L. Mayberry; was in early life an artificer and dealer in tin and hollow ware, and later general merchant in Annapolis, and now resides at Yarmouth, a much respected citizen: Ch: 1, Sarah Bruce, b. July 10, 1839, m. Edward Brown; 2, Ann Elizabeth, b. Aug., 1840, d. young; 3, Emma Thomas, b. Nov. 8, 1842, m. Henry Noble; 4, Caroline Baker, b. Nov. 10, 1843; 5, David Alexander, b. Dec. 15, 1845, m. Emma Penaligon, of St. John, N.B., resides at Cambridge, Mass.; 6, Robert Hynman Davidson, b. Aug. 27, 1847, m. Ada Brown; 7, Maria Rogers, b. Oct. 15, 1850, m. Benjamin Patten; 8, Ella Avis, b. June 5, 1853, m. (1st) Wm. H. Kinney, (2nd) James Whitman, d. Dec. 10, 1895; 9, Bessie Dakin, b. April 2, 1857.
iii. Mary, m. William Ritchie (son of Andrew).
iv. Sarah, d. unm.
v. David, bpd. Nov. 26, 1821, d. May, 1845, aged 30, unm.
vi. Colin, bpd. Oct. 15, 1828, m. Oct. 5, 1852, Sarah Lovett, sister of John W. Lovett, Esq., of Yarmouth: Ch.: 1, John Lovett, b. Feb. 8, 1854; 2, Francis, b. May 18, 1856 (both d. young). Colin Ritchie, Rosette, d. Feb. 10, 1888.
vii. Helen, m. William LeCain.
viii. Emma Malvina, m. William Thomas.

Roach, or Roche. James Roach, or Roche, a native of Limerick, came to Annapolis as an artificer in the employ of the Board of Ordnance, and died in 1752, the year of the birth of his son John. The family is no doubt of Norman descent, and was originally de la Roche. Burke's "General Armory" gives Roach as a variation of the name Roche, and the coat of arms of the Roche family presents the heraldic play on the words *roche* (French), a *rock*, and *roach*, the name of a species of fish. Roche, of Carasse, County of Limerick, Baronet (baronetcy extinct 1801), bore arms, "Gules, three roaches, naiant ar., a bordure engr. of the last; *crest*, a rock, thereon a stork close charged on the breast, with a torteau, and holding in his dexter claw a *roach*, all ppr.; motto, *Dieu est ma roche*." Another Limerick family is mentioned with arms slightly variant. Roche, created Earl of Fermoy by James II. after his abdication, was son of a mayor of Limerick and grandfather of Sir Boyle Roche, the distinguished member of the old Irish Parliament. James Roach had children as follows, but perhaps not exactly in the order here given:

i. James, d. in the West Indies.
ii. Thomas, d. in Boston, unm., accidentally killed.
iii. A daughter, m. Marmaduke Lamont, an English gentleman, Clerk of the Cheque to the Board of Ordnance, who returned with her to England.
(2) iv. John, b. 1752.

2. JOHN ROACH, born 1752, died August 31, 1828, married Lydia Frost, and had children :

i. Margaret, b. Dec. 22, 1775, d. unm.
ii. James, b. Jan. 4, 1778, m. Feb. 27, 1819, Elizabeth Tomlinson : Ch.: 1, Lydia Maria, b. Jan. 17, 1820, m. Jan. 6, 1839, Thomas Burton ; 2, Martha Ann, b. Sept. 12, 1822, m. Richard Hughes ; 3, William Henry, b. Aug. 15, 1824, m. May 13, 1849, Mary Biggar ; 4, Florella Jane, b. July 6, 1827, m. William Hawke.
iii. Elizabeth, b. Jan. 24, 1780, m. Michael Spurr (son of Abram).
iv. John, b. Nov. 5, 1782, d. unm.
v. William Henry (see memoir of WILLIAM H. ROACH, M.P.P.), b. Jan. 12, 1784, m. 1812, Mary Ann, dau. of Major Robert Timpany, a distinguished Loyalist : Ch.: 1, Charlotte Isabel, b. Sept., 1813, d. unm.; 2, Mary Ann, b. 1815, m. — Parkman; 3, Lydia ; 4, Sarah Jane, b. Dec. 28, 1819, m. G. A. Seymour Crichton, of Halifax; 5, Robert Timpany, b. Feb. 25, 1823. Rev. ROBERT TIMPANY ROCHE, D.D., who now resides at Eatontown, New Jersey, m. Jan. 12, 1852, at Charlottetown, P.E.I., Sara, 3rd dau. of James Barden Palmer, Attorney-General of Prince Edward Island, and has five ch., one of whom, *Rev. Hibbert Henry Patrick Roche*, Rector of Long Branch, N.J., is a rising minister of the Protestant Episcopal Church of the United States.
vi. Mary Ann, b. March 28, 1787, d. unm.
vii. Martha Maria, b. Oct. 27, 1789, m. Anthony Hannan, Esq., J.P.
viii. Frederic Lamont, b. Dec. 18, 1792, d. aged 15.

ROACH. PATRICK ROACH, the progenitor of this family, came with the north of Ireland families—Burns, Dunn, McBride, Neily and others —either unmarried or married shortly before his emigration, for, according to the census of 1770, all his children were born here. He settled first in Granville, but his eldest son, Matthew, on his marriage, removed to Wilmot. His son James married and settled in Annapolis, where he died, leaving an only child, a son, who died in 1888, in Massachusetts, at an advanced age, leaving descendants there and in this county. His remaining son, Patrick, moved, before the beginning of the century, to the United States. He had children :

i. Martha, b. 1763, m. — Dalton.
(2) ii. Matthew, b. 1764.
(3) iii. James, b. 1765, m. Nancy Fairn.
iv. Mary, b. 1767, d. same year.
v. Patrick, b. 1768, m.
vi. Hannah, b. 1773.

2. MATTHEW ROACH, b. 1764, m. 1785, Phebe Ricketson : Children :

i. James, b. 1786, m. Phebe Foster: Ch.: 1, Eliza, m. Joseph Fleming ; 2, William H., m. Isabella VanBuskirk ; 3, Mary Ann, m. Parker Morse ; 4, Charlotte, m. Thomas Orpin , 5, James Grandison, m. (1st) Priscilla Parker, (2nd) Lucy Freeman ; 6, Abraham, d. unm.; 7, Mary Lavinia, m. Thomas Colley ; 8, John Frederic, m. Hannah Freeman ; 9, Susan, m. Henry VanBuskirk.
ii. Mary, b. 1787, m. (1st) Silas Chute, (2nd) James Parker.
iii. Frederick, b. 1789, m. 1817, Elizabeth Ricketson (dau. of Jordan): Ch.: 1, Mary Elizabeth, b. 1818 ; 2, William Henry, b. 1821 ;

3, Israel, b. 1823; 4, Louisa, b. 1827; 5, James E., b. 1831; 6, Eber, b. 1834; 7, Susan Ann, b. 1836.

iv. Zebina, b. 1791, m. 1812, Francis Neily: Ch.: 1, William Marsden, b. 1815, m. Caroline Masters; 2, Hannah Parker, b. 1817, m. Ingerson Spinney; 3, Mary, b. 1819, d. 1821; 4, John Neily, b. 1821, m. Mary Jane Reagh; 5, Mary Jane, b. 1823, m. William Foster; 6, James Parker, b. 1825, m. Hannah A. Chute; 7, Isaac, b. 1827, m. Elizabeth Newcomb; 8, Sarah Ann, b. 1830, m. Samuel Spinney; 9, Robert, d. unm.; 10, Phebe, d. unm.; 11, George, m. Elizabeth Rhodes.

v. John, b. 1793, m. Jerusha West, *née* Delong (no issue).

vi. Abraham, b. 1795, d. unm.

viii. Isaac, m. Mercy Welton: Ch.: 1, Gilbert, m. Lucy Smith; 2, George, m. Susan Gates; 3, Gracina, m. John Anderson; 4, Ezekiel, m. Mary Whooten; 5, Isaac, d. unm.

viii. Warren, d. unm.

ix. Walter, d. unm.

x. Patrick, m. (1st) Sarah Whitman, (2nd) Nancy Baker, *née* Churchill: Ch.: 1, Phebe Ann, m. Robert Patten; 2, Levi, d. at sea, unm.; (by 2nd wife): 3, Matthew, d. unm.; 4, Benjamin, m.

xi. Phebe.

xii. Miriam, d. unm.

3. James Roach, b. 1765, m. Nancy Fairn, and had child:

i. James, m. Eliza Schofield: Ch.: 1, James Henry, m. Mary E. Woodbury; 2, Caroline, m. David D. Tupper; 3, Charles Edward, d. unm.; 4, Benjamin, m. Margaret Pollock; 5, William H., m. Mary D. Whitman; 6, George Frederick, m. —— (no issue); 7, Eliza, d. unm.

Robblee. By family tradition, the Robblees are of Scotch origin, but more probably the name is an Anglified form of the German Rapalye. (Sabine mentions several prominent Loyalists of New York named Rapalje and Rapelje.—Ed.) This name when spoken sounds to English ears very like Rabbalee, from which the transition to Robblee is easy. John Robblee came with other Loyalists to Clements, where so many of Dutch and German extraction settled, bringing with him his eldest son, Thomas. Before 1800 the latter was in Granville, on a farm which comprised the most interesting spot, historically, in the Dominion, perhaps on the continent—the site of Demonts' first fort and settlement, and of the Scotch settlers of 1621-1630; and when he took possession the outlines of the old Scotch works were plainly visible. A dwelling house, built twenty to thirty years ago, stands on the very spot where Champlain's map of 1605 shows the bakery stood. In digging the cellar, a bar of iron, such as would be used to support the arch of an oven, several cannon-balls and shells, and fire-bricks of foreign make were unearthed. John's sons, William and Joseph, went to New Brunswick and Prince Edward Island, and founded families in those provinces. Thomas Robblee, son of Joseph, adopted by his uncle Thomas, who had no children, was born 1774, died 1854, married 1798, Hannah Delap, born 1780, died 1877. Children:

i. John, b. 1799, m. Eliza Olivia Harris, of Horton : Ch.: 1, Judson, m. Sybil Croscup ; 2, Rebecca, m. John Littlewood ; 3, Mary, m. George Randall ; 4, Pamela, m. James Bogart ; 5, Lucilla, m. (1st) Charles Potter, (2nd) Norman Rice ; 6, John, m. Frances Covert ; 7, Emma, m. Robert Parker ; 8, Thomas, d. unm.; 9, Kirtland, d. unm.; 10, Hannah, m. Silas Littlewood.
ii. James, b. 1801, d. unm.
iii. Thomas, b. 1803, m. Hannah Elizabeth Croscup: Ch.: 1, Mary, d. unm.; 2, William, m. Susan Leitch ; 3, Sarah, m. John McGibbon ; 4, Moses, m. Anna Baxter ; 5, Atalanta Grace, m. Frederic Anderson ; 6, Frank, m. Mary Jane Burney.
iv. Mary, b. 1805, m. Edward, s. of Rev. Edward Harris.
v. Harris, b. 1808, m. Eunice Eaton : Ch.: 1, Thomas, m. (1st) Mary S. Webber, (2nd) Gertrude Carvell; 2, Jacob, m. Minnie Wallace; 3, Sarah, unm.; 4, Elizabeth, m. Richard Bennett ; 5, Hannah, m. Rev. William Rideout ; 6, Eunice, m. William Skinner Fisher ; 7, William, m. Sarah Miller.
vi. Ann, b. 1810, m. William H. Hall.
vii. Susan, b. 1813, m. Joseph Reid Hall.
viii. Joseph, b. 1815, m. Lucy Hall (dau. of Henry): Ch.: 1, Stephen H., m. Annabel Chute ; 2, James, d. unm.; 3, Watson, d. unm.; 4, Julia, m. Joseph Croscup ; 5, Harriet.
ix. Judson, b. 1815, m. Sybil Croscup.
x. Elizabeth, b. 1819, m. James Townshend Thorne.
xi. William, b. 1821, d. unm.
xii. Sarah, b. 1825, m. Stephen B. Troop.

Roop. John Roop, probably of German descent, came to this county among the Loyalists, had considerable family, and left a large posterity, especially in Digby County. One of his sons, John Roop, jun., m. (1st) Mary Ditmars, (2nd) Oct. 12, 1826, Jane Pickup. Children :

1, John, b. 1808, m. Sarah Ann Pickup ; 2, Catharine, b. 1809, m. James Hains ; 3, Margaret, b. 1812, m. Gilbert Parker; 4, Douw Ditmars, b. 1814, m.; 5, Sarah, b. 1815, m. — Bacon; 6, Mary, b. 1817, m. Michael Sypher; 7, Ann, b. 1819, m. Jan. 9, 1840, James Merritt ; 8, Christopher, b. 1821, m. (U.S.A.); 9, Isaac, b. 1823, m. (U.S.A.) ; (by 2nd wife) 10, William, m. Christina Munro; 11, Susan, m. Israel Potter ; 12, Olivia, m. Cornelius Letteney ; 13, Joseph, m. Asenath Charlton ; 14, James, m. Lemma Potter ; 15, Melissa, m. Harris Jefferson ; 16, Louisa, m. Abraham Potter.

Ruggles. The name de Ruggele and de Ruggeley can be found in England as a name of local note early in the thirteenth century, and of more general distinction in the next century. The immigrant ancestor of the American family was descended from Thomas Ruggle, who was of Sudbury, Suffolk County, in 1547, and who had, among other sons, a son Nicholas, who had a son Thomas. The name of the wife of this Thomas is not known; but he removed to Nazing, Essex. He had two sons, Thomas and John, who settled in Roxbury, Mass., in 1637 and 1635 respectively, and no doubt other children. This Thomas, son of Nicholas, and grandson of Thomas of Sudbury, Suffolk, has been erroneously confounded with another Thomas, of Lavenham, Suffolk, who m. Margaret

Whatlock, and had eight children, and was a grandson of William, a brother of the Thomas first mentioned, and therefore a second cousin to the father of the two immigrant ancestors of the New England family. Thomas, the immigrant to Roxbury, was born in 1584 ; had a son Samuel, b. 1629, m. (1st) Hannah, dau. of George Fowle, of Charlestown, (2nd) Ann, dau. of Henry and Ann Bright, of Watertown. He was a prominent citizen and public officer in Roxbury, and so was his son Samuel, b. 1658, by his first wife. Samuel (the younger) m. Martha Woodbridge (dau. of Rev. John Woodbridge, and granddaughter of Rev. John Woodbridge, of Wiltshire, who came with his uncle, Rev. Thomas Parker, first minister in Newbury), and became the father of Rev. Timothy Ruggles, and grandfather of Brigadier-General Timothy Ruggles, who was born October 11, 1711, graduated at Harvard 1732, m. Bathsheba, only daughter of Melatiah Bourne, and widow of William Newcomb, and thus there is a kinship between the Ruggles family of Annapolis County, and the Holdsworths of Digby County, whose Loyalist ancestor married a Miss Bourne.—[Ed.]

A sketch of the history and services of this distinguished man may be appropriately introduced by quoting the following description of the English home of his ancestors in Essex, from the New England Historical and Genealogical Register for April, 1874 :

General Timothy Ruggles. "The rural village of Nazing,* in Essex, the 'home,' as it has been called by an American author, 'of our fathers,' around which were clustered the affections and remembrances of their youth, comprises the north-west corner of Waltham half hundred. There is a peculiar feature about this quiet little village and its surroundings, which is strikingly characteristic of the many rustic homesteads and picturesque spots for which old England is noted. One might imagine from the great number of gable-fronted cottages, with low thatched roofs and overhanging eaves that abound in Nazing upland especially, and the distance it is from any line of rail, that it had undergone but little change during the past three hundred years.

"The old parish church is situated on the side of a hill overlooking part of Hertfordshire and Middlesex, and bounded on the east by the River Lea, and on the west and south by Waltham Abbey and Epping. It consists of a chancel, nave and north aisle, with a square embattled tower containing five bells. The body and aisle are divided by four pointed arches, rising in circular clustered columns. Behind the first column, which is apparently hollow, is a small door, leading by a narrow winding stairs to an aperture, in front of the chancel, sufficiently large to exhibit a person nearly at full length, to the congregation. This was, no doubt, the entrance into the roód-loft ; but whether it was intended originally as a place of penance is not certainly known. It is evident, however, that at no remote period it was used for

* From Nœre or Nare—Nose.

purposes of general thanksgiving, as on a wooden tablet beneath the aperture is inscribed the one hundred and sixteenth Psalm, 'I will pay my vows unto the Lord in the sight of all the people.'

"This church was appropriated by King Harold to his then newly founded church in Waltham, and was first supplied by the Canons of Waltham, or by persons appointed by them."

It was from this historic and interesting village that the progenitors of the Ruggles family emigrated to America. Frequent mention is made of the name in old Judge Samuel Sewell's diary, 1680-1720. In 1708, under date December 16th, on the occasion of the death of a member of his family, he says: "I go to the Governor's (Dudley*) and speak about [pall] bearers,—he leaves it to me; so does my son. As I come home I speak for Sir† Ruggles—Timothy, son of Martha Woodbridge, my ancient acquaintance and townsman," etc.

The name Timothy has continued to designate the eldest son of the eldest son, in that branch of the family to the present time—Timothy Dwight Ruggles, of Bridgetown, barrister-at-law, Q.C., being the sixth who in successive generations has borne it. His son Timothy marks the seventh generation.

The first Timothy and his sisters Hannah and Patience Ruggles were admitted to full communion in 1709, his sister Martha in 1710, and Sarah in 1711.‡

Joseph Ruggles, whom I take to be him who afterwards settled in Aylesford, owned two negro servants in 1768, whose names were Ishmael and Venus. A curious method was adopted by members of the Ruggles family, 1675-1690, to distinguish the three existing Johns,—the terms major, minor and middle being used for that purpose.

To the Ruggleses and Paysons—who also came to America in the same ship,§ during the first generation, was applied the name of the "Nazing Christians." Thomas Ruggles was the first of these to die, having departed this life November 18th, 1644.

The fact that the "Roxbury Land Records" are filled with the names of this family, proves beyond dispute their early and continuous residence in that district.

The Rev. Timothy Ruggles, minister of Rochester, Mass., having first graduated in Harvard, being the second of the name to have achieved that honour, married and was ordained about the same time, and his first child—the man of whom we are writing—was born in that town on October 11th, 1711. The long ministry of this gentleman among the good people of Rochester bears ample testimony of his diligence and

* Governor Dudley was, I think, Sewell's son-in-law.

† "Sir" seems to have been a title given to Harvard students in their second year.

‡ These facts have been gleaned from parish records.

§ Lists of Emigrants by Camden Totten. Leg. Lib.

faithfulness as a pastor, and affords undoubted proof of the regard and esteem in which he was held by those whom he served. Though his life seems to have been a busy one, he is said to have found time to superintend the earlier education of his young son, the future lawyer, statesman and general, who was thus fitted at an early age to pass the matriculation examinations necessary to his entrance upon his college course. He graduated in 1732, being then just twenty-one years of age, and on leaving college he at once proceeded to the study of the law. He had not been at the Bar long before he was elected to a seat in the Massachusetts Assembly, in which he was instrumental in the passage of an Act, still in force, to prohibit sheriffs filling writs. In his professional, as well as in his legislative capacity, he soon gave evidence of a degree of ability far above mediocrity, and it was not a very long time before he found himself occupying a high place at the Bar of his native province, and taking high rank among the most fluent, finished and forcible speakers in the halls of its legislature.

Speaking of the estimation in which he was held in his profession, a writer of some note tells us: "His reputation was so great that he was early and frequently employed in the adjoining counties of Barnstable and Bristol, and was the principal antagonist of Colonel Otis in causes of importance."* About this time (1740-1745) he removed from Rochester to Sandwich, where he prosecuted his profession with constantly increasing reputation until 1757, when he was made a Justice in the Court of Common Pleas. Five years later he was gazetted Chief Justice in that court, a place which he held acceptably until the beginning of that great revolution which ultimately drove him into exile and comparative poverty. The Seven Years' War, 1756-1763, which was terminated by the treaty of Hubertsburg and of Paris in the latter year, raged violently on this continent; the old colonies, particularly Massachusetts, lending every possible aid to the Mother Country in her attempts to curb or destroy the power of France in America. In 1756, and almost immediately before Mr. Ruggles' appointment to the Bench, he accepted a colonel's commission in the forces raised by his native province, for service on the frontiers of Canada. In the campaign which followed, he served under the command of Sir William Johnson, and did good service in the expedition against Crown Point, and in September of the same year, he was second in command under that leader at the battle of Lake George, in which the French under Baron Dieskau, met a signal defeat, after very severe and obstinate fighting, in which he distinguished himself for coolness, courage and ability; and so highly were his services esteemed on that occasion, that he was promoted to the position of General of Brigade, and placed under the command of the Commander-

* G. A. Ward in *Curwen's Journal*, London, 1842.

in-chief. In 1758 he commanded the third division of the provincial troops under Abercrombie, in the unsuccessful attack upon Ticonderoga, which was defended by Montcalm, who resisted all the efforts of the English, defeating them with a loss of 550 killed, and nearly 1,400 wounded. Brigadier Ruggles also served with distinction and credit in the campaigns of 1759-1760, under Amherst. In the winter of 1762, while the belligerent forces on both sides were in winter-quarters, he had the honour to be chosen Speaker of the House of Representatives. The conduct of Mr. Ruggles as a military commander has been highly praised by most competent judges. The writer, whom I have before quoted, and who was in a position to be well informed, says on this head: "Few men in the Province were more distinguished, and few more severely dealt with in the bitter controversies preceding the revolution; as a military officer he was distinguished for cool bravery and excellent judgment and science in the art of war, and no provincial officer was held in higher esteem for those qualities. His appearance was commanding and dignified, being much above the common size; his wit was ready and brilliant; his mind clear, comprehensive and penetrating; his judgment was profound and his knowledge extensive; his abilities as a public speaker placed him among the first of the day; and had he been so fortunate as to have embraced the popular sentiments of the times, there is no doubt he would have ranked among the leading characters of the revolution."* This is very high praise; but there is certainly no doubt of its being well deserved, and has additional weight, coming as it does from one who had been "so fortunate as to have adopted the popular sentiment of the times."

The war having terminated in 1760, his military services were no longer required, and he at once exchanged his military uniform for his barrister's gown and resumed the practice of his profession. About this time, 1753, he removed from Sandwich to Hardwick, where he built a dwelling, so substantial that it is said to subsist to the present day. During the following eight or ten years, I have only occasional glimpses of him. I have already said that he was Speaker of the House of Representatives in 1762, and following years, and that he was at the same time Chief Justice in the Common Pleas.† As the disputes and distractions which were ultimately to culminate in war, grew to volume and virulence, and the people began to take sides, there was no doubt as to the party to which Mr. Ruggles intended to attach himself. By

* It has been said by men competent to judge that he would have been appointed Commander-in-chief, and been the first President of the United States in lieu of Washington.—[Ed.]

† About this time he was appointed "Surveyor-General of the King's Forests," "an office of profit attended with little labour." This was a reward for his military services.

pen and tongue, in the halls of the Legislature, and on the platform he declared against rebellion and bloodshed. Says a writer of the period: "In consequence of the grievous exactions of the British Government, delegates were chosen by the Legislature to meet the delegates from the other colonies, at New York, to seek out some public relief from immediate and threatened evils by a representation of their sufferings to the king and Parliament." Mr. Ruggles was chosen as one of the delegates, on the part of Massachusetts, and was also elected "President of that celebrated Congress of distinguished men from nine of the colonies." He openly dissented from the resolves passed by the Congress, over whose proceedings he presided, and thus not only incurred their displeasure, but the anger of the Assembly which had chosen him to represent them as a delegate, for we are told that he "was censured by the House of Representatives, and reprimanded by the Speaker in his place."

When the appeal to arms had been finally decided on by the American people, the popular excitement was at a fearful height, and all those who had counselled moderation, either in demand or action, were declared to be enemies to their country and traitors to the cause of liberty, and as such worthy of death. No man in Massachusetts was regarded as so inimical to the cause of rebellion as General Ruggles, whose known and recognized ability, great energy, and unflinching courage made him an object of fear as well as dislike; and, to crown his unpopularity, he was made a *Mandamus* Councillor, a position which he accepted at the hands of the Crown, and for which he qualified himself in due form, notwithstanding all the influences brought to bear upon him to prevent him doing so. This last fact was deemed a defiance, on his part, of the powers of the rebels, and they proceeded to denounce him as a malignant, and openly threatened his life. In consequence of this violence he was forced, with his family, and such of his neighbours as remained loyal to the Mother Country, to seek safety and refuge with the British forces in Boston. On the evacuation of that city, Mr. Ruggles went with it, and was I believe in Long Island during its operations against the rebel forces in that direction, but I have failed to discover many particulars concerning his life and doings at this time. In 1783 I find him an exile from his native province in his old age, but still as vigorous as he was loyal. He was living in the county in that year, and at Digby or Annapolis. He had made an application for a grant of lands in that portion of the Province, in the early part of the year, as will more fully appear from the letter which the Surveyor-General addressed to him under date July 2nd in that year.

Mr. Morris' letter was as follows:

"Sir,—I am directed by Governor Parr to assure you he will pay every attention to your application for *ten thousand* acres of land, being fully convinced of your merit, and sensible of the many misfortunes you have suffered in the late unhappy

contest. He is apprehensive that the lands you mention will, in some degree, interfere with the present settlement forming there, and has directed me to point out other land for you. I therefore beg leave to recommend land to the eastward of Granville, and to the northward of the farms settled in Wilmot; that is to say, between those farms and the Bay of Fundy. This land is said by those who know it best, to be among the finest in the Province, and the increasing settlement in Wilmot (adds to) the value of it every day.

"I hope, after inquiring into the matter, you will accept of a location in some part of this tract, or in some of the lands on the back of Annapolis, which have been represented to be extremely good, and which have been applied for by many persons, but not yet assigned to any one. Mr. Williams has a grant of 1,500 acres somewhere thereabouts; he will give you every necessary information in these matters. I have to intreat the favour of a line from you in answer as soon as you can be informed in which tract to choose. I have the honour to be," etc., etc.

On the 19th of the same month, the Surveyor-General having received a reply from General Ruggles, to the foregoing letter, wrote to him again in the terms following:

"Sir,—I have been honoured with the favour of your letter, delivered me by Colonel Small, and have since had frequent opportunities of talking with the Governor upon your particular situation, and the great desire you have to procure something permanent for your family. He has given me in writing the following directions—to assure General Ruggles, and all other Loyalists applying for land, that he wishes to accommodate all of them as much as is in his power, but from the vast numbers who have already come, and are continuously coming to settle in the Province, he finds it indispensably necessary to postpone any further arrangement until he receives His Majesty's instructions upon the subject. Agreeing with you, that 'the primary object of Government is, and ought to be, the settling of the colony, and next to that, to extend donations to such as have suffered most,' he has directed me to assure you that as soon as His Majesty's pleasure is made known in respect to these matters, that you are the foremost to receive what favour and indulgence it may be in his power to give.

"Messrs. Botsford, Hauser and Cummings were recommended to Sir Andrew Hammond by General Carleton, in the strongest terms possible, as agents for a number of Loyalists who came with them, and others that were to come, and intreated Sir Andrew to exert himself in their behalf. In consequence of this recommendation, and a repetition of it to Governor Parr, the Government upon their recommendation gave me orders—a copy of which I enclose you—by which you will see that all the land from Annapolis to St. Mary's Bay and round the Bay to the Cape and to Yarmouth, before unappropriated, were desired to be laid out in fifty acre farm lots, and proper town plots, for the reception of the Loyalists. Under this order my deputies* are at present acting. For these reasons I was induced to take the liberty, with the Governor's approbation, to recommend other lands to you; and I beg leave again to assure you, sir, that either of the tracts I recommended are far superior lands to any in the above districts, and all persons of any knowledge of the country, and of these tracts in particular, will join me in this opinion. There have been many applications for that back of Annapolis, in particular, by our old

* His deputies in this county at this time were Thomas Millidge, Phineas Millidge, John Harris, Joseph Ruggles, John Morrison and one or two others, whose names have escaped me.

inhabitants, who have frequent opportunities of searching out the best. I hope, therefore, you will, after having a share for yourself and family, accept of the remainder in one of those places proposed, or in any other part of the Province where it could be located to your advantage, without interfering with the settlements now going on.

"I have received a letter from Mr. Watson * and other friends in New York, recommending you in a particular manner, and our worthy friend, Colonel Small, has said so much on your behalf that I hold myself bound by every tie of friendship and of honour, to assist you in my professional line to the utmost of my power; and you may rest assured, most worthy sir, that you and your family shall claim my particular attention to their interests, and that it was with this sentiment I first did myself the honour to write you on this subject. I have the honour to be, sir, with the highest regard and esteem," etc., etc.†

General Ruggles finally determined to accept his grant in the township of Wilmot, and it is probable, though not certain, that he commenced clearing his lands in 1784. The spot he selected for his new dwelling house was on the face of and near to the top of the North Mountain, which during his lifetime and for a few years afterwards bore the name of the "Ruggles Mountain"; but after the commencement of the century, and to this day it has been better known as the "Phinney Mountain," from the late Lot Phinney, who became the purchaser of the property on the occasion of its sale on the death of Mr. Ruggles.

I regret that the Morris-Ruggles correspondence is so meagre and that the letters of the latter are entirely wanting. I am induced to add one more short note of Mr. Morris to the General, because it contains references of interest. Under date of September 14th, 1783, he says: "I have had the honour to receive your favour of the 2nd inst., enclosing a sketch of the lands you wish to obtain. The 1,300 acres is pre-engaged —all the other tracts may be granted you, and in lieu of this engaged I shall, in the description of the grant, extend the western line of the oblong square to the line of Arbuthnot's, and the western boundary to the Bay of Fundy, which will then contain 10,000 acres, with ample allowances. . . . The king's fine of ten shillings for every hundred acres, I suppose, will be remitted. I will make a return of your grant as soon as I hear that you approve of what I now propose."

In the following year the grant was issued, and the undismayed grantee commenced a labour at the age of more than seventy years which few, if any, of the young men of to-day would voluntarily undertake. The work of chopping down the forests and clearing the lands for crops, and of preparation for building went on simultaneously and rapidly under his direction. Two young men,‡ Stronach and Fales, were engaged to work with him for a limited number of years and to receive their pay in

* Afterward Sir Brooke Watson, Lord Mayor of London.

† Letter Book of the Hon. Chas. Morris for 1783, in N. S. Archives.

‡ See Stronach and Fales Genealogies.

land. They did their work, and he paid them as agreed upon, and their descendants are now the owners and occupiers of many a fair home in the beautiful township of Wilmot. It was the hands of these men that excavated the noble cellar over which the old Loyalist erected his new mansion,* their hands it was which prepared the land on which an orchard of apple trees was soon planted, and it was their hands also which planted it. Their orders were to dig this piece of ground—say, about an acre—three feet deep, and to throw out every root and stone from it. The trees were brought from Massachusetts, and when planted formed the first orchard in that section of the country. Some of the trees, I believe, are still in bearing. Nearly south from the position of the house is a deep gulch in the mountain side, formed, probably, by the gradual washing away of a wedge of magnesian limestone which once filled it. In this vault, as it was generally called, and which was sheltered on all sides except the south, Mr. Ruggles introduced many exotic plants, among others, peaches, grapes and quinces, and more than one black walnut tree.

Not much remains to be told concerning him, and I shall now glance briefly toward members of his immediate family. His four daughters were married before the Revolution broke out, and as their husbands probably preferred returning to their homes and property to the preservation of their loyalty at the expense of the loss of both, they never came to this colony. Three of his sons followed him into exile and settled in this county. These were Timothy, John and Richard, two of whom, Timothy and John, are known to have been married before their advent to the county.

General Ruggles was afflicted with hernia, and tradition affirms that about the beginning of August, 1795, he accompanied some visiting friends to his "vault" garden before alluded to, and that in clambering up its steep sides he so aggravated the disease that it terminated his life four days afterwards, at the advanced age of eighty years. I conclude this memoir of the famous old Loyalist by copying the concluding part of the obituary notice of him which appeared in the *Royal Gazette* in August, 1795, and which was presumably written by the late Rev. John Wiswall, who officiated at his obsequies: "The idea that his advanced age would not permit him to reap the fruit of his labours never dampened the spirit of improvement by which he was, in a most eminent degree, animated; and the district of country in which he lived will long feel the benefits resulting from the liberal exertions he made to advance the agricultural interests of the Province." It may not be without use to remark that for much the greater part of his life he ate no animal food and drank no

* This cellar was said to be nine feet in height, and the steps leading to it were of dressed Quincy granite, brought from Boston.

spirituous or fermented liquors, small beer excepted, and that he enjoyed health to his advanced age.

He was buried to the eastward of the chancel of the (then new) church, lately known as the "Pine Grove Church," in central Wilmot—a church toward the erection of which he is said to have been a considerable contributor. No monument records his name or services, though perhaps few men have better deserved one. May some of his descendants yet cause one to be erected over his grave as a testimony of their appreciation of a most worthy and honourable ancestor.

The General had children :

i. Martha, b. Aug. 10, 1736, m. John Tufts.
(2) ii. Timothy, b. Jan. 7, 1738-9.
iii. Mary, b. Feb. 10, 1740-41, m. Dr. John Green, of Worcester, Mass.
iv. John, b. Sept. 30, 1742, d. a. 79, m. Hannah, only dau. of Dr. Thomas Sackett, of Long Island, N.Y.: Ch.: 1, Bathsheba, b. 1779, d. about 1865 ; 2, Timothy Amherst, b. 1781, d. 1838 (was a captain in the N. S. Regiment of "Fencibles") ; these two were born at Newton, L.I. ; 3, Eliza Bayard, b. 1797, m. Austin Woodbury, one of whose descendants still owns and occupies the old homestead of John Ruggles ; 4, Frances Mary, b. 1802, m. Jonathan, son of Fairfield Woodbury.
(3) v. Richard, b. March 4, 1743-4.
vi. Bathsheba, b. Feb. 13, 1745-6, m. Joshua Spooner.
vii. Elizabeth, b. May 15, 1748, m. Gardner Chandler.

2. Timothy Ruggles, Jun., was born January 7th, 1739. Although a Loyalist, as was proved by his proceedings after the war, he was not so pronounced and active in the assertion of his views as to forfeit his Massachusetts property, and finally settled at Belleisle, where he died in 1838. He married Sarah, daughter of Col. Simeon Dwight, who was born May 1st, 1748, and died in 1842. Children :

i. Sarah, b. Feb. 2, 1768, m. Judah Hinckley.
ii. Anna, b. June 8, 1769.
iii. Sophia, b. Jan. 19, 1771, d. young.
iv. Betsey, b. Nov. 15, 1772, d. young.
v. Timothy, b. Dec. 1, 1773, d. young.
vi. Timothy, b. March 7, 1776. (See memoir of Timothy Ruggles, M.P.P.) He m. Jane, dau. of Edward Thorne, and d. 1831 : Ch. : 1, Jane R., b. 1811, m. Abel Sands (of N.B.) ; 2, Harriet, b. 1813, m. (1st) Thomas Bartlett, (2nd) William J. Starr, (St. John, N.B.) ; 3, Armanilla, b. 1816 ; 4, Timothy Dwight, b. 1818. Timothy Dwight Ruggles, M.P.P. and Q.C., m. Havilah Jane, dau. of S. S. Thorne, Esq., M.P.P. ; she d. 1892. He resides at Bridgetown. 5, Edward Thorne, b. 1820, d. unm. ; 6, Stephen Thorne, b. 1823, m. Mary, dau. of Joseph Churchill Wade, d. young.
vii. Sophia, b. Oct. 20, 1777, m. (1st) Jacob, son of Christian Tobias, M.D., a Loyalist, whose son, Simeon Dwight Tobias, m. Sophia Henkell, and was long Collector of Customs at Annapolis, and had 6 sons and 3 daus., of whom one m. Thomas S. Whitman ; (2nd) John T. Smith.

viii. Simeon Dwight, b. Jan. 23, 1780, m. Margaret Robertson, d. 1812 : Ch.: 1, William R., b. 1808, m. Seraph Cutler, 1 son d. young, 3 daus. ; 2, Henry Dwight, b. 1810, a physician and surgeon at Weymouth, N.S., m. Sarah, dau. of Samuel Campbell, M.P.P. ; 14 ch. ; d. aged ; 3, Mary Amelia (or Mary Adelia), b. 1811, m. James Runciman ; 4, Elizabeth Johnstone, b. 1812, d. unm.

ix. Harriet, b. Feb. 23, 1782, m. Stephen DeWolfe.

x. Clarissa, b. April 3, 1784, m. Dr. George W. Shepherd.

xi. Israel Williams, b. Aug. 27, 1786 ; was long a J. P. and commissioner in the Supreme Court, and d. Jan. 7, 1880; m. (1st) Elizabeth, dau. of Phineas Millidge ; she d. Oct. 28, 1834, a. 42 ; (2nd) Maria, dau. of John Owen and sister of the late Rev. H. L. Owen, of Lunenburg : Ch. : 1, Matilda, m. John Watson ; 2, Stephen Millidge, bpd. July 24, 1817, m. Thomas Easson ; 3, Edward, bpd. May 26, 1819 ; 4, William Edwin, bpd. Nov. 18, 1820, m. Charlotte Easson ; 5, Phineas Millidge, bpd. Aug. 7, 1822 ; 6, George B., bpd. Dec. 22, 1825 ; 7, Charles Burnet, bpd. Sept 2, 1829 ; 8, Elizabeth Sarah, b. Oct. 13, 1831, m. Eleazer Jones, of Weymouth ; (by 2nd w.) : 2 sons, 1 d. unm. ; the other, Rev. J. Owen Ruggles, a prominent Church of England clergyman, died in 1895, leaving a family ; 1 dau., Anna, resides in Annapolis, unm.

3. Richard Ruggles, the youngest son of the General, was born at Rochester, Mass., March 4, 1744, m. 1771, Welthea, dau. of Ebenezer and Welthea (Gilbert) Hatheway, of Massachusetts, and d. October 21, 1832; she d. December 4, 1825. Some of this family were born in Massachusetts, some in this county. Children :

i. Bathsheba, b. Sept. 21 or 22, 1772, m. F. Hutchinson.

ii. Cynthia, b. April 15, 1774, m. (1st) John Durland, (2nd) James Harris.

iii. Thomas Hutchinson, named in honour of the last Royal Governor of Massachusetts, b. Nov. 19, 1775, m. Oct. 14, 1800, Sarah Helms, *née* Fowler, who was b. March 11, 1788 : Ch.: 1, Ann Eliza, b. Oct. 2, 1801, d. unm.; 2, Welthea Anne, b. Sept. 3, 1804, m. John Donaldson, and was a grandmother of Rev. L. J. Donaldson ; 3, Thomas Gilbert, b. March 19, 1807, m. Louisa Travis, still living in P.E.I. ; 4, Harriet Sophia, b. March 31, 1809, m. (1st) Austin Woodbury, (2nd) Samuel Balcom, (3rd) Gilbert Fowler Ditmars ; 5, Benjamin Henry, b. Jan. 9, 1811, m. Maria Sophia Rice, still living at Westport, large family ; 6, Eliza Jane, b. Aug. 9, 1813, d. young ; 7, Charles Travis, b. April 13, 1817, m. Eliza Travis ; 8, Frederic Williams, b. Feb. 6, 1820, m. Sarah A. Crocker, d. about 1885, large family.

iv. Richard, b. Sept. 25, 1780, m. Oct. 18, 1820, Eleanor Ann, dau. of Elijah Purdy, of Bear River, and lived in Clements, farmer and school-teacher ; he d. 1862. She m. (2nd) Henry F. Vroom, and d. Feb., 1834 : Ch.: 1, Josiah Jones, b. Nov. 4, 1821, d. Jan., 1895, m. (1st) Mary, dau. of Thomas Gilliatt, (2nd) Adelia Whitman ; 2. Clarissa, b. Sept. 24, 1823, m. James Edw. Harris ; 3, Arthur, b. 1825, m. Elizabeth G., dau. of Joseph Rice, and is father of H. Dwight Ruggles, barrister-at-law, and 5 others ; 4, William Spurr, b. 1828, m. Rebecca Berry, d. 1891 ; 5, Elizabeth Adelaide, b. Sept. 22, 1830, m. (1st) Israel Lent, (2nd) Charles C. Jefferson ; 6, George Albert, b. Jan. 26, 1833, m. Lydia Sophia Chute ; 7, Armanilla, b. June 2, 1835, m. John Rice, jun.; 8, Charles, b. July 28, 1837, m. Bessy, dau. of Thomas Lee, Lynn, Mass.; 9, Rev. Gilbert, b. Aug. 19, 1839, m. Eunice,

dau. of Franklin Rice ; 10, Cecilia or Celia, m. William Gwyer ; 11, Timothy, b. April 24, 1844, m. ; 12, Richard, twin of Timothy, m. Abbie (Hayward) White, and removed to U.S.

v. Welthia, twin of Richard, m. Charles Tucker.
vi. Sophia, b. Jan. 31, 1785, m. John Ryerson, 11 ch.
vii. Tryphena, b. May 24, 1786, d. May 20, 1844.
viii. Thomas Gilbert, b. June 14, 1788, m. Nov. 1, 1810, Mary Morehouse, d. May 22, 1841, 6 ch.: 3 sons (Gilbert, William and Charles) and 3 daughters. Gilbert and Charles d. unm ; William lived in the South, and is said to have been an officer in the Confederate army.

The General had a nephew who was also a Loyalist, and followed his uncle to this country. His name was Joseph Ruggles ; he was a son of the General's younger brother Joseph, and was born April 8, 1748.* He married here Lois Nichols, settled at Aylesford, and had children :

i. William, m. Mary West : Ch.: 1, Mary, m. Benjamin Dodge ; 2, Frances, m. Henry Beale ; 3, Eliza, m. a clergyman named Raymond, and went to Africa ; 4, Phineas Banks ; 5, Tryphena.
ii. Joseph, m. Irene Woodworth : Ch.: 1, Joseph, b. 1816 ; 2, William, in U.S.A. ; 3, Nicholas, in U.S.A. ; and probably others.
iii. Thomas Richards, m. Margaret Nichols : Ch.: 1 only, Lois, m. (1st) 1849, William Dodge, (2nd) married again in U.S.A.
iv. James, m. Catharine Wallace : Ch. : 1, Sarah Ann, m. Cooper Beals ; 2, Lois, m. Rev. Willard G. Parker ; 3, John W., m. Elizabeth Bridges ; 4, William Campbell, m. Maria Illseley ; 5, Lavinia, m. (1st) George Whitman, (2nd) Harris Prentiss.
v. John, b. 1797, d. 1824.

Rumsey. This family is of Scotch origin. (See Burke's "General Armory.") At the period of the French expulsion, Benjamin Rumsey was acting as Clerk of the Cheque to the Board of Ordnance at Annapolis Royal. He married here, but the name of his wife is not known. One son (Benjamin) settled on lands belonging to his father as grantee in Granville, when in 1809 all the family records were destroyed by the burning of his dwelling house, two of his children perishing in the flames. Benjamin Rumsey, jun., married, 1798, Amy, dau. of Benjamin Chesley, and had children :

i. Sophia, b. 1798, d. 1809.
ii. Benjamin, b. 1800, m. Elizabeth Foster : Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, m. Silas Hoffman ; 2, Amelia, m. Charles Armstrong ; 3, Charles Wallace, m. Elizabeth Foster (dau. of William) ; 4, James, m. Josephine Banks ; 5, Martha Ann, m. James Willis ; 6, Ceretha, m. Harry Lewis (U.S.A.) ; 7, Amy Augusta, m. George Hutchinson (U.S.A.) ; 8, Arthur, m. Emma Foster ; 9, Benj. Herbert, d. unm. ; 10, Philip Richardson, d. unm. ; 11, Ada, m. Oman Fullerton ; 12, Louisa, m. Augustus Burrill ; 13, Ella, m. Henry Barnes.
iii. Amy, b. 1801, m. Kinsman.
iv. Maria, b. 1805, d. 1834.
v. Charles, b. 1808.
vi. Joseph, b. 1811.

* Another son of the General's brother Joseph, Nathaniel, b. June 14, 1750, was a Loyalist, and settled, it is supposed, in Canada East.—[Ed.]

Ryerson. (See history of Clements.) Francis, the ancestor of the Annapolis and Yarmouth County families of this name, who always wrote the name Ryarson, was a descendant in the fifth generation from Martin Ryarson, who came from Holland to Brooklyn, N.Y., in 1646, through George or Joses,[2] Lucas,[3] George Lucas.[4] He had children :

i. John, m. (in N.B.).
(2) ii. Francis.
iii. George.
iv. Martin, m. Dorothea VanBuskirk : Ch. : 1, Sarah, m. Thomas Harris ; 2, Eliza, m. — Gray ; 3, Stephen ; 4, Mary, m. Otis Leach ; 5, Almira, m. — Goodwin ; 6, Simeon, m. — Lampson ; 7, Charlotte, m. George Fields ; 8, Harriet ; 9, James.
v. Ann, m. James Bent.

2. Francis Ryerson married Sarah Ryerson, and had children :

i. John, m. 1803, Sophia Ruggles (dau. of Richard) : Ch : 1, Sarah, b. 1804, m. John Barr ; 2, John Calvin, b. 1805 ; 3, Gilbert R., b. 1807, m. — Willet ; 4, Mary, b. 1809, m. Wm. H. O. Haliburton ; 5, Welthea Ann, b. 1810, m. Fowler Ditmars ; 6, Harriet Augusta, b. 1812, m. William Purdy ; 7, Sophia, b. 1812 ; 8, Abigail H., b. 1814, m. Fred. Jones ; 9, Charles, b. 1816 ; 10, Alfred, b. 1819 ; 11, Adelia Amelia, b. 1821, m. Voorhies Ditmars ; 12, Edwin, b. 1825, d. Aug., 1891, m. (1st) Mary E. Elliott, (2nd) Susan Foster.
ii. Simeon, m. Jemima VanBuskirk (dau. of Garret) ; three ch.
iii. Martin, m. Jemima, wid. of Simeon.
iv. Stephen De Lancey, b. 1789, m. Lois Killam, six children, in Yarmouth.
v. George, b. 1791, m. Mary Harris.
vi. Elizabeth, m. Thomas Easson.
vii. Frances, m. James LeCain.
viii. James.

Sanders. Pardon Sanders, a young man, said to have been of Cornish birth, was sent out by the Board of Ordnance as an artificer to take the place of Thomas Sampson, who had died, leaving a widow, who was a daughter of Antoine Olivier, a Frenchman, who was living here at the time of the conquest by Nicholson, and who in later years came to be known as Anthony Oliver. Sanders soon married the widow. The stones that mark the graves of Anthony Oliver and his wife are among the oldest in the old cemetery, as he died in 1758, seven years after the second marriage of his daughter. Madame Sanders was the ninth of Oliver's fourteen children. Pardon Sanders was long a leading man in the community. He was the acting executor of Joseph Cossins, who died in the last decade of the century, leaving an only child married to John Cooper, the first Methodist missionary in the town. This woman's ill-treatment by her husband led her to separate from him and live in her old home. After the death of her surviving parent she removed to England, her native land, leaving Sanders manager of her large and

valuable estate. His descendants are still possessed of a number of letters written to him by her, and known as the "Cooper Letters," containing many references to persons and things, of considerable historical importance. She returned to Annapolis, and died in 1836. He had children:

i. Mary, b. 1752, d. 1759.
ii. John, 1754, d. unm. in Trinidad.
(2) iii. Pardon, b. 1756.
(3) iv. Daniel, b. 1761.

2. Pardon Sanders, Jun., was born in 1756, and died in 1823. He married Phebe, daughter of Josiah Dodge, and had children:

i. Richard, d. at sea, unm.
ii. Pardon, b. 1783, m. 1808, Martha Weeks, b. 1786. He d. 1862: Ch.: 1, Phebe, b. 1810, unm.; 2, Martha, b. 1812, unm.; 3, Pardon, b. 1817, m. Caroline Wood Vroom; 4, William Forrester, b. 1820, d. unm.; 5, Henry Benjamin, b. 1821, unm.; 6, Caroline Sarah, b. 1823, unm.; 7, Mary, b. 1826, unm.
iii. Josiah, d. unm.
iv. William, m. Zipporah Corbitt: Ch.: 1, Richard Oliver, b. 1815, m. (1st) Elizabeth Brown; 2, Frederic William, b. 1816, m. Eleanor Jane Spurr; 3, Mary Elizabeth, b. 1818, m. William Nichol; 4, Charles M., b. 1821, d. unm.; 5 Anna, b. 1828, unm.; 6, Susan M., d. unm.; 7, Louisa, b. 1824, d. unm.
v. Benjamin, m. Sarah McCormick: Ch.: 1, Pardon, m.; 2, Jane, d. unm.; 3, Elizabeth, d. unm.; 4. Bernard, m. Charlotte Stanforth; 5, Ellen, m. — Harvey; 6, Samuel, m.; 7, Emily, m. — Payne; 8, Arthur, m.
vi. Frederic, d. unm.
vii. Mary, d. unm.
viii. Louisa, m. Reuben Dodge.
ix. Phebe, d. unm.
x. Caroline, m. Benjamin H. Sanders.
xi. Susan, d. unm.

3. Daniel Sanders was born in 1761, and died in 1849. He married in 1792, Hannah Hicks, who was born 1763, and died 1838. Children:

i. John, b. 1792, m. (1st) Hannah Hicks, (2nd) Ellen Boyle: Ch.: 1, Louisa, m. John Edgar; 2, Emma, m. Edward McDonald; 3, Joseph, m. (in U.S.).
ii. Oliver, b. 1794, m. Eliza Barnaby: Ch.: 1, Ann, m. Robert Marshall; 2, Hannah, m. (1st) Zaccheus Foster, (2nd) William Howe; 3, Elizabeth, m. William Miller; 4, Catherine, m. Benjamin Miller; 5, John, m. Bertha Walker; 6, Susan, m. Cornelius Bishop; 7, Daniel Oliver, M.D., m. Ann McKean; 8, Charles Ambrose, m. Maria Louisa Sanders.
iii. Mary, m. John Starratt.
iv. Elizabeth, m. Oliver Foster.
v. Ann, m. Alexander Fowler.
vi. Sidney, m. 1829, Elizabeth Easson: Ch.: 1, David, b. 1829, m. Harriet Cushing; 2, Mary E., b. 1831, m. (1st) John Ford, (2nd) Henry White, son of Manley White, J.P.; 3, Havilah Jane,

b. 1833, m. George Howe ; 4, Ann Eliza, b. 1839, m. Robert Cushing ; 5, Avis Smith, b. 1841, m. R. Leslie Hardwick ; 6, Daniel, b. 1843, d. 1848 ; 7, John, b. 1846, m. Louisa Sanders ; 8, Sidney, b. 1848 m. (1st) Wait Faulkner, (2nd) Ellen Smith ; 9, Francis, b. 1851, m. Stephen D. R. Ritchie.

vii. Edward, b. 1803, m. 1825, Mary Ann Hicks : Ch. : 1, Griselda, b. 1827, m. Jonathan Woodbury ; 2, Theresa, b. 1828, m. Alfred Nichols ; 3, William E., b. 1830, m. Margaret Gates ; 4, Louisa Jane, b. 1832 ; 5, Finlay, m. Ada Sanders ; 6, Charlotte, b. 1836 ; 7, Ruth, unm. ; 8, Alfred, m. Ellen McIntyre.

viii. Benjamin H., b. 1804, m. 1835, Caroline Sanders : three ch. d. unm., and dau., Maria Louisa, b. 1841, m. Charles Ambrose Sanders.

Saunders. Timothy Saunders, probably a nephew of Joseph Saunders, of Salem, Mass., who was a grantee of Yarmouth, in 1765, through Joseph's brother Timothy, came to this county when quite young, between 1760 and 1765. His grandfather was Edward Saunders, whose immigrant ancestor the editor has been unable to trace, but the author suggests Christopher Saunders who came to Windsor, Conn., in 1671, of an ancient Surrey family, of which one branch settled in Derbyshire and another in Devon. There is a family whose name was first spelled Saunderson, and afterwards Saunders, in Plymouth Colony, of whom Esther Saunders, or Saunderson, married Thomas Savery, born 1681, a lineal ancestor of the editor. The early members of the Annapolis branch did a vast and a most valuable pioneer work in developing the agricultural resources of the county, while some of them engaged in lumbering operations more extensively than the average of their neighbours. Timothy Saunders married Martha Neily, widow of James Reagh, an Irish lady, and had children :

i. Timothy, b. 1791, m. (1st) Bathsheba Sproul, (2nd) Eunice Spinney : Ch : 1, Robert, b. 1812. m. Matilda Newcomb ; 2, Betsey, d. unm. ; 3, Mary, m. Ezekiel Woodworth ; 4, Obadiah, d. unm. ; (by 2nd wife) : 5, Timothy, m, Lucy Pineo (no issue) ; 6, Samuel, m. Ann Spinney ; 7, Henry, m. (in U.S.) ; 8, Caleb, m. (in U.S.) ; 9, Martha, m. Charles Spinney ; 10, Catharine, m. Calvin Crocker ; 11, Caroline, m. (in U.S.) ; 12, Guilford, m. (in U.S.) ; 13, Sarah, m. Clark Welton.

ii. Henry (Rev.), b. 1793, m. 1817, Sarah Randall : Ch. : 1. Susan, b. 1818, m. Edward R. Harris ; 2, Nathan, b. 1820, m. (1st) Abigail Whitman, (2nd) Harriet McGregor ; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1821, d. unm. ; 4, Joseph Henry (Rev.), b. 1823, m. Caroline Harris ; 5, Sarah Jane, b. 1825, d. unm. ; 6, Thomas Handley, b. 1827, m. Jane Neily ; 7, Margaret, b, 1829, m. William Snell ; 8, Charles, b. 1831, m. Mary Sloan (in U.S.).

iii. Hannah, b. 1795, m. Eliphalet Banks.

iv. Frances, b. 1797, m. James Grimes.

v. David, b. 1799, m. Elizabeth Rhodes, dau. of William Rhodes, who came from New England, and m. Lydia Bass. (*See Bass Genealogy.*) : Ch. : 1, John, m. (1st) Margaret Neily, (2nd) Hannah Hendry ; 2, Obadiah, m. Rebecca Ward ; 3, Cynthia, m. Dean Wheelock ; 4, Elizabeth, m. Gideon Beardsley ; 5, Maria, m. James VanBuskirk ; 6, Rev. Edward Manning Saunders, D.D.,

m. Maria Kisboro Freeman, and father of the distinguished authoress Miss Margaret Marshall Saunders; 7, Martha, m. Dimock Goucher; 8, G. Whitefield, m. Sarah Saunders; 9, Walter W., m. Julia Robinson.

vi. Obadiah, b. 1800, m. 1821, Catherine, dau. of William Rhodes: Ch.: 1, William, d. unm.; 2, Mary, m. Charles Grandison Bent; 3, Lydia, m. Inglis Neily; 4, Salome, m. William McGill; 5, Sidney, m. Jane McNayr; 6, Matilda, m. John Pudsey; 7, Caroline, m. James Jefferson; 8, Zenas, m. Adelaide McNayr; 9, Helen, m. William Lent; 10, Eliza, m. James Scofield; 11, Obadiah, m. twice.

vii. Robert, d. young.

Elizabeth, who m. Abner Morse, was, I think, a sister of Timothy, the ancestor mentioned above.

John Saunders, fourth son of Joseph Saunders, the grantee of Yarmouth, and his wife Sarah Hill, born at Haverhill, Mass, June 27, 1755, married November 26, 1781, Hannah Saunders (daughter of Timothy, and certainly sister of the Timothy whose record is just given). He settled at Paradise, and died about 1842. She was born February 7, 1758, and died August 11, 1835. Children:

i. John, b. Oct. 28, 1782, m. Jemima Wilson, and d. Sept. 8, 1857: Ch.: 1, Harvey, m. (1st) Leonora Whitman, (2nd) Ann Jefferson, *née* McGregor; 2, Walter, m. (1st) Margaret Toole, (2nd) Sarah Wheaton; 3, Christopher, m. Lois Whitman; 4, Charles, m. (1st) Anna Hilton, (2nd) — (in U.S.); 5, Wiltshire, m. Maggie —— (in Nevada); 6, Deidamia, m. Freeman Whitman; 7, Mary, m. Thomas Kempton; 8, Lydia, d. unm.; 9, Elizabeth, d. unm.; 10, Jane, m. Lewis Minard; 11, Hannah, m. Hayden Cameron.

ii. Timothy, b. Feb. 6, 1784, d. March 30, 1865, m. — Whitman, wid.: Ch.: 1, John Clark, d. unm.; 2, William Starratt, m. Eliza Wright; 3, Susan, m. (1st) William Baker, (2nd) Jesse Oakes; 4, Loretta, m. Daniel Whitman; 5, Patten, m. Hannah Wilson; 6, Henry, m. Rachel Whitman, 7, Hiram, m. Anna Johnston, *née* Rice (was a railroad constructor in Scotland, Switzerland and United States); 8, Mary, m. Walter Wilson; 9, Abigail, m. Ansley Whitman.

iii. Joseph, b. Dec. 7, 1785, d. Aug. 16, 1851, m. VanNorden or Cornwell, went to Canada West.

iv. Elizabeth, b. April 21, 1788, d. Feb. 19, 1789.

v. Elizabeth, b. Feb. 21, 1790, d. March 5, 1875, m. Alexander Wilson.

vi. Abner, b. Nov. 25, 1791, d. May 31, 1870, m. Sarah Tedford, b. 1793, d. 1886: Ch.: 1, Samuel Tedford, b. 1815, m. 1845, Eliza Pool; 2, Hannah, b. 1820, m. James Vidito; 3, Catherine S., b. 1822, m. (1st) James Reid, (2nd) Ezra Leighton; 4, George J., b. 1823, unm.; 5, W. Wallace, b. 1825, m. Sarah Tedford; 6, Andrew F., b. 1827, m. Rebecca Servant; 7, Joseph, b. 1829, m. Eleanor Phillips; 8, Amoret, b. 1831, d. 1865, m. Bartelle Hosmer; 9, Adelaide, b. 1832, m. Stephen Chesley; 10, Abner M., b. 1835, d. 1871, m. Mary Percy.

vii. William, b. May 5, 1794, d. March 31, 1795.

viii. William, b. Nov. 7, 1795, d. May 14, 1883, m. Irene Poole: Ch.: 1, John, m. (1st) Louisa Gates, (2nd) Anna Chesley, (3rd) Sophia Purdy; 2, Gilbert, m. Seraph Morse; 3, Sarah, m. Rev. Walter Goucher; 4, Stephen, m. Annie Allen (in California); 5. Eleanor, m. William Patten; 6, Ada, d. unm.; 7, Edmund, m. — Johnston.

ix. Deidamia, b. 1797, d. May 14, 1803.
x. Mary, b. Dec. 31, 1798, d. Jan. 13, 1844, unm.
xi. Amoret, b. Aug. 14, 1800, d. March 17, 1879, m. Robert Wilson.

1. SCHAFNER. The name is an old German word signifying "overseer," or "manager." ADAM SCHAFNER, from whom our Annapolis County family are directly descended, was born in the Palatinate on the lower Rhine about 1720, and came to Halifax with the German and Swiss immigrants in 1752. His wife died on board the ship a few days before his arrival, having given birth to a boy, who survived her. He went about 1754 to Lunenburg, and there married Barbara Baltzer, a sister of Stophel (Christopher) and Peter Baltzer, who with their parents came out in the same ship with him from the same part of Germany. Soon after the arrival of the Massachusetts settlers, the Schafners and Baltzers removed to Granville and settled on lot No. 1 in the lower section, which Schafner bought from Ebenezer Worthylake, one of the grantees, a little westward of Demonts' first fort, and the "old Scotch fort," which is still owned by some of his posterity. His son Ferdinand was married before his arrival in Granville. Two of his grandsons settled in eastern Annapolis, and gave the name Schafner Settlement to what is now known as South Williamston. Children:

(2) i. Ferdinand, b. 1752.
ii. Barbara, m. John Bohaker.
By second wife:
iii. George, m. 1806, Mary Coleman: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1806, d. unm; 2, Abigail, b. 1808, m. Joseph Johnson; 3, Sarah, b. 1810, m. Daniel Kennedy.
iv. Catherine, m. Richard Armstrong.
v. Abigail, m. White.

2. FERDINAND SCHAFNER, born 1752, married Barbara Hawbolt. Children:

i. Caleb, Lieut.-Colonel in the militia, m. Mary Phinney, dau. of Zaccheus: Ch.: 1, Mary Ann, m. Joseph Bohaker; 2. Olivia, unm.; 3, Handley Chipman, m. Selina Randall; 4, William C., J.P., m. (1st) Eliza, dau. of Henry Best, R.N., (2nd) Azuba Phinney; 5, Edward Manning, m. Eliza Jane Bishop; 6, Maria, m. Rev. Thomas Todd.
ii. Ferdinand, m. 1812, Dorothea Whitman: Ch.: 1, George, b. 1814, m. Cornelia Bogart; 2, Diadama, b. 1816, m. Kinsman; 3, Edwin, b. 1818, m. (1st) Eliza Croscup, (2nd) Mary Eliza Bent; 4, John, b. 1820, m. Catherine Greenwood; 5, William, b. 1822, m. Sarah Clark, *née* Fash; 6, Sarah, b. 1825, d. unm., 1878; 7, Andreas, b. 1827, m. Whitman; 8, Angelina, b. 1829, m. John Healy.
iii. James, m. 1815, Esther Croscup: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth Ann, b. 1816, m. Richard Clark; 2, Hannah Amelia, b. 1818, m. William Croscup; 3, John Henry, b. 1820, m. Lucy Anderson; 4, Benjamin William, b. 1824, m. Mary Hewett; 5, Isaac Ditmars, b. 1826, d. unm.; 6, James Edwin, b. 1830, m. (1st) Mary Church, (2nd) Jane McCormick; 7, Caroline, b. 1834, m. Lawrence Delap; 8, Gilbert Fowler, b. 1836, m. Elizabeth Winchester.

iv. John, m. Rebecca Bishop: Ch.: 1, George, m. (1st) Phebe Jane Chipman, (2nd) Catharine Kennie, *née* Peck; 2, Margaret Ann, m. Robert Marshall; 3, Maria, m. John L. Fitzrandolph; 4, Mary, m. Ingram Neily; 5, John, m. Susan Parker; 6, Rebecca, m. Isaac Morse; 7, William J., m. (1st) Mary Croscup, (2nd) Susan Morse; 8, James, d. unm.
v. Frances, m. Warren Bent.
vi. Barbara, m. John Bohaker.
vii. Elizabeth, m. Michael Bohaker.
viii. Mary, m. John Hardy.
ix. Catherine, m. Edward Croscup.
x. Hannah, m. Joseph Hall.
xi. Ann, m. (1st) William Tomlinson, (2nd) Samuel Lord Chipman.

Shaw. Moses Shaw, a United Empire Loyalist, a native of New York, died in Granville, where his tombstone can still be seen. A son was a member of the firm of Rutherford & Shaw, of Digby. But most of the name in this province are descended from a Moses Shaw who came here earlier in the century, two of his children, born previous to 1770, being natives of Massachusetts. He was born January 18, 1735, and was no doubt son of Moses, who was born in 1705, and who was son of Benoni Shaw, of Plympton, and Lydia, daughter of John Waterman. Benoni was son of Jonathan, a native of England, who came over with his father John Shaw, and in due time married Phebe, daughter of George Watson. John, the immigrant ancestor of this family of Shaws, reached Plymouth as early as 1632, with wife Alice and children, John, James, Jonathan and Abigail, who married Stephen Bryant.* Moses Shaw, the pioneer settler, married (1st) Ann Phinney, of Barnstable, Mass., and (2nd) Mehitable, daughter of Joseph Patten, M.P.P., and widow of Zachariah Hall, of Boston. He died in 1821, aged 86. He served in the colonial troops in Nova Scotia in 1753. His eldest son, Isaiah, farmer, merchant and inventor, was member for Granville in 1806, and again in 1812. Moses, a nephew of Isaiah, son of Moses, jun., was also a member for two terms of four years. (See memoirs.) One or two of the sons of Moses, sen., removed to Yarmouth. Another, David, married in Granville, but settled near Berwick, Kings County. Isaiah removed to New York after retiring from the Legislature. Our present subject had children, all born in Granville:

i. Isaiah, b. Oct. 11, 1763, d. in New York City, 1819, m. (1st) Ann Ketchum, (2nd) Sarah Hausman, *née* Ketchum: Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1788, m. James Delap; 2, Sarah, b. 1790; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1793, m. John Kennedy; 4, Mehitable, b. 1795, m. Woolrich; 5, Harris, b. 1800, d. 1800; 6, Ann, b. 1801, d. unm.
ii. Elizabeth, b. Dec. 26, 1764, m. 1781, Josiah Snow, and removed to Wakefield, N.B., d. 1854.

* The first Savery in Plymouth apprenticed a son first to John Shaw, and then to Stephen Bryant.

iii. Moses, b. Sept. 23, 1766, d. Feb. 8, 1851, m. Phebe Moore, who was born at Tarrytown, N.J., Oct. 15, 1771, d. at Irontown, March 4, 1843: Ch.: 1, Samuel, b. 1801, d. in infancy; 2, Joseph, b. at Wilmot, March 14, 1802, m. Mary, dau. of James Thorne, and d. at Gaspé, N.B.; 3, Alfred, b. Sept. 29, 1803; 4, Moses, b. May 31, 1805, d. in infancy; 5, Phebe Moore, b. Nov. 8, 1806, m. (1st) Joseph Hall, (2nd) Benjamin Tripp, of Belfast, Me.; 6, Moses. Moses Shaw, M.P.P., was b. at Magaguadavic, April 13, 1809, m. (1st) Cornelia Gesner, (2nd) July 20, 1837, Elizabeth, dau. of William and Letitia (Whitman) Spurr, who was b. Jan. 14, 1818, d. Aug. 24, 1884. He died Jan. 23, 1870.

iv. Joseph, b. May 29, 1768, d. March 25, 1798.

v. David, b. April 9, 1770, m. Desiah Phinney (dau. of Isaac), and d. at Cornwallis, Feb. 14, 1840: Ch.: 1, Thomas, b. 1800, d. unm.; 2, Harriet, b. 1800, m. William Pineo; 3, David, b. 1802, d. unm.; 4, James, b. 1804, m. Pamela Bishop; 5, Margaret, b. 1806, d. unm.; 6, Sidney, b. 1808, m. Caroline Skinner; 7, Moses, b. 1810, d. unm.; 8, John, b. 1812, m. Susanna Norwood; 9, Ann, d. unm.; 10, Havilah, m. Charles Norwood; 11, David, m. Bathsheba Sproul; 12, Isaiah, b. 1798, m. (1st) Ellice Woodworth, (2nd) Sarah Lyons.

vi. Zebina, b. March 14, 1772, lived and d. in Yarmouth; father or uncle of Zebina Shaw, Sheriff of Yarmouth.

vii. Havilah, b. May 14, 1774, m. James Hall, J.P., and d. at Granville, Sept. 17, 1816.

viii. Mary, b. Dec. 22, 1776, m. Captain John Harris.

By second wife:

ix. Susanna, b. 1782, d. 1784.

x. Susannah, b. March 8, 1784, m. (1st) James Reed, (2nd) Benjamin Reed, d. at Granville.

xi. Anna, b. June 5, 1786, m. (1st) Guildford Reed, (2nd) — Smith.

Slocomb, or Slocum. The name, like so many English surnames is of local origin, and due to the abundant growth of the sloe tree, or wild plum, in some *valley* or *depression among the hills*, called in Old English a *combe*. A person named, say, Richard, living in such a spot would become known among outsiders as "Richard of the *sloe combe*," and when the use of surnames became general, his posterity would inherit the name crystallized into its modern form. Our Slocombs derive from Simon, who married at Wrentham, Mass., in 1719. (He no doubt was a lineal descendant from Anthony Slocum, one of the first purchasers of Taunton, Mass., in 1637. There is a Slocomb genealogy, by Dr. Chas. E. Slocum, of Syracuse, N.Y., but I have not seen it.—Ed.) The eldest son of Simon Slocomb and Abigail, his wife, was John, born 1720, and in 1747 married Experience Healy, by whom he had two sons and a daughter, who came here with the Loyalists of 1783. (A Captain Simon Slocom was a prominent man in the Province as early as 1759, when he was a member of the House of Assembly.—Ed.) John was then married, and his sister and brother were respectively nine and fifteen years old. The sister married Thomas Outhit, from whom all in the county of that name are descended. She, at his death, married John McNeill, a Loyalist, and thus became ancestress of the McNeill, of Wilmot. The two brothers settled at Wilmot.

JOHN SLOCOMB, SEN., b. 1720, m. 1747, Experience Healy, d. 1778. Children:

i. John, b. 1754, m. 1778, Eleanor Spriggs, d. 1845: Ch.: 1, Sarah, b. 1779, m. John Hawkesworth; 2, Joshua, b. 1781, d. April, 1781; 3, John Prince, b. 1782, m. 1805, Rebecca Hawkesworth; 4, Joshua Upham, b. 1784 (in N.S.), m. 1809, Elizabeth Farnsworth; 5, William, b. 1785, m. Eliza Miller, d. 1863; 6, Caleb, b. 1787, m. (1st) 1810, Sarah Lenahan, (2nd) Sarah Wilson; 7, Eleanor, b. 1789, d. 1849, m. Oldham Gates; 8, Lavinia, b. 1794, m. Peter Middlemas.

ii. Lavinia, b. 1764, m. (1st) Thomas Outhit, (2nd) John McNeill.

iii. Caleb, b. 1768, m. 1792, Mary, dau. of Alden Bass: Ch.: 1, Caleb, b. 1793, m. 1814, Mary Hamilton; 2, Thomas Outhit, b. 1794, m. Mary Berteaux; 3, Mary, b. 1796, m. Adam Easton Hawkesworth; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1797, m. John Brown; 5, Timothy Rice, b, 1799, m. 1825, Hannah West; 6, John, b. 1800, d. unm.; 7, Susan, b. 1802, d. 1802; 8, Susanna, b. 1803, m. William Miller, J.P.; 9, Naomi, b. 1806, m. James Crowley, of Digby; 10, Ruth, b, 1810, m. William Gould; 11, Julia, b. 1810, m. Isaac Noble; 12, Esther, b. 1812, d. unm.; 13, Sarah, d. unm.

JOHN PRINCE (*son of John*) and Rebecca (Hawkesworth) SLOCOMB had ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1806, m. James Parker; 2, William, b. 1808, d. 1809; 3, Sarah, b. 1809, d. 1810; 4, Abraham, b. 1810, d. 1831; 5, Rebecca, b. 1813, m. William H. Harrison; 6, Isaac, b. 1815, d. 1837, unm. (in Edinburgh); 7, Sarah, b. 1817, m. William H. Harrison; 8, Jacob, b. 1819, m. Jerusha Tupper Gates.

JOSHUA UPHAM and Elizabeth (Farnsworth) SLOCOMB had ch.: 1, Susanna Spriggs, b. 1809, m. Solomon Bowlby; 2, John, b. 1811, m. (1st) Sarah Sothern, (2nd) Catherine Keizer; 3, Deborah, b. 1813, m. Joel Banks; 4, Mary Upham, b. 1815, m. David C. Landers, M.P.P.; 5, Elizabeth, b. 1817, m. Francis Miller; 6, Lavinia, b. 1819, m. Henry Miller; 7, Joshua, b. 1820, d. 1831; 8, Joel, b. 1822, m. (1st) Irene Huntington, (2nd) widow Gates, *née* Landers; 9, Samuel Busby, b. 1824, m. Susanna Brown (no issue); 10, Angelina, b. 1826, m. Nathaniel Whitman; 11, Naomi, b. 1829, m. John Gates; 12, Ruth, b. 1831, m. Charles A. Elliott.

WILLIAM (*son of John*) and Eliza (Miller) SLOCOMB had ch.: 1, Jacob, b. 1822, d. 1885, unm.; 2, Sarah, b. 1823, d. 1825; 3, John, b. 1826, m. (1st) Dorothea Baltzer, (2nd) Adelaide Bruce; 4, Eleanor, b. 1828, m. William Beach; 5, William, b. 1830, m. (1st) Caroline Wilkins, (2nd) Maria Armstrong; 6, Caleb, b. 1830, d. unm.; 7, Abraham, b. 1833, m. (1st) Eliza Gibson, (2nd) Sarah E. Bent; 8, Sarah, b. 1836, m. John Bruce; 9, Henry, b. 1837, d. unm.; 10, Isaac, b. 1840, m. Louisa Miller; 11, James H., b. 1842, d. unm.

CALEB (*son of John*) and Sarah (Lenahan) SLOCOMB had ch.: 1, William Sutcliffe, M.D., b. 1810, m. Emmeline Little; 2, Caroline, b. 1812, m. 1835, Pardon Starratt; 3, Ann, b. 1814, d. 1816; 4, Rebecca, b. 1817; 5, Christina, b. 1819, m. Morris Wheelock; 6, Walter Bromley, b. 1821, m. 1852, Sarah Morgan; 7, Eliza, b. 1823; 8, Eleanor, b. 1825; 9, Ethlin B., b. 1827; 10, Sarah Ann, b. 1829; by 2nd w., Sarah Wilson, he had: 11, Obadiah Moore, b. 1832, m. Mary Nickerson.

CALEB (*son of Caleb*) and Mary (Hamilton) SLOCOMB had ch.: 1, Catherine, b. 1816, m. (1st) Joseph Banks, (2nd) Captain Harvey; 2, William Alfred, b. 1817, m. Emmeline Brown; 3, James E., b. 1819, m. Mary Middlemas; 4, George H., b. 1821, m. Abigail Walker; 5, Caleb Edgar, b. 1823, m. 1849, Adeline Parker; 6, Eliza Jane, b. 1825, m. Jacob Fritz; 7, John, b. 1827, d.

1827; 8, Mary Lavinia, b. 1829, d. unm.; 9, Israel, b. 1832, m. 1862, Catherine Darton; 10, Charles Rideout, b. 1842, d. unm.

Timothy Rice (*son of Caleb*) and Hannah (West) Slocomb had ch.: 1, Jane, b. 1825, d. unm.; 2, Isaac, b. 1827, m. Elizabeth Durland; 3, Ingram Bill, b. 1829, m. 1855, Adelia Smith; 4, Sarah Abigail, b. 1831, m. 1850, Thomas Durland; 5, Lucy Lavinia, b. 1835, d. unm.; 6, Isaiah, b. 1837, m. 1859, Margaret Frend; 7, Harriet Adelia, b. 1839, m. Robert Weaver; 8, Susan Amelia, b. 1843, m. Henry Weaver; 9, Joseph Dimock, b. 1845, d. 1848.

Smith. This Smith family was of Loyalist origin. Austin Smith, whose name is in the Annapolis muster roll of 1784, married — Tuttle, and settled later in Wilmot. He had children:

i. Jonathan, m. (1st) 1790, Love Woodbury (dau. of Dr. Jonathan, sen.), (2nd) Ann Gates, and had children; 1, James, m. Rebecca Freeman; 2, Fairfield, m. Margaret Magee; 3, Lou, m. Robert Walker; 4, Famitcha, m. Daniel Robinson; 5, Manley, went abroad; (by 2nd w.) 6, John, m. Elizabeth Forbes; 7, Collingwood, m. (1st) Jane Cassidy; (2nd) Maria Goucher, *née* Weaver; 8, Theresa, m. Thomas Marshman; 9, Mary, m. Jonathan Parker; 10, Elizabeth, m. Edward Morgan; 11, Fanny, m. Alfred Bent; 12, Susan, d. young; 13, Sampson, m.

ii. Francis, m. Mary VanBuskirk: Ch.: 1, John G., m. Angelina Harris; 2, William, m. Elizabeth Hicks; 3, Rev. James Austin, m. (1st) Mary Ann Gunter, (2nd) Elizabeth McDonald; 4, Herbert, m. Achsa Baker; 5, Elizabeth, m. Edmund Palmer; 6, Azubah, m. William Nichols; 7, Mary, m. —; 8, Catharine, m. John Gates; 9, Helen, m. Major Stronach; 10, Grace, m. (1st) William Marshall (son of William), (2nd) James Messenger. (Francis Smith was some years Deputy Sheriff, and was a candidate for the shrievalty in 1821, well supported.)

Sneden. Lawrence, son of Stephen Sneden, who was born 1743, and married, 1763, Margaret Townshend, and died 1814, was one of the leading men of the town in his day. His elder brother, John Townshend Sneden, born 1765, married, 1815, widow Margaret Ruggles, *née* Robertson, and had sons, John Townshend, born 1816; James Robertson, born 1818, and George Ricketts, born 1820. Lawrence, born 1768, died 1823, married 1800, Elizabeth Amory, and had ch.: 1, Anne, born 1802, married Dr. Robert Leslie; 2, Stephen William, born 1804; 3, Mary Esther, married Rev. J. M. Campbell; 4, John Anthony, born 1808; 5, Margaret Augusta, born 1812, married George Simard Millidge; 6, Lawrence James, born 1816, married Catharine McLauchlan. The name only survives in the county on the gravestones and church records.

Snow. Nicholas, Anthony and William Snow came over to New England among the early settlers, and are supposed to have been related. There was also a Richard and a Thomas. Anthony had only one son, Josiah, which seems to have been a family name, even down to the founding of the Nova Scotia branch, although this early Josiah left no

sons. He was probably cousin or uncle of a Nicholas Snow, who married Mary, perhaps sister of George Upham, of Wiveliscombe, Somerset, and who was citizen and armourer of London in February, 1666. He came in the *Anne* in 1623, and married Constantia Hopkins, a *Mayflower* passenger, and had twelve or thirteen children, and was a man of mark among the Pilgrim Fathers. The line of descent is from Nicholas,[1] through Jabez,[2] Jabez,[3] Jabez,[4] to JABEZ[5] SNOW, who was born June 19, 1733, married, May 22, 1758, Elizabeth Doane (dau. of Dr. Jonathan), was a captain in a colonial company during the French war, and came to Granville among the early settlers, and was a leading spirit there, filling the office of coroner and other prominent positions. Children:

i. Josiah, b. Oct. 17, 1755, m. 1781, Elizabeth Shaw: Ch.: 1, Anna, b. Aug. 19, 1782, m.; 2, Jonathan Doane, b. Jan. 27, 1784, m. Sarah Hausman; 3, Jabez, b, April 6, 1785, m.; 4, Josiah, b. March 10, 1787, m.; 5, Moses, b. April 21, 1789, m.; 6, Warren, b. June 1, 1791, m.; 7, James, b. April 12, 1793, m.; 8, Elizabeth, b. Feb. 21, 1795, m.; 9, Mary, b. Feb. 23, 1797, m.; 10, Martha, b. Oct. 12, 1799, m.; 11, Jane, b. Sept. 4, 1801, m.; 12, Havilah, b. July 3, 1804, m.; 13, Joseph S., b. May 22, 1807.

ii. William, b. Sept. 6, 1763, m. Margaret Winchester: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth Doane, b. Oct. 27, 1788; 2, William Quigley, b. Oct. 15, 1790; 3, Hannah, b. Dec. 8, 1792; 4, Ann Eve, b. Jan. 15, 1795; 5, Jabez, b, May 24, 1797; 6, Pamela, b. Oct. 4, 1799; 7, Winkworth Quigley, b. Jan. 12, 1802.

iii. Silvanus, b. Feb. 24, 1765, m. (1st) June 2, 1801, Mary Clark (dau. of Thomas), (2nd) 1814, Mary Lent (dau. of Abraham): Ch.: 1, Silvanus, jun., b. Jan. 15, 1804, m.; 2, Mary, b. May 12, 1805, m.; 3, Elizabeth, b. Nov. 14, 1806, m.; 4, Olivia, b. March 12, 1808, m.; 5, Eunice, b. Feb. 28, 1811; 6, Stephen, b. May 31, 1812; (by 2nd wife): 7, Jane Elizabeth, b. Nov. 13, 1816; 8, Eleanor Ann, b. April 2, 1818, m.; 9, Hannah, b. March 29, 1821.

iv. Edward, b. Jan. 17, 1771, m. —. (The record stops here, and I cannot find the materials to complete it.—ED.)

BENJAMIN SNOW, a Loyalist, a graduate of Dartmouth, who opened a Grammar School in Annapolis in 1781, soon removed to New Brunswick, and was one of the grantees of the parish of Studholm, Kings County. It is likely that the late Francis C. Snow and his son Harry A., recently well-known woollen manufacturers at Lequille, who came here from New Brunswick, were descended from him.

SPINNEY. Of the immigrant ancestor of this family, or the part of England from which he came, I have no information. The author only mentions that Joseph Spinney, father of the Joseph whose family he records, was born in Massachusetts. Elsewhere he notes that a John Spinney, of Kittery, N.H., married in 1729, Mary Waterhouse. Campbell, in his "History of Yarmouth," p. 67, says, "John Spinney, who came from Portsmouth, with seven sons, is as striking an example as can

anywhere be found of numerical increase," having come to Abuptic in 1762, and become the ancestor of probably five hundred descendants then living, about half of them in that county. He may have been the father or grandfather of the one who founded the Annapolis family of the name. I find, however, from the town records of Granville that a Samuel Spinney was there in the last century, that he had a wife Elizabeth, by whom he had ch. : 1, Joseph, b. April 13, 1763 ; 2, David, b. Feb. 19, 1764, d. June 9, 1765, and that the wife died Feb. 11, 1766 ; that he married (2nd) Nov. 26, 1766, Hannah Smith, and had ch. : 3, David, b. Oct. 23, 1767 ; 4, Elizabeth, b. Nov. 13, 1769. A David Spinney, son of Andrew, married, 1826, Eliza Foster (dau. of Ezra, of N.B.), was in Granville in 1828 and 1834. The Joseph Spinney, stated by our author to be son of Joseph, may have been the son of Samuel, b. 1763, or that man may have been identical with Joseph, sen., said to be born in Massachusetts. Joseph married Sarah Beech and had ch. : 1, Abraham, m. — Barss ; 2, Samuel, m. Mary Rhodes ; 3, Benaiah, m. (1st) Mary Banks, (2nd) Abigail Locke ; 4, Mary, m. Eric Welton ; 5, Ann, m. John Banks ; 6, James, m. Letitia Wheelock ; 7, Elijah, m. Margery Rhodes ; 8, Charlotte, m. Israel Whitman ; 9, Sarah, m. George Neily ; 10, John (in U.S.A.).

Sproul. Robert Sproul, the progenitor of the Nova Scotia and New Brunswick families of the name, came from the north of Ireland, probably at the same time that the Neilys, McCormicks and Elliotts came, and must have settled in Granville later than the year 1770. By his first wife, who may have died on the voyage, he had three sons, James, John, and Robert, born in Ireland. James, the eldest, b. 1763, went to New Brunswick and became the ancestor of a large posterity there. John and Robert removed to Wilmot, the former settling near Paradise, the latter farther up the valley. Thomas, the son by the second wife, settled in Granville, from which many descendants have gone forth to neighbouring counties and the United States, some to California. The name, once numerous, has now nearly disappeared from Granville. Robert Sproul, d. 1801, m. (1st) Sarah ——, d., (2nd) Jane ——, d. 1800. Ch. :

i. James.
ii. John, m. 1798, Anne Parker : Ch. : 1, Mary, b. 1799, m. James Phinney ; 2, Miriam, m. John Miller ; 3, Elijah, m. Martha Bowlby ; 4, Obadiah, m. (1st) Amy Rumsey, (2nd) Eliza Lent, *née* Brinton ; 5, Elliott, m. Ellen Cripps ; 6, Sarah, m. John Wesley Pool ; 7, Nancy, m. — Maybee ; 8, William, b. 1805, m. (1st) Sarah Durland, (2) Dorcas Brown, *née* Longley ; 9, Diadama, m. Beldon Sproul.
iii. Robert, m. Bathsheba Ricketson : Ch. : 1, Abednego, m. Lucy Clarke ; 2, Elliott, m. Sophia Baker ; 3, Robert, jun., m. Elizabeth Baker ; 4, Samuel, m. (1st) Hannah Wheelock, (2nd) Caroline Durland ; 5, Edward, m. (1st) Nancy Daley, (2nd) Minetta Katherns ; 6, James, m. Lydia Messenger ; 7, Jane, m. ; 8, Bathsheba, m.
iv. Sarah, m.

By second wife :

v. Thomas, m. Hannah Haskell : Ch. : 1, David, m. Phebe Fowler ; 2, William, m. Mary Brush ; 3, Thomas, m. Eleanor McKenzie ; 4, Jane, m. Alexander Maillet (Acadian French) ; 5, Eben, m. (1st) Phebe Ann McColl, (2nd) Mary Jane McColl ; 6, Andreas, m. Catharine Bowles ; 7, Isaiah, m. Elizabeth Bowles ; 8, Hannah, m. John White, lived at South Range, Digby County, as did Alex. Maillet and family.

SPURR. MICHAEL SPURR, who came in the *Charming Molly*, with his wife Ann Bird and family, had a grant of land and settled at Round Hill. He was perhaps son of Robert, and grandson of a senior Robert, of Dorchester, Mass. One of his ancestors was captain in one of the colonial regiments that attacked Port Royal in 1707, his company being the first to land on the Granville shore, at a place now called Weatherspoon's Point, but known as Spurr's Point from the circumstances of this landing, down to 1770, so that the name had been known here for half a century before the arrival of these settlers. (The order of the births of his children I take from the "Chute Genealogies," the author assuring me they are more correct.—ED.)

i. Abram, b. 1756, m. Mary LeCain (dau. of Francis) : Ch. : 1, Mary, m. 1791, George Davis ; 2, Michael, b. 1775, m. Aug. 9, 1798, Elizabeth, dau. of John Roach, and d. Jan. 23, 1878, in his 103rd year ; 3, Elizabeth, m. Christopher P. Harris ; 4, Jane, m. Benjamin Potter ; 5, Thomas ; 6, Ann, m. Henry, son of Michael Hennigar ; 7, Abigail, b. 1785, d. April 20, 1871, m. Thatcher Sears ; 8, Rev. Gilbert, b. July 9, 1787, m. Esther Chute, and had 6 daus. ; 9, Diadama, m. Elijah, son of Benjamin Hunt, and father of Rev. ABRAHAM SPURR HUNT ; 10, Maria, m. Samuel McColly, in Ontario ; 11, Alicia, m. John Sulis ; 12, Abram, m. 1820, Ann, dau. of Captain John Harris, lived at Smith's Cove, Digby.

ii. Ann, m. William, son of Philip Berteaux.

iii. Abigail, m. John Harris, M.P.P.

iv. Shippey, m. 1788, Letitia Voorhies (see "Frontier Missionary," p. 215) : Ch. : 1, William, b. 1789, d. 1796 ; 2, Mary, b. 1791, d. 1796 ; 3, Jane, b. 1792, m. Burns ; 4, Luke Voorhies, b. 1794, m. Van Horn ; 5, Mary, b. 1796, m. Isaac Ditmars ; 6, Elizabeth, b. 1798, m. (1st) Isaac Ditmars, (2nd) Edward Morse, (3rd) John Ditmars ; 7, John Cooper, m. (1st) Harriet Parker, (2nd) Louisa McNeill, *née* Haines, and d. on her property at Barton, Digby County ; 8, Catherine Marsden, b. 1802, m. Maynard Parker ; 9, Sarah Ann, b. 1804 ; 10, Shippey, b. 1807, d. 1812 ; 11, Margaret, b. 1808, m. ; 12, William, b. 1810, m.

v. Michael, m. (according to the "Chute Genealogies") Diadama, dau. of Rev. Arzarelah Morse, but I conjecture that she d. and that he m. (2nd), Dec. 3, 1791, Anna Rice (St. Luke's Church records). Ch. : 1, probably Azariah (or Arzarelah), bpd. April 7, 1787 ; 2, William, probably bpd. Dec. 3, 1791, m. Letitia, dau. of John Whitman ; 3, James, d. unm. ; 4, Diadama, b. 1796, probably bpd. Jan. 7, 1797, d. 1878 unm. ; 5, Ann, m. — Burrill ; 6, Susan, m. James Gilliatt, or perhaps she was dau. of William and Letitia.—[ED.]



Yours very truly
A S Hunt

REV. ABRAHAM SPURR HUNT, M.A.,

Born at Bear River, Annapolis County, April 7, 1814, died October 23, 1877. (*See p. 304.*)

vi. Thomas, m. 1794, Mary, dau. of Robert Hood: Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1795, d. unm.; 2, Robert, b. 1797, m. Maria Whitman; 3, Eleanor, b. 1798, m. Elnathan Whitman, M.P.P.; 4, Jane, b. 1801, m. Alfred Whitman, M.P.P., M.L.C.; 5, Susan, b. 1803, m. James Gray, J.P., Annapolis; 6, Ann, b. 1805, m. Theodore Harding; 7, Maria, b. 1807, m. Theodore Harding; 8, Charlotte, b. 1809, m. Elkanah Young; 9, William, b. 1810, m. Amelia Bass, *née* DeWolfe, and was father of *James DeWolfe Spurr*, Esq., and of *Mary*, w. of John H. Harding, Esq., both of St. John; 10, Thomas, b. 1812, m. 1828, Charlotte VanBuskirk, and was father of *Isabella*, m. Aylwin Creighton, and *Eleanor Esmond*, m. Rev. H. D. DeBlois, and 2 sons, d. unm.; 11, Edward, b. 1814, m. Margaret, dau. of Jas. R. DeWolfe, of Liverpool, N.S.

vii. Eleanor, m. Abram Lent.

viii. Elizabeth, m. Nov. 15, 1787, Jacob Fritz.

Michael (*son of Abraham*) and Elizabeth (Roach) Spurr had 3 ch.: 1, Thomas Roach, b. April 13, 1799, m. (1st) Avis Ritchie (dau. of Matthew, sen.), and had ch.: *William*, *Anna*, *George* and *Charlotte*; 2, John M., b. Jan. 11, 1801, m. Caroline Corbitt and had ch.: *Mary*, *Elizabeth*, *John M.*, *Anna*, *Anthony*, *William*, *Matilda* and *James Henry*; 3, James Wilkie, b. June 17, 1803, m. Susan Copeland and had ch.: *Elizabeth*, *Eleanor*, *Avis*, *James*, *Michael*, *George* and *John R.*

John Cooper (*son of Shippey*) and Harriet (Parker) Spurr had 9 ch.: 1, Mary Ann, m. Hiram B. Smith; 2, Nathaniel Parker, m. (1st) Sophia Parker, (2nd) Elizabeth Bishop, (3rd) Rebecca Skinner; 3, Angelina, d. unm.; 4, William Voorhies, m. Emma Ditmars; 5, Shippey, m. Elizabeth Campbell; 6, Alfred, m. Horatia Snow; 7, George Edward, m. (1st) Mary Ann Neily, (2nd) Maggie A. Magee; 8, Isabel, m. Edgar Bishop; 9, John Church, m. Nancy Lockhart, *née* Whitman; by 2nd w., John C. had Charles, m. Emma Patten.

Robert (*son of Thomas*) and Maria (Whitman) Spurr had 13 ch.: 1, Anna Rice, b. 1816, d. unm.; 2, Alfred, b. 1817, d. 1821; 3, Edward, b. 1819, d. 1820; 4, Alfred, b. 1821, d. 1850 unm.; 5, Eliza Jane, m. Frederic W. Sanders; 6, Robert James, b. 1824, m. Margaret LeCain; 7, Edward Phelan, b. 1826, d. 1830; 8, William Henry, b. 1828, m. Abigail Dow; 9, Charles Edward, b. 1829, m. Margaret Tupper; 10, Seraph Marin, b. 1834, m. Margaret Harrington; 11, Bernard, b. 1836, m. Eugenia Bogart; 12, Charlotte Letitia, b. 1837, m. (1st) Lovett Bishop, (2nd) T. T. Vernon Smith, C.E.; 13, Thomas, b. 1845, m. Susan Elliott.

1. Peter Starratt, the ancestor of the Annapolis County family of the name, was probably born in Scotland about 1720, and removed to the north of Ireland (Fermanagh), where one of his sons, Joseph, was born, for in an early census return for Granville he reports himself as of Scottish, and his son Joseph of Irish, birth.* In 1770 Joseph is reported as having a wife and two children, but no descendants are in the county. (He there is stated to be of American birth. See page 198.—Ed.) The early Starratts seem to have been seafaring men, and Joseph owned one of the first schooners built on the basin, after the advent of the Massachusetts colonists. Two of his brothers are said to have been King's Pilots, and died in the pursuit of the calling. The father first settled in Granville, it is thought, on a farm afterwards owned by the

* From this it would appear that he was married before emigrating.—[Ed.]

late Colonel Millidge. About 1780 they removed to the vicinity of Paradise, where two of his sons were killed, in 1820, by the caving in of the bank while building a dam over the stream known as Starratt's Brook, near the site of the present railway bridge across the stream. Peter married in Maine (where he had lived before coming to Nova Scotia), Eleanor Armstrong (perhaps a second wife), and had children, besides Joseph and perhaps others, who probably moved back to Maine:*

(2) i. John, b. 1746.
(3) ii. George, b. 1747.
(4) iii. William, b. 1749, m. — Webber.
iv. Mary, m. John Brown.
v. Anna, m. — Robinson.
vi. Lois, m. Zaccheus Phinney.
vii. Eleanor, m. John McGregor.

2. JOHN, born as supposed about 1746, but perhaps later, married in 1778, Hannah Bancroft, born, it is suggested, at Reading, Mass., 1759, and had children:

i. William, b. 1779, m. (1st) Susan Leonard, (2nd) Susan Betts: Ch. 1, William, m. Abigail S. Bent (dau. of Beriah); (by 2nd w.): 2, George, m. Bessie Sophia Dimock.
ii. George, b. 1781, m.
iii. Simon, d. unm.
iv. John, b. 1784, m. 1806, Mary Sanders: Ch.: 1, Daniel, b. 1807, m. Eleanor Blood Morton; 2, Pardon, b. 1810, m. Caroline Slocomb; 3, Helen, b. 1811, m. (1st) John Phinney, (2nd) Gilbert F. Chute; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1813, m. Peter De Lancey; 5, Ann Almira, b. 1815, m. Jeremiah Bancroft; 6, George, b. 1819, m. Evaline Phinney; 7, John, b. 1822, m. — Bollard; 8, James, b. 1824, m. Esther Robinson (no issue); 9, Mary, b. 1826, m. William Tufts; 10, Hannah, b. 1828, m. Charles H. Burgess; 12, Rich. C., b. 1830, m. Mary Skerry; 13, Theodore H., b. 1817, d. 1860.
v. Jeremiah, b. 1787, m. Sarah Dudgeon: Ch.: 1, John, m. Ethelinda Robinson; 2, Harvey, m. Margaret Pierson; 3, Joseph, m. Matilda Kinney; 4, Hannah, m. Judah Wells; 5, Sarah, m. Calvin Smith; 6, Handley, d. unm.; 7, Rev. Manning, m. (1st) Lavinia Kinney, (2nd) — Pride; 8, William, m. Rebecca Hoar; 9, Samuel (in U.S.A.); 10, Jane, m. Henry Brown.
vi. Sarah, b. 1789, m. 1808, David Whitman.
vii. Peter, b. 1791, m. 1813, Rachel Robinson, b. 1792; Ch.: 1, Sarah Ann, b. 1814, m. Walter Wilson; 2, Robert Robinson, b. 1815, m. (1st) Rebecca Bishop, (2nd) Lovicia Beardsley; 3, Simon Peter, m. Ann Dudgeon; 4, Eleanor, b. 1821, m. William Starratt; 5, Wallace, b. 1823, m. (1st) Susan Dunn, (2nd) Carrie Caldwell; 6, Mary Eliza, b. 1825, m. Alline Morse; 7, Amoret, b. 1827, m. — Davidson; 10, John, b. 1833, d. unm.; 11, Hannah, b. 1836, m. Jos. T. Bass.
viii. Handley Chipman, b. 1793, m. Jane Dudgeon: Ch.: 1, George, b. 1818, m. Phebe Johnston; 2, William, m. Eleanor Starratt; 3, John, m. Sarah Ann Brinton; 4, James, m. (1st) Rachel Starratt, (2nd) — Bacon, (3rd) Esther Dimock; 5, Silas, d. unm.; 6,

* Other Starratts, of Scotch-Irish extraction, early settled in Maine and New Hampshire, and it is possible that Joseph may have been of another family.—[ED.]

Elizabeth, unm.; 7, Sarah, m. Ansley Brinton; 8, Eleanor, d. unm.; 9, Amanda, m. Lewis Smith.

ix. Hannah, b. 1795, m. James Lynam.

x. Samuel, b. 1797, m. Ann Bancroft: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1826; 2, Alfred, b. and d. 1828; 3, Caroline Adelia, b. 1832; 4, Alfred, b. 1834.

xi. James,* b. 1799, m. Eleanor Morse, of Paradise, removed to Bridgewater.

xii. Henry Alline, b. 1802, m. Amelia Dudgeon, had probably ch.

xiii. Eleanor, b. 1785, m. Henry Parker.

3. George Starratt, born, it is said, 1747, but perhaps later, married, 1785, Sarah Balcom, and had children:

i. Mary, d. unm.

ii. Elizabeth, m. Robert Charlton.

iii. Simon, b. 1790, d. 1871, m. (1st) 1824, Abigail Bent, (2nd) 1831, Mary Corbitt: Ch.: 1, Amanda, m. Edmund Bent; 2, George, b. 1825, d. 1829; 3, Euphemia, b. 1827, d. 1836; (by 2nd w.): 4, William E., b. 1832, m. Susan Freeman; 5, Alvan, b. 1834, m.

iv. Joseph, b. 1793, m. (1st) 1826, Rebecca Bent, (2nd) Susan Marshall: Ch.: 1, Benjamin, b. 1827, m. — Fowler; 2, George, b. 1829, m. Emily Bentley, *née* Dugwell; 3, Abigail, b. 1832, d. unm.; 4, David Bent, b. 1836, m.; 5, Stephen, b. 1838; 6, Ferguson.

v. Benjamin, b. 1793, m. Christina Rowland: Ch.: 1, Sarah Elizabeth, m. William Stanley Bent; 2, Mary Olivia; 3, Robert Charlton, m. Patience Chesley; 4, Zenas Edwin, d. unm.; 5, Annie Bent, m. George Lavers.

vi. Ann, b, 1796, m. Rufus Bent.

4. William Starratt, born, it is said, 1749, married a Miss Webber, and had children:

i. James, m. Ann Troop: Ch.: 1, Jacob, m. Susan Hardwick; 2, Joseph, m. Mary Ann Davis; 3, Abner, d. unm.; 4, James, d. unm.; 5, Charles, m. Ellen Riley; 6, William, d. unm.; 7, Mary, d. unm.; 8, Anne, m. Antonio Gavaza; 9. Catharine, m. James Hardwick; 10, Henrietta, m. Josiah Hardwick; 11, Eliza, m. John Vroom.

ii. Joseph, m. and lived in Cornwallis.

And probably others.

Stronach. The founder of this Annapolis County family, George Stronach, was born in or near Glasgow, and was a son of a merchant of that city. He lost his mother at the age of fifteen or sixteen, after which he was sent to a High School to prepare for a university course, but owing to disagreements with his step-mother, or dislike of the school, or both, it is said he left the coach which was to have conveyed him to the school, after a visit home on a vacation, and took ship for America—then about eighteen years old. He met General Ruggles in Halifax, and came with him to the County of Annapolis. He and Benjamin Fales, already

* See DesBrisay's "History of Lunenburg," p. 211, from which it would appear that John also was born in Ireland, and therefore not a son of a wife married in Maine.

noted, obtained for their three years' services to the General a deed of a thousand acres of land (five hundred to each), on and near that portion of the North Mountain which now bears his name—the Stronach Mountain. The tract of land was divided from north to south, the east side going to Stronach, the west to Fales; and the Stronach road was afterward constructed on the line between them. They built houses quite near each other, and he married Fales' sister, Mary, and after her death, Elizabeth O'Connor, *née* Merritt. He was clever and witty, with a little eccentricity, while his superior education made him conspicuous among his fellow-settlers. Children:

i. Rev. Ebenezer, m. Amy Randall: Ch.: 1, Major, m. (1st) — Smith, (2nd) Margaret Cropley, *née* Cook; 2, Mary Amy, d. unm.; 3, George James, m. Maria Nichols; 4, Rachel, d. unm.; 5, Emily, unm.; 6, Ebenezer, m. Helen Gates; 7, William, unm.
ii. William, m. Hepzibah Gates: Ch.: 1 (only), Asaph, m. (1st) Lorinda Milbury, (2nd) Mary Reagh.
iii. Nelson, m. Margaret Fales: Ch.: 1, William Elder, in British Columbia; 2, Mary, m. Horatio N. Bent; 3, Abraham B., M.D., m. Jessie Gates; 4, Alfred, m. (in B.C.); 5, Jane, m. John Dunn; 6, Spurgeon; 7, Jacob Reis, m. Alice Baker; 8, Enoch J.
iv. Reis, m. Mary Reagh: Ch.: 1, Sarah, m. William McNeill; 2, W. Pryor, m. Jessie Ray; 3, Naomi, m. Johnston McNeill; 4, George, m. Susan Margeson; 5, Samuel, d. unm.; 6 and 7, died young; 8, Julia, m. Isaac Fales.
v. Rev. Abraham, m. (1st) Susan Reagh, (2nd) Betsey Marchant: Ch.: 1, Mary, m. (1st) Henry McMahon, (2nd) Ezra Reid; 2, Edmund Reis, m. Jane Robinson; 3, Sarah, d. unm.; 4, Lucy, m. Henry L. Baker; 5, Rebecca, m. Edward Eaton; 6, Rachel, m. David Kinsman; 7, Rebecca Nelson, d. unm.; 8, Rubia, m. (1st) Bent Stronach, (2nd) Amos Burns; 9, Amelia, m. Charles Baker; 10, George, m. Mary Martin; 11, Maggie, m. James E. Newcomb; 12, Eliza, m. James Francis.
vi. Sarah, m. William Downey.
vii. Elizabeth, m. Luther Baker.
viii. Margaret, m. William Cochran.
ix. Rachel, m. Oldham Gates.

By second wife:

x. George, m. Susan Bent: Ch.: 1, William, unm.; 2, Armanilla, d. unm.; 3, Inglis Charles; 4, Susie.

THORNE. WILLIAM THORNE, the common immigrant ancestor, came over to America as early as 1637 or 1638, and is said to have finally settled near New York. STEPHEN, b. 1720, a great-grandson of William, through his son Joseph, and grandson Joseph, came to Nova Scotia with the Loyalists of 1783, bringing his wife and family with him; his youngest son being thirteen, and his eldest (by his first wife) being forty years old. He m. (1st), in 1742, Sybil Sands, (2nd) Jane Rapalje, *née* Lefferts. Children:

i. Stephen, b. 1743, d. in New York.
(2) ii. Philip, b. 1745.
(3) iii. Edward, b. 1747.

iv. Richard, b. 1749, m. a dau. of Col. Frederic Williams, Digby, and had one son, FREDERIC WILLIAMS, who m. Sarah Tucker. He lived at the head of St. Mary's Bay, some distance south of Digby Neck road, and left two sons and two daughters: *Richard W.*, m. Philenda Farnham, still living in Digby, and *Frederic W.*, m. Mary Josephine Wooster, in Lower Granville; *Mary Eliza*, m. Captain John Bennet, of Digby; *Eugenia*, m. Thomas Boyne, of St. John, his 2nd wife.

By second wife:

(4) v. James, b. 1767, m. 1792.
vi. Sybil, b. 1770, d. unm.

2. PHILIP THORNE was born 1745, and m. 1784, Hannah, dau. of Jonathan Woodbury, M.D. Children:

i. Joseph, b. 1786, m. 1808, Grace Dunn.
ii. Hannah, b. 1788, d. 1788.
iii. Jonathan Woodbury (M.D.), b. 1790, m. dau. of Snow Parker (no issue).
iv. Stephen, b. 1792, m. and lived in N.B.
v. Bertha, b. 1794, m. William Armstrong.
vi. Sybil, b. 1796, m. James McGill.
vii. Richard, b. 1799, d. unm.
viii. Lydia Jane, b. 1801, m. Blackburn.
ix. Lorena, b. 1803, m. Charles White.
x. Edward Foster, b. 1804, m. Henrietta Clark: Ch.: 1, William Henry, m. Mary Ann Andrews; 2, Edward R., m. Jane Cameron; 3, Sarah, m. John Lemuel Brown; 4, Mary Matilda, m. Henry Andrews; 5, John; 6, Alma Hall.
xi. Woodbury (M.D.), b. 1808, m. 1835, Maria Sabine, dau. of John King, R.N.: Ch.: 1, John Crickmore, b. 1838, m. Clarinda Clarke; 2, Sarah, m. William Anglin; 3, Maria, m. George McArthur; 4, Joseph E., m. Ann Knapp.

3. EDWARD THORNE, who was born in 1747, m. in 1774, Jane, dau. of Jeronimus Rapalye. Children:

i. Edward, b. 1781, m. 1808, Catharine Bogart: Ch.: 1, Stephen Rapalye, b. 1810, m. 1832, Maria Sands, and had only dau., *Elizabeth Sands*, b. 1833, m. G. Sydney Smith, Esq.; 2, Abraham Bogart, b. 1812, m. (1st) 1836, Elizabeth Dickson, *née* Sands, (2nd) Elizabeth Kennedy.
ii. Jane, b. 1777, m. Timothy Ruggles, jun., M.P.P.

4. JAMES THORNE, was born 1767, and married, 1792, Anna Sneden, and had children:

i. Margaret Anna, b. 1793, m. John McColl.
ii. Stephen Sneden (M.P.P.), b. 1795, m. 1818, Mehitable Patten Hall: Ch.: 1, James Hall, b. 1819, m. Mary Robinson, *née* Piper; 2, Stephen, b. 1821, m. Lydia Lockhart; 3, Havilah, b. 1823, m. Timothy Dwight Ruggles, M.P.P., etc.; 4, Anna, b. 1826, m. Lewis Johnston, M.D.; another dau. m. James Alexander James, of New Brunswick, barrister.
iii. Jane, b. 1797, m. James Hall.
iv. James, b. 1799, d. unm.

v. Mary, b. 1801, m. Joseph Shaw.
vi. Sybil, b. 1804, m. (1st) Moses Hall, (2nd) Edward T. Knowles.
vii. Edward Lefferts, b. Sept. 9, 1807, m. July 5, 1835, Susan Scovil, St. John, N.B., and d. Feb. 23, 1882: Ch.: 1, Mary Lucretia, b. April 20, 1836; 2, William Henry, b. Sept. 12, 1844; 3, Daniel Scovil, b. Feb. 26, 1848; 4, Susan Louisa, b. March 15, 1854, m. Sept. 8, 1875, Legh Richmond Harrison; 5, Arthur Townshend, b. April 19, 1859.
viii. Richard Ward, b. Feb. 10, 1812, m. May 4, 1842, Catherine Alder, dau. of Henry Hennigar, Ordnance Department: Ch.: 1, Richard Ward, b. July 6, 1843, m. Sept. 14, 1881, Mary Ada Chapman; 2, Stephen Sneden, b. May 11, 1846, m. Sept. 4, 1883, Alice Bertha Lowerison; 3, James Lefferts, b. Dec. 5, 1847, m. June 17, 1878, Amelia F. Capen; 4, Kate Ellen, b. May 29, 1849, m. Sept. 17, 1876, Wm. H. Fleming; 5, Anna Sybil, b. Dec. 11, 1851, m. May 24, 1874, Robt. Chestnut, son of Henry Thorne; 6, Mary Hennigar, b. Sept. 30, 1853, m. July 3, 1888, Edward T. C. Knowles; 7, Ada Louisa Sancton, b. Aug 31, 1859, m. June 7, 1881, Peter Wellington Snider; 8, Harriet Pritchard, b. Feb. 17, 1861.
ix. Sarah Hester, b. 1810, m. Shadrach Ricketson.
x. James Townshend, b. 1815; m. Eliza Robblee: Ch.: 1, James H., m. Lydia Jane, dau. of John Wooster; 2, Mary Emily; 3, Anna Sneden, m. Benj. F. Congdon; 4, Joseph Reed, m. Blanche Pickup; 5, Frederic Williams, m. Emma Croscup; 6, Edward Lefferts, m. Martha Thorne; 7, Sybil, d. unm.; 8, Stephen Ernest.

Troop. 1. Valentine Troop, the founder of this family, must have been born in Germany,* for tradition affirms that the German language was spoken in the family after his arrival here. He had been married four years when he arrived here, and died sixteen years later. His descendants have been not only numerous, but many of them prominent and influential in Church and State in this and other provinces of the Dominion. He married, 1756, Catherine Church, in Massachusetts, and died at Granville, August 16, 1776. Children:

(2) i. John, b. July, 1757.
(3) ii. Jacob, b. 1758.
iii. Jennie, b. Sept., 1760.
(4) iv. George, b. 1762.
v. Elizabeth, b. 1765, m. Silvanus Wade.
(5) vi. Henry, b. Feb. 14, 1768.
vii. Joseph, b. Oct. 1, 1770. m. (1st) Sarah Rice, (2nd) Frances Manning, *née* Farnsworth: Ch.: 1, Sophia; 2, Caroline, m. Wm. H. Morse; 3, Elizabeth, m. Wm. H. Chipman; 4, Tamar, m. Richard Starr; 5, Jane, m. Winckworth Chipman; 6, Maria; 7, Mehitable, m. C. C. Hamilton, M.D.; 8, Sarah, m. James Lockwood; 9, a son or dau., d. unm.
viii. Catharine, b. Sept. 30, 1772, m. Joseph Fellows.
ix. Jane, m. Spencer Barnes.

* Tradition in such matters cannot always be relied on. There was a Troop in Barnstable, Mass., as early as 1666; and Valentine married in that colony, and was not unlikely a New Englander.—[Ed.]

2. JOHN TROOP, b. 1757, m. 1780, Eunice Fellows (dau. of Israel). Children:

i. Susanna, b. 1780, m. Ezra F. Foster.
ii. John, b. 1782, m. 1806, Hannah Gesner: Ch.: 1, John, b. 1807, d. 1823, unm; 2, Eliza, b. 1809, m. 1829, John Wade; 3, Famitcha,* b. 1812, m. 1834, Calvin Young; 4, Sumner, b. 1816, m. Lydia C. Kinney; 5, Maria, b. 1814, m. 1837, Edwin Morse; 6, Joseph Henry, b. 1819, m. Hannah Bent; 7, Eunice Ann, b. 1822, d. unm.
iii. Polly, b. 1784, m. Thomas Chute.
iv. Israel, b. 1786, m. Ann Millidge: Ch.: 1, Sarah Caroline, b. 1815, m. Lawrence Willett; 2, Emily, b. 1818, m. William Mills; 3, Stephen Millidge, b. 1821, m. Sarah McCormick; 4, Hon. William Botsford, b. 1824, m. (1st) Susan Morehouse, *née* Messenger, (2nd) Adelia Brown, (3rd) Elizabeth Magee.
v. Joseph, b. 1789, d. unm.
vi. Jacob, b. 1791, m. Ann Miller: Ch.: 1, Angelina, b. 1826, m. David Harris; 2, Thomas Williams, b. 1828, m. Catharine Troop, *née* Oliver; 3, Gilbert Fowler, b. 1830, m. Annie M. Smith; 4, Leonard, b. 1832, m. Catherine Oliver; 5, Georgina, b. 1835, m. Nathan Chute.
vii. Cynthia, b. 1795, m. (1st) Simcoe Willett, (2nd) Isaac Phinney.
viii. George, b. 1798, m. 1825, Susan Parker: Ch.: 1, John, b. 1826, m. Hannah Harris; 2, Keziah, b. 1828, m. Thomas Harris; 3, Alfred, b. 1831, d. unm.; 4, Cynthia, b. 1833, m. Seth Wade; 5, Emily, b. 1837, m. Francis Christopher; 6, Anna, b. 1839, m. William Milbury; 7, Joseph Edward, b. 1841, m. Martha Bent.
ix. Eliza, b. 1802, m. (1st) Samuel Wade, (2nd) William Young.
x. Leonard, b. 1804, d. unm.
xi. Sarah Ann, b. 1806, m. Michael Harris.

3. JACOB TROOP, b. 1759, m. 1774, Anna Morse (dau. of Abner). Children:

i. Jacob, b. 1775, d. 1803, unm.
ii. Anna, b. 1777, m. Henry Balcom.
iii. Valentine, b. 1779, m. 1806, Tamar Bath, d. 1861: Ch.: 1, Ann Maria, b. 1807, m. William Bent; 2, Jacob Valentine (M.P.P., New Brunswick), b. 1809, m. Catherine Fellows; 3, Harriet, b. 1811, m. Alexander Hardwick; 4, Silas M., b. 1814, m. Ann Witherspoon; 5, Alfred, b. 1816, m. (1st) Sarah Ann Mills, (2nd) Lovicia Irvine, *née* Marshall; 6, Israel, b. 1819, m. Adelia Welsh; 7, Keziah B., b. 1821, unm.; 8, Stephen Bamford, b. 1824, m. Sarah Robblee.
iv. Polly, b. 1781.
v. Elizabeth, b. 1784, m. 1803, John Bath, jun.
vi. Abner, b. 1786, m. 1812, Henrietta Cooper Bath: Ch.: 1, Keziah, b. 1813; 2, Margaret, b. 1815, m. Charles Parker; 3, John Bath, b. 1817, m. Susan Amelia Bent; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1819, m. William Witherspoon; 5, Robert Hill, b. 1820, m. Priscilla Fowler; 6, Valentine, b. 1822, m. Lavinia Dodge; 7, Abner, m. Rachel Clark; 8, Obadiah Botsford, m. Lillias Stirck; 9, Charles Edward, m. Jane Willett; 10, Eugene P., m. Lydia Bent; 11, Henrietta Cooper, m. Lawrence Willett.
vii. Catharine, b. 1788, d. 1803.
viii. Maria, b. 1792.
ix. Phebe, b. 1798, m. 1820, John Bath, jun.

* This lady may have spoken in German to her family.—[ED.]

4. George Troop, b. 1762, m. (1st) 1787, Mercy Morse, (2nd) Margaret Chipman. Children :

i. Valentine C., bpd. Aug. 30, 1789, m. 1819, Rebecca Ansley : Ch. : 1, Rebecca, b. 1820, m. Robert Hunter ; 2, Ozias, b. 1823, m. ; 3, Lucretia, b. 1825, m. George N. Rouse ; 4, Alphonso, b. 1826.
ii. David, b. 1790, d. unm.
iii. Abigail, b. 1792, d. unm.
iv. Nancy, b. 1794, m. William Elderkin.
v. Catharine, b. 1797, m. William Elderkin.
vi. Mary, b. 1800, d. 1824, unm.
vii. Abigail, b. 1799, m. — Bailey.
viii. Thomas Handley, b. 1802, d. 1832, unm.
ix. George Whitefield, b. 1804, m. Charlotte Robinson : Ch. : 1, Emma Charlotte, unm. ; 2, Thomas Handley, m. Anna Hamilton ; 3, Mary Eliza, d. unm. ; 4, William Robinson, m. Alice Lockett ; 5, Augusta, m. Russell Cropley ; 6, Susan, d. unm.
x. Jacob, b. 1806, m. Mary —— : Ch. : 1, Alice, d. unm. ; 2, Susan, d. unm.
xi. Charles J., b. 1809, m. Sophia Pentz : Ch. : 1, George, d. unm. ; 2, Jacob H. ; 3, Catharine ; 4, Julia ; 5, Charles.
xii. Maria, b. 1811, m. George Oxley.
xiii. Arthur Wellington, b. 1813.

5. Henry Troop, b. 1768, m. Mary Randall. Children :

i. Alexander Howe, m. 1817, Eunice Chipman : Ch. : 1, William Henry (barrister), b. 1819, m. dau. of Venerable Archdeacon Coster, Fredericton N.B. ; 2, Alexander, b. 1822, d. unm. ; 3, Harriet Elizabeth, b. 1824, unm. ; 4, John George, b. 1826, m. Miss Morrow (a leading Halifax merchant) ; 5, Robert Grant, b. 1828, d. unm. ; 6, Joseph Osborne, b. 1830, d. unm. ; 7, Jared Ingersol Chipman (barrister, M.P.P., and Speaker), b. 1834, m. Isabel Grassie.
ii. A son or dau., d. unm.
iii. William Henry, J.P., m. Lucy Ann Manning : Ch. : 1, Mary Ann, b. 1826 ; 2, Charlotte Augusta, b. 1830, m. Hon. Avard Longley, M.P.P., M.P.

Tuffts. The Tuffts of this and Halifax counties are descended from Captain Peter Tuffts who came from England in 1638 to Malden, Mass., through Peter,[2] m. (1st) Elizabeth, dau. of Thomas Layside, (2nd) Mary, dau. of Seaborn Cotton ; Rev. John,[3] of Newbury, m. (1st) Sarah, dau. of John Bradstreet, (2nd) Elizabeth Sargent ; Rev. Joshua,[4] m. Abigail, dau. of William Ellery, and came to Cumberland, N.S., in 1762.

William Ellery Tuffts (son of Rev. Joshua), b. 1747, m. 1772, Hannah Whitman, b. 1751. Children :

i. John Whitman, b. 1774, m. Phebe, dau. of Arthur Schofield, who d. 1819, aged 106 : Ch. : 1, Freeman, b. 1803, d. 1841, m. Lucy Thorpe ; 2, Mary, b. 1805, d. 1859, unm. ; 3, Orinda, b. 1806, d. 1884, unm. ; 4, Jemima, b. 1808, m. William Frye ; 5, Samuel, b. 1810, m. Louisa, dau. of Andrew Kniffen, and was the father of Professor John Freeman Tufts, of Acadia College ; 6, Gardner, b. 1812, m. Nancy, dau. of Alex. Wilson. John W. and his wife both d. 1896, she aged 79, he 84.

ii. Dorcas, b. 1776, d. aged, unm.
iii. Sarah, b. 1778, m. — Eaton (school-teacher).
iv. Samuel, b. 1781, d. 1808, unm.
v. Phebe, b. 1783, m. Joseph Brigham Balcom.
vi. Mercy, b. 1786, m. Joseph Daniels, jun.
vii. Hannah, b. 1788, m. Samuel Langley.
viii. Ann, b. 1791, m. Samuel Marshall.
ix. Jacob, b. 1794, d. aged.

Tupper. The Tuppers of Annapolis County are a branch of the Kings County family from whom Sir Charles Tupper is descended. They are of English origin, but an idea prevails among some of the family antiquarians that they came from Hesse Cassel to England to escape persecution on account of their religion in 1520 or 1522, which of course cannot be verified, and is probably fabulous. The Diet of Worms met in 1521, and condemned Luther's works, but no general persecution was instituted against those who then believed in them. The name may be Anglo-Saxon from Topfar, or Toppher, as contrasted with Norman English, and has probably existed in England from a very remote era; in some cases it may be from a Norman name Toutpert, to which I would venture to assign the Guernsey family, which produced Martin F. Tupper, the poet; while Topper, in "Burke's Armory," I should consider another form of the Saxon name. This eliminates any idea of a connection between the old Guernsey family and the English stock which sent out this branch to America. The immigrant ancestor came from Sandwich, in Kent, to New England, in 1635, and was one of the founders of Sandwich, in Plymouth Colony, Mass, where he and several of his early descendants held important offices and exercised a great and beneficial influence in civil and religious affairs; one or two actively engaged in the work of evangelizing the Indians. The line of descent was through Thomas,[1] Thomas,[2] Eliakim,[3] Eliakim,[4] who, born in 1711, married in 1734, removed from Lebanon, Conn. (where he had been a representative, and had the titles of Captain and Deacon), to Cornwallis, N.S., about 1760. His wife was Mary, daughter of William Bassett, of Sandwich. He had a son Charles, who was the father of Rev. Charles Tupper, D.D., and through him grandfather of Sir Charles Tupper, Bart. Elisha, Miner and Asa settled at Clark's Ferry (now called Tupperville), a mile or two eastward of Round Hill. They were sons of Elias, a brother of Captain Eliakim, born probably 1717 (died at Tupperville, May 14, 1800, aged 83), who married September 4th, 1740, Jerusha Sprague, who was born 1723, and died 1795, aged 72, and had children, besides others who probably remained in Connecticut:

i. Elisha, b. 1753, d. 1811, m. 1792, Elizabeth Sprague: Ch.: 1, Lucy, b. 1793, m. James Carty; 2, Ann, b. 1795, m. Stephen Chipman; 3, Amy, b. 1797, m. Stephen Bent; 4, William, b.

1799, m. July 10, 1823, Elizabeth Tupper (dau. of Eliakim, of Stewiacke), and d. May 8, 1827, leaving only ch.: Maria, b. Dec. 8, 1825, m. Barzillai Forsyth ; 5, Elizabeth.

ii. Elias, b. 1755, d. 1786.

(2) iii. Miner, b. 1757.

iv. Asa, b. 1759, d. 1810, m. Margaret Agar, *née* VanHorne (b. 1767, d. 1827) : Ch.: 1, Lawrence VanHorne, b. 1793, m. 1816, Lucy Bent; 2, Jerusha, b. 1795, m. Handley Chipman Morse ; 3, Phebe, b. 1796, m. (1st) Robert Fitzrandolph, (2nd) John Quirk ; 4, Elias, b. 1799, m. Elizabeth Tupper (widow of his cousin William), and had ch.: 1, *William*, b. Jan. 17, 1830 ; 2, *Margaret*, b. Feb. 11, 1832 ; 3, *Lydia*, b. Dec. 10, 1833 ; 4, *Mary Elizabeth*, b. Nov. 27, 1836 ; 5, *Elias Hennigar*, b. June 20, 1841 ; and perhaps others.

v. Eliakim, b. 1761, m. Elizabeth Newcomb, and settled in Stewiacke.

2. Miner Tupper was born in 1757 and died in 1805. He married Margaret VanHorne, and had children :

i. John, b. 1791, m. April 30, 1812, Elizabeth Longley, and d. July 30, 1849 : Ch.: 1, Susan Ann, b. Feb. 16, 1813, m. Henry Randall ; 2, Israel, b. 1815, d. unm.; 3, Miner, b. Jan. 30, 1817, m. Feb. 1, 1842, Elizabeth Ann Winchester ; 4, Mary Eliza, b. Sept. 19, 1821, m. Peter McKay ; 5, Mayhew, b. April 1, 1824, d. 1827 ; 6, Harriet Lovicia, b. March 8, 1826, m. Edward C., son of Benjamin Foster ; 7, Elvina, b. March 11, 1830.

ii. Mary, m. Henry Gates, M.P.P. (his 1st wife).

iii. Dorothy, m. Feb. 11, 1813, James Rice.

iv. Jerusha, m. Hira Tupper.

Eliakim Tupper, late M.P.P. for Digby, was son of David and grandson of Eliakim, who, the deceased gentleman always claimed, was a brother of the grandfather of Sir Charles Tupper, and therefore son of Capt. Eliakim.

VanBlarcom. The VanBlarcoms of this county are no doubt descended from Johannes VanBlarcom, who emigrated from Holland, and settled at Hoboken, New Jersey, about 1623. Blarcom is the name of a community settled near Rotterdam, Holland. Peter VanBlarcom came to Shelburne, N.S., among the Loyalists of 1783. I cannot trace the Alfred who is mentioned in the capitation tax list of 1792, but the author gives us an Anthony VanBlarcom, who married Rosanna Wade, and had children :

i. John, m. Jane Eagleson (no issue).

ii. Joseph, d. unm.

iii. Elizabeth, m. James Webber.

iv. Martin, m. Sarah Leonard, and had ch.: 1, James, m. (1st) Eunice Jones, (2nd) Lydia (no issue) ; 2, Eliza, m. Ritson Longmire ; 3, Seth, m. Mary Jane Powell ; 4, Benjamin, m. Catharine Nickerson, formerly M.P.P. and Sheriff of Digby ; 5, Mary Ann, m. Hiram Young ; 6, Harriet, m. Thomas Baxter ; 7, Phebe, m. Isaac Young ; 8, John, in U.S.A.; 9, Joseph, m. Henrietta Young ; 10, Zebediah, m. Eliza Eagleson ; 11, Hiram, unm.

VanBuskirk. The immigrant ancestor of the VanBuskirks came to New Amsterdam, now New York, among the early settlers from Holland, but according to the "Chute Genealogies," was a native of Denmark, by name Lawrence Andersen, to which VanBoskirck was added by way of some distinction, "Van" being the Dutch equivalent for the French *de*, "of"; as, Lawrence Anderson, "of Boskirck." About 1660 he settled at Bergen County, New Jersey, was an able man, advocate and judge; he had a son Lawrens, born about 1663, married Hendricke van der Linde or Van Derlinde, and was a member of the Assembly. He had in turn a son Lawrens, who died 1774. By his wife Eva the last-named had two sons, John and Abraham; John had a son Lawrence and a son Abraham. The latter, born about 1740, was Colonel of the 4th battalion N. J. Loyal Volunteers, and settled at Shelburne, N.S., and his son Jacob had a daughter Sarah, who was the mother of the late Thomas VanBuskirk Bingay, of Yarmouth, barrister. Lawrence, born 1729, in Hackensack, Bergen County, N.J., was a captain in the King's Orange Rangers; came to St. John in 1783, and lived afterwards in Kentville and Aylesford, dying at the latter place in 1803. He married Jannetje VanBuskirk, a cousin, daughter of Abraham, his father's brother. His sons John, Garrett, and Henry were grantees in Aylesford and Wilmot, and the sons of John remained in this county. Children:

i. Abraham, b. about 1750, was of the King's Orange Rangers in 1782, m. Ann Corson, came to Nova Scotia, but later returned and lived at Athens on the Hudson, and d. at New York about 1820, leaving sons and daughters.
ii. Thomas, b. 1752, also a Loyalist officer, came to Nova Scotia, but returned to the United States.
iii. John, b. 1754, m. Catharine ——: Ch.: 1, Charles, m. Garritie Vroom; 2, Lawrence, m. Mary Brymer; 3, Jeremiah, m. Mehitable Welton; 4, Mary, m. Francis Smith; 5, Ellen, m. Nathaniel Morgan; 6, Dorothea, m. (1st) Martin Ryerson, (2nd) Thomas Welton.
iv. Garrett, b. 1756, m. Elizabeth Potts, step-dau. of Capt. Oldham Gates: Ch.: 1, Lawrence, b. 1780, m. (1st) VanHorne, (2nd) VanBuskirk; 2, John Oldneck, b. 1782, m. Elizabeth West; 3, Dorothy, b. 1784, m. Ezekiel Brown; 4, Ann, b. 1786, m. Thomas Gates; 5, Samuel, b. 1788, m. Mary, dau. of Paul Crocker; 6, Catharine, b. 1790, m. Edwin, son of John Morgan; 7, Jemima, b. 1792, m. Martin Ryerson; 8, Abram, b. Sept. 5, 1794, d. young; 9, Henry, b. June 13, 1797, m. Ruth, dau. of John Morgan; 10, Nelson, b. June 13, 1799, m. Betsey Chute; 11, Charles, b. April 2, 1804, m. Rebecca, dau. of Wells and Abba Congdon.
v. Jemima, b. 1761, m. Simeon Ryerson.
vi. Theodosia, m. James Harris.
vii. Henry, b. 1767, m. (1st) Isabella Donkin, (2nd) Nancy Potter: Ch.: 1, William Henry, b. May 1, 1798, m. Elizabeth Watson; 2, Dr. Lawrence E., b. Nov. 6, 1799, m. Mary E. Hanley, d. 1867 at Halifax; 3, Elizabeth, b. Jan. 14, 1802; 4, Dr. Robert, b. March 13, 1804, m. Ann, dau. of James R. DeWolfe; he died soon, and she married Rev. W. H. Snyder; 5, Dr. George Pitt, b. April 15,

1806, m. Margaret Reid ; 6, Charlotte, b. June 14, 1808, m. Thomas Spurr, Bridgetown, d. 1857 ; 7, Abraham, b. Jan. 4, 1811, m. Eliza Harris, d. 1865 ; 8, Dr. Inglis, b. April 9, 1813, m. Eliza, dau. of James Barss ; 9, James Donkin, b. May 4, 1816, m. Catharine, sister of Rev. H. L. Owen.

VIDITO. This family is probably of Huguenot origin, but whence they came directly to this province I find no record. John Vidito, residing at Annapolis, died December, 1820, aged 93, and therefore was born in 1727. He may have been father of JUSTUS, who had children :

i. Jesse, m. Isabel Fisher : Ch. : 1, John, m. Ann Daley ; 2, William, m. Mary Marshall ; 3, Rev. Nathaniel, m. Caroline Munroe ; 4, Parker, m. Mary R. Dunn ; 5, Rev. Silas, m. Eleanor McGregor ; 6, James, m. Hannah Saunders ; 7, Rebecca, m. Gideon Clark ; 8, Susan, m. David Ward ; 9, Caroline, m. George Marshall ; 10, Mary, m. Oliver Marshall.
ii. Jacob, m. Eliza Peoples.
iii. Phebe, m. Thomas Stacey.
iv. Charlotte, m. Stephen Jefferson.
And probably others.

VROOM. CORNELIS[1] PIETERSE VROOM settled in New Amsterdam, now New York, some time previous to 1645. He had three sons—1, Cornelius Corssen Vroom ; 2, Peter Corssen Vroom ; 3, Hendrick[2] Corssen Vroom, born 1653. The latter had six children—Cornelius, Judith, Rachel, Hendrick,[3] Alfred, and Katryna. The son Hendrick[3] was born in 1683, and had sons Hendrick,[4] George, John and Peter. The eldest son Hendrick[4] had children—Peter,[5] John,[5] George, Hendrick, Janitie, Sintie, Catherine and Lemmettie. The two eldest sons Peter[5] and John[5] were the Loyalists who came to Nova Scotia. Their brothers George and Hendrick were among the New Jersey men in the Revolutionary forces. Peter[5] D. Vroom was a colonel in the Revolutionary army, being a son of George Vroom, the uncle of the four brothers just mentioned, and therefore first cousin to the Loyalists, Peter and John. This Col. Peter D. Vroom was the father of the late Hon. Peter[6] D. Vroom, for some years Governor of New Jersey, and also U. S. Minister to Prussia. The Hon. G. D. W.[7] Vroom, of Trenton, N.J., and Peter[7] D. Vroom, Lieut.-Col. and Inspector-General of the U. S. army, are sons of the late Governor Vroom.

In 1776 Peter Vroom, evidently the one who subsequently came to Nova Scotia, was arrested and brought before the Hillsborough Committee in New Jersey on a charge of "disloyalty." After being several times before the committee he was committed to gaol. On the 2nd of February, 1776, he was taken from Millstone gaol by Capt. Peter D. Vroom, by order of the committee, and brought before the Provincial Congress of New Jersey, at New Brunswick, N.J. The following is from the Minutes of the Congress :

"The proceedings of the Committee of Hillsborough, in the County of Somerset, against Peter Vroom of Piscataway, in the County of Middlesex, being transmitted to this Congress and read, ordered that the charge against said Vroom be now considered.

"Peter Vroom being ordered to be brought before this Congress attended accordingly, and the proceedings of the Committee of Hillsborough were read in the presence of said Vroom, who confessed the charge therein exhibited, and having offered matter in mitigation was ordered to withdraw.

"*Resolved*,—That the determination of the charge exhibited against Peter Vroom be deferred to some future day in the present session, and that in the meantime he be committed to the common gaol of the County of Somerset, the keeper of which is hereby required to receive and keep him in close confinement until this Congress take further order therein."

Further record says: "On application of Peter TenEick, in favour of Peter Vroom, and from the family circumstances of said Vroom, it is resolved, that the former order of commitment be rescinded, and that the aforesaid Peter Vroom be committed to the custody of Captain Peter TenEick, who has pledged his parole of honour to bring said Vroom before the Congress whenever required."

Further, under date March 1, 1776: "The Congress having resumed the consideration of the charges exhibited against Peter Vroom,

Resolved,—That said Peter Vroom pay the costs of the present prosecution, to be taxed by the Township Committee of Piscataway, and give obligation with surety, to the Chairman of said Committee in the sum of 150 pounds for his good behaviour in future; and that he yield up to said Chairman all his arms and weapons of defence, to remain in custody of said Chairman until the said Committee shall deem it proper to re-deliver them; and on non-compliance herewith, that said Vroom be re-committed to the keeper of the common gaol of the County of Middlesex, who is hereby ordered to keep him in close confinement during such non-compliance."

JOHN VROOM married, 1781, Jane Ditmars, and had children:

i. Henry, b. 1782, m. 1808, Abigail Ditmars: Ch.: 1, Jane, b. 1809, m. Calvin Wheelock; 2, John Ditmars, b. 1811, m. Catharine Jones; 3, Jeremiah, b. 1817, m. ——; 4, Harriet, b. 1813, m. Calvin Wheelock; 5, Adolphus Wesley, b. 1815; 6, Mary Magdalene, b. 1813, m. Thomas Jones; 9, 7, Avard, b. 1822, m. Eliza Chesley; 8, George Henry, b. 1824; Cornelius Hennigar, b. 1825, m. — Pearce.

ii. George, b. 1784, m. 1805, Mary Amberman: Ch.: 1, Sarah Ann, b. 1806, m. Samuel Purdy; 2, Henry Fowler, b. 1807, m. 1829, Elizabeth Purdy; 3, John, b. 1809; 4, George, b. 1811, m. Sarah VanBuskirk; 5, William, b. 1813, m. Frances Eliza, dau. of Ezra F. Foster, and was father of Rev. PROFESSOR VROOM, now of

King's College, Windsor ; 6, Frederic L. B., b. 1815, m. Eunice, dau. of Ezra F. Foster, and was father of *Wm. E. Vroom*, now a leading St. John merchant ; 7, James, b. 1817, m. Ellen Burns ; 8, Isaac, b. 1819 ; 9, Edwin, b. 1821, m. — Bogart ; 10, Caroline Wood, b. 1823, m. Pardon Sanders.

iii. Isaac, b. 1786, m. 1817, Mary Spurr (dau. of Shippey): Ch. : 1, Hattie Jane, b. 1818, m. (1st) John Bogart, (2nd) Stephen Quereau ; 2, Letitia Ann, b. 1821, m. William Voorhies Jones ; 3, John, b. 1823, m. (1st) Eliza Starratt, (2) Seraph Pearce ; 4, Caroline, b. 1825, m. Douw Jones ; 5, Margaret Elizabeth, b. 1827, m. Henry Fowler Burns ; 6, Isaac Ditmars, b. 1829, m. (1st) Mary Ann Hall, (2nd) Seraphina Ditmars ; 7, Albert D., b. 1831, m. Charlotte Morse ; 8, William Voorhies, b. 1833, m. Mary Ann Woodman ; 9, Ethaline Sophia, b. 1835, m. (1st) James Jones, (2nd) William Anderson.

iv. Charity, b. 1788, m. Charles VanBuskirk.

v. Sarah, b. 1790, m. Simon Purdy.

WADE. This family is descended from JONATHAN WADE, who emigrated in 1632 (according to "Savage's Genealogical Dictionary") from Denver, County of Norfolk, on West Side, one mile from Downham Market, and Prudence, his wife. His widow, however, was named Susanna, but he may have been twice married, or Prudence may be a mistake. He certainly had a daughter Prudence. He was a man of substance, ability and influence, representative to the General Court; a merchant, sat down first at Charleston, but removed to Ipswich. JOHN, probably his great-grandson, in 1758, then carrying on a carriage and chair manufactory, thirty-three years old, raised a company of troops to aid in the capture of Louisburg, and after that was accomplished he went with it to Quebec. In this company, which participated in the battle on the Plains of Abraham, was his apprentice, Samuel Bent, already spoken of. He came to Granville in 1760, after wintering in Halifax, and his wife and children, accompanied by her father and brother (James Arbuckle, senior and junior, who died soon after their arrival), came in 1761. He settled on lot No. 76, on which some of his descendants now reside. He was commissioned captain of militia in 1763, and was also a highly respected and efficient Justice of the Peace. The first turning-lathe used in the county was introduced by him and employed in his chair factory, which was also the first one in the valley, and for over half a century the only one. He has respectable and worthy descendants in almost every honourable industrial pursuit and in all the professions. A great-grandson, John Chipman Wade, represented Digby County many years, during four of which he was Speaker. Afterwards he was in the Dominion Parliament. He married Sarah Arbuckle, of Massachusetts, and died 1813. Children:

i. Daniel, m. (1st) 1776, Mary Starratt, (2nd) Elizabeth Fletcher, *née* Witherspoon : Ch. : 1, Hannah, b. 1776, d. 1776 ; 2, Mary, b. 1778, m. Job Young, jun.; 3, Elizabeth, b. 1780, m. Charles Bent ; 4, Hannah, b. 1781, m. Abraham Young ; 5, Susan, b.

1783, m. Archibald Morrison; 6, Rosanna, b. 1784, m. Edward Covert; (by 2nd wife): 7, Thomas, b. 1785, m. 1807 Christina Morrison, had ch.: 1, *William Edward*, b. 1810, d. 1839, unm.; 2, *Georgina*, b. 1812, d. unm.; 3, *Elvira*, b. 1816, m. LeVose Bent; 4, *John Morrison*, b. 1818, m. Julia Ann Miller; 5, *Catharine A.*, b. 1821, d. unm.; 6, *Mary Emeline*, b. 1823, m. Gilbert Ryerson; 7, *Catherine Adelia*, b. 1837, d. unm.

(2) ii. Sylvanus.

iii. Joseph, m. 1786, Sarah Patten (dau. of Joseph, M.P.P.): Ch.: 1, Patten, b. 1789, m. — Smith, and settled in a district on the St. John River, left a son William, and a dau. m. George Roney, of Granville; 2, Joseph, b. 1791, d. unm.; 3, Sarah, d. unm.; 4, John, m.; 5, Samuel, m.

iv. Hannah, m. James Macgregor.

(3) v. John, jun.

2. Sylvanus Wade married Elizabeth Troop, and had children:

i. John, m. (1st) 1812, Harriet Chipman, (2nd) Olivia Chipman: Ch.: 1, Annie, b. 1813, m. Peter McNab; 2, Harriet, b. 1815, m. Walter Withers; 3, John Chipman, b. 1817, d, 1892, m. Caroline, dau. of Rev. Roger Viets, jun.; (by 2nd w.): 4, Charlotte, d. unm.

ii. Joseph, m. (1st) Prudence Porter, (2nd) Mary Randall, (3rd) Nancy Parker (no issue), d. 1887, aged 101, a well-preserved centenarian.

iii. George, m. 1811, Elizabeth Wheelock: Ch.: 1, Gilbert, b. 1811, m. 1835, Rachel Halliday; 2, Phebe, b. 1813, d. unm.; 3, Joseph Churchill, m. 1838, Nancy Bent; 4, Benjamin, b. 1817, m. Ann Timpany; 5, Sylvanus, b. 1819, m. Ann Young; 6, George, b. 1821, m. Freelove Congdon; 7, Abel, b. 1828, m. William Young; 8, Mary Elizabeth, b. 1825, m. John Congdon; 9, Lucretia, b. 1834.

iv. James, m. Phebe Hall: Ch.: 1, Harriet, m. Samuel Bath; 2, James, m. Agnes Jones, of Marshalltown; 3, Elizabeth, m. John E. Bath; 4, Samuel, m. (1st) Miss Barnaby, of Digby, (2nd) Elizabeth Ells, of Woodstock; 5, David, unm.; 6, Thomas, d. unm.; 7, Charles, d. unm.; 8, Weston, d. unm.

v. Catharine, m. David Hall.

vi. Job, m. (1st) 1820, Hannah Witherspoon, (2nd) Mary Harvey: Ch.: 1, Joseph, b. 1830, m. (1st) Lavinia Parker, (2nd) Abigail Morse; 2, Hannah Olivia, b. 1832, d. 1833; 3, Hannah Olivia, d. unm.; 4, Annie Elizabeth, b. 1836, m. Henry Allen; 5, Norman, b. 1838, d. unm.; 6, Jane, b. 1840, m. Ebenezer Bent; 7, Catharine, b. 1842, m. John Roney; 8, Ellen, b. 1844, d. unm.; 9, John, b. 1846, m. Emma Lang; 10, Alfred, m. Mary Trefry; 11, Fletcher B., Barrister, Q.C., of Bridgewater.

3. John Wade, Jun., married 1789, Phebe Leonard, died 1811, Children:

i. Seth, b. 1790, m. 1814, Maria McCormick: Ch.: 1, Mary, m. Thomas Miller; 2, William, m. Irene Nicholls; 3, Jane, m. (1st) — Bailey, (2nd) William Letteney; 4, Stephen, d. unm.; 5, Ann, d. 1855, m. Solomon Marshall; 6, Daniel, d. unm.; 7, Hannah M., m. Amos Allen.

ii. Samuel, b. 1791, m. 1821, Eliza Troop: Ch.: 1, Sarah Ann, b. 1823, m. Walter Willett Wade; 2, Eunia, b. 1825, m. Charles Young; 3, Seth, b. 1828, m. Cynthia Troop; 4, Cynthia, b. 1830, m. Stephen Bent; 5, Leonard, b. 1832, unm.; 6, Henry, b. 1834, m.

Hannah Harding ; 7, Robert, m. Anna Sarah Gullis ; 8, Israel T., b. 1837, m. Lizzie McKeown ; 9, Emily, m. John Hutchinson.

iii. William, b. 1793, m. (1st 1820, Margaret Willett, (2nd) Maria McCormick : Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1821, d. unm.; 2, Walter Willett, b. 1822, m. Sarah Ann Wade ; 3, Edmund, b. 1825, m. Miss Douglas ; 4, Deborah, b. 1828, unm.; 5, Isaac, b. 1830, d. unm.; 6, Sumner, b. 1832, m. Ann Johnson ; 7, Abigail, b. 1835, m. Busby Gates ; 8, Eliza, m. Zebulon Blakesley ; 9, Margaret, m. Prior Sandford ; 10, William, m. (no issue).

iv. Ann, b. 1795, m. William Young.

v. Sarah, b. 1797, m. Henry Milbury.

vi. John, b. 1801, d. Oct. 9, 1889, m. 1829, Eliza Troop : Ch.: 1, Caroline, b. 1830, d unm.; 2, Henrietta, b. 1832, m. Andrew Mack; 3, Maria, b. 1837, unm.; 4, Eliza, b 1839, unm.; 5, John, b. 1842, d. unm.; 6, Alice, b. 1845, m. N. K. Clements, Yarmouth; 7, Charles, b. 1848, unm.; 8, Caroline G., b. 1854, d. unm.

vii. Susan, b. 1803, m. Joseph Osinger.

viii. Leonard, m. Maria McCormick, and had Rev. John Moore Campbell Wade, Rector of Aylesford, and others.

Walker. (See memoir of Thomas Walker, M.P.P., p. 397.)

Robert Walker, ancestor of one family of that name, was here early in the last century, probably in some branch of the military service, as few settlers came here prior to 1760, except those so employed. He married twice, his second wife being a widow James. Children by first wife :

i. Robert, d. (probably killed by Indians).

ii. Andrew, b. 1757, m. 1779, Mary Clarke, b. 1761, d. 1835 : Ch.: 1, Andrew, b. 1780, m. Famitcha Gesner (no issue) ; 2, Ann, b. 1782, d. 1867 unm. ; 3, Mary, bpd. Dec. 3, 1789, m. (1st) James Chesley, (2nd) Elias or William Burbidge ; 4, William, m. Ann Phinney ; 5, Thomas Granville, b. 1786, m. Charlotte Clark ; 6, Adolphus, m. Susanna Roberts ; 7, Elizabeth, d. unm.; 8, Helen, d. unm.

iii. Margaret, b. 1759, m. Peleg Little.

iv. Anna, b. 1760, m. Asahel Dodge.

v. Sarah, b. 1763, m. James Delap.

Welton. Ezekiel Welton, a Loyalist, I believe, was born in 1745, died in 1839, married (1st) ——, (2nd) Mary Nichols, *née* Richards. Children :

i. Cephas, m. 1794, Lucy Parker, and had ch. : 1, Mary, b. 1795, d. 1797 ; 2, Allan, b. 1797, d. 1816 ; 3, Sidney, b. 1800, m. Isabel Morse ; 4, Walter, b. 1802, d. 1805 ; 5, Eric, b. 1804, m. 1827, Mary Spinney (no issue) ; 6, William, b. 1806, d. 1832, m. Louisa Willett ; 7, Walter, b. 1809, m. Mary Helen Dodge (no issue) ; 8, Parker, b. 1812, m. (1st) Mary Neily, (2nd) Charlotte Ward ; 9, Lucy Ann, b. 1815, m. Jacob Neily.

ii. Eric, m. Elizabeth Smith (probably dau. of Jonathan) : Ch. : 1, Frank, m. ; 2, Thomas, m. 1821, Dorothy Ryerson, *née* VanBuskirk ; 3, Gilbert, m. ; 4, Ezekiel, m. Sarah Barton ; 5, Jonathan, m. Margaret Grant ; 6, Cephas, m. ; 7, Austin, m. Helen Neily ; 8, Mehitable, m. Jeremiah VanBuskirk ; 9, Mary, d. unm.; 10, Mercy, m. Isaac Roach ; 11, Emily, m. Edward Dean ; 12, Ann, m. Archibald Lamb ; 13, Julia, m. Thomas Brennan ; 14, Rachel, m. John Ward.

WHEELOCK. Rev. RALPH WHEELOCK, called the founder of Medfield, Mass., was born in Shropshire, England, 1600, educated at Clare Hall, University of Cambridge (B.A. 1626, M.A., 1631), a learned and able Nonconformist divine, came to Massachusetts in 1637, and held some civil offices in Dedham, Mendon and Medfield; built in Medfield 1651-52, and died there in 1683. His great-grandson OBADIAH,[4] through Benjamin[2] (who in 1668 married Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel Bullen), Obadiah,[3] born 1685 (married, 1708, Elizabeth Darling, and was a man of note in Rehoboth and Milford), was born in 1712, and married in 1733, Martha, daughter of Joseph and Sarah (Lovett) Sumner, and had children:

i. Zipporah, b. May 12, 1734.
ii. Martha, b. March 17, 1736.
(2) iii. Obadiah, b. July 7, 1738.
iv. Joseph, b. July 17, 1740, m. (1st) Nov. 5, 1769, Deborah, dau. of Jonas and Thankful Farnsworth, (2nd) June 16, 1795, Sybil Tarbell, of Groton, Mass., and had ch. (by 2nd wife): 1, Welcome, b. June 23, 1796, m. Mary Eliza Andrews, and was High Sheriff many years; 2, Joseph, b. 1798, m. (1st) 1824, Mercy Whitman, (2nd) Hannah Whitman; 3, Amariah, b. 1800, d. 1821; 4, Azubah, b. 1803, m. 1848, David, son of Oliver Foster; 5, Tarbell, m. Mary Fisher (dau. of George Easson); 6, Sybil, b. 1808, d. young; 7, Rev. Jesse, Methodist minister, b. 1811, d. 1841.
v. Elias, b. April 17, 1743, m. Sarah, dau. of Beriah Rice, lived at Nictaux, and had ch.: 1, Abigail, m. Michael Martin, d. 1859; 2, Sophia, m. Lt.-Col. James Eager; 3, Ward, m. 1804, Azubah Gates, 9 ch.; 4, Elias, m. Mary Hook (?), d. in England; 5, Sumner, m. 1815, Mary Willett; 6, Sarah, m. Elkanah Morton, J.C.P.; 7, Charles, b. June 17, 1791, m. Hannah B. Baltzor, 6 ch.; 8, Amoret, m. Samuel Morse; 9, Betsey, d. unm.
vi. Abigail, b. April 24, 1746, m. — Moulton.
vii. Jesse, b. Oct. 2, 1748, m. Abigail Lovitt, and lived in Maine; 6 ch.
viii. Amariah, b. Sept. 18, 1752.

2. OBADIAH WHEELOCK was born July 7, 1738, at Mendon, Worcester County, Mass., and married, in Nova Scotia, Rachel, daughter of Beriah Rice. (See memoir, page 333.) He had children:

i. Asaph, m. 1797, Mary Church: Ch.: 1, Harriet, m. William, son of Thomas W. Banks; 2, Thomas C. (J.P.), b. Jan., 1799, still living, m. Caroline Wheelock; 3, Jesse Hoyt, b. 1800, m. ——, (in Mexico); 4, Edmund Morton, b. 1803, m. Mary Brine; 5, Hannah Rachel, b. 1805, m. William Foster; 6, Obadiah, b. 1807, d. unm. in California; 7, Constant, b. 1809, m. — Messenger; 8, Mary, b. 1812, m. William Miller; 9, Sarah, b. 1814, m. Samuel T. Neily.
ii. Lucy, m. Elkanah Morton, J.C.P.
iii. Calvin, m. Mary Pennall.
iv. Mary, m. Walter Willett.
v. Samuel, m. ——.
vi. Irene, m. Jesse Hoyt.
vii. Americus.

Another branch of the Wheelock family settled in Wilmot. ABEL WHEELOCK was a son of Joseph Wheelock and Abigail, his wife;

grandson of Gershom Wheelock and Hannah, daughter of John Stodder; and great-grandson of Rev. Ralph Wheelock. Abel was thus a second cousin of the Obadiah[4] whose record precedes this, and his children were third cousins of Obadiah, M.P.P., and his brothers. He married in 1764, Sarah, daughter of Benjamin Foster, and lived in Granville. Children:

i. Benjamin, b. Jan. 26, 1765, m. 1790, Elizabeth, dau. of John Jacques, and lived in Granville: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. March 28, 1791, m. George Wade; 2, Sarah, b. 1794, m. Abner Foster; 3, Abel, b. Aug. 27, 1797, m. Elizabeth Ann, dau. of Ezekiel Foster, jun.; 4, Mary, b. Aug. 7, 1799, m. Thomas, son of Ezekiel Foster, jun.; 5, William K., b. Sept. 14, 1804.
ii. Joseph, b. July 7, 1767, d. young.
iii. John, b. April, 1769, m. (1st) 1792, Mary Gilliatt (dau. of William and Rebecca), (2nd) Mittie, dau. of Major Nathaniel Parker, and lived at Torbrook, Wilmot: Ch.: 1, Abel, b. 1793, m. Jane, dau. of Joseph Foster; 2, Ann, b. 1794, m. John Hoffman; 3, Rebecca, b. Sept. 10, 1796, m. Guy Carleton Payson; 4, Mary, b. 1799, m. Peter, son of Obadiah and Hannah Morse.
iv. Sarah, b. Feb. 24, 1771, m. Thomas Wheeler Banks.
v. Samuel, b. Jan. 6, 1773, m. Mary, dau. of Walter Wilkins, lived at Torbrook: Ch.: 1, Joseph, b. 1807, m. Sarah, dau. of John Hoffman; 2, Benjamin, b. 1809, m. Sophia, dau. of Thomas W. Banks; 3, Sarah, b. 1811, d. 1815; 4, Walter, b. April 1, 1813, m. Mary, dau. of Silas Gates; 5, James, b. 1815, m. (1st) Henrietta Smith, (2nd) Lydia Crisp, *née* Palfrey; 6, William, b. 1817, m. Love, dau. of Samuel Roberts; 7, Wesley, b. 1819, m. Mary Jane Masters (dau. of Rev. Ezekiel); 8, Rev. George Whitefield, b. 1822 (Methodist), d. unm.; 9, Anthony, b. 1824; 10, Samuel, b. 1826, d. soon; 11, Samuel, b. Dec. 24, 1828, m. June 24, 1858, Maggie, dau. of Jacob Gates; 12, Rev. John, b. 1831 (Baptist), d. 1855.
vi. Elizabeth, b. 1775, m. Major Ezekiel Cleveland, jun.
vii. Abel, b. April 23, 1777, m. Nov. 20, 1801, Parney, dau. of Major Nathaniel Parker: Ch.: 1, Samuel, b. Feb. 20, 1803, m. Eliza Ann Berteaux; 2, Lucinda, b. Sept. 22, 1804; 3, Olive, b. Dec. 24, 1806, m. 1827, Robert Berteaux; 4, Parney, b. Jan. 20, 1808, m. James Berteaux; 5, John, b. July 28, 1811, m. Emily J. Dodge; 6, Abel Maynard, b. Dec. 23, 1813, m. (1st) Eliza, dau. of Walter Wilkins, (2nd) Elizabeth Cutten, wid. of Benaiah Morse; 7, Letitia, b. July 15, 1816, m. James Spinney; 8, Mittie, b. July 15, 1816, m. James P. Wiswall; 9, Ezekiel Cleveland, b. Oct. 3, 1818, m. Amy Elizabeth, dau. of Charles Dodge.
viii. Abigail, b. 1779, m. Samuel Felch.
ix. Oliver, d. young.

WHITMAN. JOHN WHITMAN came from (see "Whitman Genealogy," by Farnham) Holt, or Coventry, or perhaps some part of Hertfordshire* to Weymouth, twelve miles south of Boston, Mass., in 1637 or 1638. His son Zachariah married Sarah, daughter of Dr. John Alcock, of Roxbury, and the latter had a son John, who was born in 1688, and married Mary Graves (daughter of Charles). Their son John, born in 1717 in Stow,

* Our author says Dorsetshire, but on what authority I do not know.—[ED.]

Mass., and married in 1747, Mary, daughter of Rev. Mr. Foster, of Stafford, Conn., who came to Annapolis in the *Charming Molly*, was destined, through his posterity, to be a potent factor in making the industrial and political history of the county. (See memoir.) He died Sept. 12, 1763; his widow married Samuel Bancroft, and died in 1812, aged 85. He had children:

i. Dorcas, b. May 5, 1749, m. Capt. Eben Perry, who was killed at the battle of Bennington, 1777.

ii. Daniel, b. June 5, 1750, m. 1778, Sarah Kendall, and settled at or near Rosette, d. April 23, 1840: Ch.: 1, Sarah, b. 1780, m. Frederic Morton; 2, Isaac, b. 1782, m. 1804, Mary Hendry; 3, Mercy, b. 1784; 4, John, b. 1786, m. Ann Whitman, *née* Harris; 5, Daniel, b. 1788, m. (1st) Nancy Roop, (2nd) Jane Banks (dau. of Moses); 6, Silas, b. 1791, m. 1815, Elizabeth Bancroft; 7, Asaph, b. 1793, m. Ann Harris; 8, Mary, b. 1795, d. unm.; 9, Zachariah, b. 1798, d. unm.; 10, Lois, b. 1804, m. Israel Rice.

iii. Hannah, b. Aug. 12, 1751, m. William E. Tufts (descendant of Rev. John, of Newbury, Mass.), 1772.

iv. Edward, b. Aug. 6, 1752, in Stow, Mass., m. 1775, Dorothy, dau. of Capt. Oldham Gates, and settled near Lawrencetown; he d. Jan. 15, 1829: Ch.: 1, Oldham, m. Nancy, dau. of Benjamin Fairn, and wid. of James Roach, Rosette, 10 ch., d. 1848; 2, Mercy, m. Andrew Kniffen, of New Albany, d. 1875; 3, Jacob, m. 1814, Elizabeth Langley, 11 ch., lived at Marshall's Mountain; 4, Lydia, b. 1786, m. 1809, John Merry; 5, Salome, b. 1790, m. 1807, George Armstrong; 6, Edward, m. about 1808, Elizabeth Cagney, wid.* dau. of Capt. Christopher Prince, and was father of Hon. William C. Whitman, M.L.C.; 7, Charles, m. Lois Dykeman, New Albany, d. 1850, 9 ch.; 8, Asa (or Asaph), m. Mary Durland; 9, Dorothea, m. 1812, Ferdinand Schafner; 10, James, m. 1812, Maria Longley, d. 1832, 5 ch.; 11, Deidamia, b. 1797, m. James Steele, d. 1865; 12, Margaret, b. 1801, m. 1822, Henry Kent.

v. John, b. Sept. 25, 1753, m. 1784, Elizabeth, dau. of Phineas Rice, remained on the homestead, Rosette, d. 1833: Ch.: 1, Elnathan, (see memoir of Eln. Whitman, M.P.P.), b. 1785, m. (1st) 1812, Eleanor Spurr, (2nd) Charlotte Tupper (by 1st wife, father of Hon. George Whitman, M.L.C.); 2, Alfred, m. Jane Spurr; 3, James, m. Ann Bailey; 4, Letitia, m. William Spurr; 5, Maria, m. Robert Spurr; 6, Dorinda, m. John McDormand; and, according to the "Whitman Genealogy," which differs from this in date of marriage (making it 1780) and order of births, Elizabeth, John, Ebenezer, Eli and Annie, 11 in all.

vi. Salome, b. March 29, 1755, m. (1st) Major Ezekiel Cleveland, 2 ch., (2nd) Major N. Parker (2nd wife), 10 ch. (see Parker, *ante*), d. June 5, 1831.

vii. Elnathan, b. April 16, 1756, d. March 1, 1765.

viii. Jacob, b. Oct. 14, 1757, m. Ann Spinney, settled near the old homestead, d. Sept., 1837: Ch.: 1, Spinney, m. Caroline Harris; 2, Elizabeth, m. George Harris; 3, Joanna, m. William Best; 4, Jacob, m.; 5, Whitefield, d. unm.; 6, Mercy, m. Edward Berteaux; 7, David, m. 1808, Sarah Starratt.

ix. Isaac, b. Nov. 3, 1758, d. July 20, 1777.

x. Abraham, b. Sept. 10, 1761, m. 1793, Hannah Webber, finally

* Her first husband, William Cagney, was a cornet of cavalry in the "American Legion" under Arnold.

settled at Canso, d. March 14, 1854 : Ch.: 1, James, d. unm. ; 2, Isaac, m. Deborah Bears ; 3, John, m. Eliza Spurr ; 4, Dorcas, m. David Bears (P.E.I.); 5, Mercy, m. Joseph Wheelock, J.P.; 6, Hannah, m. (1st) Norris, (2nd) Joseph Wheelock ; 7, Letitia, m. William Hart ; 8, Sarah, m. Benjamin Bigelow ; 9, Abraham, m. Lavinia Hart.

xi. Mercy, b. March 26, 1763, m. Nelson Freeman, d. Feb. 13, 1828, 9 ch.

ISAAC (*son of Daniel*) and Mary (Hendry) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, William A., b. Nov. 6, 1805, m. twice ; 2, Simeon F., m. but no issue ; 3, John, m. (1st) Sarah Beals, (2nd) Sarah Felch, (3rd) — Benjamin ; 4, Joseph, m. Abigail Oakes ; 5, Ansley, m. (1st) Mary Oakes, (2nd) Elizabeth Gates ; 6, Eliza, m. Jesse Oakes ; 7, Mercy, m. James Merry ; 8, Mary Ann, m. Handley Merry.

SILAS (*son of Daniel*) and Elizabeth (Bancroft) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, Samuel, b. 1816 ; 2, Jeremiah, b. 1819 ; 3, Handley, b. 1821 ; perhaps others.

DANIEL (*son of Daniel*) and Nancy (Roop) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, Dimock (lately deceased), m. (1st) Fanny McLauchlan, (2nd) Caroline Whitman, (3) Annie Craig, *née* Odell ; 2, Zachariah, m. Susan Hutchinson ; 3, Mary, m. Manning Marshall ; 4, Sarah Ann, m. John McKeown ; by his 2nd wife, Jane Banks, he had : 5, Asaph, m. Jane Payson ; 6, Lois, m. Christopher Saunders ; 7, Rachel, m. Henry Saunders ; 8, Harriet, d. unm.; 9, Daniel, m. (1st) Sarah Ann Marshall, (2nd) Loretta Saunders ; 10, Esther, m. Albert Oakes.

OLDHAM (*son of Edward*) and Nancy (Fairn) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, Benjamin, m. Ann Longley ; 2, Levi, m. Matilda Lloyd ; 3, Athalia, m. John Kerr ; 4, Henry, m. Augusta Prentiss ; 5, Sarah, m. Patrick Roach ; 6, Ebenezer Rice, b. Feb. 22, 1813, m. Susan Beals ; 7, Diadama, b. May 18, 1815, m. Arod McNayr ; 8, Asa, b. June 27, 1817, m. Mary Beals ; 9, Amos, b. April 21, 1819, m. Mary Ann Hannan ; 10, Oldham, b. Jan. 25, 1822, m. Rebecca Cochran.

JACOB (*son of Edward*) and Elizabeth (Langley) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, Jacob, b. June 18, 1816 ; 2, Edward, b. May 17, 1818 ; 3, Lucy Ann, b. Jan. 4, 1821, m. Nathan Langley ; 4, Nathaniel, b. June 4, 1823, m. Angelina Slocomb ; 5, Asahel, b. Oct. 1, 1825 ; 6, Sarah, b. Dec. 29, 1827, m. Christopher Grant ; 7, Deborah, m. John Miller ; 8, Freeman, m. Diadama Saunders ; 9, Abraham.

EDWARD (*son of Edward*) and Elizabeth (Prince) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, Hon. William Cagney, b. 1809, m. Caroline Belyea of N.B.; 2, Eliza, b. 1811 ; 3, Edward Tileston, b. 1813, m. — Robinson, widow ; 4, Ann Amelia, b. 1815 ; 5, Christopher, b. 1818, d. unm.

CHARLES (*son of Edward*) and Lois (Dykeman) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, Margaret, d. 1852 unm.; 2, Louisa, m. Russell Durland ; 3, Dorothy, m. John Miller ; 4, George, m. Lavinia Ruggles ; 5, James Edward ; 6, Isabella, m. George Gates ; 7, Salome ; 8, Irene, d. 1850 unm.; 9, Sophia, m. John Stoddart.

JAMES (*son of Edward*) and Maria (Longley) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, Israel, b. 1813, m. Sarah Spinney ; 2, Margaret Lovicia, b. 1818, m. John M. Chute ; 3, Lucy Ann, b. 1823, m. John McGregor ; 4, Isaac James, b. 1833, m. Sarah Spinney ; 5, David Edward, b. 1833, m. Emmeline Louisa Rood, *née* Brown.

ELNATHAN (*son of John, jun.*) and Eleanor (Spurr) WHITMAN had ch.: 1, John, b. June 3, 1814, m. Mary, dau. of Edward H. Cutler ; 2, William Osmond, b. June 4, 1816, d. unm.; 3, Charles Bailey, b. Sept. 28, 1817, m. Jane Chipman, *née* Tupper ; 4, Edward, b. July 29, 1819, d. 1820 ; 5, Hon. George, b. April 3, 1823, m. Mary Arabella Boice ; by his 2nd w., Charlotte Tupper, he had : 6, Maria, m. Samuel Bogart.

Alfred (*son of John*) and Jane (Spurr) Whitman had ch.: 1, Mary Elizabeth, b. July 4, 1827; 2, Margaret, b. Jan. 23, 1829, m. — Swymmer; 3, Edward, b. Sept. 20, 1830; 4, Alfred, b. May 27, 1833, m. — Crosby; 5, Eleanor, b. Feb. 9, 1835, m. James DeWolfe Spurr, St. John, N.B.; 6, Henry, b. Aug. 5, 1839.

David (*son of Jacob*) and Sarah (Starratt) Whitman had ch.: 1, William, b. 1809; 2, Amoz, b. 1810, m. William Best; 3, Mercy, b. 1812; 4, Samuel, b. 1815, m.; 5, Leonora, b. 1819, m. Harvey Saunders; 6, Robert, b. 1822; 7, Anne Maria, m. Hon. Avard Longley.

Isaac (*son of Abraham*) and Deborah (Bears) Whitman had ch.: 1, Maria, m. Albert Kinsman; 2, David, m. Mary Myers; 3, Jane, m. Levi Hart; perhaps others.

John (*son of Abraham*) and Eliza (Spurr) Whitman had ch.: 1, James Edward; 2, Thomas S., m. Louisa Tobias; 3, John, m.; 4, Bessie, m. Edmund Twining; 5, Robert, m.

Wilkins. This family is probably of Welsh origin. It is supposed that Walter Wilkins, who was born in 1702, and died at Halifax, January 7, 1792, came to Halifax with Lord Cornwallis, and was engaged in trade there, and acquired the land on which his son settled in Wilmot, in payment of a debt, and that the son, Walter Wilkins, was born in Halifax, and came here about 1780. His sister Mary had, in 1765, married Alexander McKenzie. It was probably the name of his father which appears in a list of non-resident tax-payers in 1770. He married in 1781, probably Sarah White. Children:

i. Walter, b. 1782, m. Ruth, dau. of John Foster: Ch.: 1, Anthony, m. Maria Nichols; 2, William, d. 1885, m. Isabel Roals; 3, Eliza, m. Maynard Wheelock; 4, Mary, m. William Brown; 5, Sarah, d. unm.; 6, Caroline, unm.; 7, Louisa, unm.; 8, Amanda, m. John L. Morse; 9, Walter, m. Sarah Lavinia Bent; 10, Ruth, m. Adelbert Ryder; 11, Adelbert, m. Bessie A. Gates.
ii. Mary, b. 1784, m. Samuel Wheelock.
iii. Anthony, b. 1786, m. (1st) Cornelia Durland, (2nd) Abigail Armstrong: Ch.: 1, Walter, m. Leonora Marshall; 2, Daniel, m. Louisa Brown; 3, Thomas Cambia, m. Asenath Crocker; 4, Sarah Ann, m. Wentworth Elliott; 5, Mary Eliza, m. Israel Marshall; 6, Caroline, m. William Slocomb; 7, Benjamin, d. unm.; 8, Lavinia, m. Samuel Elliott; 9, Rebecca, m. Daniel Bruce; 10, Louisa Jane, m. William Spicer.

Willett. Walter and Samuel Willett, cousins, born in New York, came from Pennsylvania, where they had settled, Loyalists of 1783. The name is said to be French, Ouillette, changed to the English form after the domicile of the family in America. (There seems no reason to doubt this, although there were Willetts of English extraction among the Pilgrim Fathers. These, if our author was right, were probably of Huguenot stock.—Ed.) Thomas and William Willett were members of the New York Legislature from 1725 to 1750. Walter had

served in the loyal forces, and left his property at the peace in the possession of his sons, some of whom were of age. He took an active interest in militia affairs, and on a call for militia to garrison Halifax, on one occasion during the absence of the regulars he is said to have marched his company to Halifax in thirty-six hours. Samuel, who had been a cornet of cavalry, settled in Wilmot. Walter Willett left in Pennsylvania children by his first wife: 1, Thomas; 2, Gilbert; 3, Thomas; 4, Walter; 5, Caroline; 6, Ann; 7, Michael. He married (2nd) Abigail, and by her had:

viii. Isaac Phinney, b. 1787, m. Ann Morrison, d. 1861: Ch.: 1, Walter, m. Rebecca Gilliatt; 2, Reed, m. Charlotte, dau. of John Robertson, M.P.P.; 3, Isaac, d. unm.; 4, Ann, m. William Hood.
ix. Ann, b. 1788, d. 1808, unm.
x. Harriet, b. 1790, m. James H. Priestly.
xi. Graves Simcoe, b. 1792, d. 1846, m. Cynthia Troop: Ch.: 1, Walter, m. Mary Hudson; 2, George, m. Arbuthnot McSweeny; 3, Gilbert, m. Barbara Pigott; 4, John, m. Ellen Tarver, Mexico.
xii. Mary, b. 1796, d. 1842, m. Sumner Wheelock.
xiii. Lawrence, b. 1799, m. Caroline Troop: Ch.: 1, Lawrence, m. Harriet Clark; 2, Margaret S., m. William Spurr; 3, Armanilla Caroline, m. Edward Anderson.
xiv. Eliza, b. 1801, m. Samuel Churchill.
xv. Margaret, b. 1803, d. 1842, m. William Wade.
xvi. Gilbert, b. 1805, m. Armanilla Wheelock (no issue).
xvii. Deborah, m. William Thomas.

Samuel Willett was a cousin of Walter, already mentioned, was a cornet in a cavalry regiment on the loyal side in the Revolutionary war, and came here in 1783. In 1786 he married Leah de St. Croix, daughter of a French Huguenot Loyalist of good family and some note, who came to the county at the same time. He was a man of good education and fine intellectual powers, scrupulous and exact in the performance of all his duties. He had children:

i. Samuel, b. 1787.
ii. Joshua, b. 1788, m. 1811, Catharine Durland: Ch.: 1, Mary, b. 1812, m. — Balcom; 2, Gilbert, b. 1814, d. 1817; 3, Catharine, b. 1816, m. Joseph Jacques; 4, Leonora, b. 1818, m. — Ryar; 5, Matilda, b. 1820, d. 1821; 6, Gilbert, b. 1822, m. — (in U.S.); 7, Daniel, b. 1824, m. — Ward; 8, Bamford, b. 1826, m.
iii. Benjamin, b. 1789, m. Phebe Woodbury (no issue).
iv. Walter, b. 1791, m. Mary Wheelock (dau. of Obadiah): Ch.: 1, Mary, m. John Webster; 2, Lavinia, m. Archibald Walker; 3, Rachel, m. Israel Gilliatt; 4, Selena, m. Samuel Pickup; 5, Irene, m. James Palmer; 6, Walter, d. unm.
v. Thomas, b. 1793, m. Deborah Wilson: Ch.: 1, Ann.
vi. Augustine, b. 1795, d. unm.
vii. Lawrence, b. 1797, d. unm.
viii. Leah, b. 1799, m. John Pittman.
ix. Eliza, b. 1801, d. unm.
x. Caroline, b. 1803, d. unm.
xi. Temple, b. 1805, d. unm.
xii. Margaret, b. 1806, d. unm.



HOUSE IN WHICH GENERAL WILLIAMS WAS BORN, WITH BARRACK-MASTER NORMAN AND HIS HORSE IN THE FOREGROUND. *(See Pages 184, 185, 188.)*

WILLIAMS. THOMAS WILLIAMS, who may have been born in Annapolis, appointed in 1769, Commissary and Ordnance storekeeper, married Ann, only daughter of Captain Edward Amherst of the 40th regiment, d. 1788. John Williams, a captain in the 40th regiment at its organization in 1717, may have been his father, or possibly a brother. Thomas had at least two sons, Major Edward or Robert, who died without issue, and THOMAS, born 1768, died 1806, who married Anna Maria, daughter of Thomas Walker, sen. (See memoir of Thomas Walker, jun., M.P.P.)

1. THOMAS WILLIAMS, the younger, had children :

i. Charlotte Ann, bpd. Sept., 1788,* m. Jan. 25, 1809, James Robertson, and had ch.: William Fenwick and Thomas Williams. The latter, bpd. Jan. 18, 1815, became a clergyman, and was Rector of St. George's, N.B.
ii. Thomas, m. Charlotte Moncton, dau. of the Marquis of Galway (no issue).
iii. Anna Maria Fenwick, bpd. Aug. 14, 1795, m. Jan. 15, 1817, Thomas Smith, St. John, N.B.
iv. Mary Eliza, m. (1st) Dec. 18, 1818, Hugh Chisholm, (2nd) John C. Vail, M.P.P., and Registrar of Deeds, Kings County, N.B., and was step-mother of Hon. W. B. Vail, of Nova Scotia.
(2) v. WILLIAM FENWICK, b. probably Dec., 1799, bpd. Feb. 2, 1800, d. unm.
vi. Georgina, m. Dec. 29, 1825, Rev. Horatio Nelson Arnold, M.A., of New Brunswick.
vii. Henrietta,† m. James Whitney, St. John, N.B.

2. SIR WILLIAM FENWICK WILLIAMS, of Kars, was educated at the old Grammar School, Annapolis, and the Royal Military Academy at Woolwich, became Ensign in the Royal Artillery in 1825; from 1840 to 1843 he served as a captain in Turkey, and in 1848 was a commissioner for the settlement of the Turkey and Persia boundary, and in 1854, at the outbreak of the Crimean War, was British Commissioner with the Turkish army. He was in command during the four months' siege of Kars by the Russians under Mouravieff, and on September 29, 1855, defeated the besiegers, who were much superior in numbers, and in an advantageous position. He was obliged at length to surrender, November 14, 1855, and was afterwards made K.C.B.; was Commander-in-chief of the forces in British North America in 1858, administered the government of Canada from October 12, 1860, to January 22, 1861, and in 1866 and 1867 was Governor of Nova Scotia. He received the degree of D.C.L. from Oxford and Kings College, Windsor. He died in London, July 26, 1883.

* According to St. Luke's Church record, which, compared with the inscription on the monument, would make it appear that Thomas Williams, jun., was married before he was twenty years of age.

† I cannot vouch for the correctness of the order in which some of the children are placed.—[ED.]

Another family of WILLIAMS is descended from JASPER WILLIAMS, probably English or Loyalist, who was b. 1769, d. Sept. (bu. Sept. 15), 1844, aged 75, m. probably 1797, Sarah Fairn, and had ch. : 1, Armanilla, b. 1798 ; 2, Elizabeth Ann, b. 1799 ; 3, Lucinda, b. 1801 ; 4, Sarah, b. 1803 ; 5, Zeruiah, b. 1805, d. 1825, unm. ; 6, Jerusha, b. 1808 ; 7, William Henry, b. 1811, m. Elizabeth Margaret Fleet, 9 ch.; 8, Mary, b. 1813; 9, Charlotte Ann, b. 1816 ; 10, Margaret Letitia, b. 1816 ; 11, John, b. 1818, m. Margaret Ann Wells, 5 or more ch. ; 12, Caroline, b. 1821; 13, Anna, b. 1825. Most, if not all of their daughters but one married.

COL. FREDERIC WILLIAMS, probably not related to either of the two preceding, was a prominent man in the county in the latter part of the last century ; probably a Loyalist. Descendants in female lines are to be found in branches of the Ruggles and Thorne families, where Frederic Williams and Israel Williams will be found as Christian names, and no doubt in other families.

WINCHESTER. NATHAN WINCHESTER was a grantee of lands near Rosette on the site of a previous French settlement, about three miles from the town, was married when he came, and lived with his family on his grant. One of his sons settled in the township of Digby, one in Granville, and Isaac and Spencer in Clements and Hillsburgh respectively. John remained on the homestead. John Winchester, died at Annapolis, 1840, aged 98, is classed by Sabine as a Loyalist. The first Winchesters who came to New England were John, of Hingham, who came 1635, aged 19, with Clement Bates, and therefore probably from Hertfordshire, and Alexander, of Braintree and Rehoboth, who arrived October 3, 1635, in the train of Sir Harry Vane, the younger. Nathan Winchester had children (the order of births is not vouched for as correct) :

i. Josiah, m. Hannah Winslow (dau. of John Howard): * Ch.: 1, Abigail, m. Isaac Marshall ; 2, George Lefere, d. unm.; 3, Mary, b. 1790, m. Capt. Benjamin Thurber ; 4, Joseph, m. 1819, Sarah Bryan ; 5, Josiah, m. Margery Bacon ; 6, John, m. Mary Smith ; 7, Amy, m. Gilbert VanAmburg ; 8, James, d. unm.; 9, Rachel, m. William Snow ; 10, William, m. Nancy Barnes ; 11, Winslow, d. unm.
ii. Mary, b. 1756, m. Benjamin LeCain.
iii. Isaac, b. 1769, m. about 1801, Mary Morgan, b. 1766 : Ch.: 1, Nancy, m. (1st) James Brown, (2nd) Jacob Roop ; 2, Sarah, m. 1833, Edward Brian ; 3, Eliza, b. 1804, d. 1855, m. Thomas Hannan ; 4, Margaret, d. 1855, unm.; 5, Charles, m. (1st) Maria

* John Howard Winslow[5] (Josiah,[4] Josiah,[3] Kenelm,[2] Kenelm,[1] the latter brother of the Pilgrim Governor, Edward), b. 1738, m. Abigail Fenno, and came to N. S. among the early settlers and was hotel-keeper in Annapolis : Ch : 1, John Fenno, b. 1762, d. 1787 ; 2, Abigail, b. 1764, m. John Winchester ; 3, Hannah, b. 1766 ; 4, Mary, m. Cyrus Dean, Halifax ; 5, Joseph, b 1772, d. young ; 6, Joseph ; 7, Matilda, m. Wm. Pratt ; 8, Rachel, m. James Halliday.

Hopley, (2nd) 1862, Sarah Morehouse, *née* Quereau ; 6, John, m. Mary Wade ; 7, Nathan, d. unm.

iv. John, m. 1781, Abigail Winslow (dau. of John Howard), and d. 1820, a. 96 : Ch.: 1, John, b. 1783, d. 1869, unm.; 2, Beulah, b. 1784, m. John Langley ; 3, William, b. 1789, d. 1844, m. Ann Witherspoon ; 4, James, b. 1791, m. (1st) Ann Winchester, *née* Weatherspoon, (2nd) — Pickels ; 5, Maria, b. 1793, m. Artemus Odell ; 6, Abigail, b. 1795, m. James W. Pratt ; 7, Harriet, b. 1797, d. unm.

v. Spencer, m. 1791, Frances Ann Emley: Ch.: 1, Elizabeth Heming, b. 1791, m. Thomas McCormick ; 2, Martha, b. 1792, m. 1810, Charles Yerrigal ; 3, James, m. 1814, Elizabeth Bryan ; 4, Thomas, d. unm.; 5, Henry, d.; 6, Frances, m Jacob Odell ; 7, Catharine, m. Thomas Cambden ; 8, Rebecca, d. unm.; 9, Emley, m. Amanda Benson (no issue); 10, Edward, d. unm.; 11, William, m. Eliza —.

vi. William, m. 1790, Mary Demint (wid.) : Ch.: 1, Christopher E. B., b. 1791, m.; 2, William S., b. 1794, m. Lydia Steele ; 3, Isaac Parker, b. 1796, m. 1830, Lydia Steele ; 4, Seaman, m. Mary Ann Morrison ; 5, Mary.

WINNIETT. This is the oldest family, so far as residence is concerned, in the Maritime Provinces. WILLIAM WINNIETT was born in France of Huguenot parents, whose name must have been spelt Ouinniette, and came with them to London after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. He joined the expedition of Nicholson against Port Royal in 1710, being then about twenty-five years old ; was among the first to enter the fort after the capture. In the following year, having resigned his military position, he married Marie Magdalene Maissonat, a French lady of the Roman Catholic faith, and commenced a life of mercantile pursuits, becoming the pioneer and founder of the commerce of English Canada. He was a man of good education and much enterprise ; soon established a large trade between Annapolis Royal and Boston, and found ready and profitable customers in the French settlements at the head of the Bay of Fundy, Minas Basin, and Cape Breton. Most of the vessels by which this trade was carried on were built under his own superintendence at Annapolis. He served several years as a member of the Governor's Council at Annapolis, where his children were born, whose services are so largely interwoven with the history of the county and province. Children :

i. Ann, b. 1712, m. Alexander Cosby, 40th regiment, for many years Lieut.-Governor of the town of Annapolis, and was mother of Phillips Cosby, 7th regiment, who was killed in the service. Her husband d. at Canso, where he held the chief military command in 1741-42, and she for nearly half a century lived at Annapolis, where she was known and respected as "Madam Cosby."

ii. Elizabeth, b. 1713, m. John Handfield, afterwards Lieut.-Col. of the 40th regiment and Commandant of the garrison, who superintended the deportation of the French in 1755.

iii. Mary Magdalene, b. 1715, m. Edward How (for whom see p. 527).

iv. Margaret, b. 1717, d. 1723.

v. Charles, d. unm.

vi. Edward, b. 1722 (Captain of the *Warren*, 1752).

(2) vii. Joseph, b. about 1726.
viii. Matthew, survived Joseph many years, Major of Militia and Deputy Prothonotary of the Supreme Court, a witness to the ratification of the last Indian Treaty, and was a witness on behalf of the accused judges in the great impeachment trial. (Murdoch's "History of N.S.," p. 87.)
ix. John, d. probably unm.
x. Alexander, d. unm.
xi. Susanna, m. — Paige.

2. Joseph Winniett, born about 1726, married December 26, 1751, Mary Dyson. (See memoir, p. 330.) She was born 1728, and died 1804. He died December 3, 1789. Children:

i. Anne, b. 1752, probably d. unm.
ii. Joseph, b. 1755, probably unm. Was Ensign in the army, one of the grantees of Perrott, d. in the service, 1795.
iii. Mary, b. 1757, d. 1811, m. John Hamilton, 40th regiment.
iv. Elizabeth, b. 1760, d. 1808, m. a Mr. Nunn, of 40th regiment.
v. Margaret, b. 1762, d. 1811, m. Robert Wolseley, an officer of the garrison belonging to the Royal Engineers Department.
vi. William, b. 1765, d. Nov., 1824, m. 1788, Mary Totten, dau. of a Loyalist gentleman; he was Sheriff of the county for nearly a quarter of a century; was also Registrar of Deeds, and held several minor offices: Ch.: 1, Joseph, b. June 17, 1789, m. Mary MacColla, eldest dau. of Lieut.-Col. MacColla, town major of Halifax, and was in the Commissariat Department in Halifax about 1828 (d. without issue); 2, Susan Mary, b. Dec. 16, 1791, d. unm.; 3, William Robert Wolseley, b. March 2, 1793; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1795, m. Rev. John Thomas Twining, D.D., and was mother of H. C. D. Twining, Esq., Clerk of the House of Assembly, N.S.; 5, Mary Ann, b. April 16, 1799, m. Benjamin Lester Peters, of St. John, N.B., Barrister, Stipendiary Magistrate, etc., and was mother of B. L. Peters, Judge of the County Court, and several others; 6, George Gilbert Totten, b. May 31, 1801, d. unm.; 7, Alexander Howe, b. June 19, 1803, m. Sophia Upham; 8, Isabella Charlotte, b. June 19, 1805, d. unm.; 9, Phillips Cosby Fenwick, b. Oct. 10. 1807, d. (in Jamaica) unm.; 10, Henry Charles Darling, b. Oct. 18, 1809, d. unm.; 11, Thomas Williams, b. Dec. 19, 1811, m. (abroad); 12, John Thomas Twining, b. April 21, 1814.
vii. Alice, b. 1768, d. unm.
viii. Martha, b. 1771, d. unm.

Sir William Robert Wolseley Winniett, third child of Sheriff Winniett and Mary Totten, was born in the house next to that in which General Williams was born, married Aug. 14, 1828, Augusta Julia, daughter of Col. William Fenwick, R.E., whose mother, Maria Walker, was a sister of the mother of General Williams; entered the Royal Navy as a midshipman in the *Cleopatra*; was wounded in the capture of Ville de Milan, and after a long, varied and faithful service, was in 1848 appointed to the Governorship of Cape Coast Colony in West Africa, and Governor-General of the Cape Coast District, and knighted. He had previously been mainly instrumental in procuring the abolition of the practice among the native tribes of offering human sacrifices to

their gods. He paid his last visit to his native town in 1848. He died in Africa, leaving, it is believed, three children living in London. Recalling his visit to Annapolis in 1848, the author wrote :

Where sits Port Royal by the river side,
There he was born, there passed his boyhood's hours,
And plucked first-fruits of knowledge midst its flowers.
When last I saw him, sad, yet dignified,
Endowed with manhood's culminated powers,
He stood ancestral sepulchres beside—
Where three successions of his fathers keep
Their silent vigils, by Port Royal's deep.
It was his last farewell to Acadie,
The last adieu to scenes he loved so well !—
Alas ! he sleeps not, native earth, in thee,
But where Atlantic's eastern billows swell
On Afric's coast, his dust reposing lies,
Beneath the gaze of alien stars and skies.

Alexander Howe Winniett, seventh child of the Sheriff, by his wife Sophia, daughter of the late Judge Upham, had children: 1, William Rufus, b. 1828, m., and was killed in the discharge of duties as an employee of a railroad company in the United States, leaving one or more children ; 2, Francis Smith, b. 1831, d. unm.; 3, Charles Alexander, b. 1834, d. 1838 ; 4, Rose, b. 1836, living in Kings County, N.S., the only member of the family bearing the name now in Nova Scotia. He removed to Northumberland County, Ont., and died there, but his widow, with her daughter, returned to this Province, and died August, 1889. The author, in an obituary, speaks of her as one of his oldest friends, to whom he was "indebted for many words of encouragement and direction."

Wiswall. (See memoir of the Hon. Peleg Wiswall, M.P.P.) The Rev. John Wiswall's grandfather was Ichabod[2] Wiswall, who was born in Lancashire, and came when an infant with his father, Rev. John Wiswall, and four or five brothers to New England. He studied three years at Harvard University, but withdrew without taking a degree. He applied himself to the study of divinity, and preached some time to a small colony that went from Massachusetts to Cape Fear. He afterwards went to sea and married on the island of Arrowsick, where he preached, and at length returned, and was ordained pastor of the first church at Duxbury, Plymouth Colony, where he married his second wife. He opposed the annexation of Plymouth Colony to that of Massachusetts Bay, preferring that it should be united to Rhode Island, or New York. He died 1695. He was accomplished both as a classical and mathematical scholar, and also in the then fashionable science of astrology, and was, moreover, a poet and a musician. He left one surviving son, Peleg,[3] who was born 1686, graduated at Harvard in 1702, and soon after

leaving college went as chaplain of a "letter of marque" ship, and later went to sea as a maritime merchant and trader, but devoted more of his time to the pursuit of a knowledge of the countries he visited than to the pursuit of gain, and closed his life as teacher of the Boston School. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel Rogers, of Ipswich, of an old Massachusetts family, who were long supposed to be descended from Rogers the martyr, until able genealogists disproved the tradition. The Rogers family of Yarmouth, N.S., is a branch of the same family. He left by her four children, Elizabeth, Daniel, Priscilla and John.[4] JOHN WISWALL entered Harvard in 1745 and graduated 1749, aged 18. He taught school at various places, and at length was ordained to the ministry at Casco in 1755, after having preached about a year. December 31, 1761, he married Mercy, daughter of John Minot, of Brunswick, Me. Conforming to the Church of England, he founded in 1761 St. Paul's Church at Falmouth, now Portland, Me. In 1762 he was deranged for a few months, but wholly and permanently recovered. Going to England for the purpose, he was by the Bishop of London ordained Deacon, December 22, 1764, and Priest, February, 1765. While he continued Rector of St. Paul's the "cruel revolution" broke out, when "it became a crime to honour the king, even in him who had learned to fear God." In 1775 he fled to Boston, from which city he addressed the following letter to Mr. Hind, Secretary of the S.P.G. Society, dated May 30th, 1775:

"Since my last the disorders of the *eastern country* have grown to so great a pitch that I have been obliged to flee to this town for protection. On Tuesday, the 9th of May, while walking with Mr. Mowat, commander of one of His Majesty's ships, then in the harbour, on a hill contiguous to the town, and apprehensive of no danger, we were on a sudden surrounded by a body of men armed with musquets and bayonets, who commanded us to surrender ourselves prisoners. We were with this company of banditti (which consisted of sixty-seven men commanded by one Thompson, their colonel) three hours and a half before the people of Falmouth were made acquainted with our situation, during which time we were greatly insulted and abused, and in great danger of being shot to death. They had lain there in ambush from Sunday, and their intention was (as their colonel informed us) to have surprised us in church, but contrary winds prevented their arrival in season. By one o'clock the townspeople and the country folks in the neighbouring towns were informed of our situation, and a large body of men appeared upon the hill where we were—most of them with the intention to carry us into the country and confine us there; but some of the townsmen began to intercede for our liberty, being induced thereto by the spirited conduct of Captain Mowat's lieutenant, who, upon information of the danger we were in, sent out his boats, and among others had seized J. Preble, Esq., of Falmouth, who had been appointed by the provincial congress General of the eastern forces, and by letter assured the select-men of his resolution to fire from the ships upon the town, unless we were immediately dismissed. After much altercation it was agreed to carry us to a tavern at the entrance to the town, where we were guarded by a body of near three hundred men. The officers of the militia, after some debate, agreed to dismiss us for that night, E. Freeman, select-man of the town, and J. Preble, Esq., being bound for our forthcoming in the morning. As we were retiring, though guarded by the cadet company of the town, one of the mob fired at us, but

providentially we escaped unhurt. The next morning the officers sent for Captain Mowat, who (as was his duty) refused to go from His Majesty's ship. By this time they were joined by several other companies from the country and made up a body of five hundred armed men. They possessed themselves of a large house in the centre of the town belonging to one of my parishioners, and converted it into a barrack, turning out the family, including his wife, though sick in bed, and pillaged the house of almost everything that was valuable. They forced me in the afternoon to appear before them. I was strictly examined and questioned by their leaders, and it gave me pleasure that I could assure them that I had never in my sermons so much as glanced at their political disputes, though I declared that the severest punishment, nor the fear of death, should tempt me to violate my oath of allegiance to King George, and of canonical obedience to my Diocesan, and I would not conform to their provincial congress, nor deviate from the rules of the Church of England, nor the instructions I had received from the venerable Society for the P. G. in foreign parts whose servant I was, and that I was resolved, by God's help, that no temptation should prevail with me to do, or even promise to do, anything unworthy my ministerial character.

"I was then allowed to retire to my house. The next day they placed a guard at another of my parishioners' houses and carried away all his plate. They permitted me upon my parole to walk about town unguarded, and on Saturday I made my escape on board the king's ship, having good reason to believe that they intended to carry me away with them and confine me close prisoner in the country. On Sunday I read prayers and preached on board the ship, and on Monday having received a letter from my churchwardens, we put to sea, and the next Sunday I arrived at this place, where I am without money and without clothing, and my family at more than one hundred miles from me—my wife and three children destitute of bread, among enemies who bear the greatest malice to the Church of England; my little flock persecuted and many of them obliged to flee from their dwellings.

"I have not been able to hear from Falmouth since I have been at Boston, as no letters are suffered to pass by land, nor has there been any communication by water. It affords me no little consolation when I reflect that my misfortunes do not arise from any disaffection of my people to me or to government, for they continue to contribute all in their power to my comfort and happiness; but all they can now do is to wish me well. Most of them, and the most considerable, strictly adhere to the line of their duty, and continue to be firm friends to the government, and it is for this that they suffer persecution by an infatuated people urged on by the prayers and sermons of their preachers to the most atrocious acts of rebellion."

He was made chaplain of a regiment in Boston, and was afterwards a chaplain in the navy, his son Peleg accompanying him in the ship, and his journal contains very interesting accounts of some important engagements which he witnessed. At the close of the war, after a visit to England, he was appointed Rector of Cornwallis, and a little later became Rector of Wilmot, in this county, which place he filled until his death. He preached the first sermon ever preached on Hanley Mountain. He married (2nd) Mary Hutchinson, widow. He had children:

i. Peleg, b. 1763, m. (1st) Oct. 18, 1792, Seraph Cutler, (2nd) Mary Nichols: Ch.: (only) Mary, m. Charles Budd, M.P.P. (See memoir of Hon. Peleg Wiswall, M.P.P.)

ii. John, b. 1765, was long a highly respected magistrate and respected and useful farmer, m. 1796, Hesdeliah Cutler (dau. of Ebenezer): Ch. : 1, James P., b. 1801, d. 1878, m. Minetta Wheelock (dau. of Abel), and had 10 ch. ; 2, Charles, d. unm. ; 3, Mercy, d. unm. ; 4, Miriam, d. unm. These ladies long conducted an excellent boarding school for young ladies, at Wilmot. 5, Seraph, m. Benjamin Smith, of St. John, N.B., a wealthy banker and broker ; she was his third wife, mother of Dr. Peleg W. Smith, Sheriff of Digby ; Benjamin Smith, barrister, of Kentville, and of Eliza, who m. Alexander McNab, C.E. ; 6, John, d. unm.
iii. Elizabeth, b. 1767.
iv. Bradstreet, b. 1769, d. 1773.
v. Robert, b. 1772, d. 1773.

Four names representing this good old family appear in 1896 on the voters' lists of the county as of persons qualifying on the anciently known "Wiswall homestead," Charles James Wiswall, Abel Maynard Wiswall, Edwin Gilpin Wiswall, and John Wiswall.

Witherspoon, or Weatherspoon. John Witherspoon was one of the earliest settlers in Annapolis County, having been here as early as 1757, when he was captured by Indians while cutting wood on the mountain near the fort, and taken away to Quebec, where he was kept a prisoner until the capture of the city by Wolfe in 1759. He wrote a journal, as tradition says, with tobacco juice mixed with blood drawn from his person, and concealed it every night among the cinders lest it should be taken away from him by the sentinel. A copy (from a copy written many years ago and still preserved in the family) was published among the transactions of the Nova Scotia Historical Society for 1879-80, and is exceedingly interesting. At a date so remote, it would seem probable that Mr. Witherspoon, although from Massachusetts, came here in some employment connected with the army, like Rumsey, LeCain and others. In the census of 1770 he was at Granville, where some of his descendants are now among the most prominent citizens. He was then head of a household of eight persons—one man (probably hired), his wife, three boys and three girls. He married in Massachusetts, but it is not known who his wife was. His children were, as far as can now be given, as follows :

i. James, b. Aug. 9, 1802.
(2) ii. Joseph.
(3) iii. John.
iv. Rose, m. Daniel Wade.
v. Mary, m. 1783, Thomas Fowler.

2. Joseph Weatherspoon married, 1793, Mercy Hardy, and had children :

i. John, b. 1794, m. Rebecca Edgett (dau. of Joel): Ch.: 1, Cynthia, m. John Milner ; 2, Alton, d. unm.
ii. Benjamin, b. 1795, d. 1823, unm.

iii. Joseph, b. 1797, went abroad.
iv. James, b. 1801, m.
v. Aaron, b. 1805, m. Dec. 31, 1836, Eliza Halliday (dau. of John): Ch.: 1, Lucy, m. James Oliver; 2, Cynthia, m. Moses Oliver; 3, Benjamin, m. Adeline Spurr, *née* Milner; 4, Ann, m. Wesley Hudson; 5, John, unm.; 6, Aaron, m. Bessie Purdy (no issue); 7, Mary, m. Ebenezer Young; 8, Alanda, m. Joseph Van-Blarcom.

3. John Weatherspoon, Jun., born 1765, married, Oct. 12, 1790, Elizabeth Mills. Children:

i. David, m. Elizabeth, dau. of William Mills, and had ch.: 1, Maria Ann, b. 1820, m. Silas Troop; 2, William Mills, b. 1822, m. Elizabeth B. Troop; 3, Hannah Eliza, b. 1825, m. Robert Delap.
ii. Ann, m. (1st) William Winchester, (2nd) James Winchester.
iii. James, b. 1802, m. Mary Amberman: Ch.: 1, Keziah, b. 1821, m. Joseph Gilliatt; 2, John, b. 1824; 3, Phebe Ann, b. 1826, m. William Harris; Elizabeth, b. 1828, m. Jacob Bent; 5, Mary Jane, b. 1830, m. Joseph Potter (son of John); 6, Susan, b. 1832.
iv. Robert, m. Ann Mills: Ch.: 1, Hannah, m. Joseph Halfyard.

Woodbury. The pioneers of the Woodbury families in this county were Jonathan and Isaac, who were uncle and nephew, the latter being a son of Elisha. They were descended from John Woodbury, who was born about 1579, and came from Somersetshire, England, and settled at Salem, Mass., where he was a leading man, and was sent by his fellow-colonists to England to secure a patent for their land. The line of descent is through his eldest son Humphrey,[2] Thomas,[3] Jonathan,[4] Jonathan,[5] Elisha[6] (father of Isaac[7]) and Jonathan[6]. The latter, born in Haverhill, Mass., 1737, and baptized in Salem, N.H., 1738, came first to Yarmouth, where in 1763, his household is returned as consisting of five members living on a one-acre lot on Cape Forchue river. His name appears as one of the grantees of the township in 1767, and in the "scheme of division" he appears as owner of 163 acres in the first, 539 in the second, and 154 in the third division. Mr. Woodbury was a physician by profession; came from Yarmouth to Granville and thence to Wilmot, and died in 1830, aged 93. He married (1st) 1760, in Massachusetts, Lydia, daughter of Dr. Foster; she died in 1808; (2nd) in Nova Scotia, December 12, 1811, Lorena,* daughter of Jeremiah Sabin, who came to Sissiboo (Weymouth) probably from Marblehead, Mass. She died November 10, 1853, aged 80. Children:

i. Lydia, b. 1760, m. Christopher Baltzor.
(2) ii. Foster, b. 1763.
iii. Hannah, b. 1764, m. Philip Thorne.
(3) iv. William Fairfield, b. March 15, 1766.
v. Lovefrey, b. 1768, m. Jonathan Smith.

* She was a sister of the Editor's father's mother.

vi. Emma Harris, b. 1770, d. unm.
vii. Manley Gates, b. 1778, d. unm.

By second wife :

viii. Jonathan (M.D.), m. Mary Eliza Randall : Ch.: 1, Jessie, d. unm.; 2, Robert, m. Laleah Inglis ; 3, Arthur C., d. unm.; 4, Ellen, d. unm.
ix. Lorena, b. 1813, m. (1st) Robert Woodbury, (2nd) William H. Chipman, of Bridgetown (his 2nd w.).

2. Foster Woodbury was born in 1763, and probably came to Yarmouth an infant, with his parents. He married, 1784, Elizabeth Webber, who was born 1765, and had children :

i. Elizabeth, b. 1785, d. unm.
ii. Lydia, b. 1787, m. Samuel Dodge.
iii. Foster, b. 1789, m. Elizabeth Simpson : Ch.: 1, Foster, m. Mary Johnston, *née* Little (no issue) ; 2, Simpson, m. Miriam Wheelock ; 3, Thomas, m.; 4, Eliza, m. (1st) William Parker, (2nd) John Vidito ; 5, Mary, d. unm. (burnt to death).
iv. Jonathan, b. 1791, m. 1820, Elizabeth Charlton : Ch.: 1, Ellen, d. unm.; 2, Ellen, b. 1821, m. Oliver Foster ; 3, Caroline, b. 1822, m. Adolphus Foster ; 4, Mary, b. 1823, m. Leonard Fitch ; 5, Jonathan, b. 1826, m. Griselda Sanders ; 6, Austin, b. 1828, m. Susan Jane Murray ; 7, Lucy, b. 1830, m. John Fitch ; 8, Elizabeth, b, 1831, m. Rev. George Weathers ; 9, Edward, b. 1833, d. unm.; 10, Beecher, b. 1835, m. Mehitable Woodbury.
v. Phebe, b. 1793, m. Benjamin Willett.
vi. Mary, b. 1796, m. Brooke Watson Chipman.
vii. Joseph, b. 1798, d. unm.
viii. Susanna, b. 1800, d. 1801.
ix. Lucy, b. 1800, d. unm.

3. William Fairfield Woodbury was born in Yarmouth, N.S., March 15, 1766, and is said to have been the first English male child born in Yarmouth. He married, 1791, Mary, daughter of Austin Smith, and had children :

i. Austin b. 1792, m. Elizabeth Bayard, dau. of John Ruggles : Ch.: 1, James, m. Jessie Barry ; 2, George (J.P.), d. unm.; 3, Louisa, m. Edward Barnaby.
ii. Jonathan, b. 1793, m. Frances Ruggles (dau. of John) : Ch.: 1, William Fairfield, d. unm.; 2, Gilbert W., m. Elizabeth Spinney ; 3, Charles, m. Elizabeth Bishop ; 4, Austin, m. Sarah Jane Spinney ; 5, Adelaide, m. Edward Fuller ; 6, Eliza, m. William West ; 7, Mehitable, m. Beecher Woodbury ; 8, John Ruggles, m. Lizzie Heritage ; 9, Robert, m. Augusta Heritage ; 10, Lucilla, m John Taft.
iii. Mehitable, b. 1795, d. unm.
iv. Mary, b. 1797, d. 1797.
v. William Fairfield, b. 1798, m. Mary Jane King (dau. of John King, R.N.): Ch.: 1, George Leander, d. unm.; 2, Egbert Sydney, d. unm.; 3, Matilda H., m. James J. Reagh ; 4, Gertrude J., d. unm.
vi. Manley, b. 1800, d. 1807.
vii. James, b. 1803, d. 1817.
viii. Mary, b. 1805, m. Luther Morse.

ix. Foster, b. 1807, m. Maria Morton: Ch.: 1, George, m. (lives abroad); 2, Louisa, m. (1st) H. A. Borden, (2nd) — Mitchell; 3, Susan, m. Joseph Dennison, M.D.; 4, Mary, m. James McPhail; 5, Norman; 6, Harry.
x. Harriet, b. 1809, m. John Dodge.
xi. Matilda, b. 1811, m. Joseph Morton.
xii. Francis, b. 1813, m. Elizabeth Congdon: Ch.: Hibbert (D.D.S.), b. 1842, m. 1881, Laleah Weatherspoon, dau. of William M.; 2, Maria, m. George Bell, M.D.; 3, Frank (D.D.S.), b. 1843, m. Jessie B. Troop.
xiii. Lucilla, b. 1815, m. John Foster.

Isaac Woodbury married (1st) Hannah Clark, (2nd) Mary Fowler, *née* St. Croix. Children:

i. Edward, b. 1793, m. 1815, Betsey Marchant: Ch.: 1, Hepzibah Ann, b. 1815, m. Robert Neily; 2, Isaac, b. 1818, m. (1st) Hannah Robinson, (2nd) Phebe Merry; 3, William Henry, b. 1820, m. Margaret Neily (dau. of George); 4, Mary Jane, b. 1823, m. Charles Foster; 5, Hannah, b. 1825, m. Joseph Hudson; 6, Gilbert Fowler, d. unm.; 7, Harriet Ann, b. 1833, m. Charles Covert; 8, Emmeline, b. 1834, m. Richard Forsyth; 9, James Edward, b. 1837, m. Helen Welton; 10, Elizabeth, m. (1st) William Henry Pearce, (2nd) Reis Goucher; 11, Louisa, d. unm.
ii. Hannah, d. unm.

By second wife.

iii. Isaac, b. June 8, 1798, d. 1863, m. (1st) 1823, Martha Chute, (2nd), Elizabeth Brotha, wid. of James Orde and Peter Long: Ch.: 1, John Gauladette, b. 1825, m. Naomi, dau. of John C. Wilson, Esq.
iv. Mary, b. April 23, 1800, m. (1st) James DeLancey Harris, (2nd) William B., son of Rev. Cyrus Perkins.
v. Elisha, b. April 3, 1802, m. Nancy C., dau. of James Harris, Esq.: Ch.: 1, Rachel Maria, m. Abraham Balcom; 2, Chalmers, m. Sarah Jane Whitman.

Young. Samuel Young, with three sons, Ichabod, Robert and Job, came to this province in 1760-61, from the colony of Massachusetts Bay, and settled near Belleisle. Ichabod married and remained in Granville several years, but returned to Massachusetts, and later migrated farther west, probably to the valley of the Ohio. It is said that the late Brigham Young, the apostle of Mormonism, was his grandson. Robert was probably married before his arrival here, but his wife died soon after, and he married again and raised a second family. He, too, and the major part of his children went back to Massachusetts, or to Maine. The lots which the Youngs took up included what is still known as Young's Mountain, and Young Cove, extending, as did the others, from the river to the shore of the Bay of Fundy. William and Samuel, sons of Job, settled in Wilmot; and Joseph and John married and settled in what is now Digby County, whence a descendant removed to Yarmouth County, and became a leading ship-owner there, but, after financial reverses, died in California, where he had spent some years in his earlier days.

Job Young, b. 1741, m. 1763, Hannah, dau. of Nath. Barnes. Children :

i. William, b. 1764, m. 1790, Miriam Parker: Ch.: 1, Susanna, b. 1791, m. Daniel McCormick ; 2, Miriam, b. 1792, m. (1st) 1818, Ann Wade, (2nd) Eliza Wade, *née* Troop ; 4, Edward Thorne, b. 1796, m. (1st) Mary Charlton, (2nd) Maria Ruffee ; 5, Job, b. 1798, m. Elizabeth Leonard (dau. of Abiel) ; 6, Maria, b. 1802, m. James Tobin, of Digby ; 7, Margaret, b. 1805 ; 8, Hannah, b. 1807, m. George S. Hawkesworth ; 9, Statyra, b. 1809, m. James Budd ; 10, Caroline, b. 1811, m. Ward Neily ; 11, George Fox, b. 1813, m. Caroline Durland ; 12, Deborah, b. 1815, m. Adam Durland ; 13, Ellwood, b. 1817, m. Eliza Bohaker.

ii. Samuel, b. 1765, m. 1796, Lydia Morse (dau. of Abner): Ch.: 1, Samuel, b. 1797, m. (1st) Sophia Spring, *née* Haines, (2nd) Elizabeth Carty ; 2, Sarah, b. 1799, m. Abram Covert ; 3, Abigail, b. 1802, m. John Haines ; 4, Grace, b. 1804, m. Isaac Dodge ; 5, Lydia, b. 1805, m. Jacob Davis ; 6, Mary Ann, b. 1808, m. Hardy Parker ; 7, Miriam, b. 1810, m. Ennis Munroe ; 8, Joseph, b. 1811, m. Eliza Young ; 9, Aaron, b. 1813, m. Mary Berteaux ; 10, Moses, b. 1815, m. Catharine Neily.

iii. Joseph, b. 1769, m. Rachel Moore : Ch.: 1, Joseph, d. unm. ; 2, Lindley, m. Isabel Mackintosh (no issue) ; 3, Phebe, m. (in Belfast, Ireland) ; 4, Rachel, m. William Y. McClintock ; 5, Rebecca, d. unm.

iv. Hannah, b. 1768, m. James Parker.

v. Timothy, b. 1771, d. 1824, m. 1796, Abigail Fletcher: Ch.: 1, David, b. 1797, m. 1821, Sarah Bent (dau. of Seth) ; 2, Phebe, b. 1801, m. William Nichols ; 3, Harriet, b. 1803, m. Caleb Morgan ; 4, Mary Ann, b. 1805, m. Henry Milbury ; 5, Susanna, b. 1808, m. Henry Munroe; 6, Elizabeth, b. 1811, m. Nelson Chesley; 7, Israel, b. 1814, m. (1st) — Parker, (2nd) Mary Ann McGregor ; 8, John, b. 1817.

vi. Job, b. 1773, m. 1800, Mary Wade : Ch.: 1, Elizabeth, b. 1801 ; 2, Silas, b. 1804, m. Caroline ; 3, Alfred, b. 1806, m. (1st) Amy Merritt, (2nd) Charlotte Covert ; 4, Joseph, b. 1808 ; 5, Marion, b. 1811, m. Abel Wade ; 6, Christina, b. 1813, m. Abraham Gesner ; 7, Amasa, b. 1815, m. ; 8, James, b. 1818 ; 9, Charles, b. 1820, m. Eunice Wade ; 10, William, b. 1823.

vii. John, b. 1775, m. Mary Ann Bailey : Ch.: 1, William Henry, m. Elizabeth Saxton ; 2, Stephen, m. (1st) Mary Dorothea Rice, (2nd) Rebecca Smith, *née* Winchester ; 3, Phebe Ann, m. George Dakin ; 4, Mary Elizabeth, m. Phineas Burns ; 5, Cynthia Jane, m. William Journeay ; 6, John, m. Lydia Hibbert ; 7, Hannah Parker, d. unm. ; 8, Margaret, unm. ; 9, Job, m. (1st) Elizabeth Journeay, (2nd) Kate Abrams, *née* Praisall.

viii. Nathaniel, b. 1777, m. Polly Cotton (no issue).

ix. Robert, b. 1779, m. (1st) 1800, Mary Dench, (2nd) 1824, Miriam Moody : Ch.: 1, Patience, b. 1801, m. Thomas Wright ; 2, Ebenezer, b. 1804, d. unm. ; 3, Robert, b. 1806, d. unm. ; 4, Elizabeth, b. 1809, m. Joseph Young ; 5, Nathan, b. 1811 ; 6, Lucy, b. 1813, m. Nathan Doudall ; (by 2nd wife) : 7, Mary, b. 1828, m. Abraham Bent ; 8, Robert, b. 1830, d. unm. ; 9, Ebenezer, b. 1831, m. (1st) Keziah White, (2nd) Mary Witherspoon ; 10, John, b. 1833 ; 11, Israel, b. 1835, m. Francis LeCain.

x. Sarah, b. 1780, d. unm.

xi. Abraham, b. 1784, m. Hannah Wade : Ch.: 1, James, m. Sarah Bettinson ; 2, Thomas, m. Lois Durland ; 3, Daniel, m. Caroline Wilson ; 4, Calvin, m. Famitcha Troop ; 5, Hiram, m. Mary Ann VanBlarcom ; 6, Abraham, m. (1st) Jane Young, (2nd) Abigail Sproule, (3rd) —— ; 7, Isaiah, m. Elizabeth Covert ; 8, Hannah, m. Darius O. Nutter ; 9, Isaac, m. Phebe VanBlarcom ; 10, Eliza, unm. ; 11, Jacob, unm.

ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

Page 2. On discovering and entering the mouth of Sissiboo River on June 10th, 1604, Demonts and Champlain named it *Port Sainte Marguérite*, St. Margaret. It was no doubt on Long Island that the priest D'Aubrey was lost. The full name and addition of Demonts was Timothé Pierre Du Guast, Sieur de Monts. From Du Guast comes the modern French and Acadian name, Dugas.

Page 5. Poutrincourt, a Picardy gentleman, was Jean de Biencourt, Sieur de Poutrincourt.

Page 7. The names of the two lonely occupants of the fort in July, 1606, were LeTaille and Miquelet.

Pages 9, 256. Poutrincourt was "Lord of the Manor" by transfer from Demonts in 1605, which was confirmed by the King in 1607. It was Poutrincourt's design to settle his family in America.

Page 11. *The Masonic Stone.*—This stone is here and at pages 17 and 31 spoken of as bearing the date 1609. Hon. Sandford Fleming, C.M.G., who took it to Toronto for Mr. R. G. Haliburton, to deposit it in the Canadian Institute, says the same in a book written by him, but he may have followed Murdoch, who had never seen it. Through the carelessness of some official or servant of the Institute it was used by the masons in the wall of an addition to their building, and authorities differ so as to the real date that we must ever remain as much in the dark about it as the stone is. I have even heard a tradition that it was 1605, and that Haliburton, when he wrote his history, pp. 155, 156, had not yet seen it, but spoke from a written description by its finder. If dated 1605, it might have been meant to mark the beginning of their first edifice —part of the corner-stone. A discussion on the subject appears in the proceedings of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts for 1891. Dr. Jackson was about to take the stone away to present it to the "Pilgrim Society" of Plymouth, when Mr. Haliburton fortunately, as we would naturally say, but as the event proved, unfortunately, secured it. Dr. Jackson, writing in 1856, says he found it on the shore of Goat Island; Haliburton in his History, in 1829, seems to intimate that it was found by the doctor on the point or peninsula of the Granville shore.

opposite the Island. Both agree that the date on the stone was 1606, although Haliburton says the "6" was worn and indistinct. Dr. Jackson says it was a gravestone; Haliburton says it was placed on the point by the French to mark "the date of their first cultivation of the soil, in memorial of their formal possession of the country." But this is evidently wrong, because for such a purpose they would surely use a national, and not a Masonic emblem; and they first cultivated the soil by planting a garden in 1605, and their cornfields planted in the year of the date on the stone were, as has been shown, on the point or cape within the present site of the town. If the date was 1606, it was probably part of a gravestone commemorating the man whose death from wounds inflicted by Indians during Poutrincourt's voyage south, occurred at the fort in November, 1606. (See pages 7 and 8, *ante*.)

There is in the library of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts a rare book entitled "Ahiman Rezon of the Grand Lodge of Nova Scotia," written in 1786, giving a history of Masonry in the Province to that date. In it the following statements are made: "From Europe the Royal Art crossed the Atlantic with the first emigrants. . . . It is said to have been known in Nova Scotia while in the hands of the French."

Pages 16, 17, 182. It was not until after Chapter II. was printed that my attention was called to Rev. Dr. Patterson's valuable papers read before the Royal Society of Canada on Sir William Alexander's colony and "The Last Years of Charles de Biencourt." The former, page 92, makes it clearer than is shown in these pages, that the survivors of Argall's raid, under the leadership of Latour, and as has been generally understood, of Biencourt, being wholly deserted by France, made full submission to the authority of Alexander. But the long-received opinion that Biencourt died about 1623 is shaken by Dr. Patterson's recent discovery of two old MSS. offered for sale in Paris, one showing that Charles Biencourt de Poutrincourt, born 1583, died about 1638, "son of Sieur de Poutrincourt, governor in Acadia for M. Demonts"; and the other being a receipt of Charles de Biencourt, Sieur de Poutrincourt, for three thousand livres as his salary for a year as Director of the King's Academy, and dated December 31, 1621. It is hard to reconcile these interesting documents with the statements relied on by Murdoch, Vol. I., p. 67, viz.: that of Champlain, Vol. II., p. 92, in 1624, that Biencourt (whose then recent death it is supposed he had not yet heard of) had then lived eighteen years in Acadie; and that of Latour, in a petition by him to the King cited by French writers, dated at Lomeron, in Acadie, July 25, 1627, that Biencourt had died in Acadie four years previously. Biencourt, when he was sent to France by his father in 1610, is said to have been about nineteen, and it would therefore seem that he must have been born in 1591, eight years later than the one who is now found

in France in 1621 and 1638. A well-read correspondent* assures me it was not uncommon in France in those days for two sons to be given the same Christian name, and be distinguished by titular designations or "surnames"; and that the Charles de Biencourt, Sieur de Poutrincourt in 1621, might be a brother of the Charles de Biencourt, Baron de St. Just, of Acadian fame and misfortune. When Poutrincourt set sail from St. Just, in Champagne, in February, 1610, it is said that he had with him his eldest son, Charles de Biencourt, and a younger son, Jacques de Biencourt de Salazar.†

Pages 28, 43, 44. D'Aulnay died in 1650. His grant of Hog Island to Bourgeois must have been at least ten years prior to the date indicated on pages 43 and 44.

Page 82. The words "and Mascarene" at the end of the title of Chapter VI., are due to a clerical error. Jean (John) Paul Mascarene was born at Castras in Languedoc, France, in 1684, of an old and excellent family. His father was Jean Mascarene, and his mother Margaret de Salavy. His father after long imprisonment as a Huguenot, was transported from France, and young Paul was brought up by an uncle, Cæsar Mascarene, and his father's mother, Louise de Balarand. His father never saw him after he was two years old, but died at Utrecht in 1698, aged thirty-eight years, two days before the son succeeded in reaching Utrecht from Geneva to meet him. In 1707 Paul Mascarene was naturalized as a British subject, and commissioned Lieutenant. In 1720 he was in command of the British forces at Placentia, Newfoundland; but in 1721 we find he had returned to Annapolis. In 1750 he retired on the pay of a Colonel of foot, and died in Boston, January 22nd, 1760. He married Elizabeth Perry, of Boston, who died January 1st, 1729, leaving a son and two daughters. J. Mascarene Hubbard, Esq., of Boston, is a descendant.

Pages 122-144. I am gratified to find that Dr. Bourinot, a gentleman of Jersey extraction, and therefore not to be suspected of Acadian or Franco-Canadian prejudices, in his recent excellent work, "The Story of Canada," p. 198, characterizes as "atrocious" the scheme for the deportation of the Acadians successfully executed by Lawrence. Here I may

* Mr. Placide P. Gaudet, Acadian genealogist. He gives four examples, of which I will cite three: Denis Gaudet, his ancestor, b. in France, 1612, m. Martine Gautier, buried at Port Royal, October 11, 1709, left two sons,—Pierre, the elder, b. 1651, m. Anne Blanchard, and settled at Beaubassin; and Pierre, the younger, b. 1654, settled at Port Royal: Pierre Comeau, b. in France in 1605, m. Rose Bayols, had two sons Pierre, one b. 1652, *dit* L'esturgeon; the other, b. 1660, *dit* des Loups Marins: and Jean Belliveau, b. 1651, son of Antoine Belliveau and Andrée Guion, m. Jeanne Bourque, and had four sons, of whom two were Jean, the elder, b. 1672, m. Cecile Melanson, and removed in 1728 to Tracadie, P.E.I.; the younger, b. 1674, m. Marie Madelaine Melanson, d. at Port Royal, September 13, 1707, from a wound received during the siege of that year. For all this he quotes parish records with which he is familiar.

† Moreau, "Histoire de l'Acadie Française," Paris, 1870.

remark that M. Richard's severe denunciation of Parkman and his methods as an historian, do not with justice apply to his "Half Century of Conflict," for that work contains enough to fully establish the conclusions expressed by me in Chapter IX. Parkman, although some of his statements evince a spirit of unfairness to the Acadians, does not as a rule exemplify, as Macaulay does, that in an historian trustworthiness is one thing, and brilliancy another.

Pages 166, 168. Women suffered no less severely than men in the cruel proscriptions of Loyalists by the promoters of the American revolution. The wives of Col. Beverley Robinson and Roger Morris, daughters of Frederic Phillipse, descended from one of the founders of New York, and Mrs. Inglis, wife of the first, and mother of the third bishop of Nova Scotia, were by an Act of the Legislature of New York attainted of high treason for their loyalty, and banished on pain of death, the only case in which women were ever so dealt with in the history of the English people. Mr. Bailey, on November 6, 1783, mentions that a body of four hundred expatriated Loyalists had perished by shipwreck on their way to Annapolis. Joseph Wanton, jun., a descendant of the Col. Wanton conspicuous at the siege of Port Royal in 1707 (page 56), was one of those whose property was confiscated after the peace and contrary to the treaty. Others, on returning to their old homes, were seized and imprisoned.

The following schedule without date, endorsed "Abstract of difft. Companies," was found among the papers of the late Amos Botsford, the agent for settling the Loyalists, frequently mentioned in the history of the townships of Wilmot and Clements. I cannot explain the second and following columns; but it would seem that 870 privates in loyal companies were to have each one hundred acres of land in this county:

RETURN OF SETTLERS AT ANNAPOLIS.

Companies.					
Major T. Ward's	75	50	69	57	22
Andrew Ritchie	52	29	21	41	13
Wm. Chandler	29	10	9	6	5
Richard Hill	28	23	29	20	26
Nath. Chandler	23	4	..	1	..
Chris. Benson	8	7	5	2	9
Douwe Ditmars	79	47	45	58	23
John Polhemus	27	23	25	19	23
Joshua Chandler	5	12	9	11	18
Gabriel Purdy	19	11	8	7	9
*Neil McNeil	85	46	35	38	29
Peter Allaire	28	15	8	12	4

* Great-grandfather of John S. McNeill, Esq., late M.P.P., and now Registrar of Deeds, Digby County, and of a very numerous posterity in that county.

Companies.					
Joshua De St. Croix	43	24	26	14	9
John Hinchman	56	25	22	27	13
Hunt	27	18	26	28	1
Eben Ward	38	14	10	16	1
Patrick Haggerty	15	12	7	9	12
Hardenbrook	41	24	25	15	9
38th & 40th Reg	22	3	1	..	..
Jarvis	15	9	8	12	6
Young	55	28	30	32	15
Hilton	25	13	12	15	6
Maj. Thos. Huggeford	15	8	9	12	8
Scatterers	60	35	12	10	9
	870	491	451	462	270
		451			
		462			
		270			
870 at 100 acres.		1674			

Page 175. The following are the names of the Grand Jury of the county from September term, 1796, to May term, 1797 :

Edward Thorne, Foreman ; John Ruggles, John Slocum, Reuben Tucker, James Eager, John Ditmars, John Reed, Joshua de St. Croix, John Hill, John Polhemus, Elisha Budd, Ambrose Haight, John Aikins, Robert Wolseley, Jesse Hoyt, Charles Doucet, John Burkett, Samuel Street, John Rice, Obadiah Wheelock, James Thorne, Timothy Ruggles, Asa Tupper.

Of these John Hill, and a brother, Richard, Loyalists from Long Island, lived in Digby, and owned the lots and water-lots on Carleton Street and Water Street, eastwardly from Birch Street. No posterity of the name remain in the county, but the late Judge Hill, of the Supreme Court, was, I think, of this family, as were the prominent Hill family of Antigonish. There were long somewhat noted descendants of Reuben Tucker in the county, among them Charles H., the well-known school-teacher and poet of St. John, Ottawa, and Digby, not long deceased. Descendants in female lines are to be found in some branches of the Ruggles and Thorne families, and others. Probably he was not related to Dr. Tucker, the Sheriff. Aikens and Street have been mentioned on pp. 170 and 250.

The old records of the Sessions of the Peace are lost, or I would give a list of the town officers of the other townships "a hundred years ago."

Page 178. It ought to have been mentioned in connection with the subject of education in the town that Mr. Watts, referred to on page 297 as a minister of the Church of England, was, in 1728, the first school-teacher in the town of whom we have any record, and that John Bass, a brother of the Joseph whose family record appears on page 474, and of the first bishop of Massachusetts, a graduate of Harvard in 1761, came

here shortly after that date, and taught school many years. He died at New Albany at an advanced age. The building in which McNamara conducted his academy stood on the site of the old railroad station until the land was expropriated for the purposes of the railroad, when it was sold, and becoming the property of Mr. Orde, was removed to St. James' Street and fitted up as a dwelling, and still stands in a renovated and attractive condition next eastwardly to the new Music Hall.

Page 183. The "coffin plate," so to speak, of the old block-house, with "1881," the year of its "passing," engraved on it, consists of a silver band around the head of a walking-stick made of some of its wood at the time, as a memento, for H. E. Gillis, Esq. There was no little excitement in the town when it was known that the work of demolition had commenced. An attempt was made by some of the citizens to stay the hand of the destroyer, and a subscription was on the same day started to repair the damage already done; but the fiat had gone forth from Ottawa at the instance of the occupant of the other buildings in the fort, whose representations proved mistaken.

Pages 289-291, 444-5. The first Executive Council under Responsible Government, when the House of Assembly met on February 3, 1841, consisted of Hon. S. B. Robie, M.L.C.; Sir Rupert D. George, Bart., M.L.C.; Hon. J. W. Johnstone, M.L.C., Solicitor-General; Hon. E Murray Dodd, M.P.P.; Hon. Thomas A. S. DeWolfe, M.P.P.; Hon. Alexander Stewart, M.L.C.; Hon. James B. Uniacke, M.P.P.; Hon. S. G. W. Archibald, M.P.P., Attorney-General; Joseph Howe, M.P.P., James McNab, M.P.P. On February 11 the House went into committee on the general state of the Province for the purpose of eliciting explanations respecting the policy of the Government and the effect of the recent political changes. Mr. Howe, although a member of the Government, was Speaker of the House. Every member of the Government in the House spoke on this occasion, defining the position of the Cabinet and of himself as a member of it. A report of the speeches will be found in the *Nova Scotian* newspaper for February 18, 1841. A similar discussion occurred in the Legislative Council on the 17th of the same month, when Mr. Johnstone spoke at length; and on the 18th, when Hon. S. B. Robie and Hon. Alexander Stewart spoke. These were reported in the *Nova Scotian* of the 25th, and may be referred to as evidence that Responsible Government was then fully established. On April 28 of this year Mr. Johnstone succeeded Mr. Archibald as Attorney-General.

Dr. Bourinot ("Story of Canada," p. 362) thinks that Lord Falkland "became the mere creature of the Tory party, led by Mr. Johnstone"; and it might appear that he evinced undue subserviency to that section of the Cabinet when he consented to Mr. Almon's appointment to the Executive. The seat should have been given to Mr. Huntington, Mr.

Howe's able lieutenant and a trusted leader of the popular movement; but I apprehend this step had been rendered impracticable by the irreconcilable difference that had arisen between Mr. Howe and Mr. Johnstone on the College question. But for this difference, the struggle which convulsed the Province from 1843 to 1847 would not have occurred, unless the proverbial anomaly of "two kings in Brentford" rendered some such difference inevitable. Once the struggle began it was easy to produce the impression that Mr. Johnstone stood for the curtailment and Mr. Howe for the extension of popular rights. Enormous public meetings, attended by crowds from long distances, were held in this county during the four years of intense and bitter strife. There was a very notable one at Pine Grove, presided over by Major Chipman, Esq., addressed by Mr. Howe. Mr. Johnstone, in reply, delivered a most able and brilliant speech of five hours' length in a barn near Bridgetown. Mr. Howe replied to this in a series of surpassingly able letters addressed to Major Chipman, and published and distributed in pamphlet form. Afterwards, Mr. Howe invited Mr. Johnstone to a joint meeting, held, I think, in Annapolis, Mr. Howe having with him his able and eloquent co-worker, Mr. (afterwards Hon. Sir) William Young, and Mr. Johnstone being assisted by Mr. (afterwards Rev.) James J. Ritchie. The addresses at these gatherings were in the highest style of oratory, and Mr. Johnstone, although unequal to Mr. Howe in the *ad captandum* arts, and without a particle of his humour, showed a capacity for close reasoning and sustained flights of lofty eloquence, apparently inspired by an inward consciousness of rectitude, with occasionally a vein of caustic sarcasm, all proving him fitted for a wider and more important sphere.

After the passage of Mr. Howe's measure to extend the franchise to all ratepayers, Mr. Johnstone introduced and carried a measure establishing manhood suffrage, and two elections were run under it. Afterwards, Mr. Howe and the Liberal party very wisely repealed this and restored an assessment basis, but a restricted one, with revision and registration.

The comparative brevity of Mr. Johnstone's tenures of power may be attributed largely to his ignorance and contempt of those tactics unhappily so requisite to success under a popular system of government, no matter how pure the motive or exalted the aim of the statesman. Undivided and engrossing attention to the public interests is sometimes incompatible with the watchfulness and cunning necessary to guard against the wily advances of an Opposition ably and artfully led in the press and parliament. When he introduced his bill to abolish township representation he admitted that it would deprive him of two supporters from the township of Halifax; but he expected that the merits of this and his other measures would commend his administration to the people generally. He was defeated by a parliamentary majority of three at the election which followed.

It should have been mentioned in the memoir of Mr. Johnstone that besides his great gifts as an orator, he displayed in the social circle most brilliant and fascinating conversational powers.

Page 298. Since this page was printed I for the first time noticed that the late Dr. Akins, in his "History of Halifax," p. 71, gives Rev. Dr. Breynton, Rector of St. Paul's, the credit of establishing the first Sunday School in Nova Scotia, "about 1783, perhaps a little later." If later than 1783, Forman may yet have anticipated him. But the Rev. H. D. DeBlois, in an able paper on the old church in Annapolis, just published, says that Rev. Mr. Watts, in 1728, opened "one of the first Sunday Schools taught in the Province." This takes away the palm from Raikes himself, immortalized as the founder of Sunday Schools. The distinction has also been claimed for Rev. John Wesley.

Page 316. The following are the names of the Justices of the Peace for the County of Annapolis from the division of the county to 1849, after which, I think, it is generally conceded that the office lost much of its former importance and prestige, partly owing to the great increase of appointments, and partly to the different motives that inspired them :*

1837, Richard James ; 1838, Israel W. Ruggles, Henry Hudson, Peter De Lancey, John Tupper, Joseph Shaw, Charles Whitman, George Vroom, William Harris ; 1842, Samuel Bishop Chipman, Henry Gesner, David C. Landers, Peter Bonnett, John Bath, John Roop, jun., Angus M. Gidney, Handley Starratt, Edward Eaton, Weston Hall, William B. Turnbull, George Harris, Alexander Fowler ; 1843, Jacob Kempton, Thomas Bogart ; 1845, James Gray, Phineas Oakes, Daniel Nichols, John Ross, Walter Willett, John Mills, James Potter, Moses Shaw ; 1845, Reis Stronach ; 1848, Abel Chute ; 1849, William Randall, Austin Woodbury, Thos. C. Wheelock, Eri Welton, William H. Troop, Gilbert Reagh, Edward H. Fitzrandolph, Walter Ricketson, Miner Tupper, Joseph Wheelock, Robert H. Bath, John F. Bath, James Longley, Robert Parker, Robert Mills (2nd), John Kennedy, Andreas Bohaker, William F. Potter, James Balcom, John Wilson, Peter Middlemas, Arthur Dodge, Joel Banks, Samuel Balcom, Jordan Messenger, William Piggott, Andrew Henderson, Isaac Willett, John Shafner, Thomas Wheelock, Edward Baker (2nd).

Pages 339 and 426. At these places respectively should have been introduced biographical memoirs of PHINEAS LOVETT, JUN., M.P.P., and JAMES RUSSELL LOVETT, M.P.P., the former of whom, known as Col. Lovett, was first elected in 1775, and the latter in 1827 ; but the author left no materials from which I could have framed them. During one session, Phineas Lovett, sen. and jun., were contemporary members, although it does not appear that the former served ; and Phineas, jun , was for a short time sheriff. (See pp. 162, 285, 309.) Father, son and grandson of a family once numerous and influential in the county, but now for the most part flourishing beyond its borders, represented its people in the Legislature—a rare occurrence. I am now informed that

* A fee of $5 is now charged by the Government on a magistrate's commission.

Phineas Lovett, jun., lived at Round Hill; that James R. Lovett was born there in 1781, and when first elected lived and carried on business there; that he removed to Annapolis, where he was a general merchant and contractor, and built for a residence and store the large house now known as the "Clifton House" Hotel, and that he died in 1864 at the residence of Mr. P. McPhee, his son-in-law, at Halifax.

Pages 339, 407 and 573. JOHN RITCHIE, M.P.P., and THOMAS RITCHIE, M.P.P., son of Andrew. I have now no doubt that these two gentlemen were cousins-german. The deceased author appears to have possessed evidence that the uncle and nephew, Andrew and John, were in partnership as merchants in Annapolis as early as 1777, or even earlier. This, of course, might have been the case, although the elder still resided in Boston. From the list on page 644, it would appear that Andrew Ritchie, father or son, was captain of a company of loyal troops.

Page 344. Thomas Barclay was a great-grandnephew of the celebrated Francis Barclay, author of the "Apology for the People Called Quakers," a brother of whom, Mr. Barclay's great-grandfather, was associated with Penn in the colonization of Pennsylvania and New Jersey. The grandfather of Thomas abandoned the "Society of Friends" for the Church of England at about middle age. By intermarriage with the best families of the early Dutch settlers of New York, the blood of that people largely prevailed over the ancestral Norman-Scotch and English in his veins. In Rivington's *Gazetteer*, New York, under date of October 2, 1775, the following marriage notice appeared: "This evening were married at Union Hill, in the borough of Westchester, New York, John Watts, jun., Esq., Recorder of New York, to Miss Jane De Lancey; and Thomas H. Barclay, Esq., to Miss Susannah De Lancey, daughters of the late Peter De Lancey, Esq.

> "'Round their nuptial beds,
> Hovering with purple wings, th' Idalian boy
> Shook from his radiant torch the blissful fires
> of innocent desires,
> And Venus scattered myrtles.'"

Page 393. Mr. Moody's sword was presented to Capt. Benjamin McConnell, jun., of a family from whom McConnell's Hill, a little west of Gilbert's Cove, on the St. Mary's Bay Road, took its name. All of the family have long since removed to Ontario. From Benjamin the sword passed to his son Elisha, of Malahide, Ont., and from him to his son, Elisha Newton McConnell, of that place,

Page 474. BASS. The statement that John, brother of the Joseph Bass whose family record is here given, settled at Liverpool is an error. And I am now informed that this Joseph had no son John; in fact, there

was none given in the author's record. I am also informed that this Joseph's wife was Elizabeth Searle. The true order and dates of his children were: 1, Sarah, b. Aug. 14, 1748, d. young; 2, Alden, b. July 12, 1750; 3, Sarah, b. Nov. 12, 1751; 4, Elizabeth, b. May 8, 1753; 5, William, b. Nov. 23, 1755; 6, Lydia, b. Oct. 11, 1757; 7, Edward, b. Feb. 26, 1760; 8, Thankful, b. July 24, 1762; 9, Joseph, b. July 7, 1767—the last two in Annapolis, the others in Dorchester, Mass. William and Alden removed to Nictaux, Edward to Newburyport, Mass. In 1657, John Bass, son of the immigrant ancestor, Samuel Bass, married Ruth, daughter of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins, immortalized in Longfellow's poem. Joseph, a grandson of Samuel, married Elizabeth Breck, and was the father of the Bishop, and of the two Annapolis County pioneers. The Barsses, of Queens County, are from a collateral branch.

Page 480. BERTEAUX. From some Annapolis records by Rev. Mr. Wood, found at St. Paul's, Halifax, it appears that "Philip Edward, son of Philip and *Mary* Berteaux" (probably his first wife), was baptized September 13, 1770. His second wife was probably *Martha*, not *Elizabeth* Gould.

Page 490. Further genealogy of Chipman (from the "Chute Genealogies"):

JOHN (*4th child and eldest surviving son of Handley*) and Eunice (Dixon) CHIPMAN had ch.: 1, John Hancock, b. May 9, 1770, m. Elizabeth Osborne; 2, Handley, b. Aug. 26, 1771; 3, Charles, b. July 9, 1772, m. Dec. 3, 1789, Eunice, dau. of Mason Cogswell; 4, George, b. April 23, 1774, m. — Fraser, wid.; 5, Elizabeth, b. June 18, 1775, d. in infancy; 6, Elizabeth, b. May 30, 1776, m. S. Herman Burbage; 7, Eunice, b. Aug. 9, 1777, d. in infancy; 8, Eunice, b. June 30, 1778, m. David Whidden; 9, Allen, b. March 26, 1780, m. — Gardner, of Liverpool, N.S.; 10, Daniel, b. April 21, 1782, m. Sarah Bishop (7 ch.); 11, Lavinia, b. Nov. 21, 1783; 12, Jane, b. March 19, 1785, m. Timothy, son of Timothy and Elizabeth Barnaby; 13, William, b. Dec. 9, 1786; 14, Jared I., b. May 22, 1788; 15, Olivia, b. March 8, 1790.

The words "by second wife," on page 490, are misplaced. William Allen was evidently by first wife, but there is some uncertainty about the date of Nancy's birth, and whether she was of first or second family.

Pages 493, 494. Further genealogy of Clark:

WILLIAM (*son of Richard*) and Joanna (Dunn) CLARK had ch.: 1, Henrietta, m. Priestly Milbury; 2, Susan, m. William Nichol; 3, William, m. Ethelinda Rice; 4, Maria, m. William Short (his 2nd wife); 5, Letitia, m. Henry Craig; 6, Edward, m. Theresa Parker.

JOSEPH (*son of Richard*) and Maria (Morgan) CLARK had ch.: 1, Sophronia, m. George Nichol; 2, Rachel, m. Joseph Burton Chute; 3, Mary, m. Edmund Cornwall; 4, Robert, d. unm.; 5, Philenda, m. Edward Rice; 6, Harriet, m. John Cornwall; 7, Emma, m. John Gilliland; 8, Charles, m. Eliza Quigley; 9, Henrietta, m.

JOSEPH (*son of Robert*) and Hannah (Eagleson) CLARK had ch.: 1, Maud; 2, Josephine; 3, Robert Joseph Norman.

RICHARD (*son of Robert*) and Elizabeth Ann (Schafner) CLARK had ch.: 1 (only), James, m. Emma Greenwood.

JOHN (*son of John*) and Louisa (Berry) CLARK had no sons who left issue.

ROBERT RALPH (*son of John*) and Maria (Durland) CLARK had ch.: 1, Robert, m. Eliza Sullivan (no issue); 2, Charlotte, m. Albert Craig; 3, Major, d. unm.; 4, Edwin, m.; 5, Abraham, m. Maria Livingstone; 6, Mary Eliza, m. Henry Gardner; 7, Sarah Ann, m. Gilbert Jacques; 8, Wesley, m. Anna Harris; 9, Ca harine, m. Andrew Lyons; 10, Celeda, m.; 11, Augusta, m. Daniel Giles; 12, Maynard, m. Louisa Morton.

WILLIAM HENRY (*son of Henry*) and Prudence (Reagh) CLARK had ch.: 1, Sarah, m. Phineas Whitman; 2, Mary F., m. George Steers; 3, Gilbert, d. unm.; 4, Henry, m. Maria Pendleton; 5, Wallace, m. Rosalia Brennan; 6, Isaac, m. Abbie Merrill; 7, John W., unm.; 8, Charles R., m. Emma Merrill; 9, Thomas Ansley; 10, William Brenton; 11, Arthur Stanley.

I cannot, perhaps, more fitly close this work than by commending to the people of this county, for whose benefit especially it was undertaken by the deceased author, and brought to a conclusion by me, the sentiments of him who drew from the early history of its chief town the inspiration for "The Rising Village":

"Happy Britannia! though thy history's page
In darkest ignorance shrouds thine infant age,
Matur'd and strong, thou shin'st in manhood's prime,
The first and brightest star of Europe's clime,
The nurse of science, and the seat of arts,
The home of fairest forms and gentlest hearts;
The land of heroes, generous, free and brave.
The noblest conquerors of the field and wave;
Thy flag, on every sea and shore unfurled,
Has spread thy glory and thy thunder hurled.
When, o'er the earth, a tyrant would have thrown
His iron chain, and called the world his own,
Thine arm preserved it in its darkest hour,
Destroyed his hopes and crushed his dreaded power,
To sinking nations life and freedom gave,
'Twas thine to conquer, as 'twas thine to save.
"Then blest Acadia! ever may thy name,
Like hers, be graven on the rolls of fame;
May all thy sons, like hers, be brave and free,
Possessors of her laws and liberty;
Heirs of her splendour, science, power and skill,
And through succeeding years her children still;
And as the sun, with gentle dawning ray,
From night's dull bosom wakes and leads the day,
His course majestic keeps, till in the height
He glows one blaze of pure exhaustless light;
So may thy years increase, thy glories rise
To be the wonder of the western skies;
And bliss and peace encircle all thy shore,
Till empires rise and sink, on earth, no more."

INDEX.

The Genealogies, being in alphabetical order, furnish their own index.

Acadia, purchased by Madame de Guercherville, 13; abandoned by Poutrincourt, 14; occupied by Sir William Alexander, 16; re-ceded to France, 19; boundaries of, 28; conquered by Sedgwick, 29; granted by Cromwell, 30; re ceded to France, 31; population of, in 1683, 34; in 1686, 35; famine in, 40; finally becomes a British possession, 62.

Acadians, Account of, by Villebon, 41; ordered to choose deputies, 68; tendered oath of allegiance, 69; take qualified oath, 74; elect new deputies, 78; always anxious to leave the Province, 129, 130; their character criticised, 82; by Phillipps, 84; vindicated by the Editor, 133; their fidelity under Du Vivier's threats, 105, 132, 138; their partiality to France, 107; withstand Ramezay's threats at Grand Pré, 111, 112, *note*; reward offered for twelve charged with treason, 112; called on to swear allegiance, 114; their sad doom approaching, 117; deprived of their arms, 117, 123; ask and are refused leave to remove, 117; deputies meet Governor Lawrence, 118; instructions to Major Handfield for their removal, 119; vessels engaged to transport them, 121; some escape deportation, 122, 141; subsequent fate of these, 141; delegates to Halifax shipped to N. Carolina, 124; families of these scattered elsewhere, 124; their buildings burnt, 124, 125, 141; their expulsion first asked for by Massachusetts, 127; always detained contrary to treaty, 129; Gov. Shirley's opinion, 130; allowed to take qualified oath as inducement to stay, 131; motives in keeping them, 130, 131; their utility to the English, 130, 137, 138; friendly and hostile governors, 132; their distressing condition as neutrals, 133; final effort to get away, 134; pathetic petition styled "insolent," 134, 135; indiscriminate punishment of, 136; necessity of the act not perceived by Br. Government, 137, 138; their personal effects appropriated by Lawrence and his friends, 139; except cattle and flocks which starve at Grand Pré, 139; never accounted for by Lawrence, 139; discussion of the subject many years stifled, 123, *note*, 139, 140; opinions of Sir B. Watson, 125; of Rev. Andrew Brown, 141; of Murdoch, 140; number deported from Annapolis, 141; Rameau's account of the return of survivors and settlement at Clare, 142; loyal in the revolutionary war, 163.

Adventists, 307.

Alexander, Sir William, obtains patent, 16; builds fort, 17; ordered to demolish it, 18; his colony, 17, 18.

Allain's River, called Mill Brook, 9; Lequille, 9; Jenny River, 70; Bridge built over, 170.

Allain, Louis, imprisoned, 63.

Alline, Rev. Henry, 302.

Amberman family, 516, *note*.

American revolution, 161; attitude of people of Annapolis, 162.

Annapolis Royal, first cultivated, 8; first so called, 63, 65; description of, in 1716, 67; in 1721, 70; grants of land in, 77, 78; description of, in 1743, 97; in 1782 and 1789, 169; in 1804, 176; in 1826, 180; attacked by Indians, 72; by Indians under De la Loutre, 99; besieged by Du Vivier, 101; attacked by Marin, 106; threatened by Ramezay, 110; a depot for Bay of Fundy ports, 116; prominent residents in, 1755-1760, 147; 1770-1775, 157, 158, 159; in 1804, 176; threatened with invasion by revolted colonies, 162; arms for defence supplied, 162; plundered and two leading citizens captured, 163; antiquity of, and true date of founding discussed, 181; barns and cornfields on present site escape destruction by Argall, 182; incorporation of, and first town council, 186.

Annapolis, township of, 145; first grantees of, 160; passengers by *Charming Molly*, 150, 151; later arrivals, 151; divided into lots, 152; names of adult inhabitants, their families and effects, at early dates, 152, 155, 171; summary of census of 1768, 154; of census of 1770, 156; state of, 1770 to 1780, 158; rustic social habits, 159; effects of American revolution, 161; attitude of the people, 162; war with France, 1793, 174; effects of the war of 1812, 177, 284, 285.
Anne, Queen, her letter, 65.
Apple trade, 322.
Argall destroys Port Royal, 13, 14.
Armstrong, Capt., 67, 183, *note*; made Lieut.-Governor, 73; administers qualified oath to Acadians, 74; cruel punishment of his servant, 75; his complaints against Father Breslay and Cosby, 76; his trouble with the Acadians, 77; suspends Winniett from the Council, 84; severely censures him to the Br. Govt., and becomes friendly to him, 84; commits suicide, 92.
Arson, crime of, committed, 91; execution for, 293.
Attorney, first in Annapolis, 80.
Aubrey, priest, lost on Digby Neck or Long Island, 2, *note*, 641.
Aull, John, 269.
Aymar, James, 247.

Bailey, Rev. Jacob, 164, 169, 297. (See Genealogies.)
Balcom family, 255. (See Genealogies.)
Baltzor, or Bolsor, 199. (See Genealogies.)
Baptist body, 290; churches, 303; first Association in the Dominion, 303; Annapolis and Granville one church, 304.
Barnard, Rev. John, his diary of the siege in 1607, 54-58.
Barrat, Madame, 44.
Barrack-masters, 184.
Bass, 236, 324, 649-650. (See Genealogies.)
Bayard, Col. Samuel V., 81, 233, 234; bridge, 236, 305.
Bear Island granted to Henry Daniel, 92; shelters Imbert's vessel, 256.
Bear River, 5; at first named "St. Anthony's River," 5; named Imbert's River, 257; first called Hébert's River, 258, 259; this name survived with the French, 259; forms boundary between Annapolis and Digby, 287.
Beardsley family, 497, *note*.
Belleisle, Le Borgne, Sieur de, assumes authority, 31; lord of the manor, 35; Widow of, 44; settlement so called, 33, 193.
Benson, 247.
Bent, family of, 199; Charles Grandison founds Lake Pleasant settlement, 281. (See Genealogies.)
Bergier, 34.
Biard, Father, 12, 182.
Biencourt, "Goat" Island first named for, 5; goes on a mission to France, 11; returns, 12; holds conference with Argall, 14, 181; remains in Acadia, 16; submits to Sir William Alexander, 16, 642; dies in Acadia, 16; his supposed return to and death in France discussed 642.
Biographical and genealogical sketches of early English settlers, arranged alphabetically, Armstrong-Young, 465 to 640; Beardsley, 497, *note*; Bass, Berteaux, Chipman, Clark, corrected, 649, 650.
Black, Rev. Wm., 304, 305.
Block-house, 108; on Dauphin St., 81; the latter removed, 114; old block-house demolished, 183, 646. (See Errata.)
Bloody Creek, massacre at, 64.
Bloomington, 275.
Bogart family, 247. (See Genealogies.)
Bomb-proof. See "Fort."
Bonaventure in command, 45.
Bonnett, 247, 306.
Boudroit, 34, 35.
Boulardarie, 53.
Bounty for new land cleared, 117, 217, 238, 255.
Bourgeois, Jacob, 30, 44.
Breda, Treaty of, 31, 44.
Bridges at Hicks' Ferry, 222; Allain's River, Saw-mill Creek, Moose River, Nictaux, Windsor, 282.
Bridgetown, 222; laid out in town lots, 223; becomes joint shire town, 288.
Brouillan, De, becomes governor, 41; charge against, 43; sails for France, 45; his death, 46.

Cahouet, 64, 80.
Campbell, Mrs Agatha, *née* Latour, 86, 91; Rev. J. Moore, 298.
Canadians, celebrated, descended from settlers in Annapolis County, 170, *note*; 250, *note*.
Cape, the, 33.
Capitation tax-list, township of Annapolis, 171; Granville, lost, 215; Wilmot, 230; Clements, 251.
Census of 1671, 31; of 1686, 35; of 1714, 66; modern census returns in detail, 318-321.
Champlain accompanies Demonts, 4, *note*; his map, 5; winters at Port Royal, 9.
Charming Molly, passengers by, 150.
Charnisay. See "D'Aulnay."

Chesley family, 199; Rev. Robert A., 307. (See Genealogies.)
Chipman, further genealogy of, 650.
Christianity first preached in America, 1, 296.
Church at Port Royal, new one built, 44, 88, 180; at Dalhousie, 268; St. Luke's, 176, 179; at Pine Grove, 241; opposite Goat Island, 297.
Churches, other, 278, 296, 321; at Pine Grove, 241; Roman Catholic, 296-298; Church of England, 298-300; Congregational, 300-304; Baptist, 304, 305; Methodist, 305-307; Presbyterian, 308; Adventist, 258, 307, 308.
Chute family, 199, 256. (See Genealogies.)
Clark, further genealogy of, 650.
Clements, township of, 243; grantees of, 246; capitation tax-payers in, 251; bounties for newly-cleared land, 255.
Clementsport, 244; church at, 300.
Clementsvale, 243, *note*.
Close communion, 303.
Commission of the Peace. 75.
Commission to settle boundary with Massachusetts, 90.
Corbitt, Ichabod, 178. (See Genealogies.)
Cosby, 72, 93; death of, 95.
Council, Executive, first formed for Province, 68; new appointments to, 76; first under responsible government, 646.
Council, county, 291; list of first members, 316, 317.
Council, town, 186.
County of Annapolis created, 195.
Court of Justice established, 69; Common Pleas, 157; Circuit, 173.
Court-house, 173; burned, 286.
Cross, William, 176, *note*.
Custos Rotulorum, list of persons holding the office, 316.
Cuthbert, Rev. Robert, censured, 72.

Dalhousie settlement, 260; road surveyed, 261; altered, 267; population in 1820, 265, 266; land cleared, 266; settler killed in a quarrel, 267; John Aull, 269; a murder, 270; college, 290; Dalhousie, Lord, 290.
Dargie family, 268.
Darling, Sir Charles, 177; Colonel, 266.
D'Aulnay de Charnisay, removes Acadians from La Have to Port Royal and brings out more, 19; accuses Charles Latour, 19; attacks his fort, 19; is chased back by Latour and defeated at Lequille, 20; goes to France to undermine him, 20; correspondence of, with Governor of Massachusetts, 21; again attacks Latour's fort, 26; takes it, 27; his cruel treatment of Latour's wife and garrison, 27; his death, 28, 29; the real founder of the present fort, 182.
Davison Bros.' mills, 278.
Davoue, Colonel Frederic, 248. (See Genealogies.)
De Brouillan. See "Brouillan."
Deeds, two offices of registry in early times, Digby including Clements, 288.
D'Entremonts, Philip Mius, 35.
De la Loutre. See "Loutre."
De la Tour. See "Latour."
Delong settlement, 274.
Demonts enters Annapolis, 2, 3; winters at St. Croix, 4; removes to Port Royal, 4; returns to France, 6; sale of Port Royal to Poutrincourt by, 11, 256, 641; returns to Port Royal, 11; full name of, 641.
De Razilli, Isaac. Claude. (See "Razilli.")
Des Enclaves, 95, 116, 296.
Des Goutins, 38, 47.
Ditmars, 248, 273. (See Genealogies.)
Division of the county, 224, 253, 287. (See memoirs of Moody, Wiswall, Roach, Robicheau, Holland.)
Domanchin Brook, 33.
Doctor, first in the Dominion, 9.
Dodge, Josiah, 199. (See Genealogies)
Doucet, Governor, 71.
Douglas, Samuel, 73.
Du Guast. See "Demonts."
Duke of Kent, visits of to Annapolis, 184; buildings erected by, 183.
Du Vivier marries clandestinely, 46; besieges Annapolis, 101.
Dupont Gravé, 7.
Dutch hymn sung at Clementsport, 299.
Dyson, 147.

Earthquake shocks, 286.
Easson, John, 147. (See Genealogies.)
Elections, 158, 206, 215, 216. (See Memoirs of Members.)
Equille, river named, 3.
Evans, Henry, negotiates with Governor as to settling Annapolis, 148; his journal, 148, 150; memoir of, 339.
Executions, 270, 293, 294.
Executive Council, first under responsible government, 646.

Falkland, 270; grantees of, 280; Lord Falkland, 290.
Families, early English, biographical and geological sketches of, and their descendants, arranged alphabetically, Armstrong to Young, 465 to 640. Amberman, 516, *note*; Beardsley, 497, *note*; Bass, Berteaux, Chipman, Clark, corrected, 650. Winslow, 630, *note*.
Famine in Acadia, 40.
Farnesworth, 199. (See Genealogies.)
Fellows, family, 199. (See Genealogies); Hon. James I., 158, 199.
Ferry, Annapolis and Granville, 151, *note*, 210, 221; across Imbert's River, 280; Hicks' Ferry, 223, 228; Pineo's, 280.

Fires, 185.
Fisher, Rev. Nathaniel. 302.
Fisheries, disputes concerning, 206, 217, 253.
Fitzrandolph, Hon. Joseph, 287.
Forbes, Charles Miller, 178, 307.
Forman, James, establishes Sunday Schools, 297.
Fort, first site of, 5; Pontgravé in charge of, 5; nearly deserted, 7; abandoned, 10; reoccupied, 11; destroyed by Argall, 14; rebuilt by Sir William Alexander, 17; demolished by order of King Charles, 18; rebuilt by D'Aulnay on new site, 19, 182; surrendered to Sedgwick, 29; restored to France, 31; captured by Phipps, 37; proposed removal of, to Round Hill, 40; description of, in 1700, 42; earthworks completed and hospital built, 43; bomb-proof magazine built by Subercase, 58, 180; bomb-proof, covered by brick barracks, 181; and demolished, 183; description of fort in 1711, 64; in 1716, 67; in 1745, 107, 108; Mohawk fort, 81; description of fort in 1743, 97; attacked by Indians under De la Loutre, 99; by Du Vivier, 101; government wharf built, 108, 183; garrisoned by militia, 163; old powder magazine, 180, 181, 182.
Fortieth Regiment, 183.
Frederick Street, former name of St. Anthony Street, 79.
Freemasonry, stone with masonic emblems found, 11, 31, 641; first lodge in N.S., 96; existed among the first French colonizers, 642.
Frenouse, Madame de, 42, 45.

Garrison, 92, 183, 184.
Gaulins, 64.
Genealogies arranged alphabetically, Armstrong to Young, 465 to 640; also Bass, Berteaux, Chipman, Clark, corrected, 650.
General's Bridge, 61.
Gilpin, Rev. Edwin, 298.
Goat Island named Biencourtville, 5, 256; Armstrong's Island, 83; granted to Charles Vane, and called Vane's Island, 82.
Godfrey, Rev. William Minns, 300.
Goldsmith family, 188.
Good times, order of, 8.
Goreham's Rangers, 162.
Grace, Rev. Thomas J., 296.
Grammar schools, 178.
Grandfontaine, the Chevalier de, 31.
Grand jury a hundred years ago, 645.
Grand Pré, battle of, 110.
Grant of township of Norwich, 89; of township of Annapolis, 148, 160.
Grantees, lists of, 160, 195, 196-7.
Grants of land in Annapolis, 77, 79.
Granville settled, 33; unoccupied after French removed, 194; grant issued, 194; names of grantees of, 195; population of, in 1767, 197; names of adult males, 197; represented in Assembly, 206; ferry to Annapolis, 151, *note*, 210, 221; loyalists arrive 211; election of 1785, 212; other elections, 215; roads in, 215, 282.
Gray, James, Esq., 187.
Grinton founds Springfield, 279; his sons, 281.
Grist-mill, first on the continent, 9.
Guercherville, Madame de, buys Demonts' rights, 13; sends out emigrants, 13; her ship sails to Mont Desert, 13; captured with its passengers by Argall, 14.

Haliburton, T. C., member for Annapolis, 283.
Halifax founded, 113.
Halliburton, Hon. Brenton, names Margaretsville, 225.
Handfield, Major, 119.
Harris, John, surveys Dalhousie Road, 261.
Harrison, Rev. John, 297.
Hay, first doctor and apothecary, 7, 9.
Healey, John, 217. (See Genealogies.)
Hébert, Louis, apothecary in Demonts' expedition, 9; winters at Port Royal, 9; governor *pro tem.*, 13; Bear River named for, La Riviére d'Hébert, 258.
Henderson, Andrew, 84, 174, 176, 223, 306.
Herring fishery, 245.
Hessian Line, 243; called Clementsvale, 243, *note*.
Hicks' ferry, 223.
Hillsburgh, township of, formerly part of Clements, 288.
Hoar, Judge, 157.
Hog Island, sold by D'Aulnay to Bourgeois, 43, 44, 174, 643.
Holland, William, 286.
House of Assembly, list of members for Annapolis County and townships, 311; memoirs of members—see "Members of Provincial Parliament."
Houses, old, 184, 185.
How, Edward, 110; death of, 115; biography of, 527.
Howe, Alexander, Comr. for Shelburne Road, 170; applies for grant in Granville, 213. (See Members.)
Howe, Hon. Joseph, 288, 527, 646, 647.

Imbert, Simon, 12; gives name to Bear River, 257.
Indians, 11, 72, 99, 295, 296; Malicetes attack Port Royal, 72; cut off supplies, 106.
Industrial establishments and products, 321.

Inferior Court, establishment of, 157; judges of, 313; not lawyers by profession, 313, *note*; reorganized with a lawyer for chief in each district, 313, *note*. Thomas Ritchie, first chief in Western Circuit, 394.
Invasion of Annapolis by privateers, 163; of county near Digby, 285.
Iron mines, 146, 242, 244, 245.

Johnstone, Hon. James W., 289, 290; appeals to County of Annapolis on issue concerning College question, 291; carries Simultaneous Polling Act, 291; settles mines and mineral question, 291. (See pp. 303 to 439, inclusive, and 646, 647.)
Justices of the Peace first appointed, 75; number of, in 1181, 284; list of, to 1837, 313—see memoir of Moses Shaw, M.P.P., list from 1837 to 1849, 648.

Kempton family found Maitland, 272.
Kent, Duke of, 184. (See "Duke of Kent.")
Kilmarnock, Lord, 184.
Kirk, Sir David, 17.
Knighthood, Honour of, conferred on natives of Annapolis, 177.

Lafleur, Charles Petipas, Sieur de, 35.
Lake La Rose, 146.
Lake Pleasant, 281.
Lamont, Marmaduke, 210, 211.
Latour, Charles Amador, succeeds Biencourt, 16; is Lieutenant of the King in Acadia, 19; refuses to change his allegiance, 17; seeks aid in Boston, 20; returns and defeats D'Aulnay, 20; addresses Boston authorities, 22; capture of his wife, 27; he retires to Quebec, 28; marries D'Aulnay's widow, 29; his death, 31; Seigniory of Port Royal granted to heirs of, 44; visits Port Royal, 75; his issue, 78; claims of family to seigniory, 86.
Latour, Claude, changes his allegiance, 17; recants, 18.
Lawrence appointed Lieutenant-Governor of the town, 115; petitions against by citizens of Halifax, 139, 141; his death and character, 141.
Lawrencetown, 225.
Lebel, 182; Poem on, 187.
Le Borgne, Emanuel, captures Denys, and seizes Port Royal, 29; surrenders it to Sedgwick, 29; in command, 31; Alexander, 35, 41.
Leonard, Jonathan, 228. (See Genealogies.)
Legislative Council, separated from Executive, 289; First member of, from Annapolis, 287; List of, from Annapolis, 310.
L'Escarbot joins the colony, 7; its historian and poet, 7, 8, 9.
Le Prince family, 194.
Leslie, Dr. Robert, 188.
Letter of marque, 285.
Limekiln and brickyard, first mentioned, 42.
Loutre, 99, 296, 533.
Lovett, Phineas, sen., 164. (See memoir, 333.) Phineas, jun., 162, 285, 309; James R., 287; notice of both, 648.
Loyalists, arrival of, 161, 164; character and aims of, 165; their cruel treatment by the States, 166; came here by compulsion, not voluntarily, 168; women proscribed, 644; companies at Annapolis, 644.

Magistrates commissioned, 75; for the French, 76; lists of, to 1837, 313; unjust dismissal of—see memoir of Moses Shaw, 458; further list of, to 1849, 648.
Maillard, Father, 296.
Mails, to Halifax, carried on foot and horseback, 159, 283; by regular carrier, 283; weekly, 283.
Maitland, 271.
Mandoux, Priest, 296.
Manslaughter, case of, 267.
March, Col., 48.
Margaretsville, 225, 242; supposed murder in 235.
Marshall, family of, 200. (See Genealogies.)
Mascarene commands New Hampshire troops in attack on Port Royal, 59; first to mount guard, 94; arrives to assume government, 93; his precedence disputed, 93; defies the Indians, 99; his gallant defence against Du Vivier, 101-106; commends the Acadians for their fidelity, 105, 132, 135; his life and death, 643.
Masonic stone. See "Freemasonry."
Masonry. See "Freemasonry."
Massé, Priest, 296.
McKenzie family, 200. (See Genealogy.)
McNair, Arod, 279.
Meetings, Political, in Annapolis, 647.
Melvern Square, 226.
Membertou, Indian Chief, 9; grief of, at departure of French, 10; baptized, 11; death and burial of, 12.
Members of Legislative Council, list of, 311; of House of Assembly, list of, 312
Members of the Provincial Parliament, memoirs of Jonathan Hoar, 323; Erasmus J. Phillips, 326; John Steele, 328; Joseph Woodmas, 329; Thomas Day, 329; Joseph Winniett, 330; John Harris, 331; Henry Munroe, 331; John Hicks, 332; Obadiah

Wheelock, 333; Phineas Lovett, sen., 333; Joseph Patten, 334; Christopher Prince, 335; John Hall, 336; Henry Evans, 337; William Shaw, 338; John Ritchie, 339, 649; Phineas Lovett, jun., 648; Stephen and James De Lancey, 339; Thomas Barclay, 344; David Seabury, 348; Benjamin James, 350; Thomas Millidge, 350; Alexander Howe, 355; Henry Rutherford, 360; James Moody, 362; sword of, 647; Edward Thorne, 393; Thomas Ritchie, 394; Thomas Walker, 397; Isaiah Shaw, 399; John Warwick, 399; William Robertson, 400; John Harris (son of Samuel), 401; Peleg Wiswall, 402; Sereno U. Jones, 406; Thomas Ritchie, (son of Andrew), 407, 649; Timothy Ruggles, 407; William H. Roach, 409; Samuel Campbell, 412; John Robertson, 415; Abraham Gesner, 417; Thomas C. Haliburton, 418; James R. Lovett, 648; John E. Morton, 426; John Johnstone, 428; Charles Budd, 430; James Delap, 432; Frederic A. Robicheau, 432; William Holland, 433; Elnathan Whitman, 434; James B. Holdsworth, 435; Stephen S. Thorne, 435; Samuel B. Chipman, 437; Henry Gates, 438; James W. Johnstone, 439; Alfred Whitman, 457; Moses Shaw, 458; Avard Longley, 459.
Menneval, De, succeeds Perrot as Governor, 37.
Menou, Marie de, 37.
Methodist missionaries and churches, 304-306; first Methodist church in Annapolis, 305.
Mice, Plague of, 286.
Middleton, 226, 240, 241.
Militia raised by Shaw in 1776, 208; by Barclay, Millidge and Taylor, 174.
Mill, first built in America, 1, 15, 182; saw-mill, 268; gypsum, 249; first carding, 249.
Mill Brook, early name of Lequille, 19.
Miller families, 200. (See Genealogies.)
Millerites, 308.
Millidge, Rev. John, 298.
Mines and minerals question settled, 291; of Annapolis county, 2, *note*, 242, 244.
Mius, Sieur d'Entremont, 35.
Monument, oldest in the Dominion, 73, *note*.
Moose River, called Rock Brook, 5, 244; Bridge over, 254; named la rivière de L'Orignal, 258; bridge over, 283.
Morehouse family, 248, 273.
Morris proposes to settle English among French, 112; settlers referred to by, 212, 220; letters of, in archives, 230, 251.
Morse, Rev. Arzarelah, 302.
Munroe, Col. Henry, 164.
Murders, 270, 293.

Negroes, removal of, 212-214.
New Albany, 276; road, 276; grantees of, 277; list of settlers, 278.
New lights, 301, 303.
Newspaper, first in county, 224.
Newton, Hibbert, 68, 71.
Nicholson, Francis, 59.
Nictaux mines, 242.
Northfield, 273.
Norwich, township of, 89.
Nova Scotia Regiment, 234.

Order of Good Times, 8.

Paradise, 226.
Parker, Abijah, 200; Nathaniel, 279.
Parker's Brook, 33.
Parliament, Provincial, Members from Annapolis, 311; Dominion, 312.
Patten-Farnsworth feud, 202.
Perkins, Rev. Cyrus, 178.
Perrot in command at Port Royal, 34, 38.
Perrott, Captain, 249; settlement, 274; grantees of, 274.
Petipas, Claude, 35.
Phillipps, Governor, 67; advised settlement by English, 67; tenders oath of allegiance to Acadians, 69; censures Wm. Winniett, 70; visits Annapolis, 76; commends Winniett, 77; finally leaves province, 77.
Phillips, Erasmus James, 77, 147. See "Members."
Phipps captures and pillages Port Royal, 37, 39.
Pine Grove churches, 241.
Pineo's Ferry, 284.
Pineo, Peter, jun., 222.
Pirates pillage Port Royal, 39.
Poetry, first written in America, 8.
Polhemus, 249.
Pompey's rock, church at, 296.
Pontgravé, winters in France, 6; removes colonists from St. Croix to Port Royal, 6.
Population at various periods (see "Census"), 317; by religions, 318, 319.
Port George, 225.
Port Lorne, 240.
Port Royal abandoned, 10; state of, in 1685, 34; in 1689, 40; captured by Phipps, 37; pillaged by pirates, 39; retaken by Villebon, 39; description of, in 1690, 40, 41; discords in, 43; seigniory of, granted, 44; expedition against, by Massachusetts troops, 45; attacked by them, 39, 48; again attacked, 51; besieged and taken by Nicholson, 59.
Potter family, 249. (See Genealogies.)
Powder magazine, 182.

Poutrincourt returns to France, 6; comes back to Port Royal, 7; clears land for farming, 7; explores south, 7, 8; abandons Port Royal, 10; comes back, 11; abandons Acadia and falls in battle, 14; full name of, 641.
Prayer, a remarkable, 187.
Pré Ronde, La, 40.
Presbyterian churches, 307.
Prices of country produce in 1763, 205.
Priests, 2, 11, 12, 13, 17, 19, 39, 78, 88, 296; suspended, 89.
Privateers rob Annapolis, 163; invade the county, 285; fitted out in the county, 285, 286.
Probate court, judges of, 310.
Products of the county at various periods, 318, 319, 320, 321.
Puritans, their policy towards the Indians, 295, *note*.

Quereau, 249.

Railway, Windsor and Annapolis, 186, 242; Nova Scotia Central, 241, 242.
Rallieu, Demonts' secretary, 2, *note*.
Ramezay encamps at the Cape, 109; refrains from attack, 110; sends expedition against Noble's force at Grand Pré, 110; threatens Acadians at Grand Pré, 112.
Ramsay, road and proposed township of, 266.
Ray, Hon. W. H., succeeds Johnstone as M.P.P., 291; Sketch of, 292.
Razilli, Isaac de, takes possession of Port Royal, 19; Claude de, receives grant of Port Royal, 19.
Registrar of deeds, first in county, 211.
Registry of deeds at Digby for lands in Clements, 288.
Relics, Historic, 11, 31, 182, 187, 188.
Responsible government, 288; supported in Annapolis, 289; fully established, 289, 290, 646; first cabinet under it, coalition, 289, 646.
Richardson, Col. Philip, 226.
Rising Village, poem, 188.
Ritchie, John, joins in asking arms for fort, 162; taken prisoner, 164; commissioner of road to Shelburne, 170. See "Members."
Ritchie, Thomas, 180; introduces bill respecting African slavery, 284. (See memoir, p. 394.) John W., 287, 576; Sir William J., 177, 576; J. Norman, 576.
River named L'Equille, 3; Dauphin, 6; called British River, 70, 83; bridged at Hicks' ferry, 223; at Bear River, 284; frozen over at Annapolis, 293.
Road to Shelburne commenced, 170; Nictaux to Liverpool, 236; Wilmot to Lunenburg, 236, 237; Leonard road, 237; toward Halifax, 237; Liverpool road, 237; to St. Margaret's Bay, projected, 282; from Bear River bridge to Moose River bridge, 282; Annapolis to Bear River, 254; Dalhousie, 261, 267; Bear River to Allain's Creek, 282.
Roach, William H., 287, 289. See "Members."
Roads, first construction of, 8; in Granville, 215.
Robertson, Rev. James, 299, 300.
Robicheau, Prudent, appointed J.P., 76; receiver of quit rents, 84; family exiled although loyal, 129; Frederic A., 286. See "Members."
Robinson, Father of Sir J. B., 170, *note*.
Rosette, 33; origin of name, 66.
Round Hill, called Rosette, 33; fort proposed to be removed there, 40.
Roxbury, 275.
Ruggles, General Timothy, 227; Biography of, 583.
Rumsey, 147. (See Genealogies.)
Runciman, George, 307.
Ryerson family, 249. (See Genealogies.)

Saint Castine, 54.
Saunders family, 200. (See Genealogies.)
Saw-mill Creek bridge, 282.
Scandal, Clerical, 172.
Schafner, Adam, 201. (Family of, see Genealogies.)
Schools and teachers, 178, 223, 224, 297, 307; first in Annapolis, 297, 645.
Scotch fort, 17.
Sedgwick takes Port Royal, 29.
Shaw, Moses, family of, 202. (See "Members" and Genealogies.)
Shaw, William, charges against, 207; exonerated, 207, 210.
Shelburne, road to, commenced, 170.
Sheriffs, 238; list of, 309.
Shipyard, first in America, 7.
Sigogne, Abbé, 296.
Simultaneous Polling Act, 291.
Sinclair, Frederic, innholder, 173, 177.
Slavery, bill respecting, 284.
Sneden family, 253. (See Genealogies.)
Spinney, Samuel, and family of, 200.
Springfield, 279.
Sproule, Robert, family of, 201. (See Genealogies.)
Stages, Tri-weekly, established, 283.
Steamboat, first to cross the bay, 283.
Stocks, the, 174, 283.
Stoddart, Sergeant, receives grant in Dalhousie, 280.
Stone, Inscribed, found near old fort, 182, 187, *note*; Masonic, 11, 31, 641.
Street, Ebenezer and Samuel, 250 & *note*.
Subercase becomes Governor, 47; defends Port Royal against colonial troops, 48; builds bomb-proof and finishes barracks, 58; surrenders to Nicholson, 72.

Sunday Schools, first in America, 298, 648.
Surnames in Port Royal, 35.
Surveyor-General, first in the province, 77; first after Halifax founded, 112.

Thompson, Col. G. F., Grant to, for military services, 280.
Thorne family, 251.
Torbrook and Torbrook Mines, 242.
Totten family, 250.
Town officers a hundred years ago, 175.
Troop family, 200. (See Genealogies.)
Tupper, Thomas, missionary to Indians, 297.

Utrecht, treaty of, 129.

Vallière, De la, 34.
Van Bueren, 251.
Van Buskirk family, 231, 255. (See Genealogies.)
Vannier arrested and escapes, 97.
Vetch becomes Governor, 63; captures priests and Acadians and holds as hostages, 63; enlists Mohawks in New York, 80; builds Mohawk fort, 80, 81; his character and career, 80, 81.
Villebon takes possession of Port Royal, 39; describes it, 41.
Villieu, 41.

War of American revolution, 161; attitude of people toward, 162; with France, 174; of 1812, 284; disapproved of in New England, 285.
Waterloo fund, 178, 224, 229.
Watts, Rev. Richard, 297; taught school, 645.
Wheelock, Abel, 229. (See Genealogies.)
Road, 275.
Whipping, Punishment of inflicted, 75, 88.
Whitney, James, 283.
Whitefield, 300.
White House Field, a part given for "bowling green," 84; for church, 179.
Williams house, 185.
Williams, Thomas, sen., 159; made prisoner, 164; commissioner for Shelburne road, 170.
Williams, Sir William Fenwick, 164, 177, 452, 629. (See Genealogies.)
Winniett and Dyson, 147.
Wilmot, 225; names of residents in 1777, 228; census of township in 1768, 228; proposal to form with Aylesford a new county, 239; population in 1827, 240.
Windsor Bridge, 282.
Winniett, Joseph, 114, *note;* 147, 156, 159, 162. (See memoir of Joseph Winniett, M.P.P., and Genealogies.)
Margaret, her grave-stone, 94.
Winniett, Sir William, 177, 250, 632. (See Genealogies.)
Winniett, William, has leave to go up the bay to trade, 70; censured by council, 70; further reference to, 76, 80, 90; appointed to the Council, 77; suspended by Armstrong, 83; restored, 85; highly esteemed by Mascarene, 94; death of, and account of his family, 95. (See memoir of Jos. Winniett, M.P.P., and Genealogies.)
Winslow family, 630, *note.*
Wiswall, Rev. John, 298. (See Genealogies.) Judge. (See "Members" and Genealogies.)
Wood, Rev. Thomas, 147, 179, 297.
Woodbury, Jonathan, 201. (See Genealogies.)
Worster, George, 201 and *note.*

Young, Job, and family, 197, 202. (See Genealogies.)

HC
C164c
Calnek, Wm. Arthur.
History of the
County of Annapolis.

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

HC Calnek, William Arthur
C164c History of the County of
Annapolis